



# 我的狐仙老婆

黑夜de白羊[作品]

静幽的森林的某个角落，  
因为被仙友封印了一只调皮捣蛋的狐妖和善良的白牛牛，  
从此走上了不平凡的修仙之路。



# Mai Kitsune Waifu

## Associated Names

My Fox Immortal Wife My Fox Spirit Wife 我的狐仙老婆

## Description

Humanoid beast? Ahem.... Humanoid beast....

Because a female immortal sealed a mischievous and sly fox spirit into his right hand, ordinary senior high school student Liu Yi henceforth began his extraordinary journey as a immortal practitioner.

The fox spirit said: “The prettiest girls in the class, the daughters of rich families, the evil female cult members, the beautiful women in the world of immortals? All these beauties are no longer a dream!

Come, become an immortal and even a diaosi could counterattack!

Come, become an immortal and kill all of the tall, rich and handsome!

Come, become an immortal and capture all the beauties!”

“Liu Yi, I said to capture all the beauties; not to capture me! Hey! Stop!”

---

## Genre

Action, Adventure, Comedy, Fantasy, Harem, Martial Arts, Mature, Romance,

School Life, Xianxia

**Author(s)**

Ram De Night

**Translator :** <http://www.subudai11.com/>

**Kazeboy**

NejiSpira

[wuxiatranslationsdl.wordpress.com](http://wuxiatranslationsdl.wordpress.com)



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 1

“Dare bother my girlfriend again and I’ll beat you to death!”

Liu Yi was standing at the bus stop, he began to recall of what that grade ‘hooligan’ boss’s footman said to him after school as he grabbed his collar and threatened him. As he thought of it, he started having the chills.

At the same time there was a fiery feeling of pain on his face. He really wanted to find a beauty and smash his face into her bosom.

Why is life so unfair?!

What’s wrong with me liking Ma Yixuan?! I rarely even manage to talk to her! Did you really need to threaten me and slap my face?!

Liu Yi touched his face. He looked at his thin and weak body and sighed.

Sigh! If only I had the physiques of Arnold Schwarzenegger. No hooligan boss would dare mess with me then.

Liu Yi then thought of Ma Yixuan’s beautiful face and her exquisite body and sighed.

Most of the girls in his grade ignore him. Even the internet girls paid no attention to him!

Diaosi! Am I doomed to be a diaosi all my life and live a lonely life?!

Oh dear Heaven! Please give me, Liu Yi, a girl!

Unfortunately the Heavens appeared not to answer Liu Yi’s call. Instead of a girl,

a bus came whistling through. It nearly ran into Liu Yi, scaring him so much that he stepped back two steps hurriedly.

“Little rascal, are you trying to die?!”

As the bus door opens, what came forth was the bus driver shouting at Liu Yi.

And at this period of time, there were a lot of people taking public transportation. Before the bus was even able to pull up to the bus stop, a group of people had already swarmed the bus door, blocking it completely.

Liu Yi saw that the bus was currently packed full. However, because his stomach was rumbling with hunger, he could only join the others in cramming into the bus.

“Little rascal, stop trying to cram into the bus!”

An old granny bravely crammed herself into the bus as if she wasn't a granny at all. Liu Yi was pushed against the side and stepped on someone's foot.

“Fucking shit! Brat, you trying to die?!”

Liu Yi stepped on a big baldy. That baldy immediately started cursing at him, scaring Liu Yi so much that he trembled in fear and immediately began trying to follow the stream of people up the bus.

Really! Why so fierce?! It's just a bald head! My school's guidance director had a sea-within-the-earth hairdo that looked even more fierce than you!

[TL: sea-within-the-earth

hairdo:<http://www.huanqiu.com/attachment2010/2012/0808/2012080811271>

Liu Yi started having delusions again. He began to imagine the scene of him fighting valiantly against the big baldy, beating him till he begged for forgiveness

on the ground, and finally kicking him out of the bus.

Tsk tsk, that's what a man should do!

However, after he looked at his arm that had no meat at all and then looked at the baldy's shit-lump like muscles, Liu Yi finally decided to give up.

“Get the fuck out of the way! Else I'll beat your fucking ass!”

That bald man started squeezing through the crowd. The bus was already packed full with people. With the baldy squeezing through the crowd, the interior of the bus was like a bomb that's about to blow up. Many people wanted to complain but when they saw the fiend-like baldy, they dare not utter a single word.

Nowadays, who would dare to cause trouble?

That baldy quickly walked next to a young woman.

Liu Yi's eyes also followed the baldy.

Suddenly, his breathing sped up.

My gawd! Is this girl some sort of celebrity?!

Too-too-too-toooo beautiful!

At that split second, even Liu Yi's eyes popped out.

This woman was glistening with beauty. Her lips were red, her teeth were white, and her figure was both seductive and voluptuous.

This kind of girl, her appearance should have been limited to only the television. How did she manage to come out to the reality?!

Even the prettiest girl in class, Murong Die, could not compare to her beauty.

Her long wavy hair reached all the way down her abundant buttocks.

Because of the fact that it's summertime, she was wearing a white T-shirt. Her chest looked very plentiful. The clothes covering her chest were wide open. It was as if there was a pair of plump apples inside.

On the lower half of her body was a pair of booty short jeans wrapping around her abundant buttocks.

Although her buttocks were tightly wrapped by her jeans, her two slender legs were completely revealed, attracting the attention of all of the men on the bus.

This kind of beauty, it was something that Liu Yi could only fantasize in his dreams!

That baldy obviously also noticed the beauty. He squeezed his way through to her, his hand immediately swinging all over the place and, as if coincidence, landed on the beauty's abundant buttocks.

The beauty immediately turned around. She wanted to move away however the amount of people surrounding them was too great. Crammed inside the bus, there was nowhere for her to run.

Her black pupils, without any better option, could only move to the people around her, requesting them for help.

Soon, her sight landed on Liu Yi who was closest to her. Liu Yi was immediately startled.

Those eyes, oh how helpless they are, oh how pitiful they are!

Help me.....

From her lips, it was as if she spat out those two words!



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 2

In that single moment. Liu Yi felt as if he was possessed. With great difficulty, he lifted his hand toward that baldy's bald head and gave a big smack.

Dang! Crisp and clear.

“Aiya! Director Wang, you're here?! Don't you remember me? I'm your student!”

Liu Yi immediately tried to change the topic.

“Fucking shit! Bastard, you're seeking your fucking death! Who the fuck is your director!”

Having his head smacked, the baldy was suffering from immense pain. Immediately he turned around and angrily fixed his gaze at Liu Yi.

Immediately, all of Liu Yi's courage dissipated into thin air. His legs felt weak. He wanted to just sit on the ground.

Unfortunately for him, he was surrounded by people. The riders have crowded into a lump and have set their gaze at the two causing Liu Yi to be unable to hide even if he wanted to.

Right at this moment, the bus happened to brake. It's the stop.

“Little rascal, get off the bus with me! Fucker spoiling my fun, I'll beat you to death!”

Seeing that the beauty that he was taking advantage of was squeezing herself through the crowd and out the bus, the baldy grew even angrier. He grabbed Liu Yi and pulled him out of the bus like a mop.

Liu Yi cried his heart out. Fuck! How could he be so unfortunate?! They say heroes have a weakness for the charms of beauties. But I'm not even a hero! Why must I end up like this?!

I was already beaten up once because of a woman. Am I to be beaten up again?! God damn! Fucking unfair!

Liu Yi struggled with all his might. However, he who was without any physical strength was still dragged out of the bus.

"Don't! Don't close the door! Let me back in!"

Liu Yi desperately waved at the bus.

However, the driver acted as if he didn't see it at all. He stepped on the accelerator and the bus flew away.

The people who stood near the bus stop have also stepped aside. None of them wanted to meddle in other's business.

"Fucking bastard, this shall teach you about meddling in my business!"

The baldy threw Liu Yi to the ground and was about to kick him.

However at this moment, a foot wearing a red canvas shoe appeared between his legs.

"Owww!"

The pain was so immense it was as if he met the gods and died. So painful that

he kneeled onto the ground twitching.

The beauty who had exited the bus earlier was standing behind the baldy. She dragged the Liu Yi who was sitting there in a daze.

“Run! Quickly!”

After saying those words, the beauty grabbed Liu Yi’s hands and immediately proceeded to run frantically.

Liu Yi who was still in a daze was dragged running by the beauty and almost fell onto the ground.

“You.... don’t you dare run!...”

That baldy was still kneeling on the ground. With his brother being impacted so strongly, it’s unlikely for him to be able to stand up anytime soon.

Liu Yi could have sworn that he had never ran so much before.

The two frantic runners finally stopped at a park boulevard.

“Can’t.... can’t run anymore....”

Liu Yi was panting rapidly. He looked at the beauty beside him who had ran such a long distance with him. She was not even out of breath. “You.... are you an athlete?....”

“That I am not. However, I am very grateful to you for saving me today. My master had told me that I must certainly give thanks when saved by others.”

The beauty looked at Liu Yi while radiating a glow of charm. She then laughed.

“No... no need... that's something that anyone would do...”

Liu Yi believed that at times like these, one should be humble to look better.

“What’s your name?”

“My name’s Lei Feng!” [TL: this is a joke by the author, Lei Feng is the selfless model citizen created by the Chinese Communist Party. so Liu Yi basically went on and said “I’m a friend of justice.”]

After taking two deep breath, Liu Yi was finally able to speak more normally.

Running is very tiresome indeed.

“Hee hee...”

That beauty laughed. Liu Yi was stunned by the beauty in front of him.

So.... so beautiful....

“You’re so funny.... oh well... Comrade Lei Feng, I am called Lin Tong. Regardless, master’s words should certainly be followed. I will certainly thank you.”

“Then... then how are you going to thank me?”

Liu Yi blinked his eyes.

His extremely perverted brain had once again began a rich imagination.

Ask her to be his girlfriend?

Gee, that’s a bit too much!

How about something a bit more lewd?!

A kiss?

Too weak! Liu Yi! Opportunity knocks but once!

A bit bit more lewd?

A touch of her bosom?

Hey hey, this beauty called Lin Tong's bosom wasn't small at all...

Liu Yi gulped. Just as he was debating on whether or not to speak his mind, the beauty had already leaned next to him.

That beautiful fragrance radiating from her instantly stiffened Liu Yi's entire body.

"To thank you, allow me to take away your vitality...."

After saying those words, Lin Tong's hand suddenly thrust into Liu Yi's lower abdomen. A surge of immense pain instantly spread through Liu Yi's entire body. Before he could even understand what had happened, his consciousness was already being eroded by the darkness.

How.... how did this come about?....

Am... am I going to die?....

But.... but... I still haven't touch that bosom yet....

Slowly, Liu Yi began to close his eyes.

And at this moment, he faintly heard the shouting of someone by his ears.

It's a girl's voice too... very pleasant to hear...

“Bold fox demon! You dared kill others in here! Forgive you I cannot!”

Immediately after those words, Liu Yi’s body suddenly became light like a feather. Then, as if soaring on a cloud, his body flew toward a direction.

“Bam!”

Finally, he seemed to have landed at a soft location. It’s also had a very sweet fragrance... even sweeter than that Lin Tong’s body....

Another woman?.... is her bosom as big as that Lin Tong’s?.....

At least.... before I die.... let me grab her bosom...

Drowsily, Liu Yi opened one eye. What he saw in front of him was an outrageously beautiful woman who’s currently holding him.

“Surely.... this must be heaven....”

As he said that, he raised his hands up with great difficulty and grabbed the beauty’s bosom.

“Ah!”

A cry of alarm. Liu Yi was thrown onto the ground.

“Scoundrel! Vulgar! I’ll kill you!”

After that girl threw Liu Yi to the ground, she heard Liu Yi said faintly.

“What a pity.... the one I grabbed before my death.... so small....”

“Scoundrel! How is this Gu Yu small! Only fools like you would get deceived by a

fox demon and not know it!”

The girl stomped the ground in anger. At this moment, in her hand was the seized soul of the fox demon.

She wanted to leave this scoundrel here but was also a bit stubborn.

“Master had said that saving a life is better than building a seven story pagoda. Forget it, I’ll save your life... your vitality was taken, I could only use this evil creature to save your life. Evil creature, this shall be your conversion. Consider saving his life to be your first virtuous action!”

Gu Yu squatted down. Her face red.

She placed the soul into her mouth and then sent the soul into Liu Yi’s lips.

At the last moment, Liu Yi saw faintly that the absolute beauty whose bosom was grasped by him slowly kissed his lips.

This... really is heaven...

Sigh... what a shame... the women of heaven.... have such small chests...

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 3

“Liu Yi, can you take me here?”

Liu Yi stunned. He looked at the Ma Yixuan who was in front of him. She was wearing a white lace dress, pure and lovely, fascinating and charming. She was standing on the corner of the street and pointing toward the signboard of the Hanting Express Hotel.

Go... go... going here....

... going here for what?....

“Can you?.... I wanna go there...”

Ma Yixuan pulled Liu Yi’s hand. She was acting coquettishly.

That charm, it almost caused even his bones to go limp.

“Is... is that okay?...”

Liu Yi took a deep gulp as he looked at the class beauty that he had longed for.

Ma Yixuan was the literature committee member for the grade and Liu Yi’s neighbor.

This girl was a beauty indeed. Liu Yi had liked her for a long time.

Now that you mention it, Liu Yi had long forgotten how long he had liked her. It seems that he had liked her ever since she moved over and became his neighbor.



However, she had always had a cold attitude toward him.

What happened today? She actually pulled him and wanted to go to the Hanting Express Hotel with him?

This... Is this the legendary loser's springtime?!

Liu Yi was about to cry his eyes out.

"There's nothing wrong with that. We knew each other for three years already!"

Ma Yixian gave Liu Yi a charming smile. The smile was so charming that Liu Yi almost melted.

"I know of your feelings toward me... and you had been very nice to me... I feel as if there's nothing I can give you so... I'm giving you me!"

Said Ma Yixuan blushing like an apple.

"But... but... that's bad... I'll be seen as a pervert by others!"

"Then forget about it. Let's go home."

"Go go go! Let's get a room!"

"Won't you be seen as a pervert?"

"Nothing to be afraid of. I'm already a pervert!"

At this moment, Liu Yi was boiling with animal instinct. He grabbed Ma Yixuan's hand and went in and asked for a room.

Upon entering that warm and romantic tiny room, Liu Yi immediately could not

help himself. He hugged Ma Yixuan's delicious body and began to gnaw violently.

And at this moment, from Ma Yixuan's mouth was the voice of an aunty.

"Ai ai ai! Young man, are you crazy?! Don't go around biting people!"

A voice that could shatter eardrums. This voice immediately woken up Liu Yi.

He opened his eyes and found that everything in front of him have changed.

The warm and romantic tiny room with a giant round bed was gone.

The beautiful and charming Ma Yixuan was also gone.

He was currently hugging an aunty with a red armband. His mouth was even kissing that aunty's arm.

My shit! The fuck is this!

Liu Yi immediately grew completely conscious. He stood up from the grass on the park.

"You woke from your spring dream? Young man, a student on top of it! Why would you be sleeping on the park's grass. Sleeping is one thing but to even molest me..."

The aunty pulled her red armband and began to criticize and educate Liu Yi.

"What's wrong with kids like you nowadays. Can't even allow parents a peace of mind... You kids..."

The aunty bla bla bla said a lot. Liu Yi instead only stood there in a daze.

How did I get here....

That's right... he suddenly remembered. Yesterday a beautiful girl pulled him here.

But... it seems like that girl ended up killing me...

Liu Yi touched his chest. He found out that it was completely fine but there was a hole in his shirt.

God damn!

So strange!

He suddenly remembered. It seems like there was a female immortal girl that saved him.

This... I'm dreaming right?

Liu Yi was absent minded. He kinda didn't know what to do.

"What kind of stupid dream are you dreaming! You useless person! Stupid idiot teenager!"

And at exactly this moment, by Liu Yi's ear, there suddenly sounded a familiar woman's voice.

"Ahh!!! Ghost!!!"

Liu Yi immediately uttered a cry.

"You called me a ghost!"

The aunty immediately turned displeased. "Sigh. Child, I'm trying to teach you good. However, not only do you not appreciate my teaching, you even called me

a ghost. Child, you must be into older woman around my age right? Sigh. Back when this older sister was younger, she was indeed a beauty. Even though I'm a bit older now, I still had that lingering charm. Sigh. That's why I understand...."

The aunty began to blah blah on and on again.

As for Liu Yi, the voice of that girl was still in his ears.

"Ghost my ass! This older sister is a fox immortal!"

Liu Yi was about to collapse for real.

This is in broad daylight! Did he really see a ghost?

This place must be too gloomy... that's right, let me find a more sunny place and kill this evil ghost!

Without taking into consideration of that aunty that had been standing there and giving him a lecture all this time, Liu Yi turned around and ran.

"Hey hey hey! Young man, why did you run?! At least leave your numbers so that this older sister could contact you often....."

The aunty's reluctant to part voice grew further and further away from Liu Yi.

Liu Yi kept running like mad. However, ringing in his ear was that beauty's voice still.

"What are you running for?! Stop running! Aiyah you're still running! Pretty fast too! You think you're Liu Xiang or something?! How about running another hundred meters hurdles?!"

That voice was chasing after Liu Yi's ears like a certain fairy from a certain game.

Liu Yi was scared to death. Just as he was about to run into the the park's pond out of panic, a red smoke suddenly appeared from his right hand. This smoke condensed itself into the shape of a fox and was suspended in mid air in front of Liu Yi.

“My god!”

Liu Yi's leg grew weak. He directly fell onto his ass.

Fortunately there wasn't much people in the park early morning. Otherwise Liu Yi would've certainly attract a lot of attention.

“What are you running for?! Am I this scary?!”

The fox shaped smoke slowly drifted in front of Liu Yi. It scared Liu Yi so much that he started sweating cold sweat.

“You... what exactly are you....”

Liu Yi squeezed those words out with all his courage.

Oh heaven! To meet a ghost in broad daylight, am I Liu Yi really going to die?!

Boohoo! No! I don't want to die a virgin!

.... I haven't even manage to touch Ma Yixuan's delicate hands...

But I did managed to touch a girl's chest yesterday! Alas, it was flat!

I don't want to die before touching big boobs!

Liu Yi was about to cry.

Oh God! Please save me!

I will certainly burn you more incense! I will burn you more of Aoi Sora's photos!

Just as Liu Yi was begging all kinds of deities to save his life, the little fox spoke again.

“What are you shaking about! To be so afraid, are you even a man?! Let me tell you this, I'm not some ghost, I'm a fox immortal! A pure and beautiful, gentle and kind little fox immortal!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 4

“Fox immortal?”

Liu Yi immediately began to blink his eyes rapidly. He grew even more nervous.

“I had only met a fox demon yesterday....and she killed me...”

“Ahem ahem. That was my martial younger sister!”

The little fox immediately coughed twice before saying. “She’s very very bad. I had chased her for a long time! She almost killed you! It was me who saved you!”

“Oh? Really?”

Liu Yi remembered that he was indeed killed by a beautiful fox demon yesterday and later saved by a girl. It seems like that girl had also kissed him and that he had touched her chest.... her flat chest!

That he remembered clearly.

But as to how she looks, he can’t remember.

Perhaps she was this so called fox immortal in front of him?

If that was the case, then he really should thank her for saving him.

“Were you the flat... female immortal that saved me yesterday?”

“Of course!”

Hearing Liu Yi's question, the little fox was abnormally happy.

Oh boy! This idiot really got fooled!

Ganbatte! I, Lin Tong, is the clever and quick witted fox demon. This mere human is of course no problem for me!

Heh heh, I would certainly take care of him and then break through that seal on his hand and regain my freedom!

"In order to save you, I was wounded by that fox demon. Now I could only live in your right hand and recover my vitality using you."

"Ah? You wanted to suck up my essence?!"

Liu Yi was immediately scared witless again. What appeared in his mind was the sights of mummies who had their essence sucked up completely.

My god! Too scary! No!

"No. That's not it. I need your vitality!"

The little fox chuckled. "only through absorbing vitality would I, Lin Tong, be able to recover!"

"You are Lin Tong?!"

Liu Yi was shocked by her words. He shouted. "Wasn't Lin Tong that fox demon from yesterday?!"

"Ah no, that's not it. We fox just randomly come up with names!"

Lin Tong was panicking. Being overly proud of herself, she actually mistakenly spilled the beans.



“The Tong from my martial younger sister’s name is the character Tong from TongHua (fairy tail) whereas the Tong from my name is the character Tong from HongTongTong (bright red), they’re not the same! I had saved you and ended up in this situation! Who would’ve expected that you would instead doubt me! Abominable human!”

“No no, I haven’t once doubted you! I apologize! Female Immortal Lin Tong, how can I help you?”

Liu Yi stroke the back of his head. He felt as if that his life is going to be turned upside down.

However, regardless, he felt that he should first help his savior!

“Hehe.... you want to help me? That’s actually very simple!”

“What must I do?”

“You must learn the techniques of our demon... immortal clan and absorb immortal energy. With that you could restore my strength and I would be able to regain my body!”

“What? You’re telling me to become an immortal cultivator? That’s surely impossible! Stop playing around with me please.”

Liu Yi immediately started shaking his head like a rattle.

What a joke! No way I’m going to get so lucky! Yep, it’s certainly going to be like those multi-level marketing schemes!

“Fuck! Not impossible! Even mortals could become immortal cultivator! Okay?!”

The little fox quickly emphasized that.

“Okay then... but I don’t want to become an immortal.... I just want to be a regular man, then score into college, then find a job, then get married and have kids...”

“Then grow old and die? You want a mediocre life?”

The little fox Lin Tong continued to try to entice Liu Yi. “There’s a lot of benefits to being an immortal! For one you get to live longer! You can also obtain extraordinary power!”

“Oh? Then can I get girls?”

Liu Yi was blinking like a dog wagging its tail.

He remembered Ma Yixuan and could not help himself but ask the question.

“Of course!”

The little fox grew happier. There’s an opportunity!

“Forget about it... if I had to meditate and suppress my desires, I won’t be able to endure that.”

Remembering that he was still a virgin, Liu Yi began to step back from the thought.

“Little rascal! Regardless of whether or not you want to become one, you will still have to become one!”

Liu Yi suddenly noticed that his right hand was suddenly out of his control. Out of nowhere, it pulled his body up from the ground.

“Hey hey hey! Where are you taking me!”

Knowing that it was certainly something that the little fox immortal Lin Tong had done, Liu Yi immediately turned pale with fright.

He tried desperately to pull his hand back. However, as if it wasn't his, his hand was pulling him through the park.

At this time, there was already some morning exercise people in the park.

The majority of them were old granny and grandpas. They're doing tai chi and zombie dance and the like.

[TL: zombie dance → <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=FrHir7cMNew>  
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=nBDNaLvAFhY> and  
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=-IST4Snf0XA>]

Young people who can still get up early was really extremely rare nowadays.

And Liu Yi was running zigzag with one arm outstretched through the park filled with old people .

“Is this a new fitness dance?”

An old grandpa carrying a bird cage stared at Liu Yi as he ran past.

“Aiya! This looks much more interesting than the zombie dance!”

Shouted an old granny as she turn her waist and stretched her arm forward.

“Come come come! Brothers and sisters, let's follow the lead!”

Thus, this group of old people started imitating Liu Yi. With an outstretched arm and a waist twisted to the side, they were running through the park in a zigzag.

Suddenly, there emerged a long line of people running in the park, attracting even more attention than the zombie dance.

Yet these people did not know that Liu Yi was currently suffering. With no control of his body, he could only incessantly run forward.

“Please great aunt little fox immortal, spare me! Please stop!”

“I’ll continue as long as you refuse to become an immortal cultivator!”

“Being an immortal cultivator and what not... it’s too unreliable....”

“Fine! You don’t want to be one, then I’ll show you!”

Lin Tong glanced at a couple nearby.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 5

Looking at that couple. The male had dyed blonde hair and earrings. He was wearing leather pants and leather jacket. It was easy to tell that he was a hooligan.

As for the girl that he was currently hugging. She was gorgeously dressed and her makeup was hot like fire. Those eyes were drawn like some panda eyes.

The way she dressed was also 'super fashionable'. Extraordinary taste in style.

She was wearing a black dress. The dress was so short that it was only a bit past her buttocks, exposing her pair of white legs. One of her leg was even being touched by that blondy boyfriend of hers.

To be able to expose her legs in the early autumn weather, she's a warrior!

Liu Yi saw the woman. He felt even more scared than when he met the fox shaped Lin Tong. Instantly, his eye was wide open in shock.

"Don't! Don't go there ah! What are you trying to do?!"

Shouted Liu Yi in a panic as he noticed that his legs were rushing toward the couple.

"Stop! Stop! There's people in front!"

However, the right hand that was under Lin Tong's control wasn't listening to Liu Yi at all. Instead, it brought him directly into the middle of the couple.

The blondy was currently hugging his woman, gnawing at her body.

It was through immense effort that he managed to persuade his girl to come to the park and have a spectacular battle on the fields.

Alas, he did not expect that although there was a lot of people doing this every year, it's particularly a lot this year!

Just when he finally manage to hug his woman and hit the first base while sitting on a park bench. Who would've expected that this kid would run out like a madman!

"What are you doing?! Don't come over!"

The blondy's hand was in his girlfriend's clothes.

His girl's hand was also in his crotch.

Seeing the incoming Liu Yi, the girl immediately got scared. In fear, she quickly clenched her fist and then pulled it back.

Immediately, the blondy was in a twitching pain.

And Liu Yi have also reached the two. His good for nothing right hand immediately landed on the woman's thigh.

This woman's thigh felt pretty good.

Had there not been the teeth biting blondy with a murderous eye, then it would've been even better.

"Brat, you fucking trying to die?! To dare touch my woman...."

With a stomach full of anger, the blondy was planning to punish Liu Yi. Suddenly, his eyes widened.

My shit! What kind of situation is this?!

The blondy turned around and saw his hot and fiery girlfriend. Her blackened eyes was about to cry with desire. Her hands were constantly stroking his body. Her mouth was also giving off an indistinct seductive voice.

Seeing his girl like this, the blondy was stunned silly!

She had never acted this emotional even when he did that with her!

And now after being touched by this student looking brat, she grew this emotional! Her eyes were even about to cry!

What kind of situation is this?!

Liu Yi was also scared silly!

Since when did his hand have this kind of effect?!

It was as strong a powerful aphrodisiac!

“Hey hey hey!”

At this moment, Lin Tong’s voice once again resounded in Liu Yi’s ear.

“This miss is in your right hand. Thus, your right hand is now completely different from that of an ordinary person. Your right hand now have a new ability called the Amorous Ripple Hand! Brat, with this, you’ll be lucky afterward! See, this is the benefits of becoming an immortal cultivator!”

Benefits.....

Liu Yi wanted to cry!

That's because that hot and fiery woman had started rubbing his thigh.

Liu Yi immediately withdrew his hand. The woman woke up and immediately gave off piercing screams repeatedly. She started shouting and cursing and was about to slap Liu Yi.

"Molester! Does it look like I'm someone you can touch?! Go back home and touch your mother!"

Right when her hand was about to fall on Liu Yi's face, Liu Yi's sight suddenly changed.

He noticed that it was as if the whole world had slowed down.

The woman's hand was stopped near his face, slowly moving toward it.

And the color of the world had also changed. From the original colorful world, it had turned black and white.

Only the woman and the blondy next to her had a faint touch of yellow light.

Feeling that the situation was a mystery within a mystery, Liu Yi took a deep breath of the cold air. Feeling that he was sober and calm, clear and crisp, he moved backwards.

"Woosh!"

In a blink of an eye, the world had returned to normal.

As the woman's slap falls, it landed on the nearby blondy that was also about to beat Liu Yi up.

"Fuck! Why did you hit me?!"



The blondy immediately grew furious and returned the woman a slap.

“Wang Erbiao! You fucker! You dare hit me! I’ll kill you!”

“So what if I hit you?! What, you enjoyed being touched by this little bitch huh?! I wanted to beat him up but wanted to save him right?!”

“Right my ass!”

These two immediately started fighting. Seeing that the situation was to his advantage, Liu Yi immediately started running away.

Right away, Liu Yi discovered that he appeared different from the good for nothing senior high school student that he was before.

His physical strength had increased!

He had ran for so long. Had it been before, he would’ve long grew tired and started panting.

However today, he was still completely fine!

Instead, he felt that running was very easy.

Very strange indeed....

“This is due to this fox immortal’s immortal strength acting upon your body!”

The fox Lin Tong had once again appeared in front of Liu Yi. She told Liu Yi what had happened with an air of complacency.

As for Liu Yi, upon seeing this little fox, he grew immensely angry.

This girl! She almost brought upon him a great disaster! And she even dared to

appear again!

Is this girl really my savior?!

Liu Yi now began to think that she appeared more like his messenger of bad luck instead!

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 6

I haven't return home last night. Had it been like every other day, then mom's going to kill me for sure.

Luckily for me, mom was doing overnight shift last night and dad was also away for his work.

Liu Yi's mother was the supervising nurse of a large hospital. Although the position sounds good, it's very busy.

Doing overnight shifts and such are a common thing for her.

Yesterday would surely be the other days. Mom would have certainly left dinner on the kitchen table for Liu Yi to reheat.

However, Liu Yi's mother most certainly did not thought that her well behaved son would have stayed out the night!

Had she knew, then Liu Yi would certainly receive a beating from her.

Liu Yi's father was a purchaser. He runs around the country purchasing stuff. Thus, the time he gets to return home every month is limited.

It's an ordinary small family.

Liu Yi was also an ordinary senior high school student. He was ignored by others all his life. He wasn't handsome. His family wasn't rich nor do they have power. His wasn't smart and his sucks at sports. He's simply one of those people that sucks at everything in school.

As such, Liu Yi, with the exception of a couple good friends, was pretty much a transparent person in class.

But it was also this Liu Yi who ran across a little fox immortal!

A hateful little fox immortal that turned his right hand into the amorous ripple hand!

Fuck!

You didn't have to do this to me!

I still have a lot of uses for my right hand ah!

You didn't have to ruined it like this!

Liu Yi looked at his right hand. He wanted to cry.

How must he live his life now?!

Won't it be a complete mess now?!

"So many people had begged this lady to teach them the amorous ripple hand before and I refused to teach them. To receive such a godly capturing technique, how come you instead grew unhappy about it?!"

The little fox Lin Tong was floating in front of Liu Yi. She asked as she holds her front paws.

"The hell would you know! There's a lot of uses for my right hand!"

With a long face, Liu Yi asked. "Can I ask for a cancellation? I don't want it!"

"This.... of course...."

Lin Tong was about to speak. Suddenly her cute little eyes turned around. Then she said.

“...Of course not! You have to cultivate to become an immortal so that you can cancel the amorous ripple hand. Otherwise you’d have to live with it your whole life!”

Lin Tong’s words was like a thunderbolt to Liu Yi.

He was shocked silly from her words.

Must I really cultivate to become an immortal?

But... this Lin Tong doesn’t seem to be reliable at all!

“Be good. As long as you obediently follow this lady, becoming an immortal practitioner is not hard at all!”

Lin Tong continued to try to entice Liu Yi. “As long as you follow this lady, then your future will be set! No longer will you have to worry about wooing girls

How come this sounds like what people say to make you join the triad?!

Liu Yi’s mind was in a mess.

Right when he was hesitating, his phone suddenly rang.

The sudden rang of the phone scared Liu Yi so much that he quivered. Seeing that, Lin Tong started ridiculing him.

“Cheh! What a coward! To be scared by the ringtone of your phone, what a loser! Looks like this lady would have a lot of things to teach you...”

Lin Tong muttered in her heart. To have a cowardly fool as her apprentice, looks like there will be hard times ahead.

But in order to allow my body to break free, looks like I had to teach this idiot!

Fortunately I am in his body and can help him cultivate from within. Otherwise, if we were to go with this idiotic mortal's understanding abilities, he'll be doing pretty good if he were to be able to successfully open the first star jade and join the lower mortal realm.

Sigh, what bad luck!

It was her first time leaving the mountains to obtain essence yet she met a female immortal of the immortal realm and was sealed into the mortal's right hand!

Destiable! Abominable!

Who know what this hateful mortal uses his right hand for!

Annoying!

I must quickly get this mortal to the mid level of martial cultivation, then I'll be able to leave this seal!

"Say what?! Teacher might be looking for me? Just tell him when you see him that I went to the bathroom and will be right back!"

Liu Yi was scared witless. His legs were shaking.

Their teacher is well known for his strictness throughout the school!

Liu Yi didn't want to be punished by his teacher!

If he were to be punished by his teacher in front of the whole class, then he would surely be greatly humiliated.

It's one thing to be humiliated in front of other people.

But if he were to be humiliated in front of Ma Yixuan, then Liu Yi would never be able to lift his head up ever again.

Even if he was to receive an ass ramming next door, he still cannot allow himself to be slapped in front of his goddess!

This was the motto of a loser!

"Come, troubled child! Allow this lady to guide you into the magical world of immortal cultivation!"

Right when Lin Tong was filled with confidence, hesitation and the thought of going all out, Liu Yi shouted.

"Fuck! I'm fucked! I need to go back to school! As for the whole immortal business, we can talk about it later!"

Immediately after saying that, Liu Yi rushed off toward the park's exit.

He was rushing to the bus stop, if he did not get back to school on time, then he really will be fucked!

He would be punished by the teacher, humiliated in front of Ma Yixuan and, finally, had his parents called by the school!

Noo! That'll be a damned tragedy then!

Liu Yi frantically ran. He arrived at the bus stop to wait for a bus to school.

“Hey hey hey! You! How could this lady’s interrupt my speech! Let me tell you, this lady will be your master from now on! You better respect your master! Also! What is there that’s more important than letting this lady out.... than immortal cultivation?!”

“School! School is more important than immortal cultivation!”

Said Liu Yi in a completely serious manner as he stood at the bus station.

“If I don’t go to school, then I won’t be able to have qualifications! If I don’t have qualifications, I won’t be able to find a job! If I can’t find a job, I won’t be able to find a wife! If I can’t find a wife, then I can’t give birth to a child! If I can’t give birth to a child, then I won’t be able to let the child attend school....”

“Mortal, your life is tragedy!”

Unable to help herself, Lin Tong said. “Fortunately for you, you met this lady. This lady is your life’s beacon, your lucky star...”

“Shit! Fuck! I didn’t go home last night, I don’t have any money for the bus! My god! Miss fox immortal, my life is a fucking tragedy after meeting you!”



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 7

Liu Yi voiced his discontent openly.

The people waiting for the bus all send him looks..

“Mama, look! That big brother seems crazy!”

“Babe, I was waiting for the bus but instead met a fool!”

“Holy shit! There’s something to blog about today!”

A group of various onlookers.

Liu Yi’s face suddenly turned red. He remembered that others cannot see the little fox that lived in his right hand.

“It’s all your fault! I’m being seen as a crazy person by others now!”

Liu Yi hid his head into his collar and complained softly.

“Why are you blaming this lady?! It’s your own fault! Can’t you lower your voice to begin with?!”

The little fox rolled her eyes and said. “and Immortal Cultivation is very important, an unworldly importance! What would these mortals possibly understand! Don’t bother with them! After you become an immortal, they will be the one that’s jealous of you!”

“If I don’t get to school soon, then forgot about becoming an immortal, I’m afraid I’ll be experiencing the bliss of my life...”

Liu Yi dug into his empty trouser pocket and pulled a long face.

“Oh? Bliss of your life? Are you trying to obtain Nirvana? That won’t do, I’m a fox immortal, I can only teach you how to become an immortal! If you want to become cultivate the path of a monk.... you better find.... hey hey, why are you running?!”

Seeing that Liu Yi suddenly started chasing after a bus, the little fox cannot help but ask what Liu Yi was running for.

“If I don’t run... if I don’t run then I’ll be fucked for sure!”

Currently Liu Yi felt that he had a lot of stamina. Even running after the bus, he didn’t feel tired at all!

Usually he would’ve been tired like a dog after running just a mere fifty meters. How strange!

If that was the case, then might as well run after the bus every day, I’d be able to save money to go to the internet cafe and play DOTA that way...

Mmmhmm, I’m too smart!

To know how to live my life, Liu Yi, you are indeed a model economic man!

[TL: he’s talking to himself in his brains...]

I suspect that the women waiting for you to marry in the future could be queued from Shanghai all the way to Beijing!

[TL: it is widely known in china that women seeks 3 things in a man, money, height and looks. So he’s basically saying he’ll have enough money in the future due to being so economic that he’ll have enough girls waiting for him to marry them, enough to form a whole long from Shanghai all the way to Beijing.]

This was of course only my dreams...

Sigh! That dream I had of Ma Yixuan... to be woken up at the best part... that hateful aunty! Next time you ruin my dream again, I'll fight you!

Cried Liu Yi in his mind.

What Liu Yi didn't know was that at this moment, he had already attracted rows upon rows of eyeballs on him!

All kinds of people had their eyes on him. The pedestrians on the road. The passengers on the bus. The driver of the bus. All of them had their eyes on him.

This ordinary looking youngster wearing a school uniform and carrying a bookbag was running after the bus with only his two legs.

My fucking god! Are all youngsters nowadays this godly?!

His two legs were running even faster than four legged beasts!

"Look look! There's a school kid racing against a bus! Super cocky!"

"Don't speak without knowing! That kid might be a student athlete and is training by running after the bus!"

"Who the fuck cares! Doesn't change the fact that this kid is super cocky! Blog blog, I'll have to blog this!"

"Village cracker, who the heck still blogs nowadays! I'll post this onto Baidu!"

Liu Yi didn't know that he had become the main topic of everyone. He was completely determined to not be late. His legs were continuously moving as if they were made of springs.

“Troubled child, you used the remaining demon... immortal strength that I had in your body all on running!”

Said the little fox grudgingly as she floated next to Liu Yi.

“Aiyah! Leave some for this lady! Otherwise I won’t be able to guide you in opening your first star jade!”

“I don’t know what star jade moon jade business you’re talking about but if I don’t get to school quickly then my life would be a broken jade!”

Liu Yi shouted twice. He felt as if all the blood in his body was burning!

Never had he ran like this before!

Throughout his life, he had always been completely useless in sports.

The most he had ever done was watch NBA basketball games on the TV and get excited about Kobe Bryant dunking and such.

In every year’s sports competition and such, he was always that person guy passing out water to those handsome sports players and what not.

Sigh! High school athletes were very popular. Even Ma Yixuan looked to be very interested in those muscular men.

Liu Yi, on the other hand, had a puny body. He also lacked exercise. Thus, sports and the like wasn’t his forte at all!

However now, he had that kind of sensation as if his whole body was burning!

This kind of sensation was so euphoric, so comfortable and so manly!

The blood within his body was quickly flowing like a burning flame.

Every single muscle in his body had tensed up. It was like they became fists, allowing Liu Yi to feel as if he had overwhelming power to run!

Bus? What's that? Past it!

Liu Yi accelerated. His whole body was like the wind. In a flash, he ran past the bus.

And at this moment, all the passengers on the bus was stunned silly.

"Lil Die, look, isn't that our classmate Liu Yi?!"

Next to the bus windows, two very different beauties were standing next to each other in school uniform.

One of them had her hair dyed golden like the sand. She had a pair of large charming eyes and some baby fat. However, she was still immensely beautiful.

Seemly to be also because of her baby fat, her chest was a lot more plump compared to her classmate.

The unremarkable school uniform was popped up like there was two small hills. Causing all the men nearby to peep at her.

But because she was a student, she did not dress exposely at all. What she had underneath her uniform was a high necked white T-shirt. Without exposing any of her profound cleavage, she brought upon despair to all the men around.

As for the beauty next to her. Her figure was not as good as the big eyed girl and her chest was only slightly raised.

But her looks were a couple notches above her classmate. Her looks were even

more beautiful than TV stars. Her eyes had a hidden sense of status. She was at the level of a goddess!

“Who’s this Liu Yi? Don’t know him and never heard of him before.”

Said the beauty called lil Die curling her lips showing no signs of recollection.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 8

“Aiyah! Sis Die, wasn’t that a bit too many male classmates that you don’t know?!”

The golden haired super hot body girl chuckled while covering her mouth.

“As expected of our Miss Murong, it seems that our male classmates would once again despair!”

“They can go and despair all they want.”

Murong Die curled her lips. Her delicate tiny nose creased slightly. A sign of the goddess! Her actions have shook the hearts of numerous male passengers.

Sigh. If one could have such a beautiful girl as his girlfriend, then even if he have to lose twenty years off his life it’s still worth!

“What does their despair have to do with me? Also, Lele, can you stop calling me Miss Murong, I’ve told you many times, it’s very awkward!”

“Okay... but sis Die, we left so late today... would we be punished if we’re late?...”

“What are you scared of, it’s not like we don’t know the materials in the morning lectures!”

Murong Die was like a proud little peacock.

“Hehe, as expected of our Miss Murong, so domineering!”

Wang Lele couldn’t help herself and started laughing.

“You called me Miss Murong again! I’ll punish you!”

Murong Die extended one of her hand and pinched Wang Lele’s nose.

“Aiyah! Sis Die, you can’t pinch me like that!”

Wang Lele clutch her nose and said with eyes full of sadness. “It was originally pretty, now that you pinched it flat... who would want me now...”

“Don’t worry. Even if you have an overturned nose, there will still be men who want you!”

Murong Die cast her eyes at her friend’s chest area. Although she pretended not to care about it, she still does.

Sigh. We grew up together! What exactly did this Wang Lele eat that’s different from me? Did she took extra hormones? Or did she drank holy powdered milk? How come her chest is so much bigger than mine?...

“Sis Die is teasing me again...”

Wang Lele got even more depressed. “Overturned nose is very ugly, no one would want me for certain...”

“Your chest is sufficient enough to make up for everything...”

Murong Die suddenly had an evil smile. “Come, let sis check them out. Did they grow again?”

“Stop. Stop teasing me...”

Wang Lele quickly covered her chest. The people nearby were drooling. They were thinking in their hearts: No, don’t cover them! It’s not like you’ll get



pregnant from getting checked!

“Stop playing around.... Sis Die, look at that Liu Yi. How is he running like he’s Liu Xiang?!”

Said Wang Lele as she pointed toward the outside.

“Who know.... maybe Liu Yi is a student athlete...?”

For stuff like these, Murong Die didn’t care one bit.

She believed that her life was already a pain in the ass and didn’t want other trivial people to bring more trouble into her life.

However, as her sight landed on Liu Yi who was running outside the window, her eyes couldn’t help but shine slightly.

This unkempt looking boy... does indeed look a bit familiar.

Is he really my classmate?

She saw that this Liu Yi who was overlooked by her was currently running alongside the bus. His breathe was stable, his rhythm was good, he wasn’t running too fast nor was he too slow.

This guy was indeed running very fast!

Is this the daily training of student athlete?

Murong Die could not help herself but be curious.

As for Liu Yi, he didn’t know that the prettiest girl in class was currently looking at him. All that he had in his mind was that he cannot be late.

He'll be fucked if he's late!

Liu Yi's mind was muddled with worries. However, the sensation from the running was very pleasurable.

Could this be... the legendary sensation of chasing the wind?!

Shit, I became a dilettante!

"Run slower! This lady's immortal energy was almost completely wasted by you!"

Shouts of the little fox's heartache was constantly resounding in Liu Yi's ears.

As for Liu Yi, he didn't give a shit if it's immortal energy or immortal electricity, the only thing he knew was that if he stopped running, then he'll be fucked!

The bus had turned toward a high trestle bridge. Liu Yi about to follow the bus and cross the bridge when all of a sudden he noticed a weeping loli in the little forest underneath the bridge.

That loli looks to be about eleven or twelve. With a double ponytail hairstyle, a yellow bubbles skirt and princess stockings, the loli looked very cute.

She was standing under a tree, crying.

And next to her, on a tree that's about four or five meters tall, was a Mickey Mouse balloon.

Liu Yi heart immediately sunken. He turned around and ran down the bridge.

"Hey hey? What are you planning to do?"

The little fox quickly asked as she noticed that Liu Yi had suddenly stopped chasing after the bus.

“Help out!”

Liu Yi said.

“Are you serious?!”

The little fox Lin Tong immediately cried out in a surprise. “Weren’t you afraid of being late? You’re now running off to help out? Are you nuts?!”

“My grandfather had said that helping others is a man’s duty. If I wasn’t even willing to lift a finger to help others, then I might as well become a demon.”

“What’s wrong with being a demon?!”

The little fox immediately grew unhappy. She shouted “There’s also benevolent demons! Who said demons have to be evil?! Who said that?!”

Hearing the little fox asking about that all seriously, Liu Yi’s chest trembled. He had a sense of calamity.

“My... my grandfather said that...”

“How come it’s your grandfather again? What does your grandfather do?”

“He... he’s a butcher....”

“Fuck...”

Liu Yi felt that it was certain that he won’t be able to win against the little fox so he decided to ignore her mumbling by his ears and go toward the loli. In a couple steps, he had arrived next to the loli. He took a deep breath and forced a kind smile. He then bend down and asked the little loli.

“Little girl, do you need this big brother to help you out?”

The little loli sniffled. She lifted up her pinkish face and, upon seeing Liu Yi's unkempt appearance, immediately started crying even harder.

“Waaah.... mama... a monster... came to eat Lil Ying.....”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 9

“Waaahh.... mama... a monster... came to eat Lil Ying.....”

Seeing Liu Yi's unkempt appearance and dusty body, the loli thought that he was a forsest monster and immediately started crying.

Immediately, Liu Yi didn't know what to do.

Oh Heavens! What is happening...

“Little girl, this older brother is not a monster. I'm a human!”

Liu Yi pulled his face as he said those words.

He wanted to show that his face and everything else was real and he's not a monster morphed into a human shape.

“Rea-really..?..”

The little loli sniffled and then looked at Liu Yi pitifully.

This loli was way too cute. Her teary expression was a lethal weapon.

Thought Liu Yi. Fortunately, he wasn't a pedo.

“You can try pulling if you don't believe me.”

Liu Yi bend his back and placed his face toward the loli.

The little loli outstretched her hand and pulled Liu Yi's face gently.

“It’s true... it’s even a bit warm... sorry big brother, Lil Ying thought that you were a monster...”

Finding that Liu Yi was a human, the loli finally wiped her tears away and stopped crying.

“What’s wrong with monsters? What’s bad about monster?...”

The little fox once again started mumbling in Liu Yi’s ears.

Liu Yi felt as if this fox had been chanting at him as much as Tangseng did to Sun Wukong.

“Little girl, where’s your mom?”

asked Liu Yi.

“Mom went to the parking lot to get the car.... Lil Ying was playing here... but balloon flew to tree...”

Upon seeing the giant Mickey Mouse balloon that’s stuck to the tree, the little loli started crying again.

“Lil Ying, don’t cry. Big brother will help you get your balloon.”

“Really?”

Asked the little loli timidly after looking at the four to five meters tall tree.

“But.... this tree is very tall...”

“No problem, leave it to me!”

Said Liu Yi. He bend over and pretended to tie his shoes but instead lowered his

voice and asked the little fox.

“Your immortal strength... could that let me jump four to five meters?”

Liu Yi asked expectantly.

“You’re nuts! Did you think this lady is your super battery?!”

Unable to help herself, the little fox started attacking him with all kinds of words.

“Four to five meters tall, you need to at least open the first Star Jade and official enter the path of immortal cultivation!”

“That whatever Star Jade you spoke of... can I open it right away?”

Liu Yi quickly asked.

“Of course you can’t!”

The little fox immediately started scolding. “You good for nothing, did you think that you can become an immortal cultivator with just a word or two?! To open the first Star Jade and enter the path of immortal cultivation requires a lot of preparation! For an average person, it’ll be very difficult to even enter! You, however, was super lucky. You met this lady! With my help, you won’t have to walk all the detours in your preparation!”

“If that’s the case then let’s talk about it next time!”

Liu Yi looked at the teary eyed loli and decided that he have no time to prepare for the whole immortal cultivation thing.

He took a deep breath. Once again, that strange feeling within his body began to swell up.

His whole body's blood circulation had began to accelerate.

"You crazy bastard! You're wasting this lady's immortal strength again!"

Lin Tong quickly shouted. "Hey hey hey! Stop! Don't do this! You'll extract everything out of this lady!"

Too sinister!

Hearing that, Liu Yi's face reddened with embarrassment. However, he did not stop.

He stepped back two steps. Then he accelerated toward the tree. Like the wind, he immediately left behind a huge cloud of dust and instantly rushed up the tree.

Liu Yi felt as if he was a master of parkour. He stepped on the tree trunk and managed to run up there continuously!

In a couple steps, he noticed that it was as if there was a magical attraction on his feet pulling his body and sticking him to the tree trunk.

However, this magical attraction soon disappeared. His body suddenly sank and started falling toward the ground.

At this moment, Liu Yi had ran about two meters. He screamed and then quickly hugged the tree trunk.

He slid down the tree trunk a bit before stopping on the tree trunk.

This scared him so much that his heartbeat started pumping extra fast. The little loli was down on the ground screaming incessantly.

"Big brother, are you superhuman?!"



Superhuman?... what kind of superhuman is this...

I'm about to scared to death....

It was the first time Liu Yi did something this thrilling!

Liu Yi's heart was beating so fast that it was about to pop out. He wiped his cold sweat and felt very chilly on his forehead.

"You really are insane! This lady's immortal strength, you wasted it just like that!"

Lin Tong was in a immense heartache.

"Pleasure from helping other people is the foundations of one's personal character!"

Said Liu Yi quickly.

"As if this lady care about that! This lady isn't human! This lady is... is a female immortal!"

"Yes yes yes. Miss female immortal, please don't let me screw up. Just a bit more and I can get the balloon."

Said Liu Yi as he took another breath. Once again his blood circulation began to accelerate and his body immediately felt a lot lighter.

Borrowing the strength from this sensation, Liu Yi was like a monkey. In a short while, he climbed up to the top of the tree and retrieved the little loli's balloon.

"Wow! Big brother is awesome!"

The little loli was clapping down below.

And just when Liu Yi was about to climb back down, he suddenly began trembling and sweating an immense amount of cold sweat.

“What’s wrong big hero? Go back down! Or do you want to spend your whole life atop the tree?”

Lin Tong’s mocking voice once again rang in Liu Yi’s ears.

“I... I...”

“You what?”

“I’m afraid of heights...”

“Poof...”

[TL: burst out laughing sfx]

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 10

Liu Yi was afraid of heights!

Ever since he was young, when ever he looked down from a tall place, he will immediately get dizzy.

This time is of no exception.

He rushed up the tree earlier all bold and powerful. However, now that he had to get down from the tree, his brain immediately turned pitch black and he felt like throwing up.

So... so scary...

As they say, it's easier to ascend a mountain than descending it...

This principle holds true for tree climbing too...

Liu Yi felt as if he was about to faint.

“hey hey hey! Don't mess around with this lady! You're about to join the path of immortal cultivation, how could you possibly be afraid of heights...! Hey hey! What are you doing?! Don't let go! Hey! Don't let go Liu Yi!”

The Lin Tong that only Liu Yi could see and was floating next to him suddenly screamed.

Liu Yi finally could not help himself anymore. His arms grew weak and he fell down from the nearly five meters tall tree.

Even at that moment when he was falling down, his right hand was still tightly

grasping the balloon's string.

And at that moment, Liu Yi suddenly felt as if the time had slowed down.

A lot of images drifted past his mind.

Including one where he when he was a child. He didn't like to do homework and so his teachers would report to his parents about him not doing his homework which ended up giving him an ass whooping with a belt by his father.

There's also one of the first time Ma Yixuan moved to above their house. That chick was dressed in a beautiful yellow mini skirt and had been in Liu Yi's mind ever since.

[TL: I'm assuming Liu Yi lived in an apartment complex, so Ma Yixuan moved to the floor above.]

People had said that before someone dies, they will see their life flash by in their brains...

Could it be that... I'm really going to die?

OH NO!

I don't want to die!

I'm still a virgin! It's too much of a pity to die like that!

Yamete!!!

Gods! Please help me!

If I survive, I'd certainly burn incense, pray and worship you!

However, it seems like there was neither gods nor buddha that answered Liu Yi's last minute religious conversion.

However, a beautiful fox demon wasn't willing to let Liu Yi die.

"Idiot! Dumbass! This lady needs to save you! Waaah, my poor magical powers..."

The little fox demon cried out of heartache. She started spinning around Liu Yi's body at a lightning speed.

A white light that is hard for one to see suddenly appeared on Liu Yi's back.

While the little loli was screaming, Liu Yi's body slammed onto the ground with a loud bang.

The dust was everywhere. The yellowish autumn leaves on the trees were blown to dance.

"Big brother! Big brother! Are you okay?! Don't scare Lil Ying!"

The little loli was about to cry again.

How could one possibly survive falling from that height!

Liu Yi was grimacing in pain. Although the fall had caused him pain all over, it wasn't that serious.

It seems like there was something acting as a cushion earlier!

Only because of that something did I not die from the fall.

Liu Yi rubbed his ass. He stood up to the surprised little loli and handed over the balloon he had in his right hand.

“Big brother is okay. Here. You better hold your balloon tight this time.”

“Mmm...”

The little loli looked at Liu Yi with admiring eyes.

“Big brother, you really are a super human! You’re fine even after falling from such a height...”

“Fortunately this big brother had practiced the iron buttocks martial arts before.”

However, what Liu Yi thought in his mind was that little fox Lin Tong likely saved him.

But how come this girl isn’t making any noise this time around?

Is she sulking?

“Thank you big brother! Big brother, you’re this powerful, maybe I should introduce my big sister to you!”

The little loli blinked her eyes and looked at Liu Yi with an expression of expectancy.

“If you become Lil Ying’s brother in law, you’d certainly be able to protect Lil Ying!”

“Eh.... it’s okay. Big brother is going to be late for class, so he’ll go ahead. You be good and stay here and wait for your mom’s return!”

Liu Yi suddenly remembered the whole school issue and immediately felt that he fucked up.

Fuck! I'm really going to be fucked now.

They say that when you survive a calamity, you'll be followed by good luck... how come I keep getting bad lucks....

Am I possessed by the god of bad fortune?

No, that can't be. It's a little fox immortal that came into my right hand!

Although she had a bad temper, she should be a good fox immortal...

Otherwise, she won't have saved me twice.

"Okay... then big brother, what's your name?"

"My name's Lei Feng."

Said Liu Yi proudly with his chest sticking out.

[TL: In case you forgot, Lei Feng is the model citizen known for his altruism.]

"Puu... big brother you're too funny..."

"Lil Ying!"

A voice of a woman came from the other side of the little forest.

"Ah! Mama is calling me. I'll go to my mama now!"

The little loli waved her hands at Liu Yi and said "Big brother, you better remember my name. I'm called Liu Ying!"

After saying that, the little loli with two ponytails left hopping.

This little loli, she's pretty cute.

Her older sister... perhaps she is a beauty...

Maybe it would be nice to know her...

Cough cough. Bad thoughts. I better rush to school!

Liu Yi turned around and wanted to start running again only to find out that no matter how, he was unable to feel that magical blood boiling sensation.

What's with this... did that Lin Tong girl get stingy and refuse to lend me her immortal strength?

"Beautiful fox immortal? Big sister fox immortal? What's wrong? Are you really mad at me?"

Quickly asked Liu Yi.

However Lin Tong did not respond. It was as if she disappeared into the air.

"Okay... it seems like you really don't want to talk to me..."

Lin Yi shook his head. He felt that since he's going to be late anyways, might as well not overly concern himself with it and started walking toward the school slowly.

And in his right hand, a sound so weak that it's barely audible resounded.

"This.... giant... fool..."



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 11

“Yo! And here I thought you were a beggar, isn't this our Liu Yi?”

Right when Liu Yi arrived at the first floor of the school, he bumped into three students with gaudy dyed hair.

The leader amongst them was a guy called Kevin. One could say that he's handsome. His head was dyed red with streaks of yellow to show off his distinct individuality.

His school uniform was also torn and tarred. The uniform was also painted with colorful drawings.

Liu Yi knew that although boys his age envy and want to be the gangsters and hooligans, they wanted tattoos but certainly won't dare get them for real.

Perhaps it was because of their fear of pain. Or perhaps they feared to be arrested by the police.

In addition to that, the school required the students to wear school uniforms. Thus, in order to show off their personality, the students took a lot of time to alternate the designs of their uniforms.

This guy standing in front of him was exactly one of those student.

Not only does he love to show off his personality, he also loved to bully Liu Yi for fun.

He's one of the top delinquent within Liu Yi's classroom. The delinquent group he belonged to wasn't small either, about seven or eight.

He usually would take the some bad male students in the class and bring them to the washroom to secretly smoke. He also love to threaten students for money after school.

Liu Yi, with his timid and cowardly personality, was one of his frequent target.

“Hey Liu Yi, I heard that you got tough.”

Kevin and the two boys he was with blocked the stairs and Liu Yi’s path.

“You even dared to go after general Yuan Shaojun’s chick. Cheh cheh, who would’ve knew. Usually you’re just a wussy but now you actually grew balls. Extraordinary! Extraordinary! Perhaps we should start following Boss Liu instead.”

As he was saying, Kevin started being unable to hold himself back and started laughing with his two rascal friends.

A laughter filled with ridicule.

Liu Yi’s face was reddened with embarrassment. He clenched his fist. His heart was very displeased. However, he didn’t dare to say anything.

He is just a mediocre and honest high school student who had never once dared of fighting others in school.

When he sees delinquents like these, what he usually do was to move out of their way.

Usually he would try his best not to bump into Kevin and them but who would’ve expect him to be so unlucky today, getting surrounded by them.

It was supposed to be evening study right now. Seems like these three were

planning to skip class!

With students like these skipping classes, even the teachers pretty much didn't care anymore.

As long as they don't make too much trouble, they were pretty much left alone to do as they will.

"Stop...stop joking.... let me pass please... I'll be late..."

Said Liu Yi with a low voice, holding back his anger.

"Aiyah, say what? Speak louder! I can't hear you!"

Kevin asked loudly with a sarcastic expression. He even placed one of his hand over his ear.

"Boss Liu, if you have something to reprimand this lowly I, then please say it! This lowly I am waiting."

"That's right. That's right. It seems like our Liu Yi wasn't suited for a being boss and is only suitable for being a wussy! Hahaha! Isn't that right, wussy Liu?!"

The three students all walked toward Liu Yi. They pushed Liu Yi's head and slap his neck.

"Wussy Liu, with the way that you are, you even dared to like Ma Yixuan?! I'd say you might as well go home and masturbate, at least you'd be happy that way!"

Kevin sneered at Liu Yi repeatedly.

Liu Yi was very angry.

He felt that something within his body was scattering quickly.

It was as if there was thousands of insects crawling around in Liu Yi's body, causing him wanting to explode.

Too much! This really was too much!

It's one thing for them to bully me! But to use Ma Yixuan to ridicule me...

Thinking back of that Yuan Shaojun's arrogance when he warned him of Ma Yixuan, Liu Yi's inner anger burned even greater.

Why must I be bullied by them?!

Why can't I be able to obtain Ma Yixuan?!

Why?!

"Aiyah! Look! Seems like wussy Liu is getting angry!"

"Hahaha! A wussy is always a wussy, as if getting angry would change that!"

"That's right. That's right. Us brothers were just about to go to the internet cafe and we have no money."

Threatened Kevin as he placed his hand on Liu Yi's shoulder.

"Wussy Liu, you better get some money for us to spend. Don't let us get angry. Because if we do, then you'll be sorry!"

"I got no money..."

Liu Yi's voice contained some chilliness and shakiness.

"No money?!"

Kevin took out his hand and directly went after Liu Yi's pockets. Sure enough, there wasn't even a single cent.

"Fuck! Poor piss fuck!"

A student cannot help himself and started cursing out loud.

"Fucking poor fuck! No wonder Ma Yixuan don't like you! Fucking fool, go to your fucking class! Fucking wussy Liu!"

Kevin cannot help himself and started swearing while talking. He even pushed Liu Yi to the wall.

"I'm not a wussy."

Liu Yi's back was slammed onto the wall. The pain from that impact resounded through his body.

He felt that at that moment, the whole blood within his body started to accelerate again.

A chilly sensation appeared in his body.

"Say what, little shit? Say it again!"

"Did you grew too tired of living?!"

The three immediately surrounded Liu Yi. They were rolling up their sleeves and glaring at him like a tiger watching its prey.

"I said..."

Liu Yi lowered his voice for the last couple words.

“You said what?”

Inquired Kevin.

“I said...I’m going to fuck your whole family up!”

[TL: raw say’s I’m going to 日 your whole family. 日 means sun, daytime, date, etc. It could also mean Japan as Japan is called 日本. In WW2, Japan conquered 1/3 or so of China and raped, pillaged , and killed Chinese everywhere they go. So there you go, Liu Yi is saying a major ‘fuck you’ to them.]

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 12

“Liu Yi. Grandfather is teaching you. One should always keep a low profile. After you go to school, you’ll still have to be honest and sincere. Don’t get into fights with others. Even if others bully you, you must still restrain your anger. Grandfather is teaching you. Take a step back and the boundless world would open itself to you! Take a step forward and you’ll be harming yourself!”

When Liu Yi was young, both of his parents were busy.

Thus, he was basically raised by his grandfather.

Ever since childhood, Liu Yi had always been listening to his grandfather’s teachings.

At that time, grandfather lived in a small county town. There wasn’t many people in the town.

Only when Liu Yi grew up did he came to know that when his grandfather was younger, he was also a distinguished and elegant playboy with multiple wives!

This was something that the older Liu Yi envy a whole lot.

Alas, Liu Yi was unable to inherit the glorious tradition of his grandfather.

Additionally, Liu Yi had also heard that his grandfather had participated in the war of resistance against the Japanese and was a hero for beating back the devils.

[TL: The Chinese in WW2 called the Japanese as Japanese Devils. Devils is what they usually call them by, shortened.]

Therefore, everyone in the small county town was very respectful toward his grandfather.

Particularly, Liu Yi had heard from his grandfather that in his younger days, he burst into the devils' camps all alone with only his rifle and machete and single handedly killed seven devils going in and seven devils going out. The Liu Yi of then admired and revered his grandfather incessantly.

Although Liu Yi doesn't know if his grandfather was bragging, it didn't change the image of the glorious grandfather that he had in his mind.

Thus, he had always kept the words his grandfather told him as his life's motto.

Grandfather said not to get into fights.

However, he actually kicked someone.

And this someone was the scariest guy in his class...

Liu Yi at that time was still not a bit scared of what might happen afterwards. All he felt was that it was as if there was a demon imprisoned within his body telling him to fight, a fight that's best if blood was drawn!

If he kicked this Kevin down the stairs and have him break his neck, oh how amusing that would be!

Such a thought flashed through Liu Yi's mind, causing even he himself to be shocked.

Oh Heavens, what's with me...

"You! You dared kick me!"



Kevin stepped back two steps after being kicked. He almost fell from the stairs. Fortunately, his two buddies managed to steady him.

He was more surprised than in pain.

The usually quiet Liu Yi that allows people to bully him actually unexpectedly actually did such a thing!

Did he eat something wrong?!

“Bastard! I think you’re tired of living!”

Kevin had never been kicked by another before. In particular, he had never been kicked by a wussy before. He felt that he cannot keep his face if he took the kick without doing anything back so he decided to teach Liu Yi a harsh lesson.

Liu Yi’s eyes was slightly glowing red.

Seeing the furious Kevin coming toward him with his two buddies, Liu Yi wasn’t afraid, he was instead excited.

And right at this moment, a shout came from someone on the stairs.

“What are you guys doing here and not going to class?!”

Liu Yi, Kevin and them immediately turned around to look. Oh boy! Immediately their back was sweating cold bullets.

The incoming man had a body filled with murderous aura. He had a tough and stocky build. His eyes were shining like a Gundam. His head was bald like the reincarnation of Vajrapani. Who else can he be other than their guidance director?

Immediately Liu Yi’s murderous aura faded away, it faded away super fast!

His legs were weak and he was very scared.

Oh Heaven! What did I do?!

I actually kicked Kevin!

Isn't... isn't this searching for problems?...

“Director Wang, he hit me!”

Immediately shouted Kevin as he pointed toward Liu Yi. “You see, he kicked me earlier!”

Liu Yi immediately grew nervous.

He knew that he was fucked. Not only would he be beaten up later, his parents would be called by the director...

Once his father knew that he fought in school... he'll surely whip Liu Yi to death with his belt...

Although his father didn't manage to inherit his grandfather's handsomeness, he managed to inherit completely his grandfather's violence when he attacked the devils...

Right when he thought of that his body subconsciously imagined the pain...

“Nonsense! You think I'm a fool?!”

This Director Wang suddenly frowned. “Do I look like I don't know what kind of person you are, Kevin?”

“Dir...director! This time it really was I who got hit...”

It was the first time Kevin felt wronged.

“You deserve to be hit! Return to your class immediately!”

“Director my... my stomach hurts... I need to go see the doctor...”

Said Kevin immediately while shaking his head.

‘Then go there quickly! Don’t stay here and tarnish the air in the school!’

Shouted Director Wang.

“Yes... yes...”

Kevin could do nothing other than take his two buddies and descend the stairs.

However, at that moment when he was descending down the stairs, he dropped by words to Liu Yi.

“Bastard... I’ll see you after school!”

After finish saying those words, the three descended down the stairs like a wisp of smoke. They showed no sign of having stomachache at all.

“A group of worry-free students! You, quickly return back your class too!”

Director Wang doesn’t know Liu Yi so he just lectured him and left immediately.

Liu Yi’s heart immediately started beating. He rejoined from escaping a calamity but, at the same time, started worrying deeply.

This is bad! Kevin will certainly gather a lot of people after school to beat me up... it’s impossible for me to escape that...

Reckon with that vengeful nasty personality of his, he might even beat me up every day...

My god! Don't tell me he might even force me to transfer school...

But... Liu Yi was a bit reluctant to leave Ma Yixuan...

In the whole eighteen years that Liu Yi was alive, this was the first time that he had a headache.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 13

“Good one, Liu Yi, you learned to be late.”

Luckily this lesson was not taught by Liu Yi's homeroom teacher but instead was taught by a literature teacher.

This literature teacher was an old bald man that's like fifty years old or so. He's a funny guy and Liu Yi liked his class.

Seeing Liu Yi knocking on the classroom door, the literature teacher fixed his glasses before making fun of Liu Yi.

“Based on the way you look, I suspect you went to pick up garbage this morning?”

Liu Yi was covered in dust. He had slept a whole night in the park and then ran to school. Thus, he was currently covered in sweat and dust.

After being made fun of by the literature teacher, the students in the class immediately turned over and started laughing at the embarrassed Liu Yi.

Liu Yi was completely ashamed. He wanted to find a hole and hide.

He didn't even dare to turn around to look at Ma Yixuan.

She must be laughing at me...

He already had a bad impression on her... and with this... his impression just got lowered to a failing level.

“Forget it, forget about it. Quickly, go back to your seat and learn.”

The old literature teacher didn't want to delay the classroom time, he waved his hand and told Liu Yi to go to his seat.

“Thank you teacher....”

Dejected, Liu Yi returned to his seat.

Chen Cai who was sitting next to him looked at his calamity with delight. He said.

“Oh Liu Yi, Liu Yi. You got lucky today. When our homeroom teacher was taking attendance, he was called over by the principle. However, the way you dressed was really elegant. Wasn't this the most fashionable beggar outfit from a couple years back? Did it got popular recently again?”

“Go fuck yourself...”

Liu Yi glared at Chen Cai.

A shitty friend! A shitty friend indeed!

Liu Yi laid on the table. He secretly looked at Ma Yixuan who was sitting at the front.

She was wearing a school uniform. Her head was lowered. She was smiling and secretly sending text message to someone.

From Liu Yi's point of view, it looked like a mocking smile.

Oh lord! Was she laughing at me?....

Suddenly, Liu Yi got curious. Ma Yixuan was sending some kinda microblog message...

He strongly wanted to know what she was sending.

He had a curiosity like a fire, burning directly in his heart.

And just at this moment, his body's blood flow suddenly accelerated again.

A sensation like he's high suddenly hit him again.

In a flash, Liu Yi's sight suddenly changed.

It was like he was wearing a high powered telescope. He instantly narrowed the distance between the two.

Even the tiny mole that Ma Yixuan had behind her ears was clearly reflected in Liu Yi's sight.

Holy shit! What the heck happened?!

Liu Yi was surprised.

However, his surprise was not long lasted as his eyesight immediately returned back to normal.

The clear and beautiful Ma Yixuan had faded away from his sight. The distance between the two once again grew apart.

What the heck just happened?!

Liu Yi was both confused and surprised.

He wanted to ask the little fox about what happened. However, she didn't respond at all! It was as if she was mad or something.

She was acting like a forum lurker!

Liu Yi wanted to know so bad that he began to try calling from her in his heart.

My dear old female immortal sister! I need your help!

How could you disappear on me like this?!

Please show yourself....

Liu Yi was constantly calling for Lin Tong. However, unfortunately for him, she never once respond.

Chen Cai saw Liu Yi grasping his hands tightly as if he was praying for something.

“Liu Yi, what happened? I just teased you a couple times and you decided to start jerking off here?!”

“Fuck off. I’m immortal cultivating!”

Liu Yi gave his shitty friend a white eye.

“Hahaha! Immortal cultivating? Then I’ll computer cultivate!”

Chen Cai immediately started laughing out loud.

“Liu Yi, Chen Cai, do you want to try standing up for the whole lecture?!”

Said the old literature teacher, frowning.

Immediately, Chen Cai stopped himself.

Liu Yi felt that he had been wronged.



God damn! It's Chen Cai who was laughing and talking! Why must I be included?!

Man, why did I have to have a shitty friend?!

Liu Yi once again gave Chen Cai a white eye. Then he paid all his focus into trying to figure out what exactly happened to his eye sight.

I wanna see!

I WANNA SEE!

Ma Yixuan is playing with her phone again!

Liu Yi was staring at Ma Yixuan's phone. His eyes had started to get sore.

I wanna see! Let me do it again!

As if from deep dark within, someone was responding to Liu Yi's request.

Soon, Liu Yi began to feel that his blood flow had once again started accelerating.

The icy cold sensation once again flow through his whole body.

His eyesight suddenly increased and landed on Ma Yixuan's phone.

It was a latest Samsung phone. Big screen. Looks stunning.

Ma Yixuan was indeed sending a microblog message.

The content of that message was also clearly reflected in Liu Yi's eyes.

Immediately after seeing the message, Liu Yi felt ice cold from head to toe. It was as if an ice cellar dropped on him.

He saw that Ma Yixuan was sending a message to man called “Mr. Perfect of the New Society”.

“Hubby! Hubby! Guess what, that Liu Yi in my class was stupid as heck. He dressed like a beggar to school today. And that loser wanted to pursue me!”

“Don’t pay attention to him. He’s been on my nerves for a while now. I’ll get a couple guys and teach him a lesson tonight!”

Replied that Mr. Perfect of the New Society.

“xoxo. Hubby’s the best after all! That idiot is so annoying! I’m so unfortunate! He even lived next to me. Just thinking that I might run into him when I go out got me all gloomy and depressed. Hubby, why don’t you beat him up real good and scare him to move?!”

“Hahaha! No problem! I’ll do that! Remember to reward me tonight!”

“Hubby, you’re so mean...”

Liu Yi’s heart had frozen into ice and then cracked into pieces.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 14

Liu Yi really liked Ma Yixuan.

From his point of view, Ma Yixuan was an innocent pretty girl, not one bit contaminated.

However now, Liu Yi was so hurt that he wanted to cry.

As the saying goes...

For every girl that you cannot get, there's always another man who would fuck her till she vomits.

Judging from the contents of her message, not only was Ma Yixuan not pure, her heart was also very evil.

She actually asked the head of those hooligans, Yuan Shaojun, to not only beat him, but to beat him badly so that he would be forced to move.

Immediately, Liu Yi's heart was broken into pieces. Even using the super strong 502 glue, it'd be impossible to glue it back.

Even if Ma Yixuan didn't like him, she didn't have to do such a thing!

She actually wanted to do such a thing to him...

Immediately, Liu Yi lowered his evaluation of Ma Yixuan exponentially.

The goddess that was all high and above had instantly become a demoness in Liu Yi's heart.

Ma Yixuan! Oh Ma Yixuan! I, Liu Yi, had mistaken you for someone better!

Liu Yi was immensely depressed. Nothing can go through him anymore.

He dropped his head onto the table, no longer able to take in anything.

And as if because he overused his powers, Liu Yi soon began to be overcome by a strong sense of sleepiness.

He was unable to control himself. Although he was fighting to keep his eyes awake, his eyelids soon began to close. Like two terribly heavy iron gates, his eyelids, little by little, began to fall.

Liu Yi had entered a heavy slumber.

“Liu Yi! Liu Yi!”

In his trance like state, Liu Yi heard a girl calling him.

“Who... who’s calling me?...”

Liu Yi saw that he was surrounded by a pitch of darkness. Wasn’t I laying on the table in class? How did I get here?

Like the dark abyss of hell, Liu Yi was unable to see anything at all.

Liu Yi started to get a hint of fear in his heart.

Where is this?!

Liu Yi was filled with nervousness.

“Idiot... this is the world of your subconsciousness!”

And at that moment, that girl's voice once again resounded.

Liu Yi turned around. What he saw was an image of a beautiful woman of about 1.7 meters.

That image of a beautiful woman was very fuzzy. From the looks of it, it should be a girl with an exquisite figure that causes one to drool over.

However, as for her appearance, it's indistinct because there was a layer of fog around her face, hiding it.

"Dumbass! Do you not know who this lady is anymore?!"

Hearing that familiar voice, Liu Yi suddenly remembered. He looked at the image and shouted in surprise.

"My dear older female immortal sister, you finally came out! I'd been dying to see you!"

"Really? Seems like you want to become an immortal cultivator now?"

The little fox cannot help but chuckle within.

Humph humph. This fool seems to have taken the bait to become an immortal cultivator. Not bad not bad. Seems like I can develop him!

"No no, that's not it. Today I was bullied by others and will likely be jumped tonight! Could you please lend me some of your power so that I won't suffer so much when they beat me up?"

Seeing Liu Yi's eyes that was filled with expectation, Lin Tong almost vomited blood and died.

This good for nothing...

This bastard...

He's done for!!

“Lend you my ass! Why can't you man up for once?! As long as you start cultivating, you'll gain power and no longer would have to take beatings anymore!”

“Oh?”

Liu Yi blinked his eyes. He suddenly understood.

“I understand! I understand now!”

He clapped his hand. The little fox was really happy.

Looks like he can still be developed...

“After I cultivate, I'll gain strength!”

“Mmmhmm...”

“And once I gain strength, my athleticism would also increase!”

“Mmmhmm...”

“Once my athleticism increases, I'll be able to run faster! Then when I get a beating again, I will be able to run away! With my super fast speed like a rolling dung, let's see how any of them would be able to catch me then!”

“You.....”

The little fox almost died from anger.

This good for nothing! This useless idiot!

This guy won't be able to accomplish anything!

"You... can't you strive a bit more?!"

The little fox scold Liu Yi.

"Did you plan to have others beat you up your whole life?! Did you not dare to fight back after gaining power?!"

"But my grandfather said that fighting is bad..."

"Your grandfather again! What exactly does your grandfather do!"

"Butcher..."

"Motherdamshitfuck.... how are you still alive then?!"

"Fuck, I ain't no pig!"

"Liu Yi finally understood that he had been scold by the little fox.

Sure enough, all foxes are cunning. He won't be able to win in a fight of words against her!

Sigh. Oh grandfather! You taught me all those things, why didn't you teach me how to face pretty women....

Grandfather!

I hate you!

Liu Yi wanted to cry.

How come I am so miserable. The woman that I like wants to find people to beat me up.

I encountered a little fox... and she called me a pig!

I'm such a lovely boy, how could I possibly be a pig?!

"Regardless, whether you're a good for nothing or a good for nothing, you still need to follow this lady and learn the arts of immortal cultivation!"

Lin Tong bluntly stomped her foot and said with a delicate roughness.

"Why must I?... not like I'm sold to you!"

Liu Yi was unconvinced.

"Why must you? Because you should fight for yourself!"

Said Lin Tong immediately after turning her eyes.

"Ah?"

Lin Yi was blinking stupidly. He didn't understand why the little fox would say such a thing.

"You really are a fool!"

The little fox saw Liu Yi's stupid appearance and sighed.

"And you're also a super nice guy..."



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 15

What the heck!....

Liu Yi wanted to cough up blood.

How did I received the 'good person' card so quickly?!

"Did you hear me or not?! You have to follow this lady and start cultivating!"

Lin Tong emphasized again.

"I... I don't know what to do..."

Liu Yi suddenly sighed.

"I'm not in any mood right now...."

"It's just getting dumped by a girl! What's the huge deal?! What's more, that girl is only of average appearance!"

"Says who?! She's very pretty!"

Liu Yi immediately retorted.

This girl Lin Tong actually thinks that my standards of beauty was bad!

Outrageous!

"Good for nothing, you are so very short sighted! What is exactly good about that woman?! Her looks are average, her figure are average and her heart is evil!"

And you actually like a girl like that? You're really too much!"

"I...."

Although Lin Tong had an nasty tongue, what Ma Yixuan wanted to do to him was also an indisputable truth.

Sigh....

How come I am so unfortunate?!....

Too depressing.

"Don't be discouraged. Even losers have their springtime of youth."

Lin Tong changed the topic. Her voice was gentle and comforting.

"As long as you learn the arts of cultivation from this lady, you'll be able to take care of all kinds of beautiful girls!"

She once again tried to entice Liu Yi. Her sweet and pleasant voice was like a soft and gentle little hand that was continuously caressing Liu Yi's ears, causing even his chest to itch.

"At that time, not mentioning Ma Yixuan, even girls who are tenfold or even a hundredfold more beautiful than Ma Yixuan, you'd still be able to get them!"

"Rea...really?..."

Liu Yi was a bit tempted.

As a man, who wouldn't want to find a beautiful girl as his girlfriend?!

Those guys in school who already have girlfriends... so very enviable.

To say that I am don't envy them is a lie.

At least I'm still sane. My classmate Chen Cai was already jerking off constantly from the lack of girlfriend and about to go insane.

In order to attain a girlfriend and enjoy the school life with a female, he almost went after that super fat girl who weighed twice his weight!

It's one thing that she was only fat... There's this one time where Liu Yi didn't leave right away after class, he personally witnessed that fat girl taking off her shoes in the summer... the way she looked as she was picking under her toenails...

Ever since, Liu Yi had this frightful image installed into his mind.

He had always suspected that Chen Cai have a thing for fat girls but Chen Cai never admit that.

If he were to tell Chen Cai that in his right hand sealed a beautiful little fox immortal, then Chen Cai would likely die from jealousy.

"Of course it's true, this lady won't lie! This lady is a female immortal!"

The little fox lied without blinking her eyes.

"Ohh...ohhkay... then how do I cultivate? I have absolutely no idea..."

"Fear not! You have this lady here!"

Lin TOnG patted her chest. She said proudly. "Who do you think this lady is? This lady is the most intelligent and most talented fox de... fox immortal in the past couple centuries!"

“Oh... is that so...”

“Fuck! Hearing such a great news and you’re still not moved at all! Are you even alive?!”

Lin Tong stared at Liu Yi angrily.

Liu Yi gave an wronged look.

It’s not like he can perceive talents and such...

“Okay... fox immortal older sister...”

“Stop calling me fox immortal older sister!”

Lin Tong was very dissatisfied. “You have to call me master!”

“Hah?”

Liu Yi blinked a few times in confusion. “I need to call you master?!”

To call a young and beautiful girl his master... it was a bit hard for Liu Yi to accept.

“Of course! I’m teaching you how to cultivate for immortality, what should you call me if not for master?!”

“No, I can’t!”

Liu Yi waved his hands around in disagreement. “Even if you beat me to death I won’t call you master!”

“Why?”

“My grandfather had said that if I were to ever meet a young and beautiful girl, she most certainly must not be my master!”

“Ah? Then what must she be?”

“She should be my wife!”

“You...fucker...”

The veins on Lin Tong’s face was bulging from anger...if she had veins, that is.

“My grandfather had also said that if I were to call a beautiful girl master, then it’ll be making her sound old!”

“Your grandfather finally said something right... alright, don’t call me master then... I’ll also feel weird if you did...”

“Then what should I call you?”

“Well... let me think...”

Lin Tong had her finger on his lips. She thought for a moment and said.

“Just call me the super-ultra-hyper-awesome-unequalled-beautiful-girl Lin Tong!”

“Okay! Fox immortal older sister, let’s start then!”

“Fuck...”

Lin Tong wanted to kick Liu Yi.

However, once she thought of the fact that he was the host that she should protect and use, she gave up the thought.

Alas, the super talented super genius super beautiful Lin Tong was sealed into this man's right hand!

Sigh. What a depressing situation!

Once I can get out, I won't ever dare to go around sucking people's essence.

Why must I be caught the first time I did that....

I'm really too unfortunate!

Humph Humph! It must certainly be because I'm too beautiful and smart! That's why heaven is deliberately making things difficult for me!

Yes! That must be the case!

Even the heaven was jealous of the beautiful me!

"Umm... fox immortal older sister... can we start now?"

In order to be able to run faster at tonight's beating, Liu Yi started to urge Lin Tong.

Lin Tong was confused. How come this kid was so initiative this time around?

But, this was a good thing!

"Good. In that case, let me teach you how to open your body's first star jade!"

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 16

“Star jade? What is star jade?”

Liu Yi had absolutely no idea what Star jade is.

“Never heard of star jade, but I’ve heard of star constellation. I’m a Taurus, the most steadfast one!”

“Don’t group the sacred arts of immortal cultivation with your constellation and whatnot! You good for nothing! Super duper good for nothing!”

Liu Yi angered Lin Tong so much that even her body began to shudder in anger.

She stared at Liu Yi in anger and said. “interrupt me again and I won’t teach you anymore! Let’s see how you’ll get beat up later tonight!”

“Yes yes! I won’t interrupt again...”

Liu Yi felt that the words Star Jade was filled with evil intent.

However, he didn’t say it out loud.

Mmmm, he’s a pure and sweet and harmonious youth. There are some things he shouldn’t think crooked of. Amitabha Buddha.

Liu Yi attempted to not let his imagination run wild.

“In fact, as a human, it’s a lot easier for you to embark the path of immortal cultivation, much easier than us demons!”

Said Lin Tong with a tone of jealousy toward the Liu Yi who didn't know that he was better off than others.

“In the bodies of you humans, there existed twenty eight star jades that are arguably treasures in immortal cultivation! As for us demons, we didn't have any star jades in our body. If we want to cultivate, we would have to use our own demonic powers and absorb the essence of heaven and earth. Only then could we little by little cultivate our own star jade. Since you humans already have twenty eight star jades in your body, as long as you practice hard enough, you'll be able to open those twenty eight star jades and attain the pinnacle of immortal cultivation!”

“In that case... which star jade are you on now?”

Asked Liu Yi.

“Humph humph! I'm the great genius of the fox clan that only appear in a thousand years! This lady had cultivated for less than a hundred years but had already opened four star jades and successfully entered the middle mortal realm!”

“What is this middle mortal realm?”

Liu Yi was confused.

“Humph humph! Seems like you don't know! Okay, this lady is in a pretty good mood today, so let me tell you about it patiently!”

Lin Tong circled around Liu Yi's body once and said.

“The path of cultivation is divided into three stages. The Mortal Realm, the Earthly Realm and the highest Heavenly Realm! Each realm was further subdivided into three phases; the Lower, Middle and Upper. In order to enter the next phase, one must open three star jades. If you were to open your first



star jade, then you'd enter the Lower Mortal Realm."

"So that's what it is, so complicated..."

Although Liu Yi was only so so in math, he still managed to do some mental math and said "Wasn't this only twenty seven star jade? What about the last one?"

"The person who is able to open the last star jade shall obtain the power of god!"

Lin Tong gave Liu Yi a white eye. "Just by you, this huge good for nothing, you'll be doing very well if you could attain the upper mortal realm! With talents and personality like yours, trying to reach the earthly realm would be a wishful thinking!"

"Is it that ridiculous?...."

Hearing Lin Tong's words, Liu Yi was a bit dejected. His face dropped.

"Did you think that upper mortal realm wasn't powerful?"

Lin Tong feared that Liu Yi would give up immortal cultivation so she quickly began to try comforting him.

"If you were to be obtain the upper mortal realm, no one would be able to stop you in the human world. Only the superior experts could possibly be able to attain the earthly realm. And those who could attain the heavenly realm were the legendary few that are super strong... as for gods, they're things of fairy tales and myths. In any case, I have never met a expert of the heavenly realm. All I know was that my master is an expert of the earthly realm."

"Can I really do as I want if I attain upper mortal realm?..."

To be honest, Liu Yi was a bit yearning.

“Of course! Regardless, nothing bad will come from following this lady! Once you reach the third star jade, I could then have you help unseal me!”

The little fox thought to herself. Humph humph, you obviously can't reach that level.

As long as Liu Yi learned the arts of cultivation and reach the third star jade, then I shall be able to escape from his body.

As for the arts of cultivation that I am about to teach Liu Yi, it is the cultivation method of the Fox clan.

Although the outcome of having a human cultivate using the fox clan's method was unknown, one thing was certain. That was, once I escape from his body, I could absorb Liu Yi's essence and my strength would likely increase rapidly. I might even be able to create two more star jades and enter the upper mortal realm!

Humph humph, let's see what kind of female immortal could stop this lady then!

Thinking till this part, the little fox cannot help herself but have a proud smile on her face.

“Let's start then...”

Said Liu Yi filled with expectations.

“Okay! Then let's start now. Your body have twenty eight star jades. Currently, the first star jade that you are about to open is called the corner star. It is both the easier and the hardest star jade to open. First, follow me and repeat my chants! Then condense the vitality in your body into your demon... immortal energy!”

“Ohhh, okay....”

In regards to this aspect, Liu Yi was a complete idiot. He could only immerse himself into the little fox's teachings.

He sat down cross legged and started following the chants of the Professor Lin Tong. Unceasing, he continued to attempt to open the path to immortal cultivation.

“Listen to this lady. Don't rush. Slowly learn the arts of breathing. Based on your innate talents, if you should be able to condense enough vitality to convert to immortal strength to open the first star jade within a hundred days, then that'll be great progress already. Even this lady with her genius innate talent took a year to cultivate her first star jade and a month or so to open it. Hey you....”

Before Lin Tong was able to finish her sentence, she was staring at the cross legged Liu Yi with her beautiful eyes that were wide open from shock.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 17

Liu Yi felt that there was a faint white stream of qi secretly wandering around in his body.

He was unable to feel it earlier. However, after he started breathing according to the arts of breathing, he started to notice this lurking stream of qi.

This stream of qi was like a naughty little mouse, it had hidden itself within the depths of Liu Yi's body.

As Liu Yi noticed the stream of qi, he tried to use his will to catch it. However, the stream of qi just ran away.

Liu Yi grew angry.

Little guy, you dared act this naughty when you're inside my body!

I will certainly catch you today!

Liu Yi began to chase this stream of qi. His consciousness began to run around nonstop in his body trying to catch the stream of qi.

However, he did not notice that when he was chasing after the white stream of qi, his body gave off a slight white light that was unnoticeable with naked eyes.

It was currently in broad daylight in the class. The literature teacher was teaching his class with great humour, attracting the attention of the students.

Chen Cai had his eyes fixed on the boobs of Wang Lele who sat in the front row. Toward his good friend Liu Yi's current unusual state, he had yet to notice.

And at this moment, the body that Liu Yi had in his subconsciousness was radiating a large white light, surprising the little fox.

“How is this possible?!.... How is he gathering vitality so fast?!”

Lin Tong was already shocked speechless.

She had already checked Liu Yi’s base core, it was a useless base core that couldn’t bear fruit!

But the speed that’s he’s currently gathering vitality at... wasn’t something that a useless base core should have!

Lin Tong doesn’t understand the reason. Liu Yi himself doesn’t understand the reason either.

Liu Yi suddenly felt that his body was getting hotter and hotter. The stream of qi that he was chasing after was running faster and faster. Ultimately, he was unable to catch the stream of qi.

Finally, the stream of qi started to flow around in his body nonstop!

A heavy current of power also began to condense within Liu Yi’s dantian.

[TL: dantian: point two inches below the navel where one's qi resides]

It was condensing into a dung ball!

Seems like I can’t catch up anymore. That thing’s running even faster than rabbits!

Liu Yi finally decided to give up and began to follow the chants taught by the little fox. He began to cultivate his vitality and started attempting to condense a

flow of qi within his body according to the heaven's circulation.

Soon, a red stream of qi began to, little by little, take form.

Liu Yi felt that although this red stream of qi wasn't as condensed as the white stream of qi, it had a sense of control to it.

He was able to control this red stream of qi!

Following his will, the red stream of qi began to move around in his body!

According to Professor Lin Tong teachings, Liu Yi controlled the red stream of qi and, little by little, began to rotate it within his body.

Those acupuncture points and shit was very confusing and hard to remember, however because Liu Yi had the little fox to guide him, he was able to guide the red stream of qi into them one by one.

One the red stream of qi have run a full heaven's circulation through his body, it began to move to the acupuncture points without his assistance.

At that time, what Liu Yi needed to constantly beat the horse like a chariot driver.

As to where to run to, the horse itself knew.

The red stream of qi soon ran a heaven's small circulation through his body and began the heaven's large circulation.

[TL: heaven's circulation = qi exercises from ancient times, basically move the qi around the body through specific areas of the body. The heaven's small circulation is the first step, the large circulation is the next step.]

What Liu Yi was surprised of was that the two streams of qi within his body, the

red and the white, never interfere with each other. They each have their specific route and show no signs of ever crashing.

How amazing!

How come Lin Tong didn't mention such a thing would happen?!

When Liu Yi had the red stream of qi circulate through the heaven's large circulation thirty six times, he noticed that something felt wrong in his dantian.

A revolving black ball that is radiating a faint light like the stars slowly condensed within his dantian.

The red and the white streams of qi are both flowing through the black ball.

At that moment, Liu Yi suddenly felt a stream of heat and another stream of cold. The two streams were exploding within his body. He felt as if his whole body was being pricked by tens of thousands of tiny needles. It was extremely painful.

"Ahh!"

He suddenly woke and stood up from his chair.

Chen Cai who was next to him was so surprised from Liu Yi's actions that he fell to the ground.

The rest of the students were also looking at Liu Yi with surprised face. They were wondering what the heck this Liu Yi was trying to do.

Even Murong Die was looking at Liu Yi.

This boy who usually never caught her attention before, how come he managed to catch her attention twice today?

“Sis Die, look! It’s Liu Yi!”

Said Wang Lele with a bit of excitement as she secretly pushed Murong Die.

“This guy have been appearing on the frontpage a lot recently!”

Murong Die only faintly ceased her beautiful brows, she didn’t say anything.

She really dislike the type of guys who would show off in front of girls.

She had already met too many of those type of guys!

For example, that Kevin or something. He would deliberately bully other boys in front of her all the time to attract her attention.

What a braindead! What he does pose no meaning at all, it only serve to make Murong Die dislike him even more!

“Oh?”

It seemed as if that only the old literature teacher was very happy.

“Who would’ve expect that our classmate Liu Yi would be so proactive today! Well then, you can answer this question!”



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 18

“Liu Yi, come answer this question.”

The old literature teacher was very happy. He thought that the motivationless Liu Yi finally began to have a good learning attitude. He was very pleased to see Liu Yi this proactive.

“Ah? Ah?”

Liu Yi finally came to.

He was currently no longer feeling the pain of the needles pricking on his body.

Instead, he was currently having a real pleasing sensation.

He felt that there's two forces of energy constantly flowing through his body, strengthening his physique.

At this moment, Liu Yi felt that if he were to jump, then he'd be able to grab the chandelier on the ceiling and rip it off completely!

However, Liu Yi didn't dare to try... there's too many people here...

If he were to jump that high, they'll think that he's a beast.

Grandfather had told him multiple times that one must keep a low profile.

It was exactly the same reasoning as nonconformity getting punished.

“What are you ah-ing for. Come, rhyme this rhyming couplet, it's very simple.”

When the old literature teacher was teaching rhyming couplets, he felt that Liu Yi had excellent spirit and thus decided to give him a easy couplet to rhyme.

“The first verse is the righteous and resolute Wen Tianxiang. Come, you can rhyme the next verse.”

[TL: Wen Tianxian is a folk hero of the Song dynasty known for resisting Mongol invasion in Jiangxi in 1275.]

“Ah?”

Liu Yi was dumbfounded.

Before he was even fully conscious as to what was going on, he heard the old literature teacher telling him to rhyme couplets.

The righteous and resolute Wen Tianxian?!

As if subconsciously, Liu Yi blurted out the following words.

“Then my second verse shall be... the virtuous and artistic Aoi Sora!”

“Hahahaha!”

The whole classroom had become a fryer all of a sudden.

All the students burst out in laughter. Chen Cai was even pounding the table, his tears were about to fall too.

Wang Lele was also laughing nonstop. She said covering her mouth.

“Aiyou... Aiyou... too funny.... only now did I found out that Liu Yi was this funny...”

“Humph, he’s just being a clown!”

Murong Die however only curled her lips.

However, she was unable to stop her lips from being slightly lifted.

“They said that you’re vicious, how did you know who Aoi Sora is?!”

Murong Die secretly pinched Wang Lele’s plump thighs.

“Hehe, don't sis Die also know who she is?... and you’re talking about what I do.... we’re tweedledum and tweedledee....”

The two girls harassed each other a couple times.

The old literature teacher had a face full of sinister intent.

He wanted to kick Liu Yi out the window.

But as a teacher, he cannot be that violent.

“You...you...”

However, he was indeed so angry that he was speechless.

In all these years of his teaching career, it was the first time he encountered such a student!

Liu Yi, motivated? No! It’s more like he’s intentionally causing trouble!

Liu Yi had also noticed that he fucked up and was sweating cold bullets.

Crap....

Liu Yi swear that he didn't do that on purpose!

It was something he blurted out because of his muddiness earlier.

Oh fuck! I'm done! I'm dead for sure...

But how come this old literature teacher know of Aoi Sora?...

This old fart ain't pure either!

"Liu Yi... you..."

The old literature teacher looked at Liu Yi with eyes full of resent for failing to meet his expectations. There was a bit of hidden bitterness within his eyes too.

"Teacher, Liu Yi rhymed the verse very accurately!"

Wang Lele decided to create a disturbance on the side. "Isn't that right, teacher?!"

"This..."

The old literature teacher was put into an awkward situation.

How to fix this situation...

Should he punish Liu Yi or should he not punish Liu Yi?!

The old literature teacher was at a loss.

Liu Yi also stood there awkwardly.

There's currently a lot of things he wanted to ask Lin Tong. However, how could he possibly do that in this situation?!

Right when the atmosphere grew very stiff, the life saving class bell came.

Both Liu Yi and the old literature teacher loosened up.

Lucky!

Fortunately, the class was over.

Even the old literature teacher felt for the first time the wonderful sound that is the bell signaling the end of the class.

“Class is over!”

The old man closed his textbook and immediately went straight out the door without even bothering to look back.

“Liu Yi, you got balls! You even dared to clown around with the teacher in class!”

Chen Cai looked at Liu Yi with eyes full of endless envy. “Even Wang Lele was speaking out for you!... If I could make Wang Lele speak out for me, then even if I were to be punished to copy a hundred pages, I’d still do it!”

“Fuck, you think that I’m as vulgar as you?!”

Liu Yi gave Chen Cai a harsh glare.

“Hey, that’s incorrect!”

Chen Cai immediately said “have you never heard of the phrase ‘dying under the three peony, even after becoming a ghost, you’d still be dissolute’before?”

“Fuck’s the use for being dissolute when you’re dead?!”

Liu Yi can't stand Chen Cai's views anymore.

The whole situation with Ma Yixuan had already left him heartbroken.

And just when Chen Cai and Liu Yi was discussing about women, Lan He, the Prince Charming in the minds of many girls, came to Murong Die with two ball game tickets.

"Lil Die? Tonight our city's United Basketball Youth team is having a match. I am playing as the small forward tonight. It was very difficult for me to obtain these tickets, please come watch the game!"

He presented the two tickets to Murong Die under the envious eyes of the surrounding girls.

Murong Die was speaking with her best friend Wang Lele. When she saw Lan He she immediately frowned.

"Sorry, not interested."

These boys are really annoying.

Even if they're chasing after girls, must they make it so arrogant?

Was he rewarding this ticket to me?

I, Murong Die, don't want it.

"Lil Die, the game is very fun! Many people have asked me for the tickets but I didn't give it to any of them!"

Lan He felt that he cannot be rejected when all these people are watching.

And just at this moment, Wang Lele who was standing next to Murong Die

suddenly spoke up.

“Lan He, are you trying to woo our Miss Murong?!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 19

“I... this...”

Lan He was suddenly at a loss for words.

This Wang Lele, she’s too direct!

To ask him this bluntly all of a sudden, Lan He was suddenly at a loss to what to respond.

Say yes? That’ll be too embarrassing...

Say no?

Won’t that be destroying one’s escape path?

“I... this...”

“Cheh, you’re a man! If you like her then say it, if you don’t then say it. Acting like a bitch and all, you think you can woo our Miss Murong like this?!”

Wang Lele gave Lan He an expression of disgust.

“You! What are you saying!”

Although the opposing girl was also a beauty and her boobs were also very profound.

But to be told that all of a sudden in front of all these students and female fans,



it was something that's a bit too much for Lan He's reputation.

"What am I saying? Human speech!"

Wang Lele push her chest out. "What? You gunna fight me? Try hitting me!"

Wang Lele's chest was really way too spectacular. Just from that one push, she almost exploded Lan He's eyeballs.

Chen Cai who was watching from the sidelines almost nearly had blood flying out of his nose.

Too stronk!

What exactly do you have to eat to grow those boobs?!

Thank you heaven!

Even Liu Yi who had wholeheartedly decided to embark upon the road of immortal cultivation could not help his body's increase flow of blood from seeing this scene.

No wonder they say that men are animals who think using their dick...

It's precisely because women's ability to entice was way too strong...

Especially woman who were born with innate advantage like Wang Lele.

"I... this..."

Lan He's eyeballs had nearly fell onto Wang Lele's chest. He didn't know what to say and could only gulp his saliva.

Murong Die noticed Lan He's fixed eyes and immediately frowned. She then

pressed down on Wang Lele's stomach, causing her to retract her extended chest.

"Regardless, it's impossible between us."

Murong Die decided to cut short Lan He's wishful thinking.

"Why?! How am I, Lan He, not worthy enough for you?!"

Lan He was a bit angry.

Regardless of everything else, he was still a very handsome individual! He was also one of the seed players of the basketball team!

He was even selected to be the a player of the City Youth's second string team. Reckon that in the olympics and whatnot of the future, he'll play a role in it.

As a man like that, it wouldn't be weird to be called Mr. Perfect.

[TL: Mr. Perfect in China = Gao Fu Shuai = Tall, Rich, Handsome.]

Furthermore, his family had some background!

The amount of girls chasing after him wasn't few either. Those little chocolate, little love letters and such, he had received a lot.

Why was it that when it comes to Murong Die, he who had a good market price had suddenly lost his market?

The delicious cakes that are in high demand had turned into dog shit!

Not gunna give up!

No matter what, I'd capture this Murong Die!

Not only is this Murong Die very pretty, her family background was also very good!

If I can capture her, then I'd could save fifty years of struggle!

Fucking hell, let me show you that this handsome man would be able to capture Murong Die!

"Murong Die, I, Lan He, really like you from the bottom of my heart. Please go out with me!"

Lan He had a stern expression as he say that.

Murong Die was very unhappy.

Why is this guy being so clingy?

"You're still not done?!"

Wang Lele once again spoke for Murong Die swift and fierce and with her chest sticking out.

"Young Master Lan, we regret to tell you that our Miss Murong already have someone that she likes! You might as well forget about wooing her!"

"What?!"

Lan He was shocked greatly.

The hearts of all the normal looking male students in the class also, one by one, started to break.

The goddess in their dream have a person she like?

This... is too fucking hurtful!

They were heartbroken enough to shed tears...

Murong Die was also a little surprised. However, she knew that Wang Lele was creating a cover for her. Thus, she let it slide for this critical moment.

“I don’t believe you!”

Shouted Lan He.

Never once had he ever seen Murong Die paying attention to any of the guys!

Liking some guy!

Based on Murong Die’s prideful personality, that’s completely impossible!

Is there a guy who is better than he, Lan He, in this class?

Absolutely not!

“Doesn’t matter if you don’t believe it, it’s the truth!”

Wang Lele braced herself and said. “Lan He, don’t you pester endlessly!”

“When have I ever pestered endlessly?! Then you tell me, who does Murong Die like?!”

“I... this...”

Wang Lele was suddenly at a loss for words.

She glanced at Murong Die to which Murong Die expressed that there’s nothing

she can do.

It was true, Murong Die never had any interest in any guy.

Sometimes, Wang Lele had even suspect that Murong Die might be a lesbian!

However, Murong Die didn't show any interest in her even with her gigantic boobs... she most likely wasn't a lesbian...

However, when faced with Lan He's question, Wang Lele doesn't know how to respond.

Must she say that she lied?

Then she'll lose a lot of face in front of everyone!

No, absolutely not!

This lie must continue!

"Hehe, so you can't answer right?.... I knew that you were ly..."

"It's Liu Yi! Yep, it's Liu Yi!"

Wang Lele's sight suddenly fell toward the bystander Liu Yi.

Wang Lele remembered Liu Yi, he was the only one in the class that left an impression on her!

Liu Yi oh Liu Yi, on the behalf of this beauty Wang Lele, please help me!

May god help you! Amen!

After Wang Lele's words left her mouth, everyone's sight all rushed toward Liu

Yi.

“Huh?”

Liu Yi eyes were also wide open. He was pointing at his own nose, stunned.

What the heck?

The number one beauty of the class, Murong Die, likes me?

I’m not dreaming right?!

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 20

Liu Yi took out his phone. He looked into the screen to see his reflection.

He had neither appearance nor family backgrounds. Murong Die was a daughter of a well off family, how could she possibly fall for me?!

And there's the whole immortal cultivation thing...

Sure enough, today must be a dream...

Wake up! Quickly! Wake up!

Murmured Liu Yi.

The little fox was still surprised from what had happened earlier. However, after hearing Liu Yi murmuring to himself, she could not resist scolding him.

Idiot...

"What?! Him?!"

Lan He's loud voice brought Liu Yi back to the present.

Okay, it seems like this wasn't a dream.

"Murong Die, you don't like me but instead liked this rascal Liu Yi?! Are you blind?!"

Said Lan He toward Murong Die with a face full of anger.

Murong Die had wanted to say that Wang Lele was playing around. However,

aftering hearing Lan He's words, she changed her mind.

"Lan He, what do you mean by that?!"

Murong Die stood up. She stared at Lan He. Her aura of arrogance was drifting out from her body.

"Since when must I consult you regarding who I, Murong Die, likes?!"

"I... I..."

Faced against an angry Murong Die, Lan He suddenly didn't know what to say.

Lan He's grandeur had been seized by Murong Die.

In front of Murong Die, Lan He who was known as a super handsome guy and a seed player of the basketball team had lost his stage.

Lan He could not face Murong Die's grandeur, thus he decided to change his target to Liu Yi. He turned around and walked aggressively with anger to Liu Yi. He grabbed Liu Yi collar and said.

"Liu Yi! If you're a man, then accept my challenge! Only the winner shall obtain Murong Die's heart!"

Mother fucking bullshit!

Wasn't this being hit when I didn't even do anything?!

Liu Yi felt that he was deeply wronged.

"To try to compete with I, Lan He, for my woman, who do you think you are?! Why don't you piss some urine and use that as a mirror to have a good look at your loser face?!"



Lin He was filled with anger. He was throwing all sorts of verbal abuses toward Liu Yi.

Originally, Liu Yi had only felt wronged. However, after hearing Lan He's words, he started to get angry.

Motherfucker! Who says a loser can't have a girlfriend?

Must we allow those handsome guys to have harems?! Must we allow them to change their girlfriend everyday?!

I am an ordinary high school student, must I not be able to experience having a girlfriend?!

Why can't I have girls liking me?!

Why must I deserve being set up by Ma Yixuan?!

WHY?!

Under Liu Yi's accumulated anger, the red stream of qi within his body had started to speed up its flow.

"Huh?"

The little fox within Liu Yi's body gave a cry of surprised.

However, other than Lin Tong herself, no one else heard her voice.

Liu Yi suddenly felt that his surrounding air started to flow slower.

The world he sees had slightly changed.

Time had slowed down a bit. None of the subtle changes on the bodies of everyone present managed to escape his sight.

The coloration of both the surrounding and the people had also begun to change.

The colorful world had now turned into a monotonous black and white.

And Lan He who stood in front of him had a hint of red on him. It was as if saying that this man wanted to attack him.

What... exactly is this...

Right at this moment, something came into Liu Yi's mind.

His expression changed. He said coldly.

"Take your hands off me."

"Say what?"

Lan He started laughing.

This Liu Yi was famous for his cowardice. No matter who bully him, he would still take it.

Who would've expected that he actually dared to talk back today!

Attaboy! You got balls!

Seems like you're waiting to be beaten up!

"I didn't hear you, speak again?"

Lan He responded with a threatening voice while bulging his muscles. His intent was very clear.

“I said, take your hands off me.”

Liu Yi responded with an indescribable cold voice.

Hearing that voice, even Lan He could not help but start shivering.

This Liu Yi, why is he acting so strange today?....

Was he possessed by demons?

“What if I don’t? What can you do? Fight me? With that tiny physique?...”

Lan He felt that he needed to keep his reputation in this situation. Having already lost to Murong Die in front of all these students, he was determined to take down Liu Yi.

If he didn’t, then how could he still show his face in class?!

“I knew that you wouldn’t do take your hands off me. In that case, don’t blame me...”

A crooked smile suddenly shown itself on Liu Yi’s face.

He suddenly extended his hand and grasped the arm that was tugging his collar.

Crack!

Lan He suddenly felt an intense pain on his wrist!

Before he could even scream in pain, Liu Yi had already grabbed his arm and took his whole body for a swing.

Then Liu Yi moved backwards. With a wretched expression, he was knocked to Murong Die's table, flipping it over.

Lan He, on the other hand, was also thrown to the ground. He was screaming in pain.

"Why... why did you hit me..."

"I..."

Lan He was grabbing his wrist. The pain was so bad that he was sweating. He felt so wronged that he wanted to cry when he heard Liu Yi saying that he hit him.

"How could you hit someone?! Lan He, you're a jerk!"

Murong Die was also shocked. Immediately after screaming, she turned to Lan He and started scolding him.

As for Liu Yi, he coincidentally fell onto Wang Lele. His head was comfortably lying on Wang Lele's big and soft chest.

Liu Yi smiled again. However, the smile quickly faded and was replaced with a stunned Liu Yi. Happiness had come too quickly for him.

I... what did I do earlier?!

[TL: it seems like Liu Yi broke dude's wrist, then circled himself with the dude, knocking himself back and onto Murong Die's table acting like he was instead hit. Then he started yelling to Lan He, 'why you attack me bruh'. No idea how he ended up on Wang Lele's boobs.]

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 21

As the saying goes, embraced in a beauty bosom is like being under the shade.

This was especially true for Wang Lele's bosom.

Holy!.....

Liu Yi didn't know the meaning of those words before, however now he know.

Huge!

Too fucking huge!

And very soft...

A very comfortable feeling...

Liu Yi wasn't able to control himself. His blood started flowing rapidly. All of it went directly to his most vulnerable blood vessel.

Liu Yi's nose, on the other hand, didn't live up to expectations and started bleeding.

"Liu Yi... Liu Yi, are you okay?!"

Wang Lele was surprised by his bleeding. She didn't know that she was taken advantage of by him. She was holding his head and screaming.

"Lan He, you're too much! Way too much!"

Murong Die was also looking at Lan He with contempt.

Bullying the weak, do you think you're a big shot?!

If you're tough, then why don't you go find Wang Dashan and fight him?!

He's the famous third year hooligan!

"I... this..."

Lan He was unable to respond.

It was obviously he who was attacked, how did he turn into the perpetrator?!

Fuck, is this even science?!

Lan He had his eyes wide open. He didn't know what to say.

"It's... it's okay..."

All helter skelter, Liu Yi got up from Wang Lele's chest.

If he were to continue lying there, then he'll have excessive bleeding. It'll be a real problem then!...

He had barely survived from two calamities, he didn't want to die on a woman's chest...

Even if it was Wang Lele's giant chest, it's still unacceptable...

"You can't blame him... it's my fault..."

Liu Yi was very uncomfortable. Although Wang Lele's chest was very comfortable, he was feeling very uncomfortable in his heart.

The him earlier was really too scary. He was filled with evil intent. It was too much for him to take in.

He had lived for 17 years, never once had he done such a thing before!

Something like framing someone. It caused Liu Yi to be uncomfortable, very uncomfortable.

Grandpa had said, a man should be live uprightly.

To play schemes and craft plots, what kind of man is that?!

He would rather be a coward than a vile person!

Liu Yi clenched his fist.

“Liu Yi, you’re too much of a nice person!”

Wang Lele shook her head.

He was beaten till his nose bleed, yet he was still speaking for Lan He.

“Liu Yi, stop pretending to be a good person!”

Lan He grew very furious. This fucker was pretending to be a good man!

“Lan He, are you not ashamed of yourself?! He was already beaten this badly by you and you still continue to say such a thing!”

Murong Die felt that Lan He’s character was extremely poor.

Such a man actually liked her!

Depressing!

“Mother fucker...”

Lan He was so furious that he wanted to kill someone.

He pointed at Liu Yi’s face and shouted.

“Liu Yi, if you got balls, then come and compete with me in a one on one basketball match! Only the winner shall have Murong Die’s heart!”

Bitch, again?!

Liu Yi really didn’t want to compete with this Lan He in basketball.

Isn’t this a joke?!

How the fuck would I know how to play basketball?!

When there’s basketball competitions in the school, the most he ever done was picking up balls!

To tell him to play basketball... isn’t that the same as telling him to die?!

“Of course he’ll compete! As if he fears you!”

Before Liu Yi could speak, Wang Lele who was standing behind him already spoke for him.

“Liu Yi, don’t be afraid, I’ll support you!”

Holy fucking shit...

Liu Yi was about to cry.



Support me? What, are you going to the one competing?...

With two basketballs on your body, I suspect you'll struggle jumping.

"I knew that a fool like you won't dare compete!"

Said Lan He after seeing Liu Yi hesitate.

"If you don't dare, then you better get the fuck out of my face! Best if you get the fuck out of this class and never allow me to see you again! If I ever see you again, I'll kick your ass every time I see you! Mother fucker, with your shitty looks and you still dared try to fight over a woman with I, Lan He? Have you ever tried to take a piss and use it as a mirror to see yourself?!..."

"One...."

Liu Yi once again started getting angry.

He was trying his best to control himself, he didn't want to become evil and wicked again.

However, he was unable to control his mouth.

"I do not like to view women as objects. Regardless of who win or loses, it had nothing to do with Murong Die. Whoever she likes, it is none of our business."

Hearing this, Murong Die was surprised.

The eyes she looked at Liu Yi with had slightly changed.

"Liu Yi! Great speech! Great speech! This lady shall support you!"

Wang Lele had her chest up and was clapping constantly.

“Two.”

Liu Yi held up his second finger. He said.

“To compete with me, I fear that you might cry.”

“Hahahaha!”

Lan He started laughing out loud.

“Are you talking to me? Did you have a screw loose in your head? Have you forgotten that I, Lan He, am a seeded player of the city’s youth basketball team? You’re gunna make me cry in a basketball match? More like you’re trying to make me laugh till my teeth falls out when you lose!”

“Just wait and see.”

Liu Yi calmed the anger in his heart as he said those words.

“Good! You got balls! We shall meet the day after tomorrow at noon in the basketball court! At that time, we shall see how badly I’ll beat you!”

After saying that, Lan He turned and left the classroom in anger.

After saying those words, Liu Yi’s blood flow had also slowed down. He returned to sanity and immediately started to regret.

Fuck...

I was too impulsive.

No wonder they say impulsiveness is the devil’s tool.

My impulsiveness had once again brought me a big trouble...

I don't know basketball at all!

When the time comes, I might really have my ass completely whopped by Lan He...

What sadness...

Liu Yi wanted to slap himself.

But he was afraid of pain. A face was given by one's parents, he was unable to do it.

"Liu Yi... we're sorry to drag you into this..."

At this time, the Murong Die who was always extremely proud actually softly apologized to Liu Yi.

Suddenly, Liu Yi felt as if his world was surrounded by blossoms.

I didn't hear wrong right?!

Murong Die is apologizing to me?!

This... is this the end of the world?!

Seeing Liu Yi's silly look, Murong Die started wondering.

This guy is so weird. Earlier he had that appealing charm, how come he turned into an idiot again?...

However, she had began to think that Liu Yi was cute.

“Take this and wipe your nose...”

Murong Die took out her handkerchief and handed it to Liu Yi.

Liu Yi subconsciously took the handkerchief from her. The two's fingers slightly touched.

However, Liu Yi didn't notice that the hand that he extended was his right hand.

Immediately Murong Die's expression have turned moist. Her beautiful face had turned completely red!

Murong Die lightly bit her lips. Her eyes were so alluring, it was as if she's about to discharge water.

Oh shit!

In great shock, Liu Yi quickly took the handkerchief and withdrew his right hand.

At the same time, Murong Die had returned back to normal too. She fell onto the ground and screamed. Her whole body was stunned like a puppet.

Subsequently, the red stream of qi inside Liu Yi increased a little. This surprised Lin Tong even more.

And at this time, the bell signaling the start of the class rang. It resolved the embarrassment of the two people.

It was the first time they felt that the bell signaling the start of the class was so sweet sounding.

As if running for their lives, the two rushed back into their seats. Murong Die buried her head into her arms.

Liu Yi secretly placed the handkerchief on his nose.

Smell so good...

Liu Yi was a bit fascinated.

Chen Cai who was next him was completely envious. He said.

“Liu Yi... god damn... totally unexpected... damn dude... you got Murong Die’s handkerchief... how about I trade you my newly downloaded Takizawa Rola’s torrent for that...

“Go fuck yourself... ain’t trading... I heard she’s fugly.”

Liu Yi was strongly shaking his head.

Murong Die’s handkerchief...

To say that he was not happy from obtaining it was impossible...

Although it was just a handkerchief.... it was Murong Die’s handkerchief!

If it was that fat chick in the class, even if it was her used panties, Liu Yi wouldn’t want it...

If she were to give that to him, he could only be disgusted with it. Who knows where she put her fingers at after picking under her toenails...

Murong Die’s handkerchief smells so good...

Liu Yi was about to faint from happiness.

Even if he were to be beaten completely in the basketball match two days from now, it’ll all be worth...

As for Murong Die, Wang Lele was currently teasing her.

“Hehe. Sis Die, did you start to fancy Liu Yi?”

“Scram! Brat, what lies are you uttering now?!”

Murong Die’s heart was in a panic. She pretended to be angry and pinched Wang Lele’s arm.

“Hehe, then why did Sis Die give him your handkerchief?! I have never seen Sis Die give any boy anything!”

Wang Lele lowered her voice. She secretly said that to Murong Die without their teacher hearing.

“That, isn’t that because he’s injured?... even if I don’t like the guys, it’s not like I’m cold blooded....”

Murong Die gave Wang Lele an eye.

At the same time, Murong Die’s mind was in a complete chaos.

What exactly happened earlier? How did I turn that strange?!

“Hehe, whatever you say!”

Said Wang Lele with a large grin on her face.

“Little brat, get serious!”

Murong Die gave her best friend a harsh glare.

She was also very confused within.

Do I really like Liu Yi?

I hope not....

These guys, none of them are mature nowadays. All they know everyday was fooling around. How could I possibly like any of them.

But when Liu Yi said... “I do not like to view women as objects. Regardless of who win or loses, it had nothing to do with Murong Die. Whoever she likes, it is none of our business.”... earlier...

.....

Those eyes... those looks... why does it seem like he was constantly? emerging in front of me?...

It was the first time a guy had said such a thing to her...

All the other guys, when they ask her out, they always acted as if they’re the only guy in the world for her...

Her father had always said to her...

Her youth last till only twenty two and to enjoy it dearly.

After twenty two, she will be match with a boy worthy of her status and then get married.

Like death, she could not choose nor could she avoid it.

The only thing she could do was to wait desperately.

Wang Lele was unlike her. Her family’s business wasn’t particularly big, her

parents were very open minded and they did not plan to marry her for political reasons.

Thus, this brat for a girl was fooling around all day. Sometimes, Murong Die truly envy her best friend and wanted to switch place with her...

Alas, this girl didn't know how fortunate she was.

The math teacher had arrived and started writing down and explaining all kinds of equations.

Those equations on the blackboard. Although they knew Liu Yi, Liu Yi didn't know them.

Furthermore, the current concern of Liu Yi wasn't how to do equations.

He placed his book in front of his face. Once again, he entered into the world of his subconsciousness.

This time around, he had a lot of questions to ask the little fox Lin Tong!

As it was no longer his first time entering his subconsciousness, Liu Yi did it naturally.

A blurry image of a beautiful woman was floating in front of him. It seems that she had been waiting for him.



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 22

“You rascal, I have waited for you for half a day already. So you decided to come back now?!”

Lin Tong saw Liu Yi and immediately came showering down on him.

“How does it feel to be a hero saving a beautiful princess? Satisfying?”

“Cough cough. This... it wasn't on purpose...”

When he remembered the him who was all wicked and evil, Liu Yi felt very ashamed and uncomfortable.

“Oh? You really didn't feel anything? In that case then this lady will have to start doubting your manhood!”

“That's.... not it.... it felt pretty good...”

Said Liu Yi. He was happy showing off in front of Murong Die and obtaining her handkerchief.

To say that it wasn't satisfying would be a lie!

“Then that's real good! As I said, learning the methods of immortal cultivation following this lady would only benefit you!”

Lin Tong continued. “Once you reached the upper mortal realm, you'll become a super expert, a super hero. When that time comes, the amount of girls who would like you would be too much for you to count!”

“Actually... the reason why I want to embark on the immortal cultivation... is no longer just for the sake of getting girls...”

Lin Yi suddenly sighed.

“What? You still miss that Ma Yixuan girl?”

Lin Tong curled her lips. She looked at Liu Yi with a disdain. “You good for nothing! Can’t you man up?! You still can’t forget about that woman?! There are plenty more fish in the sea! Why must you focus on a single rotten flower?!”

Was she telling me to go gay?....

Liu Yi straighten up his thoughts and said.

“The reason why I want to cultivate was because I don’t want to be looked down upon! I want to prove to them that I, Liu Yi, am not a wussy! That I, Liu Yi, can do a lot more things!”

“To live yourself for how others view you... why must you do such a tiring thing?”

Lin Tong suddenly advised Liu Yi. “Cultivators cultivates for their own personal gain and not to prove themselves to others. Should you continue on this way, I’m afraid that your mind will be very much clouded....”

Suddenly, something came into Lin Tong’s mind.

Why am I telling him his issue?!

When did I want his immortal cultivation to come to fruition?

Didn’t I only want to use him? Didn’t I want him to gain enough strength and then absorb his demonic powers and escape from his body?!

But how did it turned into... why did I started to care for his future development?...

This.... is this even science?...

Lin Tong, what is wrong with you?

Lin Tong suddenly started to fluster.

“What you said was right. However, I am still very concerned about how others view me.”

Continued Liu Yi. He didn’t know that Lin Tong was already distracted by her thoughts.

“I do not want to be looked down upon by others because I lacked the strength to shock them. My grandfather had said that if a man have a very powerful strength, then even if he was to be looked down upon by others, he wouldn’t care because he knew that those people are just wind blowing at the mountain, totally unable to shake the mountain itself.”

“.....”

Lin Tong stood there expressionlessly. She didn’t respond to Liu Yi.

“Big sister Female Immortal?”

Liu Yi promptly called out to Lin Tong.

Why did this little fox stopped paying attention to him?

“Ah? Ah! Well, okay.”

Lin Tong coughed twice. She felt that something was wrong with her. The expression she showed toward Liu Yi had also turned a bit unnatural.

Fortunately Liu Yi cannot see her face clearly. Otherwise, she'll certainly be very embarrassed.

“No matter what you think, it's all good as long as you're firmly set on cultivating. You know, I was very satisfied with you. As you had shown, although you're a good for nothing, it seems like you're not a rotten wood and could still be transformed.”

“Oh? What do you mean by that?”

This was the first time that Lin Tong praised him.

Although the way she praised him was a bit weird.

“Yes... I found out that are some immortal power hidden within your body!”

Lin Tong thought that the immortal power might be left from that female immortal...

When she sealed her in Liu Yi's right hand, she must had certainly used some of her real immortal power...

These immortal power had stayed within Liu Yi's body. And now, Liu Yi had somehow obtained a way to start the immortal power and the immortal power somehow started to move by itself as if according to some certain immortal method of movement...

The immortal power that was obtained so suddenly and developed so rapidly had created an adverse consequence.

When an immortal cultivator's power increases, he must also train his mind.

However, Lin Tong had not taught Liu Yi how to train his mind.

That's because Lin Tong is a demon. When a demon cultivates, they only need to follow the innate demonic nature and does not need to train their mind.

However, humans does. Every cultivation method they have, they would always have a matching method to train their mind.

What Liu Yi was practicing was the demonic method that Lin Tong taught him, the Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra.

The Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra was a way for demons to cultivate. However, Liu Yi was currently using that.

According to Lin Tong's original plan, as long as Liu Yi practice the Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra, he would be able to open the first Star Jade. Once he opens that, she would be able to slowly absorb demonic power from his Star Jade, increasing her own power.

Who would've expected that the immortal power in Liu Yi's body was the first to move. Moreover, the amount of immortal power left behind by that female immortal wasn't small either.

If Liu Yi were not to cultivate, then this power will scatter slowly over the course of the next ten twenty years. At most it would increase Liu Yi's lifespan by a bit.

However, Liu Yi had embarked on the path of immortal cultivation. The situation now was completely different.

These immortal powers were fully utilized by his body. Through following the Heaven's Circulation, the power had allowed Liu Yi to set one foot over the door of genuine immortal cultivation.

As the power suddenly increased, Liu Yi's mind had also become unsteady!

An unsteady mind breeds inner demons!

The inner demons had directly stimulated Liu Yi's practice speed for the Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra.

The amount of demonic power that he have in his body had also begun to grow quickly due to the stimulation.

The two forces stimulating each other had caused Liu Yi to open his first Jade Star at an astonishing pace!

Originally this was a good thing for Lin Tong!

However, she soon discovered that because of the immortal power obstructing, it had become immensely hard for her to try to obtain demonic power from Liu Yi's Star Jade!

Only when the amount of demonic power that Liu Yi had within his body grow above and beyond the amount of immortal power he had would she be able to successfully extract the demonic power she needed...

It would seem that she had to assist Liu Yi till he become even stronger, only then would she be able to extract demonic power from him.

She had to let Liu Yi continuously increase his demonic powers!

The Liu Yi right now, he's still not strong enough!

Originally, one would require some practice in order to increase their demonic powers.

However, Lin Tong found out that after Liu Yi practiced the Holy Fox Heart Sutra,

he had somehow obtained the ability that only their fox clan possess!

The females of the fox clan could collect yang energy to mend their yin energy.

The males of the fox clan could collect yin energy to mend their yang energy.

[TL: yin = female,negative, yang = male, positive.]

Even though Liu Yi wasn't a real member of the fox clan, he seems to also possess this ability.

Furthermore, his ability seemed to be even more excellent than the males of the fox clan.

He actually could increase a woman's yin energy after gaining a favorable impression on them and then absorb the energy to increase his own power.

This... was an outrageous ability!

With this many girls around... once he casually take a dip in a few... then won't the power of the Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra rise up non stop?!

In the event that he was lucky enough to get a couple more girls...

Then Lin Tong would be able to successfully escape from the seal in his right hand and regain her freedom!

Hahaha! Yes! That's it!

Lin Tong could not help but become happy.

She originally thought that it would take a long long time before she could escape.

Who would've expected that she would've actually be sealed within a superb material!

This lady's luck wasn't so bad afterall!

If it all goes well, then not only could she escape from the seal, she'll also be able to absorb Liu Yi's powers, greatly improving her own.

Seeing the distracted and laughing Lin Tong, Liu Yi hurriedly asked.

"Big sister female immortal, are you okay?"

"Ah, I'm...I'm fine."

Lin Tong quickly recovered and said resolutely.

"Currently, there are two forces in your body. The red one is from our Heart Sutra that you are practicing, the white one is the wicked power that my younger martial sister left behind. It was this white force that caused you to degenerate."

"Ah?"

Liu Yi was greatly surprised.

No wonder he felt strange the whole time. No wonder he lost his mind and did things that he didn't want to do!

It turns out that it was all because of that white stream of qi!

Liu Yi started panicking.

"Then what should I do?.... Can I get the white stream of qi out of my body?!"



“How could it be done that easy?!”

Lin Tong saw the panicky Liu Yi and, unable to help herself, emerged a smile on the corner of her lips.

Little guy, you can't escape from the palm of this lady!

Liu Yi didn't know that Lin Tong was very proud of herself, he was just in a huge panic.

How did his immortal cultivation actually bear fruit to a devil that seized his mind and actions?!....

This was really very uncomfortable and terrible.

“Then what should I do?...”

“The only thing you can do is to continuously increase the red stream of qi until it could resist the white stream of qi and finally eliminate the white stream of qi!”

“So that's it... I will certainly practice hard!”

Said Liu Yi firmly. He wanted to resist this unhealthy devil.

“Good, very good!”

Lin Tong was so very happy. “Then, you better listen to my instructions!”

“Yes, of course! I'll listen!”

Liu Yi didn't know that Lin Tong had already set him up. He thought that she was sincerely helping him and was immensely grateful to her.

“Big sister female immortal, please rest assured, I will certainly practice extra hard and help you escape earlier!”

Lin Tong was all proud of herself. However, a sudden speech from Liu Yi had stunned her.

Smile had faded from Lin Tong’s face.

Seeing that Lin Tong once again stopped talking, Liu Yi asked curiously.

“Big sister female immortal, what’s wrong?”

“You... really want to help me escape?”

“That’s right!”

Liu Yi nodded. “Is there something strange about that?”

“But... we only met by chance, why do you want to help me?”

“What kind of speech was that?! Big sister female immortal, you have saved me twice!”

Lin Yi continued. “Furthermore, you knew that I am a good for nothing and even called me a good for nothing, yet you were still willing to help me and didn’t turn your back on me. My grandfather had said, one shall return the kindness of another person a thousandfold. Big sister female immortal had helped me so much, even if I to risk my life, I am still willing to help you!”

“You....”

Seeing Liu Yi’s honest expression, Lin Tong shivered from head to toe.

“Don’t think like that... the world is very complicated...didn’t you grandfather tell

you that it's hard to fathom a person's mind?....”

As if possessed by something, Lin Tong said those words.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 23

After saying those words, Lin Tong really wanted to slap herself.

Dear heaven! Lin Tong! Why did you say those words?!

If this cause Liu Yi to be suspicious of yourself, won't all your effort be for naught?!

Whip yourself!

Yes, whip yourself!

Lin Tong tried to quickly correct herself.

”

“My grandfather had said that there are more good people in this world than bad people! There exist love between people. They are found above trust. As love as you trust others, then everyone would be a good person in your eyes. If you don't trust others, then everyone will be a bad person.”

What Liu Yi said once again surprised Lin Tong.

Am I.... too bad of a person?...

Lin Tong could not help but think.

Wrong! I'm not even a human!

Master had said that in this world, if you don't deceive others, then others would deceive you.

Thus, I might as well deceive others first before they do the same to me!

However, toward this Liu Yi.... Lin Tong had a feeling of guilt...

Sigh!

Fuck it!

In this world, if one doesn't look out for himself, then the heaven and earth shall destroy you!

Should I feel benevolence toward him, then I'll be sealed in his hand for the rest of my life!

That's right... that's it...

I must certainly think for my own good...

Liu Yi.... his life and death have nothing to do with me!

Lin Tong kept telling herself in her mind.

"Well, you just have to continue strengthening the red stream of qi!"

Lin Tong's mindset had came back to reality. She said. "That white stream of qi, if you don't have to touch it, then don't touch it, okay?"

"Mmmhmm, I'll do everything the big sister female immortal says."

Lin Yi kept nodding.

He didn't want to turn into that horrible and scary him again...

He wanted to continue being the Liu Yi he had always been!

Liu Yi, give your best! You must certainly suppress the white flow of qi!

“If you’re going to not listen to the lecture, then just stay here and practice.”

Lin Tong’s expression wasn’t good looking either. She said with a resentful voice. “Although the streams of qi could move on their own, but if you were to control them to assist your cultivation, then your cultivation speed would increase. Your first star jade had already been opened. However, there’s currently no immortal strength within the star jade. Continue practicing here and try to gather up force into the star jade.”

“Okay! I understand! Just wait for my good news! Big sister female immortal, I, Liu Yi, will certainly save you!”

Said Liu Yi. He closed his eyes and began to concentrate on gathering the qi.

Controlling the red stream of qi within his body, he began to continuously move it through his body via the Heaven’s Circulation.

In fact, he had also noticed that after using the amorous ripple hand on Murong Die, Murong Die’s state of mind had become real strange and his body’s red stream of qi had also increased a lot.

But... why was that the case?...

“Big sister female immortal!”

Liu Yi suddenly opened his eyes and asked.

“Ah?”

Lin Tong was startled. She was still in a distracted state and was surprised by Liu Yi’s sudden interruption.

“I touched Murong Die with my amorous ripple hand, that shouldn’t be a good thing right? So, why did my red stream of qi increase?!”

“It’s... it’s simply because...”

Being a fox, Lin Tong was very cunning.

Instantly, she thought of a response.

“You used the amorous ripple hand on Murong Die which led her to have feelings for you. With increased feelings toward you, your red stream of qi naturally also increased. That’s because.... the red stream of qi represents the power of love!”

“Oh oh! So that’s the case!”

Lin Yi nodded. His heart was at rest and immediately he began to start practicing again.

However, he began to ponder again.

Just by touching Murong Die with the amorous ripple hand and the red stream of qi increased this much.... if I were to push her down... or... if I were to touch all the girls in the class with my amorous ripple hand... then won’t my red stream of qi grow out of bounds?!

No no, you can’t do that, better forget about it...

Grandfather had said, one should be wide and open when chasing after a girl; one should conquer the girl’s heart directly!

To use the amorous ripple hand... that’s way too despicable!

Liu Yi reminded himself and then continued to practice.

Afternoon. The class was over. Everyone had left to go get food. However, Liu Yi was still lying on his desk motionless.

“Hey, bruh, it’s time to eat! Yo!”

Chen Cai pushed Liu Yi to wake him up. However, Liu Yi didn’t respond.

“Sigh. Must’ve been masturbating last night. Dude’s sleeping like a log.”

Chen Cai tried to push Liu Yi a couple more times. Seeing that Liu Yi wasn’t going to wake up no matter what he does, he decided to go buy lunch himself.

“Huh? Sis Die, your Liu Yi doesn’t seem to eat lunch!”

Wang Lele was about to leave with Murong Die for lunch. Seeing that Liu Yi was lying there, Wang Lele suddenly cried out in surprised.

“What does him eating or not eating have anything to do with me?!”

Murong Die gave Wang Lele an eye. “Speak again and I won’t bring you to lunch with me!”

“Boohoo, please don’t... I’m hungry...”

Wang Lele held her chest and said. “If I don’t eat, then my boobs would starve and become smaller.... I don’t have Sis Die’s looks... if my boobs gets starved smaller... then no man would want me....”

“Psh... if they get any bigger than you’d need a damn cart to push you around!”

Teased Murong Die.

“Hehe. That’s an over exaggeration... you really don’t care about Liu Yi?”



“We... we’re not really close... forget it...”

Murong Die remembered earlier when she was touched by Liu Yi. Her whole body felt weak and her chest was overflowing. Immediately she felt ashamed.

“If you’re not going then I’ll leave you.”

She ran out the door. Wang Lele was chasing after her.

At the same time, outside the school gates.

“Kev bro, that wussy Liu Yi didn’t come out for lunch!”

A dude dyed with a red hair was walking around the gates for a long time. He then went to Kevin who was waiting nearby and said.

“Fuck!”

Kevin kicked the gates of the school. He spit on the ground and cursed.

“This wussy is certainly afraid to come out! Bitch is hiding inside! Fuck, let him hide! Let’s see how long that bitch could hide! We’ll get his ass afterschool at night!”

“That’s right! We’ll beat his ass to a pulp at night! This bastard dared kick Kev bro, he’s searching for death!”

“Haha. Make sure to beat his ass till he almost die tonight!”

Sneered Kevin.

“Break his legs! Let’s see how he can go to school then!”

“That... should we really do that?”

A student nearby heard that and was a bit scared. Isn't this going too far?!

They're all students. It's fine to fight and all... but... to cripple someone... they're a bit afraid of doing such a thing.”

“Haha. Bros, rest assured.”

Kevin took out his cell phone. He shake it twice and said.

“This Liu Yi is a fucking retard. In order to get on Murong Die's good side, dumbfuck actually went against young master Lan. Earlier, young master Lan gave me a call. He said if we catch this dumbfuck, then break one of his leg. He will pay for the medical fee and should something happen, his family will take care of it. Furthermore, he said that he'll give us 200 bucks each to break his leg. When the time comes, we'll break his leg and then go have ourselves a drink afterwards. Then we'll book that internet cafe for ten days straight and play League all day, ain't that shit nice?!”

“Can... can we really do that?...”

Even though the money was very alluring... to break someone's leg... if something really were to happen... what are they supposed to do if they're expelled?!

“Fuck! Fuck you afraid of?!”

Kevin gave the guy who was being scared a kick and scolded. “If you're scared, then get the fuck outta here! It's not like you guy's don't know who young master Lan was! Dude's dad is the official in charge of the education bureau. If he can't settle some small shit like this, then how could he still be called young master Lan?!”

“Do! We’ll do it!”

A group of students walked forward.

“Ain’t that shit just a single leg?! Not like he’s going to die! Let’s beat his ass!”

“That’s right... if something happens then we have young master Lan!”

“Yeah! Beat his mom! Burn his family!”

Only then did Kevin start nodding in satisfaction. “Mmmhmm. Bros, let’s not do anything else today. We’ll surround the school so that this wussy won’t be able to run away in the afternoon when we’re back in class! If we don’t break one of his leg today, then I, Kevin, shall be his bitch!”

Right when these guys were planning all loud in the middle of the school gate, they didn’t know that their plans were being heard completely by two passing by girls.

“Oh no oh no.... Liu Yi is so dead this time...”

With a pale expression and holding a can of coke, Wang Lele said to Murong Die who was next to her in a real low voice.

“Never had I imagined that Lan He was such a crazy guy... he even found this little hooligan Kevin to beat Liu Yi up! And to even break Liu Yi’s leg... oh heaven... this world is a mess, I want to go back to Mars!....”

“You better go back asap then....”

Murong Die’s mind was also in somewhat of a panic.

How did the problem become so big?!

What if Liu Yi really get his leg broken?....

Then... tomorrow's competition, won't he be unable to do that?

Sigh. This is no time to worry about the competition....

"Sis Die, should we tell Liu Yi?!"

Wang Lele asked Murong Die for her opinion.

"This... this have nothing to do with us..."

Murong Die's eyesight swayed a bit. "This is a problem between those stupid guys... why must we bother with them?..."

"You really aren't going to bother?"

"Really!"

"That what if someone dies?!"

"That have nothing to do with us!"

"Then... okay then... Sis Die is very heartless..."

"I was heartless to begin with... you... do you have Liu Yi's phone number?"

Suddenly asked Murong Die as she was looking at another direction.

"Hehe. Sis Die is still thinking of Liu Yi!"

"Nonsense.... I just don't want to see blood on the ground when I leave the school!"

Murong Die continued to look else, she refused to see Wang Lele's eye. "I thought you knew that I faint when I see blood."

"Yes yes yes, that's right, you faint when you see blood... but... I don't have Liu Yi's number..."

"Ah?"

Murong Die was a little dumbfounded.

"How about... Sis Die go and tell Liu Yi about this herself?..."

Said Wang Lele as she looked at Murong Die. She blinked a few times like a puppy dog.

"Stop joking! I'm not going!"

Murong Die gave Wang Lele a state. "What does his life and death have to do with me?! Why must I go?! If you wanna tell him, then go yourself!"

"Aiyahyah... then Sis Die really don't care about Liu Yi's life and death?"

"Why must I care about him?! I, Murong Die, have no interest in him to begin with!"

"Really?"

"Super real! Little rascal girl, stop bothering me, move aside!"

"Aiyah.... then okay, Liu Yi could just be beaten to death!"

Wang Lele nodded and said with a face full of smile.

"You.... have no compassion!"

Murong Die once again gave Wang Lele an eye.

Wang Lele felt that she was being very wronged!

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 24

“Liu Yi!”

Liu Yi was delicately practicing. The more he practiced with the red stream of qi, the more comfortable he felt.

It was an addictive feeling.

However, right when he was basked in his comfort, a sweet sounding shout came all of a sudden. This shout woke Liu Yi up.

When a guy call him, he doesn't hear. However, when a girl call, he does.

Perhaps... this had something to do with the technique that he was practicing!

He was only keen toward women.

Could it be... is this... the legendary power of love?

Liu Yi opened his eyes. He looked up toward the woman who stood before him.

Seeing Liu Yi's frail appearance, Murong Die's heart suddenly grew weak.

She looked at the burger in her hand that she had just taken a bite out of and then placed it on Liu Yi's desk.

“Eh... what is this?...”

Liu Yi looked at the burger in confusion and asked.

“This burger tasted very nasty. It’s a waste to throw it away; you eat it.”

Said Murong Die while looking out the window.

Unexpectedly, Liu Yi only looked at the burger motionlessly.

Murong Die was confused.

“Why aren’t you eating?”

Liu Yi gulped. He has practiced all day. However, practicing doesn’t help his hunger.

It seems to be already past noon now. He had not eaten both last night and this morning. His stomach was already growling.

The growling was pretty loud too. Liu Yi was able to hear it clearly and so was Murong Die.

Immediately, Liu Yi’s face became bright red.

Sigh! This useless stomach!

Liu Yi wanted to whip himself.

Too embarrassing!

“Why aren’t you eating when you’re hungry?!”

Asked Murong Die confused. “It’s actually pretty good... just not my taste.”

“Oh....”

Liu Yi looked at the burger. He still didn’t touch it.



This was a burger that Murong Die took a bite out of...

Could it be considered an indirect kiss if I were to eat it?...

Indirect kiss... would my red stream of qi increase because of that?...

But... I still can't eat this burger.

"What are you oh-ing about. Are you going to eat or not?"

Murong Die was starting to lose her patience.

"I'm not..."

Liu Yi was already licking his lips. However, he still shook his head and said that he wasn't going to eat the burger.

"Why not? Do you dislike me?"

Murong Die had a frown.

This Liu Yi! I'm kindly giving him my burger, why did he start to climb all over me instead of being grateful?!

Indeed, one cannot try to be nice to a man.

"Thank you for giving me food... but my grandfather had said that an honorable man should not eat given food!"

Murong Die was very furious.

Throughout her life, the amount of people trying to get on her good side was so numerous that she can't even count them.

Never had she expected that this Liu Yi was so different!

Murong Die was not used to the way Liu Yi acted. She was also unwilling to accept it.

What is wrong with him?! I tried to be nice and give him a burger yet he instead responded back with 'an honorable man should not eat given food'!

“If you’re not going to eat, then so be it! Go ahead and starve to death!”

Murong Die was very unhappy. She picked up her burger and threw it away.

“Pa!”

And at this moment, Liu Yi suddenly outstretched his hand. He caught the burger that Murong Die had just thrown.

His action was so fast, he was zooming past Murong Die.

“What, what are you doing?!”

She saw Liu Yi catching the burger and was startled.

This guy caught the burger so fast....

“Didn’t you say you’re not going to eat it?”

Murong Die asked in surprise as Liu Yi moved the burger closer to his mouth.

“Miss Murong, you are unaware of the preciousness of food! Although my grandfather had said that an honorable man should not eat given food, he had also said that it is disgraceful to waste.”

Liu Yi took a bite off the burger.

It was unknown whether he was consciously doing it or not but he bit the same place where Murong Die had previously bitten.

Murong Die's heart was a little shocked by that.

Her face became hot as if she had a fever.

Oh heaven....

I actually forgot that... that... I had already taken a bite off the burger...

He bit the same place where I had bitten...

Then... could that be considered as.... an indirect kiss?

No no, that's impossible, certainly not....

It's just a cheap burger. No way that burger could take this Miss Murong's first kiss! Humph!

Liu Yi noticed that his body's red stream of qi had slightly increased.

At the same time, Lin Tong's laughing voice was heard in Liu Yi's ears.

"Murong Die, favorable impression level increased by one."

"Huh?"

Liu Yi was surprised. What's the meaning of that?

"You...you...you better be careful... Lan He had found Kevin to break one of your leg tonight. I've told you what I came for, fi-figure out what to do yourself!"

After saying those words, Murong Die ran off as if she was fleeing for her life.

Liu Yi was dumbstruck.

What the heck?

Lan He found Kevin to break my leg?!

Fuck!

This Lan He was way too worthless!

He's trying to attack me in the shadow!

Didn't we agree to compete in a basketball match?!

How did it turn into breaking my leg?!

Too detestable!

Liu Yi was very furious. He was so angry that his body was trembling.

"You understand now?!"

Lin Tong appeared in front of Liu Yi in her fox appearance. She was laughing with a hee hee sound.

"As the saying goes, it's hard to fathom a person's mind. Look, the kind of person others are, you simply can't tell!"

It was unknown whether the little fox spoke for Liu Yi to hear or for herself.

"I'll just think of a way to run away tonight...."

Liu Yi didn't like fighting.

Although he had successfully opened the first star jade, the amount of immortal power inside was still very small.

Furthermore, Liu Yi have never fought before and thus doesn't know how.

"You good for nothing, why are to trying to run?! You have already became an immortal cultivator, why are you still afraid of a group of mortals?!"

The little fox scolded. "Useless! You're utterly useless!"

"I didn't cultivate for the purpose of fighting..."

Liu Yi sneered.

"Dumbass, the bullies have came all the way up to your head! The way you're acting doesn't make you kind, it only makes you easy to bully! Understand?!"

Lin Tong pointed at Liu Yi and scolded. "I don't know what your grandfather taught you but they are about to break your leg. If it was me, Lin Tong, then I will give an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth!"

"You... you're telling me to break his leg?!"

Lin Yi was totally surprised.

"That's right. If you don't give them pain, then they will never learn."

Lin Tong continued. "Not everyone in the world is.... an idiot like you... there are countless people who will harm you. If you keep on acting foolishly, then one day, you won't even know how you died!"

“I still believe that there are more good people in the world...”

Lin Yi was firm about his belief.

“Dumbass! You’re making me so angry! Why must I be with an idiot like you?!”

Furious, Lin Tong crash herself into Liu Yi’s chest.

However, because she was a spiritual body, she passed through Liu Yi’s chest.

“Okay okay... we can talk more about these things at night.”

Seeing that people had started to come back into class, Liu Yi lowered his voice and whispered while eating Murong Die’s burger.

“You said Murong Die favorable impression level increased by one earlier, what do you mean by that?...”

“Heng heng, so you don’t know about it, little fool!”

Once they start to talk about things relating to immortal cultivation, the little fox immediately grew real proud of herself.

“The immortal cultivation method that this genius fox immortal had taught you was the secret technique of our fox clan, the Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra! Men who practiced this technique could collect... could win a girl’s favorable impression to increase his own power!”

Lin Tong almost messed up and say that he could collect yin to mend yang.

Fortunately, she was quick witted. She immediately fixed her words.

“That I know...”

“Mmmhmm. This was the prerequisite. Things like favorable impression wasn’t something that one could perceive. Thus, the Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra have a special kind of power. When you opened your star jades, you have a chance of obtaining an assisting ability! You’re very lucky, you obtained an ability from the first star jade that you opened. The ability you obtained was the ‘eye of favorable impression.’

Lin Tong was telling herself in her heart that the heavenly fox clan was already a dying clan, as the sole disciple of the clan...it was her duty to revive the clan; she must escape from the seal as soon as possible!

“Eye of favorable impression? Heck is that?”

Lin Yi was a little surprised.

“This is an ability of your star jade.”

Lin Tong said. “You could gain an ability every time you open a star jade. For example the amorous ripple hand, that was this lady’s ability. It has now become yours.”

“You... quickly take back that ability....”

Said Liu Yi.

“Dumbass! This was a great ability! You’ll soon find out that the uses of this magical skill is endless!”

“I think it’s soon going to make my life a lot more troublesome instead...”

Liu Yi looked at his right hand and sighed.

This was an ability that Lin Tong forcefully imposed upon him, he can neither control it nor could he turn it off.

So depressing.

But... this eye of favorable impression... what does it do?

“Your current star jade still isn’t filled with power, thus you still cannot recognize this ability. Once your star jade is filled with power, you’ll be able control and use this magical ability.”

Said Lin Tong. “At that time, you’ll be able to see girls’ favorable impression toward you. If their favorable impression toward you is very high, then you’ll be able to obtain from their aura even more... power of love... that you’ll be able to convert into your own power. Understand?”

“Oh oh... I kinda understood... then when would my first star jade be full?...”

Asked Liu Yi.

“It’s still early...”

Lin Tong gave a side eye. Did you really decided to cultivate or what?!

To be able to open a star gate on your first day of cultivate, it’s already pretty freaking OP, okay?!”

I’m already super envious!

And you even gained an ability from your first star jade!

Too hateful! I have opened a total of four star jade, only at my third star jade did I obtained the amorous ripple hand! I even lended it this guy for free!

And this guy turned out to not be satisfied with it!



“I wanna see the level of favorable impression right now....”

Liu Yi looked up. He saw the incoming girls and boys.

What level of favorable impression do they have toward me?

“So troublesome....”

Lin Tong complained before turning into a white ray of light and entered Liu Yi’s right eye.

Liu Yi’s power wasn’t sufficient so she ended up using her own spiritual body as a supplement.

In a flash, Liu Yi suddenly noticed that the world became somewhat different.

That’s because atop of everyone’s head, there’s a string of numbers.

A girl sitting in the front row, her favorable impression level toward him was zero.

The girls around her, their level were either one or zero.

Sigh, seems like I really am transparent....

Right at this moment, the fat chick who picks under her toenails had came into the classroom.

Liu Yi couldn’t help himself and glanced at her. Immediately, he became petrified.

Favorable impression level, fifty eight!

OH MY GOD!

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 25

The fat chick had walked in. She was even chewing on a leek.

Her pair of small eyes swept through the class and landed on Liu Yi. She then chuckled.

That shiny piece of leek on her teeth, it was so bright that it almost blinded Liu Yi.

Oh my fucking gawd! Favorable impression level fifty eight!

You've got to be kidding me!

And at this moment, the number floating above the fat chick's head had jumped higher.

Favorable impression level increased by one!

Oh my fucking shit! It's fifty nine now!

Must've been when our eyes met earlier!

Too fucking scary!

Holy, gotta get my eyes back, I don't want that thing to jump again!...

However, even though the favorable impression level increased, the Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra did not have any response to it....

Hooh, so this Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra was also picky... it doesn't do anything unless the person's a beauty.

Liu Yi grew a bit disdainful of the Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra.

So... not all love are equal...

Oh well, I'm rather picky too.

Liu Yi also grew a bit disdainful of himself.

That Heart Sutra was exactly like its master...

As grandfather had said, subordinates imitate their supervisor's vice, I must certainly fix my own attitude first.

Liu Yi started to secretly check other people out again. This eye of favorable impression was pretty fun.

Liu Yi turned around and saw Ma Yixuan walking in.

Ma Yixuan was wearing a white T-shirt and blue school pants. However, they were unable to block her extraordinary figure.

Her school jacket was wrapped around her waist like a small skirt. It was very cute and attractive.

Liu Yi couldn't help himself and glanced at her a couple of times.

Upon seeing the favorable impression level that's floating on her head, Liu Yi's heart once again grew cold.

Negative thirty eight.

What the heck....

So I, Liu Yi, am a three-eight to Ma Yixuan?!

[TL: 三八 aka. three-eight in chinese have a couple of meanings depending on usage. One of the common meaning was bitch, slutty, gossipy, *etc.* However, in taiwan, it have more of a meaning of silly or airhead. Apparently three plus eight equals 11(十一) which could then be combined to make the word 'tu'(土). Tu is used to describe someone as a bimbo, bumpkin, *etc.* ]

It's one thing if it was positive, however it was negative!

This was beyond acceptable....

Am I really that worthless to Ma Yixuan?

However, Liu Yi cannot think of anything that he had done wrong to Ma Yixuan.

Before he knew of that Wang Dashan person, when Ma Yixuan said she's thirsty, Liu Yi would immediately run and buy water for her.

When she says that she's hungry, he'll go and buy her fruits and crepes for her to eat.

The result was him spending his lunch money and having to starve.

However, this didn't matter to Liu Yi because he's satisfied as long as he could see Ma Yixuan's smile.

Unfortunately, everything he had done was to no avail.

They did not give him any favorable impression to Ma Yixuan, instead, he was given a negative thirty eight...

Liu Yi really wanted to laugh at himself. However, he was unable to laugh.

Instead, he felt like crying.

A very uncomfortable feeling.

“What’s wrong? Are you not feeling good?”

Unprecedented, Lin Tong was concerned for Liu Yi.

“I’m fine. I’m okay. My grandfather had said that a man must be strong.”

Your grandfather, your grandfather...

Lin Tong gave a real big side eye. She was in a bad mood.

This dumbass only have his grandfather in sight!

I’m also technically his master!

How come he was never respectful toward me?!

Lin Tong was in a bad mood. She wanted to scold Liu Yi. Right at this moment, Liu Yi’s best bud and desk mate Chen Cai walked in.

With a crepe in his mouth and a crepe in his hand, he was walking while swaying back and forth.

He was simultaneously checking out the girls in the class as he walked.

This pervert...

“Yo Liu Yi, so you’ve woken up. Here, I brought an extra crepe. Take it and eat it, don’t die next to me, that’ll be real scary.”

Bros are the best after all...

Liu Yi was very touched by Chen Cai. Suddenly his sight went toward the numbers on Chen Cai's head.

Holy shit! Favorable Impression Level eighty eight!

God damn! What the heck is with that?!

Seeing Chen Cai's wretched appearance, Liu Yi felt a numbing sensation throughout his body. He felt like kicking Chen Cai out the window.

This guy.... he's not GAY right?!....

No, that's impossible.... I've known this guy for quite some time now... he's obviously a straight man with only girls in his sight....

There was even a time where he pretended to tie his shoe during the PE class to peek beneath the skirts of the girls... and ended up getting beaten up by them after being found out...

This kind of pervert, he shouldn't be gay.

"What? You don't want it?...holy shit! When did you bought a burger?!"

Chen Cai noticed the half eaten burger on Liu Yi's table.

"Something's wrong! You clearly didn't go out to buy food! This burger... don't tell me some chick gave you that!"

Chen Cai gave off a weird shriek.

Murong Die and Wang Lele had walked into the class right at this moment. Wang Lele heard Chen Cai's weird shrieks and saw the half eaten burger on Liu Yi's desk. Immediately, with a surprised expression, she held her hand over her

mouth and turned around to look at her Sis Die and said.

“And here I was wondering... why Sis Die was eating her burger so fast... you ended up giving it to Liu Yi to eat!”

“It didn’t taste good.... I threw it away and he picked it up, don’t start having your imagination run wild!”

Said Murong Die unnaturally as she looked toward the outside of the window.

“Oh my god....”

Wang Lele’s hand was still on her mouth in shock.

She grew up with Murong Die.

Never had Murong Die ever given her food to boys before...

Impossible...

Did the sun rise from the west?

Wang Lele’s eyesight quickly fell onto Liu Yi’s body. She was checking him from head to toe as if he was a prisoner.

“What are you doing?!”

Murong Die noticed Wang Lele checking Liu Yi out and quickly pushed her away.

“He’s not handsome... looks just like a regular teenage boy... Sis Die, where exactly did you find him attractive?”

“Why are you so nosy?! Who said that I’m into him?! Say stuff like that again and I’ll tear your mouth!”

“Could it be that Sis Die is in heat?”

Wang Lele was holding her chest. She said with a Sherlock Holmes pose.

“Shouldn’t be... it is currently not Spring...”

[TL: Chinese word for in heat = go spring. So Wang Lele was like, this wasn’t spring... she shouldn’t be in heat.]

“Little wench, you’re the one in heat!”

Murong Die pinched Wang Lele’s boob. “Look, you’re even about to start lactating!”

“Meanie... Sis Die is making fun of my boobs again...”

Said Wang Lele after brushing away Murong Die’s hand.

“Humph, don’t be so cocky about your boobs, they’ll get even bigger after you give birth!”

“There’s nothing to be afraid of! When that time comes, I’ll have my husband help me suck it!”

“You... you win...”

Murong Die had admitted her defeat.

As for Liu Yi, he had also found an excuse and got Chen Cai off his case.

He still have to start practicing his cultivation more so that he could prepare to run away tonight!

“Young master Lan, what brings you here today?”



In an internet cafe nearby, a couple hooligans were standing by Lan He. They were watching as Lan He played 'ZhengTu'. His character was equipped with the best equipments causing all these hooligans to be extremely envious.

[TL: ZhengTu (征途) = most popular mmo in China in 2008.

<http://zt.ztgame.com/>]

"Fuck. Some fucking dog shit got me in a real bad mood today!"

Said Lan He as he killed a couple weak players in the game.

"Aiya. Which idiot provoked our young master Lan? I shall help you take care of him. Young master Lan, just give me a highest quality sword... that's strengthened..."

"I've already got Kevin on the case. That son of a bitch is certainly going to die this time!"

Said Lan He fiercely after killing two high level and well equipped players.

'Cheh!'

Sneered a hooligan with a scar behind his ear.

"Kevin? More like Kevshit! He's just a senior high schooler. How the fuck could he be compared to us real gangsters."

The hooligan with a scar behind his ear took out a butterfly knife and started flipping and waving it around his hand. Dude's pretty skillful.

"Whoever our Black Dragon Gang wants to take down, none of them were able to escape. Since that retard have made young master Lan so angry, I, Ma Wei, shall help that retard do some bloodletting. What say you, young master Lan?"

“Oh?”

Lan He started becoming interested.

“Brother Wei is really willing to come forward to help me take care of him?”

“Of course... young master Lan, how do you want to take care of him?”

Said Ma Wei while laughing evilly. He was still playing with his butterfly knife.

“I just want one of his leg. If Kevin can’t handle that, then I’ll have to thank brother Wei for your trouble.”

“One leg? That’s a trivial matter to our Black Dragon Gang.”

Ma Wei chuckled. “however Kevin who only knows how to bully high school kids, I fear that he don’t have the guts to do it.”

“In that case, thanks Brother Wei for your troubles. When the matter’s taken care of, I shall give each of you a thousand yuan. Consider it my treat to some alcohol.”

Said Lan He.

“I don’t want a thousand yuan, I want your ten star +12 sword.”

Said Ma Wei pointing at the game screen.

“Aiya... Brother Wei, the value of my sword... I suspect that you also know it...”

This sword was worth over a hundred thousand yuan.

Even though a hundred thousand was only pocket money for Lan He, he didn’t

want to give away the sword that he spent a long time to finally strengthen to ten star and +12.

“Young master Lan, you’re not giving away this sword for free.”

Ma Wei laughed. “A sword in exchange for a friendship with our Black Dragon Gang... I think you don’t need me to explain! In the future, if young master Lan have any problems he wants to take care of, then it shall be our whole Black Dragon Gang’s problem!”

“Okay....”

Lan He gritted his teeth.

The Black Dragon Gang was a large youth gang. To have a friendly relationship with them was certainly good for him.

In the future, if there’s more retards like Liu Yi, he could just say a single word and the Black Dragon Clan will help me take care of it.

At that time, Lan He would be able to tyrannize this area. Who would dare provoke him?!

When thinking to this point, Lan He heartache from giving his sword lessened.

“I will trade you the sword right away. I will be in Brother Wei’s care henceforth!”

“Haha! Easy! Easy!”

Ma Wei’s eyes were a little red once he saw that highest quality sword in his inventory.

He himself had spent quite a bit of money in the game too. The game was like a

scam, the probability of a successful strengthening was low as fuck!

All the money that he made in the gang was spent on strengthening his weapon... however, it's still a piece of shit!

He was a bossman in reality. Everyone had to respect him. A lot of little hooligan punks had to call him Brother Wei when they see him.

However, in the gaming world, he's a rubbish that gets killed by others in seconds.

This caused him to be very unhappy!

Ma Wei felt that he was a hero with the quality of a hero, how could he be bullied by others like that?!

Thus, he didn't want money or anything else! He only wanted Lan He's highest quality sword.

With this highest quality sword, he would be unstoppable in the game world!  
Hahaha!

"In the future, anyone who dared provoke young master Lan shall become this Ma Wei's enemy! Young master Lan, just wait for my good news!"

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 26

“School is finally over!”

Chen Cai stood up from his desk and did a huge stretch.

It was really too awesome that second year students didn't have the night classes that third year students have.

“Cmon, let's go Liu Yi. Let's play a couple of rounds of Crossfire tonight; some dude just gave me an AK-47-Gold, it'll be great to try those out!”

Chen Cai pulled Liu Yi while laughing with a hee hee sound.

“Shit, you fucking fag, you still have the nerves to say such stuff!”

Liu Yi gave Chen Cai a large side eye.

This fag played as a female character and goes around calling the guys onii-chan. He had swindled countless men.

Dude have most certainly swindled an AK-47-Gold off some rich dude a couple of days ago and was showing off in front of Liu Yi again.

“Just fuck off bro! I still have stuff to do, I'll leave by myself later!”

Once Liu Yi started to think of the fact that he'll be jumped tonight and would have to run for his life, he stomach started feeling a little tight.

Fuck it! What's going to happen will happen!

Grandfather had said that a man must face his challenges!

Running away isn't going to solve anything.

That's right! Liu Yi! You can do it!

Believe in yourself!

You.... will certainly be able to run away!

Liu Yi started to silently encourage himself in his mind.

“Cheh, if I didn't know that you're a freaking loser, I might even have imagined that you've found yourself a girl recently.”

Chen Cai said that and immediately turned and left.

Shit....

Liu Yi cursed in his heart. Am I really that worthless?!

However when he remembered the negative thirty-eight on Ma Yixuan's head, Liu Yi could only sigh.

“Liu Yi, come take my car home.”

Murong Die suddenly said told Liu Yi to ride with her.

Immediately, a lot of the eyes of the people in the class had swept and landed on the two.

Murong Die actually wanted someone to ride with her?

Murong Die's family was pretty wealthy. Everyday she would come and leave the school in a Mercedes.

Occasionally she would take the bus with Wang Lele in the morning to experience life.

However, regardless of bus or car, Murong Die have never taken a guy with her!

This time, she actually invited Liu Yi to ride in her car!

Unbelievable!

“My driver uncle Wang is a retired special forces soldier. With him there, no harm will get to you.”

Murong Die saw that Liu Yi was also looking at her dumbstruck. Immediately, her face got red out of embarrassment, she turned around, pretending that she was looking out the window and said.

Wang Lele was standing by Murong Die. She wanted to laugh but dared not laugh.

If she were to laugh, she'll certainly have her boobs pinched by Murong Die again...

Restrain yourself! You must hold it back!

“I refuse!”

Unexpectedly, Liu Yi refused Murong Die's invitation.

This had caused the students in the class to be even more shocked.

Liu Yi.... isn't Liu Yi a bit too impressive today?

He went against Lan He and even set up a date for a battle with Lan He!

And now, he refused Murong Die's invitation!

Did he got possessed by a Mr. Perfect?!

[TL: remember, Mr. Perfect is tall, rich, and handsome.]

Or was there something wrong with his brains?!

"You!"

Murong Die was even more surprised. She looked at Liu Yi, stupefied.

It was her first time inviting a guy to ride with her... and she was rejected!

This... her prideful self was unable to accept it!

Wang Lele was also blinking her eyes in shock. She was thinking that this Liu Yi was really too hateful, why can't he cut some slacks for Sis Die...

"My grandfather had said that a man hiding behind a woman's back isn't a man at all, he's a wuss."

Liu Yi clenched his fist and said loudly. "Even if I were to beaten till I vomit blood, I would still not run away in a woman's car!"

After saying those words, Liu Yi turned around and left the classroom.

"This son of a bitch!"

Murong Die was so angry that she was stomping her feet. "Throwing my kindness out the window, serves you right if your leg's broken!"

"Don't get angry, calm down. Too much anger gets you old faster!"



Wang Lele quickly tries to calm her Sis Die.

It was her first time seeing her Sis Die to get so angry over a guy...

And this guy... was a classmate that Sis Die didn't even know this morning...

Liu Yi oh Liu Yi, where did you get this magical power?!

"Humph! Let's go!"

Murong Die, unable to vent her anger, grabbed her bag and immediately left the classroom. Wang Lele was quickly following her.

As for Liu Yi, he was already regretting his actions.

Sure enough.... women are the source of calamity....

Originally I also intended to find a way to run away. Who would've expected from with Murong Die asking me to ride with her, blood rushed to my head and I ended up saying such a thing.

Lin Tong was laughing at Liu Yi.

"Hahaha! Keep going with your grandfather this your grandfather that and look what happen?! You got screwed over by your grandfather this time!"

"Who, who said that?!"

Liu Yi immediately tried looking more imposing than he is and said. "What my grandfather said certainly have a meaning to it! No matter what, I cannot be looked by upon by others!"

After saying those, Liu Yi started walking out the school building.

The distance between the school building and the school gates were not very far. This was especially true since Liu Yi's eyesight had increased a lot.

Immediately, he saw Kevin who was standing by the school gates.

A couple hooligan looking students were also standing at the school gates. It was obvious that they were waiting for Liu Yi.

Liu Yi's calves and legs immediately started cramping.

Even though he talking all high and mighty, upon seeing Kevin and them, he grew nervous right away.

All his life, he have never once got into a fight...

He had only been beaten up by others!

"Those guys are there!"

Little fox Lin Tong also noticed Kevin and them. All excited, she immediately started telling Liu Yi of their location.

"Quick, go up there and give them hell! Teach these guys a lesson!"

"Let's...let's jump over the wall..."

Suggested Liu Yi after remembering the changes in his physical strength from opening the first star jade.

"Jump your ass! Can't you stop being a wuss?!"

Lin Tong was angry as hell. "You rascal, what did you said earlier in front of Murong Die?! How did you turn into a wimp right away?"

“I....I....”

“Do you want to be a coward all your life? Do you really want to be the wussy Liu?”

Lin Tong’s speech was provoking Liu Yi’s ears and heart.

Are you a wussy?

Do you want to be a wussy?

Liu Yi, do you want to be bullied your whole life?!

“Fuck it!”

Finally, Liu Yi decided to fuck it all. He clenched his fist, summoned up all his courage and started walking toward Kevin and them.

“Look! That bastard is coming!”

A student saw Liu Yi walking to them. Excitedly, he threw away the cigarette in his mouth and said.

“Kev bro, our cash is coming!”

“Haha.... he really dared to come out! Drag him into the alley!”

Kevin also threw away the cigarette in his mouth.

Once they take care of this kid, they’ll have money for the internet cafe.

Tsk tsk, things that could restore one’s reputation and also earn money, it was what Kevin loved to do the most.

Two students immediately went up to Liu Yi. They put their arms around Liu Yi and dragged him into an alley nearby.

This is after all the school gates, if they were to fight here, then it'll be bad news if they were to be seen by teachers.

“Brother Wei, our target was dragged away by Kevin and them!”

Ma Wei had also come bringing along a couple hooligan subordinates with him. A sharp eyed hooligan saw Liu Yi being taken away by Kevin, he immediately told Ma Wei about it.

“It's alright, they could have their hands on the guy first.”

Ma Wei chuckled while playing with the butterfly knife in his hand. He said while waving the knife around. “After they finish with him, we shall take care of them too! If I don't teach this Kevin a lesson, he really would forget about who's in charge here!”

“Yes sir!”

“As expected from our wise brother Wei!”

The few hooligans with steel pipe, leather belts and such in their hands were laughing evilly incessantly.

“Sis Die.... Liu Yi was dragged away by Kevin and them... what should we do?...”

Wang Lele and Murong Die were sitting in the back seat of a Mercedes. Wang Lele saw Liu Yi being dragged into a small alley, immediately she turned to Murong Die and asked all frightenedly.

“What does his life and death have anything to do with me?!”

Murong Die curled her lips.

“Sis Die...”

Wang Lele looked at Murong Die with pitiful eyes.

To be honest, she also didn't want Liu Yi to be beaten up.

“Miss, are we going home?”

Asked a middle-aged man sitting in the front row. His voice held a bit of indifference.

This middle-aged man was wearing a black suit, white gloves and sunglasses. He looked very cool.

Murong Die was sitting in the car without saying anything. It seems that she was thinking of something.

The driver wasn't in a hurry either. He was just sitting there quietly waiting for his Miss's orders.

Only after seven or eight minutes have passed did Murong Die bite her teeth.

“Uncle Wang, I suddenly remembered that guy called Kevin verbally molested me a couple of days ago.”

Said Murong Die suddenly.

“He even said that he shall become the son-in-law of the Murong family... anyways, he said a lot of ugly words...”

“I understand, Miss.”

The black suited uncle nodded. He opened the door and got off the car. “Miss, I’ll be right back.”

“Sis Die, you still care for that guy!”

Laughed Wang Lele while sitting in the back of the car.

“Cheh, who cares about him?!”

With a slightly feverish face, Murong Die responded while looking out the window.

“That Kevin gets on my nerves, that’s all! Didn’t he laughed and called you a dairy cow?”

“Right right right! Kevin is a major douchebag! Uncle Wang will teach him a lesson!”

Said Wang Lele as she waved her small fist around.

“That’s right. It have nothing to do with Liu Yi. Let’s wait for Uncle Wang to come back.”

Murong Die lazily leaned back onto the seat and closed her eyes.

It seems that she was very trusting toward this driver.

Wang Lele, on the other hand, was very curious. She was lying by the window and looking at the small alley.

Liu Yi was forcefully pulled into the small and remote alley by Kevin and them.

His heart was beating real fast. All he could feel was that his legs were getting

real weak.

Liu Yi.... Liu Yi... you gotta keep standing!

“Bang!”

Liu Yi was pushed to the ice cold alley wall. His back had an intimate encounter with the wall.

The impact with the wall didn't hurt at all. Instead, it woke Liu Yi up.

Kevin and his couple companion's sinister smiling faces was slowly coming into his view.

“Wussy Liu, weren't you so wild this morning? Didn't you even kicked me?”

Kevin was standing in front of Liu Yi arrogantly. With a cigarette in his mouth, he said to Liu Yi full of arrogance.

“Mother fucker, you should have a look at your own wuss body. Seems like you really went fucking coocoo, to even dare mess with I, Kevin!”

While saying those words, Kevin had extended his hands and slapped Liu Yi's face twice.

“Come, I'll give you a chance. As long as you kneel down and call me grandpa, I'll let you go, kay?”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 27

Kevin only didn't dare offend the few people like Lan He, Murong Die and Wang Lele with strong family backgrounds. Other than them, Kevin didn't care about any of the other students.

Especially this Liu Yi in front of him. He had always been a wuss. However Kevin wants to fuck with him, he'll be able to!

However he was actually kicked by Liu Yi today!

Fucking hell! The reputation of Kevin was completely lost, how could he still continue to tyrannize the class?!

Even if young master Lan haven't given him an order, if just for his own reputation, Kevin was still going to beat Liu Yi up so bad that even his mother cannot recognize him!

However, humiliating this guy before beating him up was still very pleasant to do.

As the books said, to humiliate a person's body was just a dirty trick; one must humiliate their soul!

That's right, I am going to humiliate this Liu Yi's soul and teach him what it means to provoke this Kevin! Once I finish humiliating him, I will beat him up and break his leg as per young master Lan's orders!

"If you don't want to be beaten up, then obediently kneel down in front of me and call me Grandpa, kay?"

Said Kevin while pointing the ground in front of him.



Liu Yi looked at the ground underneath Kevin's feet.

He then looked at the students who surrounded him and were glaring at him like a tiger watching their prey. If he refused to kneel, then they will beat him up....

But...

"I'm not going to kneel."

Said Liu Yi suddenly.

"My grandfather had said that a man kneeling is as precious as gold, even if you were to beat me to death, I will still not kneel."

"Mother fucker, seems like you want to die real bad!"

Cursed Kevin as he saw Liu Yi's rather die than submit appearance.

"If I don't beat you till your teeth falls off, then I'm not called Kevin!"

Then, Kevin outstretched his hand and came slapping at Liu Yi's face.

As the saying goes, don't hit the face in fights.

That's because to hit someone's face was humiliating.

However, Kevin didn't bother to take that into consideration. It could be said that he did it precisely to humiliate Liu Yi. Thus that's why his palm was flying toward Liu Yi's face.

Liu Yi, at that moment, suddenly had the blood in his body start flowing faster.

The red stream of qi was constantly flying out of his first star jade and quickly

running through his whole body.

The world in front of Liu Yi had suddenly turned black and white.

Kevin who stood in front of Liu Yi had a red glow in his body.

As for his incoming palm that was about to reach Liu Yi's cheek had suddenly slowed down considerably like slow motion.

Liu Yi's mind had also become cold and detached.

He suddenly outstretched his left hand and, with a snap, grabbed Kevin's wrist.

Kevin was surprised. He did not expect that Liu Yi would be able to grab his hand.

Following, Liu Yi squeezed his hand. Crack!

"Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!"

Kevin felt as if he had lost control of his right hand. An immense acute pain was coming from his right wrist. It hurts so much that he was grabbing his wrist and twitching.

"Something's... something's wrong with this kid!"

"Fuck that, we have all these people, beat him up!"

The surrounding students saw that Liu Yi was acting weird. He had a grin on his face causing all of the students' hearts to beat rapidly.

However, once they remembered the amount of people they had, they were no longer afraid of him!

Immediately, with loud warcries, one by one, these students came rushing at Liu

Yi.

“Bang!”

Like lightning, Liu Yi elbowed a student's chest.

Immediately, the student's eyeballs almost burst out from their sockets. He was clutching his chest. His waist bent like a shrimp. His mouth was wide open but no air came out from it. Finally, he fell directly down to his knees.

“Pa!”

Confronting another student that was rushing toward him, Liu Yi raised his right leg high up against the sky and came down with his heel crushing the guy's skull!

Had it been before, it would've been impossible for Liu Yi to raise his leg past his abdomen.

It was simply impossible for someone who have never practiced martial arts and never learned how to dance whose ligaments were not stretched out to raise their leg high.

However, in his immortal cultivation state, Liu Yi's physiques were increased.

The things that he cannot do before, now, under the stimulation from the red stream of qi was barely doable.

Nevertheless, his ability was only temporary. However, it was more than enough against these low-level hooligans.

“Pa!”

Liu Yi's leg came down crushing a student's head, the student immediately fell to the ground.

The remaining three students were all dumbstruck.

Two of them were trembling with fear. The other, overcome with emotions, decided to pick up a brick from the floor and smash Liu Yi's head with it.

“Motherfucker! Let's see you get up after this!”

As the saying goes, no matter how strong one's martial arts is, a brick still knocks him out!

Seems like this student have read too much of those novels where the MC just goes around cheating and playing dirty, he picked up a brick and prepared to knock Liu Yi down with it.

However, Liu Yi threw a right punch directly on the brick.

“Bang!”

The brick in the student's hand exploded from Liu Yi's punch. The broken brick hit the student's head, knocking him unconscious.

Only two students remained. Their legs were shaking nonstop.

“.....”

Liu Yi turned around. Without saying anything he signaled the two students to come at him.

As if they had seen a ghost, the two students ran away screaming.

Finally took care of them...

Liu Yi was about to call it a day when suddenly something black appeared in front

of his eyes.

A large and tall uncle dressed in a black suit stood in front of him. He slowly took off his sunglasses.

“You.... are Kevin right?”

.....

“Sis Die, with uncle Wang being that powerful, why did he retire? Can’t be be an officer or something in the military?”

Inside the Mercedes, Wang Lele was unable to help her curiosity, asked Murong Die who currently had her eyes closed.

“Uncle Wang is nearsighted.”

Murong Die said lazily. “He didn’t like wearing glasses and wasn’t willing to do the surgery, so he retired.”

“Oh.... so that’s the case...”

Wang Lele was nodding as if she understood. “Then how long will it take for Uncle Wang to come back?”

“Back when Uncle Wang was in the special forces, he had won the fighting championship three times. With those couple of ignorant and incompetent school kids, I think uncle Wang would be able to take care of them in a couple of seconds. Just sit tight and wait for his return.”

“Oh....”

The two girls continued to wait in the car.

At the same time in the alley, Liu Yi was staring at the cool middle-aged uncle in front of him with wide opened eyes.

What the heck? He thinks I'm Kevin?

Where exactly do I look like Kevin?!

"Sir, you got the wrong person...."

Liu Yi's blood flow had slowly began to slow down. His red stream of qi had began to return to his star jade.

Without the stimulation from the red stream of qi, Liu Yi began to feel that his thighs have a cramp like sensation and his right hand was in a needle pricking pain.

Bullmotherfuckingshit....

This red stream of qi was like taking an upper!

When you're on it, you're like the God of War. When you're off, it all comes back!

Hurts like hell....

"Haha. Students nowadays are really cunning."

The man in black suit blinked his eyes a couple of times before saying. "Don't bother lying, I've seen your pictures. Kevin, as a man, you ought to be courageous enough to take responsibilities for your actions. You have the guts to verbally molest the Miss of my family, then you shall be able to assume the consequences of your action!"

After saying those words, the black suited man suddenly punched Liu Yi's

abdomen. It was fast like lighting.

Immediately, a huge surge of pain was coming from Liu Yi's stomach.

It was as if all the air in Liu Yi's lungs were being squeezed out at that moment.

Like a cooked shrimp, he was squatting on the ground with a bent back and panting.

His ears were ringing, his eyesight was growing dimmer.

But right at this time, Liu Yi suddenly felt that the white stream of qi in his body was flowing out. It was nourishing his body and treating his injuries!

So strange... wasn't this power an evil power?!

How come it's making me feel so good right now?....

His body no longer felt so painful.... his consciousness was also rapidly coming back.

"This punch shall make you sleep for a couple of hours and teach you a lesson."

Black suited uncle slowly put his sunglasses back on. He turned around and was about to leave.

Suddenly, a noise came from behind him.

Surprised, the black suited uncle turned around and saw Liu Yi who was slowly getting back up. Immediately, he grew even more surprised.

"You actually could get back up?"

He was a professional special forces soldier, logically, no student would be able

to get back up from his punch!

However, this frail looking guy in front of him was actually able to get back up!

“Kevin, no wonder a rascal like you dared to molest our Miss, you do have some skills.”

The black suited uncle praised.

“I am not Kevin!”

Liu Yi’s eyes were slightly gleaming with a red glow.

The world had once again turned black and white. Everything had slowed down.

“My name is Liu Yi!”

After saying those words, like a fast and nimble leopard, he pounced at the black suited uncle.

The black suited uncle sense danger, his body immediately moved subconsciously.

He lifted up his palm and strike at the direction of Liu Yi’s throat like a knife.

The fightings techniques of special forces soldiers were all direct and meant to kill!

That’s because the role of special forces soldiers on the battlefield was not to capture enemies but rather to kill them.

Their martial arts were extremely dangerous, extremely simple but also extremely lethal!



This knifehand strike could shatter a person's neck.

His opponent was only a student. The black suit had originally only wanted to teach him a lesson and not to kill him.

However, he was unable to control his subconscious actions. This was because this student was giving off an indistinct murderous aura.

All the special forces soldiers were very sensitive toward murderous aura.

Thus, the black suited uncle responded with a lethal strike.

Once he threw out his strike, he immediately started regretting it. This knifehand of his will certainly break that student's neck!

However, once thrown it can no longer be taken back! Even if he regrets, there's nothing he could do!

To the black suited uncle's astonishment, that student with a thin and weak appearance unexpectedly dodged in a strange manner. His shoulder brushed by the black suited uncle's palm; he dodged the knifehand.

At the same time, his fist was imprinted on the black suited uncle's abdomen.

An enormous force was impacting his stomach, the black suited uncle was knocked back a few steps. He took a few breaths and repressed the pain on his abdomen.

"Back to you."

Said Liu Yi coldly.

The black suited uncle was very shocked.

Even though he had taken a punch from Liu Yi, his body was very resilient and he had also practiced some qigong, thus he did not suffer from a major injury.

What surprised him instead was that this student actually managed to dodge his sure kill knifehand strike!

Is he really just a student?

If this guy isn't Kevin, who is he?

Right when this black suited uncle want to inquire the student standing in front of him, noise of footsteps came from the entrance of the alley.

“They’re over here! Brother Wei!”

“Go, make them bleed!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 28

Back when Ma Wei was in junior high, he had hit his teacher and was forced to drop out of school.

Afterwards, he had followed a 'cousin' that he met on the streets and have been living that street life all the way till now.

He was originally a small fry hooligan, anyone was able to bully him.

Until one day, he unintentionally provoked a famous local hooligan boss.

That boss threatened to break his leg so that he could only be a beggar for the rest of his life.

Ma Wei returned and pondered. He knew that he'll be dead either way so he decided to fuck it all.

He picked up his kitchen knife and went directly to the nightclub to find the hooligan boss. Using his kitchen knife, he chased that boss down seven whole streets!

Finally, Ma Wei got famous.

One of the bosses from the Black Dragon Gang said that he appreciate Ma Wei's ferocity and decided to take him in.

After a while, Ma Wei status in the Black Dragon Clan gradually got higher, he ended up becoming a small boss.

He now have some small fry hooligans working under him.

However, after being in the gang for this long, Ma Wei found out about one thing.

Even if you're a gangster, you're still nothing without money!

Ma Wei wanted to use this opportunity to associate himself with the wealthy young master Lan, it was a mutually beneficial thing.

In the future, as long as young master Lan provide him the funds, he will be Lan He's hired arms.

One of the gang bosses of the Black Dragon Gang was in a major fight a couple of days ago and had both of his hands cut off. Thus, he's pretty much crippled and his position had also become empty.

With enough funds, he, Ma Wei, would be able to slowly climb up the ladders in the Black Dragon Gang!

If he were to take this opportunity and become a gang boss, then he would've really had made a name for himself!

At that time, people would no longer call him Brother Wei but instead Boss Ma!

[TL: forgot to mention, by brother they meant older brother. It's impossible to translate this term to english and keep the meaning. If you've seen Japanese gangsters... it's the equivalent of aniki that young small fries call their boss. So.... small fry → aniki → boss man → gang clan leader. something like that.]

Hahaha!

Thinking of his grand prospect, Ma Wei was totally excited.

However, when he led a couple of his subordinates to block the alley entrance, he was suddenly dumbfounded.

What.... the heck happened?....

Several students were lying on the ground. A frail looking youngster and a middle-aged uncle in a suit were standing in the middle of the alley. The two were standing opposing as if they were measuring each other's capability.

Something's wrong... this shouldn't be the case!

Wasn't it going to be Kevin and couple other guys beating up a guy called Liu Yi?

What the heck is this?

"Brother Wei.... that, that kid seems to be Liu Yi!"

One of his subordinate immediately handed Ma Wei his cell phone, on the screen was Liu Yi's photo.

"Is this even science?...didn't young master Lan said that Liu Yi is only a wuss?..."

Said another one of Ma Wei's subordinate after seeing the blood on Liu Yi's hand and the countless students down on the ground.

"Who did you say is a wuss?"

Liu Yi suddenly turned around and looked at that hooligan.

The hooligan saw Liu Yi's blood red eyes and was immediately scared.

However, he soon calmed himself.

He was a Black Dragon Gang member!

Who the fuck would he ever be afraid of?!

“Fuck! Brat, who the fuck do you think you’re talking to?! Let me tell you, I’m from the Black Dragon Gang! You better act more tactful toward me, so what if I call you a wuss?! Speak up again and I’ll beat you to death!”

Hearing those words, Liu Yi suddenly moved away from the black suited uncle. He walked toward his left a couple of steps and arrived in front of that hooligan.

“Try calling me a wuss again.”

Said Liu Yi as he looked at that hooligan.

“Wuss! Wuss! Wuss!”

The hooligan called Liu Yi wuss countless times. “Hahaha! All my life, this was the first time I’ve heard someone asking me to do that. Say guys, don’t you think this dude is fucking retarded?! Hahaha....POW!”

Before he even finish laughing, Liu Yi’s fist have already landed on his chin.

“Bang!”

The hooligan sprayed out his two front teeth. He was knocked flying over a meter off the ground.

“Pow!”

Finally, he landed on the ground with a face full of blood.

All the other hooligans nearby were staring at Liu Yi blankly.

This... this is the super weak wuss student that young master Lan spoke of?

This... is bullshit....

This guy was a savage!

The black suited uncle standing behind gave off a surprised 'Eh?' sound.

Was this really an ordinary student?

Was he a martial artist that received professional training? Or was he a soldier?

However, the way he attacks was all over the place and very barbarous!

It was like the way beasts fights!

There's actually a student this dangerous in Miss's class.... no, I must certainly tell the master about it when I return!

While the black suited uncle was pondering in his heart, chaos had already erupted at Ma Wei's side.

Never had they expected to encounter a super tough guy when helping young master Lan!

"Is there anyone else that want to call me wuss?..."

Liu Yi was only being stimulated by his stream of qi, his body was still somewhat frail.

From this one punch of his, his left hand was bleeding, the skin around the joints was rubbed open.

However, because of the stimulation from the red stream of qi, Liu Yi does not feel any pain.

And his white stream of qi was also flowing through his body secretly and curing

his injury.

“Motherfucker! He’s also human, we’ll get him together!”

Shouted Ma Wei after seeing that his subordinates were scared witless.

The hooligans nearby, one by one, started screaming their weird warcries, and came rushing at Liu Yi with their steel pipes and two-by-fours.

The black suited uncle crossed his arms and decided to watch the amusement from the back.

He wanted to know how strong this youngster was!

“Bang! Bang!”

Liu Yi’s movement was fast and clean, he immediately knocked down two hooligans.

A two-by-four that a hooligan held exploded on the back of Liu Yi’s head!

Immediately, blood and broken pieces of wood were flying everywhere.

Liu Yi immediately felt a cool sensation on the back of his head.

However, under the influence of the red stream of qi, he did not feel any pain at all.

Nevertheless, he began to vaguely smell the scent of blood in his nose.

This was the smell of his own blood.

As if it was a catalyst, Liu Yi felt that the red stream of qi began to flow even faster in his body!



His white stream of qi had also accelerated, it started to influx into the back of his head, healing the wound to his head.

Had it been a regular person, to experience such a smash to the head, they would at least be knocked out even if they didn't get a concussion from it.

However, Liu Yi was no longer a regular person. He's a super lucky student that already had crossed over to the path of immortal cultivation!

“Pa!”

Liu Yi suddenly turned around and grabbed the hooligan's head with one of his hand. While grabbing the head, he pushed the hooligan's body all the way till it hit into the wall.

“Bang!”

The walls trembled from the impact.

The hooligan, with a busted open bleeding head, immediately fainted.

Seeing Liu Yi still being so swift and fierce even with a bloody head, the remaining hooligans were all scared witless, every one of their legs were going soft.

“A bunch of useless rubbish!”

Ma Wei was also terrified. However, the countless years of gang experience had taught him that he cannot be afraid, if he was, then it'll be the end of him!

He gathered up his courage and ferocity, took out his butterfly knife, secretly moved to the back of Liu Yi and thrust his knife directly at Liu Yi's lower back!

No matter how many brothers were to be injured tonight, as long as we finish young master Lan's mission, he would certainly take care of all of our medical expenses!

This would also gain young master Lan's favor and allow us to reach a consensus on cooperation...

Then the position of a gang boss shall become mine!

All in all, everything would work once I make this Liu Yi bleed!

Liu Yi's focus was still completely on the hooligan who hit him and didn't notice Ma Wei's sneak attack.

However at this moment, the black suited uncle who had been watching the fight from behind joined the fray.

He outstretched his arm like lightning and grabbed Ma Wei's wrist.

He increased the strength of his grip and immediately Ma Wei was grimacing with pain. Without any strength to hold the knife anymore, the knife simply dropped to the floor.

"What I hated the most was sneak attack from behind."

Said the black suited uncle. With a simple movement and a change alter in grip strength, he pressed Ma Wei's wrist against him causing Ma Wei to kneel down on the ground.

Right when he was preparing to teach Ma Wei a couple more lessons, a burst of ill wind hit him in the face.

The black suited uncle subconsciously stepped back a couple of steps. He saw Liu Yi's fist flying past, sweeping the place that he had just stood.

“My... you have went berserk!”

Said the black suited uncle, shocked.

Liu Yi did not respond, he continued attacking like a wild beast.

Under the influence of the red stream of qi, Liu Yi already could not tell people apart.

All he sees in his eyes was flashing red silhouettes..

Red silhouettes were his enemy... that's the only thing in Liu Yi's mind right now.

“Pa! Pa! Pa!”

In an instant, Liu Yi had several bouts with the black suited uncle.

If the black suited uncle really wanted to kill Liu Yi, it was not difficult either.

However he didn't want to kill, thus he was always pulling his punches. Thus, he was currently in a stalemate with Liu Yi.

Liu Yi, on the other hand, wasn't trying to restrain himself at all. He used the utmost of his strength in every one of his attack and almost managed to hurt the black suited uncle several times.

The few hooligans took the opportunity to helped Ma Wei up.

“Brother Wei... what... what... do we do now?...”

“Fucking hell... they're too strong... retreat first...”

Ma Yi cursed. “We're going back to beat that young master Lan up....Fuck! This

mother fucking Liu Yi must know martial arts... Quickly, let's go! Once they stop fighting, we won't be able to run anymore!"

[TL: Ma Wei said he's gonna 黑 Lan He.... 黑 means black... so... not certain if it's beating him up, I interpreted it as saying he's going to give Lan He a black eye... hopefully we'll figure out in the upcoming chapters.]

Immediately, these hooligans ran away sneakily.

Liu Yi was still fighting with the black suited uncle.

However, soon the red stream of qi in his body was gradually subsiding.

He had only started cultivating, thus he didn't have a lot of immortal power.

Fighting for this long had used a lot of his immortal power.

The red stream of qi had began to recede.

"Liu Yi.... stop fighting and run away quickly!"

Lin Tong was shouting at Liu Yi constantly. "You're running out of power, you can't win against this man!"

"What... what have I done?..."

Liu Yi saw the students and hooligans lying on the floor, he was stunned silly.

What exactly... have I done?!

Liu Yi's whole body was cold, he was feeling an unbearable pain.

He felt as if he could collapse at any moment.

The black suited uncle was unaware of Liu Yi's state. One of his hand landed on

Liu Yi's shoulder, he grabbed Liu Yi's left shoulder and was about to pinch him down.

Liu Yi's shoulder was in immense pain, so immense that Liu Yi screamed in pain. This shocked the black suited uncle.

This kid actually know how to scream in pain?

Something's wrong.... he was acting like a beast without any care for his life earlier...

How did he turn into a frail egghead now?

"Liu Yi! Quickly, use your right hand!"

Lin Tong shouted at Liu Yi's ears.

Liu Yi held himself from thinking about vicious thoughts. He outstretched his right hand and touched the black suited uncle's thigh.

The black suited uncle was confused, why did this youngster touch his thigh?

Was that supposed to be an attack?

Right when he was all confused, a strange feeling suddenly shot through his body!

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 29

As the saying goes, nine losers in ten men, nine masturbaters in ten losers.

Although this black suited uncle cannot be considered a strict loser being a special forces, the country's elite.

However, he had become the driver and bodyguard of the Murong family right after retirement, he had no time at all to find a girlfriend.

To go to some red light district and fuck a prostitute or something... were stuff that's even more against the principles of this black suited comrade.

Red light districts were something that he will never set foot upon!

Thus, the black suit could only enjoy the entertainment of Yang Guo without Xiaolongnu all those years.

[TL: Yang Guo is the MC of Return of the Condor Heros, one of the most famous wuxia novel. Xiaolongnu was his wife and master.

You can read translated version here: <http://wuxiasociety.com/the-return-of-the-condor-heroes/>]

The profound arts of hand stroke.

However, Yang Guo managed to get Xiaolongnu back. That's why he was very excited and said "As long as I have aunt, so what if I lost my left hand?!"

[TL: If you've read the classic, then you know that Yang Guo calls Xiaolongnu aunt... she's not technically his aunt...]

Alas, the black suited uncle didn't have even have any wanton female to replace his left hand.

However after having his thigh touched by Liu Yi, a pleasurable sensation that's even stronger than his profound arts of hand stroke had instantly shot through his whole body.

Had this sensation been from being touched by a woman, then this black suited uncle would have longed for that to begin with.

However it was a man. He was both awkwardly embarrassed and unable to stop himself, he even gave off some forced moans from his mouth.

Soon, all his physical strength was lost.

His legs grew weak.

Liu Yi had used his amorous ripple hand in desperation.

He was unbearably disgusted with having to use this skill on a man.

However... it must be done to save his life!

This fierce and tough black suited uncle came out of nowhere, and he was strong as hell!

And his red stream of qi was exhausted, he certainly cannot win, thus he must escape.

Fortunately the white stream of qi came out as if it was awfully conscientious, not only did it start curing Liu Yi's injuries, it also began to recover his physical strength.

Immediately after bringing down the black suited uncle with his right hand, Liu Yi immediately turned around and ran like hell. Within seconds, he disappeared without a trace.

The black suited uncle was half kneeling on the ground. Only after breathing in a whole minute worth of air did he manage to calm himself down.

What the heck just happened?....

That kid's hand had some kind of special power, it actually made me into this kind of damnable appearance!

Could it be that his hand was smeared in some kind of drug?

I've heard that in some foreign countries there are these super strong hallucinogenic drugs that could make people instantly become super horny and whatnot....

That youngster's hand.... did he smear in it that kind of drug?

He might!

However, how could ordinary student possess such high-tech hallucinogenic drug?!

The black suited uncle began to suspect the identity of the student called 'Liu Yi'.

This student... was certainly not ordinary!

I must certainly tell master about this so that Miss could quickly transfer her school.

This school was really too dangerous.

Only after calming himself down did the black suited uncle turn around to return to his car. As for all the people lying on the ground, they were none of his concern.



These people, they asked for it.

“Uncle Wang, how come it took you so long?”

Murong Die who was sitting in the car had grown a bit impatient. “What happened? Was Kevin too difficult?”

“That’s...that’s not it...”

The black suited uncle’s face reddened, he said. “Some small issue had delayed me a bit...”

“See, as I have said...”

Murong Die touched Wang Lele’s beautiful hair and said “A regular school student, how could he possibly give uncle Wang a hard time.” Wang Lele had already fallen asleep on Murong Die’s bosom.

“Haha... it’s exactly as Miss said....”

Black suited uncle was sitting on the driver’s seat while wearing his sunglasses. No one noticed that his face was reddened.

“Umm... Miss... is there a student called Liu Yi in your class?”

“Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh?”

Murong Die who was all calm and collected against the car seat suddenly got all panicky, her legs trembled, she almost jolted Wang Lele awake.

Fortunately Wang Lele sleeps like a dead pig.

She smacked her lips a couple of times and then she falls back into her sleep.

Murong Die subconsciously remembered her embarrassing appearance when Liu Yi touched her right hand earlier today.....

Her heart was in a chaos!

“Uncle... uncle Wang.... why did you suddenly ask about Liu Yi?”

Murong Die was even stuttering her words a bit.

“It’s... it’s nothing....”

The black suited uncle was also deeply ashamed himself.

“I was only a bit curious because I heard about Liu Yi from that Kevin kid... Miss, how’s your relationship with Liu Yi? Do you know him well?”

Murong Die once again remembered the moment when their hands met, her face immediately turned red, she covered her face and said.

“No...not at all!”

Murong Die quickly started to shake her head. “I’ve never even talked to him...”

“Oh... so that’s the case... let’s return home then....”

Only then did the black suited uncle started driving unhurriedly.

This thing... I must certainly report it to the master.

“Whirr....”

As if escaping for his life, Liu Yi ran all the way home in a single breath. His hands were trembling when he try to open the door with his keys.

“Good for nothing! Look how afraid you have become!”

Lin Tong was incessantly mocking Liu Yi.

“It’s... it’s not like you were the one fighting....”

Liu Yi disliked Lin Tong’s sneer.

While trembling, Liu Yi finally managed to open the door to the house. He encountered his mother who was all dressed and ready to go out, it seems like she’s going to have to do a night shift at the hospital again.

“Liu Yi, how come you come back this late? I’ve left your food on the kitchen table, remember to heat them up before eating when you’re hungry....”

Liu Yi’s mother head was down as she was putting on her shoes. She did not notice the wretched appearance of her son.

Liu Yi took a deep sigh of relief, he felt very fortunate.

He kicked off his shoes and immediately ran into his room in a flash.

“Aiyah! This child, how could you just throw your shoes all over the place! Remember to eat your dinner!”

Liu Yi’s mom left a few words and exited the house, she had to leave immediately for work.

Liu Yi took off his bloodied school uniform and threw it to the ground and threw himself on his bed, he was breathing real hard.

All the things that happened today... was like a dream!

From meeting that fox demon and getting killed last night...

Till fighting that super strong black suited uncle earlier....

All of this... was something that should not have appeared in Liu Yi's life!

All of this... what exactly had Liu Yi done...

All of this... was not a dream right?...

Liu Yi pinched his cheeks real hard, immediately he felt the pain.

This really wasn't a dream!

"Idiot!"

Said the little fox lazily while lying atop Liu Yi's chest.

"Aiyah! So annoying! Why did I encounter a huge idiot like you?..."

"You have the nerve to speak..."

Liu Yi was lying on his bed. He wanted to go clean his bloodied school uniform.

However, he was currently in immense muscle aches and doesn't even have the strength to get up from the bed.

Earlier, he had an adrenaline rush as he ran back home, however, now that he's home on his bed, his entire body had collapsed.

The Liu Yi right now felt like he was dying.

His heart was beating extremely fast, he had a strong desire to pass out.

This sensation.... was really fucking difficult to beat...

“Didn’t you say that... that I... I will become very strong after cultivating?....”

Even speaking was difficult for Liu Yi. Only through taking a couple breathes did he manage to ask Lin Tong stammering.

“Why... why do... do I felt.. like I’m taking a medicine?...all tired and without any strength....”

“That’s because you do not know the correct method of using your powers.”

The little fox was lying on Liu Yi’s chest. Her tail moved across his face a couple of times. She said. “You’re like a child waving around a metal hammer, even if you managed to injure others, you’ll injure yourself first!”

“You... you didn’t... didn’t teach me how...”

After lying on the bed for a while, the red and white streams of qi within his body had slightly recovered making him feel a lot better.

“Dumbass! Did you think this was like buying grocery at the supermarket where you just have to pay the money?!”

Lin Tong pouted. “Furthermore, your first star jade was only just opened, what you ought to do is to gather more immortal strength! No one told you to stir up troubles in the school and ended up having people try beating you up at night!”

“Hey hey hey!....”

Liu Yi was sweating cold bullets all over. “Wasn’t it you who urged me to fight?!....”

“Cough cough, the shy looks beautiful tonight!”

Said Lin Tong as she looked out the window. Her tail was wagging.

“Then you.... should be able to teach me how to control it now right?...”

Asked Liu Yi.

“Yep!”

The little fox flew up and was floating midair. She then seriously asked.

“Liu Yi, there are four major branches to immortal cultivation, each of them complicated and formidable. I need you to select one of them to practice, you must consider it carefully before replying.”

“This important?”

This was the first time Liu Yi had seen the little fox Lin Tong so serious.

“Your choice will bear upon throughout your life, once you made your choice, you cannot change it anymore and will have to be faithful to your choice until death. If you don’t follow through the choice you picked, you’ll fail the immortal cultivation real badly!”

“Okay... what are the four branches?...”

“The four major branches are Martial, Daoism, Spiritual, and Instrumental. The Martial branch was further separated into Body Cultivation and Sword Cultivation. The Daoism branch was further separated into the Five Phases Cultivation, or magic using the five phases. You could pick either one of the five and cultivate that. Then there’s the Spiritual branch, it’s separated into the Beast Cultivation and the Five Phases Cultivation. Beast Cultivation allows you to summon spiritual beasts, Five Phases Cultivation allows you to summon creatures of the five phases.... Finally, there’s the Instrumental branch. The Instrumental branch could be said to be divided into tens of millions of different

sub branches, it could also be said to have no sub branch at all because Instrumental branch is the cultivation of your instrument, allowing you to combine with your instrument. The way of the Instrumental branch is a lot different from all the other three, even if you want to learn that, I am unable to teach you the way of the Instrumental branch."

[TL: Five phases = wood, fire, earth, metal and water.]

"Instrument cultivation.... and I thought it was qi cultivation...."

[TL: Instrument and qi are both pronounced qi.]

Liu Yi originally thought to himself that how could there possibly be an New Oriental Qi Cultivation School amongst immortal cultivation...

[TL: No idea what New Oriental Qi Cultivation School (新东方汽修学) is...]

"Stop fooling around! This is a very important matter!"

The little fox jumped onto Liu Yi's head. She swept her tail across Liu Yi's nose causing Liu Yi wanting to sneeze.

"You must take this matter seriously! Quick, pick one of them. Only after you picked a method would I be possible to teach you the correct method of using your demon... immortal energy!

"Ah! So difficult!"

Liu Yi felt that this was exactly like how it is when he pick his occupations in games, extremely difficult!

Martial branch and the body cultivation sounds pretty good... at least you'll be strong in battles! There's also Sword cultivation within the Martial branch, it ought to be something like being able to fly on your sword at the latter stages of that cultivation! How freaking elegant!

Daoism branch sounds pretty good too.... if there's anyone that I dislike, a

fireball in my left hand and an ice bolt in my right hand, hehe... the appearance of a legendary mage was projecting in Liu Yi's mind.

Spiritual branch sounds very good too... summon minions to fight... I could just sit back and watch!

Fuck! Such a difficult decision! Which one should I choose?!



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 30

The little fox gave Liu Yi a couple of branches of cultivation, she want Liu Yi to determine what his occupation would be.

The most difficult thing to Liu Yi whenever he play online games was choosing the occupation.

And now, such a difficult choice was present to him in real life.

“Can... can I choose more than one?...”

Liu Yi suddenly raised his eyes. He asked full of hope.

“Can!”

Lin Tong nodded.

“Re, really?”

Liu Yi was excited. However, Lin Tong immediately poured cold water on him.

“Can my ass! Trying to cultivate more than one branch would only result in you dropping dead!”

Scolded Lin Tong.

“Every one of the roads of immortal cultivation was extremely difficult. To be able to cultivate a single one of them would’ve been very good already and you wanted to cultivate two at the same time? Have you grandfather never told you not to be greedy?”

“That... he did indeed told me before...”

Embarrassed, Liu Yi lowered his head.

However, he really don't know what to choose.

Each and every one of these cultivation branches sounds very good!

Man! So hard to choose.....

Why must there be so many choices in this world?!

So annoying!

"I have decided!"

Liu Yi suddenly sat up, he held his fist and said with a resolute expression.

"Oh? You decided which branch to cultivate?"

"I've decided to roll a die!"

As he said that, he opened his drawer and took out a shiny die.

"Fucking hell..."

Lin Tong felt that she no longer have the strength to ridicule Liu Yi anymore.

Such a man with no definite opinions....

Why must he be my host?!

Lin Tong wanted to cry but have no tears.

"One and two are Martial Cultivation Branch, three and four are the Daoism

Cultivation Branch, five and six are the Spiritual Cultivation Branch!”

“Fucking hell....”

Unable to help herself, Lin Tong pouted. “Can’t you be a bit more promising?!”

“In the path of choosing an occupation, I have decided to let Heavens choose for me!”

Said Liu Yi without any shame. He threw the die on the table.

The die started spinning around and around. It was rotating so much that it caused Liu Yi to be a little dizzy.

Liu Yi was still pondering continuously...

What exactly would the results be?!

Dear Heavens, please give me a good one!

After rotating for a long time, the die slowly started to speed down.

A large six appeared in front of Liu Yi.

Am I to enter the Spiritual Cultivation Branch?

Summoning minions to fight...

That’s pretty good too!

Liu Yi started to calm down.

However, the little fox started to get nervous.

Fuck, please don't be the Spiritual Cultivation Branch!

One must know that the Spiritual Cultivation Branch was extremely difficult. Although the little fox knows a bit, it's only superficial knowledge.

To have her become a teacher and teach Liu Yi, isn't that telling her to scam him?....

When she doesn't know any of the answers to his questions, all her dignity would be lost...

Therefore, Lin Tong blew at the die gently.

The die suddenly turned a bit and rolled over landing on one.

"Martial Cultivation Branch!"

Liu Yi was shocked. "Am I destined to become a warrior?!"

"Martial Cultivation is good! Haha.... The latter stages of Martial Cultivation was especially powerful! The power of one's body was everything!"

Lin Tong secretly wiped her cold sweat away.

Fortunately it's not the Spiritual Cultivation Branch....

"Fuck! I wanted to try out the Daoism Cultivation!"

Liu Yi was very disappointed. "A fireball in my left hand and an ice bolt in my right hand... it'll be so dashing...."

"As if! You could only practice one of the five phases."

Lin Tong gave Liu Yi a side eye glance. "Only genius that comes once in a

thousand-year are able to cultivate both Fire and Water techniques!”

After saying those words, Lin Tong started to comfort Liu Yi.

“Enough of that, it’s your choice to have the Heavens help you choose, so you can’t be complaining about the result! Come on, we shall begin the Martial Cultivation Branch, do you want to do Body Cultivation or Sword Cultivation?”

“Eh.... I still have to choose? Can I cultivate both this time?”

“It’s better if you choose one of them first!”

Lin Tong felt that Liu Yi was too greedy!

“I suggest you to start from Body Cultivation, even if you were to want to learn Sword Cultivation, I do not have a sword that I can give you.”

“Okay... in that case, let’s start now....”

Liu Yi said quickly. “There’s still the basketball match tomorrow afternoon.... who knows if Lan He would find people to block me again tomorrow.... ahhh... so depressing.”

“Rest assured, once you start Body Cultivation, you’ll learn how to fight. At that time, even a couple of Kevins wouldn’t be a match for you!”

“What if I met that black suited uncle again?”

Liu Yi felt numb when he began to think of the black suited uncle from earlier.

That guy was way too strong...

One can tell that he’s a pro right away! Perhaps he’s a bodyguard of the Lan family?

I was lucky this time around and managed to take care of the black suited uncle with my amorous ripple hand.

But who knows if the black suited uncle would be on guard against my right hand next time....

“That’s... a bit difficult...”

Lin Tong said hesitantly.

“Ah? Why? I have already opened the first Star Jade and entered the path of cultivation, how come I’m unable to win against an ordinary person?”

“There’s a variety levels of ordinary people, okay?!”

Lin Tong immediately started to despise Liu Yi’s ignorance. “Ordinary people also have great potential, okay? After undergoing some special training, they could also become tremendously powerful! For example, that man you met earlier today, he most certainly have undergone special systematic training! His strength was at the level of three star jades! Only through opening four star jades would you have the power to defeat him!”

“The heck.... that crazy.... then what’s the use of my cultivation?....”

“Are you stupid?”

Lin Tong gave Liu Yi a side-eye glance. “The path of cultivation is long and limitless! No matter how much that man trains, he could never in his whole lifetime be able defeat a four star jade middle mortal realm expert! Once you cultivate for a long time, your growth potential was something that he could only admire, understand?!”

“That’s stuff way into the future..... what do I do now that I’ve encountered such

a dangerous fellow right now?...”

“You major dumbass!”

Lin Tong rebuked Liu Yi. “With this lady here, what is there for you to be afraid of?! This lady was an expert that had opened four star jades! Furthermore, I’ve gathered numerous arts and techniques, let me go have a look and see if there’s any Body Cultivation arts or techniques that would allow you to be super powerful in a fight! This lady would have to enter her spiritual knowledge field to have a look, I suspect that it’ll take me a least two hours to return! Do whatever you want in this period of time, just don’t bother this lady, understand?”

“Ohh..ohhkay.... I understand...”

Liu Yi could only nod his head.

If Lin Tong really were to be able to find a strong technique, then it’ll be great.

What I need right now was all kinds of strong offensive techniques!

Otherwise, if I were to encounter that black suited uncle again, I’ll certainly be doomed!

After finishing her speech, Lin Tong ran into Liu Yi’s body and disappeared.

The so-called spiritual knowledge field was pretty much the same as Liu Yi’s subconsciousness.

It’s a place meant for in-depth cultivation practice.

If one were to be disturbed, then it’ll be unfavorable to one’s cultivation practice.

It’s like also uncomfortable to be disturbed when one entered the field in search

for previously collected information.

After Lin Tong disappeared, Liu Yi, for some reason or another, took a sigh of relief.

No matter what, Lin Tong was still a girl...

For a girl to be sealed within his body.... regardless of how small, there's still going to be a lot of time that's inconvenient!

Taking advantage of the fact that Lin Tong had disappeared, Lin Yi quickly stripped himself of his clothes and changed his dirty clothes with replaced them with pajamas.

How comfortable...

When I take a shower later, I'll put these dirty clothes in the laundry machine and wash them...

So as to avoid my mother from finding them out and scolding me about dirtying my clothes afterward.

While thinking of that, Liu Yi held his dirty clothes and began to walk toward the bathroom.

Right at this moment, Liu Yi's cellphone rang.

It's Chen Cai who's calling him!

This guy, what's he calling me for?

Liu Yi answered the call and Chen Cai's vulgar voice immediately came forth.

"Liu Yi! The heck are you doing?! I've been messaging you via QQ the whole



time!”

[TL: QQ is the most popular chinese web messenger... owned by Tencent which also owned League in China]

Chen Cai sounded very impatient.

“Eh.... I’m about to do my laundry...”

“Laundry your ass! Get online quickly, I have something good for you!”

Immediately after saying those words, Chen Cai hand up the phone.

At a loss, Liu Yi could only put his dirty clothes into the washing machine and then sit in front of his computer and turn that on.

Liu Yi’s computer was very cheap. It had a 19 inch screen and a desktop that cost less than a thousand yuan.

Liu Yi’s family was after all a regular family, his mother worked very hard and as for his father, that’s without mention.

Furthermore, Liu Yi’s father’s company had withheld wages for over four months already. They had yet to pay him over ten thousand yuan.

The expenses around the house recently was very scarce.

The only reason why Liu Yi was able to purchase this computer was because his mother wanted him to use it to learn English.

However, as for whether Liu Yi actually uses the computer for learn English, that was something that only he himself knows.

English and whatnot was certainly not going to work, however Japanese on the

other hand, Liu Yi grew a little proficient in that.

Stuff like yamete, iiya and such...

They're very catchy.

Liu Yi dared to say that if you were to give him a video, he would basically know what they're talking about without the need of subtitles...

This was a loser's attainment!

"Liu Yi, this newest torrent of Takizawa Rola, have it, you don't have to thank me! Just introduce me to Wang Lele tomorrow, hahaha...."

On QQ was a message left by Chen Cai.

Liu Yi received the torrent and then responded back with 'Go die' before logging out of QQ.

What's a good friend?... a good friend was someone who you can gorgeously abandon after using them!

Introduce him to Wang Lele?.... hell, I'm not even familiar with her!

Liu Yi's internet connection was pretty fast, a 200 some megabytes video was quickly finished downloading.

Remembering that the little fox was currently gone, Liu Yi heart once again began to loosen up...

No matter what, this was the newest video... at the very least, I should check it out!

For the little fox to not be present with now, what great timing!

Once she comes back, I won't be able to watch this video!

Then that'll be a waste of the ten fifteen minutes I spent on downloading this!

That's right, I'm just going to check it out.... as long as I don't use my hand, the little fox shouldn't be able to discover it!

Unable to stop both his curiosity and sexual drive, Liu Yi clicked on the downloaded video.

What appeared in the video was a mixed race beauty, after some simply storyline, she began to undress.

Right when Liu Yi was watching the mixed race beauty starting to take off her underwear, a young and pure voice resounded next to him.

"Big brother Liu Yi.... why is the big sister taking off her clothes?"

Hearing this voice, Liu Yi's heart almost nearly flew out of his body and onto the screen.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 31

“Big brother Liu Yi! Why is the big sister taking off her clothes?!”

A soft and young loli’s voice resounded next to Liu Yi’s ears.

Hearing this loli’s voice, Liu Yi’s heart almost flew out from his body and onto the computer screen.

“Yuanyuan! Why did you came down here again?!”

In a scramble, Liu Yi tried to quickly close the video. However, right at this time, his computer decided to freeze!

On the screen was Takizawa Rola with her ass sticking out and a man who was moving closer to it.

The screen was stuck with this scene, no matter how hard Liu Yi tried to press escape on his keyboard, he was unable to eliminate the scene.

Frozen!

Fucking computer froze!

Why the fuck must you freeze at such a critical moment?!

Liu Yi wanted to kill someone.

The building that Liu Yi lived in was the old-fashioned family storied building. It was something that was given to his mother for her marriage by her work unit.

Outside of each family’s complex was a large balcony.

Liu Yi's balcony was connected with Ma Yixuan's.

Ma Yixuan have a younger sister called Ma Yuanyuan. Fourteen years old, second year of middle school, an ideal loli, she doesn't understand much of anything.

However, she was a lot more cute and lovely than her sister.

Ma Yuanyuan was their family's treasure, even her sister loved her deeply.

Ever since she was young, Ma Yuanyuan had been sent to dancing school. Thus, although she's only fourteen years old, her body figure was amazing. She had a thin waist and protruding buttocks. Even though she didn't have much of a chest, she's only fourteen years old after all, there's a lot of room for development still.

However, Liu Yi usually see her as a little sister because the person he liked was this girl's sister.

Nevertheless, Liu Yi must admit that Ma Yuanyuan was really cute and likable.

She's especially fond of getting the affects of those creepy uncles.

In another two or three years, this girl would certainly become a calamity level beauty!

[TL: calamity level beauty = girl so beautiful that people will go to war for them. One such example was Diaochan.]

However, there's something about this girl that gives Liu Yi a headache - she's a hundred percent informer!

This girl would always secretly slip over from the balcony!

After being caught by Liu Yi countless times, Liu Yi began to shut the balcony door.

However, Liu Yi was really too tired today. The first time he did coming back home was rushing back into his room, he had forgotten to close the balcony door...

Thus, his scoundrel appearance was completely shown to Ma Yuanyuan.

“Ohohoh! I know!”

Ma Yuanyuan’s charming eyes suddenly lit up, she said. “Big brother Liu Yi, are you watching the legendary ‘porno’?! I’m going to tell my sister!”

A burst of grief overcame Liu Yi’s heart.

This little snitch!

My life is already miserable enough, Ma Yixuan already hated me enough...

But this girl is actually going to snitch on me!

Fuck!

Motherfucking grief!

However, Liu Yi cannot do anything to this girl. She is only fourteen! She’s pretty much the little princess of the Ma family!

Ma Yixuan’s parents were also constantly gone from home, their granny was the one who looks over them at home.

Thus, this girl was also very spoiled, it’s said that she’d never been spanked in her whole life.

Thus, she became a bit out of control.

Seeing this girl, Liu Yi could only come up with a single word!

Major headache!

Okay, that's two words.

Right now, Liu Yi had a major headache.

How did I let this little devil into my house again....

Especially now when my relationship with her sister is a bit awkward...

Sigh....

What do I do not?!

"Yuanyuan, you're mistaken! This is an ad, an ad!"

Liu Yi threw a kick and knocked the power source out.

He turned off the computer screen and felt a bit relieved.

"Humph humph, big brother Liu Yi, do you really think that I don't know anything?"

Ma Yuanyuan placed her hands around her waist, she looked at Liu Yi with a charming bully appearance. Her eyes showed a hint of arrogance.

This girl, is she trying to go against Heavens?!

"Even though I'm only a second year middle school student, I still know a lot! You

are most certainly watching porn! Humph! Big brother Liu Yi, and you wanted to woo my sister like this?! Impossible!”

This girl!

Her words make people angry!

Liu Yi wanted to lift this girl up and give her protruding buttocks a couple spans.

However, he didn’t dare to.

His relationship with Ma Yixuan was already very stiff, now the situation is just going to be worse.

It was the first time that Liu Yi felt that his head could not contain the pain anymore.

Immortal cultivation and whatnot...

Could it help me with my personal relationship problems?!

Right at this moment, Liu Yi felt that his eyes were swelling up a bit.

Soon, some numbers appeared on Ma Yuanyuan’s head.

Favorable impression level, 10.

Eh?

I am actually able to use the Eye of Favorable Impression myself?

Could it be that... because Ma Yuanyuan had ten favorable impression toward me and because she’s near me, my body’s red stream of qi increased?



Furthermore!

This girl actually have a favorable impression level of ten!

Holy moly!

The female classmates in the class have super low favorable impression level toward me!

They're either 0 or 1, pretty much the same as being passersby.

However, this Ma Yuanyuan who had always been a little devil and arrogant princess actually have a favorable impression level of 10!

Unbelievable!

Liu Yi couldn't believe what he just saw!

Did the Eye of Favorable Impression made an error?!

"Big brother Liu Yi, being silent doesn't solve the problem!"

Said Ma Yuanyuan arrogantly with her hands on her waist.

"You giant pervert! I'm going to tell my sister that you're watching porno for sure! I'll tell her to stay away from you!"

Hearing those words, Liu Yi got even more angry.

This girl was really too out of control!

She's leaping all over my head!

Under his anger, Liu Yi's red stream of qi suddenly came surging up.

His blood flow accelerated, in a flash, he entered a different state.

Toward the arrogant and despotic Ma Yuanyuan, Liu Yi suddenly outstretched his hand and grabbed Ma Yuanyuan's soft body, he lifted her up and placed her on his thigh.

"What...what are you doing?"

Ma Yuanyuan was surprised. She raised her head to look at the Liu Yi who was sitting there with her on his lap. Her face was full of panic.

She frequently come to mess with Liu Yi, however, this was the first time Liu Yi did such a thing!

However, Liu Yi didn't answer at all. He continued to seize Ma Yuanyuan's tender body on his thigh, he then lifted his left hand and heavily spanked her protruding buttocks.

"Smack!"

Liu Yi's slap was so loud that it resounded throughout his small bedroom.

Ma Yuanyuan's body immediately froze in place.

As for Liu Yi... he suddenly felt that this girl's ass felt pretty good...

Amitabha Buddha, what am I thinking. Begone wicked thoughts, I need to teach this girl a lesson first!

After getting the thought out of his mind, Liu Yi's palm once again raised up and heavily fell on Ma Yuanyuan's butt.

This time around, his hand even suffered from a small rebound.

Holy fuck, what great feel and elasticity!

Unable to help himself, Liu Yi licked his lips.

“Waaa....”

As for Ma Yuanyuan, she suddenly burst into tears. Her tiny little tear drops were dripping all over.

It was the first time in her whole life that she was hit!

All the guys in her class were flattering me to woo me.

This damned Liu Yi, he actually dared to hit me!

He even spanked me!

“Liu Yi! You bastard, I hate you! You giant pervert! I’m going to tell my sister that you bullied me and took advantage of me! I’m going to make her hate you and curse you!”

Ma Yuanyuan’s mouth grew even more wicked.

Hearing Ma Yuanyuan say those words, Liu Yi was so angry that his nose almost became crooked from his anger.

This girl slipped into my room out of nowhere, and she goes around snitching on me, using it as a pretext to bully me.

I spanked her twice to teach her a lesson, however, not only did she not apologize, she even dared to intensify her bullying!

Fuck, if I don’t teach her a major lesson today, then she’ll fucking ride my neck

and shit on me all the time!

Liu Yi grew heartless. His slaps grew stronger. ‘Smack, smack smack,’ they continued to land on Ma Yuanyuan’s butt.

The only thing Ma Yuanyuan felt was that her butt was under immense pain. She was crying nonstop.

“Let you be so arrogant and unruly again!”

“Smack!”

“Let you keep sneaking into my room for no reason!”

“Smack smack!”

“Let you keep snitching on me to your sister!”

“Smack smack smack!”

Liu Yi’s slaps continued to fall. Originally Ma Yuanyuan was crying and struggling non stop. However, in the end she calmed down and was lying on Liu Yi’s legs without moving.

After spanking her for a long time, right when Liu Yi was feeling very good, he suddenly felt that something was amiss.

Why did this girl stop moving?!

Did I spank her too hard?!

“Ma Yuanyuan! Are you alive?!”

“Boohoo... Big..big brother Liu Yi... please don’t hit me anymore, I know my

wrong...”

At this moment, Ma Yuanyuan lifted her tiny face. Her eyes were full of water, she looked at Liu Yi and gave an unprecedented apology.

“You know your wrong? What, you’re not going to curse me anymore? Not going to snitch on me?”

“I..I know my wrong.... Big brother Liu Yi spanked me real hard.... I..I think I might be bleeding...”

“Wha..what?”

Liu Yi was surprised.

What the holy heck!

Did I hit her too hard?

Did I spanked her soft buttocks to bleed?

Liu Yi rushed to take a look at Ma Yuanyuan’s white pantskirt.

Sure enough, a little bit above the trouser leg was a couple dazzling red flowers. The red flowers were dripping down Ma Yuanyuan’s white and soft thigh.

Oh my gawd....

Liu Yi’s heart twitched.

I fucked up.... I majorly fucked up...

Man, what the hell!

How the heck did she start bleeding just from a couple spans?!

“Are...are you alright?”

Asked Liu Yi cautiously.

“I’m okay.... it’s just that... I felt that... I’ve lost a lot of blood...”

Ma Yuanyuan held back her tears, she sniffled and asked. “Big brother Liu Yi.... would I die?.... Boohoo.... I would never act like this ever again.... waaa... I’ll listen to big brother Liu Yi from now on.... I don’t wanna die...”

“Don’t...don’t be afraid....”

Liu Yi said. “How about I take you to the hospital?!”

“No! I don’t wanna go to the hospital! I don’t wanna get injections!

Shouted Ma Yuanyuan.

“Then what do we do?!”

Liu Yi’s headache came back stronger.

This little witch...

She’s really too much to handle!

“You...help me look... see how bad it is...”

Ma Yuanyuan suddenly lowered her voice. She was speaking soft like a mosquito. She buried her face into Liu Yi’s thigh and asked.

“Oh....huh?”

Liu Yi almost flipped Ma Yuanyuan's body over.

See...see how bad it is?

See Ma Yuanyuan's ass?

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 32

In his whole life, Liu Yi had only seen naked girls of a certain island nation on his computer screen before....

Am I to see Ma Yuanyuan's naked buttocks?....

Liu Yi's heart immediately started to beat a lot faster.

Furthermore, something from his nose was unable to stop itself from rushing outward.

This kind of stuff.... was way too stimulating...

Liu Yi wasn't prepared...

"Big brother Liu Yi... quick, quickly..."

Muffled Ma Yuanyuan, her body shook slightly.

"Please check it out faster.... otherwise I..I might really die of blood loss... Boohooo...I..I don't want to die..."

I am most certainly not a cheap wanton bastard!

I am only helping out right now! This is all in the spirit of helping Ma Yuanyuan out! This is all to save her life!

Liu Yi told himself that in his mind.

That's right, I am a philanthropist, I am definitely not a pervert!

"Big brother Liu Yi... quick, quickly... don't let me die..."



“Then..then I’m going to do it...”

Liu Yi toughen his heart. He said to himself ‘Fuck it, this is my springtime of youth, the war drums are beating! Liu Yi! Go for it!’

Take it off!

If Ma Yuanyuan really was deeply wounded, I am unable to hold take responsibility for it!

Liu Yi bite his teeth and toughen his heart. He outstretched his right hand and was about to pull down Ma Yuanyuan’s bloodstained pantskirt.

Ma Yuanyuan buried her face in Liu Yi’s thigh. She was so embarrassed that she was unable to lift her head back up.

However, Liu Yi suddenly hesitated. He remember the certain feature that his right hand had and quickly lifted Ma Yuanyuan up and reversed her to make her butt be toward his left hand.

“Ah!”

Ma Yuanyuan suddenly gave off a sound of surprise as Liu Yi turned her around.

“What..what are you doing.... Aiyah.... there’s even more blood now....”

“My right hand is a bit off limit right now...”

“Big brother Liu Yi.... you had just watched a wicked movie.... did your right hand got stained with wicked stuff?...”

Hearing Ma Yuanyuan, Liu Yi almost spurt blood out his mouth.

This Ma Yuanyuan, this girl is impossible!

She's only fourteen... how the heck does she know everything.... it's like she knows more than even me!

"Nonsense! I dirtied my right hand coming back from school, I didn't have time to wash it yet.... if you have a problem with it then I'm not going to look for you, I'll just send you to the hospital."

"No! By the time I reach the hospital, I would have bled dry!"

Ma Yuanyuan cried in fear.

"Then you better be obedient!"

Scolded Liu Yi.

"Mmmm..."

To Liu Yi's surprise, Ma Yuanyuan actually agreed without giving a fight, she laid on his legs and stopped moving.

This girl...

Unusual!

Liu Yi shook his head. Why did Ma Yuanyuan act so obedient?

This little witch actually know fear?

"Big brother Liu Yi.... please hurry up.... Boohoo... I'm really scared... there's so much blood...."

Pleaded Ma Yuanyuan while crying.

“Okay okay.... don’t worry, I’m going to look at it right away...”

Liu Yi also didn’t dare to delay any longer, if something really were to happen, then it’ll be really bad.

He held out his slightly trembling left hand and slowly placed it on Ma Yuanyuan’s protruding buttocks.

Even though he had spanked her countless times earlier, he was immersed in teaching this girl a lesson and didn't have time to carefully feel her butt...

Now that he had felt her butt, he felt that Ma Yuanyuan’s butt felt so amazingly good....

Soft and protruding, it’s had a curve like the topside of a watermelon

Liu Yi grew slightly erratic.

“Big brother Liu Yi.... stop...stop touching it... if you don’t check it out soon... what you’ve been touching would’ve turned into a dead body...”

Cried Ma Yuanyuan.

“Ohhh!”

Liu Yi came back to reality and he gave himself a slap.

Liu Yi, what the hell were you thinking!

Ma Yuanyuan is only fourteen years old!

Even though her body is already mature, she’s still only fourteen!

What you were doing was a crime!

Only after giving himself a slap did Liu Yi feel that he had sobered up. He then proceeded to slowly and gently pull down Ma Yuanyuan's white pantskirt.

This pantskirt was rather loose, from a single pull from Liu Yi's left hand, it came down without any resistance.

What appeared in front of Liu Yi's eyes was a pair of panties with a cute little bear wrapping around two beautiful protruding butt cheeks.

Nosebleed...

Liu Yi once again felt that he was unable to control his nosebleed....

"Big brother Liu Yi.... stop looking at it..."

"Then...then I'll stop looking..."

Liu Yi was shocked, he quickly tried to pull the pantskirt back up.

"That's not it! I meant stop looking at my panties.... if you like them, I can wash them and give them to you.... just look at my injuries first, please...."

"Oh..oh..."

Giving me those panties...

Liu Yi was dumbstruck. What, is it common for people to give their panties away as gifts nowadays?

Am I to take off her panties now?...

God damn...

Fuck it all, I gotta check out her injuries first! I'm currently like the doctor, there's nothing but checking out the injuries in my mind, so what if I see something more than I should!

Liu Yi, Liu Yi, you must continue to hang on!

Liu Yi encouraged himself and then proceed to stretch his hand toward Ma Yuanyuan's cartoonish panties.

God damn...

It's even harder to take off a little girl's panties than fighting that black suited uncle!

Fuck, it's better to just tell me to go fight till my the death with someone...

Grandpa...

You were right!

Fighting against the devils was a lot easier than dealing with women!

[TL: devils = what chinese called the japanese in WWII. Whole name: Japanese Devils. I think I mentioned this before.]

I finally experienced such a thing!

Liu Yi hooked the panties with a single finger of his, he then proceed to slowly pull it down.

Liu Yi's finger came into a skin to skin contact with Ma Yuanyuan's buttocks.

Soft and slippery...

Liu Yi was unable to stop his nose from bleeding.

Ma Yuanyuan's body was trembling from his touch.

At the same time, Liu Yi's eyes jumped. A notification from the Eye of Favorable Impression.

"Ma Yuanyuan, favorable impression level +15"

What the heck!

Touching her ass increased the favorable impression by fifteen?

Liu Yi was shocked, if that's the case, then won't my favorable impression level increase just by going around touching girls' asses?

Wait... something's wrong...

Liu Yi thought for a bit, it should a series of things that led Ma Yuanyuan favorable impression level to increase.

It's most certainly not just from touching her ass.

"Big brother Liu Yi.... look...look faster..."

Ma Yuanyuan gave off a weak cry while Liu Yi was distracted.

"Oh..."

Liu Yi was once again brought back to reality.

I am to check out her injury...

Liu Yi quickly corrected and upright his mentality and then pulled Ma Yuanyuan's panties completely down.

Ma Yuanyuan's protruding buttocks was naked in front of Liu Yi.

Liu Yi was crying in his hearts.

I did not live in vain....

But... wait a moment...

Liu Yi looked carefully, Ma Yuanyuan's buttocks were completely fine, there's nowhere that's showed any sight of injury...

Liu Yi even outstretched his hand, held his breath and pinched Ma Yuanyuan's buttocks a couple of times.

Ma Yuanyuan's body was trembling non-stop.

It seems as if she cannot withstand being pinched.

However, Liu Yi ignored everything else and exclaimed.

"Little witch! You're playing me for a fool! Your butt's completely fine!"

"But..but I'm really bleeding..."

"Wait a moment..."

Liu Yi suddenly came to an understanding.

"Did your great aunt come?"

[TL: chinese slang for menstruation is great aunt....]

“Great aunt...”

The little girl raised her head, she looked at Liu Yi with tearful eyes. “What is that?...”

The hell!

This girl knew that my hand might have been stained with some wicked things...

But she doesn't know about the female menstruation!

Who the heck and where the heck did she learn all her knowledge from?!

Sigh!

This Ma family was way too irresponsible!

It's one that for Ma Yixuan to hang out with hooligans, but for her to not even look after her own sister!

“A great aunt...was a kind of relative...”

Liu Yi felt awfully messed the fuck up trying to explain such a thing to a girl, he tried his best to explain it.

“This relative.... would come and see you once every month...”

“Boohoo, this relative is so hateful... it's making me bleed too... would..would I die?...”

“No you wont.... every girl have a great aunt... your sister have one too! Look, she's still alive and kicking!”



“Ah? My sister has one too?...”

Ma Yuanyuan blinked her watery eyes, it seemed that she have calmed down a bit.

“Of course.... this... this thing... you should have your sister help you solve it... or your grandma... they both have experience and know what to do.”

“They both know the great aunt?...”

“Mmmhmm, they know, they both know...”

“But grandma left to play mahjong and didn’t come back yet... and sister didn’t come home yet either.... I’m.. I’m currently starving...”

Said Ma Yuanyuan with a pitiful look.

Hearing that Ma Yixuan didn’t come back home, he remembered the ambiguous text messages she sent to Yuan Shaojun earlier this morning and his heart suddenly twitched...

Could it be... that Ma Yixuan really went and got a room with Yuan Shaojun to pow pow pow?...

Even though he had been telling himself constantly to give up on Ma Yixuan...

However, once he thought of the fact that she’s lying in bed with someone else... Liu Yi could not help but have a heartache.

That saying was so true...for every girl that you cannot get, there’s always another man who would fuck her till she vomits.

This saying was real hurtful...

Liu Yi's current frame of mind was also deeply hurt...

"Then wait at home for a bit... I'll go out and buy you a large-sized bandage..."

Liu Yi thought for a bit, to handle the great aunt... most girls use that right?...

"What is that?"

Ma Yuanyuan have completely no idea what these things are.

"It's sanitary pads..."

Liu Yi explained patiently. "When great aunt comes again, just put that thing on..."

"Oh..oh... okay..."

"Do you not have those at home?"

"I...I'm not sure... but I don't think so..."

"All right..."

Liu Yi have no choice but to personally go and buy sanitary pads for this girl.

Sigh, and they say buying sanitary pads for one's wife is a very happy thing!

But what the fuck is this shit?!

My first time buying sanitary pads and it's not for my wife!

Hell, I don't even know who that little girl would end up marrying...

However, whoever that is, he's a lucky bastard...

That girl had a great figure...

“I..I’m afraid...”

“Don’t be afraid, you won’t die from such a small amount of blood, we have a lot more than this in our body! I’m going downstairs and buy them and return real quick, just wait patiently!”

“Oh...”

After comforting Ma Yuanyuan, Liu Yi grabbed his key and a random jack and left downstairs.

Sigh, I took on a huge task!

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 33

Liu Yi rushed downstairs, the only thing he had in his pocket was the money his mom gave him for tomorrow's lunch.

It seems I would have to starve tomorrow afternoon. It seems that even Heaven want me to lose weight.

I'm already skinny enough, starve me some more and I'll turn into a skeleton.

No one would've expect such a thing to happen.

It was the first time in thousands of years that Ma Yuanyuan sought for his help!

Liu Yi entered the little convenience store located downstairs.

"Excuse me boss... where are the sanitary pads?..."

Liu Yi had never purchased any sanitary pad before, he had no clue as to what they looked like.

He looked around the convenience store but have no idea what the stuff he wanted to buy were.

"That whole row are sanitary pads."

The aunty owner gave Liu Yi a weird look and then pointed toward the shelf nearby.

Liu Yi immediately felt relieved, he walked toward the shelf.

On the shelf was various colorful brands of large bandage, Liu Yi was completely dazzled.

Liu Yi randomly picked one and rushed to the counter.

The aunty looked at the item on Liu Yi's hand, she said.

"That's a panty liner, not a sanitary pad."

"Ehh, this..."

Liu Yi was confused.

"Your first time buying?"

The aunty gave a hee hee laugh. She looked at Liu Yi all weird causing him to want to find a hole to hide into.

"Use this, it's Space 7, my daughter also uses this brand."

[TL: Space 7 ad video: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=qzsDyuloC8M> seems like it's a brand aimed toward young girls]

"How much is it?..."

Liu Yi looked at the exquisite purple packaging, he couldn't help but ask for the price.

"Eight yuan."

"This...is..is there anything cheaper?..."

The aunty gave Liu Yi a despising look, she then took out another pack of unknown brand pads and threw it in front of Liu Yi.

"This one is three yuan."

“Is...there anything cheaper?...”

“Young man, now, you’re not acting right!”

Unable to help herself, the aunty scolded Liu Yi. “Girls require protection! This kind of thing, you only need it once per month, you should buy a better kind to protect her better!”

My ass... all I had was ten yuan.

Liu Yi grimaced.

Against the nagging aunty, he braced himself and asked again.

“Is there... really nothing cheaper?...”

“Take it!”

The aunty angrily threw at Liu Yi half roll of toilet paper.

“Let this be my gift! Take it home and make do with it!”

“I..I would like to purchase that three yuan one...”

Liu Yi was about to be shamed red.

God damn...

It’s not like I’m the one using it!

It’s for Ma Yuanyuan, that little witch to use!

He took the sanitary pads, paid the aunty and left bitterly out the door.

What's with my shitty luck?...

After being fucked over by Ma Yixuan, now I'm to be tormented by her younger sister.

However, regardless.... I've still saw and touched Ma Yuanyuan's protruding buttocks... well, seems worth!

While letting his imagination run wild, Liu Yi exited the little convenience store.

Immediately after leaving the store, Liu Yi suddenly had a strange feeling.

From the roof nearby, it seemed that someone was watching him...

Liu Yi immediately raised his head and looked at the direction of the roof.

A bright moon was hanging by the corner of the roof, the night view was pretty good, there's nothing peculiar about it.

Strange...

Am I being oversensitive?

Liu Yi shook his head, he told himself that it's just him being overly suspicious.

When he turned his head back and was preparing to leave, a white figure suddenly appeared in front of him!

Holy shit!

Liu Yi screamed, he threw away the sanitary pad that was on his hand and subconsciously stepped back a couple of steps!

As for the white figure standing opposing him, it actually outstretched its hand

and firmly caught the pack of sanitary pads and looked at it curiously.

With help from the moonlight, Liu Yi manage to see how this person looked!

Red lips, white teeth, and black hair fluttering in the air!

Who said this was a female ghost? It's obviously a beauty!

From her appearance, this beauty should be only seventeen or eighteen years old. Her black hair was hanging down her head like a waterfall, the end of her hair was tied together by a silver ribbon. This led to the hair in the middle to be all fluffy, it looked very dignified and beautiful.

However, the lacking part of this beauty was her chest.... it's somewhat small...

As for the white long dress that she was wearing, it was neat and tidy without a hint of dust on it.

Within her limpid eyes seemed to be contain a hint of immortal energy, they seemed to not be polluted by the mortal world at all. Those eyes caused Liu Yi to feel the want to surrender himself to them.

And at this moment, that pair of limpid eyes were focused on the pack of sanitary pads that Liu Yi brought.

"What is this thing?... how do you use it?... Is it perhaps food?"

Hearing that little beauty speak, Liu Yi suddenly started sweating a bit.

How the heck do you eat that?!

Won't that choke you to death?!

Liu Yi didn't want her to die and immediately outstretched his hand to try to



snatch the sanitary pads back.

At the same time, he felt that it was strange for a girl her age to not know of sanitary pads....

“Swoosh!”

Liu Yi’s hand grabbed the air. Although the beauty appeared to be frail, she was fast and flexible. With a slight step to the back, she escaped Liu Yi’s hand.

“How could you be so stingy? Delicious things should be shared amongst everyone.... my master had said, it is better for everyone to be happy than for one to be happy alone!”

“No! That’s not food!”

“Based on your intense appearance, it’s most certainly something delicious!”

The little beauty grew even more curious. She was about to rip apart the packaging of the sanitary pads.

God damn!

How could this be?!

That’s my three yuan!

If you rip it then I’ll have to buy another one!

I am broke as fuck!

Liu Yi grew even more worried, he quickly outstretched both his hands out and tried to snatch the sanitary pads from her.

However, the little beauty didn't even move from where she stood. She simply moved her body left and right and managed to effortlessly evade all of Liu Yi's attempt to snatch back the pads.

"You forced me!"

Being immensely anxious, the red stream of qi within Liu Yi's body suddenly accelerated stimulating Liu Yi's strength and speed.

The little beauty stood there shocked, she stared at Liu Yi blankly. She didn't even notice that the thing she was holding was snatched by him.

"You..you..."

"What about me? It's you who snatched my stuff first!"

Liu Yi felt that everything about this little beauty is good with the exception of her brain that seemed to be a little bit crazy.

However, he felt that her voice and her aromatic smell was very familiar...

Where did this déjà vu feeling come from?...

Where exactly?....

"And here I was thinking.... why there was demonic energy coming from the east today.... so it's really originating from you... Oh Heavens, this has turned very troublesome..."

With a bitter face, the little beauty continued to stare at Liu Yi. She appeared to be worrying about something.

Demonic energy.... was she referring to me?

Jest, I'm a immortal cultivator! How the heck would I get demonic energy?!

However, who exactly was this beauty?.... How come she knows so much?

Could she be another immortal cultivator?

Liu Yi became alert.

"Seems like that evildoer is causing mischief within you! No, I must catch and take her out!"

As she said that, the little beauty's eyesight suddenly fell onto Liu Yi's right hand.

Subconsciously, Liu Yi immediately hid his right hand behind himself.

This beauty.... what is she planning to do?

"Hey hey, what are you doing?"

Seeing Liu Yi was still trying to be secretive, the little beauty muttered.

"This lady is helping you, okay?! This isn't the kind of stuff that a mortal like you can practice!"

"What can't we mortals practice?"

"Don't indulge yourself in flights of fancy, you're but an ordinary mortal, you should just live your ordinary mortal life! You think this thing was something that you could practice? Jest!"

Liu Yi thoroughly understood what's going on.

This beauty was most certainly an immortal cultivator, however, for some reason or another, she looked down on him!

“How could you be like this, what does what I practice have anything to do with you?!”

Liu Yi grew a bit unhappy and said.

“Who said that mortals can’t practice?! Who said that I must live an ordinary life?! I, Liu Yi, would certainly become someone to show all you people who looked down on me!”

“Who looked down on you?!”

Said the little beauty as if she was wronged.

“You didn’t look down on me?”

“Of course not! I don’t even know who you are, we met by chance, why would I look down on you?! Who exactly are you?!”

The words from the little beauty suddenly gave Liu Yi immense grief.

Fucking hell, is there anything more hurtful than that?!

“Eh... why does my speech feel a little weird... hey! Don’t you leave! You better give me that thing in your hand!”

The little beauty grew anxious. She originally only wanted to save someone, she didn’t expect things to go a bit awry.

This youngster in front of her, he actually attained demonic energy!

And it’s a very powerful one on top of that!

She cannot help but become anxious.

If she were to let him continue on... then what exactly would happen, even she does not know!

That's because there have never been anyone able to attain powerful demonic energy via practice in history!

This... seemed like something that's completely impossible!

But why.... this youngster was actually able to attain such a demonic energy?!

"What are you doing?!"

Seeing that the beauty was determined to take action against his right hand, Liu Yi hurriedly moved away and asked while on high alert.

"What exactly are you planning to do to me?"

"You're but a mortal, don't worry, I won't do anything to you."

Said the little beauty solemnly.

"All I want to do is take out the thing in your hand and then destroy the power that doesn't belong to you so that you could return to being a mortal."

"Why! This power is mine, no one could take it away from me!"

Liu Yi didn't want to bother with this crazy beauty, he grabbed the pack of sanitary pads in his left hand, turned around and immediately started to flee.

However, right when he turned around, the little beauty in the white dress appeared in front of him again.

Holy!

What kind of speed was that?!

When did she get here?!

Liu Yi was terrified beyond reasoning. He felt as if his whole body had a numbing sensation.

He took a couple of steps back and that little beauty made her move.

She outstretched her left hand and grabbed Liu Yi's right hand.

"Let me catch this evildoer and take it... out..."

The moment the little beauty touched Liu Yi's right hand, she suddenly grew weak from head to toe, her eyes showed an immense lust.

Her big eyes grew a lot more watery and her lower body also got a bit moist.

There's also a slight itchy feeling...

This.... in all her life as an immortal cultivator... it was the first time she felt this sensation...

The little beauty suddenly clamped her legs and sat on the ground!

This chick got caught!

Liu Yi was overjoyed, taking advantage of the fact that the little beauty was currently weak all over, he immediately rush off fleeing.

The little beauty sat on the ground. Her body was trembling, however, she still stubbornly said.

“Hate...hateful....you actually dared...dared to plot against me... once... once I, Gu Yu, catch.. catch you... I would most certainly... not let you get away with it...”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 34

“Whew... I finally got back home...”

After closing the door to the house, Liu Yi started panting heavily as he leaned on the door.

Fuck, where the heck did such a ferocious little beauty came from?!

The black suited uncle from earlier was already scary enough, and now, there's also a white dressed beauty!

My fucking shit...

What the heck was with it today?! Why the heck am I so unlucky?!

Did I not check the almanac before going out?!

“Big brother Liu Yi... what..what took you so long...”

Hearing the sound of the door closing, the weak voice of the little girl immediately came from the bedroom.

Oh, that's right....

Only now did Liu Yi remembered the sanitary pads in his left hand.

I almost forgot about Ma Yuanyuan, got too focused on escaping!

If I really were to be caught by that little beauty, have Lin Tong removed from my hand, and then have my power destroyed...

Then my life would likely return back to the dark valley.



Ever since he angered Kevin and young master Lan, Liu Yi knew that his life was no longer the same.

He needed this power to protect himself!

If he were to not have this power... then he probably really have to transfer out of the school and move away....

Grandpa had said that a man must live outstandingly and must not allow others to look down on him!

Liu Yi squeezed his fist, he encouraged himself.

Liu Yi, you got this, you can do it!

“Big brother Liu Yi.... I..I can’t take it anymore...”

Shouted Ma Yuanyuan in a weeping voice.

“Ah, I’m coming, coming!”

Liu Yi came back to reality, he promptly brought the sanitary pads to her.

Once he entered the bedroom, he immediately saw Ma Yuanyuan who was lying on the bed.

This chick really didn’t dare to move at all, it seems as if she was afraid that she’ll drip blood if she moves.

Liu Yi had a wry smile. This girl, she actually also had such a timid side.

It’s making one want to scold her a bit yet could not bear to do it.

No wonder she was a little princess at home and a little witch when she leaves home.

Ma Yuanyuan was lying on the bed, her buttocks was slightly raised.

However, it seems that she also felt a bit of indecency, she took the Liu Yi's bedsheets to cover her ass.

The bedsheets was unable to block the outlines of her protruding buttocks, those two circular objects instead grew even more alluring.

Liu Yi, while feeling pained for his bedsheets, could not help but gulped.

Seems like I would have to wash a lot of stuff tonight.

"Here, put it on yourself."

"I..I don't know how.... big brother Liu Yi.... could you help me?..."

Said Ma Yuanyuan as she shook her head.

"Hell... how am I supposed to help you?..."

Liu Yi started to get a headache. You don't know how? Well, I also don't know how!

"Haven't... haven't you wore them before?.... Didn't you say that it comes every month?..."

"Hell, I've never been had the great aunt!"

Liu Yi raged. "I'm not a woman, okay?!"

"Why is it only women that have the great aunt?.... Boohooohoo... unfair... you

men should have that too....”

The little witch began to complain about the injustices of Heaven.

“Hell, what’s the use of complaining about this!”

Liu Yi tear apart the package, he took out a pad and handed it to Ma Yuanyuan.

“Take it, figure out how to put it on yourself!”

“I’m...I’m afraid... big brother Liu Yi... please help me, please....”

Pleaded Ma Yuanyuan.

Her sweet voice caused Liu Yi to be feel numb all over.

“What’s there to be afraid of for the oppressive you?!”

Liu Yi felt what he said to be a bit evil.

“I...I’m afraid of blood.... there’s a lot of blood...”

Said Ma Yuanyuan feeling wronged.

“That....”

“I beg you... big brother Liu Yi.... I’ll listen to whatever you say from now on...”

The little witch became a little soft girl.

Liu Yi sighed.

Sigh, forget about it, I’m too softhearted.

He took the sanitary pad and sat down next to Ma Yuanyuan.

Looking at the raised buttocks, Liu Yi heart was beating real fast.

It was as if there was someone next to him urging him constantly.

Touch it... touch it good...

Only a retard would not take advantage of the situation!

Liu Yi's hand almost landed on that round buttocks.

However, he suddenly gave himself another slap.

Liu Yi oh Liu Yi!

Where are your morals?!

How could you lust for such a young girl!

Ma Yuanyuan is only fourteen!

What the hell were you thinking?!

Liu Yi bit open his lips, it both hurt and tasted like blood.

Borrowing the pain, Liu Yi cleared his mind at bit.

He held back his impulse and slowly moved aside the bedsheets.

The pair of protruding buttocks once again appeared in front of Liu Yi.

Liu Yi quickly change to his left hand. He took the sanitary pad and slowly pressed it below the protruding buttocks.

“Oh...”

As if feeling that Liu Yi's hand had appeared at key area of her body, Ma Yuanyuan's suddenly shivered. Her body grew hot but she didn't dare say a word.

The arrogant little girl had become completely well-behaved today.

After hastily placing the pad on Ma Yuanyuan, Liu Yi randomly moved the pad around a bit.

Only after feeling that it seemed to be at the groove did Liu Yi had a sigh of relief. He took away his hand and pulled Ma Yuanyuan's panties back on.

However, this girl's pantskirt was already stained with blood, it seems like she can't wear them anymore.

Adding on his own bedsheets and uniforms....

Major laundry, I really need to do a lot of laundry today...

“Okay now... you should quickly return home...”

Liu Yi feared this girl staying at his home for any second longer and start causing troubles again.

Better get her home quick.

“But...but... granny said that she's going to play mahjong tonight and won't come back... sister also said that she's staying out overnight and isn't returning... I... I'm afraid of being alone in the house...”

Ma Yuanyuan continued the lie on the bed. She looked at Liu Yi with a pitiful

appearance and said.

Fuck!

This girl actually decided not to use witch sorcery today and instead used the profound acting cute technique!

This is going against heaven!

“Big brother Liu Yi.... I beg you... please let me stay...”

Ma Yuanyuan kept begging.

Unable to help it, Liu Yi grew softhearted.

As they say, even heroes have a weakness for the charms of a beautiful woman.

If even heroes would fall prey to beauties, then how could a silly boy like Liu Yi not.

“Okay... you can stay...”

“Yay! Big brother Liu Yi is the best! Yuanyuan likes big brother Liu Yi the best!”

Ma Yuanyuan’s sudden change from a little witch to the little sister next door cause Liu Yi to be somewhat unable to accept the fact right away.

And at this time, the numbers on Ma Yuanyuan’s head suddenly jumped again.

Ma Yuanyuan favorable impression level +5.

Holy moly!

It increased by five again!

Her favorable impression level turned to 30 in a flash!

At the same time, the red stream of qi within his body also increased!

Liu Yi felt that the red stream of qi was starting to become as powerful as the white stream of qi.

Okay!

I got a plentiful catch tonight!

Everything was because of Ma Yuanyuan!

This girl actually managed to bring good fortune to me!

Ma Yuanyuan was wearing a little white shirt, on her lower half was only a pair of small bloodstained panties leaving her dazzling white legs out in the open dangling around in front of Liu Yi leading him to feel like he was being blinded.

Amitabha.... amitabha... the worldly beauties are all fair skeletons... however this skeleton's.... leg was really too good...

[TL: fair skeletons = it meant that women's beauty are short-lived and will eventually turn into skeletons.]

"You can sleep here.... I.. I'm going to do the laundry...."

Liu Yi took a gulp, he picked up a bunch of dirty clothes and was about to leave.

"I'm not sleeping! I can't fall asleep so early!"

Who would've expect that this little sister next door instantly turned back to the little witch.

“Humph, I’m not going to be coaxed by an uncle like you to the bed so early! I want to use the computer! I wanna play CrossFire!”

...!

How the heck did I turned from big brother to uncle instantly after going through all that?!

Liu Yi wanted to cry but had no tears.

She’s still a witch alright!

After saying those, Ma Yuanyuan bend over and started to plug the power strip back on.

Her appearance almost cause Liu Yi’s psychological barrier to collapse completely.

Fuck, that’s a bit too tempting...

Isn’t this trying to seduce me into committing a crime?!

The red stream of qi within Liu Yi’s body was running awry, it was about to go ballistic!

Why is this stream of qi so perverted?....

Liu Yi quickly rushed out the room, he held a bunch of dirty clothes and his bed sheets and rushed into the washroom.

After throwing the clothes into the washing machine, Liu Yi went directly to the sink, turned on the faucet, and started splashing water on his face.



Only after the cold water hit his face did his boiling body calm down a bit.

Only fourteen and she's already so tempting.

What the hell would happen once she turned into an adult?!

She'll become a femme fatale!

Major disaster!

"My! Did you ended up fucking some girl tonight? How come your power grew so much?"

Right when Liu Yi was washing his face, the voice of the little fox Lin Tong suddenly resounded at Liu Yi's ears.

God, this little mistress is finally back!

"Hmmm... there's even woman's fragrance on your body! You really did do something!"

"Hell, don't start delusioning!"

Liu Yi quickly explained. "It's the little sister next door needing help.... I just helped her out and had my favorable impression level increased!"

"Well this favorable impression level increased a bit too much! You got an increase of twenty in a single night! What exactly did you do?!"

"I just.... helped her out...."

Thinking of the stuff that he did tonight, Liu Yi started growing red...

I actually helped a girl put on sanitary pads...

This.... was like a dream!

“Your favorable impression level increased a whole lot... it increased your power by a large margin instantly... if you were to continue growing like this...then your cultivation speed was something that I, Lin Tong, would both admire and hate... however, I figured that’s impossible! Little rascal, if it wasn’t for my assistance, for you to woo girls, beyond impossible!”

“Yes yes yes... you are my savior!”

Liu Yi quickly said. “Have you found the technique that is suited for me to practice?”

“Hee hee.... did you even have to ask?”

The little fox wagged her tail and said proudly. “Who do you think I, Lin Tong, am?! I’m a genius fox immortal that comes once in tens of thousands of years! With me doing it personally, is there even such a thing that I cannot accomplish? I entered my spiritual knowledge field earlier and looked around and, lo and behold, I found my a very powerful technique my master left behind! This technique wasn’t suited for me, it’s something that was only suited for men!”

“Oh? Such a coincidence?!”

“Of course! I remember my master saying that this was a very powerful technique! Because our sect only accept one disciple per generation and it had always been women for the past generations, this technique had not appeared in a long time! You really got real lucky this time!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 35

“Re, really?”

Liu Yi had always felt that he was very unlucky, never did he imagined that someone good would happen to him.

For one, when he play online games, there are times when there's sweepstakes in games and whatnot; and he, Liu Yi, had never won anything.

For things such as luck, Liu Yi had already given up hope completely!

“Nonsense, why would this lady lie to you?! Even though this lady is a fox, I am not a liar! Even fox have dignity, okay?”

“Okay okay okay...”

Liu Yi repeatedly nodded. “Then what is the technique that big sister fox immortal is planning to teach me?...”

“It's a palm technique!”

“Palm technique? It sounds pretty weak...”

Liu Yi curled his lip. “I thought that it would be something like Seven Injuries Fist, those scary sounding techniques...”

“The hell do you know!”

Hearing Liu Yi's disdainful attitude, Lin Tong immediately got angry.

“Do you want to learn or not? If not, then so be it!”

“Learn, I want to learn!”

Lin Tong was Liu Yi’s only backing!

If she’s gone, Liu Yi really don’t know what to do.

“Humph, so you want to learn, well, I don’t want to teach!”

Said Lin Tong sticking out her lips.

“Please don't!”

Lin Yi immediately started apologizing. “Big sister Fox Immortal, I currently have a lot of enemies, if you don’t teach me techniques, I would be doomed!”

“Who cares about your enemies... they’re but mere mortals, what’s there to be afraid of?!”

“No, there’s more. Earlier when I went outside, I met a white dressed beauty! She’s super powerful!”

Lin Yi’s words suddenly surprised Lin Tong.

“I felt that that female had a power inside her body.... that’s vaguely associated with the white stream of qi within my body.... she said she’ll take you away and destroy my power!”

“Wha,what....”

“Fortunately, she grabbed my right hand and got caught... I only managed to run back because of that....”

Lin Tong’s heart almost flew out of her!

That white dressed beauty...

It's most certainly the female immortal Gu Yu that she met last night!

Not good! The next time they encounter her, she would most certainly have been on guard and would not allow Liu Yi to run away so easily!

If I really was to be taken out from Liu Yi's hand, I would most certainly be subdued by her and then refined into ashes!

That can't do! Absolutely not!

"Other than the palm technique, I will also teach you an escaping technique!"

Said Lin Tong quickly.

"Really? Big sister fox immortal.... you.. you're too nice to me..."

Liu Yi was incredibly moved.

Lin Tong's face reddened. She coughed twice and said.

"Come, enter the spiritual knowledge field!"

"Wait a moment, I still have to start the washer!"

Liu Yi rushed to start the washer. Fortunately the washer is fully automatic; once started, he didn't have to do anything else.

After starting the washer, Lin Yi sat on the toilet bowl and entered the spiritual knowledge field.

[TL: spiritual knowledge field was basically the same as Liu Yi's subconscious.]

Inside the spiritual knowledge field, the human shaped Lin Tong had waited for him for a long time already.

“You’re slow like a sissy! Hurry, I have to instill two techniques into you!”

“Instill into me?”

Liu Yi blinked a few times.

“Watch carefully!”

Lin Tong suddenly outstretched her hands and placed them on Liu Yi’s temples.

“Thump thump!”

After two muddled sounds, numerous indistinct things suddenly influx into Liu Yi’s brain.

Liu Yi’s brain seemed to be gaining some knowledge!

“This is the Great Initiation Technique, it’s the fastest way of technique disciples techniques in the cultivation world!”

It seemed that it took a lot of strength to do this technique as the little fox was panting slightly after doing it.

However, Liu Yi did indeed gained two miraculous techniques in his brain!

One was “Great Brilliant Sun Palm”!

The other was “Spirit Fox Steps”!

That Great Brilliant Sun Palm should be the exceptional technique that the little fox spoke of.

Spirit Fox Steps should be the escape technique she spoke of!

They're both great stuff!

"The Great Brilliant Sun Palm was divided into thirteen palm strikes! Each and every palm strike was incomparably miraculous! If you were to practice till the last palm strike, then you would have earth shattering powers!"

"That..that powerful..."

"Of course! However, with your current strength, you could only practice the first palm strike! However, this first palm strike was still very powerful, it could triple your attack power to attack your enemy! It was the most fierce technique that you could currently practice!"

"Okay..."

Liu Yi nodded.

Then, following the practice method in his brain, he began to operate the red stream of qi within his body.

The red stream of qi followed a certain pattern and then finally arrived atop his right palm.

A sunlight pattern suddenly appeared on the hollow of Liu Yi's right palm.

Liu Yi felt that his right hand was burning, he had a desire to send something out.

"Come, hit me!"

Lin Tong hooked at Liu Yi with her hand.

“Ah? How..how could I hit you... you’re big sister fox immortal....”

“Enough with the rubbish, if I tell you to hit me then hit me!”

“No! Grandpa had said that men cannot hit women!”

“Fuck! This lady was only telling you to spar with me! You actually think that you can manage to hit me?!”

“I..I can’t...”

“Damn it! You’re a man! How could you say that you can’t! Hurry up! This lady was only telling you to spar!”

Lin Tong suddenly appeared in front of Liu Yi and then a slap came flying at Liu Yi’s face.

Liu Yi was shocked, subconsciously, he returned back with a strike from his hand.

That burning hot right hand came flying at Lin Tong’s chest.

“Pervert!”

Scolded Lin Tong before using her arms to block her chest.

“Boom!”

A scarlet red wave of flame was shot out.

An enormous sun pattern appeared in the air; Lin Tong’s silhouette was suddenly hit into disintegration, she was disappearing into the light.

“Big sister fox immortal!”



Liu Yi was frightened to death, he almost cried out.

Lin Tong is dying!

What am I going to do?!

Not only would there be future troubles, I still haven't repaid Lin Tong!

"Big sister fox immortal, please don't scare me! Please don't die! What would I do if you died...."

"Dumbass, how would this lady die so easily?!"

Lin Tong's voice suddenly sounded from behind Liu Yi.

Happily surprised, Liu Yi immediately turned around. Sure enough, Lin Tong's beautiful figure was floating behind him.

Liu Yi was deeply relieved.

Dear heavens...

This girl didn't die...

That's good, that's very good...

"Hahaha, look at your foolish scared appearance! This is the spiritual knowledge field, the me here was only an empty projection and be killed!"

Liu Yi sat on the ground, he pat his chest and said.

"So that's the case...you scared me to death...."

"You.... cared that much about me?"

Lin Tong stood there looking at the Liu Yi who was sitting on the ground. Her expression was somewhat strange.

“Of course! You’re my big sister fox immortal!”

Liu Yi climbed back up and said. “Even though we only knew each other for a single day, but you were so good to me! So I must also be good to you! If something were to happen to you... then, then....”

“Then what?”

“Then I’ll die with you!”

“Pfff hee...”

Lin Tong suddenly started laughing.

“Wh,why are you laughing?!”

Liu Yi wave his little fist around. “You’re looking down on me!”

“I’m not, dumbass...”

Lin Tong pouted. “Quickly, go back to practice! The first palm strike of the Great Brilliant Sun Palm, Desolate Flame, was awfully powerful. It could triple your attack power and release it, it’s an outstanding weapon for you to use against your enemies at your current stage!”

“Mmmm, I will most certainly practice it well!”

Lin Yi held his fist, “I will protect big sister fox immortal!”

“Don’t call me big sister fox immortal! It makes me sound old!”

“Ah? Then what shall I call you?”

“Just call me by my name Lin Tong!”

“Okay, big sister fox immortal.”

“You... big idiot! Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!”

Lin Tong let out a hysterical shriek of despair.

“Big sister fox immortal... are,are you okay?”

“I’m about to go insane...”

“You’re completely fine, why would you go insane”

Asked Liu Yi, puzzled.

“If this lady wants to go insane, then she’ll go insane, it’s none of your business!”

“Okay okay okay, none of my business, none of my business...”

“You.... so it became none of your business the moment I said it’s none of your business!”

“Ah? Then it’s my business, my business!”

“I am really... going to go insane! Oh Heavens, are you deliberately tormenting me by seconding me this giant buffoon to me?....”

Lin Tong wanted to cry but didn’t have tears.

Liu Yi, on the other hand, was still standing there foolishly and rubbing the back

of his head. He had absolutely no idea as to what just happened.

Why did Lin Tong got so irritable?

Did her great aunt came?

..... She won't be telling me to go buy her sanitary pads too right?....

I really really really don't want to buy it again....

It's so troublesome to be a woman....

It's even more troublesome to be a man who is considerate of women!

"I'm going to die from excess anger because of you! Go, try out the Spirit Fox Steps for me!"

"Oh, oh... yes, right away..."

Liu Yi nodded.

The practice methods of the Spirit Fox Steps immediately appeared in Liu Yi's mind.

The red stream of qi followed a certain pattern and then finally arrived at his legs

At this moment, Liu Yi felt that it was as if there were springs in his legs, they felt a lot lighter and full of elasticity.

"The Spirit Fox Steps was a very profound footwork technique!"

Lin Tong explained. "In the early stages, it could only increase your speed and make you more agile. In the latter stages, you could accomplish things like what I'm doing."

Lin Tong once again hooked at Liu Yi. “Come, hit me.”

“Oh!”

Liu Yi’s fist flew like the lighting and landed on Lin Tong’s nose.

“Boohoo... you..why did you attack me out of nowhere...”

Lin Tong suddenly covered her nose and squatted on the floor in pain.

“Ah? Didn’t you tell me to hit you?”

Lin Yi was surprised, he also squatted down to check out Lin Tong’s injury.

“Didn’t you say that this was my spiritual knowledge field, that you’re a spiritual body here and won’t get hurt?”

“Please! I need to switch between my spiritual body and my actual body.... I still haven’t switched into my spiritual body! You.... I hate you!”

Lin Tong looked at the Liu Yi who was squatting on the floor. He had a deeply concerned expression. However, she currently only felt that he’s very hateful!

Once this lady manage to get out, I’m definitely going to remove your tendons, skin you and drink your blood!

I will certainly, certainly... ruthlessly beat you up to vent my anger!

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 36

“Again!”

The little fox Lin Tong hooked at Liu Yi.

Liu Yi was shaking his head like a rattle-drum, it seems like he didn't dare.

“Fuck, this lady is ready! I'm telling you to attack me, so attack me!”

“Okay then....”

Liu Yi finally nodded. He then took a couple deep breaths.

He knew that the little fox's speed was very fast, thus he wasn't careless either, he started the Spirit Fox Steps and started to accumulate the red stream of qi into his legs.

The relaxed feeling immediately returned.

Liu Yi felt that at this current moment, even if he was to help that little loli Liu Ying retrieve her balloon again, it wouldn't be that difficult anymore.

He turned toward Lin Tong who was hooking her fingers at him and rushed toward her!

Liu Yi's speed really grew a lot faster! Like a burst of agile wind, in a blink of an eye, he arrived front of Lin Tong.

However, seemingly as if Liu Yi was unfamiliar with that sensation, he was unable to control his body and almost directly rushed into Lin Tong's chest.

The palm strike that he had prepared was also unable to come forth.

“Pervert!”

Scolded Lin Tong, her body suddenly appeared around five meters behind.

Liu Yi stumbled forward and almost fell to the ground.

He prop up his body a hand and then stood back up.

And when he raised his head back on, he saw the smiling little fox standing in front of him.

“big... big sister fox immortal...”

“Call me Lin Tong!”

“Okay... big sister fox immortal...”

“Are you deliberately making me mad?! Or are you really stupid?!”

Lin Tong extended a finger and gave Liu Yi’s forehead a hard flick.

“What, what did I do?... big sister fox immortal...”

“You’re about anger me to death!”

Lin Tong felt like rage quitted.

“Did I made big sister fox immortal angry?....”

“You did! You did! YOU DID!”

“Then, then are we still going to continue?...”

“Continue!”

Lin Tong growled.

Liu Yi quickly climbed up. He did a horse stance and began to once again start the red stream of qi, on one hand, he was doing the Spirit Fox Steps and, on the other, he was gathering power into the center of his palm for the Desolate Flame to attack Ling Tong.

[TL: horse stance in martial arts = kinda like squatting with legs open wide]

I cannot make big sister fox immortal angry again!

It must be because that I wasn't practicing hard enough that big sister fox immortal got angry!

I can't let her down this time!

Liu Yi oh Liu Yi, you can do it, you can do it!

Liu Yi felt that his legs were light and agile again, this time around he did not jump out with all his strength, instead, he held back a certain amount of power and sprang toward Lin Tong.

This time around, because Liu Yi didn't go all out, the speed wasn't as fast as last time but the control was much better.

He felt as if he was ice skating, he was sliding forward quickly and the wind was cheering past his ears.

This kind of feeling...

Was so very good...



Liu Yi was enjoying this feeling, in a blink of an eye, he arrived in front of Lin Tong.

Liu Yi's palm flew past bringing a fiery hot wind and a dazzling pattern of the golden sun.

Liu Yi's palm strike appeared to be about to land on Lin Tong, however, her figure instantly appeared five meters away again causing Liu Yi's palm to land on empty air.

The feeling of hitting the air was really uncomfortable.

Lin Tong once again reappeared by Liu Yi's right hand side, she was right next to Liu Yi's body, she brought with her a nose seeping fragrant wind.

"Boo!"

Lin Tong's palm was slightly touching Liu Yi's lower abdomen.

A surge of pain suddenly appeared in Liu Yi's belly. The pain was caused him to retreat back two steps. His body had curled up like a shrimp, his face was covered in cold sweat.

One could also feel pain in their spiritual knowledge field.

Liu Yi didn't know how to adjust between spiritual body and actual body, thus he could only get beaten up

"Big sister fox immortal..... your..your attack was too hard..."

Said Liu Yi as he looked at Lin Tong miserably.

"Humph, this lady only used one percent of her strength!"



field.

The pitiful Liu Yi opened his eyes, he had returned to the real world.

However, the techniques that he was practicing earlier had been firmly set into his mind and body.

Having obtained those two techniques, Liu Yi grew a lot more confident.

He had the confidence to be able to escape the next time he encounter that crazy white dressed beauty!

He also had the confidence to fight if he encounter that black suited uncle again.

Although he might not win, he still had the courage to battle the guy.

He needed to control himself, he cannot allow himself to be swayed left and right by the power he had within him!

“Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhh!”

Right at this moment, Ma Yuanyuan's roar suddenly came from Liu Yi's bedroom.

Liu Yi was surprised, he suddenly remembered that there's a little loli in the house!

• • • •

A little loli who's wearing only a pair of panties....

“Damn! Damn you Liu Yi! What with your computer, why is it lagging even at CrossFire?! I have been killed by others multiple times already! I’m going craaaaaaaaazzzzzzzzyyyyyyyyyy!”

Liu Yi entered the bedroom, he saw a loli wearing only a pair of panties, her white legs were on the stepping on the chair all rouge-like.

This girl... had turned into a little witch again...

“Liu Yi you bastard! Why don’t you go get a new computer?!”

“No money...”

Liu Yi curled his lips.

On the computer screen, a female gunman was holding a gun motionlessly and lagging.

“Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh! My battle records! My battle records.....”

Ma Yuanyuan wanted to cry but had no tears.

“Damned Liu Yi, give me back my battle records, boohooohoo....”

Seeing the Ma Yuanyuan that was making a fuss, Lin Tong’s voice sounded in Liu Yi’s ears.

“Aiyoh.... not bad.... I just left for a while... and you already hid a pretty chick...”

“Cough cough.... don’t misunderstand...”

Liu Yi quickly lowered his voice and said.

“She’s my neighbor’s little sister.... Ma Yixuan’s sister... she secretly ran over here....”

“Tsk tsk.... secretly ran over, she’s dressed rather exposing, no?...”

“I...”

Liu Yi suddenly was at a loss as to how to explain the situation.

“Damned Liu Yi, what are you mumbling about?!”

Ma Yuanyuan was unable to continue playing the game, she looked at Liu Yi and said with her hands were on her waist, one leg kneeling on the chair and her sexy protruding buttocks tilted to the side.

“Nothing.... I’m just saying that my computer is pretty good...”

“Good my ass! The heck is with your crappy computer, it can’t even play CrossFire!”

“That.... there’s nothing I can do, my family is poor...”

Liu Yi shrugged helplessly.

“Then can this crappy computer of yours still play games?”

“Of course!”

Liu Yi called for injustice for his computer.

“This 486 can play games?”

[TL: google 486 computer, it’s those shitty old ass PCs from the late 90s.]

Shouted Ma Yuanyuan while pointing at Liu Yi’s computer.

“It could! Of course it could! It can even play massively multiplayer online games!”

Said Liu Yi.

“Massively multiplayer online games? Which?”

“Fight the Landlord!”

[TL: 斗地主 is a 4 player card game that's really popular in china. 3 players go against the landlord.]

“The..the hell...”

A dark line appeared on Ma Yuanyuan’s forehead.

This Liu Yi.... why is there an impulse to beat him up?...

Ma Yuanyuan suddenly kicked the power supply off, she then jumped out the bed and told Liu Yi.

“This ma’am isn’t going to play anymore, this ma’am is going to sleep!”

“Oh.... okay okay okay... I’ll get the bed ready for you.”

Said Liu Yi, he began to ready the bed for Ma Yuanyuan.

He decided to let Ma Yuanyuan sleep in his room and go to sleep in his mother’s room.

There’s still things spinning in the washer making a tuu tuu tuu sound. After finish putting on the bedsheets, Liu Yi still need to dry his clothes, write a bunch of exercise booklets and finish his homeworks before he could go to bed.

Once he thought of the amount of homework he had, Liu Yi wanted to cry.

Even though his parents and his teacher had always told him.

Learn well, once you manage to get into college, then everything would be better, you'll be able to play around.

However Liu Yi felt that, with the daily mountain of assignments.... before he could last until the day he enter college, he'll already had died on the pile of homework.

"Where, where are you sleeping?"

Ma Yuanyuan suddenly asked.

"Next door."

"No, you can't!"

Said Ma Yuanyuan suddenly while blushing and biting her lips.

"Huh?"

Liu Yi was dumbfounded, what does Ma Yuanyuan mean by this?

"I... I need my grandmother to coax me to sleep!"

Said Ma Yuanyuan boldly.

"I....I can't fall asleep by myself..."

"Then go read a book, I have a high school level English book here, try learning some English from that, if that don't work, then go online and watch a movie!"

Said Liu Yi while blinking his eyes.

Ma Yuanyuan grew immensely angry.

“Liu Yi!”

“Ah?”

She’s not even calling me big brother Liu Yi anymore... tsk tsk... her attitude changes way too fast.

It’s really true that girls changes constantly when they’re on menstruation!

The next time this happen, I’ll be sure not to get close to them!

“Can you grow some balls?!”

Said Ma Yuanyuan angrily. “Tomorrow I still have to go to sleep, I can’t sleep late! If I sleep late, my skin will get bad! If my skin gets bad, then I won’t be able to find a husband! If I can’t find a husband, are you able to bear the responsibility?”

“I...I...cannot....”

Liu Yi felt defeated.

“Useless good for nothing! You can’t even win against a little girl in an argument!”

Said Lin Tong disdainfully by Liu Yi’s ears.

So what if I can’t win against an argument?...

Grandpa had said, I cannot lower myself to argue with girls...

Men must be magnanimous, they ought not fight with words!



“If you cannot then why do you still want me to stay up all night?! What’s the meaning of that?!”

“I...I... I was wrong...”

“If you knew of your wrong, then quickly come over and warm up the bad for this ma’am!”

“Huh?”

“...I mean come over and coax me to sleep by telling me a story...”

Ma Yuanyuan’s face once again reddened. She lowered her head and her voice instantly got lower too.

“Huh?”

“The heck are you huhing about? Are you going to tell me a story or not?”

“Let me go dry the clothes first....”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 37

“Ahhhh.... so sleepy...”

Early morning, Liu Yi was rubbing his eyes, his hair a mess, he was wearing his old school uniform, his currently uniform was still being air-dried.

Last night, Liu Yi didn't go to sleep until it's very late into the night.

Ma Yuanyuan was being a really annoying girl last night, she's indeed a little witch!

And she's only fourteen, she's really full of energy.

She laid on the bed and kept shouting at Liu Yi to tell her stories. When he tried to tell her stories about Cinderella and Snow White, she refused to listen!

Finally, Liu Yi, unable to find a way out, decided to go online and found a really popular novel 'My Beautiful Teacher' and started reading that to her. When he first started, he felt that it's pretty good. However, unexpectedly, it soon turned into some xx rated plot, causing Liu Yi to be very awkward reading them.

[TL: My Beautiful Teacher is Ram De Night's earlier novel, it is also the most popular modern xianxia novel on 17k.com. It had also been adapted into a drama.]

Unexpectedly, that girl Ma Yuanyuan was completely concentrated in listening, her face got real red from either excitement or embarrassment, she didn't let Liu Yi skip the parts and demanded Liu Yi to continue reading.

Only when it was late into the night did Ma Yuanyuan finally fall asleep.

Only then did Liu Yi managed to get back to his homework. A mountain of

homework, by the time Liu Yi finished it was already three in the morning, only then did he managed to go to sleep.

However, at this moment, Lin Tong decided to come out, she didn't let him sleep and instead told him to enter the spiritual knowledge field to practice!

Liu Yi was grieving incessantly!

He begged her to allow him to sleep for an hour, however she continued to shout at his ears causing him to be unable to get any sleep.

With no ways out, Liu Yi ended up obeying Lin Tong, he entered the spiritual knowledge field and continuously practiced.

Logically, if Liu Yi were to practice the Heavenly Fox Mantra, not only would he not become tired, he'll be more spirited.

However, Lin Tong made him practice techniques instead. He was continuously using the Great Brilliant Sun Palm and the Spirit Fox Steps!

This was no longer making him more spirited, this was torture!

Thus, when morning came, Liu Yi was standing downstairs drowsy eyed with his schoolbag slanted on his back, he even had two dark circles underneath his eyes.

"Humph! You have to take the time that you used for girls for practicing instead, if you do, then you won't be so tired!"

Grunted Lin Tong. She was lying on Liu Yi's head in her fox form.

"It's not like I want to...."

Liu Yi rubbed his eyes and muttered. "Besides, wasn't it big sister fox immortal you who said.... increase girls' favorable impression level in order to increase

power... how come when I increased their favorable impression level, you instead seemed upset?..."

"Who, who's upset?!"

The little fox immediately stood up from Liu Yi's head, with all her fur and her tail standing up, she shrieked.

"This lady was supervising you! Do you even know what kind of risky condition you're in now?! You are to go against a lot of enemies, okay?! That black suited man, that white dressed woman... you're a match for neither of them, if you don't focus on practicing your techniques, how could you survive?!"

"Big sister fox immortal is right to lecture me!"

Liu Yi nodded. "I will certainly practice hard."

"Humph, that's more like it.... stupid idiot..."

The last two words, Lin Tong said them while biting her lips. They were especially soft, other than her, no one else heard them.

"Sigh, I only have seven yuan left in my pocket.... excluding the amount to take the bus, what can I possibly get to eat with five yuan...."

Liu Yi touched the couple yuan he had in his pocket and grew somewhat worried.

The lunch boxes outside the school gates were six yuan each, and that's the one without meat. Those with meat cost ten yuan.

Liu Yi remembered that his cousin had said that back when he was in junior high, the lunch boxes were only two fifty and they were filled with braised meat.

Sigh, unfortunately it was no longer that era!

Now, even a bowl of spicy hot soup cost eight yuan!

Liu Yi fiercely blinked his drowsy eyes, he carefully looked at the floor seemly as if he wanted to find some coins on the floor.

“Why are you taking the bus?! Run to school! Else, what’s the use of learning Spirit Fox Steps?!”

Cried Lin Tong.

“But...but..I really don’t have much stamina left... and... I’m real sleepy...”

Grieved Liu Yi. “I fear that I will fall asleep while running and crash into a car...”

“Good for nothing! You’re young and also an immortal cultivator, with just a single night, you’ve already turned like this!”

Cried Lin Tong.

“But... I’m really really sleepy... my brain is still very muddled...”

Said Liu Yi, he slightly closed his eyes.

He stood there and began to snore softly.

“The hell! He really did fall asleep! Wake up! Quickly, wake up!”

Lin Tong shouted at Liu Yi’s ears and Liu Yi rapidly opened his eyes.

“Where, where’s the coins?!”

“Coin your ass!”

Lin Tong outstretched her paws, she grabbed Liu Yi's ears causing him a slight pain and making him a bit more sober.

"You're too much of a good for nothing! Come, learn a breathing method from me!"

"Breathing method?"

Liu Yi blinked a couple of times, he didn't understand who Lin Tong meant by that.

"You'll know once you try!"

Said Lin Tong. She jumped down from Liu Yi's head. She then opened her mouth and bit Liu Yi's nose.

"Ahhhhhhhhhhh!"

Liu Yi grabbed his nose and screamed.

And at that moment, the Great Initiation Technique had rushed into Liu Yi's mind.

A technique appeared in his memory.

This Great Initiation Technique was indeed very convenient... but wasn't this method a bit too painful?!

"Humph humph! You know how powerful this lady is now?!"

Said Lin Tong proudly with her mouth curled upward.

"That bite of yours... really woke me up... but I'm still very confused..."

Said Liu Yi while holding his stinging nose. “I felt that my brain had become full of flour paste....”

“Humph, dumbass, follow the breathing technique I taught you and try breathing a couple of times!”

“Oh, oh.....”

Liu Yi nodded, he then did a horse stance and, according to the methods of instilled into his mind, did a few deep breaths.

Every time he breath, he immediately began to feel that the air around him contained a fresh and relaxing gaseous substance that contained some kind of spiritual power that entered his body through his nose and into his dantian.

These spiritual power hovered around the dantian for a while, then they spread through to his internal organs and even into his blood.

That sensation was extremely good!

Liu Yi didn't know what sensation taking drugs gives.... however this comfortable sensation made him feel like he's taking drugs.

So comfortable....

His brain immediately became sober, all the paste like feeling and the heaviness have vanished.

Liu Yi took a couple of deep breathes, he felt immensely good.

When he reopened his eyes, he felt completely refreshed and his eyes were sparkling!

This breathing technique was so magical!

“This was a breathing technique that cultivators must certainly master! Not only allow the cultivators to continue to attain an active and refreshed spirit, it also provides a temporary relief of injuries!”

“Such a magical technique... why didn't you teach me that earlier?...”

“With how stupid you are, this lady naturally need to teach you them one by one!”

Said Lin Tong guiltily, she actually forgot about it.

“Thank you big sister fox immortal....”

Liu Yi took another two deep breaths, he felt that his spirit had returned.

“Now run to the school!”

“Yes.....”

Liu Yi immediately started the Spirit Fox Steps, he instantly felt a lot lighter.

He was using the Spirit Fox Steps according to all the practice results from last night.

Liu Yi continued to choose places without much people to run, every time there's no one around, he would lightly thread his foot on the ground, slightly bend his knee, and jump to a distance of five or six meters. Then he would land on his other leg and repeat what he did with the previous leg and once again jump another five or six meters.

Liu Yi's body was like a locust, he was jumping all the way, however, his action was both fast and agile, not at all slower than cars.



And when he reaches places with people, Liu Yi would slightly slow down his speed into a jogging that was still very extremely easy for him.

The little fox watched Liu Yi with satisfaction.

Even though this guy was pretty stupid, he's hard working!

Last night, he was still stumbling with the Spirit Fox Steps but he was already using it pretty good today.

As long as he knows how to run away, then the next time he meets that female immortal, he won't have to fear about being caught by her.

Liu Yi's speed was like a gust of wind, in just a short moment, he had already left the alley and entered the main road.

This main road was something that one must certainly pass in order to go to the school.

It was a high trestle bridge, underneath the bridge was a river that go as far as the eye can see.

Liu Yi's school was located at the other side of the river. He easily ran up the high trestle bridge.

School starts very early for senior high students, there were even several guys and girls exercising on this high trestle bridge. With sweat all over their head, wearing workout clothes and a towel over their necks, they were huffing and puffing as they ran on either direction of the bridge.

Liu Yi seemed to have become one of them. Merely that his outfit was a bit offbeat. He wore a somewhat small school uniform and a pair of canvas shoes that had turned a bit white from excess washing.

The most important aspect was that he was carrying a huge schoolbag. Who knows how many textbooks were in that school bag, it was swaying left and right as Liu Yi ran.

Some of the morning joggers were staring at him, dumbfounded.

Holy shit, that student's physique was way too good! That schoolbag looked immensely heavy.... and he's running while carrying it!

Fuck, that looked fierce as hell....

And at this moment, in Liu Yi's sights, there suddenly appeared the figure of a woman who was also running.

That woman's figure was pretty good, on her upper body was a gray half sleeve shirt, on her waist was a black sports jacket firmly wrapping around her fine waist. On her lower body was two slender thighs, she was wearing the same black colored sports pants.

Although those sports pants were loose-fitting, they did not manage to obscure this beauty's amazing body.

Her buttocks were extremely shaped, as she ran, those two protruding soft butt cheeks were being wrapped around by her sports pants like two watermelons.

Every step she took, that buttock would leave an astonishing curve from being wrapped around by her sports pants!

Even if it was Liu Yi, seeing such a scene, could only gulp.

"Hey hey hey, huge pervert, what are you looking at?!"

Lin Tong was originally lying on Liu Yi's head the whole time. However now she suddenly thrown her tail in front of Liu Yi, blocking his view.

“Hey hey hey! I can’t see the road!”

Having his view blocked, Liu Yi quickly shouted.

“Humph, you weren’t watching the road to begin with!”

Muttered Lin Tong.

“Stop messing around, big sister fox immortal... I’ll crash into a car...”

Liu Yi pulled away Lin Tong’s fox tail. He noticed that the beauty in front of him stopped, she turned around her charming face and looked at Liu Yi strangely.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 38

“Sis Die, look, isn’t that your Liu Yi?”

On the road to the side, a black Mercedes slowly drove by.

It was the Murong family’s car, in the car sat two lively and beautiful girls, Murong Die and Wang Lele.

The driver was the bodyguard and driver Wang An. Hearing Wang Lele’s shouts, he glanced at the rearview mirror.

Sure enough, that kid who had embarrassed him last night was currently running on the side road.

Because of what happened yesterday, Wang An secretly wore contact lenses today.

Liu Yi’s looks and physique was clearly imprinted in his pupils.

Unable to help himself, Wang An secretly frowned.

This kid must’ve ran all the way over here!

This bridge was constant, running halfway across the bridge was already a very long distance!

But there’s not a single droplet of sweat on this kid’s forehead!

He really wasn’t someone ordinary...

But he had already investigated this Liu Yi yesterday. He was of ordinary birth, his parents were even more ordinary.

His father was a not so effective purchaser of a small company, his mother was a little bit better, she's the head nurse of the municipal hospital.

His grandparents were also ordinary farmers, there was nothing unusual about them at all!

He was unknown throughout elementary, middle school and high school. With average grades, he could be said as being one of those transparent individuals of the class!

However, it's precisely this ordinary, a bit extraordinarily ordinary student that unexpectedly managed to caused the late 'Fierce Tiger' of the special forces soldier to suffer immensely!

Who exactly was this kid?!

On his information, it stated that he had neither been in the army before nor had he ever learned martial arts before!

Could it be that he had met an martial arts master who took fancy of him and taught him some techniques?

That was a bit possible....

That's because Wang An felt that this kid looked very fragile with his skinny body, for him to be able to exchange blows with he who had gone through years of devil trainings, he must know some kind of internal fist techniques!

Especially that last attack! It must be the so called internal energy of the internal fist technique!

There were some internal experts back when he was still in the military. Unfortunately, to practice internal techniques, one must start from childhood.

Wang An's age was too old and could only practice external fist techniques and some body techniques.

He remembered that there's an old expert of the internal fist techniques, man was he strong.

That man would casually hit Wang An's certain acupuncture points and he would immediately lose all his strength and become free to be trampled upon by others.

That old expert called that technique 'pulse cut', it was a technique meant to cut off the bloodstream by attacking the acupuncture points.

However, unless one have the qi energy of an internalist, one cannot pull off a pulse cut.

That move that kid used on him yesterday must certainly be one of those used with the qi energy of an internalist!

Such a dangerous student being near the Miss, that cannot do.

Wang An went and told the master about this issue. Murong Die's father told him to not do anything first and just observe the situation.

"What do you mean by my Liu Yi?! It's your Liu Yi! Your whole family's Liu Yi!"

Murong Die had also noticed the Liu Yi who was running, her eyes even shined a bit.

However, after hearing what Wang Lele said, her face suddenly grew red and she immediately grew angry.

"Heehee.... and you're still denying, look, our Miss Murong's face is completely red!"

Said Wang Lele while hugging Murong Die's arm. Her two plump meats gave Murong Die both comfort and jealousy.

"Nonsense, from the way I see it, it's obviously you who turned into a lass in heat!"

Said Murong Die after grabbing Wang Lele's chests strongly.

"Look, they're already that big, have you started lactating yet?!"

"Sis Die is such a meanie...."

Wang Lele's face turned red. "I not even married... how could I be lactating?...."

"If you're not lactating, how can they be so big?!"

"I don't know... my mother's is also very big, my grandma's is also very big... say, aren't all girls supposed to be this sized?...."

Murong Die suddenly felt like killing herself.

"But... Sis Die... are you really going to let Liu Yi compete with that Lan He?"

"What, did you start feeling sorry for him? Did you really fall for him?"

Murong Die suddenly felt a little bit sour.

This sour feeling... where did it come from?...

It's like, I have never experienced such a feeling before...

It's really uncomfortable....

“Of course not! It’s just that Liu Yi got into this situation because of us....”

Wang Lele blinked her large eyes, she looked at Murong Die and said. “Wang He isn’t a good person.... if he were to take advantage of the competition and do something to Liu Yi... if something were to happen to Liu Yi, Sis Die, I won’t feel ease...”

“Little witch, wasn’t this all because of you?!”

Murong Die gave Wang Lele a sidelong glance. She said. “If it wasn’t for you messing around, how would Liu Yi get involved?!”

“I know my mistakes....”

Wang Lele pouted. “Sis Die, what should we do?....”

“I don’t care... it’s none of my business...”

Said Murong Die with her neck raised high and her lips curled.

“But... I don’t know what to do... Sis Die is smarter than me, she certainly would have an idea, right?!”

“Well, that’s true...”

Murong Die nodded, she then held her hand out and placed her fingers on her temple. “Well... how about this. Fake injury before their competition at noon, I’ll have Liu Yi send you to the hospital and then push this matter past; what do you think?”

“This idea is great! Sis Die, you’re the smartest!”

Said Wang Lele while smiling as she pulled Murong Die’s arm. A slight cunning sense flashed past her eyes.



“Humph humph, of course, who did you think this lady was?....”

“Hee hee....”

The two girls started to laugh out loud in the car.

Liu Yi of course didn't know that he had already become the main focus of the whole Murong family.

At this moment, he was looking at the beauty in front of him and a slightly surprised.

The beauty turned around, her pair of shiny black eyes fell on Liu Yi's body.

This beauty looked to be in her early twenties, her eyes were very alluring.

Her gaze made Liu Yi's heart flowers blossom.

This woman was very beautiful and full of heroic aura.

She was different from the fair and delicate beauties like Murong Die and Wang Lele.

This beauty in front of him, seemingly as if because of her constant exercise, had an immensely good figure!

The way she stood there, it's a genuine S shape.

[TL: S shape: [https://www.google.com/search?q=S%E5%9E%8B&es\\_sm=93&source=lnms&tbm=isch&sa=X&ved=0CAcQ\\_AUoAVT35xxUfCM%3A](https://www.google.com/search?q=S%E5%9E%8B&es_sm=93&source=lnms&tbm=isch&sa=X&ved=0CAcQ_AUoAVT35xxUfCM%3A) ]

Furthermore, her wheat-colored skin revealed a healthy atmosphere causing her

whole person appearing even more valiant.

“Are you crazy?”

Unexpectedly, that beauty suddenly insulted him; causing Liu Yi to open his mouth wide in shock.

“Huh?”

“If you’re not crazy then why are you talking to yourself? Also, don’t follow me!”

The beauty gave Liu Yi a sidelong glance. She then turned around, moved her long legs and continued to jog.

Hey hey hey!

Immediately, Liu Yi was uncomfortable.

What the heck do you mean by crazy?! What the heck do you mean by me following you?!

So you can be so narcissistic because you’re a beauty?!

“Humph, this woman is too arrogant!”

Cried the little fox Ling Tong as she laid on Liu Yi’s head and waving her claws.

“Liu Yi, go! Blast her!”

Blasting her was impossible, but surpassing her was a certainty.

Liu Yi took a deep breath. Through the usage of the breathing technique, he felt a lot more spirited.

Gathering wind on his foot, he suddenly jumped forward and began running.

Without much effort, Liu Yi ran past the wheat-colored beauty.

Under that wheat-colored beauty's surprised expression, Liu Yi was running while turning his head around and saying.

"It's you who's following behind me now!"

"Little rascal!"

That beauty bit her lips, a flash went through her eyes and she suddenly accelerated.

It would seem that she's also an unyielding person!

In a flash, she started chasing after Liu Yi.

That beauty was certain to have exercised all the time. Not only does she look very good running, she was also very vigorous. After a mere distance of two hundred meters, she had already reached Liu Yi.

"With only you? If you want me to chase after you, go back and run for ten more years!"

The beauty actually gave Liu Yi a middle finger before continuing to stride forward.

"Ahhhhhhhhh! She's way too arrogant! Liu Yi, push your Spirit Fox Steps to the maximum! This lady had thought you all your abilities, don't you dare make me lose face!"

"Understood, Big sister fox immortal!"

Liu Yi didn't want to disappoint Lin Tong. He started the power within himself to the maximum.

At this moment, Liu Yi felt as if there was two small electric motors in his legs, full of horse power!

With a fierce step of his leg, like a cheetah, his speed increased instantly.

That beauty was running while grabbing her ipod earbuds; she was planning to put them on.

Seeing Liu Yi's slim figure suddenly running past her, this chick opened her mouth in a surprise. Her earbuds also fell from her hand.

A full speed dash for two hundred meters, this frail looking student that she looked down on, she should've been way past him now.

People who haven't exercised much, for a full speed dash of two hundred meters, they'll certainly not have much strength left.

However he actually.... managed to overtake her!

How is this possible?!

Was he really just a student?

Right when this beauty was dumbstruck, a clamor came from far behind her.

The beauty and Liu Yi were both attracted by the clamor.

They saw a woman shouting anxiously from the distance.

"My bag, my bag..."

On the busy bridge, this voice should've been very soft and hard to hear.

However, after Liu Yi opened his first star jade, both his hearing and vision had greatly improved.

The cries of the woman was also clearly transmitted to his ears.

And not far from them was a man riding a motorcycle. He grabbed a woman's bag on one hand and his motorcycle on the other and was driving toward them.

That beauty slightly frowned, could she have also heard the cries for help?

Liu Yi anxiously watched the incoming motorcycle, he was thinking at a lightning speed about how to catch this bag snatcher.

"Time to be meddle in other's business again..."

Lin Tong seemed to have understood what Liu Yi was planning to do, she laid on his head lazily and said. "Seems like you'll be late again...."

And before Liu Yi had an idea as to what to do, the beauty had suddenly turned around. She stepped back a couple steps before running strongly toward that motorcycle.

All of this happened in a split second. Liu Yi eyes was wide open, he was thinking about what this beauty was planning to do!

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 39

The wheat-colored beauty stepped back a couple steps before running forward.

Then with a twist of her slim waist, she instantly pulled her two legs together and, like a bullet, she kicked the man on the motorcycle with her legs.

“Bang!”

Before this man could even scream, he was already kicked off his motorcycle.

The motorcycle immediately overturned. It did several rolls and rushed toward Liu Yi.

Shit!

Liu Yi was deeply shocked, isn't this beauty a bit too fierce?!

A fierce woman!

Liu Yi stepped aside, he dodge the rampaging motorcycle.

The motorcycle gave birth to rows of sparks on the road. It then hit the railguard and bounced back out to the middle of the road.

The motorcycle flew out from nowhere into the middle of the road. Immediately, all the cars behind it immediately hit their brakes so as to not crash into it.

However, the motorcycle came out way too sudden. A bus was unable to brake in time and crashed into it.

However, the bus was already braking and it's speed had slowed.

The cars in the back wasn't able to react in time. One by one, they crashed into the car in front of them.

“Bang bang bang!”

The bridge had suddenly turned into chaos.

The cars on the bridge piled up on each other, it was a complete chaos.

As for that wheat-colored beauty, she currently had one foot on the bag snatching thief's arm and was holding the woman's bag on one of her hand.

Seeing the chaos she created, she shrugged.

[TL: not really a shrug, but I can't find the best word to describe what she did.  
It's like

<http://www.souzhongyi.com/upload/201311/11/201311111444520312.jpg> ]

“Crap... I caused troubles again...”

Liu Yi was also completely dumbstruck seeing the scene.

“Thank you, thank you...”

The woman who had her bag snatched received her bag back from the beauty, she kept on thanking her.

“You don't need to thank me, I am a policewoman, this is something that I am obligated to do.”

The wheat-colored beauty waved her hand and said. “Check if there's anything missing...”

“Okay okay.... thank you, the people’s police...”

The woman continued to thank repeatedly.

The bag snatching thief on the ground pleaded incessantly.

“Police comrade... police beauty... please let me go... this is the first time I’ve done such a thing....”

“Enough of your rubbish!”

The wheat-colored beauty heavily stepped on that bag snatcher’s arm.

“Ahhhhhhhhhh!”

The bag snatcher screamed in pain. Liu Yi who stood on the side hearing his scream began to shiver all over.

This beauty... was she a T.rex in beauty’s clothing?...

“Big... big sister fox immortal... could she be one of your demon clan’s... female tiger demon?...”

“Ma,maybe...”

Even Lin Tong was struck dumb, she shrink herself behind Liu Yi’s neck, undaring to emerge.

“I know that you’re a repeated offender by the way you act! What awaits you will be the severe sanctions of law!”

While saying those words, the beauty touched her waist, it seemed that she habitually tried to get her handcuffs.



At this moment, she suddenly remembered that she was still doing her morning exercise. She was in civilian clothes and doesn't have any handcuffs.

However, it didn't matter to her. She took her towel around her neck that still had her fragrant on it and, without any regards of the shrieks of the bag snatcher, pulled his two arms together, wind them up together with her towel and tightly tied a tight knot.

That bag snatcher looked very miserable. Like a tied up pig, he had his hands tied behind his back and was kneeling on the ground with his butt sticking out.

The beauty clapped her hands and then turned around saying.

"Aunty, come with me to file a police reco..."

Before she was able to finish her 'record,' she became dumbfounded.

The woman who had her bag snatched had disappeared from her sight.

Right when the beauty was stunned silly, the cell phone in her pants suddenly started ringing with a wah wah sound.

The capable and experienced appearance that she had earlier completely faded away from the beauty; in a flurry, she took out her phone to answer it.

Liu Yi's ears were very keen, he immediately heard the roar coming from the phone.

"Yuan Zhenyue! What the hell are you doing?!"

The roar was so loud that Liu Yi felt that it would even shatter the phone. It clearly showed how angry the person on the other end of the phone was.

On the other end of the phone was the hysteria of a middle aged man. The

beauty named Yuan Zhenyue took the phone away from her ears, she even picked her ear, it seemed that her ear hurted a little.

“Yuan Zhenyue! Haven’t you already been suspended from your investigative duties?! How the hell did you manage to cause such a major chaos?!”

“Bureau Chief Wang... how did you know that it was me?...”

Said Yuan Zhenyue as she rubbed her ears and helplessly held the phone in her hands.

“Nonsense! The only police that would job across the Jiangpu bridge every morning is you! We received reporting calls, other than you, who else could be the female culprit that they described?!”

“Aiya, Bureau Chief Wang... you’re as insightful as ever...”

“Stop trying to flatter me! You stay there for me, don’t you dare run away from your crime!”

“Aiya! Bureau Chief Wang, I’m not the culprit! I just accidentally damaged the surroundings as I was catching as thief....”

“Enough of your nonsense, it’s not the first time that you have done such a thing! You stay there and wait!”

After saying those words, that Beaurue Chief Wang hanged up the phone with a smash.

Yuan Zhenyue helplessly put her phone away.

“Beautiful police officer... police officer sister... I, I am willing to be your witness, can you please untie me?...”

Asked the bag snatcher sullenly.

Robbery would at most land him a couple years in jail...

However, he felt as if his arm was about to break if he were to continue to be tied up!

A couple years in jail is a small thing...

His arms breaking was a much bigger issue!

“Be your ass! You better behave yourself! You main culprit of this disaster!”

Yuan Zhenyue kicked that bag snatcher’s ass. “If there wasn’t for the repulsive thieves like yourself, then this lady here won’t have to work my ass off! You even caused me to be yelled by my superior, I’m sure to have to write a report again...”

“Police sister...”

“Sister my ass!”

It appeared that Yuan Zhenyue really wasn’t at a good mood. She took out a rubber band and tied her hair up in a ponytail. She then pointed at the bag snatcher and scolded.

“Who the hell is your sister, who the hell is your sister?! Why the hell do you even bother trying to talk with me? What, can you write the report instead of me?!”

Yuan Zhenyue’s anger were completely running awry.

Not only did she created an enormous traffic accident, the woman whose bag was snatched also disappeared!

How the hell could she explain the situation now?!

Although it seemed like there wasn't any casualties... but the damages that was done doesn't seemed to be small either.

If there wasn't any witness to prove her innocence, then she would really be finished!

Perhaps, her career as a police officer would end here!

Yuan Zhenyue swept her gaze around and finally landed on Liu Yi who was standing nearby with his eyes wide open and still stunned.

Seeing Yuan Zhenyue's gaze landing on him, Liu Yi suddenly started shivering. He have a bad premonition...

This, this violent female police... what is she planning to do?

"Student, help me out."

Yuan Zhenyue was suddenly all smiles, she waved at Liu Yi.

"I, I don't know how to write a report..."

Liu Yi promptly shook his head, he held the protective rail on the bridge and didn't dare to let go.

Holy mother of god... so fucking scary...

This female police officer was even more scary than that black suited uncle from yesterday!

Which god did I, Liu Yi, angered?! Why is it that the people I meet gets scarier

every time?!

God help me...

“You, you good for nothing... it’s only a woman, what’s scary about that?...”

Said the little fox faintly while shivering as she was holding Liu Yi’s neck and hiding behind him.

“Go... did, didn’t I taught you the Great Brilliant Sun Palm?...”

“That, that, that’s right... big sister fox immortal... can you teach me a technique to breathe under water?...”

“Why do you want that?...”

“So that I can jump down the bridge...”

“You good for nothing! Don’t you feel shamed for being an immortal cultivator?! Go, go up there!”

Said the little fox as she strongly pushed Liu Yi from behind with her paws.

Liu Yi didn’t pay attention and stumbled forward a couple steps, he almost fell face-first into that Yuan Zhenyue’s ample bosom.

Yuan Zhenyue immediately frowned and began to look at Liu Yi angrily.

“Little bastard, you dared molest the people’s police?!”

As she said those words, one of her hand started to go toward Liu Yi’s shoulder while her leg kicked his. She wanted to throw him down.

Her moves came at Liu Yi skillfully, one can tell that she had practiced it

countless times.

However, this time around, she missed!

She kicked Liu Yi off balance. However, to her surprise, Liu Yi grabbed her arm with his left hand and did a 360 degree rotation using her arm as the pivot and then steadily landing behind her.

“Huhu... it worked...”

After last night’s training, Liu Yi had indeed grew a lot stronger.

Had it been him from before, then he would’ve already been dropped to the ground!

However today, he was able to steady his body and do an aerial acrobatics.

Liu Yi felt very thankful toward Lin Tong. Had it not been her, he’ll be destined to be bullied for the rest of his life!

Even watching the show would lead to him being bullied... is there even justice?!

“Not bad, you got some skills!”

Yuan Zhenyue’s eyes shined, unable to help herself, she licked her lips.

Holy shit!

Liu Yi immediately detected a sense of danger. A thick cold air rushed from his toes to his head.

He stepped back a couple steps and walked into the already chaotic road.

This bridge road could be considered to be already paralyzed. Cars were packed

all over, no one could get out and no one could enter, all they could do was wait for the arrival of the police.

Liu Yi walked back into a van, the cold steel of the van woke him back up.

“Holy... this woman actually have... such a strong fighting aura...”

“Fighting aura, what is that? Could it be that there’s magic?”

Hearing Lin Tong’s astonished shout, Liu Yi asked.

“That’s totally different!”

Lin Tong gave Liu Yi a side glance. “It’s the will to battle... this woman... is like a natural born warrior... her desire to battle is very high... Liu Yi... I think... it’s better for you to flee...”

Liu Yi looked at the chaotic bridge that surrounded him and began to grief.

This... where exactly can I run to?...

The bridge was already paralyzed on both sides.

Could it be that I really have to jump down the bridge into the river?

Seeing Liu Yi looking left and right, Yuan Zhenyue could already tell that he’s planning to flee.

“Little bastard, where do you think you’re running to?! You still have to be this my witness!”

Said Yuan Zhenyue. She then started rushing toward Liu Yi. Her hands began going toward Liu Yi’s shoulders.

Liu Yi wasn't going to have himself caught by this female police officer again.

He suddenly bend his waist, lowered his head and dodged Yuan Zhenyue's grappling hands.

Having done the devil's training, plus the breathing technique, Liu Yi's reaction had grew a lot more nimble!

"What?"

Yuan Zhenyue caught the air. However, she grew even more excited.

"Interesting... again!"



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 40

As she said that, this police beauty suddenly changed her fighting style.

She no longer tried to catch him but rather changed into a much more fierce fighting style.

Liu Yi felt that her stance seemed a bit similar, she kinda resemble that black suited uncle from last night.

Shit, ain't this kind of fighting style meant to be used on enemy soldiers and violent gangsters?!

Where in the fuck do I look like a soldier or gangster?!

The police beauty's palm strike gave birth to a burst of strong wind as it shoot toward Liu Yi's neck.

Should her knife hand land, then Liu Yi would certainly be knocked unconscious.

For ordinary people, they would certainly be unable to dodge the strike.

However, Liu Yi was no longer a regular high school student. He crouched to the ground as he sensed the danger to his neck.

Immediately, he pressed his hand firmly on the ground.

Then, he easily did a leap that's oftentimes seen on TV.

Having his first Star Jade opened plus the Spirit Fox Steps had allowed Liu Yi to execute a lot of extraordinary moves.

He can now try to imitate lot of the brilliant wuxia moves that's shown on the

TV.

This giant leap was an inspiration that he suddenly came up with then used.

With both of his hands on the ground, Liu Yi twisted his waist, his legs wide open, bringing along with a violent wind, and woosh as it swept toward that police beauty's face.

This move of him gave birth to a real strong wind.

Yuan Zhenyue sensed danger and immediately placed her arms in front of her to defend.

“Peng Peng!”

Her arms was kicked continuously. A large pressure landed on her arms causing her to step back a couple steps.

Liu Yi forced back the police beauty Yuan Zhenyue. He then immediately pushed with his arms and jumped back up. Using the elastic force from the landing, he immediately started to run toward the other side of the bridge.

Numerous cars stood in front of him and blocked his path.

“Jump past them! You good for nothing that only knows how to flee!”

Shouted Lin Tong. She was wagging her tail while hanging on Liu Yi's neck.

Liu Yi lightly leaped toward the car in front of him. Then, supporting himself with his two hands, he pressed on the car's roof and glided over it. In a blink of an eye, he had already arrived at the other side of the car.

“Holy shit! Fucking crazy!”

The driver stretch his head out the car's window and cursed loudly. "Fucking bastard, why the fuck are you doing parkour in a car accident scene?!"

Liu Yi didn't have the time to mind the driver. He had already saw from a side mirror of a car that Yuan Zhenyue was already flinging her arms and preparing to chase after him.

Run....

Run fast!

The only thing Liu Yi was thinking was to quickly run away.

All the cars in front of him were being treated as gym vaults by him. One by one, he jumped past them.

In a blink of an eye, he had distanced himself seven or eight rows of cars from Yuan Zhenyue.

However, right when Liu Yi was feeling relieved thinking that he managed to escape, the roaring noise of an exhaust was suddenly heard.

Surprised, he turned his head around to look. His mouth nearly dropped to the floor.

The police beauty was actually riding on that motorcycle that was dropped to the side. Surprisingly, the motorcycle could still run. She was going through the narrow gaps between the cars and chasing after Liu Yi.

What the shit... are you fucking kidding me?!

Is this woman even human?! So even managed to do such a thing!

The construction of that motorcycle was too fucking good!

Feeling a numbing sensation on his back, Liu Yi promptly continued to jump over cars at a lightning speed. He tried his best to choose paths where the motorcycle can't drive through.

There's a bunch of cars crammed ahead, there's not a single bit of space for the motorcycle, I could definitely throw off Yuan Zhenyue through here!

Liu Yi took a deep breath, he increased his running speed, and with a kick of his legs, jumped onto the closest car in front of him.

"Thump thump thump!"

Liu Yi's legs stepped on the roof of the cars incessantly, he was running on top of the cars.

Immediately, Liu Yi's actions brought forth cursing and scolding from all of the drivers.

However, Liu Yi didn't have time to care for them, running away was the priority.

The rumbling noise of the motorcycle grew louder and louder from behind him....

No matter how fast he ran, he's still unable to compare against a motorcycle.

However, with this pack of cars blocking the road, even if you're the special forces, it'd still be impossible for you to get past them!

Right when Liu Yi was pondering, he suddenly heard even more scolding and cursing from behind him.

Subconsciously, he turned his head around. He saw Yuan Zhenyue pulling the body of the motorcycle up like pulling the reins of a horse. She lifted the front of the motorcycle up and then started to drive on top of the shorter cars.

The motorcycle had quite a bit of horsepower. Immediately, it was already gushing toward Liu Yi while driving on top of rows upon rows of cars.

Liu Yi was standing there completely stunned. He was staring blankly at Yuan Zhenyue riding the bicycle and landing in front of him from the sky.

“Thump!”

The motorcycle heavily landed. With one leg on the ground while pressing the brake, Yuan Zhenyue did a circle with the motorcycle before stopping in front of Liu Yi.

“Little bastard, you dared run away from the people’s police!”

Said Yuan Zhenyue to Liu Yi proudly after jumping down from the bike.

“You... really are a police officer?... You sure you’re not a violent gangster?...”

Liu Yi was dumbstruck.

“Humph, if I let you escape, then how the hell could I still be considered a police?!”

Said Yuan Zhenyue as she glared at Liu Yi.

“But... what about that bag snatcher?”

Said Liu Yi as he pointed at that silhouette from where they previously stood that’s currently slowly climbing up.

“Ah! Shit!”

Yuan Zhenyue immediately anxiously covered her mouth. “I’m royally fucked

now... shit... that bag snatcher fled, the bag snatcher also ran away... what's the use if all I have is you as the witness?... I'm really going to be sacked this time around..."

She once again jumped on the motorcycle. However, luck wasn't on her side this time around as the motorcycle stalled. It didn't run no matter how many times she twist the accelerator.

Yuan Zhenyue kicked the motorcycle aside, she was so angry that her chest was trembling.

"You came to me because you wanted me to be your witness?"

Surprised, Liu Yi looked at Yuan Zhenyue.

"You don't say! Why else would I need you? Dating?!"

Yuan Zhenyue gave Liu Yi a large side glance.

"There's no need anymore... the bag snatcher had fled, I might as well just send in my resignation letter..."

"You don't need to resign."

Said Liu Yi suddenly.

"What you said? It's not like what you said will change anything, you're not our bureau chief!"

Yuan Zhenyue watched the bag snatcher off at the distant limply trying to run away to the other direction. Unable to help herself, she sighed.

"Better I chase after him myself!"

“I’ll help you.”

Liu Yi thought that should the bag snatcher run away, he’s certainly part of the cause.

Although this female police officer was a bit too swift and fierce and a bit dangerous, she’s still very righteous.

Grandfather had said that one must live righteously!

Yuan Zhenyue is currently in a crisis that had to do with me, I cannot just sit here and watch and not do anything about it.

“Idiot! You’re meddling in other people’s business again!”

Although Lin Tong had only been sealed in Liu Yi’s body for two days, but toward Liu Yi’s character, she was very familiar with it through the countless headache she received.

This matter was clearly very troublesome. The currently troubles Liu Yi had was already a lot, isn’t this just self afflicting pain?!

“I can’t just ignore it...”

Said Liu Yi. “Otherwise, I’ll despise myself!”

As he said that, he took a couple breathes and did a few of the breathing technique.

His mind instantly became a lot more clear.

What surprised Liu Yi at this moment was that the white stream of qi suddenly started flowing within his body. It infused through each and every one of his muscles and bones.

The instant it did that, Liu Yi suddenly felt that his power had increased a lot!

And Lin Tong who was hanging on his neck was slightly surprised as she feel all this happening.

It seems that when Liu Yi's sense of justice surges, the immortal power that Gu Yu left behind in his body would resonate with his sense of justice and started moving about!

This immortality power was a bit stronger than the demonic power that Liu Yi cultivates. Moreover, Lin Tong discovered that along with Liu Yi's demonic power's increase, the immortal power also followed as if competing!

What kind of situation is this... the Heavenly Fox Heart Mantra that Liu Yi practices was undoubtedly the canon of the demon race...

But, why is it that even immortal power increased?

This situation is so very strange...

Liu Yi's condition caused the little fox Lin Tong to grow more and more confused.

She began to ponder if her bringing to Liu Yi into the path of cultivation was a correct choice or a mistake, good fortune or a calamity.

However, regardless of the outcome, Lin Tong wanted to continue on.

She also began to become curious. If Liu Yi were to continue his cultivation, what exactly would he become in the end?

Would he become an unparalleled master?

At this moment, Lin Tong seemed to have forgotten about the whole matter of



her breaking away from her seal.

Liu Yi felt that his whole body was currently as lithe as a swallow. Borrowing the power that had arrived out of nowhere, he fiercely leaped out.

A gust of wind ran past through the top of a couple cars.

This time when Liu Yi stepped on the car roofs, there's unexpectedly no sound at all. His body was light as a feather. Like a dragonfly touching the water lightly, he rushed toward the bag snatcher that's running away limping.

None of the drivers were aware of what happened. They only sensed that someone flashed past their faces before disappearing.

They thought that they were dazzled.

However, Yuan Zhenyue was able to see it clearly. Liu Yi suddenly disappeared from next to her and then ran very far in a blink of an eye. He was running toward that bag snatcher.

"This guy... runs very fast!"

Could it be that he's a sports student?

He's also very nimble, maybe he's also a gymnastic student.

Yuan Zhenyue began to guess what Liu Yi does.

Right when she was still guessing, Liu Yi had already arrived behind the bag snatcher.

"Don't, don't come near me!"

The bag snatcher turned around and saw that Liu Yi had arrived behind him.

Scared, he immediately started shouting.

The fight between Liu Yi and that beautiful policewoman earlier was clearly seen by him.

“Give yourself up, what awaits you will be the law... right, the severe sanctions of the law!”

Said Liu Yi as he tried to copy what Yuan Zhenyue had said earlier.

“Fuck! You’re not even a cop, the hell are you trying to act all heroic for?!”

The bag snatching thief was unable to help himself and cursed.

Hey!

Liu Yi started to frown.

This dude’s hand was still tied behind him. He’s walking all limp and shit. When he saw Yuan Zhenyue, he was scared to death. Does he think that I, Liu Yi, am easy to bully?!

“Break his legs so that he can’t flee!”

Shouted Lin Tong. She immediately grew angry when she heard that Liu Yi was scolded.

“No need for that... that’s too savage...”

Liu Yi immediately shook his head. “Is there a way that’s a bit more peaceful?”

“Cheh... violence to curb violence, what’s wrong with that?...”

“Then what’s the difference between me and this bag snatcher?! I want a

peaceful and affectionate method!”

“You piece of work...”

Although Lin Tong was scolding at him, she still floated to the front of Liu Yi and ruthlessly bit his nose.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 41

“Kacha!”

It hurted so much that Liu Yi was about to cry.

However, there’s no results! No new techniques appeared in Liu Yi’s head.

“Why isn’t there any technique?!”

“Idiot!”

Shouted Lin Tong. “The second palm strike of your Great Brilliant Sun Palm, you received that knowledge!”

“My power... didn’t I not have enough power to execute the second palm strike?”

Hurriedly asked Liu Yi.

“Of course you’re unable to fully execute the power of the second palm but the amount that you could execute, it most likely would still have some effect on regular people.”

“Okay, let me try it out...”

Liu Yi nodded, he felt that it’s certainly right to listen to Lin Tong.

The methods for the second palm strike appeared in his mind. Liu Yi tried to operate it in his palm. Sure enough, his power was unable to completely execute the second palm strike.

However, he continued to do as Lin Tong directed and rushed to the front of the

bag snatcher.

“Hit him directly in the heart, otherwise, your palm strike would have no effect!”

Shouted Lin Tong.

“Understood!”

“Get the fuck away from me bitch!”

Seeing Liu Yi who’s meddling in other’s business, the bag snatcher immediately grew angry.

He was thinking that this fucking student was being way too fucking cocky!

Afterall, I am a bag snatching thief. It’s one thing for the police to bully me. But you? Who the fuck do you think you are?!

This thief raged from his heart and loathed from his guts. He stood there with his hands behind him and then threw a kick directly toward Liu Yi’s abdomen.

However, Liu Yi was able to even dodge the police beauty’s fists, so how would he possibly be hit by this guy’s kick?

Using the Spirit Fox Steps on his legs, he slightly moved sliding past that thief’s foot and dodged the kick. He then reappeared in front of the thief.

Liu Yi’s left palm landed on that thief’s chest.

“Thump!”

The thief was knocked back a couple steps. Then, feeling that his sight had turned black and a chill running through his whole body, his legs immediately grew soft.

With a pop sound, he sank to his knees. The corner of mouth twitched multiple times.

Liu Yi's palm strike had blocked the blood vessels of that bag snatcher causing his heart to stop for two seconds.

Although it's only two seconds, it's nevertheless fatal,

The blood within the thief temporarily stopped circulating. Without blood circulation, there was insufficient blood supply to his brain causing him to enter hypoxia and powerlessly falling onto the ground.

Even after Yuan Zhenyue managed to come over, the bag snatcher still didn't have the strength to get back up.

"Puff..."

Liu Yi let out a deep breath.

The second strike was called Vein Seal. With Liu Yi's power, he almost used all of his power in order to execute this strike.

Not only that thief, Liu Yi was also currently somewhat feeling weak in his knees.

Had the white stream of qi not been constantly circulating through his body and replenishing his physical strength, Liu Yi felt that he'll really have fallen to his buttocks.

This white stream of qi was truly strange. It's obviously an evil power yet it provided assistance during the most crucial moments.

It seems that techniques that surpasses one's strength... was best not be used easily.

It's like being only half alive. Right now, even breathing cause Liu Yi to feel pain in the heart.

It must be that when the power's too great, it creates a burden to the heart.

"Humph, now you know, idiot."

Lin Tong laid on top of Liu Yi's head. She humphed and said. "If you didn't want your enemy to be injured, then you'll be feeling the pain!"

"So that's the case..."

Liu Yi nodded.

"You must be ruthless toward your enemy!"

Lin Tong continued. "If you refuse to hurt others, then they'll hurt you! Today is a small lesson! Because you forced yourself to use a move that's beyond your level, you've received a little bit of internal injury. Had you listened to me and break this man's leg, then you wouldn't have received injuries!"

"It doesn't matter. I'm a man. This tiny bit of injury is nothing."

Said Liu Yi with a complacent smile.

"Liu Yi! You're a huge idiot!"

Lin Tong shrieked. "This lady will no longer bother with you!"

After saying those words, Lin Tong's fox silhouette flashed past and disappeared into Liu Yi's chest.

Liu Yi was surprised, he didn't understand why Lin Tong suddenly grew angry.

What's wrong with big sister fox immortal?...

It's the first time I saw her being this angry!

"What did you do to him?"

Yuan Zhenyue walked forward and examined the thief that's kneeling on the ground. She discovered that he was twitching all over and with pale lips like he's having a seizure. She immediately turned around and asked Liu Yi inquisitively.

"I don't know, I just casually struck him with my fist and he became like that..."

Liu Yi didn't know how to explain so he decided to act stupid.

"Strange... are you really an ordinary student?"

Asked Yuan Zhenyue.

"Of course I am, here's my student ID!"

Said Liu Yi as he promptly pointed at the card that's hanging on his chest.

"A student from One Mid?"

Yuan Zhenyue saw the tiny number plate on Liu Yi's chest.

"Your name is Liu Yi?"

"That's right... police officer sister... I'm not a bad person... I can help you and be your witness..."

"That's the best."



Yuan Zhenyue felt relieved.

With him as the witness and with the thief still captured, the matter had indeed become a lot simpler.

Although she had caused some needless damages, however, it's after all in order to catch a thief...

"Although you're a bit of a pervert, you're nature is still pretty righteous."

Said Yuan Zhenyue all seriously. "Student Liu...Yi, that habit of yours is not good. You must change that. I don't wish to capture you as a sex criminal in the future."

"Earlier, it, it really wasn't on purpose..."

"However, I also understand that when boys like you see a girl as beautiful as myself, it's obvious that you're unable to control yourself. Those who pursue me from my unit were also numerous. Therefore, I understand. However, in order to pursue a girl, you must have a method. Using this kind of dirty tricks was something that you cannot do..."

Liu Yi got a headache listening to her.

This Yuan Zhenyue... is a huge narcissist...

As Yuan Zhenyue continued to chatter away, the other police have arrived.

A man who appeared to be the leader called Yuan Zhenyue over and then started violently scolding her.

Other police have also arrived and took Liu Yi aside to do a police report.

The report took a long time. After all the basic questions were asked, Liu Yi

looked at the time. Holy shit, it's ten something.

It's about to be noon and the students would have been dismissed from class then, I don't want to be a promise breaker.

How could I still show my face in school in the future if I did that?

"Mister police uncle... can I leave now?"

Carefully asked Liu Yi.

"Sure. We have your cellphone number, if there's anything else, we will contact you. We hope that you will cooperate with us."

The young police in charge of writing the report said with a smile. "You still have school right? You should quickly go to school. If you were to be yelled by your teacher for being late, just have your teacher call our department, we'll prove that you were here."

"Ah, thank you mister police uncle!"

Dark lines suddenly appeared on the young police officer's face.

[TL: not sure how to describe dark lines. This is shown all the time in anime.

[http://img22.mtime.cn/up/2011/02/11/111431.30704517\\_500.jpg](http://img22.mtime.cn/up/2011/02/11/111431.30704517_500.jpg)]

"I'm not that old..."

"That big sister Yuan Zhenyue... is she going to be alright?"

Liu Yi glanced at the police beauty that's currently being yelled at. He grew a bit concerned and asked.

"....."

The amount of dark lines on the young police's face increased.

Yuan Zhenyue is big sister, but I am uncle...

Isn't this difference a bit too big?...

"Regarding her... you don't have to worry. She's not likely to have a serious demerit. However, she's certainly going to receive disciplinary actions."

"Ah? She was trying to catch the bag snatcher."

Liu Yi said. "Catching the bag snatcher is a good thing, doing good things shouldn't be getting punished, right?"

"She is a people's police, catching scoundrel is her duty."

The young police informed Liu Yi. "However, even as a people's police, one cannot disturb the public security of the society just to enforce the law. The way she does handled matters were not appropriate. However, you don't have to worry. This top police beauty Yuan Zhenyue was already used to being punished. You better hurry up and go to school, if you don't then I won't testify for you."

"Ah, alright then... good bye mister police uncle..."

Liu Yi was still worried about Yuan Zhenyue. Yuan Zhenyue was a righteous person; Liu Yi didn't want to see a righteous person being punished.

He departed from the young police officer whose face was covered with veins by running. As he ran, he softly asked.

"Big sister fox immortal... say, do you think that big sister Yuan Zhenyue did was wrong?"

Lin Tong was currently staying in Liu Yi's Spirit Knowledge Field and completely ignoring him.

"Why is big sister fox immortal angry at me..."

Liu Yi rubbed his head, he was very confused.

However, he currently didn't have the time to stop running and enter the Spirit Knowledge Field to ask about it. Almost late for school, better run first, I can ask Lin Tong about what happened after I arrived at school.

Liu Yi didn't bother to think anymore, he proceeded to focus only on getting to school.

"Sis Die, your Liu Yi didn't show up this morning!"

After the end of the third class, Wang Lele finally cannot bear and asked. "He couldn't have got himself into a car accident midway right?!"

"Stupid girl, what nonsense are you sprouting! Big mouth!"

Murong Die glared at Wang Lele. "Also, what's with 'my' Liu Yi. Speak nonsense again and I'll rip your mouth open!"

"Hee hee, Sis Die definitely aren't willing to tear my mouth open!"

Said Wang Lele while laughing with a hee hee sound.

"If you were to rip my mouth open, then who would chat with Sis Die?"

"Stupid girl, only your mouth is powerful!"

Murong Die lightly pushed Wang Lele and pouted. "Had you been a guy, then I fear that there will be numerous girls that's tricked by your mouth! At the end,

they'll all die from grief!"

"How could that be?!"

Wang Lele hee hee laughed. "I'm not going to be a dude, if I'm a dude, then how could the rest of the guys have girls to pursue, all of them would've been mine!"

As she said, she stretched out her hand and hooked Murong Die's smooth chin.

"If I am a dude, then little girl, you'll be mine."

"Scram, go away, I knew that you'll be messing around!"

Murong Die slapped away Wang Lele's bad behaving hand.

Right when the two girls were messing around with each other, Lan He who sat on the other side suddenly stood up and said loudly.

"Murong Die, look at this! That guy that you liked is a coward, a huge coward!"

He was feeling very pleased. He was thinking that although he didn't know why Kevin didn't show up today, however, with Ma Wei of the Black Dragon Gang, that Liu Yi was certainly going to have a major bloodletting. He likely won't be able to show his face today.

With the time of the decisive battle coming up, tsk tsk, never had I expected that this would feel this great!

Lan He smiled at Murong Die proudly. He was thinking that Liu Yi was going to lose big today!

This is what happens when you go up against this Young Master Lan!

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 42

“Who does Liu Yi think he was to try to compete in basketball with I, Lan He. You see that? He’s already scared and didn’t dare to come! Seems like I would win this competition without even fighting.”

Lan He had his hands crossed. He had a somewhat disgusting complacent smile on his face.

Murong Die was in somewhat of a bad mood.

“Lan He, don’t you feel so satisfied just yet. It’s only ten thirty right now, there’s still a class before the afternoon dismissal.”

“He hasn’t show up for three whole classes, how would he possibly show up for the last class?”

Lan He laughed heartily. “Oh Murong Die, I really am a bit disappointed with you this time around, You really had made a wrong judgement; what is there that’s good about that Liu Yi? He’s totally a coward. It’s better for you to be with me, Lan He. Only I, Lan He, could match a miss from an affluent family like you. Tell me guys, don’t you think so too?”

Lan He asked his gang of scoundrels by him.

“That’s for certain!”

“Our young master Lan is being too modest, you and Miss Murong are completely a match made in heaven, an ideal couple!”

“That’s right, that’s right, who the hell do that Liu Yi think he is?!”

Those couple students who had always follow behind Lan He kissing his ass

immediately started to parrot his words.

Murong Die and Wang Lele both start to feel disgusted.

These students... they don't even have the manner of students anymore.

School was supposed to be a place that's uninfected by the unhealthy habits of society. However these students, they were flattering and fawning, frivolous and cunning, bully the weak and afraid of the strong, they were no different from those cunning people in the society.

"Oh Murong Die, I am really curious about your taste."

Right when the bell signaling the start of the class was about to ring, Ma Yixuan who was on the side suddenly stood up and shouted.

"That Liu Yi had chased after me undyingly for an extremely long time yet I don't even find him worthy. Never had I expected that our Miss Murong unexpectedly have an unique taste."

As a daughter of an affluent family and having extremely beautiful appearance, Murong Die was the idol of the school.

Ma Yixuan had already considered herself to be very beautiful, but when compared with Murong Die... she's nothing but a side dish.

All the attentiveness and gaze of the boys were basically all landing on Murong Die.

That was something that Ma Yixuan hated a lot. Using this opportunity, she immediately came out and started ridiculing Murong Die to raise her own position.

"Since when does this lady's foresight and taste become something for you to

judge?!”

Murong Die’s brows slightly creased. She started to display her missy temper.

“Ma Yixuan, who do you think you are?”

“Murong Die, what are you pretending about?!”

Ma Yixuan’s cheeks immediately grew sullen the moment she heard Murong Die’s words. She straightened herself and scolded. “Aren’t you only a bit rich at home? The hell are you trying to pretend as in school?! If you have the ability, why don’t you go to those school for the rich? The hell are you pretending to be miss high and mighty in One Mid for?!”

“Ma Yixuen, you’re lucky that Liu Yi liked you for this long.”

Wang Lele pulled Murong Die and then said very fiercely. “He didn’t manage to woo you was his fortune as you’re nothing more than a vixen!”

“Wang Lele, you dare say that again?!”

Ma Yixuan’s little flame immediately started to burn. “I will tear your mouth to pieces!”

“Sis Die, she wanted to tear my mouth to pieces!”

Wang Lele didn’t bother to take Ma Yixuan seriously. She heard Ma Yixuan’s threat but instead only looked toward Murong Die and laughed.

“She won’t dare, she’s all bark and no bite. It’s fine, Lele, just imagine her to be a barking dog.”

“Okay, I’ll do as Sis Die said!”



Wang Lele gracefully nodded.

“You guys have balls!”

Ma Yixuan was so angry that her lung was about to burst from anger.

To be honest, she really didn't dare to do anything to Murong Die.

The young miss of the Murong family, was that someone that she could possibly take on?

However, Ma Yixuan was also not someone that's good to anger!

Who is she? She's the school's Little Overlord, Yuan Shaojun's girlfriend!

Mentioning it, that Yuan Shaojun's appearance... was indeed a little bit unbearable to look at.

However, when he asked Ma Yixuan out, she still accepted without the slightest hesitation.

Why? That's because Yuan Shaojun is the school's Little Overlord! He steadily ruled over the school.

To be his girlfriend was possess both reputation and might!

The students in the school, all had to look up to her and none of them dared to provoke her!

Ma Yixuan enjoyed this sensation a lot. The person she admired the most was no other than Daji who caused massive damage to the country and suffering to the people.

[TL: Daji is a mythical fox spirit and concubine of the last Shang Dynasty Emperor

Zhou Xin.]

Never had she ever imagined that a woman had the power to topple over a whole nation!

She wanted to become a woman like that!

That Liu Yi, although he was very sincere toward her and was pretty good, but what benefit is there in dating him?

Going to school together? Studying together?

Stop joking around!

This Murong Die dared to humiliate me like this, I'm going to find Yuan Shaojun and make her pay.

So what if she's the daughter of an affluent family? This One Mid was the territory of my hubby, Yuan Shaojun.

"Murong Die, Wang Lele, I'm advising you two to be careful when walking in the school at night!"

Ma Yixuan left threatening words.

"Oh? Are you threatening me?"

Murong Die suddenly started to laugh, her laughing appearance was especially beautiful.

However, Wang Lele was standing there blinking her eyes. She didn't dare to say anything.

That's because she knew that Murong Die rarely laughs and that whenever she

laughs, it's certainly not for a happy occasion!

The Murong family was especially doted on their daughter. Since when she was a child, Murong Die was able to get whatever she wants.

Although Ma Lele also possesses some temperament of a princess... but when compared to Murong Die's, hers was nowhere comparable!

Murong Die, she acted like a real princess!

Once her princess temperament surges... someone was certainly going to suffer a calamity.

It's done for, Ma Yixuan was certainly going to be doomed.

"Yeah I'm threatening you, what about it?!"

Ma Yixuan had her arms crossed. She stood there like a proud peacock. "Don't you forget whose territory One Mid was!"

Murong Die was extremely angry; how could there be a woman like that?!

Hugging the thigh of a school punk thinking that she's grand and heroic!

Liu Yi's eyes were really grown all the way on his foot, how could he fancy a woman like this?!

Right when Murong Die was about to say something, the class starting bell suddenly rang.

The Old Literature Teacher was very punctual and walked in holding books and pushing his eyeglass with his finger.

Wang Lele promptly pulled her Sis Die, she was afraid that Murong Die would

not even give the teacher any respect and start arguing with Ma Yixuan.

However, Murong Die was in a major bad mood, she didn't even care about the appearance of the literature old man!

Even if it was the principle, she still wouldn't care.

However soon after, another figure appeared followed the Old Literature Teacher in. This man was staggering and almost run into the Old Literature Teacher.

Seeing this figure, Murong Die's eyes suddenly slightly flashed.

As for Lan He who was sitting, he immediately stood up and cried in surprise. "Impossible!"

"What's impossible?"

The Old Literature Teacher looked at Lan He in confusion.

"No,nothing... hello teacher."

Lan He gave an awkward laugh. All kinds of suspicions flashed through his eyes. He then slowly sit back down.

Then the Old Literature Teacher's gaze landed on Liu Yi.

This Liu Yi was in an even more sorry state than yesterday!

He's even wearing last year's uniform, the sleeves and pants were clearly a chunk shorter!

"Say, classmate Liu Yi, what are you cosplaying today?!"

The Old Literature Teacher teased. “You arrived so late today too, could it be that you spent a whole morning preparing your outfit?”

“No,no...”

Liu Yi immediately rubbed the back of his head in embarrassment, he then explained. “I washed my uniform last night...it’s still not dry yet! Teacher, I had already requested a leave of absence from the the Classroom Teacher!”

Seeing that he had enough time when he arrived, Liu Yi went to the Classroom Teacher’s office and explained himself.

He didn’t want the Classroom Teacher to not know what happened, get angry and then call his parents...

If that were to happen, then he’d be in a miserable state!

When the Classroom Teacher heard Liu Yi’s explanation, he didn’t believe him at all. However after he called the local police station and verified Liu Yi’s story, he then let him off.

From the Classroom Teacher’s point of view, an ordinary student like Liu Yi was not supposed to be pulled into strange occurrences.

“So that’s the case, then you can go back and have your seat.”

The Old Literature Teacher was in a rush to get the class going and didn’t bother to make things difficult for Liu Yi. He nodded and allowed him to return to his seat.

Liu Yi had a sigh of relief and prepared to return to his seat.

However, Wang Lele suddenly started to scream.

“Aiyo Aiyo... teacher... teacher, my stomach hurts...”

Wang Lele’s loud scream had scared both the teacher and the students.

The Literature Teacher face was covered in cold sweat, he didn’t know what trouble this baffoon Wang Lele was planning to bring this time.

Even though he’s a teacher, he’s still not someone who would dare to do anything in the school...

At the very least, he knew that there are some students within the school that he must not anger. Wang Lele was one of them.

“Teacher... it’s alright, it might be my appendicitis acting up again... boohoo, it hurts...”

Wang Lele tried her hardest to force some tears out. Unfortunately, her tears refused to be obedient.

Seeing Wang Lele’s indicating with her eyes and brows, the Old Literature Teacher started to feel a numb up his back.

“How about... you find a student to help carry you to the hospital?...”

The Old Literature Teacher knew that Wang Lele was most definitely planning to skip class. As she was the type of student that cannot be angered, he figured that he might as well help her accomplish her goal.

“Yes, that’s it; teacher, you’re so nice to me!”

Wang Lele was immediately beaming with happiness. There was not even a hint of being in pain.

“Then let’s have Liu Yi take me there. He’s fast.”

The Old Literature Teacher didn't understand how Liu Yi would be fast when he's that thin and weak.

However, he wanted to quickly send off this buffoon known as Wang Lele. Thus, he waved his hand and said.

"Yes yes, Liu Yi, you take Wang Lele to the hospital."

"Eh... alright."

Liu Yi, without any better option, stood back up.

Although he had an appointment with Lan He, however Wang Lele's appendicitis acting up was no trivial matter. He had to quickly carry Wang Lele to the hospital.

However, Lan He sat on his seat and sneered.

"Haha... seems like you've already planned this... Liu Yi oh Liu Yi, I underestimated you, you're pretty cunning. However, I, Lan He, still look down upon you."

"Lan He, I will see you in the basketball court."

Hearing Lan He's words, Liu Yi immediately was set into a bad mood.

"After school at noon, you will see me on schedule in the school's basketball court. He who doesn't show up is a coward!"

After saying those, under the somewhat surprised gaze from Lan He, he walked next to Wang Lele.

"Classmate Wang Lele, let's go. Appendicitis is no minor illness, I will carry you to

the hospital as quickly as possible!”

The Little Fox Lin Tong’s voice suddenly sounded from within Liu Yi’s mind.

“Idiot!”



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 43

Liu Yi was stunned for a bit. He didn't know why Big Sister Fox Immortal would scold him and then stop saying anything after scolding him.

However, as he was in front of all the students, he cannot just mumble to himself and start asking Lin Tong.

And at this moment, Wang Lele secretly turned around and made a fist toward her Sis Die.

Murong Die also lightly nodded to her. She was indicating that she did a good job.

Those little movements of these two girls were unable to escape Lan He's eyes.

Lan He wasn't a fool, immediately he was burning with jealousy.

It seemed that this Liu Yi really don't know what happened. Rather, it's Murong Die who was trying to protect him!

Initially he thought that Liu Yi was just an unlucky fool that had been used as a screen by Murong Die. However, now it appears that she truly had some interest in this guy!

Fuck! I'm fucking Young Master Lan He, how the fuck did a dumbass common student managed to defeat me?!

Lan He was furious!

However, Liu Yi had said to meet up at the basketball court!

If he's still man enough, then he'll likely return!

Lan He decided to wait at the basketball court and then fiercely humiliate and teach him a lesson!

A fucking poor loser dared to try to make shit difficult for me?!

I, the great Young Master Lan He, will fuck him up!

“Let’s go... it really hurts a lot...”

Wang Lele winked at Liu Yi. “I, Wang Lele’s life is all on your hands now...”

“Rest assured!”

Liu Yi and Wang Lele walked out of the classroom in front of all the students’ gazes.

When they walked out to the unmanned hallway, Wang Lele suddenly held her stomach and crouched onto the ground.

“Aiyo, I can’t... I, I can’t move anymore... it hurts...”

She was squeezing her brows and pretending to be in pain.

Wang Lele was thinking to herself. ‘Sis Die, in order to delay Liu Yi, I, Wang Lele, would have to sacrifice my sex appeal!’

In a battle of sex appeal, I, Wang Lele, fear no one!

In order to make Sis Die happy, I’m giving it my all!

“Ah? Then what do we do? Let me go find someone for you!”

Liu Yi had never encountered this kind of situation before. He was confused as to

what to do.

He believed that his Breathing Technique might be able to help. However, other than cultivators, regular people were unable to do the Breathing Technique.

Sigh, if only Wang Lele was also a cultivator!

“Don’t, don’t... I’m afraid that I can’t last any longer...”

Wang Lele promptly grabbed Liu Yi’s arms and said.

“How about... you carry me on your back to the hospital?!”

If he carries me, Liu Yi is certainly going to be slower!

In that case, the amount of time I would be able to delay would be even greater!

“Ah?”

Liu Yi was dumbfounded.

No matter what... Wang Lele was still a girl.

Carrying a girl over his back... more or less, Liu Yi would be embarrassed.

“What, what are you being embarrassed about?!”

Wang Lele saw Liu Yi’s expression and started getting angry. “I, Wang Lele, should be the one being embarrassed!”

“No... it’s that... men and women should not touch hands when they give or receive things...”

When Liu Yi said those words, his face was slightly red.

He remembered the scene from last night when he helped Ma Yuanyuan put on her sanitary pad.

“My ass... what kind of situation is it now?! Furthermore, it’s not something that you should be the one saying.”

Wang Lele felt that she’s about to really get stomach pain from all the anger.

This Liu Yi was truly a huge idiot.

“If you’re not going to carry me, then I will just die here!”

After saying those words, Wang Lele leaned against the wall and squatted down. She wasn’t moving one bit.

While squatting against the wall was not a serious matter, but her chest immediately came flying out of her shirt collar.

A deep ravine appeared in front of Liu Yi.

Blood rushed into Liu Yi’s head and toward his nose. He almost started to have a huge nosebleed.

Shit... when have I ever received such an impact?...

That Wang Lele’s chest... the scale was just a bit too astonishing...

No wonder her stomach hurts. With such a large pair of boobs crushing it, how could it not hurt?...

“Boohooohoo, it hurts. Let me die from the pain then, no one would care about it anyways...”

Said Wang Lele casually. Clearly she had not noticed that her boobs were exposed. She was even rubbing her dry eyes.

“Boohooohoo, Wang Lele is so pitiful. No one cares or loves her. She’s about to die in school...”

Liu Yi currently felt as though his head could explode.

Only with great difficulty did he managed to stop his nose from bleeding. And now, he started to have a slight headache.

Wang Lele was truly a buffoon.

Without any better option, Liu Yi squatted back and showed his thin and weak back to Wang Lele.

“What, what are you doing?”

Wang Lele was shocked. She faked crying for a long time and almost actually entered her acting.

“Come up, I’ll carry you there.”

“Humph humph, that’s more like it!”

Wang Lele’s stratagem was a success. She secretly did a victory sign and then climbed up Liu Yi’s back.

Two large balls of softness immediately pressed down on Liu Yi’s back.

Immediately, Liu Yi’s blood started to flow faster.

God damn...

This is going to kill someone...

I would rather fight with Yuan Zhenyue again...

Now, this...

The red stream of qi within Liu Yi's body started to flow very fast. As if provoked by the red stream of qi, the white stream of qi also started to flow.

After Wang Lele got on his back, Liu Yi subconsciously extended his hand and grasped Wang Lele's ample thighs.

Now, all of Wang Lele's weight were crushing on Liu Yi.

Her soft chests had also changed into a crushed appearance as they were squeezed between her and Liu Yi.

However, Wang Lele was truly carefree. She didn't feel the slightest of embarrassment.

She was even afraid that she'll slip off. She extended her arms and tightly grasped around Liu Yi's neck.

"Are, are you sure you can do it?... Your physique is so small, don't drop me!"

"Rest assured... I'm fine..."

Currently, Liu Yi had two streams of qi circulating through his body and his first Star Jade was also opened. Thus, carrying Wang Lele was not a problem.

Even though Wang Lele's chest are very big, she wasn't very heavy.

It seems like she's only about a hundred pounds.

“Am I too heavy?”

Asked Wang Lele.

“A little bit, but it’s okay, I can preserve.”

Replied Liu Yi honestly.

“You! I will crush you to death! Crush you to death!”

Hearing Liu Yi calling her heavy, Wang Lele immediately grew angry. With her arms around Liu Yi’s neck, she ruthlessly put more pressure on him a couple times.

Liu Yi’s legs grew heavier. However, the qi on his legs mobilized and helped him support his body.

This Wang Lele was too unruly!

Furthermore... she’s way too careless...

With those couple times she tried to crush him, Liu Yi obtained an even better and more real sensation of her boobs...

Oh Heavens, it’s going to kill someone!

“You dared say that this lady is heavy!”

“It’s clearly you who said that...”

Liu Yi didn’t know why Wang Lele was angry. He wanted to cry but had no tears.

“Humph, you dared to call me heavy! So what if my breasts are big? I’m only a little bit heavier than Sis Die, okay?!”

Wang Lele blurted out. “What, could it be that you detest us big boobed women? In that case I’ll curse that you’ll find a woman with bigger boobs than me in the future, humph!”

The heck, detest?... I’d be super freaking glad.

Unable to help himself, Liu Yi started to laugh in his mind at how frank and foolish Wang Lele was.

This chick is too interesting.

“Your stomach don’t hurt anymore?”

“I had forgotten but now that you mentioned it... aiyo aiyo... it started hurting again...”

Wang Lele immediately started behaving better. She laid on Liu Yi’s back and continued to scream in pain.

Liu Yi shook his head. This chick.

However, appendicitis is a pretty major issue, hopefully she’s okay.

Liu Yi carried Wang Lele on his back and, with an agile pace, quickly ran downstairs.

When he walked out of the school gate, Liu Yi saw the coming and going cars and said.

“Wang Lele, do you have any money on you? The amount of money on me... wasn’t enough for a taxi...”

There is no public bus around here that would directly bring them to the



hospital. Taking a taxi is the fastest way to get there.

“I don’t!”

Wang Lele promptly responded.

“Ah? What do we do then?...”

Taking a taxi to the closest hospital would likely cost over ten yuans!

Liu Yi is broke as hell, he didn’t have that much money... all he had in his pocket was seven yuan.

He don’t have enough money to take a taxi...

“Just carry me on your back like this and we can slowly walk to the hospital...”

Said Wang Lele.

“No, your health is more important, we cannot be delay!”

Liu Yi resolutely refused. “Moreover, I still have a match with Lan He, I don’t want to be a deserter!”

After saying those words, Liu Yi took two deep breaths.

He started to circulate the power of the Spirit Fox Steps onto his legs.

While carrying Wang Lele, Liu Yi started to run with large strides.

Liu Yi’s running speed wasn’t slow. Seeing the ever passing scenery, Wang Lele suddenly cried out in surprised.

“Liu Yi, you’re crazy! How could you be able to run to the hospital? You’ll die

from overexhaustation!”

“Rest assured! I can do it!”

Liu Yi adjusted his breathing and then said. “Believe in me, I will certainly carry you to the hospital with the fastest speed!”

“You, are you an idiot?!”

Wang Lele watched how Liu Yi was desperately carrying her as he ran and started to immediately have a sensation of wanting to cry.

If this continues, could she still be able to accomplish the mission given by Murong Die?

Even if Liu Yi managed to run to the hospital and then back to the basketball court, he’ll likely be tired as hell!

In that case, won’t it be even easier for Lan He to beat him?!

How could that be allowed?!

“You, you really wanted to compete with Lan He?”

“That’s right! We had already arranged it!”

Liu Yi remembered the arrogant Lan He from yesterday and immediately started to have all kinds of dissatisfaction in his heart. “I will show him that I, Liu Yi, am not a good for nothing! I must go to this basketball match no matter what!”

“You big fool, big idiot!”

Wang Lele was extremely anxious, was this Liu Yi stupid or what?!

“Do you know who Lan He was? He had played basketball since when he was a kid, okay? Furthermore, he’s the reserve for the powerful youth team. He’s awfully good at basketball! If you were to compete with him, isn’t that just seeking your own humiliation?”

Hearing what Wang Lele said, Liu Yi suddenly stopped running.

“What, you finally came around?”

Wang Lele was startled, she thought that Liu Yi had come to a realization.

“Fellow classmate Wang Lele, please take back your words.”

Liu Yi stood there. Word by word and said it seriously.

“I won’t take them back, what about it?!”

Wang Lele immediately gave Liu Yi a side glance. She thought to herself ‘This Liu Yi is rejecting the good intentions of others!’

“Fellow classmate Wang Lele, please understand.”

Liu Yi said loudly.” The match between Lan He and I is not a match about basketball. Rather, it’s about my dignity. If I were to not show up, then even I would look down upon myself afterwards. Therefore, this match, even if I were to lose, I would still want to lose beautifully!”

“You...”

Wang Lele suddenly was a bit dumbfounded.

This Liu Yi...

Is he really stupid... or, thoroughly stupid?...

“Dignity... is it something that you can eat?”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 44

“You cannot eat dignity.”

Liu Yi replied with absolute certainty. “But would you throw away your dignity just for food?”

“That, is hard to say!”

Wang Lele laid on Liu Yi’s back and had a finger on her rosy lips. She said.

“I’m a chowhound!”

“If you are starving to the point of dying and someone placed a bowl of rice in front of you. That person wanted you to get on your knees and kowtow. Would you do such a thing for that bowl of rice?”

“Jest, this lady is able bodied, furthermore I have boobs, why on earth must I beg?!”

Wang Lele gave Liu Yi a side glance. “I could earn my own money for food! Who would kneel down to him?!”

“You’re also not willing to throw away your dignity, why is it that you want me to throw away my dignity?”

“This... this is something that’s completely different!”

Wang Lele continued. “It’s for your own good that I don’t want you to compete with Lan He!”

She explained in a hurry. “He had played basketball ever since when he was a

child; you want to compete in basketball with him, isn't this the same as wielding the blade in front of Lord Guan?"

[TL: Lord Guan is Guan Yu. Guan Yu is the famous brother of Liu Bei from Three Kingdoms. Chinese people loved the dude's virtue and loyalty and turned the dude into a god → Lord Guan. Dude's also super good with them large polearm blade shit that they even changed the name of the weapon to Guan's Blade.]

"I am a man, a man must accept challenges."

Liu Yi continued to insist on his point of view. "My grandfather had said, a man can only bleed standing and not cry kneeling!"

"You... why are you so stubborn!"

"What do you mean by stubborn. My grandfather had said that this is called perseverance of the heart!"

"Fine, whatever, I'm not going to bother with you anymore, go and compete!"

Wang Lele swung her arms. She was truly unable to bother with this Liu Yi.

"Oh? Then what about your stomach? Didn't you have appendicitis?"

Asked Liu Yi as he continuously blinked his eyes.

"I don't have appendicitis! My stomach is fine, not even the great aunt came!"

[TL: remember, great aunt means period in Chinese.]

Yelled Wang Lele angrily.

"Ah? Then you..."

“I’m feigning illness to skip class, what about it?!”

“Ohhhh...”

Liu Yi finally saw the light of realization.

So that was the case... I even thought that Wang Lele really got sick.

“So you’re actually fine, that’s great! I thought that you are sick too!”

“You’re the one who’s sick, your whole family’s sick!”

Wang Lele was hugging Liu Yi’s back, she had an urge to choke him to death.

“Eh... let’s go back then.”

“You carry me back!”

Wang Lele laid on Liu Yi’s back and refused to get up.

Being carried by Liu Yi... was pretty comfortable.

“Aren’t you fine? You should walk on your own.”

“No! The nation have this policy, whoever causes the pollution must fix it! For the same reason, whoever carried me out must carry me back! Your back is so comfortable, as if I’m going to get off!”

“Hey hey hey... I’m not a man powered car!”

“You’re a lot more comfortable than a man powered car. Quick, go back! Hiya!”

Wang Lele stretched her hand out and gave Liu Yi's chest a hard slap.

Sigh, I'm really not a man powered car, she's treating me like a donkey!

Liu Yi shook his head, he helplessly carried the big boobed girl and started to run back toward the school.

"I have a little idiot that I would never ride! One day, prompted by a sudden impulse, I rode him to the market..."

The heartless and nitwitted girl had forgotten the mission Murong Die gave her and started to sing cheerfully.

Fuck, you're the little idiot...

Liu Yi continued to run depressedly.

And at this moment, the bell signaling the noon dismissal in One Mid had also rung.

Arrogantly, Lan He walked with a group of boot-licking students following behind him to the basketball court in the rear of the school.

Everyone from Liu Yi's class had also went there. Murong Die was also present. A group of boys that were trying to court her favor were following behind her.

She also didn't know why she came out, it's just that she had a slight bad feeling.

Logically, the plan that Wang Lele and I had... that kindhearted Liu Yi was certainly going to be fooled.

But why is it that my thoughts are in a mess?

"Haha, seems like Liu Yi was still a coward after all."



Said Lan He cool and arrogantly. He stood on the basketball court and held a basketball on his hand.

“As I said, he’s not stupid to compete with I, Lan He, in basketball. There’s not even a single person in this school that can win against this Lan He in basketball.”

“That’s right, that’s right. Young master Lan is the true slam dunk master!”

“Who would dared to compete with young master Lan on the basketball court? Isn’t that just seeking their own death?!”

The flock of students immediately started to flatter.

“Young master Lan, I reckon that fellow Liu Yi won’t dare to show up. Why don’t you show us a couple moves of your mastery? Give us a slam dunk!”

Laughed a student who knew how to flatter the best.

“That’s right, that’s right. Young master Lan, show us your move so that we can widen our horizons.”

The other people also start to copy-cat immediately.

“Haha, that’s also good”

Lan He took a glance at Murong Die. He said proudly.

“Lil Die, let me show you what a real man is!”

After he said those words, he started to dribble the basketball back and forth around his body, showing off.

His few footman immediately started to clap. A couple girls also screamed. At

this moment, Lan He grabbed the basketball with one hand and took two steps underneath the basket before jumping into the air.

As expected of Lan He who had originated from a basketball family, his sports talent was indeed good.

His jumping ability was also very good. With a single jump, he reached a height of close to a meter!

A regular male student could roughly jump around forty to eighty centimeters. Those who can jump higher than eighty centimeters are known to have outstanding jumping ability!

As for girls, they are usually between twenty four centimeters to forty five centimeters. After all, there is some physiology differences between them. Therefore, the jumping ability between guys and girls have a large gap.

Back in the years, the player who could jump the highest in the NBA is said to be 'Spud' Webb. He was able to jump to a height of a hundred forty to a hundred fifty centimeters!

Lan He was naturally not as amazing as Webb. However, his current jumping ability was already very astonishing.

He grabbed the basketball and ferociously slam it into the basket causing the basket frame to tremble a bit.

“Bang!”

Amongst the loud noise and the screams of a group of girls, Lan He elegantly landed.

He opened his arms wide. It was as if he was enjoying the sensation of being worshipped by the girls.

“Showoff.”

Unable to help herself, Murong Die curled her lips.

“Lil Die, you see this?!”

Lan He pointed at himself and said. “This is what a real man is! That boy that you liked is nothing but trash, a good for nothing loser!”

“Young master Lan is right!”

Laughed Ma Yixuan. Ma Yixuan has a blue school uniform on her upper body but had a short skirt on her lower body. In the midst of autumn, she was exposing her thighs.

“Liu Yi is nothing, a certain someone really gotta have their vision checked.”

“Ma Yixuan, who do you think you are?”

Murong Die felt that Ma Yixuan was extremely annoying. Why is it that’s she’s everywhere?!

Also, why is she saying malicious words about Liu Yi? Isn’t that calling her own vision into question?

“Murong Die, this is not your Murong house! Is it wrong for me to look down on Liu Yi? What, did your heart hurt?”

Ma Yixuan chuckled. She touched her charming cheek and then said. “Let me tell you, even if that Liu Yi that you liked were to kneel in front of me and beg, I would still not become his girlfriend. There’s only you who have such a strong taste.”

“Ma Yixuan, you’re stepping over your bounds”

Murong Die was extremely angry.

This Ma Yixuan’s mouth was extremely wicked!

At this moment, none of those guys who were trying to court Murong Die dared to say anything.

Ma Yixuan is Little Overlord Yuan Shaojun’s chick... how could they possibly dare poke her?!

Even if they liked their goddess, there’s still no need to take a beating for the goddess, right?...

“Oh Lil Die, Ma Yixuan is right.”

Lan He joined the conversation.

“Where exactly is Liu Yi better than me? Where exactly am I, Lan He, worse than him?”

“In my view, even a hundred of you, Lan He, cannot compare to even a single Liu Yi’s toe.”

In her heart, Murong Die was thinking: ‘In any case, I had already pushed everything to Liu Yi, might as well go all the way.’

Murong Die didn’t feel like excusing herself anymore.

With that girl Wang Lele, she most certainly to be unable to remove herself.

Furthermore, it’s pretty good to have a shield; it helps to omit the constant attention of others on her.

“What did you say? I can’t compare to Liu Yi?”

Lan He can’t keep his urge and shouted. “Murong Die, are you blind?”

“You’re the one who’s blind, your whole family’s blind!”

Right at this moment, the scold of a girl sounded from the side of the basketball court.

Everyone immediately turned around to look. What they saw was a thin and weak boy carrying a beautiful girl walking over step by step from that side.

Seeing these two people, everyone was simultaneously shocked.

Lan He’s mouth was wide open. He found it to be a bit unbelievable.

Murong Die’s eyes were wide open as she saw her best friend.

Wang Lele immediately jumped down from Liu Yi’s back. She looked at Murong Die with face filled with a wronged expression. Her eyes seemed to be apologizing.

“Liu Yi, you actually dared to come?”

Asked Lan He with an unbelievable tone of voice. Lan He saw that Liu Yi was slowly walking into the basketball court and was unable to refrain himself from asking.

“This is the basketball court, why would I not dare to come?”

Replied Liu Yi as he walked while being under all kinds of gaze from everyone present.

“From the way I see, you’ve come to disgrace yourself!”

Said Lan He. He picked up the basketball, placed it on his finger and spin it. He had an appearance of trying to act cool.

“Lan He, one must have a baseline with speaking.”

Said Liu Yi. “The way you’re acting now, using my grandfather’s words, is someone who’s pretending and would be struck by lightning!”

“Fuck, you’re good. Liu Yi, I see that you’ve grown some balls recently; you even dared to talk like this to me! Have you grown tired of living?”

In the class, Lan He was also considered to be a fierce character. No regular students dared to provoke him. However, there’s a lot of students who flatters him.

“Today I shall make you apologize for your words.”

Liu Yi didn’t care about Lan He’s fierce threats at all. He stood there and extended two fingers and said.

“One, apologize for your insults toward me. Two, apologize for the lack of respect toward Murong Die!”

Murong Die stood on the outside of the basketball court and was staring at the unreliable Wang Lele when she heard Liu Yi’s words. Immediately, she was startled.

How did even I was brought up?

“Are you an idiot?”

Said Lan He disdainfully. “I, Lan He, apologize to you?”

“Then do you dare to take a bet with me?”

Said Liu Yi slowly. He already had a plan.

“If I were to win, then you are to apologize to me and Murong Die.”

“Hahaha!”

Lan He started to laugh out loud while holding the basketball. He was in such a great laughter than even his back was bent forward and his tears even came out.

The couple students beside him also started to laugh out loud. The girls who were cheering for him also started to mock and ridicule Liu Yi.

“Liu Yi must really have some brain issues!”

“That’s right, that’s right. Competing in a basketball match with my big brother Lan He... and trying to win on top of that... he’s totally retarded!”

“We better try to not come into contact with him in the future...I’ve heard that stupidity was contagious...”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 45

Ma Yixuan, who stood on the side with one hand on her waist, contemptuously looked at Qin Chao and said. "Liu Yi, oh Liu Yi, you are waste wood."

"Look at your face, have you never saw yourself in a mirror?"

Ma Yixuan pointed at Liu Yi's shorter figure and worn out school's uniform and said.

"With a pathetic appearance and weak body like this, you still wish for things that are beyond your capabilities. It didn't matter when you chase after me because this young lady would never stoop myself to the same level as you. But now you wanted to challenge young master Lan? Liu Yi, oh Liu Yi, sometimes I really wanted to put your head apart and see whether there's something wrong inside it or not."

Hearing Ma Yixuan's words, a burst of chill appeared in Liu Yi's heart.

Previously, the favourable impression level on top of Ma Yixuan's head was minus 38. Today, it unexpectedly dropped to minus 50.

It is beyond impossible now for him to make a connection with this girl anymore.

Actually, in his heart, he still has some trace of favourable impression toward her because, after all, she was his first crush.

Too bad, she went all the way to spoil his feelings. Right now, she even insulted his dignity.

Liu Yi could not help but clenched his fists; His blood flow started to accelerate.

A whiff of wicked thought instantly began to spread throughout his whole body.

But Liu Yi quickly circulated his breath according to the cultivation method twice, making his evil consciousness temporarily suppressed.

"This cultivation breathing that was thought by Fox sister turned out to be



really useful.' Liu Yi thought.

'Fox sister is the best....'

"Ma Yixuan, I admit that I once liked you. But that is all in the past. In my eyes right now, you are ugly to the extreme. Why? Because I can't see your outward appearance anymore. Instead, I can only see what's inside your heart...."

"Liu Yi, I see you want to court death!"

Ma Yixuan suddenly raised one of her eyebrows, pinched her waists and then rudely said, "You dare to say something bad about me?! Hmph, it seems like you don't want to go out of the school gate today!"

Liu Yi sighed and said, "Ma Yixuan, I pity you."

"Liu Yi, you moth\*rf\*cker! You pity me? Who do you think you are?!"

Ma Yixuan immediately exploded in anger and cursed, "I..."

"Ma Yixuan, you had enough yet?"

Seeing Ma Yixuan abusive behaviour, Wang Lele, who was being reprimanded by Murong Die because of her failed attempt at getting Liu Yi away, immediately jumped out and shouted.

"This matter is none of your business! If you have the ability, find your Yuan Shaojun!"

"Do you think I won't!? Wait for me here!"

Ma Yixuan turned around, tossed her hair and walked away.

Although her figure is very nice to look at, it can't attract Liu Yi anymore.

"Wang Lele!"

Murong Die glowered at Wang Lele, and lowered her voice to say, "Aren't you giving trouble to Liu Yi by doing this?!"

"Hehe....Sis' Die, relax....I already sent a text message to Director Wang to invite him to watch this basketball match!"

Wang Lele shook her cute pink cell phone toward Murong Die, making the later blinked.

“You naughty girl.....” Murong Die finally smiled.

This school is a public school. Therefore, Murong family have no investment in here. But, because Murong Family’s enterprise in this Northern city is big, some of this school’s leadership like to curry favor in front of Murong Die.

As Murong Die’s best friend and also because of some token of influence from her Wang family, Wang Lele is quite unhindered in the school.

That Director Wang, as the guidance director, has accidentally helped Liu Yi once.

By calling him here, he does have a significant role.

Although the school bully Yuan Shaojun was always overbearing in school, he still won’t dare to pick up trouble when there is a teacher around.

Although Yuan Shaojun can beat people, his family doesn’t have any background.

Therefore, Yuan Shaojun would not dare to provoke the teachers in school.

Like Director Wang for example. His authority in the school is not small. Should Yuan Shaojun provoke him, Yuan Shaojun will indeed be expelled by him.

Right now, the school is like a mini society.

Although Yuan Shaojun is fierce, he can only show in the student’s circle.

The one who really have the power are students such as Lan He, Murong Die, and Wang Lele.

“Liu Yi, you’ve delayed this game too long.”

Lan He patted the basketball and said, “Are you afraid? If you’re scared, you can just kneel and bow to me. I’ll pretend this thing didn’t happen, what do you think?”

“Lan He, say the rules and then we’ll start the game!”

Liu Yi bluntly replied.

‘Want me to kneel? Impossible!’ Liu Yi thought.

‘Grandpa said, there’s gold in a man’s knees. He can kneel toward the heaven, toward the earth and the parents, but, he absolutely must not kneel toward anybody else.’

‘If someone makes you kneel in front of them, let them know that your dignity cannot be trifled with!’

“Hei, you are courting death. All right! Then you better listen!”

Lan He is bouncing the basketball while saying, “Within ten minutes, we are going to do a one on one duel with just half of the court. When the time is up, the one who scores more is the winner. What do you think?”

“Fine, let’s get started.”

“Hehe....The competition, begin!”

Lan He suddenly threw the ball firmly at Liu Yi.

Liu Yi was taken aback. He subconsciously stretched out his hand to block. The ball bounced off of his hand and fell back into Lan He’s hand.

“I actually wanted you to serve first. But, it seemed you don’t have this chance.”

Lan He said while he dribbled the ball toward the basket ring and then leisurely took a shot.

His dashing figure made many young girls screamed out.

“Oh! Lan He is so handsome!”

“Lan He I love you...”

“Lan He, marry me!”

Meanwhile, Liu Yi was still rooted in his place. His face was slightly feverish.

He felt like he was being toyed by other people.

“Come, I let you serve this time.”

Lan He said and then suddenly threw the ball toward Liu Yi, “You better catch it this time!”

The ball moved through the air in an arc trajectory. Its target,

unexpectedly, was Liu Yi's face.

Lan He was definitely intentional.

But this time, Liu Yi has prepared himself. He stretched out both of his hands to catch the ball.

After grasping the ball, Liu Yi prepared to launch his attack.

He dribbled the ball a few times to get close to the basket ring.

But Liu Yi's basketball skill is really not that good. He dribbled the ball awkwardly, making other people mocked at him.

This time, Lan He suddenly stepped forward and, with just a simple stretch, quickly cut the ball off from Liu Yi.

After snatching the ball, Lan He stepped back three steps. After that, with a natural and elegant movement, he ran three steps forward, bypassed Liu Yi, and delivered the ball to the basket.

4:0

"I feel like Liu Yi would be impossible to win this match..."

Wang Lele worriedly asked, "If this goes on, will he lose?"

"Jinx..." Murong Die retorted.

Murong Die took a glance at Wang Lele. But, in her heart, she also started to worry.

'Liu Yi....could he do it....?'

'He surely would not lose, right?...'

'Pei, pei, pei. Now I'm the jinx.'

Without knowing why, in Murong Die's heart, Liu Yi seemed to appear somewhat extraordinary.

Although, prior to this, she didn't have any impression toward this classmate of her...

This feeling is really strange.

Whenever Liu Yi held the basketball, he always flustered, making Lan He

easily crushed him.

After more playing more than six minutes, Lan He already scored 16 points, to Liu Yi nil.

Every time Liu Yi dribbled the ball, the audience always jeered at him.

“Haha, Liu Yi, you suck, what are you waiting for? Quickly kowtow and admit defeat!”

This is the mockery from the male students.

“You wanted to beat our young master Lan with this skill? You really are a disgrace. Young master Lan is more handsome....His posture is the posture of a real man....”

This is the girl’s criticism.

Liu Yi’s whole body went cold.

He felt the urge to have the wish to die. He thought.

‘Could it be....what Wang Lele said were right? Am I just asking for a humiliation?....’

‘Grandpa...don’t tell me that what you have said is wrong...?’

‘What, what should I do....?’

Liu Yi’s confidence is falling apart.

But at this time, a roaring sound suddenly came out from the crowd.

“Liu Yi, you can do it!”

Liu Yi’s tiger body suddenly shook. When he turned around to look, tears were already streaming down his face.

The one who cheered for him proved to be a fat girl!

Fuck me! Although it was a fat girl....but this time, Liu Yi’s heart was still somewhat moved.

“Go, Liu Yi! Don’t you lose! I have bet my lunch on you!”

Chen Cai also cheered him from the side.

Liu Yi’s heart became warm again.

Even if his whole class become his enemy, so what?

He still has some supporters. He still has friends that always believe in him.

“Go, Liu Yi! You can do it!”

Wang Lele also jumped up. With her chest that continuously swayed, she unceasingly cheered at him.

“Beat that nasty Lan He! Sister will give you a chest push!”

“Pff...”

“Liu Yi almost spurted out nosebleed.

The surrounding group of male students each have a different look of resentment toward Liu Yi.

‘Damn Liu Yi...why such a waste wood like him received that kind of treatment?!’ They all thought.

“Go Lan He!”

“Young master Lan, defeat that Liu Yi!”

A group of boys suddenly was on the verge of going wild.

Even Lan He was extremely jealous of Liu Yi.

Meanwhile, the nearby Murong Die secretly asked Wang Lele in surprise.

“Do...do you know what the meaning of chest push?”

“Isn’t just a form of chest massage?”

Wang Lele blinked and innocently looked at Murong Die, “Sis’ Die, didn’t you always try to push my breasts up? You also said that the boys must indeed love it...”

“This is my fault...”

Murong Die reluctantly covered her forehead.

“This child, is too naive...” She thought.

But, Liu Yi has regained his confidence back. He decided to make a comeback.

After all, if you think about it, he is an immortal cultivator!

Liu Yi prepared to show up his immortal cultivator's capabilities!

This time, it was Lan He's turn to hold the ball. Taking advantage of Lan He, who currently did not pay attention to him, Liu Yi, who stood beside Lan He, quickly snatched the ball from Lan He's hands.

The onlookers were immediately in an uproar.

They did not expect that Liu Yi was able to grab the ball!

Liu Yi was ecstatic. Under the surprised gaze of Lan He, he went inside the three point line and ran toward the basketball ring while dribbling the ball.

An opportunity finally came. Liu Yi intended to do a slam dunk!

If he can do this slam dunk, he will have the momentum to turn the tide!

'I must try it!' He cheered himself.

Liu Yi was holding the basketball. He was ready to jump up.

At this time, Lan He suddenly jumped up in front of him. He seemed to be blocking Liu Yi's shot.

However, Liu Yi still has the confidence that he will succeed in delivering the slam dunk.

Right at this time, Lan He's mouth suddenly hung a malicious smile.

His elbow immediately moved forward toward Liu Yi's abdomen.

"Puft!"

Liu Yi felt that his stomach was being squeezed up. He immediately stumbled down to the ground, making the dust splashed into the air.

Meanwhile, after Lan He grabbed the fallen basketball, he stretched out his arm and gave him a thumb-down.

"A fool like you thought that you can steal a point? In your dream!"

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 46

“A fool like you think that you can steal a point? In your dream!”

These few words from Lan He immediately made Liu Yi burned with anger.

“You piece of shit, you think you could snatch something from my, Lan He’s hand? In your next life! Liu sucks.”

“Idiot!”

The voice of the little fox, Lin Tong, suddenly sounded in Liu Yi’s ear.

“This guy unexpectedly dare to bully you! Liu Yi, let me out!”

At that moment, Liu Yi’s eyes became slightly red.

The world around him began to move in slow-motion.

In Liu Yi’s eyes, the world has turned into a black and white world.

Except Lan He, where his body radiated a bright red light that was provocative in nature.

Liu Yi slowly stood up from the ground with a faint smile on his lips.

Meanwhile, on the sidelines, Wang Lele shouted out.

“Lan He, you cheat! That’s a foul!”

“What do a little girl like you know?!”

Lan He pursed his lips, “That was a fair collision in a one on one battle. Do you think this is a regular competition....”

Before Lan He even finished his talk, the pit of his stomach was suddenly hit by the already stood up Liu Yi.

Lan He felt his body was like a broken kite that flew upside down and fell to the ground with a thud. His buttocks felt really painful, making him grimacing with pain.

Liu Yi easily reached out the fallen basketball and, taking the advantage while Lan He was still on the ground, slowly walked to the three-point line.



All of the onlookers suddenly bursts into an uproar. They all began to boo Liu Yi.

“Fuck! Liu Yi, you cheater!”

“Liu Yi, that’s foul!”

A group of boys and girls cried out these words.

Meanwhile, Liu Yi was slowly dribbling the ball. With a faint smile, he said.

“Who said that was a foul? This was a fair collision in a one on one battle.”

Those students were speechless.

Indeed, wasn’t Lan He did the same thing just a moment ago?

This street-style one on one battle is a fierce and wild competition. The body collision that was forbidden in the regular game is a common thing that happens in this type of game.

Seeing other people were silent, Liu Yi dribbled the ball with one hand while his other hand pointed at Lan He and made a come at me sign.

“Come on, stop me. Or did you wet your pants already?”

Seeing this scene from the sidelines, Murong Die and Wang Lele were astonished.

The current Liu Yi was like a whole new person!

This Liu Yi....is a cool-headed and evil!

But he also exudes what seemed like an indescribable charm, making their hearts slightly trembled.

‘Is this really...Liu Yi?’ They thought.

“You’re dead!”

Lan He growled, crawled up, and then rushed toward Liu Yi.

He planned to teach Liu Yi a lesson, making him know that he owns this basketball court!

But before he reached Liu Yi, the later suddenly, gently jumped up, aimed the ball and took a shot.

Three-points shoot?

This guy, who can't even dribble properly, wanted to shoot from behind the three-point line?

At that moment, Lan He suddenly has the urge to laugh.

He turned his head to look at the ball. The ball did not even come close to the basket ring; It flew way out of the field.

Suddenly, he could not hold back his laughter anymore.

"Hahaha! Liu Yi, you fool! Did you want to shoot three-point shoot with your skill? Hahaha...."

Lan He was laughing out loud while rubbing his stomach.

"Don't laugh so early, I felt something."

Being laughed at by the opponent, Liu was actually unmoved. He just stood there with lips that were slightly smiled.

"You really can toot your horn! Come, come, get me the ball. I'll let you try your three-pointers once again."

Lan He clapped his hands. A student immediately threw a basketball at him.

Lan He then threw the basketball to Liu Yi, "Go on, throw it again!"

"Don't you regret this."

"Hahaha! Liu Yi, although you have no skills in basketball, your skill in bragging is actually big!"

Lan He completely disregarded Liu Yi. He doesn't even look at Liu Yi in the eyes.

Lan He is looking forward to seeing Liu Yi make a fool of himself.

"Then see for yourself."

Liu Yi said and then he slightly bent his knees.

The strength from the soles of his feet began to rise along his legs. In the blink of an eye, it arrived in his hands.

At this moment, Liu Yi has a kind of mysterious feeling.

His magical eyesight appeared.

The distant basket ring, in his eyes, was suddenly magnified.

Liu Yi seemed able to feel the connection between the basket and the basketball in his hands.

With the aid of this perception and the strength, he gently shot the basketball with his hands.

The ball moved in the air along a beautiful arc, and then accurately fell into the center of the basket. The ball smoothly entered the center of the basket from the above.

Lan He immediately opened his mouth in surprise.

Not only him, all the other onlookers that saw the three-point shot from Liu Yi were shocked.

It would be not too surprising if other people, who regularly play basketball, able to do a three-point shot.

But....this time, it was Liu Yi who succeeded in doing a three-point shoot!

The big waste wood Liu Yi!

How is this possible!?

The score changed into 16:3!

“Liu Yi scored! Liu Yi has scored!”

Wang Lele pulled Murong Die’s hand while shouted out happily.

“Fuck! Liu Yi really scored this time!”

Chen Cai foolishly expressed his surprise. Because he is Liu Yi’s best friend, he completely gave his support to Liu Yi.

But because he knew Liu Yi really well, he realized that...in regards to physical activity, Liu Yi has always been clumsy. He was aware that If Liu Yi wanted to beat Lan He, it is simply impossible.

He would never have thought that Liu Yi would really be able to score a three-point shot...

“Damn, count this as your luck!”

Lan He pursed his lips. Based on Liu Yi’s ability, he did not believe Liu Yi was able to do a three-point shot.

“It doesn’t matter. You can think anything you want.”

Liu Yi smiled, “But from now on, you will no longer have a chance to score.”

After he entered this state, Liu Yi’s personality was completely changed.

His words made Lan He infuriated. Lan He doesn’t know whether he wants to laugh or mad.

“Fine. Liu Yi, let’s see who’s going to cry in the end!”

According to the rule of the street one on one duel, the one who scored will be the one who serve.

Lan He threw the ball to Liu Yi, making him serve the ball for the first time.

Liu Yi stood outside the three-point line while he dribbled the ball.

Lan He stared at the basketball. He was confident that he is able to snatch the ball.

He is a reserve member of the youth team. His position on the team is the shooting guard.

Although he is not a point guard, stealing remains as a part of his forte.

The coach even often praised his agility in stealing the ball.

In his team practice, he was able to regularly steal the ball from his teammates. In front of this waste wood Liu Yi, he certainly will able to easily steal the ball!

Therefore, Lan He could care less if Liu Yi serves the ball.

This moment, he spotted a gap. Like a lightning, he quickly stretched out his hand.

But to his surprise, he caught an empty space.

Liu Yi, at the moment, was holding the ball with his weak hand. He then sent it into the air.

The basketball, once again, drew a curve trajectory in the air and then, finally, fell into the basket.

The ball perfectly enter the center of the basket!

Three points!

Everyone was silly.

The first time can be considered as luck....but what about the second time?

Two times three-pointers, all of it perfectly enter the center of the ring without even touching the rim!

This...is really incredible!

“16:6.”

Liu Yi smiled at Lan He, “There are still three minutes left. These remaining ten points, you have to be careful about it.”

“Fuck you! You think you can beat me!?”

Lan He was furious.

He was prepared to give Liu Yi a lesson!

To let him know who is the king in a one on one duel!

In this school, in this basketball court, no one is better than Lan He!

Lan He was ruthless. When Liu Yi's turn to serve again, he pretended to stretch out his arm to steal the ball and then tried to elbow Liu Yi's stomach again.

But this time, Liu Yi has seen it coming.

He suddenly executed his Spirit Fox Steps, making his body gently moved to the side and easily avoided Lan He's dirty trick.

Lan He could not withdraw his momentum; His body staggered forward.

While Liu Yi simply put down his foot, his body then lightly stopped.

“Plop!”

Lan He fell flat to the ground. His previous charming and handsome look was gone in the blink of an eye.

The present Lan He looked like someone who was digging with the buttocks. His young master appearance was completely gone. Several students can't even bear not to chuckle.

Meanwhile, Liu Yi held up the basketball, bent down a bit, and then shoot. The basketball perfectly entered the center of the ring once again.

16:9

Lan He was shocked. He picked himself up from the ground, feeling angry and hate.

He didn't expect that, as a candidate for the youth team, Liu Yi was able to make him looked like a clown!

"Come on, let's continue this game!"

"I'll win this game you freak!"

Lan He still believes in his basketball skill.

He did not dare to be negligent. He started to cautiously guard Liu Yi's move.

Lan He's basketball skill is really good. The rest of the time, under his tight defense, Liu Yi didn't have many chances to shoot.

He can only shoot twice, for a total of six points.

The score was now 16:15.

The remaining time is less than 30 seconds.

At this time, everyone was tensed.

Murong Die cannot help but tightly held the Wang Lele's hand.

The two sister's palms were full of sweat.

The mouth of the nearby Chen Cai was almost fell to the ground. His eyes were intently stared at the court. He appeared silly and also stupid.

'For your best friend...for a lunch, you must win, Liu Yi!' He cheered in his heart.

"Not much time left."

Lan He said, "I'm not going to give you a chance to shoot. In the end, I still win this game. Liu Yi, obediently kneel down and kowtow to me!"

"Not necessary."

Liu Yi showed his confident smile.

After entering this state, Liu Yi was a completely different person.

He cannot even control this new personality.

He looked at Lan He, smiled, and then suddenly raised his hand, as if he was going to shoot.

Thinking that Liu Yi is going to shoot, Lan He hastily jumped up.

At this moment, Liu Yi suddenly lowered his body and then rushed past Lan He's blockade from his right-hand side.

The old Liu Yi, who previously clumsy in dribble, was gone. At the moment, as if he was possessed by Iverson, he flexibly dribbled the ball until he reached the spot under the ring.

Liu Yi suddenly held the ball with both of his hands and then took a high jump.

Lan He was startled. His reaction was pretty quick; He quickly ran back.

Lan He stood in front of Liu Yi; He was prepared to thwart Liu Yi's last attempt at scoring.

"I'm not going to let you score!"

Lan He roared. Halfway through the jump, he suddenly retracted his hands and threw his foot to kick at the mid-jumping calf of Liu Yi.

But to his surprise, Liu Yi's jump was even higher than him!

In the blink of an eye, his kick fell into an empty space.

Meanwhile, Liu Yi's body was already on top of Lan He. The basketball that was in his hand, Liu Yi heavily dunk it into the basket.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 47

“Bam!”

Liu Yi's strength was not small. His vicious slam dunk shook the basket, causing it to twist and letting out a loud sound.

Lan He was also knocked down by Liu Yi, making him directly fell down to the ground in a confused state.

Although the pain was small, the shock in his heart was actually pretty big.

The young talented basketball player of the City youth team, Lan He, unexpectedly lost to a mediocre student!

Moreover, this student has been known to the class as the scrap wood, and he never showed his idiotic figure in all the sports competition in school.

But today, that student has unexpectedly won a match against him!

Not only that student accurately shot many three-points, that student also did a slam dunk on his last jump!

At that moment, Liu Yi was just like a bright star, making Lan He suddenly felt small and began to doubt about his talent in basketball.

All the students were in shocked.

Because of the previous energetic slam dunk from Liu Yi, they were all jolted.

“This is Liu Yi?” They all thought.

“The scrap wood Liu Yi?”

“O heavens... I never thought...that Liu Yi can play basketball...” Chen Cai commented.

He cannot close his mouth for quite a while.

He and Liu Yi were friends for a long time. They were basically each other's best friend and no matter what happen to the other, the other one would also know it.

Chen Cai even perfectly knew the several Adult Videos in Liu Yi's



computer.

But today, he really doesn't understand about Liu Yi's two hands....

"Liu Yi won. Liu Yi really has won!"

Wang Lele pulled Murong Die's hand and happily exclaimed, "I knew it, Liu Yi gege is the best!"

"...Oh, so, he's 'Liu Yi gege' now, eh...."

Murong Die disdainfully glanced at Wang Lele.

"Hehe... In any event, after Liu Yi gege, perhaps, become sis' Die's husband, whatever I'm calling him now wouldn't matter at all, right?!"

"You dead girl...believe it or not, I'm going to rip your mouth off!"

"Hu hu, sis' Die is really terrible...."

"I think you're just a huge chest! Big breast but no brain, If you speak irresponsibly again, I'll rip off your mouth!"

Wang Lele quickly covered her mouth.

Liu Yi released the basket and landed on the ground.

His icy feeling gradually disappeared from his body.

The feeling of out of control was now gone.

Liu Yi was standing on the ground. Although he has won the game, he was really uncomfortable.

He felt like other people won this game, not him.

This feeling... was really, really, uncomfortable....

"How could I lost...? How is this possible...?" Lan He muttered.

Lan He sat on the ground with a look of disbelief; He has not woke up from the previous shocked.

"You cheated.... You definitely cheated!"

Lan He suddenly stood up, stepped forward, pulled Liu Yi's collar, and fiercely said.

"Otherwise, how could a waste wood like you won a game against me, Lan

He! Right, that's right, a stimulant! You must have used a stimulant!"

"Lan He, my grandfather said, a man can lose, but he cannot be a poor loser."

Liu Yi swatted away Lan He's hand.

No matter what, he has won this game.

Although the winning was not quite honorable, the evil Liu Yi can still be considered a part of him.

'Is this the so-called split personality?' He wondered.

"Liu Yi, you wait for me!"

Lan He waved his hand, turned around and went away.

"Wait!"

Liu Yi grabbed him, "you haven't fulfilled the bet!"

"Bet? Bet you become paralysis!"

Lan He turned around and moved his hand to slap Liu Yi's face.

Want him, Lan He, to apologize?

A dream! He never thought Liu Yi as anything other than a scrap wood!

As a sports athlete, Lan He's moving palm created a whistling wind.

If this was the previous Liu Yi, perhaps this slap can make him stumble to the ground.

But the current Liu Yi has turned over a new leaf.

He held out his left hand and instantly caught Lan He's wrist.

"Pā!"

Lan He was suddenly startled.

This Liu Yi actually dared to resist!

He was about to give Liu Yi a kick when he suddenly felt a sharp pain in the wrist.

The pain instantly made him scream out; His whole body became weak,

and his eyes started to see black stars.

“Ah, ah,...my, my hand....”

Lan He was covered in cold sweat; With the incomparable pain on the wrist, he cannot continue his words.

‘How could Liu Yi has such a big strength!’ He thought.

“Apologize.”

Liu Yi held Lan He’s wrist and coldly said.

At this moment, his eyes were slightly red.

The negative feelings took control of him once again, making him deal the violence with violence.

Seeing this scene from Liu Yi’s virtual environment, Lin Tong was slightly worried.

‘If Liu Yi continues to go on like this....he will completely degenerate into a demon king....’ She thought.

His character is firm and resolute; Originally, the evil influence toward his mind was not very big.

But after his encounter with Yuan Zhenyue, the behavior of countering violence with violence of her should’ve affected him to a degree.

Coupled with the stimulus that he got today from the court, his mind started to become unstable, making him continuously abused his demonic power.

Honestly speaking, Lin Tong felt that she still prefer the silly Liu Yi...

The black belly Liu Yi made her felt a bit afraid.

“Let, let go off me... My hand will break!”

Lan He almost fainted because of the pain.

“Apologize.”

Liu Yi’s voice was still icy-cold; At the same time, a murderous aura fell upon Lan He, making him directly shivered.

Lan He instantly felt that the Liu Yi before him was....really terrifying.

‘Heroes do not eat immediate loss!’ Lan He thought.

Lan He clenched his teeth and then said with a tremendous resentment.

“Liu Yi...I, I shouldn’t have insulted you. I’m sorry!”

“There’s still Murong Die.”

“I, I shouldn’t have pestered Murong Die, I’m sorry....”

All the students were stunned.

For Liu Yi to win the game...is already quite shocking.

What even more shocking now is, Lan He, the young master, actually willing to apologize for his mistakes!

This!

Has the Sun risen from the west?

“That’s more like it. You can keep your life now.”

Liu Yi finally released Lan He’s hand.

Lan He was panting. He sat on the ground while examining his swollen wrist.

Perhaps if Liu Yi pinches his wrist a little longer, his wrist might really be destroyed.

Lan He looked at Liu Yi with eyes that were full of resentment.

“Liu Yi...I will not let you get away with this...”

He cannot make this words be heard by Liu Yi right now, thus, he can only bite his teeth and swallowed it back to his stomach.

He is young master Lan! Soon, he will let Liu Yi know what is the meaning of the true power.

When Lan He was planning to go away in disgrace, bursts of noises suddenly erupted around the basketball court.

A group of students, who wore school uniforms, came around them. Each and everyone of them looked fierce.

There are a hundred of them, which quickly put the court jammed pack.

Lan He was surprised, he thought, 'What's going on? Is he not going to let me go?'

But soon, he understand what's going on and couldn't help but sneer.

'Liu Yi oh Liu Yi, your arrogance has come back to bite you!'

Liu Yi's classmates were also startled. They speculated about what was about to happen.

Soon, when a pair of figure stepped out from the crowd, everyone understood.

The one who lead is a bald student with one of a kind appearance; One of his eyes is big while the other one is small. There is a black mole on his left cheek, with many nauseating black hairs that grew up on top of it.

Although this student's appearance is quite droopy like that, his arm was around the body of a beautiful girl, making some unknown number of students envy him.

"Hehe... What's up, Murong Die? Are you afraid now?"

Inside the arm of Yuan Shaojun, surrounded by a large number of students, Ma Yixuan proudly said.

"My husband, it's her. She bullied Renjia."

"Murong Die, I know you're powerful out there. But, inside this school is my, young overlord, territory."

With a cigarette in his mouth, a slender Ma Yixuan in his arm, and his black hair in his other arm, Yuan Shaojun unhappily said.

"You bullied my woman inside my domain, isn't that a bit not giving me the 'face'?"

After that, a group of students pushed through the student close to Murong Die and started to surround her and Wang Lele in a threatening manner. It was very scary.

But Murong Die showed no fear. She is the eldest daughter of Murong Family. Such scene cannot make her afraid.

Wang Lele was a bit scared. She hid behind Murong Die.

“Since you didn’t give me, Yuan Shaojun, a ‘face,’ then don’t blame me, Yuan Shaojun, for also not giving you a ‘face.’”

“Yuan Shaojun, you dare to touch me?”

Murong Die’s moon eyebrows jumped, she looked straight at Yuan Shaojun and asked.

“Hehe, if we’re outside the school, maybe I, Yuan Shaojun, am afraid of you, Murong Die.”

Yuan Shaojun slowly puffed his cigarette, and then said, “But, this school is not your Murong Family residence. Instead, this is my, young overlord, domain. This is the so-called, the sky is high, the Emperor is far away. Even if your father is the Heaven Emperor, in here, perhaps that is not going to save you.”

Murong Die cannot help but curse in her heart.

“This Yuan Shaojun is also a scrap wood who fell into a female charm!”

‘He really took himself seriously! Humph, even though he is just the head of the school bully!’

‘My family’s influence can easily steamroll him!’

‘Under normal condition, this Yuan Shaojun wouldn’t dare to mess with me.’

‘But under Ma Yixuan’s spell, anything can happen!’

‘Now...Indeed, no one can protect me!’

Looking around the tiger eyes of the students that surrounded her, Murong Die finally felt fear for the first time.

‘Am I....really finished now....?’

‘Why did the director, who was called by Wang Lele, have not come yet...?’

“Yuan Shaojun, if you’re a man, don’t deal with a woman!”

In this critical moment, Liu Yi suddenly speak up and loudly barked at Yuan Shaojun.

Yuan Shaojun immediately gawked and then turned around to see Liu Yi, who was standing in the basketball court.

“Oh, you are....”

“Husband...That’s the fool who pestered me everyday....”

Ma Yixuan sweetly said in Yuan Shaojun’s ear.

“Oh, it’s you!”

Yuan Shaojun suddenly understood. He spat the cigarette to the ground, stomped it, and then said.

“Bastard, I haven’t looked for you, yet, you came to find me first! Good, I’ll deal with the eldest daughter of Murong Family after I finished with you, idiot!”

After that, he waved his hand.

Suddenly, a group of students came at Liu Yi.

“Yuan Shaojun!”

At this time, with chest out, Wang Lele suddenly speak up and said.

“I, I’m the origin of the problem here. If you want to deal with someone, you should come after me!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 48

Liu Yi and Murong Die was surprised at the same time.

“The coward Wang Lele unexpectedly willing to stand up in a time like this?” They thought.

Actually, Wang Lele’s heart was very ashamed.

If not for her hard words, things would not spin out of control like this.

So to said, it was also because she didn’t want Liu Yi and Murong Die to suffer injustice.

Just like what Liu Yi said, something like, she, Wang Lele, cannot be looked down upon by other people.

Especially, she cannot let Liu Yi look down upon her.

“Hehe, relax, you’re all can’t get away from this. I never thought a little girl with a huge chest like you would also have a pretty big courage, I like it.”

Yuan Shaojun said and licked his lips.

That appearance directly made Wang Lele took two steps back; she almost cry out in fright.

“Huhuhu, sis’ Die, he’s really ugly....”

“Be good, Lele. No matter what, even if his appearance is one of a kind like that, he also have dignity. We must sympathize and not discriminate him.... Come on, look at him. Don’t be afraid.”

“Em, em... Huhuhu, sis’ Die, he still ugly. So terrifying....”

Wang Lele hid in Murong Die’s arm, crying.

Yuan Shaojun’s nose was almost crooked because of anger.

‘Damn, calling this old one ugly!’ He thought.

What he, Yuan Shaojun, hated the most is when someone called him ugly!

“Yuan Shaojun, if you’re a man, let’s have a duel right now.”

Liu Yi was standing there, facing Yuan Shaojun; His finger made a come at



me sign at Yuan Shaojun.

“Hahaha, stupid idiot!”

Yuan Shaojun could not help but laughed, “You want to challenge me, do you? You’re not even worth to put me my shoes! But if you beg this grandpa to hit you, after a time, I’ll personally spit on your face.”

After that, he waved his hand, a group of students immediately came at Liu Yi menacingly.

Liu Yi took a couple of deep breaths and started to circulate his breath according to the breathing technique.

‘Since you’re here, I’ll not be afraid.’ He cheered himself up.

He suddenly found out that today’s Liu Yi is not the same as yesterday’s Liu Yi.

The yesterday Liu Yi, if he sees such situation, the only thing that he can think of is to run away.

But the current Liu Yi actually want to meet this fight head on!

Just when Liu Yi prepared to move his hands, a roaring sound suddenly came.

“What are you doing!? Not attend the class yet!?”

Hearing this roar, everyone couldn’t help but stop in their track and turned around to look.

‘Fuck me....’ They thought.

That’s the robust frame of the Director!

Seeing this man, Yuan Shaojun could not help but sweat out cold sweat.

Don’t look at his balding head and his forty years old age, this Director is the famous Sanda champion in the city.

Many years ago when the school was poor, there were many bad students, and consequently, this school was named as the City’s worst high school.

Finally, the school has no other way than to invite this big brother to serve as the school’s Director.

Since then, those who became the school bully were taught obedience by him. How he taught them? Nobody knew!

Since this major reform, this school changed its status from the worst school to the school with the highest graduation rate now. It's all thanks to this big brothers effort!

All in all, this Director is the school's legendary figure.

"It seems like you guys want to see a show right?"

This Director slowly walked into the field. The students in front of him immediately shied away to make a path for him.

"Who wants to fight, come here. I haven't been fighting for a long time, and my hands were itched. Come on, help me relax my bones!"

After Director Wang had said this, he pinched his fists, which made "clack-clack" sound.

Those students who just now acted menacingly, each and every one of them immediately froze and wilted away just like an eggplant.

"What? Nobody wants to fight?"

Director Wang looked around at the students, who didn't dare to say anything now, and loudly roared.

"If you don't dare to fight, go back to class!"

Hearing his voice, the scared students suddenly woke up and immediately scattered in panic.

Liu Yi couldn't help but sighed, thinking, 'Director Wang's might is enormous.'

'His voice alone easily frightened those bullies.'

The students who surrounded them just a moment ago now vanished one by one.

Ma Yixuan was also stunned; she didn't think that her laborious effort to gather these many students were suddenly thwarted just like that.

In particular Yuan Shaojun, who has just lost his 'face.' But he didn't dare

to go against that Director Wang.

Young overlord can only be lording over other students.

“Yuan Shaojun, Why are you still looking at me?”

Director Wang’s eyes stared at Yuan Shaojun and said, “You’re not going back to class?”

“Humph!”

Yuan Shaojun glowered at Liu Yi, “Bastard, count this day as your lucky day!”

“Dare to threaten people? You think I am just a decoration here?”

Director Wang immediately stepped forward and said to Yuan Shaojun.

“I think you may have an itch. Why don’t we practice first?”

“Humph!”

Yuan Shaojun immediately turned around to leave the basketball court.

Wang Lele and them were suddenly relieved.

“Director Wang, fortunately, you came in time...”

Wang Lele rubbed her magnificent breast, and said, “Otherwise we may be really miserable.”

“You two wenches behave, don’t act willfully and make a scene.”

Director Wang cautioned, “While your Family’s power out there is not small, Yuan Shaojun can act lawlessly inside the school. If I didn’t arrive in time, he would go against the heaven’s will. You’d better not mess with him, or else, nobody knows what will happen when you go out of the school.”

“Hehe....understood. Thank you, Director Wang!”

Wang Lele playfully laughed.

“You naughty girl...You’re the worst troublemaker here.”

Director Wang and Wang Lele seemed to be very familiar with each other. He rolled his eyes and turned around to see Liu Yi.

“You are....Liu Yi, right?”

“Yes, Director...”

Liu Yi quickly nodded.

Director Wang has previously saved him once. Today, he saved him again.

In Liu Yi’s heart, he was somewhat grateful.

“I remember you. You were pestered by Kevin yesterday.”

Director Wang touched his bald head and said, “I remember you used to be an honest child....How can you get entangled with Kevin and Yuan Shaojun....”

“Director Wang....this, this was my fault....”

Wang Lele sheepishly rubbed her hands together, “In fact...this has nothing to do with Liu Yi gege....”

“Ai, you little girl! In short, less contact with Yuan Shaojun in the future! Don’t mess with him, it’s useless. Just call me if he bothers you again. As long as I’m in school, I will arrive as soon as possible.”

After that, Director Wang turned around and left.

“Liu Yi, I let you all get away this time!”

Ma Yixuan was still standing there. Her eyes viciously stared at Liu Yi and them and said.

“But don’t think this matter ends here! Be careful when you walk after school!”

And then she turned around and walked away.

“This woman really think highly of herself!”

Wang Lele couldn’t help but curled up her lips, “Just relying on her face, what’s the big deal!”

“Lele, don’t talk about other people, you must reflect on yourself!”

Murong Die reminded Wang Lele, “In the future, you must guard your mouth, don’t just say anything that comes into your head. You see, Liu Yi was almost killed by you.”

“Hehe...Otherwise, how can I know that Liu Yi gege turned out to be so

powerful!”

Wang Lele suddenly laughed. She said to Liu Yi.

“Liu Yi gege, in the future, you must protect me and sis’ Die okay?!”

“Eh?”

Liu Yi was silly. He doesn’t know what it means.

“Drop death, Wang Lele, you speak nonsense again. You really want me to rip off your mouth!”

Murong Die’s face was instantly red for a moment, and then she reached out both of her hands. She pinched Wang Lele’s cheeks and then pulled on both sides.

“Huhu, sis’ Die....I was wrong....it, it hurts...”

“Humph, let’s see if you’ll talk nonsense again!”

The two girls have made up.

“Liu Yi... Did you, did you really not use any stimulants?”

At that time, Chen Cai bounced over and asked.

“You never played basketball before, why....why today, you became so fabulous? Did you drugs?”

“Go to hell, you’re the one who nibbled drugs!”

Liu Yi gave Chen Cai a supercilious look.

“Then how come you became so powerful! I don’t believe you suddenly came across a world class expert who taught you peerless martial art, hahaha!”

Chen Cai couldn’t help but laugh.

“This...”

Liu Yi looked at the strained ears of the two beauty by the side and then somewhat awkwardly glanced back at Chen Cai.

“Cih! We don’t want to know it either! Lele, let’s go!”

Murong Die proudly lifted her neck and pulled Wang Lele to leave.

“But sis’ Die....I want to hear it...”

Wang Lele blinked her eyes a few times, and expectantly said, “I want to know...How come Liu Yi gege become so powerful....”

“What’s so good about hearing other people’s secret! Hurry up and come with me!”

Seeing her best friend didn’t live up to her expectation, Murong Die indignantly said and forcefully pulled away Wang Lele.

“Liu Yi gege... After this, you must tell me okay....?”

Being pulled away by Murong Die, Wang Lele pitifully said.

“Also... I still owe you a chest push... Remember to ask me for it!”

“Fuck me.... How envious....”

Chen Cai’s saliva flowed out. He watched Liu Yi with hatred and jealousy.

They were once diehard friends who share the same skirt together. They were best friends. But now, only one of them enjoyed such treatment...

Really hateful!

“I think...” Liu Yi muttered

After Liu Yi calm down, he suddenly began to understand.

“That girl Wang Lele...might not know what this ‘chest-push’ really mean....”

“What you said... I think it’s quite possible...”

Chen Cai blinked. This two friends rarely reached an agreement.

Meanwhile, Liu Yi was curious. He looked at the back of the two girls, who was walking away from them, and opened his eyes of favorable impression.

“Murong Die favorable impression +2, Wang Lele favorable impression +10!”

Fuck me!

Those two girls impression of him actually increased that much!

Liu Yi was momentarily shocked.

Especially that Wang Lele. Her favorability jumped directly from 10 to 20!

Her favorable impression's increase was too high!

No wonder his red stream of qi was getting stronger and stronger...

"Don't get too cocky!"

Lin Tong's voice appropriately rang out to put cold water on Liu Yi.

"Favorable impression is easier to upgrade in the earlier phase. But it will be harder in the later stage. There is a threshold once you upgraded it to 30. If you want to raise it again, it will get harder!"

"Ah?"

Liu Yi was a bit surprised.

"Humph, humph. Do you think picking up a girl will be that easy?"

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 49

“Immortal Cultivation?”

Chen Cai looked at Liu Yi, blinked his eyes, and then suddenly enlightened.

“Oh, I know, is that a web address?”

Chen Cai was watching Liu Yi and asked, “Did you find someone, who sold a drug that can temporarily increase your strength when you played online games? Gee... Liu Yi, such a good stuff. Why didn’t you tell me where to buy it? How much is it? I want to buy it too....”

“Ce....it’s not like that.”

Liu Yi thought that it would be quite difficult to explain.

The things that happened to him were indeed too amazing. Sometimes, he didn’t even believe it and thought that he was just having a dream. Moreover, he cannot wake up from this dream.

“Actually...I am practicing a method of cultivation to become immortal cultivator...”

Liu Yi slowly explained.

“Enough, enough, stop kidding with me! After knowing you these many years, this is the first time I saw you became soo funny.”

Chen Cai and Liu Yi were walking toward the classroom building while talking about this matter.

“I’m not kidding. It’s true!”

Liu Yi was somewhat anxious. How could Chen Cai wouldn’t believe him!

If he were Chen Cai, he would also not believe it.

“Crap, in this world, how could there be some kind of immortal cultivation!”

Chen Cai patted Liu Yi on the shoulder and gravely said, “Believe in science! Taurus men like us must believe in science!”

[Sweat]....



'How could someone who believed in astrology also said he believed in science....' Liu Yi thought.

Liu Yi has no idea how to think about this Chen Cai.

This guy is out of the ordinary.

"Anyway... Believe it or not, the reason why I can beat Lan He was indeed because I learned a set of immortal cultivation method."

"Fine then, teach me. I want to try it!"

"Okay..."

Lin Tong suddenly exclaimed in surprise.

"Liu Yi, you're crazy! This is our clan's unique teaching! You want to just casually give it to other people!?"

"Chen Cai is my brother..."

Liu Yi said, "My only brother..."

"What did you say? To compare?"

While Chen Cai was playing with his phone, he looked up and asked.

"Nothing. Listen carefully, I'm going to recount orally to you about the fundamental of this technique."

After that, Liu Yi started to recount to Chen Cai the beginning of the Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra. Hearing this, Chen Cai was stupefied.

"All of these things...can be any good?"

"When you get back home, just try it."

The introductory parts of this method were just some sort of breathing and meditation exercise; It's not that difficult. Liu Yi thought Chen Cai should be able to remember it.

"Bah, this is more like a demonic technique! I'm going to try it later in the class. It's a math class anyway, so, I won't listen to it!"

"It seems you didn't listen to the other class either..."

Liu Yi's cold sweat poured down.

“Nonsense, I paid attention in the English class!”

“You obviously just paid attention to the English teacher!”

The school’s English teacher is the youngest female teacher in the school. Her teaching was also good. The “listening rate” in her class is the highest.

“Hei, don’t expose me....let’s get back to the classroom.”

At this time, in an Internet Cafe near the school.

Lan He was sitting in a room. His two feet were resting on a chair while his hand was holding a phone. He unhappily asked.

“Brother Ma, did you try your weapon yet? What do you think?”

“This....Young master Lan....”

Ma Wei was on the other side of the phone, in the billiard room. He said on the phone.

“I know...you want to launch a retaliatory attack...”

“Oh, you knew. Hehe, I, Lan He, who has lived for eighteen years, thought that for the first time, I’m going to get cheated.”

“Impossible! Although I, Ma Wei, have some courage, I would not dare to cheat you, young master Lan!”

Ma Wei quickly said, “But young master Lan, your information was not accurate! That Liu Yi is not some ordinary students! I brought several of my men to beat him yesterday, but almost everyone was injured. The hospital expense for those brothers, aih. I had to cut my own share for that. Even the weapon that you sent me, I almost sold it to cover the doctor’s cost!”

“Fuck, don’t sell that damn weapon. You’re just asking for more money, aren’t you?”

Hearing that Ma Wei almost sold the weapon, Lan He was suddenly alarmed.

But soon he realized that this is not the problem.

“What did you say? Liu Yi injured your brothers? Did this boy really take a stimulant?”

“In short, young master Lan, this matter is getting tricky now.”

Ma Wei gloomily said, “With my brothers being injured like this, I don’t have any good excuse to report to my leadership. The medical expense was indeed not small...”

“Don’t worry about the medical expense, I’ll handle it for you.”

What Lan He have in plenty, is money.

But what he wanted the most, is Murong Die.

Right now, Liu Yi is the biggest obstacle between the two of them. If he doesn’t get rid of Liu Yi, he can’t achieve his goal!

‘Liu Yi...this guy, I must crush him!’ Lan He thought.

“Oh, since young master Lan said so, I, Ma Wei, felt relieved!”

Ma Wei’s face suddenly blushed, he laughed and said, “For young master Lan, even if I’ll shed some of my blood, your matter will be done!”

“I don’t need you to shed your blood for me, I only want you to help me do something.”

“Do you want me to get rid of Liu Yi?”

Ma Wei licked his somewhat split lips.

“Hehe, since you already know, I don’t have much to say anymore.”

“Young master Lan, I’m afraid this matter will not be that easy.”

Ma Wei suddenly said.

“What? Is there anything that you, brother Ma, can’t handle? Weren’t you the one who chased and chopped the gang boss for several blocks?”

“Young master Lan, that’s my, Ma Wei, past deed. You don’t need to make a joke out of me about that.”

Ma Wei chuckled, “In the past, I did chop a big brother. But that big brother was a scrap wood. While Liu Yi is a person who skilled in martial arts. If you want me and my wounded brothers to go against this Liu Yi, I’m afraid that will not be enough.”

“Then what do you think we should do?”

Lan He was not stupid. He knew Ma Wei must have wanted something from him.

“Hey, young master Lan is a sensible man.”

Ma Wei's face was full of smile, “Young master Lan's matter is also my, Ma Wei, matter. I will naturally willing to spare no efforts to do it. But my strength is insufficient right now. However, recently our Black Dragon Society will have an election for a new hall leader that will be responsible for a large area. If I can become that new leader, then, my manpower will be sufficient. To deal with Liu Yi will not be much of a problem.”

“How much money do you need?”

“Two...two hundred thousand.”

Ma Wei thought that he only need some sixty thousand to smooth his way to becoming the new hall leader.

But he couldn't help but wanted tens of thousands. At least, he can fill his own pocket.

“You give me a bank account, I'll give you three hundred thousand.”

Lan He's father was an official from the Bureau of Education. His mother was also a manager of a conglomerate. With his family's political and business connection, he is terribly well-off.

His pocket money was more than six figures.

This amount of money is nothing for him.

Moreover, if he can be with Murong Die, this money will be not worth mentioning.

Murong Family's possession....is huge.

His investment will definitely pay off.

If he assists Ma Wei this time, Ma Wei will definitely be grateful.

By that time, he will have some influence in Black Dragon Society. The black and white world, he, Lan He, will control all of it. By then, nobody in the whole Beilong City will dare to offend him, young master Lan.

“Young master Lan! In the future, I, Ma Wei, will become a gun in your hand!”

Ma Wei was overjoyed. He gratefully said, “Whichever direction you point your finger at, I will immediately go and beat whoever that guy.”

“Mm, I just want you to make Liu Yi disappear. You give me your account and then do what you must as quickly as possible. I want you to give me a deadline.”

“Ten days later, our Black Dragon Society will reorganize. After I take the hall leader position, I’ll deal with Liu Yi! Half a month! Within half a month, Liu Yi will definitely disappear from your, young master Lan, sight!”

“Okay, I’ll give you half a month’s time.”

Lan He nodded his head.

Liu Yi’s fate had been decided in a conversation between these two people.

At this time, he didn’t know anything about that conversation. He was sitting with eyes closed in a classroom while continuing his cultivation training in his spiritual environment.

From his confrontation with Yuan Zhenyue, Liu Yi realized how much useful his spirit fox steps was!

This footwork technique is really useful. At least, even if he can’t beat his opponent, he can always run away using this footwork.

The favorable impression increase from the girls in these two days has provided Liu Yi with a lot of power, making his red stream of qi inside his body continuously enhanced.

His first star jade was already full. Liu Yi found out that the forces inside his body continuously tried to attack his second star jade.

This second star jade was called ‘Kang.’ If he successfully opened it, Liu Yi’s power will increase tremendously.

“Fox sister, my second star jade seemed to react, when do you think I can have a breakthrough?”

Liu Yi asked Lin Tong, who was sitting cross-legged beside him.

“How can it be so fast! Continue your cultivation training honestly!”

Lin Tong must be quite jealous.

Only after she painstakingly trained for many years...did she able to open her second star jade.

But this Liu Yi....achieved the similar result in just two days effort!

His first star jade was already full. His second star jade will be opened soon!

This terrifying cultivation speed can only be the attribute of a genius!

After thinking carefully, Lin Tong surmised that this should be related to Liu Yi's strange condition.

The strength needed to successfully open the second star jade is many times more bigger than the power that was required to open the first star jade.

But Liu Yi's forces are actually double.

One part is the Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra red stream of qi, the other part is the white stream of qi that was bestowed by Guyu!

Liu Yi's red stream of qi has amassed a massive amount of favorable impression in these two days. His progress is simply astonishing.

His white stream of qi was even more strange. It seemed to have a competition with the red stream of qi. As long as the red stream of qi grows, the white stream of qi will also grow.

This dual power-up made the originally difficult to cultivate star jade, amazingly quick to increase!

Lin Tong slightly narrowed her eyes. She used her unique ability, the star jade eyes.

She immediately saw the star jade world in Liu Yi's body.

There is a small dark world inside the body of Liu Yi.

There was a total of twenty-eight star jade inside this world.

This was what made Lin Tong jealous of the universe diagram of human's

immortal cultivation. All of the star jade was there. But only one of them is bright. The others were all bleak.

Liu Yi's "Jiao" star jade exudes a charming radiance. It was simultaneously entwined with the red and white stream of qi. The two stream of qi slowly flew out to form two rays of light and fell laterally to another star jade not far from it.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 50

That star jade is the “Kang” star jade, which was also dark.

But this “Kang” star jade was quite different from the other star jade. This star jade was having a slight flare as the result of those red and white streams of qi that were wound up on it.

This proves that this star jade will bursts open at any time. As long as Liu Yi has the opportunity, this star jade will be lit.

Lin Tong looked at her own immortal cultivation’s universe chart.

In this pitch-black universe there were only four lonely star jade that were brightly lit.

A red light was connected to this four star jade and then dissipated somewhere in its effort to establish the fifth star jade.

‘Ai, this is so unfair.’ Lin Tong lament in her heart.

Human really were the darling of the Heaven, their immortal cultivation were much more efficient than the demon.

The six beings were: Buddha, Devil, Immortal, Demon, Human, and Ghost.

Among these six, human were the true gifted one, their immortal cultivation rate is the fastest!

After Human cultivate to a certain extent, they will enter the world of immortals.

In addition to that, human can also do the Devil and the Buddha cultivation!

If that human were to die and their vitality was to linger, they can become a vengeful ghost and enter the Asura path cultivation to become the King of Ghost.

As for Demons, they have to strive really hard to be able to enter this cultivation path.

But their cultivation pace were many times slower!



But that is not to say that Demon were useless because they can absorb the essence of the Sun and the Moon, which human can't do.

Since the ancient times, humans cannot cultivate the Demon Cultivation, because the body structure of Human and Demon were completely different!

Unless a human die an unnatural death, become a vengeful ghost and then possessed a plant or an animal, and re-cultivate to become a real demon.

But Liu happens to be the most special existence!

There were the immortal and demon powers that interacted inside his body.

So to said, he, as a human, can absorb the essence of the Sun and the Moon.

And also, as a demon cultivator, his 28 star jade were already inside his universe chart of the immortal cultivation!

'So, what the hell is he?'

The unique advantage of human and demon were all possessed by him!

And so on!

When Lin Tong was feeling envy, jealousy, and hatred, she suddenly understand about something.

The white power of the immortal....

The immortal power...came from the upright and integrity of the heart!

The more firm and persistent the heart is, the more formidable is the immortal power.

And Liu Yi always has a righteous heart!

As long as his righteousness doesn't dissipate, his immortal power will always be greater than his demonic power!

If Liu Yi doesn't have any uprightness, his immortal power will immediately wither away.

By that time, Liu Yi will be reduce to a mere demon and become that black belly Liu Yi.

Lin Tong suddenly began to worry.

To be honest...she doesn't like the black belly Liu Yi...

'Although Liu Yi usually looked like a fool...but...he kinda cute!' Lin Tong thought.

'Pei, pei! What am I thinking!'

The black belly Liu Yi was obviously more scary. Perhaps he will realize Lin Tong's intention and then seal her forever, never letting her slip from his control!

The silly Liu Yi was easier to cheat on and more obedient!

'Right, that's it, that's exactly it!'

'Therefore, I can't let Liu Yi's demonic strength grow too fast, lest he completely degenerate to become a demon.'

'Liu Yi, this big miss plan is for your own good. Don't think that this big miss didn't care for you!'

'Humph!'

"But...the second star jade did begin to have some activity!"

Seeing Lin Tong was silent for a long time, Liu Yi suddenly asked.

"Why are you asking so much nonsense? I told you to concentrate on your cultivation training!" Lin Tong woke up and then charmingly roared in anger.

"Also, pay attention when you pick up a fight! Keep your own nature and don't let that be eroded by evil! You hear me!?"

"I know...Fox sister..."

Liu Yi nodded again and again, "I also thought that my other self, made me uncomfortable...he let me feel....disgust with myself."

"He is the evil in your heart. You must defeat him!"

Lin Tong cautioned him.

"If you turned into him a couple more times, maybe it will become permanent!"

“I, I don’t want that!”

Liu Yi waved his hand and hastily said, “I don’t want to change permanently into him!”

“Then you must control yourself!”

After that, Lin Tong shut her eyes to save her spiritual power.

“I know! I will certainly strive to correct myself!”

Liu Yi nodded and continued to concentrate on his cultivation technique.

He began to mobilize the power inside his body and tried to attack his second star jade.

He wanted to try if he can break through this second star jade!

So that his strength can improve tremendously!

‘Come on, Liu Yi, you can do it!’ He cheered himself.

Liu Yi began to go all out to control the stream of qi inside his body so that it continuously attack the second star jade, “Kang.”

The white stream of qi was being led by the red stream of qi in attacking the star jade, “Kang.”

Originally, there was no movement in that “Kang” star jade. But now, it suddenly started to vibrate and also exude a continuous humming sound.

The red and white, two rays of light were continuously impacting this “Kang” star jade, making this “Kang” star jade trembled without end.

Liu Yi felt that he almost succeeded...

Just a little bit...

As long as he add a little more power...that would be enough!

‘Let me add a little more of my power!’ He thought.

At that moment, inside his spiritual environment, Liu Yi’s hair turned slightly red.

Lin Tong, who was sitting opposite of him, was surprised. She opened her eyes to look at the cross-legged Liu Yi in front of her.

“O, heaven....such a powerful demonic energy...”

“Bang!”

The two streams of qi simultaneously impacted the “Kang” star jade.

The “Kang” star jade bursts into a dazzling brilliance. Liu Yi also shared part of this brilliance. He suddenly opened his eyes.

It was a couple of slightly reddish eyes. But, in the blink of an eye, the red faded and turned into golden yellow.

Golden eyes....

This is the unique characteristic of the Heavenly Fox!

Moreover, Liu Yi’s short black hair turned silver. Meanwhile, his hair was continuously elongated, making his original an inch long hair turned into a flowing long hair inside this spiritual environment. (TL: I’m imagining Inuyasha XD) His disposition completely changed. He is no longer that simple-minded foolish boy. Instead, the corner of his mouth had a grin, while his eyes flowed an evil demonic energy of a juvenile.

“So...there’s a beautiful little fox inside my body eh?”

Liu Yi was standing there with a crooked smile.

Meanwhile, he held out his hand, conjured up a red hairband with his power and fitted it to his flowing long hair behind him.

Lin Tong suddenly felt numb all over her body.

The golden eyes can see through all the illusions.

That means her real face behind the mask (real intention) certainly can be seen through by the opposite party!

‘Liu Yi...What have you become?’ She thought.

“The presence of other people inside my body....although she is a beautiful young girl, it’s a bit uncomfortable.”

Liu Yi said. After that, in a flash, his body suddenly moved according to the Spirit Fox Steps and instantly arrived in front of Lin Tong.

Lin Tong immediately shocked. She also used the Spirit Fox Steps to

instantly back out.

But when she just ran two steps, her body was already grabbed back by Liu Yi's left hand.

"Little miss, don't run so fast. Do you want me to taste the joy of pursuing you?"

Liu Yi's face was suddenly stuck in front of Lin Tong's face. He then attached his mouth to her ear and whispered.

The breath that blew into Lin Tong's ear made her itch.

Liu Yi's eyes fell into Lin Tong's face. They were so close. Being stared by his golden eyes so close like this instantly made her heart beat fast!

Golden Eyes!

The eyes of charm!

This unique ability of the Heavenly Fox can forcibly upgrade the favorable impression of anyone who was gazed at by this eyes.

The specific of this upgrade (how many it increase) depends on the personal charm.

But Lin Tong felt that her own favorable impression toward Liu Yi was instantly increased to a number no less than 30!

When she looked back at Liu Yi, her face was already red. Her rapid heart beat was clearly felt by her.

'This is bad, this is really, really bad...' She thought.

Her will to fight...was gone....

She just wants to be held in Liu Yi's arms....

'Oh, Heavens...'

'These golden eyes were really terrifying!'

'The Heavenly Fox was actually this powerful....'

'But how could Liu Yi turned into a Heavenly Fox....'

'In the end, who is going to explain what this is all about, ah, ah, ah, ah!'

“You seemed a bit scared...”

Liu Yi softly said, “Don’t be afraid....I’ll make it a bit less painful for you...”

With that, Liu Yi’s hand reached out and lightly pinched Lin Tong’s neck.

Lin Tong cannot even fight back. Her neck was getting tightened by Liu Yi’s pinch.

Soon, Lin Tong’s sad eyes became dark.

In a moment, her neck will certainly snap.

By that time, her spirit will be completely absorbed by Liu Yi to become his strength.

‘Why, why is this happening to me....’

“Liu Yi....I, I am sorry....”

Lin Tong managed to squeeze out these words from her throat.

“Don’t worry, your suffering will end soon. Be good, ok....”

Liu Yi said with his mouth. An evil smile was still hanging on his lips.

But at this time, his body suddenly shivered.

His two golden eyes turned into black again.

“Let go of....let go of my Fox sister!”

Liu Yi’s mouth uttered a roar.

“Silly boy! Why, why did you come out to create trouble at this time!?”

Liu Yi changed back again. He looked at Lin Tong with his golden eyes and sternly said.

“This person is just a pest! She’s just using you! I’m going to do a good thing for the both of us!”

“Leave!”

Liu Yi changed back, his black eyes nervously looked at Lin Tong.

“Fox sister...I won’t let anyone hurt you!”

“You idiot! You’re going to regret this!”

“Get out!”

Liu Yi suddenly roared. His body blasted out a ring of violent wave.

His hair shortened and became black again. His golden eyes were also dissipated.

With his black eyes back, his sinister appearance was also gone, making Lin Tong visibly relieved.

“Fox sister ....I, I’m sorry ....”

Liu Yi quickly loosened his hand.

Lin Tong dropped to the ground. She was panting and glad to be alive!

“I didn’t know how could this happen....How on earth did I....”

Liu Yi watched his hands with fear.

“What did you just do? ....How could you turned into a demon so fast!?”

Lin Tong also looked at Liu Yi with horror.

Just a moment ago, Liu Yi hasn’t formed his demonic power. But, with the emergence of his other personality, his demonic power started to shape up in an embryo form.

“I, I don’t know....I was just trying to open my second star jade....When it appeared to be a success...I suddenly fainted. Hence, I didn’t know anything that happens after that....”

“Are you an idiot!?”

Lin Tong suddenly can’t help but scold, “I told you to proceed step by step; Cultivate slowly! While your foundation was still not solid and your mental state was not stable, you anxiously opened the “Kang” star jade! Are you so anxious to power up?”

“No, I’m not!”

Liu Yi shook his head again and again and honestly said.

“I just....want to progress a bit quick....so that I can help to break Fox sister’s seal a bit earlier....”

“You...”

Lin Tong suddenly foolishly stood there.



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 51

“Liu Yi, can you come with me after school?”

In the last class in the afternoon, a classmate in front of Liu Yi suddenly passed him a piece of paper.

When Liu Yi opened it, he was somewhat excited.

It turned out to be from Ma Yixuan.

This girl's favorability value was -50 now. With that value, how could she pass him a note? Moreover, why did she want to meet him after school?

After this last class, the school is over.

After the third year students graduated, the first and the second year students have the freedom to study wherever they want in the evening. They can come to school or just stay at home.

Liu Yi always chooses to study by himself in his home at night because he wants to save money by eating in his house.

The food stall near the school is expensive and not very tasty.

It's better to go home. His mom's home cook is the most delicious!

“Trap, just by a look I already knew that it was clearly a trap!

Lin Tong's voice rang in Liu Yi's ear, “You have to listen to this big miss, don't go!”

“Even if it's a trap....I like to hear what does she want to tell me.”

Although Liu Yi ultimately failed in the breakthrough of the second star jade, it made him comprehend an ability.

Which is, he now can convey his thought to Lin Tong through his spiritual environment (previously spiritual knowledge field).

So he didn't have to talk to himself like a crazy person whenever he talk to Lin Tong. This made Liu Yi felt more like a normal person.

“Are you an idiot?”

Lin Tong thought that Liu Yi was too silly, “Did you forget what she did to you previously? Do you want to be used by her forever?”

“No....I also have some words that I want to tell her.”

Liu Yi said to Lin Tong, “Fox sister, I held these words inside my stomach for a long time....If I don’t tell her, I think I’m going to regret it.”

“Whatever! I don’t care!”

After that, Lin Tong fumingly lie on her stomach on top of Liu Yi’s head without saying any word.

Lin Tong’s heart was also somewhat shocked.

Because, without any hesitation, Liu Yi had tried his hardest to break the second star jade to unlock her seal earlier.

Lin Tong’s heart was somewhat sour now.

Honestly speaking, since Lin Tong was still a child, besides her master, nobody else has been good toward her...

As for Liu Yi...she clearly has been lying to him, using him....

But this foolish kid actually treats her kindly.

Consequently, Lin Tong’s heart has become increasingly shaky because of this.

‘Master....I have been deceiving Liu Yi for my own selfish need....’ Lin Tong thought.

‘Am, am I wrong?’

‘Master, you taught me to look out for myself, or heaven and earth will combine to destroy me....’ (Everyman for himself) ‘This saying....is that true....?’

‘I, I’m quite confused now....’

When Lin Tong was still in a daze, the school bell rang out.

Ma Yixuan, who sat in the front row, immediately stood up, made a hooking sign with her finger toward Liu Yi and then left the classroom.

Liu Yi took a deep breath and followed her.

“Sis’ Die!”

Seeing this scene, Wang Lele nervously pulled Murong Die and said, “Liu Yi gege actually went after that Ma Yixuan! Could it be that they want to rekindle their old relationship!”

“What nonsense!”

Murong Die suddenly rolled her eyes at Wang Lele, “They didn’t have any relationship to rekindle. Besides, even if he followed her, it doesn’t have anything to do with us!”

“But, but....”

“But what? Let’s go downstairs to eat, this Lady is hungry!”

“Em, ok....”

Wang Lele failed to counter Murong Die and have to faithfully go out to eat with Murong Die.

But at this time, Murong Die’s mood was also strange. When she saw Liu Yi followed Ma Yixuan out of the classroom, her heart was feeling annoyed.

‘Where did I do wrong!?’ She thought.

Murong Die ruthlessly beat herself down and forced herself to go out to eat.

Even though she has little appetite.

“Ma Yixuan, where are you taking me?”

After following Ma Yixuan out of the classroom, without uttering a word, she continuously led Liu Yi to the upper part of the building, making Liu Yi cannot help but ask.

“You’ll know it when we arrive.”

Ma Yixuan didn’t explain any further; she kept walking upstairs.

Without any other choice Liu Yi can only walk behind her.

“This woman definitely has no good intention! This trap is so obvious!”

Lin Tong came back to life this time. While continuing to lie on top of Liu Yi’s head, she reminded him, “You know it’s a trap, why are you willingly

jump into it!? Liu Yi, do you have some problems with your head!?”

“Fox sister, you don’t have to teach me that. If I run into a problem, I must not shrink back!”

Liu Yi clenched his fists and talked to Lin Tong via his spiritual environment, “I don’t want to be like the yesterday Liu Yi, who always run away from a problem. If I’m still a coward like that, I won’t be able to overcome the fear and anger within me. If I can’t overcome my fear and anger...My other self will emerge! I will not allow him to hurt Fox sister again!”

Lin Tong was immediately silent.

She really doesn’t know how to persuade this foolish Liu Yi.

But although this Liu Yi was a fool, his foolishness made her humbled.

‘Liu Yi, oh Liu Yi, where exactly did your bravery come from!?’ She lamented in her heart.

‘Did he especially do this in order to release me from my seal?’

‘Guyu that female immortal...why, why did you have to seal me inside this guy’s right hand....?’

‘Why did I happen to meet this guy....just when I want to try to absorb a human’s essence....?’

‘Did someone play a prank on me?’

‘God, are you joking with me, Lin Tong?’

Ma Yixuan went to the roof and opened the door.

Liu Yi never came to this rooftop because the school doesn’t allow the students to enter here.

Although Liu Yi doesn’t like to study, he actually doesn’t dare to violate the school’s regulation.

“Come on in.”

Ma Yixuan went to the rooftop and beckoned Liu Yi to follow her.

Liu Yi took a deep breath and entered the rooftop.

“Bang!”

When he just entered the rooftop, the door behind him immediately slammed shut.

Liu Yi quickly looked back and saw a student leaned against the door. That student sneered at him.

By this time, Liu Yi was surrounded by dozens of menacingly looking students. They were all watching him.

Ma Yixuan folded her arms and proudly stood behind those students, laughing at him.

‘Sure enough...I was duped again...’

Liu Yi can’t help but sigh in his heart.

It seemed like he and Ma Yixuan really have nothing to say anymore.

“Liu Yi, you’ve came.”

A student with a dyed hair came forward. He was toying with a knuckle that commonly know as the brass knuckle. He looked at Liu Yi and sneered again and again.

Liu Yi’s heart suddenly couldn’t help but trembled a bit.

This yellow-haired guy was the same guy who slapped him in the mouth yesterday. This guy is Yuan Shaojun’s attendant.

He also warned him to keep a distance from Ma Yixuan.

“I, your father, warned you yesterday, but you didn’t listen, did you?”

That yellow haired guy touched the brass knuckle in his right hand and wickedly smiled.

“I, Big bing, have crisscrossed this school for two years. But I never met anyone who dared not to listen to my words. If I don’t give you a lesson today, I’m afraid you won’t have any long-term memory.”

“Liu Yi, don’t be afraid! Beat him!”

Seeing that Liu Yi seemed to have some fear, Lin Tong, who was lying on top of Liu Yi’s head, continuously exclaimed.

Although Liu Yi has practiced cultivation, yesterday he was just an ordinary student.

Faced with this scenario, his heart was still somewhat afraid.

But, he has to overcome this fear...

Otherwise, his other self will awaken...

“Li, Li Bing.”

Liu Yi took a deep breath and adjusted his condition with the breathing technique.

In an instant, his body became fresh and cool, and his mind was calm. His fear was almost dissipated.

“Don’t try to bully people relying on your friends, I’m not afraid of you.”

“Hahaha! This kid’s mouth is pretty hard. I want to see whether or not your mouth is harder than my brass knuckle!”

After that, Li Bing clenched his right fist, which had the brass knuckles on it, and threw a punch toward Liu Yi’s face.

These bunch of students was all unruly.

Li Bing doesn’t have the slightest fear that Liu Yi will make a problem for him because there were many people on his side. If Liu Yi were to report on them, they would just deny it.

If that way were to fail, they would just bear the consequence together. In any case, the school couldn’t possibly expel all of them. At most, everyone will carry a punishment.

This kind of punishment wouldn’t matter to them.

But if this brass knuckles really fall into Liu Yi’s face, his face will be broken.

Fortunately, the current Liu Yi is different than the yesterday Liu Yi. Li Bing’s fist trajectory was very clear in his eyes.

His grandpa has said to him not to stir up trouble.

But if the trouble comes to him, he must not be afraid!

Plus last night he has been training with Lin Tong the whole night. Thus, Li Bing has no more of a threat to him.

Liu Yi only needs to slightly take a step back to evade the brass knuckles punch from Li Bing.

“Pa!”

“Mom!”

The adjacent student was accidentally injured. Li Bing’s punch was too powerful. That brass knuckles missed Liu Yi and directly hit the student’s arm on his left side, making that student broke down in tears of pain. That student sat down and clutched his arm.

“Bastard! You dare to hide from me!”

The student near the door behind Liu Yi suddenly stepped forward. He stretched out his hands, grabbed Liu Yi from behind, and locked Liu Yi’s shoulders.

“Lift him up!”

Lin Tong jumped toward Liu Yi’s shoulder and shouted in his ear.

Liu Yi took the hint. Liu Yi held out his left hand over his shoulder and directly grabbed the collar of that student behind him.

Meanwhile, he kicked back his left foot to tilted the center of gravity of that student.

After practicing immortal cultivation, Liu Yi’s physical strength has been enhanced. With a roar, he bent over and pulled the student behind him directly to the front and then slammed that student to the floor.

This display of skill scared the hell out of Li Bing and them.

‘Fuck me!’ Li Bing cursed in his heart.

‘Has this kid been training?’

“Beautiful!”

Lin Tong clapped her small paws and cheered up for Liu Yi.

After Liu Yi smoothly resolved the problem of that student from behind

him, he was visibly relaxed.

Sure enough, just as Lin Tong said, after practicing the body technique of the immortal cultivation, it's easy for him to deal with these ordinary students.

Ma Yixuan, who stood nearby, was also surprised. It was as if she was looking at Liu Yi as a completely different person that she doesn't recognize.

Is this the Liu Yi that she knew?

The coward, timid, and physically weak Liu Yi?

"Damn, what are you afraid of? We have so many people. Let's beat him together!"

Li Bing loudly clamored and then, with a group of students, came at Liu Yi.



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 52

Liu Yi took several steps back and finally have his back against the door behind him.

There was no turning back or a U-turn to escape.

But Liu Yi didn't want to escape. If he escapes this time, others will look down upon by him for the rest of his life.

"Let's see where you're going to hide this time!"

Li Bing was the fiercest among them. With the brass knuckle on his right hand, he threw a vicious punch at Liu Yi's nose.

In the past, there was a movie called 'Young and Dangerous.' Although this film was quite good, it also has a lasting influence on the younger generation.

Many students and teenager tried to emulate one of the gangster characters in that movie.

Yuan Shaojun is one of them and "Chan Ho-Nam" is his idol.

While this Li Bing, from the beginning, always calls himself as the "Mountain Chicken." (Referring to the character Chicken in the movie)

But today this "village" chicken is doomed to be beaten up.

Liu Yi looked at chicken's incoming fist and just moved his head slightly to the left.

Suddenly he heard the "bang" sound.

"Ah, ah, ah! My hand!"

Li Bing's fist directly hit the iron door.

Although he wore the brass knuckle, the reaction force that was acted against his fingers was a lot worse. His entire right hand went numb and aching. His brass knuckle directly fell to the ground; producing a clattering sound.

Liu Yi did not hesitate. He threw a kick at Li Bing, making the later stepped a couple of steps back and then sank to the ground.

Li Bing was a bit silly. Not just because of the pain, but also because of the shock.

He can't comprehend why the coward and loser Liu Yi from two days ago suddenly became this masterful!

"Bam, bam!"

Using his Spirit Fox Steps, Liu Yi wandered in front of these several students and, occasionally, shot his palm into their chests.

Liu Yi just used his plain palm and not his Great Brilliant Sun Palm.

Otherwise, these students were going to be vomiting blood.

However, even without using his palm skill, each and every one of the students that were hit by his palm were thrown upside down for over a meter and fell to the ground.

After Liu Yi threw three of them in a row, the legs of the remaining students, who surrounded him, were shaking.

Liu Yi was supernaturally strong like the Buddha's Warrior Attendant now, who would still dare to go after him!

"Ha.....ha....."

Liu Yi's mouth was gasping.

Although he is now a lot stronger than the average person, and these students are not his opponent, once the fight is up, he also consumes a lot of his physical strength.

If he didn't have the breathing technique to restore his energy, Liu Yi might have tired of sweating.

"You, you are Liu Yi..."

Ma Yixuan was standing there while clutching her mouth with a look of disbelief.

"Did...did you go to a Karate training course?"

Ma Yixuan thought that Liu Yi had secretly gone to a Karate training and whatnot and finally showed his masterful skill at this time.

“Ma Yixuan.”

Liu Yi steadied his breathing and then walked slowly toward Ma Yixuan.

“Don’t, don’t come here! I’m warning you, although you have some skills, you’re certainly not my husband’s opponent! If you lay a finger on me, my husband definitely will break your legs!”

Ma Yixuan stepped back a couple of steps and started to scream as if Liu Yi will going to do something to her.

Seeing her distorted and screaming face, Liu Yi suddenly felt a burst of grief.

‘Could, couldn’t he save his image in this woman’s heart?’ Liu Yi thought.

Liu Yi opened his Eyes Of Favorable Impression and looked at the panic-stricken Ma Yixuan.

Favorability, -59.

It seemed, he really can’t save his image.

Liu Yi can only lightly sigh in his heart.

“Forget it, just leave.”

Liu Yi suddenly waved his hand, “I never liked you.”

“Crazy, who wants to be liked by you!”

Ma Yixuan nervously cried, “Who do you think you are? Stop dreaming! Even if you can beat some guys, so what?! Your family is still poor, and you’re still a scrap wood! Your whole life is doomed to just do a menial waste wood job!”

“Enough!”

Liu Yi’s heart ached. His eyes were slightly red. His body suddenly burst out a violent, murderous aura.

Golden threads that were similar in size to the small blood vessel in the eyes suddenly emerged in his eyes.

At the same time, a strong demonic aura bloomed and filled the entire rooftop.

Ma Yixuan felt her body instantly went soft. Both of her legs were numb, and her lower body parts went sour. She suddenly has the urge to pee really badly.

At that time, she suddenly felt that the Liu Yi before her was terrifying....

“Liu Yi! Don’t be a demon! Wake up for this Lady, ah, ah, ah!”

Lin Tong, who was lying on Liu Yi’s shoulder, constantly cried, trying to wake him up.

But Liu Yi suddenly flicked out his hand and threw out Lin Tong from his shoulder.

Lin Tong felt pain\*\*cried and fell to the ground.

“Smelly Liu Yi, you dare to throw out this Lady!? Ouch, ouch, ouch, you big oaf!”

By now, she can only go all out and use her spiritual power to preserve Liu Yi’s consciousness.

After all the trouble to gather her spiritual power, perhaps she would lose it all here.

Lin Tong bit her mouth and, with a firm and resolute look, turned into a red light and entered Liu Yi’s body.

At the same time, Liu Yi suddenly shuddered, and the little bit of gold in his eyes faded.

Lin Tong used all of her spiritual power to suppress the awakening of Liu Yi’s other personality.

He just stood there, feeling dazed and weak; He cannot even feel his own power.

Ma Yixuan and them were frightened. When they saw Liu Yi’s imposing aura was loosened, they all started to act. Whether running or crawling, they all escaped from the roof.

On top of the roof, there was only one person left, Liu Yi.

Cold sweat poured out of his body. He felt like he was going to collapse.

“I’m indeed a waste wood...”

Liu Yi couldn’t help but cursed himself, “I almost let the other me to awake....”

There was no movement from Lin Tong at this time. She probably was resting because she has used much of her spiritual power.

At this moment, Liu Yi felt that there was a huge force in the sky that was continuously approaching him!

He suddenly looked up in surprise when a flash of cold mountain slammed down in front of him.

The resultant shock wave forced Liu Yi to take a couple of steps backward.

When the white light dispersed, a beautiful woman with a hairdo stood there.

“It’s, it’s you!”

Liu Yi was surprised to see the beautiful woman in white in front of him.

“The source of that huge demonic aura....turned out to be you!”

The sharp black eyes of the woman in white fell on Liu Yi, her eyebrows slightly frowned.

“I, Gu Yu, after slaying demons for many years...this is the first time I saw a situation like yours....”

Guyu said, and then moved her legs toward Liu Yi.

“What do you want? Don’t come here!”

Liu Yi tightly held his arms and backed away step by step.

“Cih! I’m not going to take advantage of you!”

Seeing the knee-jerk reaction from Liu Yu, Gu Yu instantly felt a headache.

‘How could he think of me as a female pervert!’ She thought.

‘Moreover, how could his reaction to me be this big!’

“I just want to remove your power!”

Gu Yu said and held out her hand toward Liu Yi.

“Why?!”

Liu Yi suddenly was unwilling.

‘Where did this crazy woman come from!?’ He thought.

‘How could she keep on looking for me for trouble!’

‘She also wants to remove my power!’

‘On what ground!?’

Liu Yi’s heart felt uncomfortable.

“This is for your own good.”

Gu Yu stretched out her right hand and slowly said.

“The six beings were all different. You are a mortal, and a mortal has a mortal way. The other way doesn’t belong to you.”

With that, Gu Yu’s body started to lit up with brilliant white rays of light.

Liu Yi suddenly felt that his whole body shuddered. His body seemed to be locked by Gu Yu. And then, with an inexplicable force, his body was dragged in an unnatural way toward Gu Yu.

“Stop!”

Liu Yi exclaimed again and again.

He must not let her eliminate his power!

Absolutely not!

“Mortal, go back to become normal again!”

Gu Yu said, and then gently attached her palm toward Liu Yi’s forehead.

Liu Yi suddenly had a feeling of nausea, as if something in his body was continuously being pumped out.

‘No....’

Liu Yi shouted in his heart.

‘I don’t want to become an ordinary man!’

‘I, Liu Yi, definitely must succeed and do great things!’

'I don't want to be normal!'

Liu Yi's eyes opened.

Two flashes of white bursts from his eyes.

And an immortal power burst out from his forehead and directly hit Gu Yu, forcing her to take a couple of steps back. Her two beautiful immortal's eyes were staring at Liu Yi in amazement.

"That...was an immortal power!"

She was shocked to the extreme, "That should be the immortal power that was left by me inside his body....But why is it suddenly become so much more powerful now?"

After erupting this immortal power, Liu Yi calmed down a bit. He squatted down on the floor, gasping for breath.

Gu Yu stood opposite of him. She looked at this – according to her feeling, inconceivable men.

"Could it be....that this is a heaven's arrangement?"

Gu Yu's eyes were constantly changed.

"But if I let him go....I wouldn't know if it's a blessing or a curse...."

Gu Yu continuously weigh on what she should do.

"His demonic power....was protected by his immortal power...If I want to get rid of his power, I have to completely crush his soul, and that would be tantamount to killing him....But if I don't kill him, he could become a great demon that harms humans. What should I do then...."

Gu Yu was in a dilemma.

An immortal like her have a rule that forbid her to kill a mortal!

This person is not even a big evil. Instead, he was even a little silly.

There's something wrong if she just straight up killing him.

After thinking for a long time, her eyes suddenly lit up.

"Since god has given you half the choice, I'll take that bet."

After that, her right hand flashed a flashing rays of light, and she immediately poked Liu Yi's temple with her index finger.

Liu Yi has no time to react. He only felt like there was a flower before him and just like that, Gu Yu's index finger was already on top of his temple.

Before his own black eyes.

A heap of knowledge instantly appeared in his mind.

Liu Yi kneeled on the ground; his mind was in a mess.

A Heart Sutra appeared in his mind.

"Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra...."

Guyu unexpectedly has given him her own technique?

What kind of technique is this Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra?

When Liu Yi gave this Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra a glance, the white stream of qi inside of him suddenly began to unceasingly revolve in agreement with that Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra!

Liu Yi was suddenly scared.

'Heaven!' He thought

'I don't even know if this technique was good or bad, it actually already started to cultivate!'

'I wouldn't turn into a devil who never shrink from any crime would I!?'

Liu Yi was suddenly worried, his white stream of qi was revolving faster and faster. A flash of flower instantly appeared before his eyes again, making him directly fainted and lay on the rooftop.



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 53

Liu Yi looked at his tuxedo. He was standing in the middle of a chapel with a group of people, and they were all waiting for a man who will give the blessing.

A bride in her wedding dress slowly walked from the side.

Liu Yi was surprised.

‘WTF, this is my wedding?’ He thought.

‘Who is the bride?’

Liu Yi tried to see the bride’s face.

But her face was under the white gauze that is hard to see.

‘What is the bride look like....?’

Liu Yi was incredibly curious.

How could he doesn’t know how his bride looks like?

At this time, the priest came over and asked.

“Liu Yi, will you take her as your wife?”

“Huh?”

Liu Yi was suddenly shocked, “I don’t even know what she looks like....”

“Then you lift up the bride’s gauze and take a look.”

The priest solemnly said, “This is your right as the husband.”

“Oh.....”

Liu Yi quickly stretched out his trembling hands and lifted up the bride’s wedding gauze.

He thought, ‘Unbelievable, I Liu Yi, am finally married!’

‘Awesome!’

He slowly lifted up the gauze, but the bride seemingly could not wait; She urged.

“Liu Yi, Liu Yi!”

“Fuck me....”

When the wedding gauze flipped out, Qin Chao saw the face of a winking Chen Cai in front of him. His face and his whole body suddenly turned into a statue.

“Liu Yi, Liu Yi wake up, wake up!”

At this time, Chen Cai’s voice came into Liu Yi’s ear.

Liu Yi suddenly opened his eyes and looked the big face of Chen Cai that was parked close to his head.

“Ah!”

He scrambled to climb up, but he nearly slipped and almost fell because of it!

Liu Yi looked down and saw that there was a thin layer of ice above this rooftop.

Along with him climbing up from the floor, the ice on the floor has begun to melt.

“My god, are you OK?”

Chen Cai looked at Liu Yi in surprise and asked.

“I am a bit worried after you went out for so long but did not come back....Wang Lele said you were on the roof, so I hurriedly came up to see you. Why are you doing here alone? Were you masturbating?”

Chen Cai looked around and said, “This is a good place with a great view. Masturbating here will certainly have a unique flavor!”

“Masturbate your sister...!”

Liu Yi glared at him, then said, “Didn’t I tell you that I was practicing Immortal Cultivation? Just a moment ago, I....”

“Don’t tell me you’re just practicing Cultivation?”

Seeing the melted Ice on the floor, Chen Cai couldn’t help but ask.

“Yes...I was cultivating a technique that I was unable to make a head or tail

of it...”

Remembering the white clothed beautiful woman, who injected into his head the teaching of a technique, Liu Yi can't help but be suspicious and envy.

‘What does that beauty really wants with me?’ He thought.

‘Why not just take away my power, instead of giving me this technique?’

‘Moreover, that technique seems to cultivate automatically by itself; I can't even prevent it....’

Lu Yi felt that his white stream of qi already circulated in a different circulation than before. It was also more active and more formidable.

Meanwhile, this white stream of qi also brought him a kind of cool and refreshing feelings, as if his consciousness seems to be more alert and aware.

“Spill it, what technique is that? Don't just tease me!”

Chen Cai curled his lips, “The cultivation technique that you taught me has no use! That stream of qi or whatever, it never came out! It only made me fart twice! Since you're alright, I'm going to go back first. I'm going to start studying tomorrow night.”

Then he turned around to go downstairs.

Before leaving, he turned his head and said to Liu Yi.

“You're not really using drugs aren't you?”

“Using your sister!”

“If you don't want to tell me then just forget it! I'm going back to the classroom to read novels!”

Chen Cai waved his hand, opened the door and went downstairs.

Liu Yi stood on the rooftop alone, worrying about stuff.

‘Why Chen Cai can't practice the cultivation technique from Lin Tong?’

“Fool, you think everyone can practice the Immortal Cultivation!?”

At this time, Lin Tong flew out from Liu Yi's body and floated before him.

She held out her small paw and said.

“Especially the heart sutra that was given to you by this Lady...how could the average person be able to practice it?

“That’s because it’s the precious book of the Demon race....Someone who doesn’t have the Demonic power will not be able to cultivate it....”

“So that’s why....too bad then.” Liu Yi sighed.

“Too bad what?....You are really not appreciating your gift....Also, why did your body have another set of heart sutra? What did you just do?”

This is the question that Lin Tong really wanted to ask!

After restoring some of her spiritual power, Lin Tong suddenly felt a strong Immortal Power inside Liu Yi’s body, so, she immediately woke up and went out to ask.

Liu Yi then honestly told Lin Tong all about his encounter with Gu Yu just now.

“What....There was actually such a thing?!”

After listening to the story from Liu Yi, Lin Tong finally felt that she had enough.

Not only Gu Yu did not eliminate her, she even taught Liu Yi her Immortal Cultivation technique!

‘What is happening here...’ Lin Tong was bewildered.

‘What kind of Heart Sutra did Gu Yu impart to Liu Yi?’

“What kind of Heart Sutra did she give you?”

“Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra.”

“Oh my god...”

Lin Tong covered her mouth and unbelievably looked at Liu Yi.

‘Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra....’ She thought.

‘Isn’t this the Immortal World’s high-rank heart sutra!’

Lin Tong can’t believe that Gu Yu would be willing to impart Liu Yi such a

high-level Immortal Cultivation technique....

She was completely baffled.

“Even if she gave you that, why did you immediately cultivate it? Are you crazy?”

Without any other option, Lin Tong can only put the blame to Liu Yi.

“I didn’t want to cultivate it....but the white stream of qi inside my body immediately active and started to circulate according to that cultivation technique.”

Liu Yi quickly explained.

‘Could it be that Gu Yu also cultivated this Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra...So that the immortal power that was left by Gu Yu in Liu Yi’s body will automatically circulate accordingly?’ Lin Tong thought.

‘This should be the case....’

“This heart sutra....what’s it look like?” Lin Tong asked.

Immortal technique is very powerful, especially the high-level one. Although she was somewhat worried, Lin Tong was also curious.

“Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra, consist of nine Heart Sutra. Right now, I’m cultivating the first layer.”

Liu Yi said, “Every time I opened three Star Jade, the heart sutra will increase a layer. Each level increase will improve my strength...there’s also the mysterious icy qi.”

After that, he held out his left hand, and then his entire left hand emitted out a layer of white icy-frost.

“This...immortal technique is really amazing...is it also teaches you how to use this mysterious icy qi?”

Lin Tong asked.

“Em, no....” Liu Yi shook his head.

Lin Tong is well aware that, it was highly likely that Gu Yu imparted this technique to Liu Yi so that he can use it to suppress his demonic energy!

This small fox is very smart, with just a few information, she was able to correctly saw the whole picture.

It seems like the only way to get rid of Liu Yi's power is to kill him.

Moreover, the immortals have many rules. Without any means to bypass those rules, Gu Yu cannot just kill a mortal.

Therefore, Gu Yu can only impart Liu Yi her Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra, so that Liu Yi can suppress his Demonic Energy by himself.

But this doesn't mean that Gu Yu has let Liu Yi off the hook...According to Immortal's behavior, Gu Yu will surely use this immortal energy to pinpoint Liu Yi's location and strictly monitor him!

If Liu Yi did something bad...Gu Yu may personally come to behead Liu Yi first!

"But, I think I can utilize this Mysterious icy qi..."

Liu Yi said, and then he started to imagine as if he was playing a game. He held out his hands, rubbed it together and forced out a white light that was slightly frosty to appear.

Suddenly, a white oval puck was rubbed out by Liu Yi. He then held it in his hand.

"What the hell is this?"

This small fox didn't know about the use of this small oval thing that was created by Liu Yi.

"Grenade."

Liu Yi said. He then threw this icy oval puck to the wall on the adjacent building.

The icy puck flew along a trajectory in the air and boom, it finally exploded along that building's wall.

A gaping hole with about a meter in diameter instantly appeared on that wall.

A frosty ring of ice was plastered all around that hole.

“What...the...hell...is...this!”

Lin Tong didn't know what to say anymore.

“An ice bomb!”

Liu Yi laughed and said, “Don't you think this is useful? This is a ranged attack!”

“Compared to my sect's attack...this ranged attack is quite low in rank!”

Lin Tong could not help but put the cold water on Liu Yi.

“I think it's quite nice...”

Liu Yi shrugged, “In any case, I can't learn more than one attacking technique. This degree of attack is already enough for me...Later on, if I run into a fight, this will surely come in handy.”

He said, still full of expectations of the future, “Wait until I do numerous research....see if I can't develop a more powerful attacking skill...”

“You're not a master in developing an attacking skill...It's best for you to just continue to cultivate!”

“I know, I know, but this skill is quite amusing don't you think....”

Liu Yi said, and then stood at the edge of the building, looked down, rubbed a few ice puck and threw it down.

“Boom boom boom!”

Several icy circle appeared on the floor downstairs. Liu Yi will never be bored playing this.

At this time, a baldy, who happened to walk from a classroom building, was not paying attention and directly stepped on the ice. He slipped and neatly fell to the ground.

“Fuck me!”

“Plop!”

Liu Yi quickly shrank back his head....Bad, he accidentally harmed Director Wang....

‘Amitabha, I don't know anything, I don't know anything....’ He chanted in

his heart.

Liu Yi sat on the rooftop. He was afraid to stand up and return to the classroom.

“Hehe, didn’t you just say that your ice bomb is powerful? I think it’s pretty troublesome!”

Lin Tong could not help but make fun of Liu Yi.

“You, you mustn’t say that...”

Liu Yi smiled. He looked at his hand that was emitting a layer of slightly icy-frost, “Wait until I practice this skill in the spiritual environment tonight....Yesterday, I haven’t mastered the Spirit Fox Steps, but I can use it quite well today!”

“Humph!”

Lin Tong snorted, “Spirit Fox Steps is a profound ability! Your comprehension about that ability is still superficial! But....In any case this is just a skill that is utilizing your white stream of qi, so, it’s okay if you practice it.”

Lin Tong thought that this immortal technique will definitely help Liu Yi in suppressing his Demonic Energy. Therefore, she was not worried about it.

“Really? Thank you, Fox sister! I knew Fox sister is good to me!”

Liu Yi was moved and excitedly said.

Lin Tong’s face was red.

The more silly Liu Yi is, the more she felt bad for him.

Unfortunately, she is a fox...

How could fox felt bad toward other people...

If a fox doesn’t harm a human, how could it be called a good fox...

‘My god, what exactly should I Lin Tong, do!?’ She thought.

‘Master, if you hear my prayers, I beg you to come and save me....’



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 54

“Liu Yi, come on, tell me, from which website did you buy the drugs?!”

A few days later, after the class, Chen Cai finally couldn't bear anymore and, with a sad face, pulled Liu Yi's arm to ask him.

“What drugs? Are you impotent?” Liu Yi could not help but quip.

“Fuck you, you're impotent!”

Chen Cai immediately looked at Liu Yi with clenched jaws and then said in a low voice.

“Didn't you say something about immortal cultivation?....I have practiced your set of broken exercise for days....but without any result at all! You're just messing up with me! Liu Yi, the two of us are best friends; you can't do that to me! At a time like this, you must help out your brother!”

Chen Cai pathetically said, “For our years of friendship....You cannot leave your brother behind, right?”

“The exercise is indeed feasible...but you don't have any talent in immortal cultivation.”

Without better options, Liu Yi had to tell Lin Tong's previous words to Chen Cai.

“Huhuhu, I don't care, I must become powerful like you!”

Chen Cai pulled Liu Yi by the arm, acting like a spoiled brat.

Cold Sweat poured out of Liu Yi...

The nearby boys and girls were pointing their fingers at them.

“Ai....I was confused about why Liu Yi wouldn't have a liking for me....turned out he's gay....”

The sighing sound of the nearby fat girl sneaked into Liu Yi's ear.

‘Fuck me, my sexual orientation is being suspected, I can't let this happen!’  
Liu Yi thought.

He quickly stretched out his left and brushed away Chen Cai's claw.

“Brother....Everyone has their own talent....I’m not a deity, how could I help you....?”

“Then what should we do!? Did you know that I took a fancy of the prettiest girl in the neighboring class for a very long time!? But I have always been afraid to make a confession to her!”

Chen Cai suddenly sighed.

“Ha?”

Liu Yi was shocked, looking at his best friend who also share the same table with him and said, “Did you have a fever? No, that’s not it!”

“Fuck, you’re the one who has the fever! I’m normal, ok!”

“Didn’t you, Chen Cai, always want to conquer all the beautiful women in the world? Why you suddenly constrain yourself to just one woman?”

Liu Yi laughed, “How could you still eyeing a flower in the neighboring class!? This is not like you!”

“Ai, after romancing for so long, I feel tired and empty, so, I want to find a woman to anchor my heart.”

Chen Cai sadly said.

Hearing this, Liu Yi, who was drinking water right now, immediately couldn’t help but spurted it all out, and directly sprayed Chen Cai in the face.

Chen Cai’s face was full of resentment.

“So, sorry....hahaha....I, I just can’t hold back....”

Liu Yi was clutching his stomach, laughing out loud.

“Are you a fountain...?”

Chen Cai wiped off the water on his face with a tissue and glowered at Liu Yi several times.

“Can’t I, the father, have a girl that I like?”

“Can, can, can. Of course you can. Who is she?”

“The girl in the next door priority experimental class, Wang Yuzheng!”

“Who is that?”

Liu Yi blinked his eyes a few times; he absolutely had no recollection of her.

“Damn, are you really a student in this school?”

Chen Cai could not help but complained, “Indeed, previously, your eyeballs were set only to stare at Ma Yixuan’s body. You never paid any attention to other female students.”

“.....”

Liu Yi can’t help but silent.

Ma Yixuan hasn’t attended the class for several days. Liu Yi didn’t know if that was because of what happened the other day, making her afraid of him.

Moreover, Ma Yuanyuan also hasn’t secretly came to his room. Liu Yi was in the dark about this.

“This Wang Yuzheng is the most beautiful woman in the experimental class!”

Chen Cai told Liu Yi, “Moreover, she was different than the wealthy Murong Die and Wang Lele....Wang Yuzheng’s family is ordinary. I also heard that it was a single parent family. Her manner is amiable and approachable. But it’s precisely because of this, I heard that she was being pestered by their classroom bully Lin Huayang. The reason I want to become powerful is because I want to handle this Lin Huayang!”

‘Lin Huayang?’ Liu Yi thought and suddenly remembered, “The Principal’s son?”

“Yes, it’s him. He relied on his father as the Principal to bully other students in school!”

Chen Cai nodded heavily, “He pursue Wang Yuzhen in a particularly barbaric way, clinging to her everyday and making Wang Yuzheng sick of him! If I could deal with Lin Huayang like you handled Lan He, Wang Yuzheng will surely give me a favor!”

“...I suddenly feel the school is so complicated...” Liu Yi mused.

“Boss Liu Yi! From now on you’re my boss ok!”

Chen Cai said, “As long as the boss is willing to help me, little brother will be your horse and ox, I will do your bidding for you!”

“Enough!”

Liu Yi has a headache. This Chen Cai was simply a clown.

However, there’s no fault in liking a girl. Liu Yi himself, once also took a liking at Ma Yixuan.

If Ma Yixuan was willing to give him a chance, perhaps he wouldn’t be like this now.

Fate, sometimes is a marvelous thing.

“Boss....I beg you, please lend your hand for this little brother, ok....” Chen Cai was almost on his knees.

“This....I really can’t help you.”

Liu Yi raised his hand to swear, “I, Liu Yi, swear to you that the exercise is absolutely real, and all the other things that I’ve also said, were all true. If there is a slightest lie, then I, Liu Yi, will never be married!”

“Fuck me! This oath is too fucking vicious!”

Chen Cai was shocked, he firmly believed Liu Yi now.

Men sometimes do swear casually.

But if he swears in the name of his sex life, it must certainly be true!

Which man who wants to make a joke about his own sex life....

“Then what do I do....Could it be that I, Chen Cai, is doomed to be lonely for the rest of my life....”

“Isn’t there anything else that I can help you?”

Seeing Chen Cai mournful look, Liu Yi quickly comforted him, “Perhaps there are other ways....”

“There is...another way!”

Chen Cai’s eyes suddenly lit up and then said, “Wang Yuzheng is a

conservative girl...She certainly likes to be pursued in a traditional way!"

He clapped his hand, "That's right, that's right. I want to write a love letter to her....But Lin Huayang always took a close look at her; Any male students who approach her will be beaten by him....Boss, this delivering the letter thing, will have to depend on you!"

"Okay....I can help you with this." Liu Yi nodded his head.

In any case, Chen Cai is his best friend; Helping his best friend is the same as helping himself.

When he was at his lowest, Chen Cai also never stop giving his support to him.

"Great! Then I will immediately write my love letter in our class! Ai, Although I, Chen Cai, can't be compared with you, boss, in other aspects, I have quite an accomplishment in writing love letters! When my sage passion goes into action, a simple love letter will be very easy!"

After that, Chen Cai lied on the table and started to scribble furiously, strategizing his love letter.

As for Liu Yi, he sat down and began to circulate his red stream of qi within his body.

He doesn't need to control the white stream of qi because it moves by itself.

But to strengthen the red stream of qi, it needs to be manually circulated along the small heavenly circulation and big heavenly circulation, or, he needs to increase his favorable impression among the girls.

Liu Yi didn't enter his virtual environment this time because the teacher of his next lecture is his homeroom teacher.

If that teacher finds him dozing off in his class....

It would be the same as inviting a beating!

Soon, the school bell rang.

Liu Yi's homeroom teacher, a more than fifty years old middle-aged woman, came to the class while clutching the textbook.

Liu Yi's homeroom teacher is an English teacher. To Liu Yi, both English and Math are hieroglyphics.

Especially this time. When the homeroom teacher reached her desk, she immediately announced there will be a sudden test, which instantly made the students felt as if the doomsday arrived.

"I will give you ten minutes to memorize the text on the lesson 13th. After ten minutes, I want to test your recitation. If you failed, you'd have to copy the text 30 times."

"Ah...."

The doomsday arrived, the hell approaches.

Chen Cai cannot even attend his love letter. He widely opened his mouth, just like a toad.

"Ten minutes...teacher, this text is too long..."

Chen Cai pitter-pattered his mouth, and then complained in a single sentence.

"Chen Cai, I'll give you 15 minutes. If you fail to recite, you'll have to copy 50 times."

The homeroom teacher kindly smiled at Chen Cai, which directly made him silly.

'Fuck me...the second kill!' Chen Cai thought.

Liu Yi quickly followed the other students who were preparing to make a complaint, which was to open the English book and desperately started to memorize!

Knowing how long the text is, they don't want their fate to end up like Chen Cai!

"Why don't you meditate and continue your cultivation?"

Feeling that Liu Yi had abandoned his cultivation, Lin Tong quickly flew out from his spiritual environment, turned into a small fox, landed on his desk, and looked at the English book near her feet.

"Don't you know that your present situation may be very dangerous!?"

We'll never know when that white-clothed woman will come looking for you. You cannot relax your cultivation!" Ling Tong warned.

"Compared with that beautiful white-clothed woman...Copying the text is the real disaster...."

Liu Yi bitterly smiled. His eyes unblinkingly looked at the English text.

'Fuck...these are long piles of words...' He thought.

Moreover, there were many English words in that text that Liu Yi didn't understand, which forced him to mark these words so that he can find the meaning in the dictionary later!

But as the matter stand, within ten minutes....he could never memorize all the text!

'Teacher, you're trying to kill your students with this!' Liu Yi complained in his heart.

"Idiot....You're an immortal cultivator now, how could you let this thing stump you!?"

"Immortal Cultivation is simply increasing one's strength...not to boost one's brain power!" Liu Yi was depressed, "Such a long text....I will definitely die this time...."

"Fool! Use your breathing technique!"

Lin Tong snapped, "Do you think breathing technique is just an ordinary technique!? It can improve your mental power! When your mental power is high, you can achieve the realm of 'never forget (photographic memory)!' "

"Really?" Liu Yi was overjoyed.

"When this lady has ever deceived you!?"

Lin Tong jumped and clawed Liu Yi's nose with her small paw.

Liu Yi quickly hugged the little Fox and started exercising his breathing technique.

After two big deep breaths, at his moment, Liu Yi felt that he was very clear headed, and refreshed.

With such feelings, he began to read the text.

Sure enough, it was a lot of fun!

When Liu Yi closed his eyes, the text was still clearly printed in his mind!

Magical! This was simply amazing!

Liu Yi really wanted to hug and kiss the little Fox twice!

‘Fox sister, you’re great!’ He thought.

But right at this time, the class leader, who sat in the front of Liu Yi, suddenly said.

“Such thing doesn’t need to be ten minutes long, teacher. That’s too long!”



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 55

The class leader's words immediately attracted a lot of jealous eyes.

This class leader's name is Jiang Youcai (Youcai means: have talent). He is a famous learning hegemon in school.

This person is simply born to learn!

He ranked first in every exam, all year round. The focused experimental class next door have come to him several times to invite him to move there. But he never went there.

Because a lot of people knew that this Jiang Youcai has a serious crush on Murong Die.

But when he confessed his feeling to Murong Die, he was rejected, on the ground that Murong Die doesn't want to fall in love as long as she was in the high school.

But Jiang Youcai did not give up. He thought that as good as he is in learning and as the top student in the entire school, he should be able to catch Murong Die!

"Teacher Li, ten minutes is too long. I can memorize it in five minutes."

The learning hegemon Jiang Youcai sat there, slowly suggesting the teacher to restrict the rule for him.

"Mm, you must all follow Jiang Youcai example in learning."

The homeroom teacher slowly nodded, pleased and said, "You guys look, he has the similar text, but why he can finish the task so fast? That's because he has been studying diligently. If you continue to study in your evening study, I wouldn't have to be so worried like this. But our class had just past the average score in the previous English test! You guys! Because your homeroom teacher is me, an English teacher, that test result made my face burned!"

With that, she sighed heavily.

A group of students didn't know what to say, but their eyes that were

looking at Jiang Youcai were full of resentment.

“Chen Cai, you and Liu Yi should learn more with other people.”

The homeroom teacher looked at the two men behind Jiang Youcai and immediately sighed.

“You and Liu Yi’s level of English and other subjects were only at the average level. I put Jiang Youcai’s table in front of you is so that you can learn from him....”

The homeroom teacher has made them as an example...

Liu Yi started to sweat.

At this time, Jiang Youcai suddenly said. “Teacher Li, I request for a change of seat!”

“What?”

The homeroom teacher was surprised. She didn’t know why Jiang Youcai would suddenly ask for a seat change.

“Teacher Li, both of them were whispering, sleeping in the class, or snoring behind me everyday. They made me unable to study! Teacher Li, If this goes on, I’m afraid my grades will fall off.”

“Oh?”

The homeroom teacher stopped Jiang Youcai’s complaint and suddenly glowered at Liu Yi and Chen Cai.

“You two are too complacent! Tomorrow...”

Liu Yi’s heart was suddenly surprised.

‘Fuck me, the teacher was going to kill me; she will report this to my parents!’ He thought.

“This Jiang Youcai is also too nasty; he wants to cast us aside!”

Chen Cai was also gritting his teeth. He cannot wait to tear up Jiang Youcai.

“Teacher! We are willing to help out students.”

At this time, Murong Die suddenly murmured, “If student Jiang Youcai afraid that his grade might be affected, then let me and Wang Lele sit in front

of Liu Yi.”

In just several words, the whole students in the class were suddenly shocked.

‘Fuck me!’ They thought.

They were really jealous of Liu Yi!

Murong Die actually asked to be placed in front of Liu Yi on her own accord!

‘Damn....What levels of treatment is this!’ The other students lament.

Liu Yi was also confused. He didn’t know why would Murong Die do that...

But Murong Die knew, the reason Jiang Youcai made a complaint about Liu Yi was because he saw her paid attention to Liu Yi previously.

Jiang Youcai reasoning is: if Jiang Youcai harmed Liu Yi by making the teacher call Liu Yi’s parent....then based on Murong Die haughtiness, Murong Die will realize how pathetic Liu Yi is and stay away from him.

But she didn’t seem to realize that as soon as her words get out, Jiang Youcai’s view toward Liu Yi was even more vicious.

“You guys....”

The homeroom teacher did not react for a moment.

Murong Die is one of the students that gave her a headache in the class because she cannot afford to offend her.

But fortunately, Murong Die is quite low-key. She hasn’t given any trouble to the homeroom teacher.

But today....Did the Sun rise from the West?

“That....Wang Lele, don’t lie on the table.”

The homeroom teacher thought she can’t let this topic get out of hand, so, she changed the subject and jokingly said.

“Reporting to teacher, my chest is big, it fell in the panic!”

Wang Lele’s words directly choked the homeroom teacher’s mouth.

Other students held their laugh. They didn't dare to make a noise.

"Wang Lele, quit screwing around..."

"Reporting to teacher, I'm not screwing around, my chest literally fell!"

Wang Lele piteously looked at the homeroom teacher, Li Juanhua.

Li Juanhua can only have a headache.

'Ai....today's students, were really difficult to manage.' She lamented.

In the old days, when she first started as a teacher, the parents will come to her with their child and said to her.

"Teacher Li, I entrusted my child to you! If he disobeys you, or if he doesn't study well, beat him!"

If that student gets naughty, she will hit him by herself. If they went home and complained to their parents, they will get beaten by their parents instead!

That student will then be honest and afraid of the teacher.

But now she can't do that anymore. Every student that she had right now was all the young master and young lady of their family. They were all spoiled from their childhood.

If she beat them, they will go home to complain tearfully to their parents. The next day, their parents will look for her and said.

"We never even try to beat him, on what ground you dared to hit him!?"

These complaints were bad for the schools. So, she had to apologize repeatedly because of these. And these also caused her to directly get in trouble with the school's management.

'Difficult to manage, really difficult to control.'

"Teacher, can't you just move me and sis' Die to the back!?"

Wang Lele raised her hand and said, "Helping each other, is an obligation for good students, am I right!?"

"This....." Li Juanhua hesitated.

She cannot figure out what kind of game did these Wang Lele and Murong

Die is playing.

“Teacher Li, I don’t need others to help me improve my academic performance.”

At this time, Liu Yi finally could not resist. He stood up and directly said, “I can rely on myself.”

Hearing these words, Jiang Youcai couldn’t help but laugh. Murong Die’s nostrils were also crooked in anger.

‘He did not even appreciate my good intention!’ She angrily thought.

“Boss, don’t do that!”

Chen Cai pulled Liu Yi’s sleeve from the side, “Let Murong Die and Wang Lele, two beautiful women, sit in front of us...How nice it would be...”

“Aren’t you trying to woo Wang Yuzheng?” Liu Yi simply said.

“Oh, right....”

Chen Cai was honest.

“You guys....stop making a ruckus....”

Li Juanhua had a big headache.

‘These students, why they were getting difficult each day.’ She thought.

‘The usually humble Liu Yi, today has become a prick!’

“Teacher Li, although we haven’t studied well, please don’t look down on us.”

Liu Yi said, “We also did our part. Every day we went home to do our homework. We also did a review on our schoolwork. Although the results were inferior to those good students, you should not mark us with a ‘poor student’ mark!”

“You.....”

Hearing Liu Yi’s words, Li Juanhua was shocked.

“Moreover, even if our results were not good, we still have other outlets in the future. A good result is not everything! Teacher Li, please, don’t look at us through a rose tinted glasses!”

“Liu Yi, how could you say like that to the teacher?”

Before Li Juanhua said anything, Jiang Youcai suddenly stood up, looked at Liu Yi, and proudly said.

“Based on your grades, do you have the qualification to talk like that to the teacher?”

“Can academic performance decide everything?”

Without even flinching, Liu Yi directly counterattacked Jiang Youcai, “When you look for a job in the future, and people ask what skills do you have, do you think you can say you have 100 points on your tests?”

The whole class suddenly laughed.

Jiang Youcai’s face has turned red.

“Liu Yi, you’re just jealous!”

He pointed to Liu Yi’s face and shouted, “You’re a poor student that envy us, good students! You’re really bad; You can’t be saved anymore!”

“I am indeed a poor student, but don’t judge my character with that.”

Liu Yi said, “Maybe we are stupid, and not diligent enough. But if because of this you immediately judge us with a ‘poor student’ mark, that’s the problem of your character.”

“You have no right in arguing with me!”

Jiang Youcai shouted, “You can’t even recite a simple English text, you have no qualification to say that to me! Scrap wood, you’re doomed to be a poor student!”

“Who said that I couldn’t recite?” Liu Yi frowned.

“This Jiang Youcai went too far!” He thought.

‘If I don’t fight him back, he really will shit on my head.’

‘I’m not the coward Liu Yi in the past....’

He clenched his fists and looked at Jiang Youcai’s eyes.

“I’ve finished my memorizing.”

“Ha? Hahaha, hahaha.....”

Jiang Youcai couldn't help but laugh, “This is just less than four minutes, but you've completely memorized the text? Even I can't do that. Can you?”

“If I can recite the text, then what?” Liu Yi asked.

“If you can recite it, I will kowtow and call you grandpa!”

“You don't need to call me grandpa. If I can recite it, please apologize to me and Chen Cai, and apologize to all the poor students.”

Liu Yi slowly said, “You insult the character of us, poor students. Apologize for that.”

“You must be wrong in the head!” Jiang Youcai immediately retorted.

He didn't believe Liu Yi will be able to recite the text, so, he nodded and directly said, “I promise you. But what if you can't recite it?”

“If I can't recite it, I, Liu Yi, is willing to drop out of school!”

Liu Yi's words were incredible.

Everyone looked at him in surprised. They never thought that he could say such things!

Dropout is not a small matter!

“Liu Yi, your intentions are good.”

Li Juanhua, worried that things will get out of control, quickly said, “How about this, Teacher will be your witness, if you are unable to recite, you must copy the whole text in the English book. After that, you and Jiang Youcai will apologize to the poor students, ok?”

Because the homeroom teacher has spoken, Liu Yi can only comply.

Jiang Youcai also has no objection. Both of them nodded their heads.

Other students were also glad to watch this scene and made some noises. It seemed this memory test will not be so dull after all!

“Liu Yi, come to the front and write down the text on the blackboard.”

Li Juanhua pointed at the blackboard and said.

“Okay!”

Liu Yi strode across the classroom and came before the blackboard and then picked up a piece of chalk.

Many of the poor students were looking at him. If they want to see how a poor student strives for the best, they have to look at Liu Yi!

“Boss...you can do it...”

Chen Cai clenched his fist and cheered at Liu Yi.

“Sis’ Die....What do you think, can he do it?”

Wang Lele, who looked at Liu Yi with some concern, asked.

“Humph! Why should I care!”

Murong Die curled her lips, “This fool is just looking for trouble!”



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 56

Liu Yi stood before the blackboard and slightly closed his eyes. The text that he read immediately reappeared in his mind.

Such a long text was solidly recorded in his brain.

The breathing technique from his Fox sister is really amazing.

‘Breathing technique....this time, I’m counting on you!’ Liu Yi thought.

Liu Yi lifted the chalk and, in front of everyone’s eyes, wrote down the English text, that was clearly printed inside his mind, on the blackboard.

The more he wrote, the more amaze the students!

They continuously compared the text in their English book and the text that was unceasingly written by Liu Yi on the blackboard.

In a blink of an eye, Liu Yi has written a third of the text and not a single letter or even a punctuation mark that were wrong!

By the heavens! Liu Yi, who usually has had ordinary academic performances, which he barely qualified, unexpectedly able to written down the English text correctly! Indeed, it almost looked like a copy!

Liu Yi right now is standing before the blackboard, in full view of the classroom, so, it was impossible for him to cheat!

Jiang Youcai was stunned and couldn’t believe his own eyes.

“Impossible...impossible...how could it not have any errors...” Jiang Youcai muttered.

He frantically looked at the English book, trying to pick up any fault in Liu Yi!

But Liu Yi’s every sentence, words, letters and punctuation marks never differed from the text.

How is this possible! The usually barely past the word test, puffing and blowing turtle-bellied Liu Yi....Today, how could he be so savage?!

“Liu Yi is simply a changed man....”

Wang Lele, who was also surprised to see Liu Yi's written word on the blackboard, couldn't help but whisper.

"In the past, he was merely a transparent student....I never thought that he could defeat Lan He in basketball and now, he even kill Jiang Youcai in memory test..."

"Humph! Loves to show off!" Murong Die quipped.

She curled her lips. Her heart was very uncomfortable.

'Liu Yi oh Liu Yi, this lady has good intention in helping you, but you always made life difficult for this lady!' She grumbled in her heart.

'This lady is absolutely not finished with you!'

"Finish!"

After writing the last words, Liu Yi clapped his hands and said.

All the people in the classroom have been shocked into silence.

The English text that was written by Liu Yi contained no errors.

At this point, no people more excited than Li Juanhua. She looked at Liu Yi with a pleasant surprise and said.

"Liu Yi, this is the first time teacher apologize to you! I didn't think that you have indeed earnestly study! Teacher has wronged you!"

Liu Yi's heart was somewhat sour.

'This was the first time the homeroom teacher apologized to a poor student like me.'

His heart lamented.

Lan He, who was sitting around and watched, gritted his teeth.

Liu Yi has recently stolen all the limelights.

Before this class, the one who has the best limelight is but Lan He alone!

But now, Liu Yi frequently stole the spotlight! Which made him really unhappy!

But Liu Yi only has a few days left. The black dragon restructuring is

coming soon, and Ma Wei will be the hall leader.

At that time, Liu Yi will disappear from his face.

And nobody can rob Murong Die from him again!

“Impossible, this is impossible!”

Jiang Youcai didn’t believe the fact, “Liu Yi, you must be cheating!”

“Jiang Youcai, you’re the class leader, but, unexpectedly you can’t accept to lose.”

Liu Yi clapped his hands to get rid of the chalk, and said, “My grandpa said, men must keep their words. If you want to spit, then spat. If you want to nail, then nailed.”

“I absolutely not recognize this result! You must have cheated! I’m not going to apologize to you, humph!”

After saying that, Jiang Youcai sat down.

Liu Yi looked down upon the likes of him.

‘This type of men is too inferior.’ Liu Yi thought.

‘No wonder Murong Die didn’t like him.’

‘He wants to woo girls just by relying on good grades....’

‘Unless the girls want him to do their homework!’

Moreover, Li Juanhua said nothing this time. But, Liu Yi knew that she was quite partial to Jiang Youcai. She didn’t want to shame him.

“Apologize, apologize!”

At that time, Chen Cai shouted.

With this cry, many poor students collectively stood up and then loudly and rhythmically shouted at Jiang Youcai in unison.

“Apologize, apologize!”

“Apologize, apologize!”

Even Wang Lele also waved and shouted.

With the lead from Wang Lele, some of those standard grade students

began to shout together.

“Apologize, apologize!”

Except for the tens of excellent students, the rest of the students banded together and continuously shouted at Jiang Youcai.

Jiang Youcai turned pale and looked at the many students, who usually never entered into his eyes, that have banded together, forcing him to apologize.

This kind of momentum made him scared.

‘Since when did Liu Yi has so many supporters!’ He thought.

‘I am the class leader!’

‘But the students in the class didn’t listen to my will!’

“Quiet, be quiet!” The homeroom teacher shouted.

Li Juanhua was also somewhat surprised. She never thought that this matter will turn big like this.

But at this time, the students have been excited. They ignored the usually dignified Li Juanhua and, with blood boiling into their bones, continued to shout slogans against Jiang Youcai.

“Apologize, apologize!”

“I, I.....”

Jiang Youcai pale to the extreme. He suddenly felt that his schoolmates were quite fearful...

At this moment, his old pride and arrogant seemed to collapse.

“I, I’m sorry....”

He finally couldn’t stand the pressure and said these three words.

“Yes!”

Suddenly a group of students high-fived each other to celebrate.

This is their victory. Their first victory over the overachievers!

If the top students make a mistake, they too should be treated the same!

The school should treat their students equally and not, after receiving the student's grade, bringing their colored glasses and then made a differential treatment.

Liu Yi opened his eyes of favorable impression and discovered that, at this moment, he has won a lot of favorable impression point.

Most of the student's impression of him were no longer the pathetic zero, instead, the numbers were varied from three to ten!

Many of whom were girls. Suddenly, Liu Yi felt that the red stream of qi inside his body was instantly expanded!

The second "Kang" star jade inside his cultivation universe chart suddenly trembled!

With a loud bang, this second layer directly burst in a brilliant light!

His second star jade was finally active!

Liu Yi's eyes lit up and then instantly disappear.

Lin Tong screamed again and again in Liu Yi's ear.

"Oh, Heaven....the second star jade was actually opened...."

She was jealous.

If an average person wants to cultivate the second star jade, they need at least eight to ten years!

Even such a rare talent such as herself also need at least three to five years before one can succeed!

As for Liu Yi....In just a few days, less than a month, he already opened his second star jade!

Although he has the assistance of Favorable Impression of the Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra...But his speed is too fast, too terrifying....

It almost like a rocket!

Lin Tong suddenly has a feeling that future achievements of Liu Yi are limitless!

"Liu Yi oh Liu Yi, you're great!"

After Liu Yi went back to his table, a male student, who usually doesn't mingle with Liu Yi, smiled, stood up and was about to pat Liu Yi on the shoulder.

Suddenly, the corner of his mouth twitched and said.

"Damn, you're not pleasing to my eyes...."

Then he sat down again, not looking Liu Yi in the eye

'E? What just happened....?' Liu Yi was a bit silly.

"Liu Yi, your English is amazing....could you help other people after the class is over....?"

But the nearby ordinary girl, who usually just his casual acquaintance, threw Liu Yi a coquettish look!

'Damn it! What the hell is happening here!' Liu Yi was confused.

"This is the random ability that came with your second star jade!"

Lin Tong enviously said, "I'm going to enter your spiritual environment to help you take a look...."

After that, she went back to Liu Yi's body and quickly came out, and then laughed.

"Congratulations! You have a divine skill in wooing girls!"

"What ability?"

"Friendly Aura."

Seeing the male students around him, who were previously smiling at him but now looking at him with an evil vision, Liu Yi apprehensively asked.

"Then why are they..."

"This ability makes the girls around you have a permanent +5 favorable impression, and -5 for boys! Oh, you really gain this divine ability to pick up girls!"

'What divine gain is this....?'

Liu Yi wanted to cry, but no tears would come out.

Originally, his popularity was not much, but now these male students....

When Liu Yi look at their vision, it seemed like they wanted to rip Liu Yi apart...'Could this life have any meaning?' ... Liu Yi lamented.

'Oh my god, who's going to save me...'

"Enough, enough. Everybody sit down, the class is about to begin!"

Li Juanhua clapped her hands and said.

Liu Yi also sat back. The nearby Chen Cai enviously said.

"Boss...you're great...but...why do I suddenly think that you're not pleasing to the eye..."

'Damn!'

Liu Yi was depressed.

"Teacher Li, there is one thing that is not being settled yet!"

Right at this time, Murong Die suddenly raised her hand and said.

"Murong Die, what do you want...."

Li Juanhua couldn't help but have a headache.

"The seat arrangement is not cleared yet!"

Murong Die said, stood up and loudly announced, "I want to sit in front of Liu Yi!"

When her words came out, everybody was immediately surprised.

'Murong Die was still involved with Liu Yi?' They thought.

How could they know what was inside Murong Die's mind?

'Liu Yi, you don't want to help this lady study, this lady insist on you doing it!'

'All this time, no man has ever rejected this lady, yet, you actually insist on staying away from me!'

'Does this lady have thorns?!'

'This lady wants you to chase me like when you chase Ma Yixuan, and then mercilessly reject you!'

‘Humph! Damn Liu Yi, this is the price that you’ll pay for provoking this lady!’

After fantasizing the happy moment when she’ll reject Liu Yi, the corners of Murong Die’s mouth couldn’t help but hung a smile.

The nearby body of Wang Lele was instantly cold.

‘It’s finished, sis’s Die already smiled like this...Liu Yi had to suffer!’ She thought.

The other students, who don’t know about this, became more envious.

Lan He and Jiang Youcai’s hate of Liu Yi were also getting deeper.

“Murong Die....don’t talk nonsense....” Li Juanhua said.

She didn’t know how to properly deal with this matter.

How could she allow the seat arrangement be adjusted? How could she let Murong Die call the shots? Wouldn’t that mess up the class?

“Teacher Li, my English is not good. If I am nearby Liu Yi, we can help each other!”

Murong Die unquestionably said, “Please help me, teacher Li!”

“Murong Die, I’m not going to swap places with you!”

Seeing Li Juanhua still hesitated, Jiang Youcai immediately stood up and shouted.

“Are you sure?”

“I’m sure, definitely sure!”

“Good! You, the one behind Liu Yi. Come here and change places with this lady!”



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 57

Murong Die was barbaric and overbearing, making Liu Yi have no alternative and Jiang Youcai vomited blood.

“I, this.....”

The male students, who sat behind Liu Yi, dumbfoundedly looked at Murong Die.

‘I can’t afford to offend this big lady....’

The male student thought.

“You don’t want to change places?” Murong Die asked.

“Change, of course, I want to change.....”

Not all the students as silly as Liu Yi, who has the courage to provoke Murong Die.

The two people behind Liu Yi honestly nodded and began to pack their things on the table.

“Teacher Li, we have reached an agreement!”

Murong Die proudly smiled. Which boys dare to contradict her?!

Only Liu Yi!

The hateful Liu Yi!

“.....”

Li Juanhua felt that her existence was being ignored right now. She didn’t know what to say anymore.

“Wang Lele, pack your things!” Murong Die ordered Wang Lele.

“O, ok.....”

Wang Lele didn’t dare to be neglectful. She quickly scrambled to start packing her belongings.

The two girls quickly tidied up and then swapped places with the two people behind Liu Yi.

“Student Liu Yi, we should help each other out!”

After the exchanges, Murong Die sat behind Liu Yi and happily said.

Her fragrant smell floated into Liu Yi’s nose, making him momentarily distracted.

But he soon recovered, and then said.

“Yes, of course! We should help each other.”

After that, he turned his head and continued to read the English textbook.

After mastering the breathing technique, Liu Yi was somewhat obsessed with the feeling it produced.

Before this, he never discovered the joy of studying!

It seemed like he was taking a vacation; The feeling of relaxation is pretty powerful!

Seeing Liu Yi gave her just a simple response and then turned his head to read the English book, Murong Die’s nose wrinkled with anger.

‘In Liu Yi’s heart, am I not attractive enough?’ She fumed in her heart.

‘I can’t even compete with an English book!?’

‘But I am the Lady Murong!’

‘Many boys would gather around me by themselves!’

‘Even Jiang Youcai, the number one student, tries to pursue me!’

‘How could Liu Yi behave differently than the other boys!’

‘He likes the hateful Ma Yixuan, but only lukewarm to this lady!’

How could the prideful Murong Die was able to tolerate this!

‘Since when did Murong Die become inferior to others!’

‘No, I want Liu Yi to kneel at my feet!’

‘I want him to like me, and then I will reject him!’

‘I must!’

After Murong Die thought of this, she took out her iPad with internet

connection from the desk and began to search for the information that she wants.

Li Juanhua didn't have the interest to teach. She only thought that today's class was a great mess. So, she let the students study by themselves.

"Sis' Die, what are you looking at...?"

Seeing that Murong Die was rummaging her iPad, Wang Lele couldn't help but to take a closer look and asked.

"No, nothing...."

Murong Die was surprised. She quickly reached out to cover the screen.

Seeing the words on the screen, Wang Lele suddenly exclaimed.

"Chasing men....wow...."

Murong Die put out her hand to cover Wang Lele's mouth. Her face was somewhat flushed.

"Shut up! You big mouth!"

Murong Die quickly stole a glance at Liu Yi, only to find the latter still indulged in the English textbook. After sighing with relief, she couldn't help but get angry again.

'This dummy!' She thought, 'Really makes people angry!'

"Sis' Die...You, why are you looking for this..."

Wang Lele looked at the articles that were searched by Murong Die.

Something like, How to Pursue a Man in a Hundred Moves.

The Principle of Pursuing!

How To Lure Him Into Bed With You....

"How, how could there be something like this..."

Wang Lele was so surprised.

"These searches pop up by itself! It has nothing to do with me!"

Murong Die's face went red. That was really not her active search!

Certain search engine cheated on her!

“Oh...But sis’ Die...do you really want to chase Liu Yi gege?”

Wang Lele didn’t wish to wake the tiger, so, she lowered her voice and secretly asked Murong Die.

“I....”

Worried that their talk might be heard, she took out a notebook and wrote with a beautiful font on top of it.

“This lady must pursue Liu Yi! After he likes me and makes his confession, I will refuse him!”

“Wow....”

Wang Lele was surprised once again and wrote.

“Liu Yi gege is too pitiful...”

“He asked for it!”

Murong Die curled her lips, hummed twice, and then wrote, “He dare to ignore this lady....In this world, no man can ignore the existence of this lady! I’ll make him pay for this!”

“This...is a little too cruel...It seemed like a third-class Taiwan/HK soap opera drama...”

“So what! Do you want to help me or not!?”

“I....This....”

“I just ask you a question, do you want to help me or not!? Am I still your sis’ Die!?”

“O, okay then...”

After much deliberation, Wang Lele thought that her sis’ Die’s position in her heart is a little higher than her Liu Yi gege. Therefore, she clasped her palms together and secretly did an obeisance to Liu Yi behind his back and then said in her heart.

‘Liu Yi gege, I’m sorry....’

‘Who told you to provoke sis’ Die, making her angry toward you....’

‘I only hope you have the good fortune to survive this....’

‘Silly person have a silly luck...But how could you incur calamity....’

Murong Die continued her study on how to pursue a man.

At this time, Chen Cai secretly pushed Liu Yi.

“Boss, boss!”

“Ah?”

Liu Yi was obsessed with the English textbook. He decided to memorize the whole book into his mind.

When he heard Chen Cai’s voice, he suddenly awoke.

“What?”

Chen Cai somewhat dumbfoundedly looked at Liu Yi, then lowered his voice to ask, “Boss...are, are you stupid?”

“What do you mean?”

“Murong Die! Wang Lele!”

“Ah, what about them?”

Liu Yi innocently looked at Chen Cai. He still didn’t get what Chen Cai mean..

“Oh heaven....two beautiful woman sitting behind us....but you didn’t turn back to look even a single glance?”

“In any case, they won’t run won’t they? I can always look back later on!”

Liu Yi said, “Look at this English book, it’s quite interesting you know!”

“Boss! Are you stupid!”

Chen Cai was shocked. He quickly stretched out his hand and touched Liu Yi on the forehead.

“Mm, not hot....could it possessed by a ghost?....Evil spirit, quickly leave! Release my boss!”

“Go back to your seat, you’re the one who is possessed by a ghost!”

Liu Yi moved Chen Cai’s hand to the side, saying, “If I don’t look at the English book in an English class, where do you think I should look!”

“It’s over ....my boss is indeed stupid....”

Chen Cai faintly sighed, “Boss, you used to be different than this....In those days, the two of us were free and unconstrained, crisscrossing among the flowers...inspecting countless of women!”

“Do you mean in a movie?”

Liu Yi rolled his eyes at Chen Cai

“No matter. In any case, we can be considered an expert in picking up girls!”

Chen Cai laughed and said, “But how could you suddenly turned into a bookworm now!”

“Nothing....It’s just that, after mastering a technique, learning becomes easier.”

Liu Yi touched the English book and lamented, “This is the first time I discovered such an effective way to study. Thus, I’m quite obsessed with it....”

“.....”

Chen Cai was speechless. It was quite a while later until he came out with some words.

“Are you really Liu Yi? You’re not being brainwashed by an alien aren’t you....”

“Die!”

Liu Yi gave Chen Cai a stern look and then continued to concentrate on his English study.

At this time, the bell rang.

Chen Cai quickly pulled Liu Yi aside and then said.

“Boss, wait for me in the class. I’m going downstairs to the supermarket to buy an attractive envelope!”

After that, this fellow madly dashed and ran out of the classroom.

Liu Yi shook his head.

‘This guy is quite serious in chasing this girl.’ He thought.

‘I hope Wang Yuzheng can accept him. One-sided love is really tiring.’

‘Truly, being fucking in love is a very serious matter!’

‘The things that you could not do, but you must do...’

‘Well, at least, it saves a lot of trouble.’

Just as Liu Yi continued to study his English book after the class is over, Murong Die and Wang Lele looked at each other in the eye.

“Sis’ Die, there are several ways to do this, you should try this method first!”

Wang Lele pointed to the “Indirect Suggestion” article to Murong Die.

“Do you think it would work?”

Murong Die was skeptical.

“Sis’ Die, you’re a girl aren’t you!?”

Wang Lele said confidently, “Moreover, you’re a beautiful girl! Your family is also well-off, which boy doesn’t want to be your boyfriend! I think Liu Yi gege just doesn’t understand sis’ Die’s heart....”

“What, what heart!”

Murong Die’s face blushed, and she quickly corrected, “It’s revenge!”

“Fine, fine...even if it’s revenge, sis’ Die also needs to let Liu Yi gege know that you like him, right?”

“That’s true....”

Murong Die nodded her head.

“If Liu Yi gege knows that sis’ Die is interested in him....”

“What’s so interesting about this fool!”

“Assumption, this is assumption....”

“Ok then....”

“That’s right if Liu Yi gege knows that sis’ Die is just pretending to like him....oh, he doesn’t know that sis’ Die is just pretending to like him, but, if

he knows sis' Die is just feigning interest in him....Oh, oh, sis' Die, I'm confused..."

"Okay, okay, Lele. I understand what you mean. You can continue."

"Hu, hu, hu, sis' Die is so understanding..."

Wang Lele wiped her tears and continued, "If Liu Yi gege knows that sis' Die is interested in him, he must be very pleasantly surprised and then will actively try to pursue sis Die. Thus, sis' Die's objective will be achieved."

"This method is not bad..."

Murong Die thought that this is a good approach, "I give him a hint, making him think that I like him. In turn, he will chase me, and then I will refuse him! Hehehe, good, this is quite despicable, I like it! I will pretend to invite him to watch a movie, he will certainly misunderstand it!"

Such a smile from Murong Die made Wang Lele's body cold.

'Liu Yi gege....I wish you many, many good luck....' Wang Lele prayed in her heart.

"I know what to do. Watch me!"

Murong Die rubbed her pretty face and then stood up.

"I am the Lady of the Murong Family....I can do this."

After that, she took two deep breaths and walked to the front and then stood before Liu Yi. She then stretched out her finger and heavily knocked Liu Yi's table.

"Liu Yi! You, you stand up!"

"Ah?"

Liu Yi woke up and looked at the beautiful princess that stood in front of him. He didn't know what she wants with him.

"Murong Die, what do you want?"

"Liu Yi, you, you..."



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 58

Wang Lele, who looked at her sis' Die from the back, pumped her fist to cheer Murong Die.

'Sis' Die, you can do it!' She cheered in her heart.

'Take Liu Yi gege out!'

'But how could there be a sour feeling in my heart....so uncomfortable.'

'Strange... No matter, sis' Die's thing is more important!'

"Yeah? What is it?"

Liu Yi looked at Murong Die, who appeared red-faced and stammered, without knowing what she wanted to say.

"Liu Yi, you, you...."

Murong Die took two deep breaths and then suddenly said.

"You're blocking this lady's view! This lady can't see the blackboard in front of the class!"

"Bang!"

Wang Lele's head fell on the table.

'It's over, sis' Die can't be saved anymore.' She thought.

"What?" Liu Yi was bewildered.

"Come on, lady. You're the one who wants to sit behind me! Also, I'm not that tall!"

"I don't care. You're blocking this lady's line of sight!"

Murong Die stared with her eyes, "What are you going to do to fix this!"

"Fine....I'm going to sit a bit lower, ok!"

Liu Yi thought that this lady's matter is too much!

"That's also an eyesore!"

"Then I'll move to the last row, how about it?"

Liu Yi thought, 'In any event, I have a super vision now. My eyesight can be like a telescope. Even if I sit on the last row, I can still clearly see the blackboard.'

"You, you, you, you dare!"

Murong Die almost exploded.

'Do you really want to stay far away from this lady!?' She thought.

'You jerk!'

"Then what exactly do you want?....How about we swap places, you sit in front of me?"

"Liu Yi, you idiot!"

Murong Die reached out and grabbed Liu Yi's English book and then shot him in the face with it. After that, she angrily walked back and sat down.

Wang Lele, who was watching from the side, wanted to cry, but there were no tears.

"That bastard is so irritating!"

Murong Die poked the textbook.

"Sis' Die...this is not an indirect suggestion. Instead, you're trying to provoke a war..."

"How could I!? It was him who started it first!"

Murong Die angrily said and continued to poke a character in the English book, as if that character was Liu Yi.

"...But, even so, if sis' Die angry at him, how could he knows sis' Die's....feigned interest! How could our goals be achieved?"

"That's true...."

"That's right....In order to achieve the goal, a little bit sacrifice is nothing, right?"

"Yes, yes, sis' Die have to endure this..."

"You're right! Patient, I have to be patient! No matter what, this time, I must succeed!"

Murong Die took two deep breaths, stood up and walked to the front of Liu Yi.

“Why are you here again?”

Liu Yi smelled a fragrant aroma, looked up to see Murong Die and couldn't help but asked.

In just a single sentence, Murong Die has been provoked to anger again.

“Liu Yi, how could you! Is this lady such a hindrance in your eyes?”

Murong Die heavily slapped the table and angrily said.

In the back, Wang Lele covered her eyes. She didn't dare to look.

‘It's over. These two people must be really incompatible. How could they started to quarrel again....’ She thought.

“What? I didn't say that!”

Liu Yi quickly shook his head, thinking, ‘I never said anything like that.’

“Then this lady must've looked hideous, making you sick of seeing me, am I right?”

“How could I! You're quite nice actually!”

Listening to Liu Yi's word, Lin Tong, who was laying on the table, couldn't help but covered her eyes.

‘Good....’ She thought.

‘Liu Yi, you're a big idiot!’

“This lady is....quite nice?”

Murong Die's pair of beautiful eyes were suddenly perfectly round. With a faint smile on her face, she appeared to be angry, but also not angry.

“Em.....”

Liu Yi touched the back of his head. He didn't know what Murong Die wanted with him.

But it smelled a little bit of powder keg.

“Liu Yi....you're brave!”

Murong Die tightly clenched her fists.

But at this time, from behind, Wang Lele continuously gave Murong Die a signal.

Wang Lele exaggerated her expression and pointed at Liu Yi while voicelessly moving her mouth.

“Watch cinema...watch cinema...”

Murong Die took a deep breath and calmed her anger.

‘That’s right, for my purpose, I have to sacrifice myself.’ She thought.

‘I am the Lady Murong, and I am ready for this!’

“Why are you still here?”

This question from Liu Yi directly destroyed all the reasons from Murong Die.

“Liu Yi!”

Murong Die reached out her hand and grabbed Liu Yi by the collar. She pressed her face in front of him and fiercely asked.

“This weekend! 10:30 in the morning! Meet me in front of Tianda movie theater! If you don’t come, this lady will kill you!”

After that, she pushed Liu Yi back and returned to her seat to sulk.

Liu Yi was silly.

‘What does this mean?’ He wondered.

‘Ten thirty in the morning on weekend, meet at the front of Tianda Cinema?’

“Sis’ Die...”

Wang Lele looked at Murong Die with a wry smile, “What you just did... how could it be called indirect suggestion....I think this is just like making an appointment....”

“Months off (it sounded the same with ‘appointment’)? What months off have to do with this? Do men also have this?”

Murong Die was surprised.

“What are you talking about....I said ‘appointment’!”

Wang Lele hastened to explain and wrote the words on the paper, “To make an appointment for a duel....”

“Who’s going to fight with him! Humph! Uncle Wang hasn’t beaten him yet!”

Murong Die curled her lips.

How could she know that her trusted uncle Wang, was already beaten once by Liu Yi?

“This lady will not rely on force to bully others. Humph, humph, this lady will use her own method to punish him!”

Murong Die said and then clenched her fists.

“But why does it looks like sis’ Die is still going to fight with him....”

Wang Lele was speechless.

She sighed, thinking, ‘Although I am not as smart as sis’ Die, on a certain aspect, sis’ Die is more stupid than me!’

Wang Lele has no alternative but to reach out and patted Liu Yi on the shoulder.

“Aa?”

Liu Yi quickly turned his head. Indeed, he didn’t quite understand about what had just happened.

“Liu Yi, sis’ Die and I are going to the movie theater this weekend, why don’t you come with us.”

“Are you asking me to watch a movie together?”

As he said this, Liu Yi was suddenly embarrassed.

“I’m sorry....I, I have no money....”

Liu Yi touched his trouser pocket.

Only to hear the clanking sound of coins.

Watching a cinema is a very extravagant thing. A movie ticket is about 70-80 coin! He even heard that an IMAX ticket is more than a hundred coin!

Watching a movie is very expensive here in the north!

“Puff!”

Wang Lele couldn't help but laughed, “You don't have to pay, we invited you!”

“No!”

Liu Yi immediately waved and said, “My grandpa said, Don't get a reward if it's not deserved! In particular, I am a boy. How could I let a girl pay for me! Absolutely not!”

“Don't look a gift horse in the mouth....”

Murong Die was going to speak with clenched jaws, but Wang Lele quickly stopped her.

“No, Liu Yi gege, you do deserve this!”

Wang Lele quickly said, “A few days ago you helped us in fending off Lan He. After this help, me and sis' Die were quite busy!”

“So what?”

Liu Yi recalled this matter, “It was actually quite easy....”

“Then didn't your grandpa also said that you must repay any kindness, even if it's just a small one!”

Wang Lele rolled her eyes and said with a sly smile.

“You helped us so much. Therefore, we must show our gratitude, right!”

“This....is this ok?”

Liu Yi slightly hesitated.

He didn't know, from the side, there were a group of people that looked at him with green eyes.

‘Fuck, a goddess treat you to a movie but you don't want to go. Liu Yi, you're indeed an abomination!’ They all thought.

They were all really, truly envious of him.

“There’s nothing wrong with this, we just don’t want to owe you a favor!”

Wang Lele abruptly changed the subject, and then said, “Liu Yi, you don’t want us to owe you a favor do you?”

“Of course not!”

Liu Yi quickly shook his head.

“Excellent! So, half past ten on Sunday, meet us in front of Tianda theater! Don’t be late! A real boy will not be late!”

Wang Lele smiled and said to Liu Yi.

“Okay, okay....”

Liu Yi quickly nodded.

“Hehe, it’s settled then!”

After Liu Yi had turned his head, Wang Lele gave Murong Die a hand signal.

Murong Die somewhat faintly looked at Wang Lele.

“You girl....When did your EQ become so high...”

“Never...My EQ is very low, but fortunately, Liu Yi’s EQ is not high!”

Wang Lele smiled and said, “Sis’ Die, you need to concentrate on preparing for our plan...when the time comes, you will ruthlessly reject Liu Yi gege!”

Wang Lele said, but her heart was somewhat excited. She thought.

“This Sunday, I’m going to see a movie with Liu Yi gege!”

“Terrific!”

Without knowing why Murong Die also began to look forward to that day.

But at this time, Lan He, who was sitting nearby, clenched his fists.

‘Sunday is it...’ He thought.

‘Want to watch a movie with my Murong Die? You’re going to die!’

After some calculation from Lan He, the day for Ma Wei’s restructuring is almost the same as the day when Liu Yi and them plan to watch a movie.

‘Hehe...at that time, I can do whatever I want....As for Murong Die, wouldn’t she obediently accept my affection?’

Lan He secretly smiled, but, Liu Yi wasn’t aware of that. He was busily turning page after page of the English book.

“Boss, boss....I, I’m back....”

At this time, Chen Cai, who was running out of breath, came into the class. While holding a pink envelope, he said.

“I finally....I finally got it....”

“Get back to the seat. We still have a class.”

Liu Yi smiled, “I’ll send it for you after the next lesson.”

“Ok, ok....”

Chen Cai was also tired. He climbed to his seat, gasping for air.

Lin Tong also jumped up and shouted to Liu Yi.

“Liu Yi, skip the next lesson. You need to follow me into the spiritual environment!”

“What’s wrong!”

Liu Yi hurriedly asked, “I still want to try this memory trick...The next class is history lesson!”

“That’s not important!”

Lin Tong jumped up, grabbed and hung on Liu Yi’s neck and then shouted.

“After this, you’re free to do whatever you want. But now your second star jade has just been opened, you have much work to do to stabilize this second star jade. Moreover, your strength is now sufficient to learn the second palm strike. Come with me!”

“Okay....I listen to you, Fox sister....”

Liu Yi can’t endure Lin Tong’s entanglement, so, he has to comply and sat straight to enter his spiritual environment.

After he entered his spiritual environment, he immediately saw Lin Tong, who was standing there anxiously.



“You finally came!”

Lin Tong hastily said, “If you come too late, you’re finished!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 59

“If you come too late, you’re finished!”

“What?”

Liu Yi didn’t understand why would his Fox sister say that.

He didn’t feel anything strange here.

To be covered by invigorating sense and sufficient strength that were circulating within the body are clearly the benefits that were brought by the opening of the second star jade.

“I feel pretty good....”

“What do you know!”

Lin Tong glowered at Liu Yi and then said, “There are two forces within your body, the red and the white. When you cultivate the sutra that was given by me and that woman, the two forces inside your body barely reached an equilibrium.”

Lin Tong said in her heart, ‘although the power of the white stream of qi is slightly powerful, the red stream of qi has great potential and also more unstable.’

‘If the suppression from the white power of immortal is not good enough, plus Liu Yi’s sudden mood swings, the red demonic power will likely to erupts, making Liu Yi turned into a demon again!’

‘Liu Yi’s demonic form is too terrifying....’

‘Although he has opened only two jade star, even the four star fox such as myself....will unable to bear but shiver in fear.’

“You just opened your second star jade. You need to stabilize the two forces in the second star jade first! Take a look at your second star jade and see what kind of state is it in!”

Lin Tong said and then opened her star jade eyes to look at Liu Yi’s chart of cultivation universe.

Liu Yi was also observing his own universe chart.

His first star jade was releasing two forces, the white and red, that were winding at each other through space and landed on the nearby second star jade.

The second “Kang” star jade has shone brilliantly, full of mystery and power.

All of these are wonderful, but Liu Yi suddenly discovered that in the interior of this star jade, the two forces were constantly collided with each other, back and forth, like two children fighting!

Liu Yi was shocked. If this continue, he would be finished indeed!

He quickly circulate his Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra and Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra and then steadied the two stream of qi, allowing them to gradually quiet down.

Indeed, this is a hidden danger!

If not for Lin Tong’s timely reminder, he might be in a very terrible situation!

Fortunately, he has his Fox sister...Without his Fox sister, what can he do!?

Under the effort of Liu Yi, the two forces finally slowly stabilized.

They quietly floated within the second star jade, mixing around together.

“Done....”

Liu Yi finally heaved a sigh of relieve.

He doesn’t have to worry about this runaway force issue anymore.

“Your strength is now sufficient to practice the second palm strike technique of the Great Brilliant Sun Palm, Vein Seal.”

Lin Tong said, “Although it isn’t as powerful as the first palm strike, it wins in the control attribute. This should be a good control skill for you.”

“Mm!”

Liu Yi nodded, “I already want to practice this palm technique for a while,

now I finally have the opportunity!”

Lin Tong suddenly flew to the front of Liu Yi and said, “Come on, the old rules, we spar!”

“Em....”

Liu Yi hesitated.

“Why are you hesitating!? This lady is a four star you know! Although I am currently sealed, I have more experience than you! Come on! Hurry! Besides me, who can accompany you to have a spar! Real combat experience is the quickest way to master this technique!”

After that, Lin Tong hooked her finger in the air at Liu Yi.

“Play close attention! This lady may not want to accompany you, the foolish melon head, every day!”

“Ok then...”

Liu Yi took a deep breath and then put his power into his palm.

“This time, I will not be lenient toward you. If you want to beat this lady, that depends on your ability!”

Lin Tong said. A shadow flickered. Lin Tong has used the spirit fox steps exquisitely, making Liu Yi envious.

If he can perform such a high level of spirit fox steps, that would be wonderful.

Unfortunately, he can only perform the superficial level of spirit fox steps; Their differences is huge!

“Come and attack me! If you can touch my forehead, you win! Otherwise, I’ll never let you leave this spiritual environment!”

Lin Tong’s shape constantly flashed around Liu Yi, trying to provoke him.

“Wuwu....”

Liu Yi adjusted his breathing according to the breathing technique to bring about the state of profound.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

Liu Yi's ears heard some popping sound. These should be the sounds that were produced whenever Lin Tong touched the ground using her spirit fox steps.

Liu Yi took a few more breaths according to the breathing technique to try to figure out the direction and then stepped forward using the spirit fox steps.

“Bang!”

His body suddenly rushed out and landed in front of Lin Tong.

“Vein Seal!”

At the same time, he shot out his palm

Because this is only a spiritual body, rather than his true right hand, Liu Yi can use his two palms indiscriminately.

It is clear that, compared to his left hand, Liu Yi's right hand is more powerful.

Why is it so? This should be self-evident to most guys.

Liu Yi's right hand swung fast and fierce. With the howl of wind, this palm directly swept on Lin Tong.

But Lin Tong's body seemed like air, allowing Liu Yi to sweep past it, without hitting anything.

An afterimage!

Liu Yi immediately surprised.

At this time, Lin Tong's voice suddenly sounded from behind him.

“Melon head, looks like you lost.”

While she was speaking, her ice-cold hand was already placed on Liu Yi's neck.

The long and sharp nails hovered on Liu Yi's quivering throat.

“Not yet, Fox sister....”

Liu Yi suddenly laughed. His empty right hand suddenly caught Lin Tong's palm.

“Ah!”

Lin Tong was surprised. She didn't expect Liu Yi could execute such technique.

After her hand had been grabbed by Liu Yi, her heart was suddenly in disarray.

According to Lin Tong's strength, even if her hand was caught, she can instantly break free herself. Or, she can also employ other methods to take care of this foolish Liu Yi.

However, because her heart was now in a mess, it gave Liu Yi an opportunity.

“Vein Seal!”

Liu Yi launched the second palm strike along their connected hands and into Lin Tong's body.

Lin Tong's body immediately shook. There was a strange print on the heart location on her chest, making her whole body unable to move.

“Yes! I did it!”

Liu Yi turned around, smiled, and moved his left hand to touch Lin Tong's forehead.

But at this time, Lin Tong's body suddenly moved.

The print on her chest suddenly broke. Moreover, Lin Tong's other palm hit Liu Yi on the chest.

“Bang!”

Liu Yi suddenly felt that an enormous force came to his chest, making him took several steps back.

“How can this be! I obviously have sealed Fox sister!”

Liu Yi asked in surprise.

“Do you think Vein Seal can decide everything?”

Lin Tong also took advantage of the time when she freed herself from Liu Yi's hand, to calm her heart, and then tenderly scolded.

“Although Vein Seal is magical, you also must consider the difference in power between you and the opponent! With my four star strength, I can suppress the power of your second star palm strike!”

“So that’s why....then how can I possibly touched your forehead....”

Liu Yi wanted to cry.

“That depends on your ability!”

Lin Tong laughed, thinking.

‘Humph, humph, this guy actually touches my hand!’

‘Obviously this is just his spiritual body, not his Amorous Ripple Hand, how could I become ill-at-ease!’

‘Humph, no matter. In short, I should take this opportunity to punish him for his bad behavior!’

“If you can’t touch my forehead, you can’t leave this spiritual environment!”

With that, Lin Tong’s figure suddenly flashed. She has launched her spirit fox steps and hovered around Liu Yi.

Liu Yi really has a headache this time.

He just can’t handle this!

‘Am I never going to leave this spiritual environment ever again?’ He thought.

‘No can do, I promised Chen Cai to help him deliver his love letter!’

‘Liu Yi, you can do this, you must do this!’

After he had said this, he collected his qi in his pubic region and did the breathing technique once again, making himself calm down.

Right at this time, the white stream of qi in his body slightly trembled.

Liu Yi suddenly had an inspiration.

‘That’s right!’ He thought.

‘I don’t just have spirit fox steps and Great Brilliant Sun Palm, I also have

this icy-mysterious gas!’

‘But, Lin Tong moves too fast!’

‘If I casually throw out this ice ball, it will certainly have no effect!’

Liu Yi suddenly had an idea.

He used his spirit fox steps again to intercept Lin Tong’s figure when she was about to landed on the next position.

“Fool!”

Lin Tong couldn’t help but charmingly scolded, “How could you use the same trick against me twice!”

She scolded while Liu Yi’s palm hit her afterimage. She then appeared next to Liu Yi and shot her palm toward Liu Yi’s shoulder.

But at this moment, she caught sight of Liu Yi’s mouth, which hung a smile.

“I got you, Fox sister.”

Liu Yi said, and then his left foot stepped on the ground.

Suddenly, an ice arc, with his left foot as the center, spread out.

Although this ice diffusion was not far, Lin Tong was still within it.

In an instant, Lin Tong’s shape slightly delayed.

And then, at that moment, from his two hands, Liu Yi threw out two ice balls that fell on Lin Tong’s feet.

“Bang! Bang!”

Lin Tong’s lower body immediately blasted out and wrapped up by the frost.

Lin Tong’s was surprised. She tried to use the spirit fox steps to leave, only to find out that her two feet were covered with frost and she actually unable to break free herself temporarily.

This exceeded her expectations!

“Vein Seal!”

This time, Liu Yu had arrived before her body and shot out his palm



toward Lin Tong's chest.

Even if her lower body part were sealed, she could still move her head.

If this strike fails to hit her, Lin Tong will soon be able to get rid of the frost bind.

Liu Yi only have this one chance!

Therefore, with this palm strike, Liu Yi decided that he will strive for victory!

When Liu Yi's Vein Seal palm hit Lin Tong's chest, he suddenly felt something soft....

Liu Yi was immediately silly.

'Fuck me, I think I hit the wrong place....' He thought.

'But, it feels pretty good!'

Both of them were shocked.

And then Lin Tong cried out in alarmed.

"Liu Yi! I am going to kill you!"

She tried to get rid of the frost bind, but the effect of Liu Yi's Vein Seal suddenly appeared.

In the presence of the mysterious icy gas, Liu Yi's Vein Seal has a new effect!

In addition to the print on Lin Tong's chest, a layer of frost spread out and wrapped Lin Tong's body.

Lin Tong's body instantly condensed and her pretty face covered with frost. She tenderly shouted.

"Liu Yi....get, get out....of, of here!"

Because of the frost, her speech stuttered.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 60

After Liu Yi return to the classroom, he blinked his eyes a few times.

Although he is quite slow, he can tell that his sister Fox is angry.

Moreover, it was not the usual angry....but more like....very, very angry....

‘Was it because I won the spar?’ He thought.

‘But I clearly haven’t touched her forehead yet....’

‘That’s right....’

Liu Yi suddenly looked at his hands....

He seemed to have accidentally....touched her Fox sister’s chest...

‘Oh, mother! I really didn’t mean it!’

At that time, he was obsessed with winning the spar over his Fox sister and didn’t think about anything else....

But when he thought about it now....It did feel good....

‘It turned out Fox sister is quite a material....’

Liu Yi couldn’t help but think.

‘Hey! Hey!’

‘What am I thinking!’

‘Liu Yi, Liu Yi. You’re really a beast!’

‘Fox sister is so good toward you, how could you have thought such things!’

‘Liu Yi, Liu Yi. You’re a bastard!’

‘No wonder Ma Yixuan doesn’t like you!’

Liu Yi maliciously cursed himself.

At this time, the classroom bell rang.

Chen Cai hastily looked at Liu Yi with a look that is full of anticipation, or, one could also say miserable.

“Boss....my happiness (sex life)....will depend on you....”

“Damn, your happiness must depend on both of your hands!”

Liu Yi received the envelope from Chen Cai while giving him a stern eye.

‘Chen Cai’s wretched thoughts must’ve rubbed on me. That’s right. This must be it!’ He thought.

“Boss, please!”

After millions of urging and millions of cajoling, Liu Yi gave him a reassuring gesture, and then took the love letter and leave the classroom.

To be honest, although Liu Yi has given Chen Cai his promise, his heart has some apprehensions.

Although he liked Ma Yixuan for quite a while, he actually never sent her such love letter like this.....

Even a slow learner like Liu Yi knew that sending a love letter like this....is too unsophisticated.

He knew that, in these days, love between students is no longer the same as before.

With several direct talks, in addition to have a look that is pleasing to the eye, one can start a relationship.

Of course, this method only works for those rich and handsome students.

A student with a poor background such as Liu Yi, will not be on any girl’s radar.

Liu Yi sighed, and then stood in front of the door of the experimental class.

This experimental class is the best class in the school. Which consists of the most brilliant students, who have passed the past exams with excellent result.

Liu Yi thought that there was not only honor for a student who attended this experimental class, but also a sense pressure.

“Schoolmate, who are you looking for?”

A female student walked out of the experimental class. When she saw a

student, who stood at the door, she suddenly couldn't help but curiously asked.

“Em, I'm looking for ....”

“Hey, aren't you the one who've defeated Lan He? Liu Yi, right!?”

When this homely, freckled girl recognized Liu Yi, she suddenly shouted in a pleasant surprise, “It is you, right?”

‘Em?’ Liu Yi thought.

‘Why am I suddenly become famous?’

Previously, he used to walk to the school without anyone recognizing him; He was an invisible student....

Liu Yi suddenly has some excitement plus some small sense of satisfaction.

Although they all said that fame portends trouble....But the feeling of being recognize by others is actually pretty good....

“Yes, I am Liu Yi.”

Liu Yi began to trace his trouser pockets, to see if there is a pen in it.

In the event this girl wanted him to autograph something, it would be awkward if he didn't have a pen!

“It really is you!”

The girl was excited for a moment, but instantly, she disappointedly said.

“Why you have to be so ugly like this? I thought that you're a hunk!”

Liu Yi instantly has the urge to faint.

‘Oh, mother....’ He cursed in his heart.

‘Since when did this father become this ugly!’

Although he is not a handsome guy, he also a fellow who had a nose and a pair of eyes!

“Why do you come to our class?”

“I, I am looking for ....Wang Yuzheng....”

‘This should be her name.’ He thought.

“Shush!”

The girl quickly pulled Liu Yi aside into the corridor, looked around, and then relaxed and carefully said.

“Are you crazy....”

The girl stared at Liu Yi and said, “Luckily, Lin Huayang didn’t hear you say this name....Otherwise, you’d be dead!”

“Lin Huayang? The principal’s son?”

“Yes! His grades were poor, but because of his father’s backing, he can enter our experimental class. He then had a liking for our class leader, Wang Yuzheng.”

The girl suddenly smiled, “But, although Lin Huayang had bad characters, he is actually quite handsome. If he is willing to chase me, I will certainly accept him!”

Heavy lines appeared on Liu Yi’s face.

“Nevermind, I’m just delivering a love letter from a friend.”

Liu Yi shook the love letter in his hand and said.

“You’re crazy!”

The girl was shocked, “Sending a love letter! You, you’re dead!”

“What are you afraid of? I don’t believe this Lin Huayang will be able to eat me.”

Liu Yi said and, despite the warning from the girl, walked toward the experimental class.

Liu Yi lingered for a while and then went into the class.

He has promised this matter to Chen Cai, so, he must accomplish this.

“You silly fork....you’re hopeless....”

The girl behind him repeatedly shook her head and then went as far away from Liu Yi, to avoid being implicated.

Liu Yi took a deep breath and marched in front of the classroom.

This is indeed the experimental class. After he entered the class, Liu Yi suddenly saw a group of student who still earnestly studied even after the class is finished. They wasted no time at all.

‘My goodness....’ He thought.

‘They really go all out!;

Although Liu Yi never attended the experimental class, he has heard the things about this class.

He heard that these students study seven days a week. They even have the night class. They only took a rest on Sunday afternoon.

If he were to attend this class, it would be the same as entering the hell!

“Which of you is Wang Yuzheng?”

Liu Yi’s announcement instantly changed this peaceful classroom.

A group of students raised their head and looked at Liu Yi as if they were looking at a monster.

Liu Yi was shocked, ‘Is my face, really that ugly?’ He thought.

All the students didn’t say anything. They just looked at Liu Yi, making him feel quite weird.

“Who is Wang Yuzheng?”

But Liu Yi didn’t forget the task from Chen Cai. So, he asked again.

“I, I am....”

A lean and delicate person, with a ponytail, suddenly made a sound.

Although she wore a pair of black-rimmed glasses, it didn’t hide her beauty.

Her kind of beauty is different than Murong Die. Murong Die is a stunning beauty, while she, is a quiet beauty.

Moreover, she also carries a clean a refined feeling that Liu Yi had never seen before.

Such beauty....should only appear in the ancient era.

How could she possibly appear in these days and ages?

“Who are you, boy?”

Before Wang Yuzhen even finished, a nearby tall student stood up and looked at Liu Yi with a constipated look, and then asked.

This youth is very handsome and tall. His appearance is almost as hunk as the stars on the television.

But the gloomy look on his forehead made Liu Yi very uncomfortable.

“I am looking for Wang Yuzhen. Are you Wang Yuzheng?”

Liu Yi asked in a bad mood.

“I am Wang Yuzheng’s boyfriend. What? Do you have an opinion?”

“I, I am not....”

Wang Yuzheng anxiously tried to say something. But that handsome youth smirked and said.

“Yuzhen, be careful, if you say you’re not, I may have to kiss you in front of the class?”

This simple threat already made Wang Yuzheng’s face pale.

She didn’t dare to say anything again and lowered her head.

Noticing this, Liu Yi can’t help but be a bit uncomfortable. He thought, ‘How could this boy threaten a girl using this method!’

“I just want to look for Wang Yuzhen. Please step aside.”

Liu Yi couldn’t help but make his tone of voice a bit firm.

“Hey, you’re a crazy boy aren’t you!”

That handsome boy immediately sneered and said, “Do you know who I am?”

“Do YOU know who I am?” Liu Yi asked back.

“Don’t know.”

“You don’t know me, so, why would I want to know you? You’re crazy.”

Liu Yi gave that handsome boy a middle finger and went before the

stunned look of Wang Yuzheng and then said.

“Student Wang Yuzheng, please accept this love letter.”

After that, under the dumbfounded look of all the people in the class, Liu Yi put the pink-envelope love letter on Wang Yuzheng’s table.

“Ah? This, this....”

Wang Yuzheng had a sudden panic.

“Motherfucker, you court death!”

That handsome student suddenly shouted, “You dare to have ideas with my, Lin Huayang’s, woman?”

‘Lin Huayang. So, he is that Lin Huayang?’ Liu Yi thought.

“Lin Huayang, don’t go too far!”

At this time, Wang Yuzheng, who was sitting there, suddenly stood up and mustered up the courage to loudly shouted at Lin Huayang.

“I, Wang Yuzheng, am not your woman!”

“Yuzheng, I, Lin Huayang, like you. So, you are my woman.”

Lin Huayang folded his arms and proudly said, “This point, is known to everyone!”

“Lin Huayang, you’re too overbearing!”

Wang Yuzheng’s anger turned into tears.

“Humph, so what if I’m overbearing? When I, Lin Huayang, like a girl, how could that girl be able to escape? Wang Yuzheng, be a darling and obediently be my girlfriend.”

With that, he turned around, looked at Liu Yi, and said.

“As for you. If you don’t want to die, quickly take back your love letter and get out!”

“Lin Huayang, other people may be afraid of you, but I, Liu Yi, am not afraid you.”

Not only he didn’t go, but Liu Yi also said to Wang Yuzheng.



“Wang Yuzheng, please keep the love letter. Also, you better stay away from this guy.”

“Motherfucker!”

Lin Huayang suddenly shouted, “You’re a dick! You dare to meddle in my affair!”

Seeing Lin Huayang acted like this, other students didn’t dare to speak. They all lowered their head and pretended to be invisible.

“Who am I? I’m just an ordinary student.”

Liu Yi stood there, without any fear of Lin Huayang’s aura.

“But the things that you, Lin Huayang, do, even a mediocre student such as me is unable to watch it. As a boy, if you like a woman, you should take care of her and please her. But you, relying on the powerful backing of your family, actually bully a girl like this. Are you still a man?”

“Hey, you’re good.”

Lin Huayang couldn’t help but laugh, “You’re trying to put an act in front of me, Lin Huayang, aren’t you? If you have the courage, announced me your name. See how I, Lin Huayang, am going to punish you. Do you dare? Do you have the guts?”

“Don’t....”

Wang Yuzheng wanted to prevent Liu Yi from speaking out his name.

But Liu Yi, with chin up, and chest out, roared.

“My name is Liu Yi! The second class of the second year student, Liu Yi!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 61

"I heard you've made a confession with Wang Yuzheng from the experimental class?"

The next morning, when Qin Chao get into the class, he heard Wang Lele curiously asked from behind him.

Liu Yi's face was suddenly covered with cold sweat.

'What is happening here?' He thought.

'When did I make a confession to Wang Yuzheng?'

Wang Lele was staring at him with her pair of curious eyes.

Murong Die, who sat next to her, was looking at her iPad as if she was enraptured by it. But Liu Yi found out that her eyes were just staring at the search engine page for a long time.

"I never made a confession to Wang Yuzheng."

Liu Yi quickly explained, "Don't talk nonsense, ok! Bad words will ruin the reputation of a good woman."

"Gee....Since when did I talk about other people bad reputation!"

Wang Lele cheerfully smiled, "Right now, nobody in the school who doesn't know this: Yesterday, you, Liu Yi from the second class and second-year student, ran to the experimental class and, in front of Lin Huayang, gave Wang Yuzheng a love letter!"

"That is not my love letter!"

Liu Yi hastily said, "It was Chen Cai, who asked me to deliver it!"

"Oh? Really?"

Hearing this, Murong Die, who was looking at the iPad, suddenly raised her eyes and looked at Liu Yi.

"Of course it's true!"

Liu Yi looked back and saw Chen Cai entering the classroom carrying a steamed stuffed bun.

He immediately approached and pulled Chen Cai to the side and then pointed at this fellow and said.

“He made me deliver it. Chen Cai, quickly explained to me!”

“What? Boss, I haven’t told you about this yet!”

With the steamed stuffed bun in one hand, Chen Cai looked at Liu Yi with a sad expression and said.

“Didn’t you want to help me chase Wang Yuzheng? ....Why are you chasing her instead? ....Boss, you can’t be like this. Were you tempted after looking at Wang Yuzheng’s beauty?”

“Damn, tempting your sister!”

Liu Yi immediately gave Chen Cai a punch and then said, “I just met with her yesterday ....I even knew her existence just when you told me about it. How could I have a feeling for her! Yesterday, I was just helping you sent the letter okay!”

“Do you really mean it?”

When Chen Cai looked at Liu Yi, he suddenly understood.

“Oh, oh! Yes, I remember now! I seemed to forget to sign my name in that love letter!”

“Damn you, why did you have to make a mistake!”

Liu Yi really wanted to give Chen Cai a kick to the downstairs.

‘What a rare and beautiful specimen!’ He thought.

‘Sending a love letter but forgot to write the name!’

“Oh, that’s okay, Wang Yuzheng probably wouldn’t like me anyway.”

Chen Cai suddenly chuckled and said, “Boss, there is a nice girl in the fifth class. I met with her yesterday in the bus ....How about, you help me deliver a love letter to her!”

“Go to hell!”

Liu Yi immediately got away from Chen Cai. He really doesn’t want to see this guy again!

“So you really did help Chen Cai send his love letter!”

Wang Lele exclaimed, “Then why did you have to help Wang Yuzheng stand up against Lin Huayang!”

“I just don’t like seeing him. That’s all....”

Liu Yi said, “He’s gone too far, chasing girls using such a coarse method! Did you know that he threatened Wang Yuzheng at that time?”

“What threat?”

The two girls asked.

Although they had heard that this guy, Lin Huayang, has been domineering and tyrannical, they never directly experience what kind of things did he exactly do.

“He threatened Wang Yuzheng. If Wang Yuzheng didn’t want to recognize him as her boyfriend, he would kiss her in front of their whole class....”

“Damn him! He is not a man, but a scum!”

Wang Lele suddenly couldn’t help waving her fist and angrily said.

“Such a bully!”

Murong Die also slightly frowned, “Relying on his father as the school’s principal to act in an unbridled lawlessness; I, Murong Die, really despise such people.”

Although Murong Die is a big lady of an influential family, toward this young master Lin Huayang, she actually felt really repugnant.

“That’s right. So, you see, how could I not stand up against him?”

Liu Yi said.

“But....since you’re not the one who pursue Wang Yuzheng....for you to carry this punishment....is a bit unfair....”

Wang Lele suddenly said.

“What? Punishment? What punishment?”

“You come with me.”

While the class hasn't started yet, Wang Lele pulled Liu Yi by the arm and walked outside.

Murong Die also followed.

The three people came to the hallway and stood in front of a bulletin board.

Seeing the red font at the top, Liu Yi's eyes immediately get angry.

"Disciplinary Notice: The second class of the second year student, Liu Yi, has disturbed the discipline in the experimental class and provoked a fellow student. The bulletin hereby informed the criticism."

Although it was just a mere reprimand, Liu Yi was already outraged.

'Is there something more injustice than this?' Liu Yi thought.

Liu Yi's whole body turned cold.

'This is a school, a school!'

'This is supposed to be a place where people imparted their knowledge, but now?'

'Now, it might as well be a black site prison!'

'Just because Lin Huayang is the principal's son and because I antagonize him, his words can become a public criticism!?''

'The school didn't even investigate the matter but directly put on the bulletin board!'

'What kind of reasoning is this!'

'Is there any justice in this!'

Liu Yi squeezed his fist, turned around and walked toward the other side of the corridor.

"Liu Yi, Liu Yi, where do you think you're going? You're not going to beat Lin Huayang aren't you?"

Wang Lele quickly shouted.

"Right, right, right, quickly stop this fool...."

The nearby Murong Die quickly said in fear.

If there really is a fight, Liu Yi is bound to suffer a substantial loss!

With him not having any influential backing, the school can easily expel him!

“If Liu Yi wants to beat him, I also want my share!”

Wang Lele’s words almost made Murong Die fell on the ground.

“This seeking chaos in the world smelly girl!” Murong Die thought.

“What are you talking about! Quickly chase him!”

The two young beauties immediately pursued behind Liu Yi.

Liu Yi didn’t go to the experimental class but went to the Faculty Office at the end of the corridor.

Li Juanhua was in a bad mood today. When she was about to carry out an annual evaluation, although she continuously had a good review, a student in her class has been publicly criticized.

How could this not make Li Juanhua angry?

This will directly affect her evaluation score and probably reduce her year-end bonus.

“This Liu Yi, is actually an honest student. Although his exams result were usually not up to par, he never stirs up trouble.’ She thought.

‘But something is wrong with him now....how could he suddenly got a reprimand!’

“Huayang, this criticism, are you satisfy with it?”

Sitting on one side of the office, director Zhang Yuren was asking Lin Huayang, who was seated in the nearby chair while drinking some tea, with some concern.

“Thank you, uncle Zhang. Although this public criticism was too simple, it should give that Liu Yi a lesson.”

With a smile on his lips, Lin Huayang slowly said, “But this Liu Yi is too haughty. He actually dared to come to our experimental class to cause

trouble. Our experimental class is a different place than the other class you know.”

“Yes, yes, this matter must be dealt with severely. Huayang, you can be at ease.”

This Zhang Yuren hastily said.

Then he turned his head and said to Li Juanhua.

“Teacher Li, your class recent trend is not good. How could you let Liu Yi be a student who knows no bound? It seemed there was a problem with your teaching method.”

Li Juanhua immediately became a little queasy.

‘This Zhang Yuren, in order to quickly be promoted to the vice-principal, really took great care toward Lin Huayang.’ She disgustingly thought.

‘He simply can’t wait to lick Lin Huayang’s toes.’

‘Moreover, he wants to doubt my teaching method?’

‘Are you kidding me!’

“Zhang Yuren, this child, Liu Yi, has always been very honest and never caused any trouble....”

“Nonsense! Teacher Li, at this time, you’re still siding with your student!”

This Zhang Yuren can’t help but slightly frowned and unhappily said.

“Teacher Li, this teaching method is wrong! If your students had a problem, you should immediately deal with them! With your present attitude, how could you do it! I think you have to go back and reconsider your position. As for your annual review, I must carefully consider your score.”

Li Juanhua suddenly erupted with a grief and indignation.

‘What kind of people is this!’ She angrily thought.

When Li Juanhua was in this vulnerable position. There was a knock on the office door.

“Come in!”

The teacher near the door immediately said.

Subsequently, the office door was shoved open.

Making Li Juanhua surprised when she noticed that the one who came through the door with big strides was her own student, which they were just talking about.

Wang Lele and Murong Die also followed behind him!

‘Oh, god, what’s with this lineup!’ She thought.

“Liu Yi, why....do you came....”

Li Juanhua exclaimed loudly.

“Oh? This is that Liu Yi?”

Zhang Yuren was a bit surprised.

“Lín Huayang!”

Liu Yi originally wanted to present his case to the teacher. But when he saw Lin Huayang just when he entered the office, Liu Yi suddenly enraged.

“Don’t act on your impulse!”

At this time, Lin Tong’s voice suddenly sounded in Liu Yi’s ear.

“Watch out for your second personality...”

Hearing these words from Lin Tong, Liu Yi was immediately taken aback. He quickly made a couple of breathing and adjusted his mental state.

Meanwhile, his Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra secretly circulated within his body, making his mind stay awake.

“Director Zhang, did our school is too lenient?”

At this time, Lin Huayang said a few words, making Liu Yi began to get annoyed.

“How can a student could casually enter into the Faculty Office? Just as they casually enter our experimental class, which disturb our study?”

“Liu Yi, this is not the place for a student like you, quickly get out.”

Zhang Yuren mercilessly snapped at once.



“Zhang....”

Before Liu Yi got enraged, Murong Die was first to erupt.

She was about to speak, but Liu Yi reached out his arms and interrupted her speak.

“You’re Director Zhang, right?”

Liu Yi was furious. His second personality also began to slightly affect him.

The usually inarticulate Liu Yi, this time, loudly and clearly said.

“I’d like to ask, what kind of student exactly am I?”

“Humph, you still want to ask me this?”

Zhang Yuren folded his arms and haughtily said, “You’re an ignorant and a scum who only knows how to harass other students!”

“Oh, really? What makes you say so?”

Liu Yi slightly picked up his eyebrows and then said.

“Today’s notification explained it all.”

Zhang Yuren sneered, “Moreover, I already inquired about your learning achievements from your class. I have to say, you are such a scum indeed!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 62

Zhang Yuren's remark had to make Liu Yi burned with anger.

In this supposed place of education, could there still be a trace of education left in it?

Perhaps, in this place, everything is already distorted.

This world has no clean place anymore.

As long as there is a human and there is a benefit, darkness will always try to seep in.

The Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra and Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra were continuously circulating within Liu Yi's body, stimulating his blood vessels.

His body was so cold now, but he was still clear-headed.

Inside his head, it was like someone kept telling him how to speak.

"You said I'm a scum. Well then, I have a question for you."

Liu Yi said, and slowly looked at the nearby Lin Huayang, then said.

"You inquired our teacher Li about my grades, and that's fine. I also want to inquire with you: Our young master Lin, in the experimental class, what are his academic results?"

"This, this....this is none of your concern...."

Zhang Yuren was a bit speechless.

"Hehe, you can't answer it can you? No problem, I'll answered it for you."

Liu Yi didn't give Zhang Yuren time to reply and continued to say, "Our young master Lin's scores, if you consider it average scores, then it is an insult to the word average. Lin Huayang's performance has been very, very poor and nobody in the school who doesn't know about this. The test that he passed has been very few. Yet, with this one-of-a-kind result he can enter the experimental class, hehe....also, he molested the girls in the class, threatened the classmate, and other kinds of evil conducts! If you, Director Zhang, say that I'm ignorant and scum for harassing another student. Then,

according to your own words, Lin Huayang is a scum of scum. Moreover, a certain director has personally arranged behind the back for Lin Huayang to enter the experimental class, oh, oh....that director, is you, Zhang Yuren, am I right? You are the biggest scum of all of the biggest scum!"

With that, he outstretched his finger and pointed it at Zhang Yuren's face.

That Zhang Yuren went pale and didn't know what to say. Unexpectedly, under the fiery aura of Liu Yi, he even took a couple of steps back.

"T....Teacher Li....look how good this student of you is...."

But the nearby Li Juanhua stood there without saying anything.

She has to admit that Liu Yi's words were beautiful and helped her vented some of her anger.

Lin Huayang has been a bully in the school for a long time. But because the Principal and Zhang Yuren always covered his ass, he even looked down upon the other teachers.

A few days ago, there was a newly arrived female English teacher. She is young and attractive and was good at teaching.

A day later, teacher Li heard that the night before, she was dragged by Lin Huayang to an empty office and almost sexually assaulted her.

Although she eventually escaped, she can only tearfully complain about this to her senior, teacher Li, and didn't dare to disclose to anyone else.

Because, in these days, it is not easy if someone wants to be a teacher. Especially in a key high school such as this.

In order to keep her hard-earned job, this young female English teacher can only swallow this insult.

'Ai....' Teacher Li sighed in her heart.

"Liu Yi, even if what you said is true, what's the use?"

At this time, with his hands in his pockets, Lin Huayang swaggered in front of Liu Yi, disdainfully looked at him, and said.

"Even if I'm wicked and evil, so what? I am the principal's son, Lin Huayang! And you? You're just a third-class family with smelly background!"

No matter what you say and no matter how good your mouth is, it cannot cover your smelly background and can only be stepped on by me, like the other regular students.

With that, he gave Liu Yi a stern look, "I want to pursue Wang Yuzheng, what about it? I want to take an opportunity on her, what can you do about it? And, I want to fix you, what can you do? My dad is the principal, and I can easily torment you to death! That bulletin notice is but a small penalty for you. I can easily do it again. Can you handle this? Do you dare to touch me? I dare you! Hit me, and you'll be expelled! If you don't believe me, then hit me, come on?"

"Smack!"

All the people in there looked stupid!

They saw Liu Yi really stepped forward, raised a hand and gave Lin Huayang's mouth a slap.

"I can't believe this, in all my life, this was the first time I heard anyone made such a request." Liu Yi said.

He clapped his hands, and then said, "Grandpa said, If others need a help, you should lend your hand. By the way, you're welcome."

"Liu Yi! I want you to be expelled!"

Lin Huayang's face was burning in pain. He suddenly roared.

At this time, Murong Die suddenly stepped forward, and gave him another slap, making Lin Huayang completely stunned.

"Smack!"

After this big slap in the face, Murong Die returned to Liu Yi's side and then said with understatement.

"I also meet your request, so, you need to expel me too!"

"Smack, smack!"

Before Lin Huayang can react, Wang Lele has stepped forward and, stepping on her toes, gave Lin Huayang another slap in the mouth.

After that, she happily clapped her hands.

“Haha, I, Wang Lele, am the kindest indeed! I gave you two slaps, no need to thank me! Remember to also expel me, ok!”

After that, the three people stood there, making the atmosphere in the entire office became like an icehouse.

“You, you....”

Zhang Yuren even breathed heavily. He clutched his chest as if he had a heart attack.

“Director Zhang, director Zhang!”

The people in the office were thrown into confusion.

Li Juanhua didn’t forget to look back and said.

“You three, get back to the classroom!”

“Yes, teacher Li!”

Liu Yi also knew how to quit when he was still ahead. So, he turned around and, with Murong Die and Wang Lele, went out of the office.

“Liu Yi, you just wait. I, Lin Huayang, will not let you get away with this!”

From behind him, came Lin Huayang’s ferocious roar.

Liu Yi also wasn’t sure if he will suffer Lin Huayang’s crazy retaliation. But, he knew that there are some things that he had to do.

If he didn’t do this and other people also wouldn’t dare to do this, then, this society will be thoroughly lost.

In any case, he has provoked the head bully, Yuan Shaojun. It doesn’t matter if he adds another Lin Huayang. No point in worrying about one debt when one has so many others.

“Murong Die, thank you....”

But Liu Yi was really grateful toward Murong Die. If she didn’t come to help at the crucial moment, perhaps he might really be expelled.

If he were the only one who hit Lin Huayang, his expulsion would be ironclad.

But because of Murong Die’s intervention, the story turned for the better.

Who would dare to expel the daughter of the famous Murong family?

Even Lin Huayang's dad, the principal, would not dare to provoke this big-shot of the Beilong (Northern Dragon) city.

"Humph, this lady was not there to help you."

Murong Die exaggeratedly turned her head to the side and said.

"This lady was just unhappy, looking at that guy's face!"

"So, that's why!"

Liu Yi nodded as if he suddenly enlightened, "I thought....how could Murong Die wanted to help me back then?....yes, of course, that guy's face is really making people angry."

'Damn!'

'Your face also makes people angry!' Murong Die quietly fumed.

She really wanted to slap this guy, Liu Yi, in the head!

"Liu Yi gege, that's not fair!"

Wang Lele propped her pair of bulging breast and said, "I also helped you smacked that Lin Huayang. I even slapped his mouth twice! Why don't you thank me for it!"

"Thank You! Thank You! Lele is the best!"

At once, Liu Yi resolutely expressed his gratitude, "Why don't you let me take you out to eat?"

"You? Take me out to eat?"

Wang Lele suddenly laughed; a laugh from a beauty that confused other people's mind. Her astonishingly huge breast continuously rippled in front of Liu Yi's eyes, making his heartbeat a little flustered.

"Liu Yi gege, don't make me laugh, ok! If you want to take me out to eat, do you have any money!?"

"Humph, Lele, you look down on me!"

Immediately, Liu Yi angrily said, "I scrimped and saved for several days and able to save ten yuan! Enough for you to eat a bowl of hot spicy soup!"

“Hot spicy soup, yes, yes! Then it’s a deal!”

Liu Yi thought that Lele will turn him down. But she readily agreed to his proposal. Moreover, she evidently very happy about it.

‘Could the phrase girls love hot spicy soup was real?’ Liu Yi mused.

“Liu Yi, what is the meaning of this?”

Unexpectedly, although Wang Lele seemed happy, Murong Die actually was not.

She was standing in the hallway, pinching her waist, and glared at Liu Yi with her pair of almond eyes. She said.

“You said Lele helped you. Am I, Murong Die, not also thrashed that Lin Huayang? Liu Yi, are you looking down on me, Murong Die?”

“No, no....how could I....”

“Then why you only ask Lele out to eat but not me?”

Murong Die was peering at Liu Yi with a very unhappy look.

“Of course! Of course, this offer is for the both of you!”

Cold sweat poured out of Liu Yi. ‘Oh, mother, who knew this lady Murong was also a person who doesn’t want to lose....’

“You invited me to watch a movie on the weekend right? I’ll treat you both to a bowl of hot spicy soup after that, ok?”

Liu Yi said in his heart, ‘Your sister!....I have to come up with another ten yuan....’

But today is Thursday....If he wants to save ten yuan in these two days....that’s a little difficult....

But he can’t possibly lick back his own words!

Ai, this is called a penny stumped a hero!

This was the first time Liu Yi began to worry about his financial matter.

“Humph! That’s more like it!”

Murong Die curled her lip, and then said, “I’m telling you, this lady

accepted your invitation, not because I cherish this bowl of hot spicy soup, but to return the courtesy that you make, understand?”

“Understood, understood....”

Liu Yi wiped his cold sweat.

‘Sure enough, just as my Grandpa said, women are the world’s most strange creature....’ He secretly thought.

“Then that’s a deal! Let’s get back to class!”

After saying that, Murong Die pulled Wang Lele and went back to class.

Liu Yi rubbed the cold sweat on his back.

This is the first time he took girls for a date.

But why he felt strange.

“Idiot.”

Lin Tong, who was laying on Liu Yi’s shoulder, launched a barrage of ridicule at Liu Yi.

“Why am I the idiot....?”

Liu Yi somewhat doesn’t understand, “But where would I get this ten yuan....If I save money these two days, I probably could have another five yuan by the weekend....oh, I’m really the hero who was stumped by a penny.”

“You are a cultivator now, how could you still worry about money?”

Lin Tong held out her paw and rested it on Liu Yi’s ear, and then said with a smile, “With this young lady here, how could you not have any money? Come, come, let this young lady tell you a few ways to make easy money!”

“Oh? Immortal Cultivation can also make its practitioner rich?”

Liu Yi’s eyes slightly lit up.

His family is an ordinary family. His parent’s payroll was not high. His father’s company even missed his dad’s bonus. Liu Yi has always wanted to help share his family’s burden. But because he was still a student, it was temporarily impossible.



“Humph, humph, you listen to me carefully!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 63

Liu Yi walked back to the classroom, sat back on his seat, and quietly listened to Lin Tong's ways to riches.

"First of all, your strength was now different from an ordinary man so you can choose some violence ways to amass money!"

Lin Tong said triumphantly.

'Using violence to amass money?'

'Isn't that a robbery?' Liu Yi thought.

"No! Absolutely not!"

Through the spiritual environment, Liu Yi earnestly told Lin Tong.

"Grandpa said, The strength of a man is used to protect a loved one, and not to do bad things! If you're asking me to do these kinds of things, I'd rather not do immortal cultivation anymore!"

Lin Tong's proud way was, all of a sudden, choked back by Liu Yi's few words.

"You waste wood! Thick-headed stubborn guy!"

Lin Tong could not help but said, "We are immortals, a notably higher being than those puny mortals! If we take something from them, that's nothing! We're already giving them enough courtesy if we don't kill them!"

"That is not an immortal! That is an evil person!"

Liu Yi strongly disagree, "Fox sister, you must be testing me right? Don't worry, I, Liu Yi, would never do such things! If I do such things then what's the difference between me and Lin Huayang and Yuan Shaojun?"

Liu Yi's words made Lin Tong unable to speak.

"Then this lady has no other ways...."

"...Come on....I still have to raise money...."

"Go think about other ways this evening in your house. This lady must consolidate my spiritual power, humph!"

With that, Lin Tong entered Liu Yi's spiritual environment and didn't come out.

Leaving Liu Yi staring with a silly look.

'Fuck, what should I do....' Liu Yi thought.

'Do I have to go out and borrow some money?'

'No, this is not right....'

For all his life, Liu Yi doesn't like to borrow money. Because he lacks the ability to repay.

Moreover, borrowing money to pay for the girl's meal....

Liu Yi thought that, for him, this thing is....impossible!

'Or, should I ask mom for the money?'

'Forget it....'

His mom's salary is not very high, plus there are many expenses that need to be paid in the house. Not even counting his tuition, and so on....

Liu Yi can't bring himself to ask for additional money from his mom.

It seemed like this winter holiday he must go out and find some work.

But now it's too early to think about winter holiday. This weekend will come in a blink....

How should he make some money before that....

This is what Liu Yi is worried about.

Just when Liu Yi was worrying about this, Li Juanhua pushed the class door and entered. She has a slightly tired face.

"The school just gave a notice: Liu Yi, because you've been fighting in the school, the school has given you a disciplinary warning. In the future, you must not fight again, you understand?"

After saying that, Li Juanhua went out.

Liu Yi suddenly showed an ugly face.

'Well, his retaliation really came.'

Lan He and Jiang Youcai were secretly happy, they thought, 'Idiot, who told you to mess with the wrong people!'

'You really believe that you're a hero, hah!'

"Shua!"

At this time, Murong Die suddenly stood up and started to walk out of the door.

"Murong Die, where are you going!?"

Liu Yi quickly got up and stopped her.

Class will begin soon, where would Murong Die go!?

"I want to ask for punishment from teacher Li."

Murong Die unhappily said, "Me and you, we both hit Lin Huayang. Why would they only punish you and not me? That's not fair! I'm going to demand my punishment from teacher Li!"

"Wait a minute!"

Liu Yi quickly said, "You want to embarrass teacher Li? That's useless. Teacher Li is only a teacher....This decision came from the above. She, as a teacher, can do nothing about it."

Regarding this point, Liu Yi actually was very aware.

"Then I'm going to Zhang Yuren, if not, I'll go directly to Principal Lin."

Murong Die unforgivingly said, "I don't believe I, Murong Die, can't have a place to reason things out!"

"Enough. Murong Die, you've helped me a lot."

Liu Yi advised, "The school didn't expel me, was because of your help. A disciplinary warning is nothing. Lin Huayang is gunning for me, let me take it by myself. I don't like to hide behind a girl's back. Please, just let me handle this!"

"You big idiot!"

Murong Die loudly cursed at Liu Yi, "This lady is too lazy to care about you!"

With that, she went back to her seat and furiously jabbed the villainous textbook.

Liu Yi was at a loss.

‘What is this Murong Die angry about?’ He thought.

‘Really strange....’

“Men who have never been in love are really terrible....”

Lin Tong, who was lying on Liu Yi’s table, clicked her tongue and said.

Liu Yi was more confused, ‘What is going on here?’ He thought.

From the back, Wang Lele also shrugged her shoulders, indicating her helplessness.

‘Liu Yi gege is indeed a bloody fool.’ She secretly thought.

When Liu Yi was still worrying about this, Ma Wei walked out of the bar with a cocky attitude.

The bar is his territory.

Black Dragon restructuring was over. With the money from Lan He, Ma Wei has made connections with his higher-ups and got the position that he wanted, as a hall leader in Black Dragon gang.

Since then, these several blocks are his territory.

He was no longer Ma Wei the small fry. Right now, besides the other hall leader and the leader, when other gang member sees him, they must politely call him Ma Ye(Mister/Gentleman)!

This year, Ma Wei is 22 years old. He can be said to be Black Dragon’s youngest Hall leader.

But he was tough enough and skilled enough.

Most importantly Ma Wei has ambitions.

He intended that, before his 25th birthday, the position of deputy gang leader must be his!

Ma Wei’s principle in entering the gang is: Either he go big or go home!

Otherwise, if he always a small fry, who will think highly of him!

Only after becoming the big shot in the underworld, will he have a genuine social status! Then he can say: entering the underworld, is not in vain!

“Ma Ye....ehm, the territory has been divided, what do we do next?”

A small fry, who has just been Ma Wei’s follower, talked with a flattering smile from the side.

“Our next mission....is very simple.”

Ma Wei looked at one of the pictures on his phone and a message from Lan He, and slowly said.

“Oh, really? Collecting all the security money from our territory this year, or kick those Fierce Tiger gang’s asses in the south street?”

“Neither.”

Ma Wei is now a hall leader. His manner of speaking is also changed.

A cigarette was dangling from his mouth. While smoking, he slowly and inflexibly said.

“Are we going to stake it all with the Shanghai Gang? Beautiful! Ma Ye is really worthy to be our leader. For a long time, we had wanted to pack them up!”

“No, we’re going to pack up a student.”

“What?”

That small fry was suddenly stunned.

‘Pack up a student?’ He thought.

‘Is this a mistake? Our Black Dragon Hall Leader, wanted us to pack a student?’

“Hehe, you don’t understand. This is my business deal.”

Ma Wei laughed, “This is a very important business deal to me....In short, this student must be removed.”

“Easy peasy!”

The small fry turned his neck and then said, "I'll go looking for two brothers and wait for him after the school. We'll make him end up in the hospital for 3-4 months. Isn't that easy peasy?"

"No....this is not an ordinary student."

Ma Wei waved and said, "This kid is a hard stubble. He seemed to know some Kung Fu. If you go looking for him with just several men, you will lose."

"Oh! He has family Kung Fu!"

That small fry smiled, and then said, "That is not difficult. We can ambush him and put him into a sack from behind, and then beat him to death! Isn't that enough?"

"My mission is to make him disappear."

Ma Wei crookedly smiled, making that smile fry suddenly shuddered.

"Ma Ye mean...."

He made a cut in the neck movement.

"This kid is worth it?"

Ma Wei nodded and smiled with an inscrutable look.

"Is....this okay....?"

The small fry was a little perturbed.

Ordering him to fight, or extorting money was easy.

But for him to kill a man....

He still has a little misgiving about that.

"Hehe....Since you're now in my, Ma Wei's, Hall, you should understand one thing."

Ma Wei puffed his cigarette and slowly said.

"In my, Ma Wei's, dictionary, there are only two kinds of people. One is a friend, and the other one is a dead man...."

The small fry secretly shivered.

'It seems, The Black Dragon Gang have an extraordinary character.' He

thought.

‘Whoever that kid is....this time, he truly has a bad luck.’

At this time, in an abandoned health room.

Several boys were sitting together, secretly smoking cigarettes.

Yuan Shaojun sat right in the middle. The cigarette in his hand was also the most high-quality one.

Ma Yixuan sat on his lap and occasionally took Yuan Shaojun’s cigarette into her rosy lips.

Another time, Yuan Shaojun would pull her head down and kissed her.

Truly speaking, Yuan Shaojun’s big face is making her sick.

But Ma Yixuan tolerated it.

She knew that this man is her stepping stone and her protector in the high school Therefore, she must firmly hold onto him.

When she went to college, she will kick Yuan Shaojun to the side.

In the college, there are certainly more powerful figures.

This Yuan Shaojun is nothing but a school bully.

But she, Ma Yixuan, is a calamity level woman! (Woman who can bring down a nation) “Boss, boss, someone is looking for you!”

At this time, a student ran into this medical facility and breathlessly said.

“What are you panicking about! I your father, thought the teacher has come here!”

Yuan Shaojun disapprovingly stared at that student.

“This man, this man is more powerful than the teacher....”

That student quickly said.

“Who? Don’t tell me it’s the principal?”

Yuan Shaojun jokingly asked, making the several brothers, who were sitting in the room with him, followed with a smirked.

“Yes, he’s the principal’s son....Lin Huayang!”



“Oh?”

During this conversation, Lin Huayang’s voice has sounded from the outside.

“Boss Yuan, let me in. I want to talk to you about something.”

“Let him come in.”

Yuan Shaojun clapped his hands.

Someone on the outside, who seemed to be the sentry, heard Yuan Shaojun’s command and immediately let Lin Huayang in.

After Lin Huayang entered the room, he almost tripped because of the smoke from the cigarette.

‘Shit!’ He cursed in his heart.

‘What kind of health clinic is this! This place is quick to becoming a fairy wonderland!’

Lin Huayang squinted his eyes to look for quite a while before he indistinctly saw Yuan Shaojun’s figure in the smoke.

“Yo, look what the cat dragged in, isn’t this our young master Lin? Hehe.”

Yuan Shaojun chuckled.

When Ma Yixuan stood up from Yuan Shaojun’s lap, she looked at the opposite Lin Huayang and her eyes flashed with desire.

She has to admit, this Lin Huayang is indeed handsome.

But looking at her Yuan Shaojun....

Goddamn! His face belong in the animal world!

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 64

“Boss Yuan, you are our school’s bully. I, Lin Huayang came looking for you today, is to ask you for something.”

After Lin Huayang found Yuan Shaojun, he directly said without any preamble.

“Oh?”

Yuan Shaojun immediately became interested.

‘But this Lin Huayang is the son of the Principal.’ He thought.

‘I heard he even more overbearing than me.’

‘I myself have to take into account for the teacher and the director while he, Liu Huayang, was absolutely unrestrained. Because the director and the Principal, are his backer!’

“Young master Lin, you actually still have something to ask me for help? Strange....”

“Hehe, don’t make fun of me.”

Lin Huayang smiled and said, “You see I’m usually pretty capable, but some things I can’t do and need your, Yuan Shaojun’s, head bully capability.”

“Since young master Lin has opened the mouth, please, say your piece.”

After Yuan Shaojun had finished a cigarette, he lit up another one.

He didn’t have any interest in attending class. Hiding here and smoking is natural for him.

He doesn’t understand what were those nerds study about in the classroom.

Even if he didn’t study anything, weren’t those nerds still scared to death in front of him!?

Might as well sit here everyday to drink and smoke, happy and unrestrained!

“I want to beat someone.”

Lin Huayang clenched his fists.

“Who?”

“The second year, second class student, Liu Yi.”

Yuan Shaojun’s eyes were suddenly widened.

The nearby Ma Yixuan was also shocked.

She recalled the scene that day on the rooftop. Her legs became weak and her body trembled.

Liu Yi on that day....

Was really terrifying....

“Why, boss Yuan knew him?”

Seeing the reaction from Yuan Shaojun, Lin Huayang thought that something is obviously not quite right.

“Of course, I know him.... Even if he turned to ash, I will still know....”

Yuan Shaojun bit his teeth until it creaked.

“Young master Lin, even if you don’t come today, I’m also looking for opportunities to deal with this kid....”

“Oh? There’s actually this kind of thing. It seems that this guy is really cheap. Not only he has annoyed me, he also messed with you, the head bully!”

“Humph....since he messed with the both of us simultaneously, he is certainly not going to survive.”

Yuan Shaojun clenched his fists and produced crackling sounds from its joints.

“Then what are we waiting for? Tonight, we’ll ruthlessly give him a lesson!”

Lin Huayang suddenly smiled, “This idiot want to grab my, Lin Huayang’s, woman. I definitely could not forgive him!”

“Huh? He’s really unfaithful!”

Yuan Shaojun mused, "He also want to steal my girlfriend!"

After that, Yuan Shaojun pulled the nearby Ma Yixuan into his arms.

"Ah!"

Ma Yixuan loudly exclaimed, and then, with a delicate and unlimited tenderness, took a quick glance at Lin Huayang.

Suddenly, Lin Huayang's eyes blurred a bit.

Ma Yixuan is a beautiful woman while Lin Huayang is a man full of vigor. In an instant, Lin Huayang's lower body parts have some change.

But he immediately refrained himself.

This is Yuan Shaojun's lair, and the woman that he was looking at, is Yuan Shaojun's woman...

But, it appeared that the woman has a bit desire for him.

'I should find a chance on another day to secretly meet and have fun with her!' He promised to himself.

'Hehe....I didn't think that this ugly Yuan Shaojun actually has such beautiful girlfriend.'

'She appears to be a stunner!'

"If I, Yuan Shaojun, don't kill this kid, how could I become a bully in the school anymore!"

"Looks like we share the same goal."

After firmly fixing his eyes at Ma Yixuan's breast twice, Lin Huayang's finally averted his eyes, and said with a smile, "If the two of us cooperate and ambush him, we can make him understand who own this school."

"However, this kid is a hard stubble."

Yuan Shaojun reminded Lin Huayang, "Several days ago, I asked my subordinates to teach him a lesson. Not only they unable to teach him the lesson, he even took down several of my men."

"What? He is that capable?"

in Huayang didn't believe this even a little bit.

“That Liu Yi seemed to be fragile. Can he actually take down several of Yuan Shaojun’s men?” He thought.

“Young master Lin thought I was kidding?”

Yuan Shaojun’s face suddenly turned ugly.

“No, no. I just thought that he looked weak. Unlike boss Yuan natural aura of a master.”

After hearing these few words from Lin Huayang, Yuan Shaojun became happy again.

“Yes, that kid, although he looks like a nerd, he actually has some real skills.”

Yuan Shaojun squeezed the joints on his bones, and then said, “Therefore, this time, I’m going to give him a big round of package.”

“Oh? How big is the package?”

“Hehe, I will bring all of my men to beat up this kid.”

Yuan Shaojun said, “I don’t believe he can handle my more than a hundred men! Damn it, no matter how good he is, a fierce Tiger can’t possibly withstand a pack of wolves!”

“This is a good idea!”

Lin Huayang quickly gave his thumb up.

“Ai, this is what I’ve been worrying about.”

Yuan Shaojun waved his hand and said, “Think about it, after all, moving more than a hundred people into the school ground is too conspicuous. But now, with the help from young master Lin, this matter can finally be solved.”

“I understand what you mean.”

Lin Huayang nodded, “So be it....After school today, before the first night class, all the teacher in the school will be in a meeting. How about it?”

“You really are young master Lin! You actually have so much power here!”

Yuan Shaojun said with a slight jealous.

“Hei, how could I have that much power. Even if I’m the son of the

Principal, it is impossible for me to make all the teacher defer to a meeting that I arrange.”

Lin Huayang quickly explained a bit, “It just that, there is indeed an important meeting that my father had arranged. I heard it’s about the school’s promotion. When the time comes, as long as I notify Director Zhang that old fellow to make the other teacher ignore all the strange sound, if they hear anything, you can be at ease in beating up that Liu Yi.”

““Haha! With this help from young master Lin, the matter is much simpler now!”

Yuan Shaojun clapped and laughed.

“This idiot....’ Lin Huayang thought.

He couldn’t help but secretly chuckled, ‘You’re a big idiot. I easily make use of you....’

‘Mm, I can even sleep with your woman.’

“But we also need an important condition.”

Lin Huayang added.

“What condition?”

“We need to ensure Liu Yi will come to this medical room after school.”

Lin Huayang said, “If you can make Liu Yi come, you can set an ambush around here and make sure Liu Yi will never return.”

“Hey, this is simple!”

Yuan Shaojun held out his hand and firmly slapped Ma Yixuan’s curled upward buttocks, saying.

“Baby, at that time, I want you to seduce Liu Yi to come here!”

“Why, why me?”

Ma Yixuan suddenly shivered.

“What? You’re not willing?”

Yuan Shaojun’s face turned hard.

“Go....I’ll go....”

Ma Yixuan was aggrieved.

‘Ai, if possible, I really don’t want to see Liu Yi again....’

‘He scared me to death....’

In Ma Yixuan’s heart, she hated and feared Liu Yi.

In particular, thinking that he is her neighbor...

She was even more afraid.

‘If someday he went berserk....and went to my home to put me down (rape), what should I do?’

There are only her grandmother and her sister in her house....

‘Who can stop him!’

‘Actually, it’s nothing if he just put me down....If by any chance, he takes thing too hard and retaliate on me, he might even destroy my face....’

Ma Yixuan suddenly hardened her heart.

“This time, I’ll have to make sure Liu Yi will be completely finished!”

“To avoid his retaliation!”

‘Liu Yi....Don’t blame me, Ma Yixuan, you asked for this!’

“Husband, I think this time we need to make sure Liu Yi will be gone for good.”

Ma Yixuan suddenly grumbled, “Did you know that Liu Yi always says bad things about you in the class? He said you’re really ugly and has no differences than an orangutan. I speak for you all the time and he scolded me. Saying, if I speak for you again, he will put me down....”

When he heard this, Lin Huayang, who stood by the side, picked up his eyebrow.

Although he only met with Liu Yi twice, he thought that Liu Yi shouldn’t be able to say such things.

‘It looks like this girl is not a good woman....’ He thought.

“Fuck his mother!”

Yuan Shaojun was suddenly furious. He threw away the cigarette in his hand and heavily stumped it.

“That fucking Liu Yi had lived long enough! If I don’t break both of his legs today, I’m not surnamed Yuan!”

‘Idiot. A gigantic idiot!’

Lin Huayang secretly shook his head.

“Then that’s settled....At that time, we’ll do this and this....”

And so, this group of people, within this medical room full of smoke, put down their arrangements.

---

“Liu Yi, you are too slack these days!”

In the spiritual environment, Lin Tong sparred with Liu Yi again. After severely beaten him, she said.

“That day you can even freeze me. How come today you can’t even touch this lady’s clothes!”

Lin Tong triumphantly held Liu Yi’s arms, and then reprimanded him.

Liu Yi was very depressed.

Since the last time Liu Yi used his mysterious icy qi on Lin Tong, she never gave him any chance to use his ice ball again.

“This lady already told you, instead of earnestly practice your skill, everyday you study those textbooks; What’s the use? Look, even though you’ve opened your second star jade, its power is not fully stored yet!”

“This is not an exam....moreover, I only need to read the whole textbook once....”

Liu Yi naively said, “I finally have a breathing technique that helps me remember my study....If I don’t take advantage of it, then it would really be a pity.”

The midterm exam will soon come, so, Liu Yi doesn’t want to mess things



up.

Now he didn't have any escape route. Jiang Youcai has been very cynical toward him everyday. And that words from Zhang Yuren made him can't stand it anymore.

What's wrong with having an average score!

Liu Yi wanted them to see that an average student can also go against the heaven's will (Achieve superb results)!

"Humph, you are not just an ordinary student now!"

Lin Tong cautioned him, "Remember, you're an immortal cultivator now! Your task is to cultivate!"

"But I'm still a student. As a student, I'm required to complete several tasks. For example, the exam...."

"You oaf!"

Lin Tong said, "You don't need to worry about such exams. There's this lady here; this exam is a piece of cake."

"Why would you say that?"

"You think about this, when the time for the exam comes, this lady will fly to the next class and help you look for the answer. See how easy this is!?"

Lin Tong proudly said.

"No!"

Unexpectedly, Liu Yi flatly refused.

"I would rather get zero on the test than to cheat! My grandpa said Cheating is not a real skill!"

"Damn, your grandpa spoke too much!"

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 65

Liu Yi and Lin Tong discussed the issue about the exam for a while. Afterwards, the school bell finally rang.

The school hour is finally over.

Liu Yi rose up to get ready to go home. He didn't intend to do the evening studies and planned to go back to properly do cultivation training, so as to avoid being nagged by his Fox sister.

This nagging from his Fox sister, after all, is for his own good. So, he should, at least, shows some effort.

Liu Yi packed his bag and, along with Chen Cai, went out of the classroom and then walked toward the outside.

But at this time, he was confronted by Ma Yixuan, who didn't turn up in the class this afternoon.

The present Ma Yixuan didn't have her usual beauty. She looked distressed, and there is also a swelling on the right side of her face.

Liu Yi took a look, and his mind was immediately surprised. Simultaneously, he also became depressed, 'What's with this?' He thought.

"Ma Yixuan, what happened to you...."

"Liu Yi, help me, please help me...."

Seeing Liu Yi, tears immediately poured down Ma Yixuan's face.

Although his heart no longer likes Ma Yixuan, facing such cry from Ma Yixuan, Liu Yi was still somewhat uncomfortable.

"What is it? Who bullied you?"

"Yuan Shaojun....It's Yuan shaojun...."

Ma Yixuan felt the tears, clutched her right cheek, and sobbingly said, "I don't want to follow Yuan Shaojun....He hit me....Liu Yi....I'm scared. I want you to take me out of here quick...."

"Outrageous! I must find and confront him about this!"

Liu Yi was suddenly furious.

In all his life, the people who he most despise on were the kind of men who hit a woman.

Even if it was not Ma Yixuan, but a stranger girl, who has been beaten by a man, Liu Yi will surely can't help but be moved.

“Moron!”

Lin Tong couldn't help but shouted in Liu Yi's ear, “This is certainly a trap!”

“Whether it's a trap or not....”

Liu Yi said through the spiritual environment, “The problem between Yuan Shaojun and me, sooner or later, will have to be resolved. Also, event if it's a trap, he shouldn't have hit Ma Yixuan. A girl is to be dearly loved and not to be hurt.”

With that, Liu Yi tightly pinched his fist.

Lin Tong was speechless.

‘This silly boy....is impenetrably thick headed....’ Lin Tong commented in her heart.

‘But, what words should I use to refute him....’

‘I always thought what he said is probably right....’

‘Oh, master, come save your good disciple....’

“Let's go. Wherever Yuan Shaojun might be, lead me to him.”

“You better not....you're no match for him!”

Ma Yixuan said, “Let's run away! He has lots of men. You just can't beat him....”

“Take me to him.”

Liu Yi firmly said.

At this time, a voice sounded in his mind, as if someone was talking to him.

“Do you really want to go? She's lying to you. She said these words to provoke you. Let me come out to deal with it. I'd be perfect to handle this

matter.”

Liu Yi quickly launched two breathing technique to adjust his condition.

Although he is somewhat stubborn, it doesn't prove that he is a fool.

Ma Yixuan's bad acting has been seen through by him.

This woman deceived him again and again, making Liu Yi thoroughly heartbroken.

But he still needed to go; He wanted to settle his problem with Yuan Shaojun once and for all.

Otherwise, in this school, he will never be at peace.

Also, he wanted to tell Yuan Shaojun that, even if it was just an act, it was still wrong for him to hit his woman.

“O, ok then. Come with me.”

A smug look flashed through Ma Yixuan's eyes, thinking that Liu Yi has been swindled by her. She then led Liu Yi to the outside of the school building.

They walked through the school playground, which was soundless. After the school is over, the students left this playing field.

At this hour, the playground was like a graveyard, quiet and depressed.

Ma Yixuan walked in the front. Under the moonlight, her fine stature was reflected into Liu Yi's eyes.

But Liu Yi already not in the mood to appreciate it.

Although this woman looks beautiful, she actually ugly on the inside.

When he walked in this playground, he already felt some breathing coming not far from him.

These breathings were messy and rapid. There were obviously a lot of people here, waiting to ambush him.

“Ma Yixuan.”

Liu Yi suddenly stopped at the playground and whispered.

“What’s wrong?”

There was still some distance from the targeted area. Thinking that the situation has changed, Ma Yixuan hastily turned around and looked at Liu Yi, who stood behind her.

“Ma Yixuan, I’m giving you one last chance....”

Liu Yi looked at the panic-filled eyes of Ma Yixuan and asked, “Do you really want to break up with Yuan Shaojun?”

“Of, of course, it’s true!”

Ma Yixuan quickly said.

“Oh, really? Then why did you come to me?”

“Because....because you’re the only person that I can rely on....”

Ma Yixuan hastily said, “In fact....I found that....I actually quite like you....”

Liu Yi’s heart trembled a bit.

In his dreams, many times he met with such scenario.

Unfortunately, when this scene actually happened....It was just a heartless scam.

Liu Yi quietly clutched his fists, to prevent his body from feeling the cold and excessive shiver. He said in his heart.

‘I have given you one last chance....’

‘But you let me down....’

‘Ma Yixuan....’

‘In order to harm me....you can actually say you like me....’

‘This kind of thing....I absolutely, absolutely can’t forgive....’

Liu Yi felt that his eyes were somewhat sour as if there were something cool that wanted to get out.

“Fool! She is a rotten woman! Why are you crying because of her?”

Lin Tong, who lay on Liu Yi’s shoulder, saw the sparkling things on the corner of Liu Yi’s closed eyes and felt as if something severely twitched

inside her heart; It was extremely difficult for her to bear it.

‘Ma Yixuan, damn you!’ She quietly cursed.

“Grandpa said, men don’t cry easily, so, I didn’t cry.”

Liu Yi said, stretched out his hand, rubbed his eyes with the back of his hands, then opened and said.

“Night wind entered my eyes, making me confused a bit.”

“Cih!”

Although Lin Tong’s mouth was hard, her heart was broken into pieces.

‘Why after seeing Liu Yi became sad, my heart was also in pain?’ She thought.

‘Lin Tong, you’re a Fox demon cultivator....what happened to you....’ She asked herself.

‘Your heart was moved by a man?’

‘No....’

‘Master said that there are no good men in this world.’

‘Beings that can defeat me are, Immortal, upright sect, and men....’

‘Therefore, they are all my enemies!’

‘Master said, when my heart was moved by a man, my death will not be far away.’

‘Lin Tong, you have to harden your heart....’

However, although she said that to herself....upon seeing Liu Yi’s present appearance....her heart, was still quite sad.

‘Humph, it’s all Ma Yixuan, that woman’s fault!’

‘I can’t forgive her!’

“Liu Yi....do, do we still need to go....”

Ma Yixuan asked with some apprehension.

“Go, of course.”

Liu Yi smiled, "Anyway, since Yuan Shaojun has hit you, I still need to say my piece toward him."

After that, Liu Yi took up the pace.

Ma Yixuan's heart slightly shivered, but some abhorrence soon appeared in her eyes.

She then turned toward the distant worn out dormitory area.

The old medical center is also on that side. Yuan Shaojun's men were hiding inside that worn out dormitory.

'Liu Yi oh Liu Yi, you can't blame me for this. You bring this all to yourself....' Ma Yixuan's thought.

Before the two people even arrive at the dormitory area, the sounds of people's breathing were even more clearer.

Ma Yixuan finally picked up her pace, turned around, and caught a glimpse of Liu Yi.

"Liu Yi, this is all you asked for it, don't blame me."

Then she backed away two steps and put her back against the dormitory wall.

The dormitory doors were suddenly busted open. This old building has a total of three doors, which opened at the same time. A densely packed of people shouted and ran out from each door.

These people wore school uniform and were obviously students.

Liu Yi didn't need to think to know that these men are Yuan Shaojun's underlings.

These men ran all over the place and encircled around Liu Yi, putting him at the center.

Yuan Shaojun, with a cigarette dangling from his mouth, came forward side by side with another man.

Seeing this man, a flash immediately passed through Liu Yi's eyes.

"Lin Huayang, so it's you!"

“Hahaha, Liu Yi, you didn’t expect this didn’t you? But here we are, coming face to face again!”

Lin Huayang, with his hands in his pockets, triumphantly looked at Liu Yi, and said with a smile.

“During the day, didn’t you act very aggressive and even gave me a slap? Hahaha, interesting wasn’t it? You really thought that I, Lin Huayang, can let you go after that? I’m telling you, during the day you gave me one slap, tonight I’ll give you back a hundred! What do you think? Do you like this line-up? Are you scared the piss out of yet? Hahaha....”

Lin Huayang said and then laughed.

This laughter echoed in the playground. It was very strange.

Those students, who were surrounding him, also sneered, making Liu Yi very uncomfortable.

“Young master Lin, I gave you many manpower tonight, but I also have to reluctantly hit my girl. That was all according to your wish. Don’t you forget this.”

Yuan Shaojun said, pulled over Ma Yixuan into his arms and said while puffing his smoke.

“Hahaha, don’t worry, boss Yuan. I, Lin Huayang, will certainly not going to unjustly treat you!”

Lin Huayang patted his chest and said, “Tonight, we’ll go to the ‘city that never sleep’, my treat!”

“Hahaha! Ok, ok, young master Lin is really a generous person!”

The two individuals could not help but laugh.

Ma Yixuan’s face was not good to look at.

‘City that never sleep,’ what kind of place is that? That’s the place where the rich spends money to enjoy life.

It is said that there are many beautiful women there. As long as one has the money, one can obtain “various types” of services.

“I think the ‘city that never sleep’ is not suitable for you tonight. If it is



other places, you guys are actually suitable to go.” Liu Yi said.

His blood flow was slightly accelerated, making his whole body cold. But he actually felt some excitement.

“What place?”

Yuan Shaojun could not bear but curiously asked.

“Orthopedic Hospital.”

“Hahaha!”

A group of people could not help but laugh.

“Liu Yi, did your head was already screwed!?”

Lin Huayang came up and pointed at Liu Yi, and then doubly laughed.

“Can’t you see these many people around you? There are more than one hundred people here; If each person spat out, they can drown you in their spittle! What makes you think you can still be arrogant here! Now it’s your turn to beg for mercy!”

After that, he looked at Liu Yi with one eye and then said.

“Either way, I, Lin Huayang, am not an unreasonable person. I’ll give you a chance that can make you avoid being punched tonight, what do you think?”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 66

“What do you want?”

Liu Yi wanted to hear what Lin Huayang's conditions are.

“In fact, if you want to avoid this beating, it's actually very simple.”

Lin Huayang smiled and said, “As long as you wear a pair of panties tomorrow to my class, apologize to me, and then loudly say Wang Yuzheng is Lin Huayang's girlfriend, and that's it. If you don't do so, tonight, I'll especially beat you to death!”

After finished saying that, Lin Huayang's smile disappeared and turned into a ferocious threat.”

“Do you think, by doing it this way, Wang Yuzheng would like you?”

Liu Yi could not help but ask.

“Do I need her to like me?”

Lin Huayang, with an extremely overbearing manner, said, “As long as I, Lin Huayang, took a liking to her, that would be enough! In this school, whomever I, Lin Huayang, took a fancy to, can't say anything other than yes! Even if she was a female teacher, she will also have to obediently follow my, Lin Huayang's, wish, do you understand!? This is my, Lin Huayang's, school! Liu Yi, if you want to be a hero, you'll have to look who's your opponent first! You even dare to hit me, humph. I stand here right now, do you still dare to hit me?”

And then, Lin Huayang arrogantly placed his face in front on Liu Yi, pointed his left cheek and said.

“Come on, you previously hit at this spot right? Hit! Hit me if you dare!”

“Smack!”

Liu Yi drew out his palm and slapped that big mouthed Lin Huayang in the face.

Lin Huayang was hit, turned around in circle and then sat on the floor.

He was beaten silly.

“Truly....Ever since I was a little, this was the first time I saw someone who has a hobby such as this.”

Liu Yi clapped his hands and said, “You actually loves to be slapped in the face! Next time, if you have this urge again, you can just look for me. I, Liu Yi, guarantee that I’ll meet you at the appointed time and place and will service you through the night, what do you think?”

Lin Huayang sat there. He didn’t give any respond for quite a while.

But Yuan Shaojun, who undoubtedly watched the scene from the side, can’t help but cursed.

“Fuck, you mother\*\*\*! You dare to be so arrogant in front of my, Yuan Shaojun’s, face? I see you’re tired of living already!”

“I want to live or die, has nothing to do with you, Yuan Shaojun.”

Liu Yi, under the menacing gaze of more than 100 people’s eyes, fearlessly stare at Yuan Shaojun and said, “Moreover, my grandpa said, men who use numbers to bully another man, can’t be called a hero. You, Yuan Shaojun, bragged about being a school head bully, but in my eyes, you are nothing but a coward.”

“What did you say? Say it to me one more time!”

Yuan Shaojun was furious.

But the nearby student, who carried a wooden plank, suddenly stepped forward and shouted.

“Boss, you don’t need to dirty your hand. Damn, this kid lacks in beating, I’ll help you smash his mouth!”

After that, that mean face student came forward and swung the wooden plank in his hands toward Liu Yi’s face.

This wooden plank is the bar between the legs of the table, about a meter long, and as thick as a finger.

If this wooden plank really hit Liu Yi in the face, it will ensure a result of several broken teeth.

Unfortunately, the present Liu Yi was a man who cannot be bullied anymore.

Toward the wooden plank, who came to him with a whistling sound, he directly held out his left hand.

“Pa!”

The wooden plank was firmly gripped by Liu Yi’s left hand, which stopped in front of his face.

“Bang!”

Subsequently, Liu Yi sent out a force to his left hand.

The mighty red and white streams of qi flooded into Liu Yi’s left hand and, under the combined effects of that two streams of qi, that wooden plank was pinched by Liu Yi’s left hand and, along with the fluttering sawdust, snapped in two.

The eyes of the surrounding one hundred people almost flew out.

‘Fuck me!’ They all thought.

‘What gripping power is this!’

‘Such thick wooden plank, can be snapped in two with just his left hand grip!’

‘Imagine if he pinches my arms or legs, wouldn’t that be really painful!’

Yuan Shaojun’s mouth involuntarily open, making his cigarette fell to the ground.

Even Liu Yi himself didn’t think he can break that wooden plank with just his grip; He just gave it a try.

‘It seems like after opening the second star jade, in addition to the powerful great brilliant sun palm, I have become even more fierce!’ Liu Yi thought.

The mean face student, who previously came to teach Liu Yi a lesson, at this moment, was also frightened. His face went pale, and he wanted to run away.

But Liu Yi didn't want let him off.

He extended his hand and directly caught that student's collar, and then swung that student's body.

That 1.7 meter high student, was flung upward by Liu Yi, making his body flew upside down, and then heavily fell at the foot of Liu Yi, badly hurting him.

With his one hand, Liu Yi has given the students around him 'trembled with scare.'

No matter how vicious they are, they can only rely on their numbers to bully a naive student.

When they really met with someone who fights back hard, all of them went soft.

"Fuck, don't be afraid of him, we have many people. Everyone beat him to death!"

Intent on giving his men courage, Yuan Shaojun roared.

A student with a slightly bigger courage secretly approached Liu Yi from behind. He intended to slam the wooden plank in his hands onto Liu Yi's head.

"Liu Yi, watch out!"

Lin Tong cried on top of Liu Yi's shoulder.

Actually, even without the warning from Lin Tong, Liu Yi has felt the movement behind him.

After opening his second star jade, his whole body has become a lot more sensitive, making him easily sense all the things around him.

Liu Yi subconsciously lifted his right arm and kept it on top of his head.

"Bang!"

That wooden plank hit Liu Yi's arm and suddenly break into two pieces.

Liu Yi, feeling the pain in his right arm, cannot help but half-kneeled on the ground; His eyes turned dark.

Even if he is a cultivator, his arm is not made of steel....

This time....it looks like the bone in his right arm has been broken.

However, his white stream of qi poured into Liu Yi's right arm and continuously healed Liu Yi's injury.

Seeing Liu Yi half-kneeled on the ground after being hit by the wooden plank, Yuan Shaojun and his men were excited.

"This kid, although he is quite good, his body is still made of flesh and bones. Don't be afraid, just beat him!"

More than a hundred people strangely cried out and rushed over to Liu Yi.

But Liu Yi's right hand hasn't recovered and without any power yet. At present, he was almost blacked out and for a time, really didn't know what to do.

Lin Tong cannot help but become anxious, although Liu Yi is very powerful, he actually lacked combat experience.

Faced with this kind of situations, her claw started to feel numb.

A group of student gathered around Liu Yi, kicking and trampling him unceasingly.

Liu Yi can only awkwardly protect his vital organ. The pain that come from being kicked by those students made him feel he wanted to die.

"Hahaha, hahaha!"

Seeing Liu Yi being beaten like that, Yuan Shaojun couldn't help but laugh.

"This is the end to whoever dare to mess with me, the head bully. You think too highly of yourself, Liu Yi, you rotten fool! The woman that you like has been fucked by me for I don't know how many times! Hahaha!"

After that, Yuan Shaojun reached out his hand into Ma Yixuan's collar and continued to knead her breast.

Ma Yixuan's face suddenly went crimson. She was both ashamed and frightened. But she didn't dare to resist, letting Yuan Shaojun freely knead all over her chest.

“I’m telling you, Ma Yixuan’s big tit is especially soft and white, but unfortunately, you can only see, envy, and be trampled upon under my foot! Tonight, I will cruelly fuck the goddess that you like while you can only lie down like a dead dog here! See? This is your destiny! You idiot cretin!”

Hearing all of this, Liu Yi’s eyes were slightly red.

Lin Tong could not help but shout.

“Not good....this group of idiots....stupid, stupid, idiot....”

She turned into a red blur and wanted to rush into Liu Yi’s body to suppress his Demonic power.

But a force suddenly erupted out of Liu Yi’s body, bouncing out her body away from Liu Yi.

‘Bad....’ She thought.

‘It seems like since the last time I suppressed his other personality....this demonic Liu Yi has found a way to guard against me....’

‘This time....it’s over....’

“Yuan Shaojun!”

Liu Yi’s mouth suddenly uttered a cry.

“What’s the matter, can’t stand it anymore and ready to beg for mercy?”

Yuan Shaojun happily said while still enjoying Ma Yixuan’s breast.

“Prepare to die!”

Liu Yi said and suddenly stretched out his left hand and then caught the falling wooden plank.

After that, his left hand made an effort and pulled over the wooden plank from the student who held it. And then he fiercely turned around and, with hand holding the wooden plank, swept out like a whirlwind.

“Bang bang bang!”

Several students were hit by this wooden plank, screamed out and back out, colliding with the students behind them.

But Liu Yi, taking advantage of this gap, has already stood up.

He was like a beast, rushed toward the opposite Yuan Shaojun.

Several students at once tried to block his path, but Liu Yi's movement was quicker, he was also relentless.

The heavy wooden plank in his left hand, as if nothing, was fiercely brandished by him.

This wooden plank continued to hit the arms and faces of the opposite students.

With the sound of blood and broken bone, these students, one by one, were put to the ground in pain.

In the blink of an eye, Liu Yi has morphed from a sheep into a tiger. Those students in front of him, nobody can block his footsteps.

Yuan Shaojun was also scared. He pushed Ma Yixuan aside, pulled out a half meter long peeling knife from his side, pointed it at Liu Yi and said.

"Don't come over here. If you come over, this father will hack you to death!"

Yuan Shaojun was really frightened.

He didn't expect that his one hundred good men are no match for Liu Yi.

This Liu Yi....was no different than a monster!

He was really freaked out. He just wanted to finish this moment earlier and then hides far-far away from here!

"Hehe...."

But the opposite Liu Yi, seeing this bright peeling knife, didn't have the slightest fear. Instead, a strange smile hung on his face.

Yuan Shaojun's heart trembled again.

'Why did he smile....' He asked himself.

"What are you smiling at, god fuckin dammit your smile!"

Yuan Shaojun held out his peeling knife and chopped toward Liu Yi's shoulder.

Liu Yi didn't step back. Instead, he raised the wooden plank horizontally



over his shoulder.

“Bang!”

Yuan Shaojun’s peeling knife cut into Liu Yi’s wooden plank. Liu Yi waved his arm, making the peeling knife that was clamped by the wooden plank pried away from Yuan Shaojun’s hand and fell, clattered to the side.

While Yuan Shaojun was still in a daze, Liu Yi had come to the front of him, grabbed him by the collar and severely hit Yuan Shaojun’s face using his forehead.

“Bam!”

Yuan Shaojun bellowed, the blood from the resulting nosebleed flew out. His body softened and fell down to the ground.

“I already told you, tonight, the most suitable place for you, is at the Orthopedic Hospital.”

Liu Yi said, aligned his right foot on top of Yuan Shaojun’s left calf and maliciously stamped on it.

“Krack!”

“Aaahh!”

Yuan Shaojun’s miserable sound resounded throughout the playground.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 67

“What’s this? Someone’s seems to be screaming out there?”

At the teacher’s meeting in the office, a teacher looked out of the window and said.

“Do you want to go out and see?”

“It must be a disturbance created by a student.”

Director Zhang Yuren waved his hand and said, “What’s more important than our school’s upgrade? We finish the meeting first. We can talk about it after that!”

“Oh, ok....”

That teacher can only withdraw his gaze.

The outside was pitch black, under the dim moonlight, there was nothing to look at.

Zhang Yuren secretly thought.

‘Liu Yi, this is you ask for it, it has nothing to do with me, Zhang Yuren.’

‘This student even dare to point his finger at my nose and say I was wrong!’

‘Humph, you deserve to die!’

But Zhang Yuren could not possibly think that the one who was being hit was not Liu Yi, but Yuan Shaojun.

Yuan Shaojun’s left calf was stepped on and directly fractured. He broke into cold sweat and lay on the ground while holding his calf, twitching.

The nearby Ma Yixuan watched this scene in tears, she crouched down and shivered on one side of the corner.

But Lin Huayang was awoken from his daze by this miserable scream, only to see the wailing Yuan Shaojun. His eyes simply rolled up, showing only the white part of the eyes, and straightforwardly lie down on the ground.

‘Mommy....’ Ling Huayang called out in his heart.

‘This was suppose to be an ambush to beat Liu Yi to death....’

‘How could it turn into such a situation in an instant....’

Seeing the twisted leg of Yuan Shaojun and remembered that he only received a slap in the face, Lin Huayang was secretly glad.

‘His mother....I’m so lucky....’

‘Better continue to play dead....heroes do not eat immediate loss (A wise man does not fight when the odds are against him)!’

“Mercy....mer, mercy....”

Yuan Shaojun was in an excruciating pain. His eyes were blackened, watching Liu Yi while holding his leg. He was lying on the ground and constantly begging for mercy.

Liu Yi squatted by Yuan Shaojun’s side, stretched out a hand, patted his face full of cold sweat, and then, while rubbing the hand on Yuan Shaojun’s clothed, said, “Forgive you?”

“I....I....I beg of you....please have mercy on me....”

Yuan Shaojun felt fear for the first time.

He never thought that after lording all over the school for a long time, today he actually being dealt a massive blow by the hand of such an unknown student.

“Don’t be afraid, come, smoke some cigarette.”

Liu Yi pulled out a cigarette from Yuan Shaojun’s pocket and lighted it on Yuan Shaojun’s mouth.

“It’s good right?”

Liu Yi asked.

“Good, good cigarette....”

Yuan Shaojun was hurt and shocked. He didn’t know what Liu Yi wanted to do with him.

“Mm, smoking cigarette should calm you down, now answer my question.”

Liu Yi looked at Yuan Shaojun with a smile and said.

“About, about what....”

Yuan Shaojun timidly asked.

“Do you want the left arm or the right arm?”

This few words from Liu Yi directly scared Yuan Shaojun so much that he almost wet himself.

“Bo, boss....you are my boss....I beg of you, please let me off....”

“You don’t answer my question. Then I’ll choose it for you.”

Liu Yi said while his eyes were looking back and forth at Yuan Shaojun’s arms.

“Hmm, are you right handed or left handed....I should make you keep the one that you use the most, right....Ai....I think I’m being too sensible. I’m truly a Lei Feng!”

Liu Yi said with full on narcissism while touching his chin.

Yuan Shaojun has the urge to cry.

‘His mother, how can this be called sensible?’ He cried in his heart.

“Don’t, don’t....I want both of them, both of them....”

“Oh? You want me to break both of your arms?”

Liu Yi touched his chin, “Such a request actually exist. You really are not an ordinary man.”

“No, it’s not!”

Yuan Shaojun scared out of his wits, and hastily cried, “I don’t, I don’t want it!”

“You don’t want your two arms?”

Liu Yi shook his head, “Ok then, as you wish.”

With that, Liu Yi extended his left hand to directly take Yuan Shaojun’s left hand and then fiercely pulled it.

“Crack!”

A crisp sound of broken bones was heard, followed by a squealing Yuan

Shaojun who screamed like a pig that was about to be slaughtered.

And then, without even pausing, Liu Yi broke off another arm of Yuan Shaojun.

The pain made Yuan Shaojun directly fainted. He half collapsed there like a dead pig.

The other people were scared out of their wits. Some students can't even control themselves and wet their pants. The smell of urine floated in the playground.

At that moment, how could Liu Yi be recognized as a student anymore, is there any difference between him and the devil king?

Especially after they saw Liu Yi casually discarded Yuan Shaojun's leg and both of his arms....

They suddenly have the urge to be a good and honest student and never wanted to be a bully anymore.

'This bullying business is really terrible....' They thought.

'It has too much violence and quite bloody....'

"I thought you could hold on much longer than this....I didn't expect you can only go so far."

Liu Yi stood up and said, "If no one sent him to the orthopedic Hospital, he would really be finished. I'm going home now. You can go to pee if you want."

With that, he turned around and walked away through the crowd.

No one dared to stop him, for fear that they will be the next one whose arms and legs were destroyed.

Only after Liu Yi truly gone did Lin Huayang crawl up from the ground.

'Damn....' He cursed in his heart.

'Too scary....'

'This Liu Yi really is like an animal....'

'How could he be so brutal like that....'

“Young, young master Lin....what should we do now....”

One student timidly asked.

“What do you mean what should we do, quickly took the injured to the hospital....”

Lin Huayang shivered a bit.

Tonight’s disturbance is really not small....

Many students were injured and Yuan Shaojun was almost ended up disabled.

But they were unable to talk about this....

Why, because the other people is Liu Yi, a single person. How could they tell outsiders about it.

Did Liu Yi alone able to take down more than a hundred people?

Even if others believe it, they can’t afford to lose to that man!

Lin Huayang thought that this was the first time he lost his face.

Those bullies also thought they should hurry to go to the hospital. A group of people supported each other by the arms posthaste. They also didn’t forget to carry Yuan Shaojun with them and went to the hospital.

Soon, almost all the people in the playground have walked away.

Only Ma Yixuan, who was still hiding in the corner and slightly shivered, remained.

“Young, young master Lin....”

Ma Yixuan, who caught Lin Huayang’s gaze, weakly said.

Seeing the sweet and pretty Ma Yixuan, Lin Huayang suddenly wanted to do her.

“Yixuan, what’s the matter?”

“My, my legs are numb....I can’t take a walk....”

“Then I’ll help you to go to the medical center to take a rest.”

Lin Huayang said and directly walked forward and helped prop Ma Yixuan

up.

Meanwhile, his hand dishonestly started to knead Ma Yixuan's breast.

Ma Yixuan cried out, but after looking at the charming Lin Huayang with a single glance, she didn't say anything.

Lin Huayang was pleased, thinking that she has given him an opening.

Immediately, he partly hugged Ma Yixuan while supporting her by the arm and walked into the abandoned medical center.

Yuan Shaojun chose the health center for his activity because the interior was fairly decent, it also has a small bed, which Yuan Shaojun needed the most.

He helped Ma Yixuan sat on top of that bed and then hugged and asked her softly.

"Yixuan, Yuan Shaojun is finished, what are you going to do after this...."

Ma Yixuan's heart was moved. She looked at the incomparably charming man next to her and could not help but said.

"I....I don't know what to do....I'm just a weak woman...."

"Why don't you follow me! Follow this young master!"

"But....but what happen when Yuan Shaojun comes back....I fear he would create troubles for young master Lin."

"Why don't we do it this way....You become my secret lover, while he still your official boyfriend, what do you think?"

Lin Huayang thought, 'I won't allow you to become my girlfriend. My girlfriend is Wang Yuzheng, that beautiful and capable chick.'

'That's more like it.'

"Good....then you have to treasure other people (me/renjia)....."

Ma Yixuan's heart also has its own ideas.

Yuan Shaojun is sure to die, so she must change her patron.

Otherwise, how could she cope with Liu Yi.

Each of these two has their own ideas. After flirting with each other's eyes, their lust surged upward and finally rolled together.

Lin Huayang, relying on his face and family, has no less times playing with girls.

He is not some inexperienced youngsters. After expertly teasing Ma Yixuan until her whole body went soft, he straightened his gun and ready to enter its target.

"Young master Lin....later on, I (renjia) can only depend on you....don't let Liu Yi bully me (renjia)...."

Just when Lin Huayang prepared to enter the cave, Ma Yixuan's sweet and delicate voice suddenly made Lin Huayang as if dropped into an icehouse.

The scene where Liu Yi broke Yuan Shaojun's arms immediately emerged in his mind.

The scream of Yuan Shaojun....

The evil smile on the corner of Liu Yi's mouth....

In a flash, Lin Huayang's whole body went icy-cold and cold sweat directly poured out.

His lower body suddenly became dispirited and shrank.

"Fuck...."

Seeing his lower body has gone on strike, Lin Huayang immediately shrieked.

"Young master Lin, what's wrong?"

Ma Yixuan's body has been excited by Lin Huayang's ministrations, she was waiting to enjoy the next stage, but when she saw that Lin Huayang suddenly stop and cursed, she cannot help but ask.

"No, nothing...."

Lin Huayang thought that he probably too scared and blame himself for thinking about Liu Yi at this critical moment.

He quickly buried his face on Ma Yixuan's breast, sucking and licking, and



tried to wake up his lower body.

But his lower body was like a hibernating snake, no matter how he called out, it won't wake up.

'Damn it....what the hell is this!' He thought.

Lin Huayang's heart was restless.

He suddenly pulled up Ma Yixuan and said.

"Help me suck my bellow!"

"Ah?"

Ma Yixuan was taken aback.

"Hurry up, I told you to suck it, then suck!"

Lin Huayang lower body is limp, he was upset and could not help but roared.

"Oh, ok...."

Ma Yixuan scared shiver, she didn't dare to neglect this order and at once go down on him. She held Lin Huayang's shrunken body parts and put it into her mouth and then began to suck it.

Ma Yixuan's mouth was warm and comfortable, but Lin Huayang's lower body didn't have the slightest bit of indication to get up.

Being lick and suck by Ma Yixuan, "he" still maintained "his" minimum mode.

"Liu Yi! Fuck you and your whole family!"

Not until Ma Yixuan was tired, full of sweat, gave up and lie on the bed did Lin Huayang knew that something was wrong.

His heart was full of sorrow. He suddenly couldn't help but shout. With anger and despair, he screamed loudly.

This voice was sorrowful and shrill and spread to the faculty office where the teacher still held their meeting.

"It seems there's really a problem...."

A teacher couldn't help but worry and asked.

"It's ok, it's ok, it's probably just a dog bark, we continue our meeting! The school's upgrade is more important, am I right, Principal Lin?"

Zhang Yuren looked at the middle-aged man who sat opposite to him.

"Yes, the school's upgrade is the most crucial now. At this time, even if my son was ill, I will stick here until this matter is resolved."

Principal Lin sternly said, but then, his cell phone suddenly rang.

When Principal Lin picked up this call, his face immediately went pale.

"My dear son, what, what did you say? Wait there, I'm coming for you!"

He then said to the teacher, "The meeting is over!"

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 68

Liu Yi didn't know that he scared Lin Huayang so much that he is unable to get hard anymore.

At this time, he was sitting cross-legged on the bed at home. He was immersed in the spiritual environment, wholeheartedly doing cultivation training.

Only after today's fight that Liu Yi discovered how naive he was.

He can't even beat a group of student and let his second personality emerge.

Liu Yi was deeply aware of his own shortcomings, therefore, when he arrived at home, he didn't go to read a book. Instead, he directly entered his spiritual environment and accepted Lin Tong's systematic training.

At present, Liu Yi has opened his second star jade. Properly speaking, compared to a martial art master, he was only a bit weaker, so those students should be easily dealt by him.

But the result was, he was the first to stumble down and then to be ganged up on by many people.

His right arm was only slightly swollen now. If not for the healing properties of the white stream of qi, perhaps Liu Yi would have to go to the hospital for a cast.

"Liu Yi, you're now aware of your own shortcomings, it's still not too late for you."

This was the first time Lin Tong earnestly taught Liu Yi.

"You need to seriously follow this lady's teaching and properly hone your skills. You obviously are a cultivator, but you can't even beat those guys, what a shame.

"Mm...."

Liu Yi nodded indicating his agreement.

"Mm, what mm!"

Lin Tong was testy, “Why don’t you use your great brilliant sun palm? Why not use spirit fox steps?”

She suddenly snapped, “If you use both of those methods, those people are no match for you! You don’t even need the two skills that I taught you, If you throw a pile of your ice balls on them, won’t their face fell flat to the ground!”

“I don’t want to expose my immortal cultivation strength in front of my schoolmates....”

Liu Yi honestly replied, “After all, I’m still a student....If I showed those things.... I’m afraid I can’t properly study as a student anymore.”

“What students? You’re an immortal cultivator, can’t you have a bit of awareness? Hello!”

Lin Tong was somewhat angry.

“But I indeed am a student....”

Liu Yi replied, “My parents have put their great hopes on me....they all wanted me to be admitted to a decent university, then get a good job....”

“That’s the life of ordinary people! You’re an immortal cultivator now!”

“I am an immortal cultivator, but I also have parents.”

Liu Yi stubbornly replied, “If I can’t even satisfy my parents wishes, what immortal, and what cultivator am I?”

“You....really want me to get angry!”

Lin Tong was helpless.

Liu Yi really is her nemesis! How could there be such an irritating guy like him!

He really can get under her skin.

“In any case, I have to meet my parents wish, to get into a good college....this is my premise to become an Immortal Cultivator and cannot be changed.”

Liu Yi said firmly.

“I had to give it to you! This girl gives up, okay?”

Lin Tong didn't know what to do anymore, “You follow me everyday, I reckon your technique can't be practiced to its full potential. If you want to really enhance your technique, you must face a real combat!”

“Ah? How real?”

Liu Yi blinked his eyes a few times.

“Humph, humph, this girl already thought about it!”

Lin Tong crossed her arms, looked at Liu Yi, who was sitting opposite of her, and complacently said, “Training here everyday, didn't you feel stuffy about it? You practicing with this girl serves no purpose anymore. Because this girl will not use such a cruel methods on you, there's nothing life-threatening in your training; You wouldn't have the fastest progress!”

“Then what should I do? Don't tell me you want me to rob a bank?”

Liu Yi said in his heart, ‘This is also the way to solve the problem of getting rich.’

‘Unfortunately, I wouldn't do this!’

‘It violates my principle.’

“Humph, humph, of course not! That's a mere trifle. The mission that this girl will give you, is more difficult!”

Lin Tong said and raised her small chin, saying, “This girl actually able to think of this approach....I'm really a genius.”

“What approach?”

“Hunting Demon!”

Lin Tong's words are amazing.

“What?”

Liu Yi was taken aback, thinking, ‘hunting demon?’

“Yes, you heard me, hunting demon.”

Lin Tong nodded her head, “Don't you like to punish evil? Well then, as it happens, there are many monsters lurking in this human world. These

monsters, some are good and some are evil. We're going to start to pick the evil ones, and then get rid of them, what do you think?"

"Could this thing....possible?"

Liu Yi has some apprehension.

He was originally just an ordinary student....

Now Lin Tong suddenly want him to remove some demon....

This....is not some trick is it?

"Why couldn't this possible?"

Lin Tong smiled and said, "When you get rid of a demon, not only you can train your combat capability, you also save people from harm, am I right? Moreover, this demon hunter things will make you able to subdue your demonic personality, it can also make me replenish my energy, letting me free from my seal earlier."

"But....but....within the boundless sea of human, where would I go look for a monster?...."

Liu Yi still hesitated.

"Fool! What Age do you think we're living in now? This is the internet age!"

Lin Tong said, "Do you think us, immortal cultivator, communicate using dogs? We also use internet you know?"

She paused, and then said, "Did you know that in the world of immortal cultivator, there are several factions? Within these factions, there are many sects. The disciples of these sects sometimes 'leave the mountain' to gain real experience for a time. How could they gain experience? Exactly! They register themselves in this demon hunter matter. After the completion of this demon hunting mission, they will return to their respective sects to count their achievement."

"Such things really exists! This is unscientific!"

"This is science! The science to advance one's capability!"

"Damn...."

“Enough, stop complaining, after you complete this demon hunting task, you can get a bonus, what’s not to like?”

“Ah? There’s also money?”

Liu Yi’s eyeballs immediately lit up.

“What the....how could I not discover this! You kid, also have a greedy side!”

“That’s nothing....come on, let’s register for an account!”

Liu Yi quickly stood up, “Where should I register?”

“On the internet....you....what’s the rush....”

Lin Tong was a bit speechless.

“What’s not to rush....of course I have to rush! Making money is an important matter!”

Liu Yi wholeheartedly wanted to make money, so that he can help lighten his family’s burden. Therefore, he left his spiritual environment and slowly opened his eyes.

This opening the eyes were not important, he immediately saw a pretty little face, with blinking eyes, that was looking at him.

“Yuanyuan? Since, since when did you come in!”

Liu Yi was startled, but he soon settled down.

It seemed he forgot to close the balcony door again....

“Big Ox, what kind of evil technique did you just practice? Is that Falun Gong? Humph, humph, I’m going to report you to the police so they can arrest you!”

Ma Yuanyuan small nose wrinkled and said.

‘Shit....’ Liu Yi cursed in his head.

‘This evil little complainer.’

“I didn’t practice any evil technique....that was just a meditation training, you understand!”

Liu Yi lied on her face without missing a beat.

“Humph, in my opinion, that’s an evil technique! If you want me not to report you, you will have to lend me your bathroom!”

At this time, Ma Yuanyuan, dressed in a lovely pink pajamas, pursed her lips, and cutely said to Liu Yi.

“Ha? Why do you want my bathroom?”

Liu Yi was a bit surprised.

“The water heater in my house is not working! Grandma didn’t know how to repair it, and my sister wasn’t home either....Humph, after thinking it over, I decided to use yours, stupid ox!”

Liu Yi was depressed, she didn’t call him big brother Liu Yi anymore....

“This chick is burning bridges. She has no memory of her punishment!” Liu Yi thought.

Liu Yi shook his head.

“Do you want to lend me or not!”

Ma Yuanyuan pulled Liu Yi’s arm and asked.

“Yes, you can use it....”

Liu Yi said, “The water heater was already plugged in, I actually want to take a bath....Just in time to use it, you can take a bath now.”

After having a fight in the night, Liu Yi intended to have a good shower.

But it looks like Ma Yuanyuan will beat him to it.

“Humph, humph, that’s more like it! Big ox, no peeking!”

Ma Yuanyuan said, stepping on the little bear slippers and bounced to the shower, leaving a room full of her fragrant smell.

“This girl....”

Liu Yi has no way to discipline her. He can’t always spank her ass.

This girl is not a child anymore. With 1.65-meter high, her stature has good growth. She was practically a young lady now.



Spanking her ass....what would other think about it?

Better started registering an account!

Liu Yi sat in front of his computer and turned on the CPU.

This classic machine of Liu Yi has one great flaw, which is loud.

After turning the CPU, it's started to emit a sound that was similar to a motor engine.

At that time, Chen Cai scared him by saying it emits strong radiation!

"This is the URL....go enter it...."

Lin Tong said a website address and Liu Yi entered it into the search bar.

Soon, a black window pop up on the computer screen.

It had only one entry.

"Type Wild King sect."

Lin Tong said.

"What's that?"

"A particularly small sect....but it's a part of this enrollment, so you can use it."

Lin Tong explained.

"Oh...."

Liu Yi nodded his head and type Wild King sect.

Suddenly, the page changed.

Rows of task option were listed on the screen, but the "Accept" button was still gray.

"First, register an account, then you can accept a task."

Lin Tong reminded Liu Yi.

Registering an account is an easy task for Liu Yi, he clicked the register option on the top corner of the window and filled out some basic information.

On the nickname option, Liu Yi slightly hesitated.

“What cool name should I call myself....” He mused.

“Just write some random name. After you accept a task, you will be given a code name.”

Lin Tong said, “You have to know, immortal cultivator is a hidden identity.”

“Oh, ok then....”

Liu Yi readily filled the nickname option with the name of the video game about wet nurse simulation that he previously played, “Ten step to milk a man.”

A pop-up dialog immediately showed on the screen.

“Ten step to milk a man, congratulations on the successful registration. ”

“What kind of name is this!”

Lin Tong was shocked.

“It’s the name of a video game....”

Liu Yi was actually indifferent about this name, because this isn’t a vulgar name.

But then, a pop-up box appeared on the screen, making Liu Yi embarrassed.

“My god, I have to enter my bank account?”

“Of course! Otherwise, how could they send you the bonus money!”

“I don’t have a bank account....my ID card was just being registered, it’s not done yet....”

Liu Yi grimaced.

“It doesn’t matter, you, you can use mine!”

“ .....

“This girl....Is she really an immortal cultivator....’

However, he can only type Lin Tong’s bank account. Otherwise, he would

not be able to receive the money transfer.

After Liu Yi was ready, the system returned to the task page.

He dug out those tasks and began to read.

With just one look, he immediately was taken aback, as if another world was displayed in front of him.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 69

The lines of task on the menu let Liu Yi to be dazzled.

He casually clicked one of them, and it popped up a bunch of words regarding the mission.

Mission rank: A

Mission area: S Province, Longkou City, Huangjia Town.

Mission duration : 3 days (urgent)

Mission description : Buried in the unmarked common graves in the suburbs of Huangjia Town, a Millennium Corps King is about to wake up, please immediately send experts to put it down.

It also threw in a local road map, as well as photos of unmarked common graves....

Liu Yi looked stunned.

‘My goodness, it really is an organization of a group of people!’ He thought.

‘However, the Millennium Corps King....I’m afraid I’m not his opponent, if go there and not enough people come, we’re all going to be his meal!’

‘Moreover, the distance is too far from here. I couldn’t arrive there in time.’

‘Better find something simple!’

Liu Yi began to rummage up, but didn’t find any mission in this Northern Dragon City (Beilong).

“Idiot, there are regional options at the top! Can’t you check it!”

“Ah....I just saw it now, hehe....”

Liu Yi touched the back of his head, and then defined Northern Dragon City in the regional options at the top.

Suddenly, a row of new task appeared before Liu Yi.

The task within Northern Dragon City was woefully low. Liu Yi then began to look for a task that is more suitable for him.

Mission Rank: E.

Mission Area: H province, Northern Dragon City, Old district, gloriously abandoned factory.

Mission duration: 10 days.

Mission description: Trail of Cult of the Great God found in Northern Dragon City, please immediately send the forensic photograph.

‘Just taking pictures?’ Liu Yi thought.

‘It looks like it’s a very simple task.’

Liu Yi felt that he could give it a try.

“It’s not hunting a demon is it?.... Pity.”

Lin Tong opened her mouth.

‘It can’t make me absorb some demon power.’ Lin Tong thought.

“But....What is ‘Cult of the Great God?’”

“I don’t know....listening to this name, it should be just some small sect. You don’t need to care about it. It’s not worth mentioning.”

Lin Tong said, “You can use this task to collect some experience, if you immediately face off with some small demon, chances are you can’t adapt to it, better let you honed your experience with a novice mission first.

“Ok then, I’ll take it!”

Liu Yi was about to accept that mission, but the screen suddenly went black, and the sound of engine was also stopped.

Meanwhile, the entire room was dark, quiet, and a bit strange.

‘It seemed....the power went out!’ Liu Yi realized.

“Ah, ah, ah, ah!”

There was a scream in the bathroom.

Liu Yi suddenly had a headache.

‘I forgot, Ma Yuanyuan that girl is still in my bathroom taking a bath!’

‘This time....she probably a bit miserable.’

“Big Ox, big Ox you quickly come here!”

“What?”

Liu Yi didn't expect Ma Yuanyuan would actually call himself!

“Big brother Liu Yi, please, come over here, I, I'm afraid of the dark....”

Ma Yuanyuan's voice has become tearful.

Liu Yi can't think of any other option.

“Hehe....such a good fortune....”

Lin Tong lay on Liu Yi's shoulder, acidly said, “You can see a naked girl!”

“Stop it, don't equate me with a pervert, I am an honest person!”

“Then simply don't go!”

“Of course, how could a decent person go!”

Liu Yi patted his chest and said.

“Big brother Liu Yi....I beg you, please come....”

From the bathroom, Ma Yuanyuan cried and said, “My body still covered with foam....I can't find my towel....please come and help me find it, ok....”

Liu Yi's nose has somewhat given off heat.

“I'm a decent person! A Decent person have to willingly go help others!”

Liu Yi coughed twice, and then discredited himself by walking toward the bathroom.

“Boo! You big pervert! You go there by yourself. This girl want to rest!”

Then, Lin Tong climbed up on Liu Yi's bed.

As long as she was within 100 meters from Liu Yi, Lin Tong can move around freely.

Liu Yi's face flushed a bit, but he continued to walk toward the bathroom.

Although the room was dark, Liu Yi has opened the second star jade, his eyes can see in the dark. He can clearly see the sights in the room, so, he didn't delay his walk.

He went to the bathroom and knocked on the door.

“Just, just open the door....I, I can’t find it....”

Ma Yuanyuan tearfully said.

Liu Yi couldn’t help but smile. He didn’t expect this little witch could actually fear something.

But it’s normal for a little girl to be afraid of the dark.

Liu Yi held out his hand and opened the bathroom door.

Suddenly the beautiful scene of Ma Yuanyuan holding her breasts while sitting in the bath appeared in front of Liu Yi.

Liu Yi almost spurted out nosebleed.

‘Fuck....’ He cursed in his head.

‘This stimulation is too much....’

Although Ma Yuanyuan was only 14, her figure was really good.

Especially the pair of breasts on her chest, plump and firm.

Being wrapped by Ma Yuanyuan’s hands, it looked like it was about to burst out.

She crouched her lower body in the bathtub, gleaming like a mermaid.

Liu Yi quickly circulated his breath twice using the breathing technique, so as to avoid rapid heartbeat again, which can make him spurted blood.

“This, this is the towel, take it....”

Liu Yi took the bath towel from the side and gave it to Ma Yuanyuan.

“Ai....since you’ve come already....Big bear, help me rub my back, I can’t rub it by myself!”

Ma Yuanyuan said, turned around, and leave her back for Liu Yi.

“Huh?”

Liu Yi was suddenly silly.

“I, I....this, this is probably not right!”

“Ai, you even changed my sanitary napkins, what are you afraid of!”

Ma Yuanyuan was actually a bit relaxed now, “When I was at home and took a bath, my grandma would rub my back for me! Sometimes I washed together with my sister, and my sister would also help me rub it!”

With Liu Yi there, Ma Yuanyuan seemed to forget her fear of dark.

She gently patted the water, making it splashed, and said, “Moreover, it’s dark here, you can’t see anything, humph humph, come smeared over it.”

With that, Ma Yuanyuan even stood up from the bathtub, and splashed the water.

With her back faced toward Liu Yi, the tempting ass completely exposed in Liu Yi’s eyes.

She thought Liu Yi couldn’t see her, so she was quite bold.

Then, she slowly sat down on the edge of the bathtub.

Those pretty buttocks, pressured the edge of the bathtub.

Liu Yi’s blood flow accelerated.

Breathing technique....breathing technique....

Liu Yi quickly made two deep breaths, but the air was filled with Ma Yuanyuan’s fragrant aroma.

This made Liu Yi even more flushed.

Fortunately, he also has Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra.

Liu Yi pulled his mysterious ice qi into his left hand and placed it before his face, letting him calm his mind.

Cool feeling wrapped in the face, and he immediately became a whole lot better.

“Big Ox, hurry up!”

Ma Yuanyuan didn’t know Liu Yi can clearly watch her back, she still happily kicking the water cheerfully, and said.

Quickly come and rub my back, it’s getting cold here!”



“Well, well then....”

Liu Yi has no alternative but to dissipate the thick icy qi in his hand, then picked up the bath towel and walked toward Ma Yuanyuan’s back.

He wrapped the bath towel on his hand and gently pressed Ma Yuanyuan’s smooth jade back Liu Yi gently wrapped up and down, only to feel his heart was also swayed.

Ma Yuanyuan sat there, although her back faced against Liu Yi, her breasts curvature can still be seen from the side, letting Liu Yi distraught.

“Too light! Big Ox, haven’t you eat yet! Give this princess a harder pressure!”

Ma Yuanyuan can’t help but mutter.

“Oh, ok....”

Liu Yi quickly increased his strength.

“Ah! It hurts like hell!”

Unexpectedly, when Liu Yi increased his strength, Ma Yuanyuan’s back directly printed red with his palm, making Ma Yuanyuan twitched in pain.

“You idiot! Do you want to kill people! Is this princess your enemy!?”

“Ah, sorry, sorry....”

Liu Yi quickly said, “I, I’ll use less pressure....”

With that, he decreased the strength in his hand, which made Ma Yuanyuan relax again.

“Humph humph....This is more like it....Don’t touch there. It’s still painful....hateful....you’re too rough in the beginning....This princess’ skin almost peeled off....”

Ma Yuanyuan complained.

Liu Yi wanted to cry but have no tears....

When did he ever rubbed a woman’s back....

Therefore, he was also a bit enthusiastic this time....

“This is my first time doing this ok....”

“Pu....Big brother Liu Yi, you’re really evil!”

Ma Yuanyuan couldn’t help but laugh.

“Hey, it’s not what you think!”

Liu Yi had cold sweat.

“I didn’t say anything. Big Ox is too evil!”

This little girl gave off her silvery laugh; Liu Yi was defeated.

“By the way, Big Ox, was my sister being bullied at the school recently?”

Ma Yuanyuan suddenly asked.

“Ah?”

Liu Yi was surprised, thinking, ‘How could Ma Yuanyuan ask this question?’

“Why do you ask?”

“Sister’s condition is quite strange recently...When she returned home, it was as if she has lost her soul. Her complexion is not good. When I asked her how she is, she didn’t tell me....”

“This....I also don’t know about this....”

Liu Yi acted stupid, and said, “You also know....the relationship between me and your sister....is not that good....”

“Humph humph, that’s about right.”

Ma Yuanyuan kicked the water, and grinningly said, “I don’t want you to become my brother in law!”

Liu Yi’s heart had a burst of sadness.

‘Ai, this girl really doesn’t like me.’

Liu Yi felt silent, and slowly gave this girl a back rub, without trying to wander his eyes.

“Big Ox, I want to ask you a question....”

In the darkness, Ma Yuanyuan suddenly asked.

“Ah? What do you want to ask?”

Liu Yi’s eyes blinked a few times.

“In your heart, do you think I’m the attractive one? or my sister?”

‘Nani?’ Liu Yi was surprised.

He was a bit in a daze, ‘How could this girl suddenly ask this question?’

‘Really strange.’

“Ai, quickly answer it! Dead Ox!”

Ma Yuanyuan seemed impatient.

“Of course, it’s you.”

Liu Yi told it like it is.

Although Ma Yuanyuan was only 14 years old, second middle school, she was indeed stunningly beautiful, a lot more prettier than Ma Yixuan.

“Really!?”

Ma Yuanyuan seemed very happy. She suddenly stood up from the tub, turned around, gesticulating happily, and asked.

Liu Yi went silly.

Ma Yuanyuan’s milky-white breasts directly exposed to his eyes.

On the full breasts, there are two tender and captivating pink pointy flesh, which were very dazzling.

They were wet with water droplets, delicate and captivating.

Liu Yi couldn’t help but licked his lips.

Right at this time, from Liu Yi’s bedroom, came the roar of the vintage CPU.

“Hou, hou!”

In a flash, the whole bathroom was lit.

Ma Yuanyuan, with face flushed red because of the hot steam, stood naked in front of Liu Yi, who still left a smile on his mouth.

Two people dumbfoundedly stared at each other, blinking their eyes.

“Aah! Pervert!”

Ma Yuanyuan sat inside the bathtub, then lifted the water to splashed it toward Liu Yi.

Liu Yi was frightened and immediately fled.

Mom, what the hell has just happened....

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 70

Liu Yi fled to his bedroom, unable to calm down for a long time.

‘His grandma! Why did the electricity suddenly came back!’ He cursed in his heart.

‘The power authority is joking with this father!’

‘Damn it!’

Liu Yi shook his head, feeling out of luck today.

“What? You and the little Loli, is it happy ended?”

The little Fox’s voice sounded in Liu Yi’s ears.

She blew off a yawn and lazily got up from the bed.

“Since it’s a happy ending, should we continue to pick the mission?”

“Ahem....there’s nothing happy about it....”

Liu Yi sat down in front of the computer, looking at his old machine.

This antique computer, its power button is unique.

To turn it on you have to press it for a long time, but when it suddenly switched off by pulling the plug, it will automatically start itself when the plug is on again.

Thus, it came back on again when the electricity was up.

Liu Yi sat in front of the computer and deftly opened the website that was given by Lin Tong, and then re-found the task.

However, when he was about to accept the assignment, he was taken aback.

Someone else has taken this task!

‘His mother!’ He cursed.

‘Whose quick hand is this!’

“It doesn’t matter, the mission doesn’t limit the number who accepted it. As long as you finished the mission first, you’ll be the one who get the

reward.”

Lin Tong lie on the shoulders of Liu Yi and said, “Although the E-rank mission is quite simple, it will award you 100 merit points, there is also 1000 yuan reward.”

“What? One, one, one thousand yuan?”

Liu Yi automatically ignored the merit points. In any case, he has no particular sect, so, it’s useless to him.

But a thousand pieces of money! He actually never saw such a large amount!

His birdy got up and was hurt!

“It....It’s so much!”

“You waste wood, you actually over excited with just this amount!”

Lin Tong held out her small paw, scratching Liu Yi’s nose a bit, and then said.

“This 1000 is good, ok! Later on, each time the mission rank increase a level, the bonus reward will be ten times bigger!”

“That....that’s a lot of money....”

‘According to that rule. A D-rank mission is 10000 yuan....And the highest rank, the S-rank, is, is....one hundred million yuan!’ He calculated.

‘Fuck me! That’s so, so many money!’

In Liu Yi’s eyes, there was suddenly many little stars!

“Stop dreaming, the higher the mission rank, the greater it’s difficulty! Just like the S-rank mission, if one doesn’t have the top power, nobody can accomplish it. A Millennium Corps King can have the full power of fourteen-star jade or even fifteen-star jade....”

“Then I’ll just do much E-rank mission....”

Liu Yi said, “I’ll rush to this brilliant abandoned factory tonight....one thousand, oh, one thousand!”

The little stars in Liu Yi’s eyes jumped out.

“You this guy....I never saw you be this greedy!”

“Gentleman loves fortune, in a proper way!”

Liu Yi said, “Although I like money, I will not do the unrighteous thing for it! Moreover, didn’t Fox sister also tell me that this can be beneficial to my training, and can also remove harmful things from the community? One arrow can kill three vultures, what’s not to like?”

“I discovered that at this time your eloquence was good!”

Lin Tong gave a glance at Liu Yi, then said, “But you can’t go out with your school uniform! This kind of thing is very secret, and you don’t want people to know that you are a student!”

“Wait here. I’ll find something....”

“Remember to pick black clothes! Other colors will not work!”

Liu Yi’s clothes were all jeans and the like, so obviously it didn’t meet the requirement of Lin Tong.

He thought for a moment and suddenly remembered that there should be a black clothe in his dad’s closet.

So he went to his parents’ bedroom and started to look around.

Liu Yi turned in the closet for a long time, and finally, dug out a black suit from the bottom.

This black suit-style is a bit older, it seemed like this suit is the one that her mother said, the one that was tailor made when his father was getting married!

This black suit is a little smaller for his father to use now, and can only be kept as a souvenir.

Liu Yi took out the black suit back to his bedroom to put on his body. He also added a piece of black shirt.

“Damn....Are you going to do a mission, or to go to work!”

Seeing Liu Yi wore a formal outfit, Lin Tong suddenly could not help but ask.

“There is no other clothes....”

Liu Yi shrugged, then walked to the front of the mirror.

It can be said, this black suit is quite appropriate for him!

The length and the other size were just perfect!

Moreover, after wearing this, Liu Yi seemed to look quite spirited.

Sure enough, the clothes maketh the man!

Liu Yi thought for a moment, then took out a red scarf and tied it on his neck.

“.....”

Lin Tong was speechless.

“Is....there no mistake here....”

“Young Pioneer (Red scarf can also mean young pioneer), to do good things just like Lei Feng!”

Liu Yi laughed and said, “Since I’m going to do chivalric things, I have to look the part, right!”

Seeing Liu Yi in a black suit with a bright red scarf, Lin Tong could not help but gently covered her forehead.

‘Heaven....this girl has nothing to do with this out of the ordinary guy....’  
Lin Tong said in her heart.

“There’s still my face....”

Liu Yi can clearly see his face in the mirror. He can’t allow outsiders to see his face.

Otherwise, troublesome things will surely come to him.

After thinking for a while, Liu Yi opened the drawer next to the computer and pulled out a white ugly face mask

On this one piece of white mask, there are only two black holes.

This is the mask from the last year festival, where his class have put on a performance. Liu Yi played a small role in it.



This mask is that year's memorabilia, but now it came in handy.

Liu Yi put the mask over his face, stood in front of the mirror, and turned around twice.

Not bad, the results are pretty good!

There is a superhero fan!

"Fox sister, what do you think about my look? Isn't it awesome!"

"Don't call me, I don't know who you are...."

Lin Tong jumped onto the table, lying there, her two small paws covered her eyes, pretending not to see Liu Yi.

"I think I'm quite good...."

"Suit yourself....forget it, seeing that, later on, you will help this lady to acquire demon power, this will be my gift for you."

With that, Lin Tong cast a spell.

Suddenly, the black suit that Liu Yi wore turned into a red light, then curled up, and turned into a red ring and set on the middle finger of his right hand.

Right now, besides the underwear, the rest of his body were naked.

"Eh....what kind of spell is this?"

"This is sumeru spell."

Lin Tong said, "This is a common spell for a cultivator, I'll teach you about it later. In the future, as long as you cast this spell, you will be able to put on this outfit. Moreover, if the clothing was damaged or something, in this ring, it will automatically be repaired."

"So convenient!"

Liu Yi exclaimed, "Fox sister you have to teach me about this!"

"You have to open your third-star jade if you want to learn this, so be patient!"

Lin Tong said, "Why are you in such a hurry! Right now, there's this lady who helped you cast this spell. You should be happy!"

Liu Yi laughed and said, “Thanks! Fox sister, you’re so good to me....”

“Of course, now quickly put the clothes back! You rotten scoundrels!”

Lin Tong blushed then turned her head to say.

“Oh, ok!”

Liu Yi nodded, then remembered he only wore an underwear.

Just then, a scream sounded from behind him.

“Stinking rogue! Liu Yi you rotten scoundrel! Bastard! Hateful!”

‘I’ll be damned!’ He thought.

Liu Yi turned around and saw, dressed in pajamas, Ma Yuanyuan panic and flee.

‘Well....’

‘I forgot about this girl again.’

Ma Yuanyuan ran out of Liu Yi’s room; she probably got back to her home.

But Liu Yi was also relieved. It saved him the trouble.

“Why you still don’t wear clothes!”

Lin Tong cried.

“I....don’t know the spell....”

Liu Yi said with a bitter face.

“.....”

Lin Tong remembered her own negligence, so, she told Liu Yi the spell.

Liu Yi cast the spell in silent, the red ring in his hand suddenly turned into a red light and flowed to his body.

Suddenly, a black suit, a red scarf, and a white face mask appeared on his body.

Moreover, the black suit looked brand new, no different than a new purchase!

“Wow....good spell....”

Liu Yi exclaimed again and again, just like a dumb kid that just entered a city.

“Idiot....this is an immortal spell, so it’s inherently magical!”

Lin Tong said, “What are you worried about? Without further ado, let’s go and perform the task.”

“OK.”

Liu Yi nodded and went on to the balcony, then closed the balcony door.

He didn’t want to let Ma Yuanyuan, that little girl to slip over.

Liu Yi stood on the balcony, feeling the cool breeze of the night. Looking at the city under the curtain of the night, only to feel some excitement in his heart.

‘Unexpectedly, I could be a hero....’ He thought.

‘No, I’m a Red Scarf Hero.’

‘After my encounter with Fox sister, my life’s path has become different.’

“Here we go!”

Liu Yi took a deep breath; the cool night air made him doubly awake.

Mysterious icy qi, slowly gathered at his feet, to form something similar to ice skates.

Liu Yi, while his athleticism is very poor, there is one thing that he is very good at, which is ice skating.

Using his spirit fox steps, Liu Yi suddenly jumped to the balcony railing, bent his knees, then burst out the elasticity of the spirit fox steps and exploding his icy qi. With the help of these forces, Liu Yi was catapulted high up.

Liu Yi’s home is on the eighth floor, not too high, but definitely not too low.

After jumping out for some distance, his body began to fall down.

Liu Yi’s heart was slightly panicked. Although in the spiritual world he already tried numerous methods to jumping down between buildings, jumping down for the first time for real, his heart still felt nervous.

“Don’t worry! Bring out your force! Make your body lighter!”

Lin Tong lie on Liu Yi’s back, her tail swung with the night wind behind her.

“Ok....”

Liu Yi, while in the air, performed a breathing technique, to adjust his state.

Lingtai (meridian name) clear and bright.

He instantly became much lighter, at the same time, his feet trod on an ice flower, that bloomed in the sky.

This burst of icy power looked like the flame from the bottom of a rocket. Using the power from this force, Liu Yi continually rushed forward in the air, gliding.

In the night, he was like a giant bat, gliding from his building to the opposite roof.

Liu Yi landed on both feet, skating. He speed up, and maneuvered to the other side of the platform with high-speed skating.

A frost path on the ground was the prove that Liu Yi has been there.

His speed was almost to the max, looking like a specter in the night. The moment he reached the other side of the platform, he burst out his ‘rocket ice’ again, leaping into the air.

“One thousand yuan....Here I come....!”

Liu Yi left his wild scream in the night sky behind him.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 71

Northern Dragon City's autumn night is somewhat cool, but Liu Yi actually felt hot.

Although he only wore a shirt wrapped by a suit, he still didn't feel the cold. It seemed his heart sutra was protecting him from within.

Liu Yi glided to the roof opposite of the abandoned factory and lay quietly in the darkness.

"Sure enough, there really is some demonic energy...."

The small fox, who was holding Liu Yi's neck, noting the dark cloud that faintly covered above the factory cannot help but say, "Liu Yi, go downstairs. From now on, you have to be extremely careful. This is your first time in doing a mission. Don't be reckless. Even if you can't complete it, you have to survive. You hear me?"

"Rest assured, Fox sister, I now have spirit fox steps. If if this will be really dangerous, I can still run away!"

Liu Yi said.

"Mm, just don't be reckless. Let's go."

Lin Tong nodded her head.

Liu Yi took a deep breath and then, from this ten-storey high-rise building, jumped down.

He was like a bullet, his body rapidly falling toward the ground. The howling wind blew in his ears.

Liu Yi's heartbeat was slightly accelerated. The two heart sutra inside his body were continually circulated, letting his state of mind stayed lucid. Simultaneously, he felt that his body was brimming with power.

When he was halfway through the fall, he suddenly reversed his body. His hands and feet aimed at the ground. His Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra erupted.

"Bang, bang, bang!"

Several slight detonation.

Liu Yi's pair of hands exploded out the most fiercest icy-frost.

A cold white awn bloomed in the sky and then turned into snowfall.

Liu Yi, with the aid of such force, continued to impact the air, reducing his falling speed.

When close to the ground, his descent has already very slow.

Liu Yi put his hand behind him and sprayed the icy frost.

The whole person immediately fell to the ground, stepping on ice-skates, slipped forward.

With the aid of this force, Liu Yi fell to the ground and rapidly moved forward quite a bit far. His legs then flexibly drew a circle on the ground and finally stopped.

"Huff...huff..."

Liu Yi can't even catch his breath, his heartbeat has not yet stabilized.

The stimulation was really too exciting.

This power was simply too enjoyable!

"Don't be a fool. The nearby demon energy is somewhat strange. Quickly search around, take some pictures and go home!"

Lin Tong cautioned.

"Mn...."

Liu Yi nodded his head and made two breathing technique to adjust his status.

Under the cover of darkness, he put away his ice skates and, using spirit fox steps, letting him as lithe as a swallow, quietly walked the edge of this factory.

This factory has already been abandoned for several years. There were many traces of motley on the walls.

And the factory also exuded a musty damp, so that Liu Yi could not help but covered his nose.

Will such a place, truly has people in it?

Will the cult of the great god, truly gathered in this location?

Liu Yi shook his head and found that the front door of that factory was already opened. He then lifted his foot to go inside.

But at this time, he suddenly felt his whole body light.

From above the factory gate, suddenly flew down a black tentacle that directly twined Liu Yi's leg and suspended him in the air.

"Fool! Fool! Fool! Fool!"

Lin Tong could not help but scold, "You stepped on a trap! You big dummy!"

"How, how would I know...."

Liu Yi's leg was firmly entwined by the tentacle. His whole body was hanging upside down at the factory gate. Because some of his blood flow reversed back, he has some slight pain in the head. He was depressed and simultaneously said, "I don't know that there will be trap...."

"Fool, I told you to be careful! Quickly break free from this trap, otherwise, if someone find out, that would be bad!"

"Oh...."

Liu Yi picked up one breath, lifted up his body, and grabbed the tentacle that entwined his ankle.

Launching his icy-frost, the tentacle immediately turned into ice, and then shattered.

But, without waiting for Liu Yi to take a break, another tentacle grew out. This time, it didn't even leave Liu Yi's wrist behind. It entwined both of his wrists and solidly bound Liu Yi.

"Fuck me....isn't this just toying with me...."

Liu Yi wanted to cry but didn't have tears.

"This lady, in her whole life, never seen someone more foolishly idiot than you...."

Lin Tong was furious until all her hair stood up.

“Then what should I do now....”

Liu Yi cannot help but bitterly ask.

“I don’t know, just wait for your death!”

Lin Tong snappily said.

But at this time, Liu Yi felt that there were ‘several breathing’ that slowly approached the factory.

“Not good....it seems, someone’s coming.”

“Humph, I want to see what you’re going to do next....”

Lin Tong, although her mouth scolded like that, her head quickly tried to find a way on how to break free from this trap.

It was at this moment, a female voice suddenly rang.

“Mind your head.”

Then, a black shadow waved, and flew past to the front of Liu Yi.

All those tentacles were even cut off.

Liu Yi immediately fell to the ground with a thud.

But those tentacles came out again, trying to grab Liu Yi once more.

But Liu Yi will not be trapped this time. Both of his hands patted to the ground. Then his body slid backward, far away from the tentacle’s range.

Liu Yi awkwardly climbed up from the ground. This time, he found on the ground beside him, stood a woman dressed in a black trench coat.

The woman didn’t have any cover on her face. Her perfect face was dazzling under the moonlight.

This woman’s beauty was somewhat cool and elegant, standing there like an iceberg.

Liu Yi felt that his icy-cold energy was enough, but compared to this woman....the differences was huge.



And the woman's body is also good. Though it was less clear in a black trenchcoat, a pair of slender legs was enough to prove everything.

Looking at this woman under the moonlight, Liu Yi was actually looked stupid.

"It appears that I was wrong....This should be a D-level task."

The woman, with her hands inside her pockets and looking cool, spoke with a whiff of cold.

This time, her eyes finally fell to the side, to the embarrassed Liu Yi.

"Your dress....is quite unconventional...."

She pointed at Liu Yi's scarf.

"Ahem....thank you for the rescue...."

Liu Yi hastily crawled up.

"Are you the other person who took this task?"

He suddenly remembered that someone else, besides him, took this task.

"I am....I was also the person who issued that mission."

That iceberg beauty dismissively said, "I thought this was just a small matter, but there was no reply after a long time. So I picked up on my own.

"This....you can't do this!"

Liu Yi can't help but said, "I also take this task, ok! A thousand! A thousand...."

"You're too weak. This is not a task for you to complete."

That iceberg beauty lightly said.

"This is still hard to say! Moreover, I have had accepted the assignment, so, I must finish it! This is a question of credibility!"

Liu Yi said, patted the dust off, and stood up.

"And this is my first time in taking a mission. I can only win and not allowed to lose!"

"Oh?"

The iceberg woman couldn't help but took a glance at Liu Yi.

"This might be a D-level task....just for this one thousand, you want to risk your life?"

"A thousand may be nothing for you, but it means a lot to me!"

"Moreover if I flinch from this task, I probably wouldn't have dared to take a task anymore. I....must complete this."

Actually, Liu Yi didn't say that he also wanted to try to save his face after losing it from being trapped earlier.

'His mother, I must take back all that I lost just now.' He thought.

After Liu Yi had been determined, he clenched his fists.

"Interesting...."

That iceberg beauty said, "How about this, I'll help complete this task, and you can have all the reward. What do you think?"

"Really?"

Liu Yi didn't expect these good things would fall on his head.

"I, Li Biyue never lie."

The iceberg beauty dismissively said, "Belief what you want."

"Well then, so be it!"

Other people wanted to help one make money. One would not reject it.

This assignment seemed difficult, so Liu Yi can only be happy someone lend him a helping hand.

"Someone's coming."

Li Biyue said, eyes looking at the direction of the factory, "The content of the task has changed....Help me eliminate these people from the cult of the great god, and consider your task is complete."

"Huh?"

Liu Yi was dumbfounded.

"Kill, kill people?"

“They are not good people.”

Li Biyue said, “If you don’t kill them, they will kill you.”

While she was speaking, from that pitch-dark factory gate, suddenly came out sharp screams.

“Aaaaa!”

This sound was grating and full of terror, making Liu Yi can’t bear but covered his ears.

Shortly thereafter, a shadow slowly walked out of the factory gate.

“Thou who rushes to my great god religion’s domain....leaves behind thy life.”

The man was totally covered in black, with a white mask on his face.

But unlike Liu Yi’s mask, the eyes of that man’s mask hung two lines pattern of red tears of blood.

His whole body was wrapped around by an unnatural energy, a ghostlike energy.

“It turned out it was not a demon energy....”

Since Li Biyue appeared, Lin Tong has been hiding inside Liu Yi’s body. This time, she called out in alarm.

“It was a ghost energy....”

Liu Yi’s eyes fell on the man’s shoulder.

Only to see a small baby, as big as one’s palm, sat on top of it.

That baby actually looked very hideous.

The facial features were distorted. The whole face was covered in blood, and eyes were bulging out, making Liu Yi a bit horrified.

“Ghost baby....”

Lin Tong exclaimed again, “It turned out to be a ghost baby!”

“What’s wrong?”

Liu Yi didn't understand about these things.

“Ghost baby is a baby that was choked to death upon birth....And then refined by some kind of evil spell....”

When Lin Tong said this, she seemed slightly trembled, “This kind of evil spell....should've been long banned....how, could it possibly appears!”

“Turned out there is this sort of spell...”

After Liu Yi had heard this, his whole body could not help but chill. His clenched fists made a crackling sound.

He remembered a past news: After a thief stole a car, he casually strangled the baby that was left on the car in a snowy area.

Such a person deserved to be killed!

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 72

Feeling the fluttering murderous aura that was suddenly coming from Liu Yi, Li Biyue was taken aback.

But she soon calmed down and looked toward the man opposite of her.

“Great God is a cult that is unscrupulous and poisoning people’s mind. You’re nothing but a small cult believer that refined such an evil ghost baby. This alone is enough to prove that your death is not to be regretted.”

“Hahaha, my great God religion is the True God Religion!”

That man actually laughed, “I killed this baby, is but to help him return to the arms of God! Long Live The Great God!”

“Goddamn, you m\*th\*rucker!”

Liu Yi can’t stop himself from shouting curses.

That man did such a cruel thing, not only he still have a clear conscience about it, he even thought that was a good thing!

To not kill such a person, will cause popular indignation!

“To insult the great God religion is truly a heathen, you can never understand the will of the True God. Just wait for your End in Hell.”

The man held out his hand, pointing at Liu Yi, and said.

“The True God will judge you.”

“The one’s on trial will be you!”

Liu Yi can’t hold back his anger, “Just wait for the Law’s punishment!”

“The Law? Hahahaha!”

The man can’t help but laugh once again. His laughter even shook his body, as if he saw a funny scene.

“You’re kidding me, right? The law? The law is only limited to the average person, but I’m above the law. Not only me, among the mortals, those influential and powerful people, weren’t they also the same as me? They are above and beyond the reach of Law. The law that you said could not punish

me!”

If the Law could not sanction you, then let me punish you.”

“Who the hell are you?”

“This grandpa is the Red Scarf Hero!”

“You’re kidding me, right?”

That great God follower laughed again.

But Liu Yi rubbed both of his hands this time; Rubbing an ice bomb.

He aimed that great God believer and threw his ice bomb.

The blue-white ice bomb drew a beautiful arc in the air, and then down to the great God believer.

“What is this?”

The great God believer stretched out his right hand to block that ice projectile.

“Bang!”

The ice bomb directly exploded on his right arm.

Suddenly, the right arm of this great God believer was wrapped in ice.

“Humph! An insignificant insect’s trick; Such a disgrace!”

That great God believer seemed angry; the ghost baby on his shoulder moved.

That ghost baby opened his ugly mouth and, ‘swishing sounds’, sprayed several red blood projectiles, which directly coming straight at Liu Yi.

“Bad!”

Liu Yi said. He quickly stepped on his spirit fox steps to flexibly slip his body a few steps to the left and stayed away from the trajectory of those blood projectiles.

But to his surprise, Li Biyue still indifferently stood there, as if that several blood projectiles were nothing in her eyes.

“Quickly dodge!”

Liu Yi can't help but exclaim.

An even more amazing scene appeared. That several blood projectiles flew past threw Li Biyue's body.

Li Biyue's penetrated places rippled and soon returned to their original form.

As if Li Biyue's whole body was a shadow, not affected by the blood projectiles at all.

"What?"

The opposite great God believer was surprised, "My blood arrow actually didn't work on you?"

"Your opponent is him."

Li Biyue didn't put that great God believer in her eyes. Instead, she said to Liu Yi.

"If you can beat him, consider you finished the task."

"Good! 1000 pieces, I'm coming!"

Liu Yi can see that Li Biyue was really powerful, so he was not worried.

His feet trod on ice skates, and his whole body suddenly rushed toward the great God believer.

"Go to hell for me! Long live the Great God!"

That great God follower controlled the ghost baby on his shoulder, unceasingly spewing blood arrows at Liu Yi.

Liu Yi, while stepping on ice skates, launch his spirit fox steps.

His body continued to shift flexibly, dodging the blood arrows.

Utilizing his demonic qi, the world speed around Liu Yi slightly slowed.

Therefore, the speed of those blood arrows slowed down, letting Liu Yi easily dodge all of them.

Otherwise, the amount of the blood arrows that would hit him were enough to fill a jar.

A blood arrow hit a nearby tree. It immediately burned with black scorch mark, showing its impressive strength.

“Lie down for me!”

At this time, Liu Yi has arrived before the body of that great God believer.

He leaped high and hit his palm in the chest of that great God follower.

Launching his great brilliant sun palm, Liu Yi's left hand was printed with a seal. He intended to bring this second palm strike upon that great God believer.

At this time, the great God believer sneered and said.

“Want to touch me? In your dream!”

With that, the ghost baby on his shoulder let out a piercing scream.

The shrill cries turned into circular ripples, spreading out from the ghost baby's mouth, and impacting Liu Yi's body.

Feeling severe pain in his eardrums, Liu Yi's whole body hindered in the air and then flew out and fell to the ground.

“With such abysmal skills, you dare to oppose the great God, humph, courting death.”

The great God follower smiled smugly.

Lin Tong shouted in Liu Yi's ear.

“Damn, that guy's strength is just two stars....but his ghost baby is too weird! Liu Yi, you be careful!”

“I know....”

Liu Yi's throat was somewhat sweet.

Apparently, the previous cries made him suffered internal injury.

“The Great God Religion is eternal!”

That great God believer touched his ghost baby and slowly said, “You know what, the ghost baby was strangled by me without feeling any pain.



He peacefully lie there, returned to the embrace of God. He is a soldier of God. For the unification of humanity under the Great God Religion, he has made his contribution.

“You go to hell....”

Liu Yi got up and clenched his fists.

“You all don’t understand the gift from God.”

The great God believer sneered, “You live in a fabricated world, full of extreme impulsiveness; Simply can’t see through the mundane and can’t touch the truth. However, if you truly repent, and participate in my Great God Religion, I will guide you to touch this real world.”

“I touch your grandma’s fingernail!”

Liu Yi said, stepped on ice skates, and rocketing toward the great God follower.

“Impenetrably thick-headed ordinary people....I feel sorry for you....”

With that, the ghost baby on his shoulder uttered a piercing scream. Acoustic shockwave came through.

This time, Liu Yi did not dodge but rushed up.

“Desolate Flame!”

A dazzling print appeared on his right palm, which directly collided with the invisible shockwave.

Using power to deal with the sound!

This is the desperado Liu Yi’s move!

Being attacked by Liu Yi’s great brilliant sun palm, that sound wave instantly warped up.

“Boom!”

Liu Yi unexpectedly broke this sound wave with his palm attack, and then arrived in front of the great God believer.

The great God believer didn’t expect his sonic attack can actually be broken. He can’t react in time and can only helplessly watch as Liu Yi’s palm

hit his chest.

“Vein Seal!”

This vein seal was infused with his thick icy qi!

“Ka, ka, ka!”

The great God believer felt his body became stiff, and the world around him become dark, the blood on his body stopped flowing.

Liu Yi’s mysterious icy qi even made half his body frozen in ice.

This palm actually can’t hurt Lin Tong much, but yet, the result on him was very effective.

“Ao, Ao!”

The ghost baby opened his mouth, seemingly wanted to launch an attack.

At this time, Liu Yi’s left hand landed on his head.

“Let me send you to the afterlife to be reincarnated....to grow strong and healthy in the next life....Desolate Flame!”

Liu Yi’s desolate palm (first palm strike) erupted, simultaneously, the mysterious icy qi in his body, erupted at three times its power.

The ghost baby was instantly frozen, changed into an ice sculpture and then, fragmented piece by piece.

“My, my ghost baby! Aaa!”

Seeing this scene, the great God believer gravely roared.

“He’s not yours.”

Liu Yi turned his head and coldly looking before the great God believer.

“He had his own parents.”

“He’s my Great God Religion’s warrior, serving for my Great God!”

“Your great god religion is nothing but a cult. Using such pretext, you wantonly plundered their lives....you....are lower than pigs and dogs!”

Liu Yi said, lifted his left palm, gathering his strength. He intended to hit this great God believer’s forehead and ended his life.

But his palm stagnated in mid-air. He didn't make his move after quite a while.

After all is said and done....he was just a student.

To kill another person....he somewhat can't do it.

"Go to hell!"

That great God believer suddenly bit his tongue. With mouth filled with blood, he was ready to spurt it toward Liu Yi's cheek.

Condensed into blood droplets.

The Ghost baby's power, he can also do it.

But at this time, a shadow suddenly appeared behind him.

Li Biyue stood behind him. A black shadow edge slowly disappeared from her left hand.

That great God believer looked at his slowly separated body, and, spewed a mouthful of blood under his mask.

"Great God Religion....Will not let you get away...."

With that, his upper and lower body officially separated.

Liu Yi hastily stepped back two steps, but because his feet still had the icy skates, he slid very far. A stream of blood spurted out and nearly sprayed his body.

Looking at the cut in half corpse, Liu Yi can't help but somewhat disgusted and almost throw up.

"A rookie indeed."

Li Biyue turned her head, looked at Liu Yi, and said, "But, it's an interesting rookie."

"Hua...."

Liu Yi retched several times and quickly made a few breathing technique to adjust his status.

He didn't dare look at the corpse, lest he will having nightmares.

“Your mission is completed. Go back to report the task. I am the mission’s publisher, and I will accept your report.”

Li Biyue said and beckoned her hand.

“Why do you want to help me?”

‘Something did not add up,’ according to Liu Yi’s thought, ‘an iceberg woman like her, ought to not talk with a man, right?’

“I find you kid quite interesting, oddly enough....”

Li Biyue also felt it was strange.

Liu Yi suddenly thought of something. He opened his eyes of favorable impression.

Sure enough, on top of Li Biyue’s head, floated the numbered favorability of 5.

‘Damn!’ He can’t help but exclaim in his heart.

‘It’s the friendly aura!’

Unexpectedly, this skill has worked wonders.

“Enough, if we have the chance, we’ll meet again in the future....”

Li Biyue said, “I am Li Biyue from the hunter organization. In the event that we meet again....I will consider inviting you to join my organization....”

“What is this ‘Hunter Organization? Hey!”

Liu Yi wasn’t too clear.

But this time, Li Biyue has turned into a shadow, and disappeared in front of Liu Yi.

After Liu Yi had walked away, Li Biyue came out again and took the great God believer’s phone, looking for some information.

“It turned out the twelve zodiac program already leaked?”

Li Bi Yue looked at the phone, looking pensive, “No wonder the great God cult’s activity recently increased....It seems like they have the thought to act toward the twelve zodiac program....This guy, what was he planned to do here? I’ll add manpower to reinforce my issued missions. This case needs

many investigators....oh....This time, I am not going to meet with that interesting guy while on duty again, right?....”

Remembering that guy who wore a black suit and a red scarf, Li Biyue could not bear but wanted to smile.

“It appears this northern dragon city will not be so tranquil anymore....”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 73

“What wrong? Do you still think about that Li Biyue?”

Early in the morning, Lin Tong asked Liu Yi, who was somewhat restless in the classroom.

“Em....I was just thinking....The God Cult, and the Hunter Organization....What exactly are those....”

“About Great God cult, I also heard it for the first time. But I actually know about the Hunter Organization.”

“The Hunter Organization doesn’t belong in our cultivation realm. I heard some of them had natural psychic power. Using each other’s different abilities, they established this organization. The purpose of this organization’s existence is also to eliminate the demon.”

Sworn Enemy....

This is Lin Tong’s implied meaning.

“Different ability....is it fierce?”

Liu Yi cannot bear but ask.

“Some are powerful, some are lame. They were also divided into many ranks! That Li Biyue who you run into....is very powerful....”

Lin Tong said with some apprehension.

Using her eyes of star jade, she can see that Li Biyue....is at least has the power of ten star jade or more....

Because Lin Tong’s power was too shallow, she can’t see through Li Biyue’s real strength....

‘Unexpectedly, Liu Yi can met with a rare to see Earthly Realm expert.....’

‘I don’t know if this will bring good luck or bad luck to Liu Yi....’

‘More importantly, although this Hunter Organization’s mission is to eliminate Demon, from the beginning, they didn’t deal with immortal cultivator....’

‘But that Li Biyue actually willing to invite Liu Yi to enter The Hunter Organization....’

‘What kind of idea was this!’ Lin Tong thought.

‘Friendly Aura actually can be so powerful like this....’

Lin Tong could not help but be a little envious toward Liu Yi.

‘However, to re-encounter Li Biyue, seemed a bit hard.’

‘In the Hunter Organization, this woman’s position must be one of the important ones. Thus, she should seldom go out.’

‘This time, Liu has the luck of a lottery winner. It would be difficult for him to meet her the second time.’

“In short, The Hunter Organization and the Immortal Cultivation world didn’t deal with each other. It’s better if you have less contact with them.”

Lin Tong cautioned

‘If demonic Liu Yi was to be discovered by the Hunter Organization....I’m afraid, the consequences would be unthinkable.’ Lin Tong thought.

‘That Li Biyue’s strength was so terrifying....’

‘If she wants to move against Liu Yi, perhaps in just a matter of seconds, Liu Yi would be sliced in two....’

‘Oh, master....’

‘Please give Liu Yi your blessing....’

‘Don’t let him come across the people from Hunter Organization again!’

Lin Tong silently prayed in her heart.

“I know....”

Liu Yi nodded his head, touching the red ring on his right hand, and then sat down.

He seemed to come to school a bit early. There were only a few people in the class. Murong Die and them haven’t come yet.

Chen Cai was also quite early. He was lying on the table, writing

something.

“What are you writing about?”

Liu Yi can't help but curiously ask.

“Love Poem! This lover wants to pursue a beauty in the fourth class....Using these love poems, I'll be able to capture her heart!”

Chen Chai said as he wrote.

“I think....Your method is too old-fashioned!”

Liu Yi can't help but ridicule, “Nobody sends Love Poems anymore....”

“You don't understand....This is called, against the tide!”

Chen Cai rolled his eyes at Liu Yi and then said, “If I follow what's currently the hit, then I will be called as someone who has no ideas!”

“I think, you might as well search her name on WeChat, see if you can add her!”

Liu Yi said, “Now everyone use WeChat....”

“Love Poem is the way of the King, OK!”

Chen Cai quickly defended his love poem, “Moreover....I have searched in WeChat. She's not there....”

“Damn....then try your poem to someone else.”

Liu Yi said, “Find a girl, and tell her your poem. If she's moved by your speech, then you know she will like you.”

“Hey, your method is quite feasible!”

Chen Cai's eyes lit up, “Even If I have to send hundreds of my poem to hundreds of girls....someone will surely like it!”

“That's right...this is called scientific!”

Liu Yi nodded his head.

Taking advantage of your auspicious words, I'm ready to go!”

Chen Cai intended to take advantage the time before the class to give this method a try.



Just then, a pretty figure suddenly entered the classroom hesitantly.

Liu Yi and Chen Cai simultaneously looked and immediately surprised.

“Fuck me! It’s Wang Yuzheng!”

Chen Cai’s eyes shimmered. Although he said he has given up on pursuing her, seeing this big beautiful flower Wang Yuzheng, he was still a bit excited.

Hearing this sound, Wang Yuzheng also noticed Liu Yi.

Immediately, from hesitant, she turned aggressive and came toward Liu Yi.

“You....why are you here....”

Liu Yi didn’t know why she seemingly rushed toward him.

“Liu Yi! I return your love letter!”

Wang Yuzheng said and threw the love letter in Liu Yi;s face.

”Eh?”

Liu Yi was taken aback, thinking, ‘What is the meaning of this?’

“Next time if you give other people love letter, please put on the correct name!”

“Huh?”

Liu Yi’s head was a bit foggy.

But there were a few students came to the classroom. Judging from their rascally dressed uniform, they seemed to be the students who used to hang out with Yuan Shaojun.

Those students immediately came forward and bowed at Liu Yi one by one.

“How are you brother Liu....”

“Good morning brother Liu....”

“Liu Yi, you really are not a good thing! Later on, please don’t harass me again!” Wang Yuzheng thought that those students are Liu Yi’s friend.

With that, Wang Yuzheng stormed out of the classroom.

Liu Yi was silly, thinking, ‘What the hell this is all about!’

After those several students had finished their greeting, they saw Liu Yi's complexion turned bad and immediately slipped away.

They were scared....

Liu Yi was so brutal that night....He even put Yuan Shaojun to hospital....

They didn't dare come to Liu Yi to apologize....for fear that they will get into trouble....

These students didn't expect that Wang Yuzheng would think that Liu Yi was one of them.

"What has just happened...."

Liu Yi opened the love letter that he previously sent. After he had opened it, he saw the several names that were encircled with red ink.

Liu Yi took a glance at it and immediately stunned.

"Fuck! Chen Cai, what's wrong with you!"

Liu Yi slapped Chen Cai's face with that love letters.

"Eh?"

Liu Yi's crooked nose showed how great his anger is.

"You wrote a love letter to Wang Yuzheng, but why you put another girl's name on it!"

"Eh?"

Chen Cai took the love letter and read it. "Fuck me! Why did I write the fourth class girl's name in this....my mistake, my mistake...."

"Fuck, not only that, but you also signed this letter!"

Liu Yi almost exploded in anger, "Wang Yuzheng originally thought I sent this letter, but now she must've thought that I was just playing with her! You hurry up and help me explain to her!"

"Ai....Boss....Wang Yuzhen has no appeal to you anyway. Therefore, it doesn't matter what she thought of you...."

Chen Cao wretchedly smiled twice, saying, "If I go to her and help you explain, words will spread out to that fourth class beauty. By then I will be finished....My happiness, destroyed....Boss, you wouldn't let your brother down would you...."

"Fuck....count your luck, I listen to you this time...."

Liu Yi stared daggers at Chen Cai.

"Hehe....Boss, I'm going to that fourth class beauty, wish me luck!"

With that, Chen Cai swiftly ran out of the classroom.

Liu Yi was depressed, he has inadvertently picked a bad friend!

But being hated for no reason is always uncomfortable.

Especially being hated by a pretty girl....alas, the whole body is uncomfortable!

When Liu Yi was upset, Ma Yixuan suddenly pushed open the door and entered.

Noticing Liu Yi, who was sitting there, her whole body suddenly stiff.

Liu Yi also noticed her gaze, looked up at Ma Yixuan and saw each other in the eyes.

Ma Yixuan was scared and hung her head. She then returned to her seat in silence.

Liu Yi was slightly sad.

It seemed like Ma Yixuan was drifted further away from him.

He opened his eyes of favorable impression and took a glance at Ma Yixuan.

Favorability, -95!

It's actually negative 95!

Can the number be this low!

Liu Yi thought that the reason the number didn't reach -100 was probably because of his friendly aura....

Alas, this Ma Yixuan's character is too invincible.

Yesterday he can even give Ma Yuanyuan a backrub, but today he saw Ma Yixuan hated him to the bone.

"After negative 100, the level is called hate."

Lin Tong, lying on the shoulder of Liu Yi, said, "Your eyes of favorable impression is incomplete. When you opened the third star jade, your eyes of favorable impression will have the full firepower. At that time, you will see different things...."

"What things?"

"Well....I can just show you!"

Lin Tong said, turned into a red light and entered Liu Yi's body.

Suddenly, Liu Yi felt his eyes slightly bulged.

In an instant, Liu Yi saw that there's not only a string of number on top of Ma Yixuan's head.

But it has the added word: Common -95.

Common?

Liu Yi was surprised, thinking, 'She still can't be considered hating me?'

The classroom door opened, and then Lan He walked in.

Liu Yi saw the words on top of his head reads, Hate +18.

'Holy shit!' He thought.

'Now that is a real hate!'

"What you usually see is just the number on the common level. When the favorability reaches 100, it will automatically move to the next level. For example, Chen Cai. He should have a friendly level favorability toward you."

"How to differentiate all of these?"

Liu Yi thought that the eyes of favorable impression were getting more and more amusing.

"Em....Above the common level, there is the friendly level. After that, there

is Love level. Below the common level, there is hate level. Below that, there is blood-feud level.”

“So that’s how it is...really interesting....”

Just when Liu Yi was playing with his eyes of favorable impression, Kevin unexpectedly entered into the classroom!

When Liu Yi glanced at him, Kevin immediately frightened to shrink his neck.

The words that floated above his head made Liu Yi slightly startled.

Fear +20.

“Fear? This level actually exist?”

“Yes, that’s right. This is a different level from the common level. When people afraid of you, they show you this option. If you want to build a relationship with them, you need to reduce their fear until it reaches 0. That’s when you can turn it into the common level.”

“Forget it....who wants to build relationship with them....”

Liu Yi shook his head. For someone like Kevin, he always keeps them at a respectful distance.

If they don’t want to approach him, so much the better. He will be as happy as a clam.

Liu Yi was fortunate, the classroom door was opened again.

Murong Die and Wang Lele two people walked hand in hand.

Seeing the numbers on top of their heads, Liu Yi got into a surprise.

Wang Lele, favorability 30.

Murong Die, favorability 28!

‘My god, these two chicks, how could they like me this much?’ Liu Yi thought.

“Liu Yi gege! Good morning!”

Wang Lele openly greeted Liu Yi, “The money for the hot spicy soup, have you gathered enough of it?!”

“Yes, it’s enough now....”

Liu Yi’s eyes blinked a few times, thinking, ‘Fuck, Were their increased favorability was caused by the hot spicy soup?’

‘Yes, it’s possible....’

It was at this moment, Li Juanhua rushed into the classroom.

“Liu Yi, come with me. The Principal is looking for you!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 74

‘The Principal is looking for me?’

Liu Yi was taken aback, thinking, ‘Why would the Principal want to look for me!?’

‘Is this one of Lin Huayang’s trick?’

The first thought that flashed through Liu Yi’s mind was ‘I’m not going, even if you beat me to death, I’m not going!’

But soon he told himself that he has no alternatives but to go....

This was not the call to play LOL from the next class student!

“I know teacher Li...I’m going now....”

With heart beating like a drum, Liu Yi went outside of the classroom.

“Swush!”

At that time, Murong Die unexpectedly rose and followed behind Liu Yi.

Liu Yi turned his head to find Murong Die was walking behind him and was surprised.

“Murong Die, why are you following me?”

“Cut, which one of your eyes that saw this Lady following you?”

With hands behind her back, Murong Die tilted her mouth and said, “This school is so big while the path is under my feet. Where this lady wanted to go, that’s where I’m going to go! You can’t just assume as so, the school is not yours!”

“.....”

Liu Yi felt that he was merely quarreling with a noisy chick, so he shrunk his neck and simply did not reply.

Murong Die turned around and secretly made a hand gesture of “Yes!” to Wang Lele.

Wang Lele was helpless, thinking.

‘This sis’ Die, how could she really likes to go against Liu Yi....’

‘She obviously care about him and wanted to help him.’

‘But she always ends up quarreling with him....’

‘Oh the headache, it seems like these two people’s ancestors were definitely enemies\*!’

(TL: \*Enemies here can also be translated as a fated couple)

Li Juanhua, seeing Murong Die also came, said nothing.

She was just a teacher here, so it was impossible for her to control the lady of the Murong Family. She would just let the Principal have this headache.

So, Li Juanhua and Liu Yi, followed by a beautiful big miss, went all the way to the Principal’s office.

After knocking on the door, she led Liu Yi and them to enter.

When the door opened, Liu Yi was taken aback.

Because in the Principal’s office, stood two uniformed police officers with big hats!

One of them is tall, and the other one is short. A man and a woman

Moreover....’Why they seem familiar to me!?’ Liu Yi thought.

‘Weren’t the two of them the one I met at the bridge that day?! One of them is the well-intentioned young policeman that let myself to go back to school, the other one is....Yuan Zhenyue, I’ll be damn....’

Seeing Liu Yi came in, the two police officers were obviously startled.

“Two police comrades, that’s him!”

Principal Lin, who was sitting at his desk, pointed his Liu Yi and said, “Seize him!”

“What?”

Liu Yi looked at Principal Lin with a puzzled look, “What did I do that make you want the police to arrest me?”

“Liu Yi, you know exactly what you did!”



Principal Lin looked at Liu Yi with a clenched jaw. The affable appearance he always showed to the students in the past was all gone.

“Although you’re just a student, everyone is equal before the law! Wait until you get your punishment!”

Hearing Principal Lin said these words, Liu Yi had a shock, thinking.

‘All person are equal before the law....’

‘This is what I said last night, and was refuted by that great God cult’s believer.’

‘Today....it seems like someone wants to use the law to punish me....’

‘But, what have I done to warrant this?’

“Principal Lin, please calm down.”

The kindly young policeman suddenly frowned and said, “We can’t just arrest people whenever someone told us to seize a person. Everything must be based on evidence. We came here only to investigate and collect evidence. Please don’t interfere with our work.”

With that, he turned around, held out his hand toward Liu Yi, and said.

“Hi, we meet again, my name is Zhang Kening.”

“My, my name is Liu Yi....”

Although this was not the first time he shook hand with the police, Liu Yi was still nervous.

Murong Die stood at the side. Her black eyebrows slightly furrowed. She didn’t know what to think about this scene.

“Hey, you kid can be regarded as to fall into my hand!”

The nearby Yuan Zhenyue was surprisingly fitting in wearing the police uniform.

She looked at Liu Yi with a smile, making goosebumps appeared all over Liu Yi’s body.

‘This female police officer....wouldn’t possibly do something toward me, right?....’

'Is she looking for a fight?...' Liu Yi thought.

Remembering the scene where this girl, Yuan Zhenyue showed her violent nature when she kicked off the criminal's motorcycle, Liu Yi felt a bit scared.

'Being her enemies....'

'Is absolutely not a thing that a normal people is willing to do!'

"Comrade Yuan Zhenyue, you watch your mouth. We are here for an official duty!"

Zheng Kening immediately said.

"Of course...brother Zheng. I suddenly want to exercise my skill. When we get off work, I want you to accompany me to practice!"

Yuan Zhenyue said as she rubbed her fist.

Zheng Kening immediately shrunk his neck and bit his tongue.

"That's better, let me handle this."

Yuan Zhenyue said, walked to the front of Liu Yi, saying.

"Liu Yi, you are now accused of harming other people with intent."

"Ah?"

Liu Yi blinked.

'Is this because of what I did to Yuan Shaojun last night?' Liu Yi thought.

'But that should count as a self-defense....'

'Although later on my other personality woke up, making me use a heavy-handed method....It should be still in the category of self-defense....'

'As for injuring people with intent, where did that come from?'

"Your fight last night, not only wounded Yuan Shaojun but also caused Yuan Shaojun to be hospitalized because of severe injuries. Moreover, you also beat Lin Huayang, causing Lin Huayang to develop a certain....disability...."

When Yuan Zhenyue said the last word, her face looked weird.

'Disability?'

Liu Yi thought that last night, he seemingly only gave Lin Huayang a bitch slap in the mouth.

‘Could that trashing made his face paralyze?’

The nearby Principal Lin’s face was crimson. His eyeballs were also slightly red.

His son....has become disabled!

This was the same as saying their Lin Family’s lineal was basically cut off.

Can one’s hatred be deeper than this?!

Principal Lin has decided to let Liu Yi pay the price.

“You must not admit this.”

Before Liu Yi said anything, Lin Tong on his shoulder had verbally warned him.

“This old man certainly want to frame you. If you admit this, the matter will go big! As long as you refuse to admit no matter what, they can’t do anything to you.”

“But....What if Yuan Shaojun testifies against me....I did give him a severe beating....” Liu Yi said to Lin Tong through his spiritual environment.

“Humph, there is no use even if both of them testify against you. They don’t have the proof! You guy, knows nothing about the law!”

Liu Yi actually being look down upon by the small fox.

When he thought about this, he also reached the same conclusion. Yuan Shaojun and Lin Huayang brought this down upon themselves. He didn’t need to be responsible for them.

“There’s no such thing. I am only an ordinary student, how could I possibly intentionally hurt someone!”

Although Liu Yi is somewhat stubborn, lying is definitely one of his fortes. He said those words without even missing a beat.

“Then where are you after the school is over last night?”

Yuan Zhenyue, with a sparkling vision, asked.

“I’m in....”

Liu Yi didn’t know what to say.

During that time....even if said he was somewhere else, but who can prove his alibi!

“During that period, he was with this lady!”

At that time, Murong Die, with arms crossed, chipped in.

Principal Lin’s face suddenly pale.

‘Why would Murong Die will come forward for Liu Yi?’ He thought.

“You are....”

Zheng Kening looked at Murong Die, thinking, ‘This female student is stunning, not much different than Yuan Zhenyue....moreover, she seems more elegant and glamorous.’

”This lady’s name is Murong Die!”

“Murong Die....”

Zheng Kening pondered for a moment, and then shuddered, thinking ‘Could it be she’s the lady Murong from Murong family....’

This Zheng Kening was different than the frank Yuan Zhenyue. He has been a policeman for quite a while and knows the inside and the outside of the underworld gang in this city.

The lady Murong of Murong family....this name....was known by him.

Moreover, he was aware that she also attended this school....

Thus, he came to the conclusion that the person before him was the real lady Murong.

‘Liu Yi this silly boy is truly lucky. Even lady Murong is willing to help him.’ Zheng Kening thought.

‘It seems like today he might have dodged the bullet.’

“Murong Die....”

Liu Yi was also slightly surprised to see this big miss. He didn't know why she would cover for him.

"Liu Yi was in this lady's car, tutoring English for this lady. Our family's driver uncle Wang can testify. Do you want me to invite uncle Wang?"

"Is it Captain Wang?!"

There were rays of excitement in Zheng Kening's eyes.

"Oh? Is he that Wang An guy?"

Yuan Zhenyue blinked her eyes with keen interest.

After this Wang An retired from the army, he was transferred to the police department as a captain.

Zheng Kening and Yuan Zhenyue once worked under him.

But afterward, he seemed to have a quarrel with his superior, then left the job. He then was invited to work by Murong Family.

The one Zheng Kening was most admired of was this captain of him. Unfortunately, he has retired now. Upon hearing this news from Murong Die's mouth, he was naturally somewhat excited.

"Shall I get him to verify my words?"

Murong Die asked again.

"No need, no need. This appears to be some misunderstanding."

Zheng Kening waved his hand and hurriedly said.

"Principal Lin, it seems like this matter is just a misunderstanding. Moreover, the hospital also said that young master Lin has no injury, no scar was found on her lower part. I think you should just forget about this matter."

Since Murong Die have come forward, Zheng Kening also intended to close this case.

The struggle between these people was not something a police officer like him could intervene.

It's better to just let them sort it out themselves.

Principal Lin gritted his teeth, he is very unwilling.

But he is not stupid. He knew that since Murong Die has come forward, he can't press this matter forward today.

'Damn that Liu Yi. His background is so ordinary, but how could he get the help from the Murong family!' Principal Lin cursed in his heart.

'But this matter absolutely not ends here!'

"Then so be it....I have troubled the two police comrades....I'll send you out...."

"I want to say a few words to Liu Yi alone."

Yuan Zhenyue suddenly said.

"No!"

Murong Die was like a mother hen protecting her little chicken, stood in front of Liu Yi and exclaimed.

"Little missy, don't be so nervous, I just want to talk to him. Talking about personal matter."

Yuan Zhenyue could not help but smile.

"Rest assured Murong Die. It's gonna be okay."

Although Liu Yi really didn't want to face with Yuan Zhenyue alone, he felt that if he avoid her this time, with Yuan Zhenyue's temperament, she will absolutely not forgive him!

Better to just be obedient.

"Humph!"

Murong Die gave a stare at Liu Yi and then stood to the side.

"Come with me."

Yuan Zhenyue led Liu Yi out of the office and arrived at the corner of the corridor which bereft of people.

"Police Officer Yuan, what do you want to talk about...."

When Liu Yi opened her mouth, a fragrant wind suddenly lunged in front

of him.

Yuan Zhenyue's arm has arrived in front of Liu Yi's chest. That hand pressed his whole body upward against the wall.

What kind of act was this!

Liu Yi was desperate and unconsciously shouted.

“Ah, ah, I give up, just take what you want....”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 75

“Pft....”

Hearing the weak and feeble voice of Liu Yi, Yuan Zhenyue can't help but smile..

This smile, was so charming and fascinating, making Liu Yi just, for a time, absent-mindedly looked.

This violent female police officer....when smiling, was actually very attractive.

“Brat, what are you thinking about? I'm just afraid you're going to run!”

Yuan Zhenyue's arm tightly pressed Liu Yi's body and said.

“Humph, humph, the last time I let you ran away. You kid is too sly!”

‘I'm sly?’ Liu Yi asked himself.

‘Are there any justice in this!’

Liu Yi thought he has suffered injustice.

“This time, you can't run away....humph humph, don't think that you're going to be okay just because there's lady Murong behind you. Tell me clearly, what did you do to Lin Huayang?”

“Ah? What can I do to him!?”

Liu Yi blinked his eyes and scratched his head.

“You're still acting like a fool!”

Yuan Zhenyue's arm ruthlessly pressed his body, making Liu Yi's face even more tensed.

If outsiders saw these two people's present appearance, they would think that these two were having an affair.

Because their current posture was too ambiguous.

Yuan Zhenyue was almost plastered on Liu Yi's body. With arm extended to pressure Liu Yi's chest, her jade leg stuck out and arrived between Liu Yi's



legs.

Although Liu Yi enjoyed Yuan Zhenyue's body fragrant very much, Liu Yi really didn't understand what she was talking about.

"Lin Huayang's....below didn't work...."

"Below didn't work? He can still eat noodles can he?"

"Fuck, continue to play dumb is it?"

Yuan Zhenyue harshly glared at Liu Yi, then her face became somewhat red, saying, "His penis is limp! He can't get it hard anymore. Henceforth, his sex life is gone. Do you understand now!?"

"What?"

Hearing this news, Liu Yi was gobsmacked, thinking.

'I only gave Lin Huayang a single slap. How could it make him unable to get hard?'

'Isn't this a bit too fantastic!'

'As fantastic as immortal cultivation!'

"Are you still going to play the fool?! This mother's patience is getting low!"

Yuan Zhenyue's talk and style were extremely agile and fierce.

"This....yesterday, we did have a conflict."

Liu Yi felt that although Yuan Zhenyue is unreasonable, he inexplicably trust her. Therefore, he honestly said.

Yesterday, Lin Huayang and Yuan Shaojun mustered a hundred people to gang up and beat me up....I was surrounded but I broke their siege, and then beat Yuan Shaojun....I swear, it was self-defense....although, later on, I might be a bit excessive in my defense!", "Atta boy, a man beat a hundred, you're good!"

Who knew, that Yuan Zhenyue didn't care about that excessive defense. Her eyes lit up and cheerfully said.

"Let us fight another day again!"

"Ehm, ehm...let's talk about this in another day then."

“Did you just half-heartedly say that? Why don’t we start our practice now?”

“Give me a break....this is a school....”

“Humph, then continue your account honestly!”

“Yes....”

Liu Yi continued his recount, “But I only gave Lin Huayang a slap in the face....I didn’t use a ruthless method on him....”

“I know. The hospital has checked that. They said Lin Huayang didn’t have any injury in the lower part. Looks like it should be a psychological problem.”

Yuan Zhenyue thought for a moment, and then said, “I reckon, he must’ve been too scared of you.”

“Hah....his courage is too small....”

Liu Yi thought in his heart, “This kid, by relying in his dad’s authority, has been arrogant and domineering in school. Unexpectedly, when he came across a problem, he turned out to be like this.’

‘What a shame.’

“In short, you must keep a low-key for a while.”

Yuan Zhenyue reminded Liu Yi, “I checked your family background. You’re just an ordinary student. Although Lin Family can’t be compared to Murong Family, they still have some influence in this Northern Dragon city. I think it’s best for you to pack up and leave, be a transfer student to someplace else. Otherwise, your family member might be in danger. This Lin Family will definitely retaliate yours.”

“I know....”

Liu Yi said in his heart. ‘How could I stay low-key? Lan He, Yuan Shaojun, they were all my enemies.’

‘There’s also Lin Huayang. Troubles will come looking no matter what I do.’

‘Fuck it. I’ll use the red scarf hero identity to finish them all!’

When Liu Yi's mind wandered to this thought, he suddenly had a scare.

'Why would I think about that!'

'This must be the influence of my second personality!'

'Liu Yi oh Liu Yi....You must not abuse your own power....'

Liu Yi quietly circulating his Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra to adjust his mindset.

"Well then, I've told what I need to say, the rest is up to you!"

Yuan Zhenyue said, "I'll come looking for you another day and we'll have a fight! You're not allowed to refuse me, otherwise, this mother will block you at the school entrance every day!"

'Shit....What kind of police is this....'

'She's clearly a rogue....' Liu Yi thought.

He wanted to cry but have no tears.

After saying that, Yuan Zhenyue's body slightly moved, as if she was about to release Liu Yi.

Liu Yi also felt relieved.

But this time, Yuan Zhenyue suddenly looked fierce.

Liu Yi felt a cold wind blast his cheek, making him involuntarily inclined his head to the right.

"Swush!"

Yuan Zhenyue's fist scratched Liu Yi's left ear and hit empty air.

"What are you doing!"

Feeling the danger, Liu Yi's goosebump trembled.

"I think if I come looking for you another day, you'll certainly going to run away. Picking a good day to fight is hard, let's just fight now!"

'Is today a good day!?' Liu Yi thought.

'His sister, this is the school!'

Liu Yi incessantly complained.

“Take this!”

Yuan Zhenyue said as she moved her left knee toward Liu Yi's lower abdomen.

Liu Yi was shocked and hurriedly reached out his left hand to the front of his lower abdomen to stop Yuan Zhenyue's knee.

“Poof!”

But Yuan Zhenyue's momentum can't be stopped!

Since he opened his second star jade, Liu Yi felt that Yuan Zhenyue's strength should also be around two stars.

His hand was forced against his lower abdomen by Yuan Zhenyue's knee pressure.

His stomach immediately felt a squeezing sensation. It nearly made him throw up acid.

Terrible....

If he didn't slow down this kick just now, it's entirely possible that that will be his game over.

Yuan Zhenyue really started to show her no mercy face!

“Hehe....We haven't met for two days, but you're already this strong!”

Yuan Zhenyue was getting more and more excited, her pair of hands made a jab at Liu Yi's ears, intending to squeeze his brain out.

‘I'll be damn....’ Liu Yi cursed in his heart.

‘How could she do such a vicious trick like this!’

Liu Yi hardened his heart, and directly grabbed Yuan Zhenyue's thigh and then ruthlessly pulled it upward.

“Ah!”

Yuan Zhenyue suddenly exclaimed. Her left leg was pulled up by Liu Yi and she instantly lost her balance and fell, pulling Liu Yi on top of her.

But Yuan Zhenyue was not going to lose like that. She raised her right leg and made a bicycle kick that went straight to Liu Yi's chin.

Liu Yi didn't hesitate. His right hand immediately held Yuan Zhenyue's right leg.

But Yuan Zhenyue seemed to already expected Liu Yi to do that. Both of her hands supported her from the floor, and she pressed her legs, pressuring Liu Yi's arm and then caught him by the neck, ready to turn over and threw him.

But when both of legs clamped Liu Yi's neck, her whole body suddenly went soft. A unit of heat continued to flow in her body.

Yuan Zhenyue's body shook, her cheek flushed, a strange feeling appeared in her mind, making her whole body extremely hot.

Although she was physically weak, she subconsciously clamped her legs, hanging on top of Liu Yi's neck.

Liu Yi suddenly realized his right-hand problem!

'His mother!' Liu Yi exclaimed in his mind.

His Amorous Ripple Hand is causing trouble again....

'I really didn't mean it....'

Liu Yi quickly loosened his right hand.

At this time, a girl's voice suddenly rang.

"You....what are you two doing here!"

Liu Yi turned his head to look

'Fuck me!' He cursed.

It was Wang Yuzheng!

Liu Yi was taken by surprise.

'How could there be such a coincidence!'

"Liu Yi....you actually do this kind of thing in high school....you, you....you are a scum, degenerate man!"

Wang Yuzheng's face was red. She cursed several times and suddenly turned and ran away.

Liu Yi wanted to resolve this, but he was unable to explain.

'This....this is so unfair!' He cried in his heart.

Originally Wang Yuzheng just misunderstood him a bit, but now her misunderstanding has gone deeper....

Liu Yi hastily loosened Yuan Zhenyue.

After being loosened, Yuan Zhenyue squatted on the ground, her face was still flushed, while she whistled, gasping for breath.

"You, what did you just do to me...."

Yuan Zhenyue's apricot eyes began to clear. She raised her head and looked toward Liu Yi and then, while still gasping for breath, tenderly asked.

"I, I don't know either....I must attend a class, bye!"

Liu Yi was embarrassed to death.

He can't deal with Yuan Zhenyue, so he raised his legs to run.

"Damn....Asshole...."

Yuan Zhenyue looked toward the direction where Liu Yi made his escape and pounded her fist on the ground.

Unfortunately, she can't raise her strength anymore. This fist was also light.

She was confused and didn't know what kind of method did Liu Yi just do to her to be able to make her turned into this state.

'Liu Yi, Liu Yi....who are you, really!' She thought.

'I Yuan Zhenyue must investigate to the bottom of this!'

When Liu Yi rounded a corner, he immediately came across Murong Die, who was looking for him.

"Hey, you came back?"

Seeing Liu Yi, Murong Die quickly asked, "What did that policewoman ask

you about?”

“It’s nothing, it’s nothing....It’s just some investigation about another case....”

Liu Yi didn’t want to spread around Lin Huayang’s condition, making him looked like a woman.

“Cut, if you don’t want to say it, then so be it. It’s not as if this lady want to hear it either!”

Murong Die curled her lips, turned around and left.

Liu Yi’s heart was in a mess.

Well, since he met with Fox sister, his world has become a mess.

First, he started to become enemies with various people, then he had an encounter with the great God cult believer....

In the end, even the Principal became his enemy.

‘Do I listen to what Yuan Zhenyue said and moved to somewhere else?’ Liu Yi mused.

‘Definitely not. This one mid is the best school in Northern Dragon City.’

In the past, his dad and mom, to let him enter this one mid, has spent a considerable amount of sponsorship money to this school....

Because of this, his family condition has become a lot worse.

Liu Yi absolutely can’t leave one mid. He can’t disappoint his parents.

He secretly clenched his fists.

‘No matter if it’s Lan He, Lin Huayang, or even Principal Lin, I’m not afraid of them all!’ He thought.

‘Come a person, beat a person. Come a pair beat that pair!’

‘Grandpa said, don’t just casually stir up troubles, but if you met with a problem, don’t be afraid to get into trouble! This is the real man!’

‘That’s right! I, Liu Yi am an indomitable real man!’

At this time, Liu Yi suddenly heard Yuan Zhenyue’s shout from behind him

“Liu Yi, if you’re a man come back here!”

‘Mommy....’

Liu Yi’s instantaneous heroism immediately collapsed. He picked up his shoes and ran back to the classroom.



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 76

“My dear son....come eat....”

“I don’t want to eat! Leave me alone! Go away!”

Lin Huayang locked himself in his room, ignoring her mother’s request and bitterly shout.

“Then I’ll put the food in front of your door....don’t forget to eat....”

The outside footsteps gradually left.

Lin Huayang waved to slam the new Apple notebook on the ground, shattering it.

His room was full of debris.

Apart from the bed, everything else didn’t survive.

Lin Huayang almost shattered everything that can be shattered.

His lower part is dying, nothing can be worse than this!

Lin Huayang constantly struggled, wandering between anger and despair.

The target of Lin Huayang’s dart board on the wall was plastered with Liu Yi’s photograph.

So many darts were on that photograph, evidence of Lin Huayang venting his anger.

But this is far from enough.

Lin Huayang wished he could give his soul to the devil in exchange for the power to kill Liu Yi!

But this was only a wish. It’s impossible to come true!

When Lin Huayang has no place to vent his anger, his phone suddenly rang.

Lin Huayang angrily picked up the phone to see the caller. It turned out it was Lan He!

“This young master Lan, what does he want with me?” Lin Huayang

thought.

Lin Huayang was really not in the mood to answer the phone. But he suddenly remembered that Murong Die seemed to cover up for Liu Yi!

‘If Murong Die protects Liu Yi....then, wouldn’t that make Lan He, who tried to pursue Murong Die all this time, my ally?’

‘The enemy of my enemy is my friend!’

‘That’s right....’

Lin Huayang’s anger was burning. Revenge is everything for him. He then picked up the phone.

“Is it young master Lin? I heard that Liu Yi has also provoked you?

On the phone, Lan He directly said without preamble.

“Oh? Young master Lan didn’t like him too?”

Lin Huayang was secretly delighted.

Even if there’s no Yuan Shaojun, if Lan He was willing to be his ally, it would be wonderful!

‘Liu Yi, you made me unable to play with a woman, I’ll pay you back ten times, hundred times!’

“Hehe, it seems like we are indeed on the same team.”

Lan He laughed over the phone, “Young master Lin, today, why don’t we make an appointment to watch a movie?”

Lin Huayang was immediately surprised.

‘What kind of trick is this? Lan He wants to watch a movie with me?’ Lin Huayang couldn’t believe what he just heard.

‘Fuck me...Could it be Lan He, because he can’t capture Murong Die, turned into gay?’

‘His mother....Although I can’t play with a woman anymore, my heart still doesn’t change!’

“Young master Lan....to tell you the truth, I’m not in the mood....”

“Haha, young master Lin, hear me out first.”

Lan He leisurely laughed, “There will be a good show today....perhaps you can see the person that you hate, kneel in front of you, crying and begging....”

“Is this real? Young master Lan, I don’t mean to doubt you....but that Liu Yi seems to have two personalities. He can even send Yuan Shaojun to the hospital....”

“Relax....This time, I got the Black Dragon gang to help me....”

“Oh? Really? This is going to be fun! Young master Lan, where are you right now? I’ll immediately go there!”

“Come then, I’m at Tianda theater. I’ll wait for you there. I won’t leave before we meet.”

“Good, don’t leave before we meet!”

Lin Huayang excitedly hung up the phone, forgetting how weird that farewell was. His whole body was in a state of excitement.

‘Liu Yi, Liu Yi, an ordinary student like you already made too many enemies!’

‘This time, Black Dragon Gang will be looking for a trouble for you....hehe....’

Lin Huayang perverted smile appeared on his lips.

‘When the time comes, I must tell young master Lan I want to personally destroy your lifeblood!’

‘Then, in front of you, playing with your goddess Ma Yixuan!’

‘Yes, that’s it....’

‘Hihihi....’

‘Liu Yi, just wait for this father!’

The mentioned person, Liu Yi, was standing on the fourth floor of the Tianda Cinema. With popcorn in his hand, he suddenly had a big sneeze.

“Achoo....”

“Watch out, don’t dirty the popcorn!”

Murong Die quickly complained from the side.

“Hehe....some guy must’ve been cursing Liu Yi gege!”

The nearby Wang Lele cocked her head and smiled.

“Nonsense, this was certainly because some girl was thinking about me.”

Liu Yi sniffed and then said.

His eyes couldn’t help but see the eyes of Murong Die and Wang Lele.

Today, these two girls were more beautiful than usual.

Because there’s no school on Sunday, the two girls didn’t wear their uniforms.

Murong Die’s upper body wore a long black dress. Although its fabric was unknown, it must’ve been very high quality. In any case, it looked luxurious and beautiful.

Under the skirt, there was a somewhat thick long black cotton sock that wrapped her leg all the way to the thigh root position.

It was cold this time of the year. So, wearing light clothing is definitely a no-no.

Though it was just a simple black dress, Murong Die’s body seemed doubly beautiful and touching.

The nearby Wang Lele wore a set of blue-black jeans.

Her upper body wore a short jean that stuck to her chest.

There was a white shirt underneath that, which held her two full breasts. This vivid appearance is mouth watering.

This girl’s chest is large, with a very thin waist. This is truly an exaggerated proportion, a devil-like body, with unknown numbers of girls who envy her to death.

These two beautiful women, each has their own style, which attracted most of the men’s eyes in this cinema.

Liu Yi, who was standing next to the two girls, suddenly felt a lot of

pressure.

There were so many jealous eyes that tried to poke holes in his body.

“Cut, how could there be a girl thinking about you!”

Murong Die rolled her eyes, which looked gorgeous to Liu Yi’s eyes; a joy to look at.

“Moreover, how could you wear the school uniform on the weekend!”

Then she disgustedly glanced at Liu Yi’s set of blue and white school uniform.

“Hehe....I, I don’t have any suitable clothes....”

Liu Yi awkwardly smiled.

To go out with two beauties, Liu Yi has actually picked an appropriate cloth at home.

But his clothes are all rustic, and not a single one was decent.

Liu Yi’s mom always wanted to buy clothes for Liu Yi, but he always rejected her.

Liu Yi reasoned to his mom that he will usually wear a school uniform, so, he will not have an opportunity to put on the new cloth.

Liu Yi has two fairly decent set of jeans. But after he practiced immortal cultivation, his height unexpectedly increased.

Before this, he was about 1.72 m, but now he’s 1.76 m!

Therefore, he can’t wear those jeans.

But the school uniform is loose, so he can continue to wear it.

When he tried to pick the appropriate clothes, he finally chose to wear this uniform.

‘In any case, I’m still a student....’ He reasoned.

‘It’s understandable if I wear a school uniform.’

“How about, after finish watching the movie, we take Liu Yi gege to buy two set of clothes!”

Wang Lele's eyes suddenly lit up and said.

"Good idea, it's settled then."

Murong Die nodded her head, "This lady hasn't gone shopping for quite a while."

"I'm not going...."

Liu Yi's head shook like a rattle-drum.

"What's wrong, you aren't happy to go shopping with this lady?"

Murong Die rolled her eyes.

"I....don't have money...."

Liu Yi said without any confidence.

'Sure enough, poverty inhibits one's ambition....' Liu Yi thought.

Although I had earned 1000 yuan, that was for future study and for the cost of future college.'

Liu Yi was not willing to spend his hard-earned money to give himself a new set of clothing.

"Who said we're going to use your money?!"

Murong Die laughed, "Liu Yi, can't you not be so stingy! Tianda mall is downstairs, just pick one that you like, and that's it!"

"Eh? Don't tell me there's a convulsion on the mall, making everything's free?"

Liu Yi blinked his eyes as he asked.

"Fool...."

Wang Lele could not stand idly by the side, whispered, "Fool Liu Yi gege....Tianda group is sis' Die's Family Industry...."

'Oh shit!'

Liu Yi has almost forgotten that the Murong Die before him is the Lady of the Murong family!

'I almost make two mistakes....'

“Then it’s still not!”

Liu Yi flatly rejected the offer.

“Why not?”

Murong Die looked at Liu Yi in surprise.

“I’m not a gigolo, how can I take your stuff.”

“What the...! Liu Yi! This lady told you to go, then you have to go! If you say nonsense again, this lady will kill you!”

Murong Die really wanted to kill him.

“Liu Yi gege....just go....”

Wang Lele hurriedly pulled Liu Yi’s arm. Her double breast was pressed on Liu Yi, making his heart beat fast.

This girl....really can create a tumultuous situation....

“Just consider you accompany us for a stroll....Going to school every day is so boring....I haven’t been shopping for a long time....”

Wang Lele said.

“Well, ok then....”

Liu Yi has no choice than to give in to these two stubborn girls.

“Liu Yi! Your grandpa!”

Murong Die finally couldn’t bear but to curse.

“Why because of Lele you suddenly want to go now? I ask you to go but you refused! Are you deliberately make life difficult for this lady?”

“Em....no, it’s not it....”

Liu Yi quickly shook his head.

After a while, he suddenly thought something.

‘Properly speaking, although Murong Die is the Lady of a wealthy family, she’s always been good to me. Moreover, several times she bravely stepped forward to protect myself, helping me defuse the crisis.’

For that, he is very grateful toward her....

“Murong Die, you’re actually quite good....”

Liu Yi suddenly said.

“Oh?”

Murong Die picked an eyebrow, ‘What’s this Liu Yi want to say?’

“You’re beautiful, and have many qualities....”

‘Mm, this Liu Yi is actually not blind. He’s actually very insightful.’

Murong Die suddenly thought that the Liu Yi before him was pleasing to the eyes.

“And you also got a heart, a very good heart.... You helped me on several occasions, for that, I’m truly grateful....”

“Emm....go on....”

Murong Die was enjoying this.

‘Is his nature suddenly changed today? His mouth begins to become sweet.’

‘If he continues to be like this, this lady will be very happy!’

“But....I, Liu Yi am not your pet. You can’t just expect me to do whatever you want me to do. You are good to me, and I am grateful for that. But please, don’t forget that I’m also an individual....”

“Liu Yi! Go to hell for me!”

Murong Die lifted her foot and kicked Liu Yi’s calf. Then angrily turned and walked toward the inside of the cinema.

“Ai, Liu Yi gege you big fool! Hurry up, let’s get into the theater!”

Wang Lele’s head hurt as she glanced back at Liu Yi and then pursued Murong Die.

‘Eh?’

‘What happened....’ Liu Yi asked in his heart.

‘Did I say something wrong....’

Liu Yi stood there, dumbfounded.



‘What I said just now was obviously very reasonable....’

“Hey, hey, you guys, don’t walk so fast. Wait for me....”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 77

Just as he put his feet inside the theater, Liu Yi was slightly surprised.

There was a little gap between this and what he imagined a Theater should look like.

Before the giant screen, there were not rows of single-seat, but rows of big sofas.

The sofa is very spacious, being sat by three people would be no problem.

There is a small table in front of the sofa where the guests can put their goods on.

Moreover, there not too many people in this. It's extremely quiet.

"This is the luxurious VIP room!"

Wang Lele seemed to be able to detect Liu Yi's suspicion, explained, "Only senior VIP members can watch a movie here."

"Very few people here....enough for one person per sofa."

Liu Yi put the popcorn on the table, and could not help but lamented.

"No, we can't do one person per sofa!"

After Murong Die had heard that, she was apparently surprised.

She and Wang Lele had arranged for the three people to huddled on the sofa together.

According to the love principle the that these two have looked, this arrangement can increase the intimacy between two people.

The reason for Wang Lele to squeeze them into one sofa was to make Liu Yi and Murong Die becomes a bit closer.

Otherwise, it would be senseless for the two people to seat on the other side of this wide sofa.

And for added atmosphere, Murong Die deliberately choose a 3D horror film.

‘At that time, when Liu Yi is afraid, he will cling on to me or something like that....humph, humph....’ Murong Die told herself.

‘When his hand starts to play rogue, I’ll give him a slap!’

‘It’ll definitely look cool!’

‘But my plan was seemingly undermined now....if he really hug me....then, I just let it like that for the time being....’

‘Really a cheapskate fellow!’

“Why can’t we have one person per sofa? Aren’t these many sofas empty?”

Liu Yi wanted to enjoy the feeling of watching a 3D movie while lying on a sofa.

“Liu Yi gege, we only have a ticket for one sofa!”

The nearby Wang Lele quickly said, “We have to comply with the rules! What if the place that you sit on, in the middle of the movie, come the people with that sofa ticket? Wouldn’t that affect other people’s mood in watching the movie!?”

“Oh....ok then....”

Liu Yi nodded his head.

“Alright, alright, let’s quickly sit down and watch the movie.”

Murong Die’s heart was unexpectedly somewhat excited.

“OK! OK!”

Wang Lele sat on the right side of the sofa while Liu Yi naturally sat on her side.

Murong Die loudly exclaimed.

“Hey, hey! You can’t sit there!”

“Ah? Why?”

Liu Yi raised his head and puzzledly looked at Murong Die.

Murong Die’s heart was anxious.

‘You actually want to enjoy sitting between two girls!’

‘In case you get excited, what if you hold Wang Lele instead of me!’

Although Murong Die was anxious, she can’t tell Liu Yi the reason why she would want him to move aside....

“Forget it, just stay like this then!”

She angrily sat down on the left side of Liu Yi.

The three of them got very close. The two girls different body fragrant, floated into Liu Yi’s nose, making him enjoyed very much.

He didn’t come to watch the movie in vain....

He wouldn’t treat them to eat Hot Spicy Soup in vain....

“Hehe....you’re living the life aren’t you!”

Lin Tong, who lie on Liu Yi’s head, fiddled with his hair and acidly said.

“Being surrounded by beautiful women, such the happiness of having two wives!”

“Hey....Since when I’m surrounded by beautiful women, I’m just watching a move here, okay....” Liu Yi replied Lin Tong through the spiritual environment.

He hastily said, “I haven’t been to cinema to watch a 3D movie....I’m anxious to have a good scare....”

Lin Tong was speechless, thinking.

‘This fellow actually cares about the 3D movie, ignoring the two beautiful women next to him!’

‘What kind of man is this!’

‘No wonder he couldn’t find a girlfriend!’

‘Really deserve to be alone!’

Lin Tong muttered. Suddenly the screen lit up, and the entire theater room went dark. It was peaceful and quiet.

Liu Yi was getting more excited. He put on the 3D glass and said in his heart, ‘3D movie, come to me!’

But the nearby Murong Die was slightly nervous. Being so close to Liu Yi made her heartbeat slightly accelerated.

‘But how could this guy was only looking at the screen instead of me!

‘This lady is sitting nicely on your left-hand side okay!’

‘Is this guy really a man!’

‘Is this movie looks better than this lady?’

“Liu Yi, help me get the popcorn!”

“Oh! Here it is!”

“Liu Yi, what time is this?”

“Around eleven o’clock....”

“Liu Yi, do you want to eat the popcorn?”

“No, thank you....”

Murong Die has the urge to kill.

She initially asked that so Liu Yi can feed her the popcorn!

‘Is this guy really a blockhead!’

Murong Die currently has the screen switched off, breaking off Liu Yi’s stare on the screen so that he turned his head impulsively to look at her.

She did that under her desperation, but she finally had to put her attention back to the movie.

The horror movie plot was quite appealing, and soon, Murong Die were drawn into it and actually forgot her plan to chase Liu Yi.

All three were intently watching the movie, when suddenly the movie entered its tense and scary plot.

The heroine slowly woke up from a hospital ward inside a gloomy hospital. She seemed alone there.

With bare feet she slowly get out of bed and looked at the dark corridor to look for others.

This scene was very exciting, making people’s heart were somewhat

oppressed.

Liu Yi's heart was tensed. He was a bit nervous.

But because Liu Yi has seen a ghost baby, he was somewhat better than the other.

The two beauty on each side of him were not that good.

The two arms of Wang Lele, who sat on his right side, were tightly holding Liu Yi's right arm.

That soft and plentiful chest has put pressure on Liu Yi's upper right arm, making his soul trembled and unable to concentrate on watching the movie.

'This girl Wang Lele....'

'Truly lethal....' Liu Yi said to himself.

Murong Die also moved closer against Liu Yi. Perhaps because she wanted to keep her Lady's face, she didn't hold Liu Yi's left arm. But she was certainly quite close.

Liu Yi can clearly smell the fragrance of Murong Die.

Her hair was hanging on his shoulder. Liu Yi didn't know what kind of shampoo she use, but her hair also smelled good.

Liu Yi suddenly thought, 'Alas, I should've watched a 3D movie instead of horror.'

'Under these two girls stimulation, I can't have the attention required to see a horror movie....'

At this moment, the speaker changed its tone, the heroine on the screen finally saw the thing that she shouldn't have seen.

Both girls screamed again and again, then simultaneously cling onto Liu Yi, burying their heads on to him.

Liu Yi's whole body was stiff.

He suddenly found the happiness of sitting in the middle of the two beauty....

“Sis, sis’ Die....I, I want to go to the bathroom....”

Wang Lele rubbed her legs and suddenly said weakly.

“Hold it for a moment, we’ll go after the movie is over!”

Although she has some fear, the action, and the story has fascinated Murong Die.

“But...but I can’t wait for any longer....”

The theater was dark, but Liu Yi was able to see Wang Lele’s red face.

“This girl....I told you not to drink so much of coke before the movie, but you won’t listen!”

Murong Die gave her a stern look, “Then quickly go!”

“I, I don’t dare to go alone....”

Wang Lele rubbed her legs and said with a sad face.

“Dead girl....let Liu Yi accompany you!”

Murong Die excitedly watched, the heroine seemed to find something.

“Liu Yi gege....”

Wang Lele turned her piteous look at Liu Yi.

Liu Yi was speechless.

He’s being asked to accompany watching a movie, to accompany window-shop, and now to accompany the girl to go to the bathroom....

“This is no different than being an escort....’ He lamented.

“Liu Yi gege....I, I beg you....I can’t hold it anymore....”

Wang Lele strenuously talk

“Alright, alright, let’s go, let’s go!”

Liu Yi thought in his heart, ‘If she really pees in her pants, that would make for a real joke.’

Wang Lele, hearing that someone was willing to accompany her, immediately felt at ease.

She quickly stood up, holding her bladder, and marched down rapidly toward the toilet outside of the theater.

Liu Yi followed behind her.

The two people went outside of the theater. The outside corridor was relatively dark.

Wang Lele hurriedly pulled Liu Yi's arm. It seemed like the movie still has an effect on her.

"Where's the toilet?"

Liu Yi, looking at the timid Wang Lele, couldn't help but want to laugh.

"It should be at the end of the corridor...."

Wang Lele said.

After Liu Yi had taken the girl to the bathroom, he was surprised to discover that the toilet interior was also magnificent. This seemed to be the legendary VIP bathroom.

'The thing that the wealthy people enjoyed is really different....' He lamented.

Liu Yi can't help but sigh.

"Go, I'll wait for you at the door."

"You, you come in with me..."

After looking at the empty bathroom, Wang Lele halted.

"What?"

Liu Yi was a bit silly, thinking.

'What kind of 'accompany' is this!'

"Don't worry, it's okay....in any case, there's nobody in this ladies bathroom....you come in...."

Wang Lele was too afraid, thinking that she can only put this great inconvenience to her Liu Yi gege.

"This, this...."



“Liu Yi gege....I, I beg you....I, I can't wait any longer ....you accompany me okay....after that I'll do anything that you like....chest push, I'll give you the 'chest push' ....”

Wang Lele can't hold her bladder anymore.

Liu Yi's nose almost sprayed blood.

“Alright, alright, I'll go with you....”

If this goes on, Liu Yi didn't know what kind of words would come out of Wang Lele, so he had to agree.

“Thank You Liu Yi gege....”

Wang Lele finally relieved. The two of them then went into the bathroom. Liu Yi was careful of his surrounding, for fear of being seen.

Wang Lele ran into a single toilet room. This girl was so anxious that she even forgot to lock the door.

Soon, Liu Yi heard the 'pitter patter' of pee being drained, making him couldn't bear not to start daydreaming.

“Rogue!”

Lin Tong, having guessed what's inside Liu Yi's head, cannot help but loudly scolded.

Liu Yi felt wronged.

“I'm behaving like Lei Feng and also have the courage to sacrifice myself....since when I'm a rogue!”

But at this time, an elderly woman hurriedly came into the bathroom. When she looked up and saw Liu Yi, who stood in front of a sink, she suddenly covered her chest and screamed.

“Rogue!”

After shouting this, the elderly lady turned her head and ran away.

The frown on Liu Yi's face increased several folds.

‘Shit, this has to be a mistake....’

‘Am I right being in here?’

But Lin Tong already laughed out loud.

“Liu Yi gege....I, I’m okay now....”

At this time, Wang Lele has put her pants on again and came out from the single room red faced.

“Thank you Liu Yi gege....I, I’ll give you the chest push....”

With that, she stared at Liu Yi as she walked toward him, who was currently frightened and back away two steps until his hands were leaning against the sink.

“Lele! Aren’t, aren’t you just joking with me! You want to chest push me in here!?”

‘Fuck me!’

‘Heavy taste, ah...!’

Wang Lele continued to walk to him.... ‘Damn chest push....do you really want to do it here?’

Liu Yi looked at Wang Lele’s plentiful chest and couldn’t help but mercilessly swallowed his saliva.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 78

No one can deny that Wang Lele's chest is indeed huge, and full. Her small shirt can't fully cover it, making part of her chest exposed; Very beautiful to look at.

'If such breast were to push on to me....the joy would be the same as if I'm in heaven!'

'But that's just a thought.'

'Even if I want to do the chest push....'

'I can't do it in such a lousy place like this!'

"No, you can't...."

So, Liu Yi refused and simply said, "We can't do it here...."

"It doesn't matter....there's no one here."

Wang Lele said and threw herself on Liu Yi's body. Her pair of hands were suddenly on Liu Yi's chest.

"I want to repay Liu Yi gege...."

With that, Wang Lele's hand started to rub Liu Yi's chest.

'Give me a fuck!'

Liu Yi was a bit dumbfounded.

'Could it be....'

"This the legendary "chest push?""

'His mother! I'm being cheated....'

When Liu Yi was depressed, there was a loud cry coming from the bathroom door.

"Aa! Rogue!"

There's a scream from a girl again.

Liu Yi and Wang Lele two people quickly turned their heads to see a figure ran away.

“We, we should get back....”

Liu Yi was disappointed and somewhat happily said.

“Alright then....Next time we have the chance, I’ll give Liu Yi gege a chest push again! Let’s get back now, otherwise, sis’ Die will get impatient.

Wang Lele nodded her head and then turned and led Liu Yi walked toward the direction of the theater.

Liu Yi’s heart gently relieved.

‘I finally don’t have to suffer in the girl’s toilet room....’

‘Today is really the day full of frustration to me....’ Liu Yi lamented.

The two people back to the theater room just when the movie was on a lull period.

Murong Die cast a slightly bitter vision, then asked.

“The two of you, what took you so long?”

“I’ve given Liu Yi gege a chest push a moment ago!”

Wang Lele said cheerfully.

“What?”

Murong Die was immediately shocked. She turned around to pull Liu Yi by the collar and angrily asked.

“What did you do to my Lele!?”

“I swear, I really didn’t do anything!”

Liu Yi wanted to cry but have no tears.

‘What if I do, I would still be scolded by Murong Die....’

‘His mother! This is truly an injustice!’

“But Liu Yi gege is too thin. His chest is too hard. I can’t feel a thing.”

A few follow-up words from Wang Lele made Murong Die a bit embarrassed.

It suddenly occurred to her that the concept of a chest push of this big chest no brain girl Wang Lele is somewhat different.

“In short, I won’t allow you to bully my Lele! If there’s anything, just come to this lady!”

With that, Murong Die even stuck out her chest.

Liu Yi suddenly saw the slightly elevated chest of Murong Die and compared in his heart.

‘Alas...absolutely can’t be compared to Wang Lele!’

‘The different is like the heaven and the earth!’

‘Like the peak of a mountain and an airport.’

As if to feel Liu Yi’s wretched eyes, Murong Die was suddenly upset.

“What are you looking at! Do you think this lady’s chest is small?”

“Murong Die, don’t ever think that!”

Liu Yi was suddenly surprised and said, “You’re thinking is too big and too wrong!”

“Oh?”

Murong Die was taken aback, thinking, ‘Is Liu Yi going to praise my chest?’

“Inadequate breast is actually quite lovely, really!”

“Liu Yi, go to hell for me, go to hell!”

Murong Die really wished she could happily bite Liu Yi to death, thinking.

‘Why is this guy so hateful!’

‘The heaven ought to kill him by a lightning strike!’

‘No, don’t strike him with a lightning strike, that’s too convenient for him!’

‘Let this lady torment his feelings and then chopped him to death!’

‘Humph humph!’

‘Yes, that’s it!’

The later part of this horror movie has arrived, and it turned out it’s quite boring, making the three people lost their fervor.

Finally, the film ended. Wang Lele stood up and gave a big stretch and said.

“Ai....the ending is so boring. Look at the other people; they’re all sleepy!”

When Wang Lele yawn, her chest almost burst out of her shirt, making Liu Yi, who looked at her, can’t take back his gaze.

“Someone’s chest looks much better than the movie, right?”

The nearby Murong Die can’t help but sourly said.

“Ahem....it’s nothing....let’s go to eat....”

Liu Yi quickly changed the subject, “Hot spicy soup, my treat. Don’t tell me I’m a cheapskate; you can eat as much Hot spicy soup as you like!”

Murong Die and Wang Lele heavily frowned. They both thought.

‘No matter how many hot spicy soup one can eat, it’s still going to be cheap....’

‘Liu Yi is really a death stingy!’

However, after thinking that Liu Yi’s family is ordinary, Murong Die and them actually didn’t care for Liu Yi to be such a cheapskate.

If Liu Yi were to lavishly spend his family’s money, then Murong Die and them would have to change their view on him.

“We might as well go window shopping!”

Wang Lele exclaimed, “I’m really interested in choosing clothes for Liu Yi gege!”

“Your vision is too special!”

Murong Die quickly said, “It would be better if this Lady is the one who choose the clothes!”

“Ai....sis’ Die....this is a rare occasion....”

Wang Lele rubbed her fingers and said, “I’m good at dressing up my doll....this time, I want to dress a real people....”

“This lady’s dressing up skill is better!”

“Give me a chance....sis’ Die....”

“How about this, we each choose a set of clothes one at a time?”

“Huh? This is also good!”

“It’s settled then!”

“Agreed!”

The two girls finalize things next to the silly looking Liu Yi.

‘Fuck, want to buy me clothes; why you don’t ask for my opinion?’

‘Did I just become a life-size doll?’

“Let’s go! Fools!”

Murong Die said and started to walk toward the mall.

By this time, outside the mall.

“Young master Lan....when shall the show begin?”

At a teahouse across the shopping mall, the arrogant Lin Huayang was nervously sitting at a table and continued to look at the street outside through the window.

“Young master Lin is somewhat impatient.”

Lan He, who was sitting on the other side of the table, a slight smile hung on his lips, was playing with a purple teacup and said.

“Might as well try this authentic Dahongpao. This stuff may be more expensive than gold. This Dahongpao’s production is low. In the past Premier Zhou delivered Nixon half catty (0.3 kg or 0.6 pounds) of Dahongpao, and jokingly called, this is China’s ‘half of the country’.”

Lan He slowly stated the history of this ‘Dahongpao’ tea.

Originally his hatred toward Liu Yi made him unable to sleep in peace. He really wished he could plaster Liu Yi’s head on the basket ring and played with it several times every day.

But since Ma Wei became the Hall leader of Black Dragon gang, his heart settled down.

Since he has the backing of Black Dragon gang, how could he fret about a single Liu Yi anymore?

“Ai....I really didn’t have the mood to drink tea....”

Lin Huayang sighed and said.

“Young master Lin don’t need to be worried. Since I’ve invited you to watch this movie, then this movie will certainly be splendid.”

Lan He said with a smile, “You still won’t believe of me, Lan He?”

Lan He thought that today he was very charming. He imagined himself to be like a strategic planner in an army tent.

‘Mm, in the past, wasn’t Zhuge Liang also being doubted just like this!’

‘The past has Zhuge Liang, but now there’s me, Lan He!’

“But....young master Lan, is Black Dragon gang really reliable?”

Lin Huayang could not bear but disturbingly asked one question.

“I made Yuan Shaojun to assemble a hundred students....but they still can’t put Liu Yi down....”

“Cut, your one hundred students are nothing more than an ordinary student. They’re nothing!”

Lan He couldn’t help but ridicule, “What can they do other than scaring people much less than themselves? How can they compare to the real underworld gang?”

“You’re right....”

Lin Huayang nodded his head, “But to deal with Liu Yi on the busy street....wouldn’t that immediately attract police attention?”

“Relax, I already made some good connection with the police.”

Lan He smiled, “Young master Lin, Young master Lin, you’re still the young master of the Lin Family. Do you think that Black Dragon gang can become this big without the connection to the police? They’ve already arranged for this matter. You and I will just have to sit here watching the movie unfold with ease.”

“It turned out to be so. Then my heart is at ease!”

Lin Huayang said with a smile. His heart was very excited.



Black Dragon gang is indeed the largest gang in Northern Dragon City. If they come forward, an ordinary student like Liu Yi should be no problem.

“Did you see that?”

Lan He said and pointed to the downstairs, “There’s nobody on the street anymore isn’t it?”

Lin Huayang glanced out of the window, and sure enough, this previously overcrowded street was now empty except for a few pedestrian.

There’s only a few stall still opened down on the street. Some rascally men drank and ate there.

“Black Dragon gang have begun their movement. They already cleared the street. We just have to wait until Liu Yi came out of the theater, that’s when he die.”

The street was blocked. This time, Lan He pull no punches in dealing with Liu Yi.

Even if the situation gets big, the Black Dragon gang will help him find a scapegoat.

Of course, all the family expense was naturally from Lan He.

‘In this Northern Dragon City, nobody can annoy me, Lan He!’ He thought.

He firmly held the teacup. His eyes started to fill with excitement.

‘Murong Die, is mine!’

On the opposite Mall, Liu Yi apparently unaware of the immediate danger.

At this point, his head was hurt, big time!

These two girls have been shopping for a long time, but actually didn’t buy any clothes for him. Instead, they happily picked various kind of clothes for him to try.

Therefore, for who knew how long, Liu Yi has been running back and forth to the changing room!

“Wow! These jeans are so good!”

Wang Lele suddenly took a fancy to a set of jeans behind the counter.

These two set of cool jeans were placed on the body of two dummy mannequins.

One is black, and the other one is blue.

The black is a male outfit, the blue is a female one, they were clearly a pair.

After Wang Lele had sawed these clothes, her eyes were locked on to them.

“Liu Yi gege, let’s try these outfit!”

“How many times do I have to try clothes?”

Liu Yi was helpless.

He has tried so many clothes....

‘I’m not a coat hanger. What’s so good about trying so many clothes without buying anything.’ He sighed.

“Liu Yi gege....just try this one please....”

Wang Lele pulled Liu Yi’s arm and pleaded.

The nearby Murong Die can’t help but be upset.

“I also want to try. If we want to buy, we must buy a pair.”

“Then let’s try it....”

Liu Yi was unable to dissuade those two girls and had to follow them into the store.

“Hello, miss Murong!”

The store guide was actually well-trained. Moreover, she also recognize Murong Die and immediately welcomed them respectfully.

“This clothes....two set of male and female....find the one that matches our stature and bring them to us!”

Murong Die immediately waved her hand and said.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 79

Liu Yi took that set of clothing which made from material that felt the same as ordinary jeans and walked into the changing room Wang Lele and Murong Die went to the changing room next to him.

This changing room's partition seemed very thin. When Liu Yi took off his clothes, he can hear the rustling sound of other people changing clothes near him.

The sound of two girls, talking at each other, seep into Liu Yi's ears.

"Sis' Die, why do you want to buy these jeans?! Don't you dislike jeans?"

"I haven't tried it yet. I'm still undecided!"

Murong Die's haughty voice also passed through the changing room partition, "Hump, besides, can't this lady suddenly took a fancy to this jeans?"

"Hehehe, of course you can....at that time, when the three of us wore this matching set of couple's jeans, wouldn't other people will be blown away?"

"Blown away or not, that was still uncertain. But I think many people will certainly want to hack Liu Yi to death!"

Murong Die suddenly couldn't help but laugh, "If we go out and people really going to cut Liu Yi, you have to protect your Liu Yi gege!"

"Liu Yi gege is so fierce. He doesn't need me to protect him!"

Wang Lele said with a smile, "I think, it's more likely than not Liu Yi gege will protect us!"

"As a modern woman, how could you have such thought!"

Murong Die quickly educated Wang Lele, "We can't wait to be protected by a man! We are independent, strong, and can make men tremble to curl up under our feet!"

"Hehe....I don't want to be a Queen like that....I want to be an innocent little girl!"

“You girl, since when you’re an innocent little girl!”

Murong Die shouted, “You look at your big breasts! You can use this as a hammer to batter a person to death!”

“Ai....sis’ Die is too hateful, you always make fun of my big breast....”

Wang Lele appeared to have some resentment, and said, “I don’t want to have such a big chest....but who knew it grew into this....But, sis’ Die, tell me, if Liu Yi gege accidentally fall into my arms, will my chest suffocate him....?”

“Pfft....you girl....your head is full of messy thoughts!”

“I am just curious....”

“I forbid you to be curious....see how I’m going to punish you!”

“Ai....sis’ Die is a lecher....a, don’t pull my bra....huhu, don’t pinch my breast....m....you force me to do this, watch me!”

“A, it’s okay if you retaliate by pulling my bra, but you unexpectedly grab my ass!”

“Hehe, sis’ Die’s ass is nice; it curled upward! Liu Yi gege will surely love it!”

“You, this girl....let’s see who’s afraid of who!”

Listening to the two girls sound from across the partition, Liu Yi almost had a nosebleed.

Lin Tong seemed to be fed up with Liu Yi’s affair and has since entered the spiritual environment. For her, it’s better like this, out of sight out of mind.

Liu Yi felt that blood has flowed into his lower part. He immediately thought.

‘Amitabha....amitabha....’

‘Grandpa said.....Hear no evil, see no evil....’

‘Hey, grandpa never said these words....’

‘Grandpa seemed to say....’Flower that is ready to be picked, must be picked!’

‘Ah, oh heaven!’

‘How could grandpa said such things!’

‘Grandpa....saves your grandson....’

When Liu Yi was battling with his impulses, he suddenly found that on the wall hook position, there’s a small hole.

This little hole should not be discovered by other people, but Liu Yi, as a cultivator, has an amazing eyesight. Therefore, he can found this small hole.

At that moment, this small hole seemed to have an infinite allure, deeply attracted Liu Yi.

‘Should I see or not....’ He asked himself.

‘No...this is so wicked....’

‘Those two girls are changing clothes on the other side, how can I just casually look at them....’

‘But....this is a great opportunity....’

‘If this opportunity is gone....I probably wouldn’t have it again....’

‘So what....’

‘I just have to take a look....’

‘Only one look....’

‘I promise I wouldn’t look too many times....’

‘It shouldn’t be considered a big evil if I only take one look....’

‘That’s right, just one look....really just one look....’

Liu Yi took two deep breaths, and with some shiver, slowly moved toward that small hole.

Closer....just a bit closer.....

Liu Yi finally arrived before the small hole. He opened his sight and, through the little hole that was as big as a grain of rice, looked at the scenery on the other side.

The first thing that he saw seemed to be the Wang Lele’s back.

She seemed to be really close, blocking his whole line of sight....

‘Moved aside a bit....’ Liu Yi told her in his heart.

‘Or turn around!’

Liu Yi was somewhat anxious.

“I catch you, dead girl! Watch how this lady drops her dragon hand to tame your breast!”

At this time, Murong Die suddenly called out, then Wang Lele exclaimed.

“Ai!”

Liu Yi suddenly felt a ‘bang,’ Wang Lele seemed to lean against the partition.

“Bang!”

“Snap!”

That partition is really a bit too fragile....

Under the sudden pressure from the two girls, it instantly fell down.

Liu Yi quickly stepped aside to get out of the collapsed partition.

And then, he was shocked.

The opposite Wang Lele and Murong were just dumbfoundedly stood there.

The two girls wore nothing but small panties.

Wang Lele wore a cute little pink panties while Murong Die wore a black lace panties....

They were also a bit transparent....

Liu Yi can vaguely see traces of something black....

Moreover, they were topless.

Wang Lele, fortunately, was covering both of her breasts. But she can’t fully block her two huge meatballs. Some part of it was clearly exposed to Liu Yi.

But Murong Die’s hands were directed toward the front. On top of her protruding white milk bosom, there was a pair of bright red, making Liu Yi

blankly looked at them.

“Aa! Rogue!”

Murong Die suddenly screamed, picked up the hanger by the side, and threw it at Liu Yi’s face.

Although it didn’t hurt, Liu Yi still felt very dizzy, and then collapsed to the ground.

‘Could it be....this is the fabled euthanasia....’

‘Grandpa....’

‘This must be the blessing from your soul in heaven, right....’

Liu Yi can’t help but think.

He then heard Wang Lele’s scream.

“Sis’ Die, this is serious, you overdo it! Liu Yi gege’s nose was bleed because of you! There are a lot of it!”

“He deserves it! Even if he die, he still deserves it!”

“But....but, Liu Yi gege could bleed to death....”

“That’s the best. It will purify the world! Quickly take this chance to put my clothes back!”

“Oh, right....”

Wang Lele nodded her head, and then said, “In any case, Liu Yi gege has a powerful life, and should not be so easy to die....”

Liu Yi’s ears then heard a rustling sound. He wanted to raise his head to take a look again....

But he was afraid of being beaten....

‘If I have X-ray vision or something, that would be nice....’ He thought.

‘Ai, why would I receive the eye of favorable impression instead of X-ray....’

‘Too bad...too bad....’

Liu Yi can’t help but sigh.

At this moment, he heard the sound of the door opening.

The two girls should've finished changing clothes and already went outside.

Liu Yi crawled up and directly folded his uniforms into a blue-white sumeru ring, then set it on his left hand.

This uniform was also made into a sumeru ring by Lin Tong, so Liu Yi can easily change his outfit.

Liu Yi was now naked, except for an underwear.

He quickly put the small undershirt set in his upper body.

Afterward, Liu Yi picked up the jeans jacket. That shopping attendant's vision was really good to be able to choose the right size set for Liu Yi.

After Liu Yi put on the somewhat thick and heavy jacket, he picked up the pants.

At that time, the sound of the next room's sliding door came to his ears.

A rough middle-aged uncle, with face full of bristle, walked in carrying a coat.

He watched in amazement at Liu Yi as he put on his pants, blinked a few times, and then said with a thick voice.

"Oh, it's finished....the integrity of the young generation is lost....I see things that I shouldn't suppose to see...."

'Shit!' Liu Yi cursed in his heart.

'What something that's not supposed to see!'

Liu Yi was depressed.

'So what if you're an old man!'

"Young man...."

That uncle said ruefully, "You have to take the responsibility for me...."

'Fuck your sister!'

'Who wants to be responsible for you!'

Liu Yi hastily raised his pant, tied the belt, and awkwardly ran out of the



changing room.

‘His mother, I would not come to such a dreadful place like that anymore....’

Liu Yi rushed to the outside and saw the two young beauty who wore the matching outfit like him and immediately surprised.

Although the outfit didn’t look that good before wearing it, after they put it on, it turned out to be very beautiful.

Wang Lele chose the small version of the jacket that stop at her waist. Her figure was perfectly highlighted by it.

Murong Die added a small piece of red scarf. She also stepped on a small black leather boot, which showed her heroic spirit!

They really looked different....Although the clothes have the same model, when it was put on a different people, the resultant effect is starkly different....

Liu Yi didn’t know how good he look in this outfit, but he heard Wang Lele suddenly exclaimed.

“Hey, Liu Yi gege, this outfit is perfect for you! So handsome!”

“Humph, I think not....it’s just a good clothes....”

Murong Die raised her small chin and snorted.

But her eyes flowed with a bright light, betraying her words.

As the saying goes, men rely on the cloth, while horse relies on the saddle. After Liu Yi put on this outfit, his aura seemed more handsome.

Compared with the school-uniformed Liu Yi, the difference in the handsomeness level is really big.

‘But this is good, he’s more worthy to be with this lady, humph!’

Murong Die thought in her mind.

At this time, the three people’s appearances were very eye-catching.

The male customer, coming and going; Each one of them looked at Liu Yi with envy look, making Liu Yi scared.

‘His mother....’ He thought.

‘They all look like they want to eat me....’

“The shopping was a success! Let’s go to dinner!”

Liu Yi just wanted to get out of this place....

He didn’t know if those men would really kill him.

“Great!”

Wang Lele was happy, “I’m kinda hungry now....this time we eat will have to depend on Liu Yi gege right!”

“As you wish....eat until you’re full, don’t hold back!”

“.....”

The nearby Murong Die was speechless.

The three people then turned to go downstairs. Wang Lele’s face suddenly looked pained and said.

“Em....sis’ Die....Liu Yi gege....you two wait for me here....I need to go to the toilet....”

“I told you not to drink too much coke! Tonight you could wet your bed you know!”

Murong Die couldn’t help but quip

“Huhu....Next time I wouldn’t drink again....you guys wait for me at the door....I’ll be right back....”

“You didn’t ask to be accompanied?”

Liu Yi said with a smile.

“Ai....no need....I’m not afraid anymore....I’ll be okay this time....I’ll be right back, you go out first.”

“Mm!”

Liu Yi and Murong Die nodded their head and then walked out of the front door of this Mall.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 80

When Liu Yi and Murong Die stepped out of the door, they immediately came across a strange situation.

Liu Yi saw a man carrying a gunnysack, rushed to him to cover his head with it.

In a flash, the entire world slightly slowed down.

Liu Yi's blood flow started to accelerate.

If he was still the usual Liu Yi from the past, he would definitely be covered by that gunnysack.

But the current Liu Yi was different. After becoming an immortal cultivation, his feelings for the movement around him has become much more sensitive.

The movement of that gunnysack was infinitely slowed down in his eyes. Liu Yi pulled Murong Die and backed away two steps.

At the same time, he subconsciously lifted his foot and directly kicked that man with gunnysack.

“Bang!”

Immediately, that 1.7 m man was kicked out and cried out pitifully. He flew upside down two meter away and fell to the ground.

“What’s going on....”

Murong Die for a time didn't react and then suddenly asked in surprise.

At this time, several men appeared behind them, blocking them from entering the mall.

The originally empty street were now filled with sounds of footsteps, coming right after the other toward them.

Soon, Liu Yi and Murong Die was surprised to find that the street was filled with all sort of punks.

But each of these punks were carrying these item:

Seven-hole knife and watermelon knife.

The sharp edges of those knives were gleaming from the scorching sunlight.

“Bad, this is really bad....”

Murong Die, all of a sudden, looked pale. She tightly held Liu Yi’s hand, making him aware of her palm’s temperature.

Looked like this girl seemed very tense. Liu Yi surmised

“They possibly ....want to kidnap me....”

These few words from Murong Die suddenly made Liu Yi startled.

“Ah?”

“Since I was still a child....I don’t know how many times I experienced this kind of kidnapping....”

Murong Die nervously said, “Therefore, whenever I go out, Uncle Wang will always be my side....But today I secretly sneak out from my home....without telling Uncle Wang....”

After that, Murong Die looked at the people all around her, as well as the knives in their hands, and suddenly fell into a despair.

Although she is the young Lady of a wealthy family, she has seen these kinds of weapon.

But in the past, Uncle Wang was always beside her. Her uncle Wang’s skill was excellent. Whenever he pulled the gun at a critical moment like this, the problem was basically solved.

But today, there was only Liu Yi, who stood beside her.

This made Murong Die lacked her usual self-confidence.

“Relax....I will take you out of this....”

Feeling the tension from Murong Die, he immediately raised the desire to protect, thinking.

‘Grandpa said, man can only stand before the woman’s body.’

“Chop him!”

From those group of punk, someone suddenly burst a roar.

Then, these punks, carrying their knives, growled and came rushing toward Liu Yi.

Murong Die, seeing this parade, suddenly screamed.

But Liu Yi was nimble. He bent over his body and put Murong Die on his left shoulder.

Murong Die immediately surprised, looking at how Liu Yi carry her. His left hand was holding her upper legs while he bolted together with her on the street.

Liu Yi didn't dare to put Murong Die into the 'Princess Hug' position because he can't control his amorous ripple hand on his right hand.

Lin Tong had said to him that, for him to be able to control his amorous ripple hand, he must, at least, open his third star jade.

So, he can only carry Murong Die on his shoulder like that. Although Murong Die was a bit uncomfortable, he has no other way.

"Bastard, why are you carrying me! Quickly put me down!"

Murong Die screamed again and again.

"Big miss, bear with me. I'll get you out of here!"

Although he was carrying a girl, after becoming an immortal cultivator, his physical strength increased a lot. So, he didn't feel any more cumbersome carrying her.

Both of his legs powerfully strode, running down the street.

But the whole street was full of punks, coming at them from all directions.

Soon, a punk ran to the front of Liu Yi. The knife in his hand, fell on Liu Yi's shoulder.

"Ah! Watch out!"

Lin Tong felt the outside movement, flew out, lie on Liu Yi's right shoulder just in time to see this scene and immediately warned.

"Go away!"

Liu Yi launched his spirit fox steps, so that he suddenly moved right in front of that chopper's chest, slamming his right shoulder into his chest.

That moment, Liu Yi thought in his mind.

'Fortunately he is a man.'

'If that was the big breasted Wang Lele....this time, bumping with such a huge chest...hmm...!'

Although he was indulging in flight of fancy, his movement didn't slow down.

Although these few days he didn't find any appropriate mission, Liu Yi still trained his body technique in the spiritual environment.

Immediately after he slammed his right shoulder on that man's chest, that small fry bellowed. His entire body was ran down by Liu Yi and flew far out, and then fell to the ground, unable to get up again.

But because of this, Liu Yi was delayed for a moment. Thus, more punks carrying knives rushed over to him.

"Use your great brilliant sun palm and swat these guys!"

Lin Tong grabbed Liu Yi's clothing and kept shouting.

But Liu Yi didn't budge.

Great brilliant sun palm was too powerful. No ordinary people can withstand it.

Right now his main intent is to break out the encirclement to bring Murong Die away.

Liu Yi, while carrying Murong Die, stretched his right hand and grabbed the adjacent fence railing.

This railing was welded at the top, for about two fingers thick.

He exerted his two forces into his right palm.

"Clank!" That tightly welded iron bar was actually able to be pulled down by Liu Yi.

A group of punks was surprised, 'Fuck me! What kind of strength is this!?'

They thought.

‘This is popeye’s strength!’

But because these many people relied on their knives, they still rushed to take his life.

Because their Hall Leader has spoken that, today, they must discard this kid!

“Go to hell!”

“Fucking cut him!”

Each of these group of punks looked vicious and murderous.

Liu Yi was slightly scared, but this scare was soon gone because of Murong Die’s presence.

All men are animals. In front of the female of their species, there will certainly be a slight difference, such as the excessive secretion of hormones.

Liu Yi was also like that.

“Liu Yi....if you can’t hold them just put me down....”

Murong Die suddenly said.

“They just want to kidnap me anyway....not to take my life....”

“Stop talking nonsense. As long as I’m here, I won’t let anything happen to you.”

Liu Yi said. With one hand holding Murong Die, the other hand grabbing an iron bar, Liu Yi rushed past that group of punk.

“Clang!”

Two knives simultaneously fell on Liu Yi’s iron bar from the top, making his right arm slightly sank.

But Liu Yi simultaneously erupted the strength into his right arm and with this fierce wave, shook back the two punks in front of him several steps back while the knives in their hands went flying.

While he continued to dash forward, he waved his stick twice to the two thugs in front of him, swatting them to the ground.

But more punks rushed to him.

Liu Yi shifted left and right through the crowd, constantly knocking those punks around him.

But these thugs were really too many, making his strength gradually drained.

Liu Yi began to feel tired. The speed of him wielding the iron bar was significantly slowed down.

He didn't know how many of those punks that has been put down by him, but there were still many people all around him, encircling him. Each carrying the knives while unceasingly came at him.

"Bam!"

Liu Yi's left foot kicked up, kicking a punk, who ran over to him, to the side.

At this time, Murong Die loudly exclaimed, "Liu Yi! Behind you!"

Liu Yi has felt the chilly wind behind him. Fearing for the safety of Murong Die, he hastened to move sideways, covering Murong Die with right side block.

"Puff!"

The knife meet with the flesh.

Liu Yi's right shoulder was knifed with a Watermelon knife. Suddenly, blood squirted out.

"Hahaha! He was cut down by me! He was chopped by me!"

That punk shouted a pleasant surprised.

The hall leader has spoken, if any of them can chop this guy, they will be rewarded with ten thousand yuan!

Thus, this punk succeed in obtaining that 10000!

He want to cut several more times!

That punk's eyes were red. He pulled out that watermelon knife.

The blood spurted out once more, making Liu Yi immediately felt slightly dizzy.



Murong Die, seeing the splashing of the blood on Liu Yi's right shoulder, suddenly screamed.

"Liu Yi, your, your blood...."

"I, I'm okay...."

Liu Yi said weakly.

But before he finished comforting her, Murong Die has fainted.

The white stream of qi continued to heal Liu Yi's right shoulder.

But Liu Yi has lost too much blood, his vision began to turned black, and gradually lose his sight on that thug's knife.

"Liu Yi, wake up! Liu Yi!"

Lin Tong pulled Liu Yi's ear and shouted.

But at this time, Liu Yi's consciousness has become increasingly blurred. He couldn't hear Lin Tong's shout.

"Hahaha! This time, let see how you're going to hit back!"

Seeing Liu Yi has staggered, the punk who cut him was very happy and shouted.

But at this time, another group of punk has arrived. They cried.

"Let me knife him once!"

"Stop fucking pushing! Each man can have one knife!"

At this point, the Liu Yi before them is not a human, but a prize.

'Could it be....this will be my end....'

Liu Yi could not help but think a line from a TV show.

'Although I'm an immortal cultivator....'

'But in the end, I finally die in the hands of a group of thugs....'

'Looks like....this is the tragic end of my short life....'

Liu Yi, at that moment, has the feeling of wanting to cry.

'Grandpa....it seems....I'm not fit to be a real man....'

‘I probably....can’t protect this girl....’

“Hahaha! Liu Yi is game over!”

Lin Huayang, who sat before the window, saw this scene using a telescope, and could not help but laugh.

“Black Dragon Gang will have to call it a day.”

Lan He looked at the time, “The police is probably on their way.”

“Haha, our big revenge have been avenged! This is the fate for anyone who provoke me, young master Lin! And also young master Lan! Later, anyone who annoyed us will end up just like this!”

Lin Huayang cheerfully said.

“That’s for sure....”

Lan He was feeling proud, the feeling of being a ‘strategist’ is simply too good.

But at the time they were ready to celebrate, there was a shout from the outside.

“Watch out! He stand up again!”

“What are you afraid of? Chop him!”

The punk that previously cut Liu Yi didn’t notice the strange change in Liu Yi. The knife in his has fallen toward Liu Yi’s right arm to cut it.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 81

“Want me to wipe your ass?”

When Liu Yi opened his eyes again, there were several traces of gold thread that flashed through his eyes.

This is his incomplete awakening. He can't change into his true form yet.

But this was enough to deal with these small fries.

Liu Yi's right shoulder wound was slowly healing, but the blood still flowed out.

If this continued, sooner or later his physical energy would die out.

On his right shoulder, an invisible layer of frost suddenly climbed out and freeze the wound, stopping the blood flow.

Meanwhile, Liu Yi quickly lifted up his right palm. This palm was condensed with icy-frost, welcoming that falling knife.

“Pa!”

That small fry thought that Liu Yi has become silly and wanted to welcome the knife empty handed.

The knife was falling faster, ready to slice Liu Yi's hand.

But then he heard a “clank” sound, as if the knife met with a sheet of iron, making him startled.

His knife has met with Liu Yi's hand, but unexpectedly the knife can't chop the hand.

But Liu Yi has condensed more icy-frost on his right hand, freezing the knife with his icy qi.

“Clank!”

Liu Yi exerted his strength on his right hand, making that knife immediately broken into several pieces.

“Fuck....are you kidding me....”

That small fry instantly went silly.

“This annoying power....I don’t like to use it....”

After displaying the power of this icy-qi, Liu Yi’s complexion became slightly ugly.

“Better stop using it....”

Then, he suddenly rushed to the front of that punk’s body and put his palm on that punk’s chest.

“Desolate Flame....”

“Bam!”

A red light that can’t be seen by ordinary people, was seen by Liu Yi’s black and white vision. It instantly spread out and directly affected all the people within five meter radius from his palm.

“Poof!”

A group of punk have all been affected, vomited blood, and fell to the ground.

“What the hell is this!”

“How could they dropped to the ground and vomited blood!”

The other punks were shocked, wondering about the situation.

But Liu Yi sneered as he went forward, continuously plunging into the crowd, swatting those thugs with his palm.

This display of great brilliant sun palm by Liu Yi’s other personality seemed to have a difference in strength than the naive Liu Yi.

The resulting area effect of this palm made these thugs started to shriek wildly howled.

Previously they were all chasing Liu Yi, but now it’s Liu Yi who pursued them.

Liu Yi at this time was similar to a fierce tiger that pounced into a flock of sheep. Those punks were running away crying for their father and mother.

“What, what is happening there....”

Seeing this scene, Lin Huayang's whole body froze.

"What are Black Dragon gang doing there!"

Lan He climbed to look on the window and was also surprised, "How could they run away from Liu Yi! Are they suddenly turn lazy!"

Just then, his phone rang.

When he picked up to look at the caller, it was Ma Wei.

"Young Master Lan!"

As soon as he answered the phone, Ma Wei's loud shout immediately came through.

"It's brother Ma, you...."

Without waiting for Lan He to finish his speak, the opposite Ma Wei cried.

"Young master Lan, what is wrong with that student from your school! He's fucking too violent!"

"Ah?"

Hearing Ma Wei's angry shout, Lan He was momentarily stunned.

"I bring many of my brother to deal with him, but was hit face down by him! This fellow is not an ordinary martial art practitioner, he's basically a martial arts master!"

"What? Liu Yi is a martial art master?"

Lan He didn't quite believe it

'Previously, Liu Yi, in the class, was obviously a waste wood....' He thought.

'How could he suddenly become a martial arts master?'

'This is too fantastic!'

'More fantastic than Thailand's fantasy stories!'

"The police are coming! Young master Lan, we must go!"

"What? Then what about our agreement?"

"We'll talk after we back in our base! I'll come looking for you!"

With that, Ma Wei hung up the phone.

“Fuck!”

Lan He angrily put the phone on the table, he was extremely furious.

‘A single Liu Yi!’ He thought.

‘Wasn’t it just a single Liu Yi!’

‘Why I can’t even handle him!’

“Bloody hell! Is that Liu Yi has met with a deity!? He actually turns the tide against the heaven’s will!”

Lan He didn’t know that he actually almost guessed correctly.

But he probably didn’t believe this matter.

“Young master Lan....is your classmate Liu Yi, previously, has always been so violent like this?”

Lin Huayang watched how, down below, Liu Yi aggressively chased a fleeing punk, and can’t help but ask.

“Why....previously, I never heard the existence of such person....”

“Violent his dick!”

Lan He couldn’t help but cursed, “Fuck it, before this, he was a shit! Who knows how he could become like this!”

“He’s gone!”

Lin Huayang looked out at the street, and saw there were only a few remaining fleeing thugs, but Liu Yi was nowhere to be seen.

“I’ll look for him!”

Lan He picked up a pair of binoculars, rummaged around and, sure enough, Liu Yi’s figure was gone.

But the sirens in the distance were getting closer and closer, pulling Lan He’s heart so that he’s 1000, 10000 unhappy.

At this time, Liu Yi was hiding behind the huge advertisement board in a two storey building.

A moment ago, in the confusion, he carried Murong Die, launched his spirit Fox steps and leapt to hide.

Although right now, he is Liu Yi's second personality, his physical strength isn't unlimited.

A moment ago he was so aggressive. That was because he overdrew Liu Yi's strength.

After forcing back those punks, he's also flat tired.

Thus, he seized the chance to hide here to rest secretly.

"Huff....huff...."

After Liu Yi had come up, he sat on the floor.

But Murong Die was still on his body. He didn't have the strength to push down Murong Die anymore.

"Ai....this matter of swatting ass thing....later on, I must looking for my own good....however, this chick is actually quite fragrant...."

Liu Yi sighed twice then leaned against the advertisement board and slowly closed his eyes.

The sirens were getting closer. He didn't know what was happening down below and just languidly slept.

The two forces in his body were automatically up and running, continued to treat his injuries and simultaneously restored his strength, "Young master Lan, we need to talk."

As the police began to block the street, a man with a scar behind the ear opened the door to the reserved room and strode into the room.

His style of outfit is a mink fur, and he was accompanied by two mighty younger brothers.

"Brother Ma, you're really impressive as a hall leader now."

Lan He looked at dangling-cigarette-on-the-mouth Ma Wei, who came in with his two younger brothers and can't help but smile.

"Young master Lan is flattering me."

Ma Wei said with a wry smile, "I, as the hall leader, can't even deal with a high school student?!"

"Liu Yi is indeed somewhat tricky....What are you gonna do about it?"

Lan He asked.

"Ai....to be honest, I am in a difficult position right now."

Ma Wei smiled bitterly and said, "Young master Lan, you see me with a happy face like this, but in private, I actually have some difficulties. Just because I'm now a hall leader, it doesn't mean my position is secure. Many of my foundation are still unstable. Now with this sort of thing, a lot of brothers have been injured. My hands are empty....At this time, if other gangs snatched my territory...."

"I'll give you the money to recruit more members."

Lan He's family doesn't lack in money.

Moreover, this money can be recovered once Murong Die becomes his.

Murong Die's family was extremely wealthy. This is something that everyone knows.

"Since young master Lan has said so, I can rest assured then."

Ma Wei suddenly had a smile, "Young master Lan is indeed young master Lan, you're really not lacking in money."

"But I want the result."

Lan He's eyes slightly narrowed.

"Hehe, young master Lan, rest assured, as long as you have the money, this thing will be easy."

Ma Wei suddenly sneered, "Even if that kid is a martial arts expert, I have a way to get rid of him."

"Oh? What way?"

Lan He could not help but ask.

"I have a little brother, who knew martial arts."

Ma Wei said, "He can beat an ordinary martial arts practitioner but he said



he can't defeat an expert. However, he said his master is really powerful. In the past he is unrivaled in Guangdong. But because he made so many personal enemies in his youth, afterward, he went incognito and opened a small martial art school."

"Oh? So you want to invite this master to leave the mountain?"

Lan He guessed correctly.

"Hey, his master is a martial arts expert, not a hermit who leave the mountain to become an official."

Ma Wei hastily said, "The one that we want to invite, is my younger brother's fellow disciple."

"Could it work?"

Lan He didn't quite believe it.

"Rest assured!"

Ma Wei smiled and clapped his hands.

"The second, you can come in. Show some of your skill to young master Lan."

With that, a man with a sturdy frame walked out from behind Ma Wei, went before Lan He and cupped his hands across his chest as he said.

"Young master Lan, forgive my incompetence."

With that, he stretched out his palm and slightly lifted it in front of his chest.

Then, aiming at the corner of Lan He's table, patted down.

"Bang!"

A piece of 4-5 cm thick table corner immediately fell down and hit the ground.

Lan He and Lin Huayang were dumbfounded. Lin Huayang's mouth opened up big time while Lan He was slightly better.

"Powerful Kung Fu...."

Lan He finally muttered a few words.

“To be ridiculed....”

That big guy chuckled and said.

“My martial brother alone can defeat ten of me. My ability is not enough to do a sparring with my martial brother.”

“Your martial brother is really that good?”

Lan He’s hope has rekindled.

“Of course. My master said, among all his disciple, that martial brother of mine is the most talented one and also has the biggest determination.”

That big guy said.

“Good! Then let’s invite your martial brother to leave the mountain!”

“This....young master Lan, an expert can’t just leave the mountain like that.”

Ma Wei said, twisting his fingers, “I think, young master Lan should understand what I mean....”

“I understand, an expert has his own way. Inviting a celebrity needs money, let alone a martial art master.”

Lan He nodded his head, “Say the price.”

“This....300,000.”

Ma Wei said his price.

Actually, 100000 is sufficed to invite the man’s martial brother to leave the mountain.

The remaining 200000 will naturally enter his own pocket.

That big fellow was just standing there and didn’t say anything.

He can’t possibly spill out his boss’ plan to get money.

“No problem, but I have to say upfront.”

Although Lan He has the money, he is not the fool.

“If his martial brother can defeat Liu Yi, I naturally can give this 300000. But if he can’t, then....hehe, this money, I won’t pull it out of my pocket.”

“Haha, relax, relax, young master Lan. Leave this matter to me.”

Ma Wei laughed, thinking.

‘That martial brother is a genuine martial art master. Moreover, his skill has surely advance step by step all these years.’

‘How good is that Liu Yi, that martial brother can surely beat him in one on one fight!’

‘Humph, humph, this 200000, will surely be mine!’

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 82

his chapter is **sponsored by Liu Yi** Murong Die saw she was standing alone on a long street. There are vicious bad guys down the street.

These bad guys were trying to run at her. She freaked out and ran wildly while searching for her Uncle Wang.

As long as there is Uncle Wang....Everything will be all right....

This has always been true.

But after running for a long time, Murong Die began to despair.

She can't find her Uncle Wang....

On this street, except for her, there're only those evil guys behind her.

She has nowhere to run....

"Anybody who can help me...."

Murong Die could not help but burst into tears. She was really scared.

"If anybody can help me, I will marry him...."

She prayed.

Just at this time, a man riding a tall horse, step by step, threading upon the Earth, came from one side of the street.

"My Princess, I come to save you."

With that, the man outstretched his hand toward her.

Murong Die raised her head to look at the man.

In her heart, she was somewhat surprised.

'He....isn't he Liu Yi....'

'Could it be Liu Yi is my prince charming....'

'But why didn't he wear a prince outfit, but....a plain old school uniform?'

"Quickly ride the horse, my princess, they will soon catch up to us!"

Liu Yi's voice has become particularly magnetic, urgingly said to her.

“O, ok....”

Murong Die nodded her head.

She reminded herself of her vow that she must marry the one who saved her....

Suddenly, her pretty face went crimson.

‘This....is a bit too shameful.’

“Come on! My princess, do not hesitate! Return to my castle with me! And then, be my Queen!”

Hearing Liu Yi’s words, Murong Die was so nervous.

But escaping is more important. So she reached out her hand and grabbed Liu Yi’s outstretched hand.

Just at this time, an arrow suddenly penetrated and passed through Liu Yi’s chest.

“Puff!”

Blood splattered on Murong Die’s face, making her suddenly awakened in scare.

“Ah!”

Murong Die screamed and opened her eyes.

The blood and the bad guys were all gone.

The sky was dark, but there’s a giant advertisement board in front of her, exuding the neon light.

Feeling somewhat cold all around her, she can’t help but shiver in fright.

But she was actually on top of something soft....

Murong Die couldn’t help but look down and found herself riding on Liu Yi’s legs. Her whole body was in an extremely ambiguous position, lying on his body while her face was on top of her left shoulder.

‘Oh my god....’ She began to panic.

‘How did I end up lying on Liu Yi’s body....’

But she quickly remembered that they were previously being surrounded by a group of thugs and Liu Yi has taken her away to escape.

Moreover, Liu Yi seemed to be knifed!

Murong Die quickly turned to look and, sure enough, on Liu Yi's right shoulder, there's a gruesome wound.

The newly bought jeans were cut, revealing the inside that was covered with blood.

Actually, since the blood flow on the wound has been blocked, Liu Yi's injury was already quite good.

The healing power of the Demon race has always been very high. Although Liu Yi is a human, by a freak combination of accident, he became a demon cultivator.

Therefore, he also has the unique abilities of the Demon race.

When Murong Die looked at Liu Yi's wound, her heart suddenly twitched, as if she's feeling hurt.

'Liu Yi....was injured because of me.'

This girl still thought that those punk's target was her.

However, Liu Yi in a collision course with Lan He was indeed partly because of her. So it can be said, Murong Die has her share of responsibilities.

At this time, Liu Yi was lying there quietly. His gentle breathing caused his chest to slightly up and down.

He seemed to be sleeping soundly.

Murong Die, watching this sleeping Liu Yi, suddenly felt that he's the most lovable in this state.

The usual Liu Yi was really exasperating.

'This guy....'

'This lady always treats him good, but why he always treat me like he treats his friends?'

‘Could it be that this lady really can’t attract his interest?’

‘Is it because my usual attitude is too tough?’

‘If that’s so, I can change....’

‘But if I change, can that really attract his interest?’

‘However, why with this temper, other boys still gather around me and treat me like a princess?’

‘On Valentine’s day, I always received a lot of flowers and chocolate....’

‘What exactly is the reason then....’

‘Could it be because my chest is small?’

Murong Die looked at her own chest, then remembered the mighty twin peak of Wang Lele; She could not help but sigh.

‘Ai, this is my natural look, this lady can’t do anything about it....’

‘How about using silicon?’

‘Humph, no way, natural is still the best!’

‘Hateful Liu Yi, can’t you just wake up and tell this lady the reason why you didn’t have interest in me?’

‘If this lady can change it, I will change!’

Murong Die was a bit depressed and unconsciously hammered Liu Yi’s chest with her fist.

“Cough, cough....”

Suddenly, being hammered by Murong Die, Liu Yi coughed a few times and opened his eyes.

Instantly, He and Murong Die dumbfoundedly looked at each other.

“Ah!”

Murong Die suddenly exclaimed. Remembering that she was still lying on top of Liu Yi, she immediately blushed and hastily climbed up from Liu Yi.

“Ahem....that....good evening....”

Murong Die suddenly didn’t know what to say anymore.

“Em....good evening....”

Liu Yi was a bit in a daze, thinking.

‘What kind of greeting is this?’

“How could we end up here....?”

Murong Die also thought that this kind of greeting was a bit awkward, and quickly changed the subject.

“It seems we escaped here....”

Liu Yi also didn’t remember.

‘When I felt fuzzy previously, I probably fainted....’ Liu Yi thought.

‘This should be the work of my second personality....’

‘I hope he didn’t take the measure that is too extreme....’

‘Now is not the time to talk to Lin Tong. I’ll ask her about this matter later.

“You....is it hurt....”

After Liu Yi sat up, Murong Die can see the wound on his shoulder and could not help but ask.

“It doesn’t hurt anymore. It’s alright.”

Liu Yi smiled.

Right now he’s like a little monster. The healing power is too strong.

Is he still a human....

It seemed hard to say now.

“Nonsense! You really know how to boast!”

Murong Die couldn’t help but muse, “Chopped by a knife, with blood spurting out, and you still said that’s okay? You think you’re Ultraman!?”

“I’m really okay....my healing is excellent since I was a child....”

Liu Yi said, and pointed to his wound, “If you don’t believe, just touch it!”

“I, I don’t want to touch it!”

Murong Die was alarmed, thinking.



‘I will not touch it!’

‘Scared me to death....’

She seemed to afraid of blood a bit....

“So what happens now....I don’t dare to go out....”

Thinking about the bloody scene on the afternoon, Murong Die couldn’t help but tremble.

“Let’s make a call....”

Liu Yi said, “Tell your family to send someone to pick you.”

“My phone....is with Lele....”

Murong Die remembered that when she changed clothes, she gave her phone to Wang Lele.

“Use mine.”

Liu Yi pulled out his cell phone but was surprised to find that his phone has been broken into pieces.

“What the....it’s Transformers!”

Liu Yi touched that pieces of components and wanted to cry but have no tears.

The afternoon fight was probably too intense, making this phone crumbled....

‘His mother....I bought this for several hundred!’

‘This father has been cheated, a pity....’

“Then what should we do....”

Murong Die was somewhat depressed....This time, it’s simply terrible....

“I’ll send you back....”

Liu Yi touched his pockets and said, “I have about twenty yuan.”

“That’s not enough....”

Murong Die rolled her eyes at Liu Yi, “My Family House is in the ‘Manor Landscape’....this amount of money is not even enough to cross the

bridge....”

“Oh, it’s in the suburb north of the river....”

Liu Yi knew the whereabouts of this ‘Manor Landscape.’

‘It seemed to be very large villas....’

He heard that it was also one of Murong Family properties.

‘It turned out Murong Die lives there....’ Liu Yi thought.

‘That place is quite far. If we go by taxi, it probably cost around 100 yuan!

“What to do....we’re really finish....”

“I’ll carry you back....”

Liu Yi suggested.

He felt that his strength has almost recovered. So, to running back on foot carrying Murong Die, should not be much of a problem for him.

“Did you just crack a joke?”

Murong Die looked at Liu Yi in surprise, “Since when did you become humorous?”

“No....I’m being serious.”

“Stop it, a taxi should cost around 100 yuan, are you going to piggyback me?”

Murong Die didn’t believe Liu Yi’s words.

“If you run out on the street, you’ll be exhausted and fall down.”

“Not necessarily....my physical strength is actually superb.”

Liu Yi stood up and patted his chest as he said, “Even if I’m running from the east to the west of this Northern Dragon City, there’ll be no problem.”

“You’re lying....”

“If you don’t believe me, let’s have a bet!”

Liu Yi said, “If I can’t run, I promise you one condition. If I can you have to promise to do mine!”

“Oh? Really?”

Murong Die’s eyes lit up.

“Of course it’s real.”

“Then what are you waiting for? Come! Quickly squat!”

“Em....If you win, what are you going to ask me....”

Liu Yi vaguely felt that something was not quite right.

“Hehe....I won’t tell you....”

Murong Die suddenly giggled.

Liu Yi really can’t guess.

‘Grandpa said, A girl’s mind, is the most difficult to guess.’ Liu Yi thought.

Murong Die, watching Liu Yi, who obediently squatted in front of her, secretly thought.

‘Humph, humph, when you lose, this lady wants you to pursue me!’

‘At that time, I’ll ruthlessly embarrass you!’

‘Who told you to be so arrogant!’

“Come on!”

Liu Yi crouched there and patted his own back.

“Your body is so small, can you really do it?”

“Don’t look down on people ok! I can even carry Wang Lele while running on the field!”

“You mean, this lady’s chest is small isn’t it?”

“Ah? I’m just saying that you’re lean....”

Liu Yi wanted to cry, thinking.

‘How could this girl always so sensitive about her chest....’

“Humph....that’s more like it!”

Murong Die said and climbed on his back, and then proudly said in his ear.

“But you just said that Wang Lele is fat....this lady will tell her about this.

You're out of luck now!"

"My grandpa said....we have to be loyal...."

"This lady doesn't know your grandpa! Go, go, little donkey! Quickly leads the way!"

'Fuck!' Liu Yi grumbled secretly.

'How could this girl has the same thought as Wang Lele? Both call me little donkey....'

'This is injustice!'

Although Liu Yi complained and grumbled in his heart, he still cast his legs, prepared to lead the way.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 83

This chapter is sponsored by **Daniel and Joseph of US!**

“You actually ....carry me back home....”

Murong Die, lying on the back of Liu Yi, currently stunned, unable to believe the fact at hand.

But Liu Yi was also in shocked, looking at the front of this enormous estate, unable to form any word.

‘My goodness....Although I’ve heard how beautiful the estate in this location is....’ Liu Yi thought.

‘But after seeing this for myself, it’s truly shocking to me!’

‘This Villa is huge!’

‘It’s even bigger than the size of my school!’

‘The vastness of this place is endless.’

Liu Yi looked around and found out that this estate has woods and an artificial lake....

‘My God...’

‘Rich people were really on another level.’

In front of the estate stood two men in black bodyguards.

When they noticed Liu Yi, they first looked alert.

But after noting the beautiful girl that he carried on his back, they immediately had a huge shock.

“Big miss! Big miss has returned!”

“Quick, quickly report this!”

Another bodyguard immediately pressed the communication headset on his ear and shouted.

“Report, big mis is back! Yes! Yes! But she’s carried by a boy! Ok, I’ve got it!”

The two bodyguards immediately stepped forward and said to Murong Die.

“Welcome back big miss!”

“How is home?”

Murong Die slowly came down from Liu Yi’s back, then asked.

“The whole home was in a mess....a lot of people went out to look for big miss.”

A bodyguard hurriedly said, “The master want big miss to come quickly inside!”

“Then let’s part here.” Liu Yi said.

He was also somewhat weary. He planned to go home to cultivate and rest.

“See you at school tomorrow.”

“Eh....”

Murong Die didn’t want to let Liu Yi leave like that. After being together for almost a day, she already has a feeling of yearning....

But she’s the Lady of the house, so, to persuade a man to stay, she’s somewhat unable to speak out.

“My friend, please don’t leave just yet.”

Unexpectedly, a tall bodyguard in black, stood in front of Liu Yi.

“Our master has invited you to sit inside.”

Murong Die’s heart was happy, thinking, ‘Dad is really considerate, asking Liu Yi like this will make me able to be with him a bit longer.’

“This....is already late, it’s not good....”

Liu Yi was anxious to go home.

To enter this estate, he still has some reservation.

“What are you afraid of!”

Lin Tong emerged again, lying on the shoulder of Liu Yi, and said, “You’re not a nobody now, you’re an immortal cultivator! So what if he has money?

If you want, you can be richer than him! Moreover, you're more powerful than him, and has more time! This money thing, can't be brought to death, so you mustn't put on too much value on this! Liu Yi, give this lady some grace, and openly walk in!"

"Liu Yi, my dad would rarely see a guest!"

Murong Die also said from the side, "If you don't want to give this lady a face, it's okay, but you must give my dad a face!"

"Ok then...."

Liu Yi nodded his head.

'Looks like I have to enter this estate.' Liu Yi said in his heart.

'Let's have a look then....In any case, I never enter this kind of Villa. Consider this as adding my experience.'

Liu Yi and Murong Die followed the black clothed tall bodyguard to enter the gate of this estate.

Then, that black clothed tall bodyguard led them directly to a nearby four-wheeled white vehicle.

This four wheeled vehicle is not large. It's a bit like the vehicle on the golf course. It seemed, this vehicle is specifically used as a transportation vehicle in this estate.

Thus it can be seen that this estate is vast.

"Get on the vehicle."

Murong Die and Liu Yi sat behind the driver seat of this four wheeled vehicle. This vehicle is a bit small, so, Liu Yi and Murong Die were huddled together.

Murong Die's face was slightly red, but at night, it's not very obvious.

Her fragrance wafted into Liu Yi's nose from time to time, making him distraught and a bit lost.

'Alas, she's a rich girl....'

Liu Yi himself would never believe that one day he and Murong Die would

become so close like this.

Although they were classmates, their previous distance was too far away, like the distance between the heaven and the earth.

Surprisingly, the situation was reversed right now....

All this thanks to his Fox sister....

Liu Yi has to sigh with emotion.

“Murong Die, your house is really beautiful.”

Seeing the beauty of this estate, Liu Yi can't help but sincerely praised.

“It's fine....”

Murong Die smiled wryly.

Surprising Liu Yi a little bit.

‘What? With such a huge house and so much money, you're still unhappy?’  
Liu Yi thought.

“You're not happy with this?”

“If you're me, I'm afraid you will not be happy either.”

Murong Die was sitting on the car, with chin leaning on one hand, looking at the estate under the curtain of the night, and spookily said.

“It's like a beautiful cage, and I'm just like a canary in the cage.”

After that, her face became somewhat somber.

‘This girl is deliberate!’

Liu Yi thought in his heart, ‘Looks like I don't have the same worries as these rich people!’

‘When this miss was feeling dejected, I was working hard fighting bad people for the money to treat her Hot Spicy soup,’

‘Speaking of which, because of today's fight, I haven't had the chance to treat Wang Lele and Murong Die for that Hot Spicy soup!’

‘His mother, this turn of event is actually good. I still have 20 yuan left in my pocket!’



‘No, it should be 30. I have to eat it myself!’

‘Hahaha, this is good, this is good....’

Murong Die would never think that Liu Yi would think this kind of things.

Along the way, the car was very steady, and before long, they came to the front of an enormous castle-like house.

“We’re here.”

Murong Die lightly jumped and then, accompanied by the black clothed tall bodyguard, led Liu Yi into that Castle.

When the front door was opened, Liu Yi was taken aback, thinking.

‘My goodness, such a nice luxurious place!’

The Hall was spacious, the carpets were fine, and the chandeliers are all made from crystals!

This kind of place was only seen by him previously on the television.

He never expected to be able to see it now!

Liu Yi looked at the large overhead chandelier and thought.

‘If this stuff is not strong and all that crystals fell down, I could take it and sell it for quite a bit of money!’

‘Hehe....’

‘How could I make it fall....’

“Welcome back big miss!”

At this time, a chorus pulled Liu Yi back from his daydream.

He looked down and saw, stood before them, two row of people.

On the left, there’s a row of maids in maid uniform. On the right, stood a row of black clothed bodyguards led by the previous tall bodyguard.

‘Hehe....’

‘Such an imposing show....’

As a wealthy Lady of the house, Murong Die usually came home receiving this treatment.

A young maid came forward. With hands holding an evening dress clothes, she stood by Murong Die's side.

"Big miss...."

"Mm...."

Murong Die nodded her head and turned to Liu Yi and said.

"I'm going upstairs to take a shower and change clothes first. You wait for me downstairs for a while. Just sit down and make yourself at home."

With that, Murong Die hurriedly went upstairs.

This afternoon was a nightmare. She felt that her body was sticky and dirty.

Liu Yi foolishly stood there, waiting for her, not knowing what to do.

This hall was a bit seemed too big for him

Moreover, the many bodyguards and maids that stood by the side were looking at him as if he was an alien, making him really uncomfortable.

When Liu Yi was at a loss, from another corner of the Hall, a person walked out.

"Young fellow, we meet again."

Seeing this man, Liu Yi's whole body suddenly shivered!

'Fuck me!' He cursed in his heart.

'He's that day man in black!'

'This guy is actually Murong Die's bodyguard?'

Liu Yi is not stupid, he suddenly realized.

'No wonder that day he fought with me, thinking I am Kevin....'

'But....to mistakenly thought me as Kevin....there must be something wrong in this guy's eyes.'

"You are a dangerous person....if I don't deal with you....big miss will be in danger."

With that, he walked over on the general direction toward him.

Liu Yi stepped back a few steps, feeling ill at ease, thinking.

‘I only have the power of the second star jade now, while this tough guy has the power of three star....’

‘It seems the power difference was still too big!’

When Liu Yi’s heart was still uneasy, that black clothed man has arrived in front of a tall vase and said as he pointed his finger at it.

“Brat, do you think just because you’re silently standing here, I’m going to let you off!? This Wang An doesn’t look for you, but you actually deliver yourself to me! If I don’t break your teeth off today, my Wang An’s name will be written backward!”

Liu Yi was speechless, thinking.

‘What the h\*\*\* is happening here.’

Those maids behind the man in black could not help but smile.

While the bodyguard’s faces were full of sweat.

This Wang An is their boss....

But his mother’s face lost big time....

“As long as you kid swear that you will go far away from our big miss, to transfer school and leave the Northern Dragon City, I will give you one more chance! Well then, speak! What do you think?”

“Hey, why you don’t say anything? Are you deaf? I’ll count to three, if you don’t say anything, I’ll make my move.”

“One! Two....Good, you’re going to fight me is it? I Wang An already saw every kind of criminals, even the one who pretend to be deaf! You force me to do this! Oh, you stare back at me? I dare you to stare at me once again!”

The nearby Liu Yi was sweating profusely. He thought.

‘Do I really resemble that vase....’

“Chief, Chief Wang....”

At this time, the nearby bodyguard finally could not bear but to remind Wang An in a low voice.

“That is not Liu Yi....That’s a vase....”

“Vase? What vase?”

Wang An reached out and touched, suddenly his face twitched.

‘His mother....’ He thought.

‘I’ve lost my face big time this time.

He quickly reached out to his pocket and pulled out a rimless eyeglasses and then held it in front of his eyes.

“You kid are doing this intentionally!”

Wang An finally saw Liu Yi. This time, he found his target. He pulled down his eyeglasses and gave it to the nearby bodyguard and fiercely said to Liu Yi.

“You finally lock your target....”

Liu Yi wanted to say these words, but he didn’t dare.

In case he angered this fellow.

“Brat, you actually dare to make fun of me!”

Wang An could not help but feel embarrassed, thinking.

‘This eyes problem....give me a big headache.’

‘It seems I really need to get a pair of contact lense in the future....’

‘However, this student dare to make fun of me! Humph, he haven’t taste my beating yet!’

“Today, for our big miss, I’ll teach you a lesson!”

With that, he locked on his second target and, aggressively took a great stride toward Liu Yi.

‘Bad....’ Liu Yi thought.

‘He seems really angry....’

Liu Yi began to take a deep breath.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 84

“Liu Yi, today you came to my landscape manor, don’t plan to get away!”

With that, Wang An arrived before Liu Yi in a threatening manner.

Liu Yi’s heart sank, and he made two breathing technique.

His spirit rose up, and his entire Lingtai meridian became pure and bright.

Lin Tong also cheered on Liu Yi’s shoulder.

“Fool, come on, you have spirit fox steps. Even if you can’t beat him, you’ll still be able to cope with it. Don’t meet with this fellow head-on. Use hit and dodge!”

“I know....”

Liu Yi nodded his head, and then stared unblinkingly across Wang An.

His spirit has never been this anxious and never been this engrossed.

This was the first time Liu Yi faced with an expert who has a higher star than him.

Although Lin Tong is a four-star expert, she never ruthlessly dealt with him.

While the fellow opposite of him....let’s just say he is bad news.

Standing in front of him, Liu Yi felt threatened.

Wang An initially walked unhurried, but when he was less than two meters away from Liu Yi, his figure suddenly flashed.

In a flash, he arrived in front of Liu Yi and sent a fist to Liu Yi’s abdomen.

Liu Yi was surprised, this punch came too fast!

Although he was prepared, Wang An’s movement was contrary to his expectation.

This punch came fast and hard, making Liu Yi has little time to react.

But Liu Yi, after all, has experienced repeated devastation by Lin Tong on their training. Although his head didn’t react, his body has subconsciously

moved.

He waved his left palm and swatted down Wang An's punch.

"Plak!"

Wang An felt his fist sank, and his heart suddenly surprised a bit.

"Good boy, you improved a lot since the last time!"

After just several days, Wang An felt that the boy has progressed a lot!

The last time this kid didn't have any method in fighting, completely relying on a wild ass style.

But now, the kid began to have his own style!

'Could it be there's an expert behind him, giving him advice?' Wang An thought.

'But no matter what, I have to get rid of this Liu Yi!'

'I can't let him continue to mingle with big Miss; He's simply a human time bomb!'

Wang An's right hand was pressed down, his momentum sank.

His right hand suddenly turned and grabbed Liu Yi's left wrist that was pressuring him..

Then, he lifted his body and moved his shoulder toward Liu Yi's left armpit to hit it.

If this shoulder slam connects its target, Liu Yi's left arm would probably dislocate.

But Liu Yi didn't hesitate.

While his hand was caught, he jumped up, closed his feet together, faced Wang An, and mercilessly kicked his shoulder.

"Bam!"

Both Wang An's shoulder and Liu Yi's feet slammed together.

The two people's bodies shook.

Wang An backpedaled three to four steps backward. His face filled with

shocked.

Liu Yi's strength progressed too much!

After Liu Yi had rolled mid-air, he fell feet first and, while his body slightly tilted, soon steadied.

His heart calmed a lot, thinking.

'It seems that although my strength was only two star, aided by multiple methods, I can still cope with this Wang An.'

'Sure enough, immortal cultivator can go against the expectation....'

'This Wang An, I don't know how many years he has been training. He has perfected his skill.'

'But me, with just a few days of doing immortal cultivation, already have such strength.'

Liu Yi was unaware that his progress is actually amazingly quick.

If ordinary immortal cultivator wants to resist an expert such as Wang An, they would need, at least, two to three years of cultivation training. But then, they would still can't defeat him.

His exceptional talent that he still unaware of, made Lin Tong jealous to death.

"Kid....your three days achievement is something to be proud of!"

Wang An rubbed the aching in his shoulder and said, "But, this ability is still not enough to defeat me!"

With that, Wang An put his two feet on the ground and took two deep breaths.

Liu Yi suddenly felt the opposite Wang An's aura has become somewhat different.

Lin Tong, surprisedly issued a cry.

"Hey! This fellow unexpectedly became stronger....But where exactly the change....I can't feel it...."

"Then let me try him...."

Liu Yi glanced around at this spacious and ornate hall.

Unexpectedly, Liu Yi has regarded this place like a battlefield!

This is a bit extravagant!

When Liu Yi was considering his surrounding, Wang An suddenly ran at him.

At this time, Wang An had held out his hand to directly grab Liu Yi's shoulder.

'A grappling technique?' Liu Yi thought

Liu Yi quickly waved his right arm, trying to change Wang An's arm direction.

"Bang!"

But when he knocked on Wang An's arm, Liu Yi suddenly felt as if his arm dashed against a rock, making his arm numb.

Meanwhile, Wang An's left hand has pressed on Liu Yi's shoulder.

"Get up!"

Wang An put his other arm on Liu Yi's belt and then lifted both of his arms, making Liu Yi directly lifted up into the air.

"I'll be...."

Liu Yi didn't think he would be so easily eaten by this move.

His body was held in mid-air and can't do anything.

"Get down!"

Wang An said, and threw Liu Yi's up.

Liu Yi was thrown into the air, making his body looked like a parabola.

Finally, with a loud thud, Liu Yi's body directly hit a beautiful coffee table in the middle of the hall, smashing it.

Liu Yi's body was burning in pain and lie in distress on top of this broken coffee table.

'His mother, I lost big time.'



“Hahaha! Now you know how powerful I am, boy!”

Wang An laughed and came forward and then moved to put his foot on Liu Yi's chest.

Liu Yi quickly held back the pain, reached out both of his hands and pressed the ground.

His body immediately turned, bounced up, and fell on the nearby sofa.

“Bam!”

Wang An's foot stepped on the ground, shaking that table's debris.

“Good kid, you're quick to run away aren't you.”

Wang An laughed, “But you can't hide!”

And then, with a tank-like rumble, he ran toward Liu Yi.

“Fuck me....this fellow is too fierce....”

Liu Yi got up from the couch, but Wang An has come to his front and tried to bear-hugged him.

Liu Yi quickly lowered his body, slid down from the sofa, and fell to the right side of Wang An.

Meanwhile, his right leg made a sweep and directly kicked Wang An's waist.

Liu Yi had wanted to kick Wang An's head, but Wang An was too tall, close to 1.9 meters.

His height was less than 1.8 meter, so it would be a bit strenuous if he wanted to kick Wang An's head.

“Smack!”

Liu Yi's sweeping kick was very violent. If an average person received this kick that person would directly be incapacitated.

But when his foot fell on Wang An's waist, Liu Yi actually felt as if he kicked a sheet of iron, making his foot unbearably hurt, then numb. His foot then fell to the ground, and he was almost unable to stand still. He thought.

‘How could this fellow suddenly become so hard....’

'His mother! This is too evil!'

"Your leg numb isn't it?"

Wang An turned around, smiled to Liu Yi and said, "Mine is a hard martial art, that is difficult to practice. Come, come, we continue."

With that, he rushed toward Liu Yi again.

Liu Yi panicked.

Could not move!

How to beat Wang An!

He's a hard martial art!

'His mother, I only heard this thing, but never saw it in real life!' He thought.

"Liu Yi, this guy has poor eyesight! Don't forget!"

Lin Tong reminded Liu Yi in his ear.

"That's right...."

Liu Yi's eyes lit up.

He suddenly turned and ran. Wang An immediately shouted.

"Brat, where are you going to run? You can't run away from this house!"

Wang An shouted from behind him.

Liu Yi ran two steps and, sure enough, several bodyguards blocked in his front.

"Hehe....I'm just waiting for you to show up."

Liu Yi smiled and then, without slowing down, directly rammed his shoulders into those group of bodyguards. These bodyguards were suddenly in a mess.

Although they were responsible for the blocking, they can't help out.

Wang An's temper was known to them. He absolutely does not like someone to intervene his fight.

At this time, Liu Yi came ramming at them, making them immediately

floundered.

“Boy, where are you going to run!”

Wang An ran three steps and directly grabbed a bodyguard and then lifted him into the air.

“Chief Wang, chief Wang, it’s me! It’s me! Hai Dafu!”

That bodyguard shouted in fear.

“Fuck, I got the wrong man!”

Wang An quickly put down the bodyguard.

“Blind man, I’m here!”

Liu Yi smilingly said from among the bodyguards.

“You dare to mock me!”

Wang An shouted, “Do you think I can’t see you! Everyone move away!”

Wang An rushed into that group of bodyguards, making them hastily scattered in panic, for fear of being slammed into a mackerel.

Wang An stretched out his hands and grabbed a man into midair.

“Chief Wang, it’s me, it’s Hai Dafu again!”

At this time, he heard a shouting from above his head.

“Fuck, why don’t you guy fuck off already!”

Wang An quickly let go of him.

At this time, that figure suddenly stretched out his feet and directly wrapped Wang An’s neck.

Then that figure went to the ground and, propping himself with both of his hands, exerted out the power from his waist and with a loud roar, used his clamping legs to directly raised Wang An. Wang An was pulled up, flew into the air and, drawing an arc, slammed into the nearby shelf with a thud.

The many porcelains that were arrayed on the shelf were instantly smashed by Wang An.

The shelf was pressed by Wang An, and many of the porcelains broke into

pieces.

Liu Yi was speechless, waved his hand, and said, “This Wang An did this. It has nothing to do with me....Don’t find me to sue for damage....”

Just now, when he was lifted up by Wang An, the lie on the shoulder Lin Tong actually imitated the voice of Hai Dafu.

In the past, only him can hear Lin Tong’s voice. But this time, everyone unexpectedly can hear it.

‘Fox sister is amazing....’

‘She can even do this....’ Liu Yi thought.

“Good boy! You actually can use a ruse!”

But when Wang An pushed the overhead shelf, he was unexpectedly unscathed. After patting the dust, he got up and said.

“Interesting, let’s continue!”

Liu Yi’s heart trembled, thinking.

‘How come this guy so similar with Yuan Zhenyue, both are too zealous!’

“You’re a psycho! Who wants to fight with you!”

“Then immediately change school for me!”

“Change your sister! Do you want to bear the responsibility of providing my college tuition!”

“If you don’t want to change school, we continue our fight!”

Wang An was unmerciful, and once again rushed over toward Liu Yi.

‘How can I deal with a hard martial art practitioner like him?’ He thought.

Liu Yi suddenly turned fierce.

“Fine! You forced me to do this!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 85

Liu Yi saw that Wang An is unforgiving, his heart immediately somewhat annoyed.

‘Why are you doing this!’

‘Why do force me to change school!’

‘What kind of people is this!’

‘Since you’re heartless, don’t blame me Liu Yi to not being polite!’

Not only he didn’t turn around to run away, but he also stood still, waiting for Wang An to come at him.

“You don’t run away this time? Excellent, you have courage!”

Wang An laughed several times, took two to three steps to the front of Liu Yi and, with lightning fast hand, grabbed Liu Yi by the waist. It seemed he was really afraid for Liu Yi to run away again.

But Liu Yi actually put up a smile on his lips.

“Uncle Wang An, sorry about this.”

With that, Liu Yi stretched out his right hand and directly grabbed Wang An’s hand that was grabbing his waist.

Wang An was suddenly shocked.

How could he forgot this!

Instantly, Wang An’s body was filled with heat.

Let alone a hard martial art, even something more powerful was useless.

In an instant, he directly knelt on the ground, his whole body felt weak, and he lost all of his strength.

Amorous Ripple Hand....

Works for male and female!

Liu Yi couldn’t help but laugh, thinking.

‘Sure enough, just like what Fox Sister said, this is my secret skill to face

with any kinds of enemies!’

“Humph, little fool, now you understand?”

Lin Tong proudly said, “This is the skill that this Lady painstakingly cultivated! This skill can be use against the heaven you know! It can disregard the opponent’s skill! In other words, no matter how high the opponent’s strength is, under this lady’s Amorous Ripple Hand, they can only obediently be my sex toys!”

“.....”

Liu Yi can’t even throw a ridicule, thinking.

‘Although this ability is a bit on the low level....’

‘But, his mother, it’s too savage....’

‘It ignores the opponent’s cultivation!’

‘It seems, even that Li Biyue who I ran into that day....if she eats this move, she probably would also be finished....’

Liu Yi guessed.

‘This skill is really handy....’

Liu Yi was enjoying this triumphant feeling. That Wang An, who knelt on the ground, tremblingly said.

“You....you kid....what, what evil skill...that you use on me....”

“This is my secret.”

Liu Yi didn’t loosen his pressure on Wang An’s arm, then said.

“I initially would never use this, but you force me to do it! My grandpa said An anxious rabbit would bite a human, much less I, a living person! You this fellow went too far!”

“You....you’re a dangerous guy....I can’t....let you get close to big miss....”

Wang An still hasn’t changed his mind, “If you....don’t change school....I, will look for you every month....”

“Damn! You think you’re my Aunt!” (In China, A period is called a visit from an Aunt) Liu Yi was going crazy, thinking.

‘How could this guy still persist!’

“Humph....protecting big miss....is my responsibility....”

Wang An said. His body shook a couple of times. It seemed he wanted to stand up.

But the Amorous Ripple Hand was too cruel. Wang An tried several times, but he felt even more uncomfortable. His lust erupted, and he wished he could find a person to solve it.

But what a pity, if it weren't for this Amorous Ripple Hand has simultaneously deprived his will power, Liu Yi would be the first to meet a disaster.

“Liu Yi....Amorous Ripple Hand can't last too long.”

Lin Tong warned Liu Yi in his ear, “You have to quickly solve this guy. The adaptability of the human body is very strong. Especially for an expert like him. I'm afraid if you hold on too long, this fellow will get used to it, by then you'll be finished!”

“Solve? How could I solve this?”

Liu Yi couldn't help but ask, thinking.

‘Such a big guy like him, how to solve it?’

“Use the Great Brilliant Sun Palm to kill him!”

Lin Tong said.

“You're testing me again aren't you, Fox sister!?”

Liu Yi said, “How could I just casually kill him for my own selfish desire!”

Lin Tong didn't know what to say.

Behind them, the group of bodyguard, besides surrounding him, didn't interfere, and just awkwardly embarrassed.

Just when this groups of people were in a deadlock, a gentle voice suddenly sounded inside the hall.

“Tonight is very lively, what kind of attraction are you guys watching?”

“Master!”

Those bodyguards immediately startled, and then respectfully bowed.

Liu Yi turned around and saw, on the stairs on the second floor, a casually clothed man, but the cloth obviously not made from an ordinary material, slowly going downstairs.

That man was well into middle age, but his body was still vigorous.

His moustache continued on his chin, forming a small beard. A tobacco pipe was dangling from his mouth, and his face was tucked with a gold-rimmed eyeglasses. He very elegantly walked down the stairs.

He didn't mind the broken furniture, but his first glance fell on Liu Yi's body.

"Oh, hehe....this young friend, should be little Die's classmate. Thank you, for sending little Die home this late at night."

"You are...."

Liu Yi has guessed correctly, but his mouth still automatically asked.

"Hehe, I am Murong Hong, little Die's father. You and little Die is in the same class, so you can just call me Uncle."

Sure enough....he is the master of the house.

Liu Yi thought that the head of the Murong Family must a be very tough, very vigorous and resolute man....

Unexpectedly, he looked so warm.

"This is the first time you come into my house, but I already being a bad host. This makes me look bad."

With that, he looked at the kneeling on the floor Wang An.

"Wang An, we have a guest here, but you're too aggressive. Why haven't you say your apology to this young friend here?"

"I'm sorry...."

Wang An was such a wild man, but in front of Murong Hong, he's actually very obedient, letting Liu Yi can't help but astonish, thinking.

"This Murong Hong, what kind of method did he use that makes Wang An



obediently became his subordinate?’

‘Is it because money?’

Liu Yi thought, ‘This seems unlikely....’

‘That Wang An doesn’t look like someone who cares about money.’

“Young friend, can you consider this uncle’s thin skin and let go of our family driver?”

That Murong Hong said again.

“O, o....”

Liu Yi quickly released Wang An.

Wang An sighed with relief, staggered to the side, and began to adjust his status.

“That was really disrespectful to the guest.”

Murong Hong slowly came close to Liu Yi, clapped his hands, and said.

“Tidy up, how could you leave such a mess in front of a guest. What did I usually tell you?”

Murong Hong sent a few words, and these maids immediately bustled about.

These maids looked professional. They worked fast and neat.

In a blink of an eye, the Hall was cleaned up by them.

The previous fragments or anything was soon gone.

The shelf was picked up again, and the floor looked new.

“Hehe, please sit down.”

Murong Hong nodded with satisfaction, then pointed to the elegant leather sofa, and said to Liu Yi.

“Thank you, uncle....”

Liu Yi didn’t know why, in front Murong Hong, his heart has some apprehension.

Even when he faced with Wang An, he didn’t have this kind of feeling.

“This man’s spirit is strong....”

Lin Tong saw the light, and said, “Don’t look at his smiling face as if he’s a simple man. He’s actually very shrewd. Liu Yi, you have to be on your guard.”

“M....”

Liu Yi nodded his head. He also felt uncomfortable.

Although Murong Hong’s face was plastered with a smile, Liu Yi didn’t feel any bit of happiness in it.

Instead, Liu Yi felt that his expression was cold.

Although this Murong Hong, on the surface, looked good-natured, Liu Yi actually felt there was an invisible barrier between the two of them.

It’s completely different than what he felt with Murong Die.

Murong Hong’s aura was a bit too strong.

“Liu Yi, my daughter is untalented, making you take the trouble.”

Murong Hong was sitting there, smoking a pipe then slowly puffed, and smilingly said.

“Oh, that’s okay....”

Liu Yi felt that Murong Hong looked a bit unnatural.

Murong Hong’s small eyes, through the thin lenses, actually emitted a ray that makes people unable to look straight at him.

When it fell on Liu Yi’s body, Liu Yi actually felt as if his body was naked.

‘His mother, this feeling is not good!’ He thought.

‘Don’t tell me this guy also has some magical eyesight?’

‘Why is he staring at me like that....’

‘Could it be....’

‘Murong Die’s dad, has some nasty hobbies....’

Liu Yi can’t help but shivered.

“Oh? So, your relationship with my daughter is quite close isn’t it?”

The small eyes of Murong Die's dad let out a sharp intake of light.

Liu Yi's whole body shuddered and hastily said.

"Hehe....we are good....good classmate...."

He unexpectedly wanted to let out perspiration....

Liu Yi wanted to get out of here, go home, comfortably took a bath, and sat down to do cultivation training.

Facing with this Murong Hong, Liu Yi felt he might as well be fighting with Wang An once again.

At least, Liu Yi has the determination to win that fight.

But this....

He didn't even have any will....

"Hehe...Young friend's mother should be a head nurse at the hospital."

At this time, Murong Hong suddenly said.

"Eh? How did you know?"

Liu Yi's heart was a bit surprised.

"Your father, should be a procurement in the XX company, right?"

Cold sweat appeared on Liu Yi's forehead.

"This Murong Hong, why did he investigate my parents?" Liu Yi thought.

Liu Yi's heart suddenly has some fear.

He felt as if he was facing a huge monster. This monster is an enemy that he temporarily unable to confront.

If he acts, it could mean disaster to himself....

Even his family....

Liu Yi tightly clenched his fists.

Murong Hong's eyes fell on Liu Yi's hands.

As if to feel threatened by Liu Yi, Wang An, who previously stood in the corner, suddenly went forward and stood behind Murong Hong's back.

Wang An placed his hand on his waist. Liu Yi saw that a moment ago....

‘He should have a pistol....’ Liu Yi thought.

The atmosphere in the hall was suddenly somewhat stiff.

Liu Yi began to calculate.in his heart.

‘If I want to get out of here....how many possibilities do I have?’

‘The speed of Wang An drawing the gun, I don’t know how fast he is....’

‘If I condensed an ice ball, and quickly throw it, it should pose a threat to those two people, which would temporarily control their movement.

‘Then I took the opportunity to launch my Spirit Fox Steps, and ice-skate to run in an S-shaped route, to....’

‘Em, on the right side of the wall, there’s a window....’

‘I could probably be able to slip up from there....’

Liu Yi has begun to calculate everything.

But Wang An’s hand was also more and more closer to his waist.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 86

This chapter is **sponsored by Daniel of US**

At this time, suddenly there came a nice sounding voice on the stairs.

“Dad, Liu Yi, what are you guys talking about?”

Murong Die wore a loose family-friendly outfit at this time, but still can't conceal her beauty and quality.

Murong Hong, seeing his own daughter, the smile on her face was even more thicker.

Wang An quietly put down his hand while Liu Yi also turned his head.

The previously tense atmosphere in the hall, instantly relieved a lot.

Liu Yi also quietly relaxed.

It really was a pistol....

Liu Yi didn't have that big of a courage to face a gun.

Not being able to fight, was the best course....

“What are guys talking about?”

Murong Die didn't think her father would personally come out and actually spoke to Liu Yi. She thought her father couldn't be bothered to see Liu Yi.

“It's nothing. We're just chatting.”

Murong Hong chuckled, “But you better give that girl Lele a return call. She had made more than a hundred phone calls to the house today.”

“Ah! That's right! How could I forget this girl!”

Murong Die was surprised, and quickly said, “Liu Yi, you should wait for me, I'm going upstairs to call Lele first!”

With that, this girl went upstairs in a hurry.

“Actually, you don't to be worried.”

When Murong Die's shadow completely disappeared, Murong Hong turned

around and said to Liu Yi.

“Your family background is actually very easy to look up. I don’t need to take much effort for it. I did that, because of my desire to protect my daughter, nothing more. I think, if someday you have a daughter, you would do that too.

Finished speaking, smoked from his elegant and upscale tobacco pipe, and said, “You should know, she is my Murong Hong only child. Her mother died early, which mean, basically she was brought up by me alone. In my heart, this girl is my treasure. Since she was a child, she always listens to me. But I found recently she started to get a little rebellious, and would talk back to me her father.”

Then, he gave Liu Yi a look, “Today, I was initially going to take her to a VIP party, but she refused and sneaked outside....It is said, she went to the movie theater with you, am I right?”

His vision fell on Liu Yi’s clothes, with eyes flashed a slightly jealous look, as well as disdain.

“And she also bought this lover’s attire with you, right?”

“Uncle, I think you are mistaken.”

Liu Yi thought he understood something, “Murong Die and I are very good friends. How you love your daughter, that’s your business, but please don’t interfere with my family and my life.”

“But young friend, you have interfered with my family and my life.”

Murong Hong bit the pipe, and said, “My, Murong Hong career in the business world can be counted in years. In this Northern Dragon City, my saying, more or less, has some weight. To tell the truth, I Murong Hong can control the Economy on this Northern Dragon City. But there is one thing I can’t control, that is, my daughter.”

With that, he slightly squinted his eyes and just stared at Liu Yi.

“Young friend, perhaps you want to experience the feeling of someone in my position. If you want, I can help you. However, please don’t try to achieve that by using my daughter.”

Liu Yi's heart somewhat irritated.

"Uncle, what do you mean?"

Murong Hong didn't directly answer but pointed to his house.

"See this house? Beautiful isn't it?"

"Beautiful."

"Do you like it?"

"No, I don't like it."

"Oh?"

Murong Hong slightly taken aback.

"Why you don't like it? You have pretty maids to serve you as well as bodyguards to protect you. Here you can live a life of an Emperor."

"Because it's cold here."

"Cold? How could it be? The temperature here is warm; It's controlled by the thermostat."

"Uncle, what I mean is, your house lacks the human's touch."

Liu Yi clenched his fists, and sneered, "I in this house, only smell the stink of money and the taste of hypocrisy."

Murong Hong's face stiffened, after a long time, he said with a smile.

"Young friend, I heard a taste of irony, were you just satirizing me Murong Hong?"

Then, the pupil in his eyes, let out a stunning light.

But this time, Liu Yi remained unmoved.

He silently circulated the forces of the two heart sutra in his body, thinking, 'Grandpa said, when the heart is upright, the body is fearless.'

'Even if he, Murong Hong is the Emperor of Northern Dragon City, what's that have to do with me!'

"Uncle, think too much."

Liu Yi said, "The thing that you like doesn't mean I would also like it. I

understand what you said; You think, I want to use your daughter and be the son-in-law of Murong Family to enjoy this luxury. I, Liu Yi am telling you, you're wrong."

With that, Liu Yi pointed to his surrounding.

"This house is big, but it is also a cage. I thought that Murong Die, as the Lady in this house, would live a life much better than me in my small house. But after listening to uncle's words a moment ago, I come to an understanding that Murong Die is actually very, very miserable, making feel sorry for her."

"You feel sorry for my daughter?"

Although Murong Hong has high self-control, he could not bear but say these words, "Do you have the qualification to say this?"

"Qualification? If you mean the qualification based on values, then I'm very qualified."

Liu Yi stood up from the sofa and proudly said, "Compared with money, the value of freedom is much more expensive! Uncle Murong, seeing that you are unhappy, I also have some matters I need to attend. Thus, I'll take my leave now."

With that, he turned and walked toward the door.

Several bodyguards were going to stop him but was held back by Murong Hong.

"Let him go. He really does not belong here."

Murong Hong looked at the back of leaving Liu Yi; Light flashed through his eyes.

"This kid actually has some backbone."

Wang An could not help but say.

"Hehe....Everyone has a price."

Murong Hong sat down on the sofa and faintly smiled, "I'm running my business for so many years and already saw all kinds of people. People who initially try to fool other people like Liu Yi, I already met many of them. If I



give him an offer that he can't refuse, he will become spineless."

"Sir, you mean...."

"I think we two should meet face to face."

Murong Hong said these words with profound meaning with a smile.

In his heart Wang An has some slight regret. 'This kid has annoyed the master....I'm afraid he will meet with a disaster.'

"Liu Yi, have dinner in my house ok! Our family chef is very good!"

Murong Die ran down from the second floor, only to see the two people, Wang An, and his dad in the hall, making her surprised.

"Where's Liu Yi?"

"Oh, hehe....your classmate has some matter to attend and already went back."

Murong Hong said with a smile.

"Oh...."

Murong Die was slightly lost, thinking, 'Liu Yi this guy....why can't he stay here a bit longer....'

Murong Hong's gaze caught the feeling of lost of his daughter, making him unable to bear but to tightly grip the tobacco pipe. But he quickly loosened it and slowly said.

"Little Die, later on, don't just go running around. Even if you want to go out and play, you have to bring Wang An by your side. If you go alone, I will not be at ease."

"I know...."

Murong Die blankly said.

"Like when you went out today....that was really dangerous. If there's Wang An, you wouldn't be chased down by that many people."

"Today, if it were not for Liu Yi, I would be miserable."

Murong Die quickly spoke defending Liu Yi, "For me, he has suffered a knife chop!"

“Today’s matter, has nothing to do with you.”

Murong Hong waved, and said, “I have investigated, the people who attacked you came from Black Dragon Gang. They were after Liu Yi.”

“They were after Liu Yi? Not to kidnap me?”

Murong Die immediately shocked, “This is not right. With Liu Yi’s character how could he have a conflict with the underworld gang....”

“My daughter, to know a man’s face doesn’t mean you know the man’s heart.”

Murong Hong said, “Although I have said I would not interfere your private life before you reach 22 years old, be careful when you choose a friend. It will make me feel at ease.”

“There’s nothing wrong with Liu Yi.”

Murong Die actually insisted this time.

“What’s wrong? You don’t listen to my words now?”

“Ai, you said you will not try to control me before my age is 22! No matter what, Liu Yi is my friend! I don’t like what you’re saying about him!”

With that, Murong Die turned and headed upstairs.

“Little Die....”

Murong Hong shouted twice, but was ignored by Murong Die, and soon disappeared from his sight.

“Wang An, did you see that?”

Murong Hong sighed, “Because of this Liu Yi, little Die has changed. Before this, she never talked back to me. But look at now!”

Wang An stood on the side and did not say anything.

“No, Liu Yi is indeed a walking time bomb. Wang An....have you looked up, why would Black Dragon Gang went after Liu Yi?”

“I did look up, it seems this was the work of Black Dragon’s new Hall Leader, Ma Wei.”

“Ma Wei?”

Murong Hong slightly frowned, "Before this, I never hear this name...."

"I'd seen him."

Wang An recalled, "That day, when big Miss asked me to deal with that Kevin....I'd met with him. That day he wanted to make a move on Liu Yi. But because I was just about to fight with Liu Yi, I easily handled him. At that time, he was just a small fry."

"So it is."

Hearing that his attendant has hit the new Hall Leader of Black Dragon Gang, Murong Hong actually didn't mind that at all.

Black Dragon Gang walks on the 'black path,' while he deal with the 'white path.'

Black Dragon Gang not only never try to threaten him, but sometimes they even have to curry his favor.

In today's society, the white path is the king.

Those fellows on the black path, eventually will have to work hard to whiten their path.

Otherwise, no matter how great they are, their end would only have one word, tragic.

"This small fry, what's his problem with Liu Yi?"

"If I'm not mistaken, it's because of big Miss."

Wang An previously worked as a police captain in the criminal investigation unit.

At that time, he was know as the Investigation King. Although he has retired now, he still retained his investigation ability.

"Oh? What's the relation little Die?"

"Yes....I've investigated, the young master of Lan Family has some kind of relationship with this Ma Wei....As for the young master of Lan Family, Sir, you already know about him."

"I understand."

Murong Hong nodded his head, viciousness flashed through his eyes.

“This Lan fellow....unexpectedly, for his personal enmity, didn’t hesitate to let my little Die fall into a dangerous situation....He and Liu Yi, deserve to die.”

# Chapter 87 Flame Civet

“It’s depressing, he really that kind of people.”

After Liu Yi had returned home, he put away the jeans in exchange for his uniform.

After hearing the speech from Murong Hong, he felt strange to wear the Jeans from Murong Die.

It’s better not to wear it, so as to avoid feeling uncomfortable.

When Liu Yi turned on the computer, Lin Tong quickly said.

“Hey, hey, you can’t just admit defeat to Murong Hong and vent your anger by playing Minesweeper!”

Liu Yi’s type 486 Computer came with built in Minesweeper and Fight The Landlord game.

“Of course not. I want to do a mission, to make money.”

Liu Yi said in his heart, ‘Money can be earned, so no one will remain poor all their lives.’

‘Even those wealthy people, they also begin from scratch.’

‘I Liu Yi, must make my own path.’

Liu Yi opened the website that was previously told by him by Lin Tong, entered his account and password, and then searched for an available mission.

He was surprised to find out the recent task for Northern Long City were many.

He never thought that the city that he was living in, in the darkness, has so many dangerous things.

Sure enough, human world and immortal cultivation world are two different world.

But no one is willing to be vindicated; everyone are striving to get the

upper hand.

Liu Yi dragged the mouse and continued to rummage.

There were a lot of missions that he can't accept because of the rank, but there's an E level mission, which attracted Liu Yi's attention.

Mission Level: E

Mission area: H province, Northern Dragon City, Crouching Dragon District.

Mission time: September 20, 2011, 11 o'clock in the evening (Only limited to that day).

Mission Content: To accompany the training of Celestial Sect's disciple to carry out a night vigil duty.

'Huh?' Liu Yi thought.

'This mission is very strange. It turned out to be an immediate task. Moreover, it's asking for a training partner?'

'Celestial Sect? What is that?'

"I never told you this."

Seeing the doubt in Liu Yi's face, Lin Tong gave him a glance, and then said, "The world of immortal cultivation is divided into several major sects. Each major sect is divided into some small school. This Celestial Sect is one of those major sects. It cultivate five elements magic and summoning technique. Under this Celestial Sect, there're many small schools. This mission should be a novice trial for a new disciple. It's probably some wealthy young master or young lady that were sent by their family to became a cultivator in some small school."

"Another rich people...."

Liu Yi's heart was slightly sour. It's not hatred for the rich, but he felt that these wealthy people is too convenience in dealing with everything.

'While I have to cultivate hard to be able to do the mission,' he thought.

'They directly posted their task online and find someone to help them complete it.'

‘But, this was also good.’

‘I can earn money by doing this.’

“A level E task, should not be difficult. What do you think, are you interested?”

“Of course, this is an honest way to earn money!”

Liu Yi said, “The more I do this kind of task, the better!”

With that, he looked at the time. It’s ten p.m. now, so, there’s still enough time to go to the mission area.

He lightly clicked the mouse and accepted the mission.

“Come on! It seems like this is my night.”

Liu Yi said, activated the red ring, and put on the “red scarf hero” outfit.

Lin Tong looked at the red scarf around Liu Yi’s neck, and could not help but sigh.

‘Ai, it’s too one of a kind.’ She thought.

“Come one, let’s go!”

He said, opened the window and directly jumped out of the window.

Shuttling between buildings has become more and more effortless for Liu Yi.

He continuously left out traces of ice mark wherever he stepped on, wandering under the curtain of the night Crouching Dragon District is a cemetery in Northern Dragon City. Liu Yi didn’t know where exactly the spot for the trial of that Celestial Sect’s disciple within this cemetery.

But in any case, this is only a training partner duty, so, it should not be difficult.

He moved very quickly. The curtain of the night was his best cover.

After about half an hour’s time, Liu Yi came to the Crouching Dragon District area.

This Crouching Dragon District is a huge cemetery. In the evening, it’s quite eerie.

Liu Yi stood on the nearby hill, watching the dense rows of tombstones beneath him. His heart was a bit scared.

‘Liu Yi, get hold of yourself! This is because this is the first time you come to this place!’ He talked to himself.

‘There will be a first time for everything....’

‘Liu Yi, come on, you can do it!’

“Our objectives seems to be there.”

Lin Tong’s vision is quite good and said as she pointed in one direction.

Liu Yi immediately looked along the direction where the small paw of Lin Tong is pointing at. He saw in the center of the cemetery, there’s a young girl wearing a red and white school uniform. She was sitting on top of a tombstone while kicking out her small feet. Her mouth was humming a song as if she was trying to drive away her fear.

“It’s a girl....”

“How could it be a girl!”

Liu Yi and Lin Tong cried at the same time.

“Why this girl wore a school uniform?”

“Do you think immortal cultivators wore ancient clothing? Come on, we should be punctual with the mission time!”

Lin Tong rolled her eyes.

“Okay....I hope this time, the task will stay simple, and not like the previous time!”

Liu Yi said.

“Just give it a try....who told you this fellow to be so greedy....”

Lin Tong has no other choice.

“Gentleman loves money, in a proper way!”

Liu Yi chuckled twice, then stepped on the ice-skates, and jumped down toward the cemetery beneath him.



“Who is it!”

The girl, who initially sat on the graveyard, suddenly looked up and faced at the direction where Liu Yi was falling.

“Tuantuan!”

“Huhu!”

With the shout of this girl, a bundle of crimson flame suddenly bubbled out from her feet.

Liu Yi’s vision is good; he immediately saw that was a red furred civet with all of its body in flame.

That civet was very small, probably as big a one’s palm.

But the flame on it’s body was very powerful; The distance between them was still far, but Liu Yi could feel the heat from above.

“Go!”

The young girl put out a hand to point at Liu Yi and tenderly ordered.

“Meow!”

That flame civet suddenly let out a meow, then it’s entire body rose into the air, turned into a ball of fire, and moved to hit Liu Yi in midair.

“Liu Yi watch out! The flame of this civet is very powerful!”

Lin Tong quickly shouted.

“I know....”

Liu Yi thought of an idea. He rubbed his hands while in midair and created an ice ball and then threw it toward that civet.

But that incarnation of fire civet drew an arc in the air, and deftly dodged Liu Yi’s ice bomb.

“Spalt!”

The ice ball fell to the nearby tombstone, and that tombstone suddenly covered with a layer of ice.

“Mysterious Icy qi?”

The little girl was taken aback and hastily shouted.

“Tuantuan, come back!”

That ball of flame had arrived in front of Liu Yi. Liu Yi felt his mask was somewhat burning hot.

But at this time, along with the girl’s shout, that flame flew back, landed on the shoulder of that girl, turned into red furred little civet, and lovingly lie on top of the shoulder while licking it’s paws.

‘Hot damn....’ Liu Yi exclaimed in his heart.

Cold sweat appeared on Liu Yi’s back.

‘His mother, it’s too damn dangerous.’

‘Is she trying to test me....’

“Mysterious Icy qi, it turned out you’re also a member of our Celestial sect.”

That girl touched the civet head and slightly smiled.

“I thought an enemy has come.”

“How could I look like an enemy.”

Liu Yi landed on the ground, and pointed at his neck, “Don’t you see this? I am the red scarf!”

“And I am a hardcore cultivator....”

That girl shook her head, looked at the phone, and asked with a strange expression, “You are....ten steps to milk a man?”

“Yes, that’s me.”

Liu Yi wanted to make a red scarf hero pose, but after thinking about it, he felt it was rather uncomfortable, so he asked, “Are you the one who published the mission?”

“It was indeed issued by this lady....Mr. Ten steps to milk a man!”

The girl nodded her head but thought that this name was extremely odd.

“My name is Wei Yi, the disciple of Linglong School of Celestial Sect.”

Wei Yi generously introduced herself.

“But, I suggest you to not have any ideas toward me. Though this lady is young, beautiful and has many fans, I’m not interested in men for the time being!”

“Are you a Yuri?”

Liu Yi expressed his concern toward this girl’s narcissistic tendency and sexual orientation.

“Pei! You’re the Yuri; your whole families are Yuri!”

Wei Yi suddenly glared maliciously at Liu Yi, “This lady is wholeheartedly focusing on cultivation! Those men and whatnot, are all trash!”

“You’re the trash; your whole families are trash!”

Liu Yi immediately, unrelentingly retorted.

What Liu Yi dislike the most, is those bunch of man-hater female!

Now a lot of girls has said that, not just one man, but all of the men were not good things.

Liu Yi wanted to say this to each and every one of those girls.

Just because of the bad action of a small portion of a group of people, they can’t just paint all member of that group of people as bad!

“Bah, is it not? Could it be when you see this lady, your eyes didn’t drool, and wanting to woo this lady so that you can put your hands on me?”

“Shit, I’m not!”

“This girl is really ....too damn narcissist; her whole families are fucking narcissists!”

“Then you’re certainly not a man. Perhaps, you’re a gay.”

Liu Yi was depressed, thinking, ‘What’s wrong with this girl!’

He wanted to give up the mission. To accompany this girl on her training would surely irritate him.

But before Liu Yi can say his intention, that Wei Yi has opened her mouth first.

“With such a weak cultivation....can you really be able to help me?”

“My cultivation is not weak! You’re the one whose cultivation is weak!”

Liu Yi immediately got angry because Lin Tong has said to him about the strength of this girl.

“Aren’t you a two-star cultivator?! Moreover, this is an E level mission; the reward is only one thousand, yet you still want a master to help you?”

“Make sense....”

“If I had known earlier, I would not feel bad in spending my money....and publish a D level mission instead. Oh, well, just make do with it. It’s too late to upgrade the mission level now.”

Liu Yi really wanted to kick this girl into the grave.

‘Amitabha....’

‘Be calm, be gentleman.’

“Then can you help me?”

“If you give me the money, I’ll help.”

Liu Yi stiffly said.

‘His mother, even though this was embarrassing, I can’t be embarrassed about money.’

“Okay, I’ll give it to you. In any case, the time is almost up, and no one else has come.”

Wei Yi said, and sat back on top of the tombstone again.

At this time, Liu Yi thought that her courage was a bit bigger than him.

“What exactly is this mission?”

“I made a bet with my martial brother.”

Wei Yi opened her mouth and started to talk, “My martial brother said, recently, there’s a thick concentration of evil qi in this place, perhaps there’s a girl eating malicious ghost who appear at night. He laughed at my fear of ghost, so we took a bet. As long as I can stay here for a night, he would get down on all four and bark like a dog.”

“This kind of bet seems to have no purpose at all....”

“Hey, hey, are you the employer here? In any case, I’ll pay you, so, just accompany me okay!”

# Chapter 88 The Haunting Of Evil Ghost

Liu Yi was very helpless, how could he bump into such a girl.

But she was right, she's his employer. To follow her is to earn the money; that's the absolute truth.

Seeing Wei Yi sitting on the tombstone, Liu Yi could not help but ask.

"Aren't you disrespecting the people who are dead?"

"Dead is dead, so what?"

Wei Yi curled her lips, and said, "These mortals, when they are alive they are so pitiful, thus there's nothing to respect when they die."

"This thinking....is not good...."

Liu Yi said, "Dead is a big thing. Moreover, toward the human, we shouldn't disrespect them. We are all initially a mortal, are you not?"

"Me? I was born to be remarkable."

Wei Yi pursed her lips, and said, "When this lady was born, the world change its color, seven colored magic clouds covered the whole sky! Even my master said I might be a celestial fairy that descended to the world."

Liu Yi said in his heart, 'If you're a fairy that descended to the world, the cowherd (From the folktale Cowherd and Weaving maid) will be scared away by you.'

'What kind of fairy is this? Although the face is quite attractive and also come from a wealthy family, so narcissist and so arrogant....'

'Really....unbelievable!'

"Moreover, I was born rich, so, I don't understand what life is for a mortal. Don't equate me with your kind of people, this lady is a gifted genius, and very different from a mediocre nobody like you.

Wei Yi said as she snorted twice.

“If you are a genius, why is it that you only able to summon such a toy?”

Liu Yi looked at the kitten on Wei Yi’s shoulder and can’t help but ask.

“Meow, meow!”

As if hearing Liu Yi has just called the cat a toy, the cat suddenly raised the beard, growled, and stared at Liu Yi.

“Watch your words!”

Wei Yi suddenly, tenderly shouted, “This is this lady’s level six civet! Not an ordinary civet!”

“Level six....the rank is quite high!”

Even Lin Tong, who lie on Liu Yi’s shoulder, could not help but exclaimed loudly.

“What? What is so good about this level six?”

Liu Yi quickly asked Lin Tong through his spiritual world.

“The cultivation technique for summoning is a cultivation method to summon a spirit animal, which was divided into nine level. Level one is the lowest while nine is the highest level. Those from the level seven and up are the legendary levels, so, it’s basically very rare. Therefore, this girl’s level six civet....is remarkable. It seems....her summoning talent is very high, that’s why she can summon such a level six civet....It’s just that, this level six civet is still in its infancy. When it mature, it will be very powerful.”

“Even if she’s talented, she can’t just look down on others.”

Liu Yi was somewhat indignant.

“Forget it....calm your heart and accompany her....”

Lin Tong was actually secretly pleased by this, she thought.

‘Just like this!’

“The more arrogant she is, the better!”

‘So, you won’t be fickle, humph humph!’

‘Recently, your luck in love is truly too much!’

‘It’s good for you to bump into this girl, so as to kill your arrogance!’

“You, you’re actually a disciple of such a big sect, judging from your ability to use mysterious icy qi!”

Wei Yi looked at Liu Yi, and said, “Such a heavy taste fellow....unexpectedly, can enter a major sect, and learn such a profound heart sutra....ai, heaven is sometimes quite unfair.”

Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra, is indeed an advance level heart sutra.

Liu Yi’s heart suddenly felt a bit doubt.

“God is very fair.”

Liu Yi stiffly said, “When he gave an arrogant person like you an open door, He didn’t forget the people like me and opened the window for us.”

“Doesn’t want to admit defeat.”

Wei Yi said with disdain, “If I didn’t call back Tuantuan just a moment ago, you’d be miserable!”

“Even if you didn’t stop your civet, I wouldn’t necessarily be miserable.”

Liu Yi said in his heart, ‘If you didn’t call back your civet, I would release my desolate palm.’

‘I don’t believe my great brilliant sun palm won’t be able to handle your little civet!’

‘Fox sister had said to me that, the spirit animal is tied to it’s owner star level.’

‘Even if the civet is a level six, but this girl is only a two star cultivator.’

‘My great brilliant sun palm is a high level technique, it wouldn’t necessarily lose to her civet!’

“Your mouth is really hard! It’s boring me!”

Wei Yi was very uncomfortable. Usually, in her school, there would always be a group of fellow disciple gather around her, falling over themselves to fawn on her.

She has to admit, she enjoyed this feeling of being treated like a princess.



‘Today, how could I bump into such a fellow.’ She thought.

‘M, he is certainly not a man.’

“How could you know my mouth is hard? Have you tried?”

Liu Yi bluntly retorted.

“You! So dirty!”

“Am I? Why don’t you show me?”

“You, you, you....”

Wei Yi was speechless with anger.

“If you do that again, I deduct your salary!”

“Bah, you’ve issued the mission, and I’ve completed the mission. So, that money is mine. You want to deduct? how?”

Liu Yi was not threatened at all.

“You, you, you....”

“Me, me, me? What’s wrong with me?”

“You’re a disgusting person!”

Wei Yi shouted.

“Thank you for the compliment, I am flattered.”

“Aaa! I see you’re the evil ghost in this cemetery!”

“If I’m that malicious ghost who especially likes to eat girls, I will not look for you.”

“Why?”

“Look at you, you have no chest and no buttocks. You don’t look like a girl at all.”

“Ten steps to milk a man, I want to fight with you!”

“I can be called ten steps to milk a man, but if it’s you, it will be ten steps to starve everyone.”

“Aaa....”

Wei Yi was going insane.

Just when she was completely crazy, a formidable evil qi, suddenly burst into the sky.

The two people pale at the same time and quickly turned toward the origin of that evil qi.

“Quickly hide!”

Liu Yi felt bad for her, so he said that to Wei Yi.

“I know....you don’t need to remind me!”

Wei Yi, although was a bit perturbed, she was still as arrogant as before. She gave Liu Yi a harsh glare, but still hid behind him.

Liu Yi then crouched behind a tombstone. Fortunately, the two people are quite slender, otherwise, the tombstone wouldn’t be able to block them.

A distant tombstone has suddenly come loose.

Then, black smoke came out of that grave and hovered above the tombstone.

The sky became darker and the moon was locked behind the clouds.

“Such a thick evil qi....”

Lin Tong could not help but worryly said, “He seems not easy to deal with....Li Yi, you have to be careful....”

“M....I know....”

Liu Yi nodded and continued to observe that black smoke.

Soon, that black smoke gathered together, and a dark figure slowly appeared.

It was a man dressed in a black robe with skinny stature. When he extended his hands from the sleeve cuff, they’re similar to bones.

When that figure suddenly turned around, both Liu Yi and Wei Yi simultaneously sucked a cold air.

‘My....’

‘Such a scary face....’

That thin figure’s face was frightening, filled with rotten meat and bones. While his eyes emitted a faint green glow.

Liu Yi thought he was looking at a ghost on the TV show.

That guy stood on top of the tombstone, outstretched both of his withered hands, and aimed it at the dark clouds in the sky.

The clouds cracked a little gap, revealing the moon.

That fellow then directly absorb the essence of the moon.

A thread of white ray, flew down from the moon, and inhaled by him.

Although Wei Yi boasted her extraordinary talent, she is, after all, still a girl.

From behind Liu Yi, she pulled his arm as her body slightly trembled.

Liu Yi’s heart was also beating hard.

This was the first time he saw such a display.

That fellow opposite of him....

Put a heavy pressure on him.

The whole fur of that civet that was lying on Wei Yi’s shoulder stood up, seemingly knowing that it faced with a great threat.

“Four star....”

After watching for a long time, Lin Tong came to a terrible conclusion.

“This fellow is a four star level....both of you are not his match....”

Liu Yi’s eyes blinked a few times, and then looked back at Wei Yi.

He made a gesture that pointed the guy was absorbing the moon’s essence, and then put up four fingers.

Wei Yi is not a fool. She immediately understood, and her face suddenly became somewhat pale.

This situation has exceeded her expectation.

“We, we should run....”

Wei Yi gestured to Liu Yi using her mouth to say that.

Liu Yi nodded and gestured that now is not the time to leave. They should wait until that fellow return to the grave again.

The two people continued to hide behind the tombstone, waiting for that terrifying four star evil ghost to go back to the graves.

At this time, in this initially silent and deserted cemetery, suddenly came a humming sound.

“The boundless world is my love....Wildflower bloom at the foot of the mountain as the rain comes down....What is the most rhythmic of those drops of rains....that is the song of dropping rain....what is the most joyful of song....let’s....drink wine....”

Liu Yi and Wei Yi was shocked and quickly turned to look.

They saw a swaying drunkard, with hand holding a bottle of liquor, came over staggeringly.

“Dad....Son, Son come to your grave....Son was too busy during the day, accompanying people to drink....Son comes late, dad, don’t be angry....Son got you, a good wine....Let, let us drink two cups....”

That drunkard belched as he squinted his eyes, looking for his father’s grave.

The ghost also noticed that drunkard. Immediately, his body became light and jumped out from that tombstone.

“We need to use this opportunity to run away!”

Wei Yi pulled Liu Yi’s hand, ready to leave at any moment.

“No....”

Liu Yi pushed Wei Yi’s hand, and said, “I want to save him.”

“You’re crazy!”

Wei Yi looked at that monster-like figure and then looked at Liu Yi, “That is a four star evil ghost....you can’t defeat him!”

“Even if I can’t, I still have to try.”

Liu Yi said through gritted teeth.

“That is a drunkard, it’s not worth getting killed for him!”

“Although he is a drunkard, he is a dutiful son. Moreover, our fairy Wei Yi, please don’t look down on ordinary people’s lives.”

Liu Yi said, stood from behind the tombstone, and ran toward the direction of that evil ghost.

“Ai, ai! I truly have bad luck today! How could I encounter such an idiot, such a fool person!”

Wei Yi repeatedly stomped her feet, gritted her teeth, and followed him.

Lin Tong, who lie on Liu Yi’s shoulder, looked back at the pursuing Wei Yi, and floated a smile on the corner of her lips, thinking.

‘Humph, humph, now you know Liu Yi is a fool?’

“This lady, from the beginning, already knew that!”

# Great Battle Between Human And Ghost

That drunkard staggered and, in front of a flower, a shadow suddenly appeared.

“M? Dad, are you greedy for this wine, so as to come out here looking for me?”

That drunkard sense was quite fuzzy, looking at the shadow and said with a smile.

“Come, Dad. Cheers....”

He stumbled to handed out that bottle facing his “Dad,” and said.

The green eyes of that black robbed evil Ghost fell on that drunkard’s face.

He suddenly stretched out his withered right hand, pinched that man’s neck, and lifted him into the air.

“Ah, ah....”

That drunkard was pinched in the neck. The feeling of pain and suffocation sobered him up.

“Help, help me....”

He finally saw the man in front of him. That frightening appearance immediately made him wet his pant in scare.

He continued to struggle, but the astonishingly big strength of the opposite party made him unable to move.

That evil Ghost’s mouth slightly opened and aimed at that man’s face.

Suddenly, some vague green gases flew out from within that man’s body and went right into the evil ghost’s mouth.

It was in this moment, Liu Yi arrived at the back of that evil Ghost.

“Let go of him!”

Liu Yi’s hand pressed on the shoulder of that evil Ghost, and another hand held up high. The great brilliant sun palm was very dazzling.

“Desolate Flame!”

This full of violence palm, directly shot the back of the head of that evil ghost.

“Bam!”

A basketball sized sun print appeared on the back of the head of that evil ghost.

At the same time, the tremendous strength shook that evil Ghost forward, roaring again and again. The hand that sucked that drunkard vitality also loosened, making him fell to the ground.

Wei Yi’s figure immediately followed and took the man by the collar and lifted him up. Her figure then ran away zig-zagging and, in a blink of an eye, went far away to throw that fainted in fear drunkard into safety.

“Go! Bring him out of here!”

Liu Yi’s palm hit that evil ghost and was thrown backward several meters. He then loudly yelled toward Wei Yi’s position.

“Don’t underestimate this lady!”

Wei Yi shouted from afar, “How can the boss leave their employees to run away! Moreover, this lady is fierce, and not afraid of this evil ghost!”

With that, she started to make a seal with her hands, seemingly wanted to launch her skill.

“Hou!”

But that evil Ghost, who suffered under Liu Yi’s palm, suddenly stretched out his arms and roared.

A plume of black smoke suddenly billowed toward the sky

The dark cloud in the sky immediately scattered and the Moon essence converged into that evil ghost’s body.

The injury on the back of his head was instantly cured.

“I’ll be damn....I want that skill....”

Liu Yi opened his eyes wide in surprise.

“But that evil Ghost is a four star!”

Lin Tong quickly reminded him, “Quickly took this opportunity to escape! We are no match for him!”

Liu Yi shook his head and said, “No, we can’t leave him, this fellow is a menace! Even if I run away today, another day he will be a scourge to other people! Since I have the power of immortal cultivator, I will use this power to deal with him!”

With that, he rapidly circulated the two forces within his body and did a breathing technique so as to concentrate his mind.

Every move and every action of that evil Ghost was within his grasp.

“Hou! Hou!”

That evil Ghost recovered from his injury, looked up, and his green eyes fell on the opposite side Wei Yi.

Suddenly, he roared, and jumped toward Wei Yi.

“Watch out!”

Liu Yi quickly cautioned.

“Relax, a mere evil ghost can do nothing to me. Watch this big miss!”

Wei Yi said, finished executing her seal technique and pointed at that evil ghost.

“Tuantuan! Civet Raging Flame!”

“Meow! Meow!”

That red civet fell from Wei Yi’s shoulder and onto the ground. Its whole furs were covered with burning flame.

She opened her small mouth, aimed it at the incoming evil ghost body, and, unexpectedly, spewed out a massive column of fire.

This column of flame directly sprayed that evil Ghost, and immediately, sent him flying while simultaneously burned his body in the red roaring flame.

“Haha! Now you know how powerful this lady is!”



Wei Yi proudly said, "This is the fate for anyone who annoy this lady!"

But when she was still in triumphant, that evil Ghost suddenly let out a huge roar. Dark smoke burst out and directly washed out the burning flame.

The evil ghost stood up. It looked like he was unscathed.

"How...how could this possible...."

Wei Yi was stunned seeing the impressive display of Yin qi (previously evil qi; to differentiate from evil ghost) of that evil ghost.

"My spirit flame....actually invalid!"

"It's because he's a four star evil Ghost!"

Liu Yi's throat yelled, "Don't confront him in a battle!"

"This lady doesn't need your command!"

Wei Yi shouted back, unconvinced.

"Tuantuan, don't let others look down on us! Show them our skills!"

"Meow!"

That little cat let out a cry, her fur trembled. She seemed to fully support her master and roared at that evil Ghost.

"Hou!"

The evil Ghost was still standing there. Suddenly he opened his bloody mouth wide and loudly roared at the direction of Wei Yi.

The sky changed its color.

A sinister black wind suddenly howled out and curled along the ground toward Wei Yi.

That sinister black wind swept the ground, cracking layers upon layers.

Even the surrounding tombstones were cracked.

Thus, it can be seen how terrible and frightening this sinister wind of that evil Ghost.

That civet immediately wilted, whimpered, and returned to hide behind Wei Yi's back.

Wei Yi also cried in fright, with tearful eyes, and both legs slightly trembled.

That evil ghost is seemingly without intelligent; He didn't fully used his skills and can only moved according to his primitive impulse.

After he frightened Wei Yi like that, he directly pounced toward her.

"Wei Yi, watch out!"

Liu Yi shouted. Both of his hands held an ice bomb. Then he threw it toward that evil ghost.

"Plop! Plop!"

Two ice balls blasted out on that evil ghost one after another, immediately freezing him in a layer of ice.

But that evil Ghost burst out his Yin qi from his body, which immediately made the ice broke into pieces.

"Ten steps to milk a man....your skill is too low....you can't beat that evil ghost...."

Wei Yi shouted.

"Don't look down on others, it's you whose skill is low."

But Liu Yi actually used those two ice balls to delay that evil ghost. Seizing this chance, he stepped on ice-skates and rushed to the place between Wei Yi and that evil ghost.

Meanwhile, his body jumped high and rushed toward that evil Ghost.

"Ten steps to milk a man! You're insane!"

Wei Yi was scared silly, thinking.

"This ten steps to milk a man, is he crazy?"

"Hou! Hou!"

Seemingly felt Liu Yi's provocation, that evil ghost was even more brutal. His pair of claws moved toward the incoming Liu Yi to capture him.

"Ugly, don't be so arrogant!"

Light flashed on top of his left hand.

The sun print constantly glittered.

The power of the great brilliant sun palm, this time, was used by Liu Yi to the max.

He wanted to use this palm to remove Wei Yi from danger.

At the same time, he wants to prove himself with this palm.

“Liu Yi....you really are crazy....”

Even Lin Tong couldn't help but exclaim, again and again, thinking.

‘The opposite is a four star monster!’

‘It's practically the same level as me!’

‘In front of him, Liu Yi is extremely weak!’

‘But Liu Yi unexpectedly want to make a direct confrontation with him!’

“Go fuck yourself for me!”

The evil ghost has arrived before Liu Yi. Liu Yi ruthlessly struck out his left palm.

Immediately, that glittered sun print shiningly burst out.

The chest of that evil ghost was directly hit, but he also grasped Liu Yi's shoulder.

Blood sputtered into the air.

That evil ghost wailed. His entire body was shot down and smashed a large tombstone with a bang.

“This guy....”

Wei Yi stared, “Even a four star evil ghost was knocked down by him...My eyes didn't deceive my right....”

But Liu Yi's body also fell to the ground. His shoulder was constantly bleeding.

Liu Yi's clothe was ripped on the shoulder, revealing three shocking scratch marks where blood constantly poured out. There's a piece of black,

covered the surrounding of those marks.

“The yin poison has entered your body....”

Lin Tong worriedly said, “Liu Yi, quickly expel the poison! Otherwise, it will be too late!”

“I know....”

Liu Yi was slightly weak. This yin poison has made his eyes slightly blackened.

This afternoon, Liu Yi already had a fight, so, he haven’t had a good rest today.

Now he received such a big wound, letting his life seemingly lost by half.

“Truly a lunatic!”

By this time, Wei Yi has run up to Liu Yi’s side and patted her hand on his shoulder. A portion of immortal power rushed to enter Liu Yi’s body through his shoulder.

Suddenly, Liu Yi’s shoulder was in pain. Black blood violently came out.

Liu Yi almost screamed in pain.

‘Fuck me....’ He cursed.

‘This girl’s hand is heavy.’

‘But, she seems to try to help me....’

“Ow!”

Although Liu Yi succeeded in knocking down that evil Ghost, That evil Ghost didn’t completely collapse.

He looked up from the ground. His gloomy eyes were fixed on Liu Yi and them.

“Tuantuan! Let him experience your power!”

Wei Yi was still helping Liu Yi expelling the poison and can’t be distracted.

The civet, although she has some fear, she was loyal to her owner. Turning into a ball of flame, she rushed toward that evil ghost.

The civet was very clever; She changed into a red fireball, constantly flying around, escaping from that evil Ghost's claws.

"Bam!"

The civet suddenly fell to the ground, flew between that evil ghost's crotch and finally hit his back.

Immediately, that evil ghost staggered, and could not help but growled.

The vicious wind continued to intermittently spined around that evil Ghost's body.

The fireball continued to fly around and, again and again, escaping from that evil ghost's claw.

"Tuantuan, you're amazing, just hold on for a moment!"

Wei Yi can't help but yelled in pleasant surprise.

'In just a moment, the poison on ten steps to milk a man will be completely expelled.' She thought.

But at this time, that evil ghost suddenly locked his gaze toward that fireball and blasted out a vicious wind.

This vicious black wind swept across the air and attacked that fireball.

Immediately, Tuantuan started to feel dizzy, staggered, and fell to the ground.

"Hou!"

Seeing that the cat fell to the ground, that evil ghost roared and rushed forward, ready to shred this cat who had angered him.

"Tuantuan!"

Wei Yi suddenly alarmed, but it seemed too late if she wanted to save her civet.

In a moment, that lovable civet will be caught by that evil spirit. Wei Yi's hand suddenly felt light.

Liu Yi, who previously was still on her arm, has turned into a shadow and rushed out without her knowing it.

His feet treaded on ice skates, still bleeding on the shoulder. But he nimbly folded his arms and saved Tuantuan from that evil ghost's claw.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 90

This chapter is **sponsored by Daniel of US**

“Huhu....scared me to death....”

Wei Yi could not help but shed tears.

Fortunately, Liu Yi's action was prompted enough. Otherwise, Tuantuan would definitely die.

The feeling between her and her civet was quite deep. Wei Yi can't imagine what would she do if something bad happen to Tuantuan.

“Hou!”

His prey was suddenly robbed from him, the evil ghost went furious.

His eyes swept away and fell on Wei Yi's body.

Suddenly he jumped up and sprang toward Wei Yi.

Wei Yi was still celebrating, but she suddenly saw that terrible evil spirit coming at her and immediately started to shout.

The civet Tuantuan has suffered serious injury, unable to help her master.

Soon, that evil spirit has arrived in front of Wei Yi. Liu Yi's figure appeared in the back of that evil spirit again, extended both of his hands and pulled back the evil Ghost's neck, keeping the evil Ghost from pressing down.

Wei Yi had closed her eyes in despair, but she didn't feel the pain that she thought she would receive. Therefore, she opened her eyes to look.

‘Mom....’

That evil Ghost's hideous face has stopped in front of her face. His fangs continued to bite but never reached her.

Liu Yi's shoulder has received poisonous wounds, but he still went all out to hold back that evil Ghost's neck. Because the strain was too much, the wounds on his shoulder continued to bleed.

At that moment, Wei Yi's heart couldn't help but be heavily shocked about it.

This man....was not a waste wood like what she imagined him to be....

“Get back!”

Holding the neck of that evil Ghost, Liu Yi has almost forgotten the pain on his shoulder.

After biting several times to no avail, that evil Ghost suddenly reached out his hands, trying to grab Wei Yi.

Wei Yi sat on the ground in fright while Liu Yi moved his hands toward the armpit of that evil Ghost and held him on the chest, preventing his movement, while simultaneously shouted at Wei Yi.

“Do you have any weapon? Chop him!”

Liu Yi’s potential suddenly burst out, making him able to tightly hold that evil ghost so that the Ghost unable to struggle, and can’t reach Wei Yi on the ground.

“I, I’m a summoner....how could I bring a weapon....”

Wei Yi grimaced.

“Aren’t you blessed by the God! How come you don’t have any exceptional skill!”

“You read too many novels! How could you believe all of that favored by the God thing!?”

“Then what should we do!?”

“You ask me, I ask who!?”

“Au!”

Just when the two people were arguing, the evil Ghost finally broke out.

A portion of Yin qi exploded out of that Ghost’s body, impacted Liu Yi’s chest head on, flew him backward, making his body directly crashed to a tombstone with a bang, and passed out there.

“Hei, hei! Ten steps to milk a man....you, how could you just fainted like that!”

Wei Yi saw this scene and could not help but nervously shouted, “You can’t



leave this lady alone!”

Her civet was badly injured; the vicious wind has entered the civet’s body, so, she could not use her summon this time.

Without her spirit animal, Wei Yi was like a girl with no clothes on, easily trampled by others.

“Hou! Hou!”

That evil ghost seemed proud of himself, looking at the Moon above his head and howled twice.

“His mother....are you a ghost or a beast....”

Wei Yi really wanted to escape, but her legs didn’t live up to her expectation, still shivering. She didn’t even have the strength to crawl away, let alone escape.

‘Martial brother....master....dad, mom....’ She called them out in her heart one by one.

‘I, I will die here....’

‘Huhu, I was wrong. Later on, I will not be so rude and unreasonable....’

‘Who is going to save me....’

At that moment, her past events flashed through Wei Yi’s mind.

The evil ghost didn’t care that she was a big miss on such a school. He only thought the vitality of the person in front of him was matchless.

He got up and rushed over again.

Wei Yi was finally in a real despair.

She sat there, waiting for the death to come.

But at this moment, a red light suddenly flew and wrapped around the neck of that evil Ghost, and forcefully pulled back his body.

“Even if you want to taste the beauty, you should not do it this way.”

A playful voice came from behind him.

Wei Yi was startled.

She opened her eyes again and saw that the ten steps to milk a man, who initially lie on the rubble, had suddenly disappeared.

In an instant, the one who climbed up was a tall man.

That man's long hair was silver, with a bundle of red thread behind his body.

He appeared to be wearing ten steps to milk a man's clothes!

But that suit was slowly changing, and soon, a black gown that was extended out from the hem appeared on his body.

The shoes on his feet have become a nice pair of boots

The initially pale mask was now cut in half and turned into half fox mask, hiding out the man's face and only revealing the man's angular jaw.

The most striking thing was, from the man's body, erupted out an astonishingly thick Demonic qi!

He stood there with the overwhelming amount of Demonic qi.

But this eruption of Demonic qi was only temporary. In a flash, it was retracted inside his body.

Presumably, in order to not attract his enemy!

Meanwhile, the red scarf around his neck has turned into a strip of red scarf in his hand. Simultaneously, the other section of the scarf has wound the neck of that evil ghost.

'This....' Wei Yi thought.

'Is he the previous ten steps to milk a man?

'My God!'

'How is this possible!'

"Such a beautiful Moon, such a beautiful girl....But why there exist such a nuisance? It's too ridiculous."

That silver-haired man stood there, one hand inside the pocket of his black dress, and the other hand holding the scarf, saying with a slight smile.

"Cute little beauty, if I beat this fellow, let's have a date."

A pair of golden eyes gazed through the holes on the mask and fell on Wei Yi's body.

Wei Yi's heart beat immediately sped up.

'This....how could this guy say such a shameful thing....' She thought.

'Is he really that ten steps to milk a man?'

"Au!"

The evil Ghost suddenly roared, turned around, and torn the red scarf around his neck.

"Ai....you broke my clothes, you must compensate."

Liu Yi retracted his, now short, scarf and put it on his neck.

The evil ghost has locked his target again and rushed toward Liu Yi.

"Watch out!"

Wei Yi can't help but warn.

"You don't need to be too concerned about me."

Liu Yi turned his head and hang an evil smile on his mouth as he said to Wei Yi.

"Otherwise, my heart will be moved."

Wei Yi was red-faced, thinking.

'Is this guy's mouth smeared with honey?'

That evil Ghost flew and, in a blink of an eye, arrived in front of Liu Yi and attacked him unceasingly.

But Liu Yi launched his spirit fox steps, acting like a completely different person from his clumsy appearance moments ago.

He deftly walked around the side of that evil Ghost and continued to avoid his claws.

"It turned out to be a four star, except there's no intelligence, only brute force."

"I never thought I would be in such a situation where I have to play 'catch

the chicken' with this guy. Little Fox, what method did you use to teach the other me."

Lin Tong, who was on his shoulder, trembled and didn't dare to speak.

"Pretty little Fox, you don't have to be afraid of me. Actually, for a beauty, I've always been tolerant."

Liu Yi saw that Lin Tong was afraid and could not help crookedly smiled, "As long as you train well the other me, I will allow you to exist. However, if you want to move against me....hehe...."

With that, his murderous aura burst out, letting Lin Tong's heart skipped a beat.

Not because she was moved, but because she was afraid. She thought.

'This Liu Yi....is really terrible....'

How could I....create such a monster!'

That evil Ghost suddenly opened his mouth, seemingly wanted to use his old trick to catch Liu Yi just as he caught Tuantuan off guard.

A sinister black wind swept out and destroyed the tombstone that blocked its path.

But Liu Yi, as the evil Ghost opened his mouth, has quickly dodged and appeared in midair. Both of his feet was stepping on top of that evil Ghost's head as he said with a smile.

"Again and again, you only tossed out those kinds of moves. When near your body, you send out you claws. When you were under pressure, you burst out your Yin qi, and your big move is spurting out the vicious wind. The fellow with three tricks, your continuous usage of these three moves is lame."

"Au!"

That evil Ghost suddenly brandished both of his claws toward the top of his head, trying to capture Liu Yi.

But Liu Yi took a step and deftly moved away from that evil Ghost's head, and lightly touched the ground.

“This old trick again.”

Liu Yi said, his body flashed, and he brandished both of his hands.

He condensed his demonic force in his left hand, and immortal power in his right hand, and then, at the same time, heavily slapped the evil Ghost's head on both of his ears.

“Bam!”

One red and one white, two lights brightly blasted out, blooming like fireworks.

That evil Ghost was directly blown off by half. The other half continued to discharge Yin qi, and his whole body staggeringly wandered on the ground.

Liu Yi, with the help from the shock wave of the explosion, flew far away, and landed on top of a tombstone, watching the swaying devil ghost as he said.

“Little Fox, later on, pass this to the other me. In this world, no enemy Boss can't be thrown away. You only need a certain kind of skill,”

With that, the evil Ghost fell to the ground with a loud bang, raising up the dust.

Liu Yi clapped his hands, turned into the wind, and suddenly arrived on the side of Wei Yi.

He held out a hand, then gently hooked Wei Yi's chin, and said.

“The evil Ghost has been removed, aren't we supposed to have a date?”

“I, I....”

Wei Yi's face was crimson red, her heart rate sped up, and her brain was a bit pale.

“Shusssh....”

Liu Yi put out a finger to her lips and gently said, “If you don't want to make me sad, don't refuse me.”

If these words were said by someone else, Wei Yi would surely feel disgusted.

But this was said by ten steps to milk a man; the result was, her face blushed!

She didn't know this was the effect of the Friendly Aura as well as the Golden Eyes.

The Moonlight flowed.

Liu Yi suddenly bent over, as if he was going to kiss her.

Wei Yi's body somewhat instantly stiffed.

'Must reject...,must reject....' She thought.

'Huhu....how come I can't move my body....'

'Oh God....I'm going to be kissed....'

'This is my first kiss....'

'This ten steps to milk a man....will actually take my first kiss....'

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 91

This chapter is **sponsored by Daniel of US**

Just when Liu Yi was about to kiss Wei Yi, there came a voice from the distance.

“Martial sister! Martial sister, where are you!”

Wei Yi was startled, and the haze in her brain became clear again.

But that ten steps to milk a man, who was in front of her just a moment ago, without knowing where, had disappeared from this cemetery.

At that moment, although Wei Yi was somewhat lucky, she actually felt a bit regret.

She could not understand, what exactly the attraction of that....ten steps to milk a man, so as to make her captivated with him....

She is God’s favored individual! How could she turn into some kind of sex crazed individual!

Besides, she became sex crazed without knowing whether that ten steps to milk a man, handsome or not....

‘Aaa!’

‘What am I thinking!’ She thought.

‘Wei Yi, Wei Yi, you’re bewitched by a drug!’

This little girl shook her head trying to keep herself sober.

“Martial sister!”

”Younger martial sister!”

And soon, two men’s figure slowly flew down from the sky and landed on Wei Yi’s side.

These two men, one is handsome and tall while the other is slightly pudgy, but none of their body didn’t disclose formidable aura.

The tall one, seeing Wei Yi sat on the ground, hastily pulled her up and

couldn't help but asked with concern.

"I, I am fine...."

Seeing her martial brothers, Wei Yi sobered up a bit.

Since her martial brothers have come, even if that evil Ghost were to wake up again, she didn't need to be afraid.

Her martial brothers, are the real experts!

"Chen Yu, I already told you, don't confuse younger martial sister with your joke. You see, you almost killed younger martial sister."

The elder martial brother said and turned his head to glare the stocky fellow on his side.

"Ahem...."

Zhang Chenyu sheepishly scratched his head and said, "I did not expect, younger martial sister would actually come here...."

"Humph, second martial brother, this is all your fault!"

Wei Yi pursed her mouth and unhappily said, "That evil Ghost has injured Tuantuan!"

With that, she picked up the injured civet and hugged her dearly.

"Come, younger martial sister, give her this dose of healing panacea, the injury will be quickly healed!"

At this time, Zhang Chengyu didn't dare to be stingy, and quickly took out his own healing panacea and gave a dose to his younger martial sister.

"Humph, that's more like it!"

Wei Yi grabbed the panacea and gave it to her civet's mouth.

"This evil Ghost....was killed by you?"

The eldest martial brother looked at the half body of the dead evil Ghost on the ground, and could not help but ask in surprise.

"Of...of course, this lady is the one who killed him!"

Wei Yi's mind was slightly panicked, but she still said that.



If her eldest martial brother knew about the matter of ten steps to milk a man, that would be a disaster....

The body of ten steps to milk a man has strong demonic energy....

If her eldest martial brother knew about this....ten steps to milk a man will surely be dead!

“Wow, younger martial sister is so brave!”

Zhang Chenyu the pudgy, grinningly shouted, “This is a four star evil Ghost! When me and eldest martial brother surveyed here for few days, he seemed to feel our breath and didn’t show himself. Unexpectedly, he appeared tonight when the two of us didn’t come! However, he still failed to get out of our Linglong school’s grasp and was killed by our brave younger martial sister!”

“Well, that’s for sure!”

Wei Yi suppressed her guilty conscience.

“I’m Linglong School’s most talented disciple! Sooner or later, I will exceed eldest martial brother!”

“Hehe....Eldest martial brother looks forward to that day.”

Not only that eldest martial brother did not show any anger; he even said that with a smile.

He looked at her martial sister’s eyes and showed a trace of indulging a spoiled child.

When he tried to say something, the body of that evil Ghost suddenly erupted an intermittent burst of Yin qi.

His half body unexpectedly crawled up and then madly rushed toward Wei Yi.

“Humph, a dying hit!”

That eldest martial brother gently raised his hand toward that evil ghost and said.

“Come out, Bai Yihu.”

While he spoke, a huge white tiger head, suddenly emerged from the ground.

This tiger head alone was more than three meter high.

He opened his big mouth, as if opening a big door, and directly swallowed that evil Ghost, and then disappeared.

“Little evil Ghost dare to come out to cause trouble.”

That eldest martial brother put his hand behind his back, and softly said, “I Li Xiangjun of Linglong School, deprive your chance for reincarnation.”

“Huhu....he finally completely killed!”

Wei Yi shook her little fist, and said, “Consider this as the revenge from my Tuantuan!”

“Slaying Demons and Killing Devils, are our obligations.”

Li Xiangjun smiled and said, “Next time you encounter demon or devil, younger martial sister should be without mercy and kill on the spot. If your ability is insufficient, just crush the Jade talisman that eldest martial brother gave you, and I will immediately come in a hurry.”

“A? That jade talisman can do that?!”

Wei Yi looked at the jade talisman that was hanging on her chest.

She didn't expect this birthday gift from his eldest martial brother, is also an artifact that can be used as an emergency beacon.

“Of course! If you would just crush the jade talisman, you wouldn't be in a dangerous situation a moment ago!”

Zhang Chenyu said from the side.

“Go to hell! You give-advice-in-hindsight second martial brother!

Wei Yi rolled her eyes at her martial brother.

‘He didn't say this before I come here, what's the use in saying it now after it's all over!’ She thought.

‘It was truly dangerous just a moment ago!’

‘If not for the ten steps to milk a man....I might be dead by now.’

Thinking about this, Wei Yi pulled out her phone, and looked for something.

“The evil ghost has been eliminated, me and Chenyu have to go back.

Li Xiangjun slowly said, “Younger martial sister, you should be more careful in experiencing this mundane world. If there’s anything, remember that you must crush that jade talisman, I will soon come.”

“M, I know. Eldest martial brother, you’re very long-winded!”

“Hehe, we take our leave then.”

The two experts said and then flew together into the air.

While Wei Yi hugged her civet, and slowly left the cemetery.

When they were gone, a black shadow slowly fell from the sky and landed in the cemetery.

If Liu Yi saw this woman, he would certainly be amazed and exclaimed, “Fuck me, such a beautiful woman!”

This woman is about 17-18 years old, with delicate features. Her eyes are the most beautiful, large and bright, as if they were able to speak.

She walked twice around this cemetery, and her beautiful brows frowned as if she was baffled about something.

She finally stood in the center of the cemetery, her pair of hands move in a strange pattern as if she was about to cast a spell.

In front of her body, immediately emerged a flame.

The red flame turned into a fuzzy image.

The images of Liu Yi, Wei Yi, as well as that evil Ghost appeared there.

These images completely reproduce the previous experiences of Liu Yi and them.

The last image showed how the tiger swallowed that evil Ghost; the woman deeply furrowed her brows.

When she was still alarmed, a figure of a woman suddenly fell from under the moonlight.

This female is also beautiful, but compared to the previous woman, she has a more obsequious attitude.

Moreover, the pair of meatballs on her chest are amazing. Those are even bigger than Wang Lele's!

"Wenren Qian, what did the Leader say about your matter?"

That woman put a hand on her waist and coaxingly asked.

"The Leader want to remember it, so he let me ask you."

That Wenren Qian still stood there, still not saying anything, but she shook her head.

"What wrong? Why did you shake your head?"

The opposite obsequious woman did not feel good about it.

Wenren Qian shook her head, showed the image of that evil Ghost, and then scattered it with a pinch of her palm.

"What! You mean our Ghost servant that we raised has been killed!?"

That woman suddenly angry and hysterically cried, "Hateful! This was our most promising Ghost servant.... Wenren Qian, how do you explain this! Although we are all the Law Protector, I Jiang Qini didn't like you since the beginning! Don't think that just because The Leader is your foster father, you can act undisciplined and out of control in our Great God Religion! Wen Renqian, you slut, how do you want to explain the matter this time!"

Wenren Qian didn't speak, just frowning her brows, nor she looked at Jiang Qini; she seemed to be thinking about something.

"Hateful! You actually dare not to pay attention to me Jiang Qini!"

Jiang Qini said, stretched out her hand and, from her breast, pulled out a skeleton head.

But her breasts size hasn't changed. They were still amazingly great.

Wenren Qian noticed the thick Yin qi on that skull and immediately turned her head; Her eyes turned bright Thick raging flame, suddenly burst out of Wen Renqian's body.

The flame gradually took the shape of a huge flame sword; The sword was pointed to the opposite Jiang Qini.

These two Law Protector of the Great God Religion, seemingly about to start a fight.

At this time, a giant flame, suddenly burned on their side.

That flame formed a fuzzy face, looking at the two women, and loudly snapped.

“What are you doing?”

“Leader!”

Wenren Qian and Jiang Qini turned to see the face on the fire, quickly knelt down, and bowed.

“Jiang Qini, why are you making a move against Law Protector Wenren?”

That face scolded.

“Reporting to Leader!”

Jian Qini quickly said, “Under Wenren Qian’s supervision, we unexpectedly lost our most promising Ghost servant! Subordinate, subordinate merely asking her to explain about it!”

“Explanation? Do you need to attack her just for an explanation?”

The face in the flame sprayed out flame from the mouth, and scolded, “Jiang Qini, we are all people of the Great God, and we are all working for the Great God; We should stick together! You actually showed you fangs toward your fellow brothers and sisters! This Leader, is too disappointed with you!”

“Leader, subordinate admit her mistake!”

Hearing the Leader’s words, Jiang Qini immediately panicked and hastily apologized.

“Humph, Jiang Qini, don’t think that this Leader didn’t know what you’re thinking. But at the present, the Twelve Zodiac plan is around the corner, so this Leader will give you another chance. Hopefully, you won’t let this Leader down again!”

“Yes, Leader, this subordinate ask to be excused....”

Jiang Qini was dejected and took a malicious glance at Wenren Qian, and then turned into a heap of black wind filled with dust, to disappear from this cemetery.

Wenren Qian still half-kneeled on the ground without saying anything.

“This Leader’s obedient daughter, don’t lower yourself to the same level as that Jiang Qini. She is just jealous of you.”

The face on the flame turned around to look at Wenren Qian and said amiably.

“They are all jealous of you. Jealous of your unique gift. Jealous that you are the reincarnation of the Great God.”

## Chapter 92 I Am Your Dad?

Wenren Qian's face became even more depressed.

"Don't pay attention to their envy. You are the reincarnation of the Great God, the hope of our Great God Religion. This Leader at that time, after seeing your true body, decided to save you and raise you to this day."

Wenren Qian slightly shook her head.

"Dear daughter, I know what you're thinking."

That leader quickly added, "Don't be confused. All that we've done was to strive hard for the New World. There might be some sacrifices to this endeavor. But, since the ancient times, those who struggle will bleed. Those people did not die in vain, they will ultimately return into the arms of the Great God."

With that, his face looked upright, and said, "Don't forget, how your parents died. This world is dirty, messy, full of corruption and desire. What we want to do, is to wash the sins of the World, and establish a New World. For this New World, you have to work hard."

Wenren Qian nodded. Her look gradually became firm.

"Good. Dear daughter, since the Ghost servant was dead, continue to develop a new Ghost servant. For our plan, for our Great God Religion, for the New World, you can do it. Dear daughter, this Leader believes in you."

Finished speaking, that fire changed into a pointed flame and instantly dissipated.

Wenren Qian stood up, her gaze suddenly locked onto a section of a red piece of cloth on the ground.

She picked up the rag in her hand and gently sniffed twice.

A fire came up in front of her, which formed the image of Liu Yi.

First, it was the black suited Liu Yi, then the demonic Liu Yi.

But, no matter what image, there was a mask on his face.

‘Who could it be....’

Wenren Qian thought in her mind, ‘He should be a human, but, why would he have a demonic energy? Strange.’

Compared with the matter of the Ghost servant, Wenren Qian was more curious about this person.

She didn’t know if in the future she can have the opportunity to meet with this guy.

It seems like, in this world, there is another strange existence other than herself.

But at this time, the man that made Wenren Qian curious suddenly woke up from the bed.

“Wei Yi, quickly run!”

Liu Yi sat up with cold sweat.

“Run your sister!”

Lin Tong lie on his bed, lazily stretched herself and said.

‘This version of Liu Yi is the best....’

Lin Tong said in her heart.

When this version of Liu Yi emerged, Lin Tong felt a strange kind of intimacy.

“You’re in your home now.”

“Huh?”

Liu Yi was surprised and looked around to discover that he was not in the cemetery anymore, but on his bed in his home.

There was no light in the room, only the faint Moonlight reflected into the room from the outside.

‘When did I come back....’ Liu Yi thought.

His last memory was pulling the evil Ghost away from Wei Yi....



But after that....he can't remember anything?

"Was my second personality awakened?"

Liu Yi anxiously asked Lin Tong in a hurry.

"Could you possibly sleepwalk back into your house?"

"He awakened again...."

Liu Yi touched the headache in his forehead, "What about Wei Yi, what happened to her? And what about that evil Ghost?"

He asked as he took off the mask.

Wearing that mask made his breathing somewhat uncomfortable.

"The evil Ghost was killed by you."

"What?"

Liu Yi was stunned, thinking.

'That was a level four evil Ghost!'

'With my two star strength, I was able to kill him?'

"Yes, the other you want me to tell you that, even if you face with a superior opponent, as long as you understand their skills, you can find a way to defeat them."

The little Fox yawned and said.

After a big day without resting, she was a bit tired now.

When Liu Yi haven't woke up just now, she has stood by his side.

And now Liu Yi was awake, his injury was also a lot better now. So, she felt relieved.

Her eyelids have become somewhat heavy.

Her spiritual strength was spent....

She didn't know when she would be able to break from the seal, and return to her original body....

"These words are difficult for me to accept...."

Liu Yi rubbed his temples, feeling a headache, thinking.

‘The other me....’

‘Is actually so formidable....’

He vaguely felt somewhat afraid.

‘Will there be a day, the other me confront and attack me and then become the real me?’

‘It looks like the only way to make sure that doesn’t happen is to go all out and make myself formidable....’

‘Previously, when the other me awake, I, at the very least, can still retain my consciousness.’

‘Now....I immediately stay unconscious....’

“So what if it were difficult....this lady haven’t said anything difficult....”

Lin Tong was talking, but her voice was getting smaller and smaller, and finally fell asleep.

Liu Yi came down from the bed and decided to throw this matter into the back of his head, and looked for a task again.

He skillfully turned on the computer and checked on the mission that he took today.

He initially wanted to just casually check, but he was suddenly surprised and almost shouted out.

‘Fuck me....’ He exclaimed in his heart.

‘How could this mission automatically became a D-rank mission!?’

‘The bonus also directly turned into 10000!’

‘I am rich. I am rich....’

‘Did Wei Yi change it?’

‘Unexpectedly, this girl also has such a good side....’

‘Although she was a bit tenderly barbaric, but at least her heart is quite good.’

‘She can still be reformed, hehe....’

Liu Yi can't help but please.

After earning ten thousand for the night, he was very excited.

‘If only everyday I can earn ten thousand, I could make three hundred thousand in a month! And my yearly salary will be three million!’

‘Fuck me. This would make me the Prince Charming for the girls!’

Liu Yi can't help but fantasize all kinds of things.

Afterward, he suddenly remembered that he didn't have the ability to complete the D-rank mission yet....

But for now, an E-rank mission was actually not bad....

In addition, the E-rank mission in Northern Dragon City was not particularly many. In a month, six or seven mission can already be counted as a lot.

It can be said, he can earn money up to seven times in a month....

However, that was still a lot.

For a student like him, he can be counted as fairly well off.

If he persist in doing this for a year, at least, he wouldn't have any issue with the college tuition.

‘Yes, Liu Yi, come on, you can do it!’

Liu Yi believed he would achieve this goal.

‘What Murong Hong? Could it be only the rich who can decide everything!?’

‘Money, I Liu Yi, can also earn!’

‘Now I am only a two star. If I continue to cultivate, my strength will continue to make progress.’

‘When one day I have the same strength as that Li Biyue, I will be able to do the high level mission!’

‘When the time comes, a single A-level mission will give me a ten million....’

‘I will definitely earn money much faster than Murong Hong!’

‘Haha!’

Liu Yi’s eyes already began to emit golden light.

If Lin Tong was awake, she would think that Liu Yi has opened his golden eyes.

When Liu Yi was still in a state of euphoric, there was suddenly a thumping sound on the balcony door.

Liu Yi suddenly awoke.

‘This must be that girl Ma Yuanyuan!’

‘This girl doesn’t know how to enter through the main entrance!’

‘Fortunately, I remember to close the balcony door. Otherwise, this girl will definitely run into my room to make trouble.’

Liu Yi cleared the task and shut down the computer, and then came to the front of the balcony.

Soon, the cute little girl in pink pajama came into Liu Yi’s view.

This girl was lying on the balcony door glass. Her cute little mouth angrily looked at him.

Her protruding chest was pressed against the glass, making Liu Yi’s heart slightly beat faster, thinking.

‘This girl....did she ever pay attention to this....’

‘She is so used to be unbridled in front of me....’

Liu Yi stepped forward and opened the balcony door key.

“Hateful silly ox, why did you lock the balcony door!”

After Ma Yuanyuan entered the room, she directly came to his face to criticize him.

“Don’t you know that it’s Autumn now! This princess almost froze to death outside! You actually locked the door!”

With that, Ma Yuanyuan folded her arms and shook twice.

“Why don’t you come to your home!”

Liu Yi can’t help but say, “If you can’t open this door, you can always go back to your room....”

“There’s nobody home. Grandma went out playing Mahjong, and sister have not come....”

This girl pursed her mouth and said.

‘Ma Yixuan haven’t come home?’ Liu Yi thought.

Liu Yi’s heart was slightly uncomfortable, but it was soon gone.

His feelings for Ma Yixuan has indeed reduced a lot.

“By the way, big silly ox, do you have any plan on the first of October (TL: A Week Long National Holiday in Mainland China, on 1st May, and 1st Oct)?”

“I don’t know....I still don’t know how many days it will be for my school....”

Liu Yi was quite vexed.

Each time there was a Holiday, it will only for a few days....

His school cheated him of his holidays....

But this will be a compulsory National Holiday, so the school must give the students their vacation days on this holiday.

On the other hand, the school has put some counter measures. On Saturday and Sunday, the students actually have to attend the classes.

In summary, it’s basically the same as reducing the vacation days.

And to make up for the holidays, the optional seven days class will be a compulsory now!

This is a total rip-off! Truly a catastrophic disaster!

Thinking about this holiday, Liu Yi became even more distressed.

‘Might as well not to have this holiday!’

When Liu Yi was depressed, Ma Yuanyuan also said.

“Big silly ox, in that Holiday, for several days our school will hold the

Autumn sports competition! There's an event that needs the parents participation....you, can you come and act as my parents?"

"What?"

Liu Yi was surprised, thinking.

'How could I look like this girl's parent?'

He touched his chin, 'Do I look old?'

"What should I do if you don't go!? I initially want to ask my sister for that event! Who knows she has no free time now! Do you want me to be laughed at by my schoolmates?"

"This....do I look like your father...."

Liu Yi asked.

"Die! Die!"

Ma Yuanyuan immediately stepped on Liu Yi's foot, and angrily said, "Can't you pretend to be my brother?"

"Ah, right, ha....now you see how my brain is...."

Liu Yi patted his head, thinking, 'So many things happened today, letting my head somewhat insufficient.'

"Humph, that's why I call you big silly ox! This matter is settled. Our games will be on wednesday, you must come at that day!"

"Wait a minute! I still have a class that day!"

Liu Yi said in his heart, 'My school used to have the Autumn sports competition!'

'But my school is cheating! Now, my school only have one sports competition, and that's in spring.'

'The second and third year students used to participate in these events, but then the school decided that studying is more important. Those sports event, thus relegated to the younger students.'

Thinking about this, Liu Yi was almost in tears.

"I don't care, no matter what, you've promised to this princess! It's settled!"

You must come on Wednesday, or else you die!”

With that, the girl happily went back to her home through the balcony, bouncing and humming.

Liu Yi’s head hurt; hurt from various problems.

“This is bad....How could I explain this to teacher....oh, no, fuck! This father hasn’t written my weekend homework! It’s finished....It’s completely finished....”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 93

## Chapter 93 New Mode Of Chatting

Liu Yi fought back his inclination to yawn twice while taking a breathing technique to revive his spirit as he ran over the bridge across the river.

Last night was without sleep, as he neglected his cultivation training to thoroughly deal with his homework.

If the evil Ghost that he beat last night were ranked as level D, then his homework would rank as level A.

‘His mother, I’d rather fight with that evil Ghost once again!’ Was Liu Yi’s thought last night.

Writing his homework was a big headache for him.

The other subjects were, fortunately, because of his breathing technique that enabled him to have a photographic memory, easy to write.

But the extremely evil math homework, actually wanted to take his Liu Yi’s life.

The several sheet of homework papers were simply elusive for him to deal with.

In the end, he carelessly wrote the answers. In any case, the questions have multiple-choice ABCD answers, adding a few scribbles on the big topics.

He truly doesn’t know the answers.....

Those questions recognize him, but he doesn’t know those questions!

These various kinds of questions, were truly a big headache for Liu Yi.

Each weekend, the school teacher will arrange a large amount of homework papers for the student to finish during the weekend.

A student wants to live a pleasant Saturday and Sunday?

A dream!

Only two types of happiness happen every weekend.



One is to completely finish the papers early.

The other one is to completely rip apart the papers.

However, those who rip apart the homework, will probably not feel happy, but feeling hurt instead.

Liu Yi was day-dreaming while jogging on the bridge.

Just at this time, a girl's voice rang from behind.

Liu Yi heard this sound, the whole body suddenly covered with pins and needles.

'Bad....' He thought.

For him, this sound was several times more terrible than the evil Ghost....

Liu Yi's feet were suddenly light like the wind, launching his spirit fox steps and quickened his pace to rapidly escape.

Initially called Liu Yi, wanting him to stop, the owner of the voice didn't expect Liu Yi to actually run faster and faster, letting her suddenly called out anxiously behind him.

"Liu Yi....don't run....I'm not here to fight you...."

"Only a ghost would believe you!"

Liu Yi said as he ran, without the slightest bit intention to slow down.

"Liu Yi! You bastard....You stop, I have important matters to say to you!"

That voice was more anxious.

Liu Yi thought, 'Treating a woman like this seems not too good....'

'Grandpa said, men have to be gentlemen.'

'Well, let see what will this girl do first.'

Liu Yi finally stopped his feet, stood in place, and turned around toward Yuan Zhenyue, who looked out of breath from running.

"Bastard....you, you this guy....really want to get arrested!"

Yuan Zhenyue looked at Liu Yi with resentment, seemingly anxious to beat Liu Yi into a pulp.

"I didn't break the law, you can't just arrest people!"

Liu Yi hastily said.

"Humph!"

Yuan Zhenyue grunted, seemed very reluctant, thinking.

'If I can really arrest him, it would be splendid!'

'Keep him at home and fight with him everyday, would be even more excellent.'

Yuan Zhenyue was startled about her own ideas.

'Strange, how could my ideas were such a mess.'

"Police sister, why are you looking for me, is there any problems? I still have to rush to my school for the class!"

Liu Yi looked at the uniformed Yuan Zhenyue and asked.

"Can't I look for you even if there's no problem? Don't forget, I'm a police officer, you expect me to look for you if there's a problem?"

"This....of course, not."

Liu Yi smiled, thinking, 'How could I forget about this fact.'

"Humph, I have good intentions to caution you!"

Yuan Zhenyue put her hands on her hips as she said, "I called your phone several times but you seemed to turn it off, so, I have been squatting here waiting for you to show up!"

'Wow, these words are strange. They are no different than wanting to arrest me!' Liu Yi thought.

"My phone is broken. I'll change it in a couple of days."

Liu Yi had to explain.

"Better change it quick. What to do if I have an important matter to look for you? I don't want to wait for you here everyday!"

Yuan Zhenyue rolled her eyes and said to Liu Yi.

"Recently, there has been a criminal on the run. That criminal is

responsible for many cases.

“Em, what does this have anything to do with me?”

Liu Yi was puzzled, “I’m just an ordinary student....”

“This fugitive was seemingly spotted in your general area, so I want you to be careful.”

Yuan Zhenyue said, “Of course, if possible, it would be better if you can cooperate with us to catch him.”

“Whoa, hold on there. I’m just an ordinary student, how could you ask me to catch a criminal....”

“Really?”

Yuan Zhenyue blinked her eyes, “Forget it then....It seems an ordinary student wouldn’t be interested in 50000 yuan reward money.”

“Wait a minute!”

Liu Yi quickly stayed on topic, “What do you mean by 50000?”

“I did not see it....you this fellow....turn out to be greedy....”

Yuan Zhenyue initially dropped the word casually, but she never thought that this kid really took the bait!

“This....since it involves money, it would naturally make people curious....”

Liu Yi smiled sheepishly.

“Actually, that’s just the reward policy from the top. If someone provide effective clue for the fugitive’s whereabouts, they will receive 1000 bonus money. If they assist in the arrest, they can get up to 50000 reward money. The reason for this policy is to make the fugitive feel restricted and to force him out. This criminal is a recidivist, thus you better not look for him alone by yourself, so as to avoid him to take action on you, letting you die in injustice. I actually come here to remind you and your classmates to be careful around here, don’t run around at night in the vicinity of the school. Just be wary for these two days around your school.”

“You’re waiting here for me, just for this thing!?”

Liu Yi can't help but ask.

"Actually....I've been looking for an excuse to come and see you."

Yuan Zhenyue smiled as she rubbed her fist.

"Damn! I knew it!"

Liu Yi suddenly got goosebumps on his back, and immediately bolted to madly run away.

"Don't run! A fight will not get you pregnant!"

Yuan Zhenyue kept on shouting from behind.

"I'm not afraid of being pregnant! I'm afraid of abortion!"

Liu Yi didn't want to fight with Yuan Zhenyue, let alone here on the bridge. If trouble comes, it would be too late.

"That damn guy...."

Yuan Zhenyue really can't overtake him, making her stomped her feet in anger behind him.

"You wait! You can't escape from my palm!"

But Liu Yi already ran far away.

After running at full speed for about five minutes, Liu Yi has left Yuan Zhenyue to disappear without any trace.

Next to this place was an avenue, after that, he will arrive at the school.

The usually green trees along the road, have now turned yellow.

The yellow leaves on the ground would creak when being stepped on.

After all, this was already late in autumn. After a hot spell during autumn, Northern Dragon City will welcome its winter.

The evening will come fast in Northern Dragon City during winter. Walking on the night when the snow flutters about is very beautiful, naturally it's also very cold.

Since Liu Yi enters the world of immortal cultivation, the temperature around him will be automatically balanced.

In other words, he will feel warm in the winter and cool in the summer. This automatic temperature control is stronger than a thermostat.

Liu Yi stepped on the fallen leaves, which continued to exude crackling sounds.

Because it was early in the morning, no one else is around. Liu Yi was alone on the road.

But at this time, Lin Tong, who was lying on his shoulder, suddenly screamed.

“Liu Yi, watch out! Get back!”

Although he didn't know what happen, regarding his Fox sister's words, he firmly believed it.

He immediately stopped his feet and jumped backward three to four meters away.

And just before he landed, all of a sudden, bam, a column of red fire suddenly rose up on the place where he previously stop.

This column of fire exuded a scorching heat, directly on his face, making Liu Yi unable to bear and stepped back several steps.

He was shocked, thinking, ‘What's going on!’

But that column of fire gradually dispersed and, from the inside, a woman's figure slowly came out.

The woman's figure was delicate, her eyes are exceptionally beautiful. When she blinked, her long eyelashes trembled, making Liu Yi's heart also fluttered.

She sniffed her nose and then nodded as if to determine something.

‘This girl....where did she come from....’ Liu Yi thought.

‘Is she also a cultivator?’

“Such a strong evil qi....”

Lin Tong kept on cautioning him, “Liu Yi....be careful, she's not a person to be trifled with....be ready to escape at any time....”

Hearing what Lin Tong said, Liu Yi immediately alarmed.

He activate his spirit fox steps, produced ice-skates under his feet, slightly bent his knees and was about to leave.

The opposite girl quickly waved her hand, looking worried.

Her bright and intelligent big eyes kept on open as she continued to wave her hand.

“What? Can’t you talk?”

Liu Yi was surprised, thinking.

‘Is she a mute?’

The opposite woman with beautiful eyes nodded and then held out her hand to write some words in front of Liu Yi.

Suddenly, a text made of fire appeared in the air.

“I am Wenren Qian, not a bad person. Please don’t be afraid,” The words read.

‘I’ll be damned....’ Liu Yi thought.

‘There’s actually such a method to chat!’

Liu Yi was immediately shocked.

‘This is more powerful compared with his mother QQ2011. Don’t know if can be set to shake the phone if the message arrives.’

That Wenren Qian looked at the slightly stunned Liu Yi and took out a piece of torn cloth from behind her.

After Liu Yi seen this cloth, he was immediately on guard, thinking.

‘This is the half torn scarf!’

‘No wonder when I got back, I found the red scarf was a bit incomplete. Thus, I have to put it inside the sumeru ring to fix it.’

‘How could this woman have this....’

‘She has discovered my true identity!’

“Don’t be afraid. I’m just curious.”

Wenren Qian hastily wrote again, "I'm not going to tell others about your true identity....I'm just wondering....in your body, how could there be a demonic energy...."

"This has nothing to do with you!"

Liu Yi's wariness was still not down.

'Grandpa said, the more beautiful the woman, the more frightening she is.' He thought.

'This girl is gorgeous....'

'She must be terrible!'

"So, there really is a demonic energy!"

Wenren Qian's eyes lit up.

"Idiot! Liu Yi you big idiot!"

Lin Tong was worried to death, thinking.

'How could I ever bump into such a gigantic idiot!'

"You, you, you, you think too much...." Liu Yi hastily said to Wenren Qian.

Liu Yi also thought of himself as too silly, in just a few words, he already spilled the beans.

"Hehe....you don't need to worry, I don't have any ill intention toward you."

Wenren Qian gently smiled. Her smile was breathtaking. It suddenly even made Liu Yi to become absent minded.

'This girl....her smile is actually very attractive....'

'I'm really not quite sure why would Lin Tong say that she's evil....'

"I'm just curious and came here to take a look. Where would you hide your demonic energy....why it's completely gone now."

The girl's writing was also exquisite....

"Well....why don't you let me take a look."

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 94

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Index](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

Wenren Qian suddenly reached out her hand toward Liu Yi, immediately scaring him.

He hastily retreated, turned around using the ice-skates in his feet, and prepared to accelerate to escape.

But when he turned around, Wenren Qian was still standing in front of him.

‘What kind of speed is this!’ He wondered.

“This woman is an expert! Quickly run!”

Lin Tong exclaimed aloud.

Liu Yi also wanted to escape, but Wenren Qian’s hand is already on top of his forehead.

Suddenly, a force emerged in Liu Yi’s head.

“Ah....”

He could not help but scream, feeling incredible pain in his head.

Finally, his eyes went dark, his whole body half kneeled on the ground, his head was a mess.

But at this time, a red text unceasingly burst out inside Liu Yi’s head.

These words, when combined together, actually formed a heart sutra.

Four burning words emerged in Liu Yi’s mind

Red Blood Sutra Code

On Liu Yi’s body, suddenly emerged red flame.

When he opened his eyes, red light flowing out of his eyes.

A fiery force started circulating inside Liu Yi’s body.

In Liu Yi’s body, there are no longer only red stream of qi and white stream of qi.



Black stream of qi emerged out from his pubic region and began to circulate according to the heavenly circulation.

This black stream of qi poured into his first star jade and then poured into his second star jade.

“Devil qi....”

Lin Tong exclaimed.

“Oh my god....this woman, what did she do!”

The forces in Liu Yi’s body have been a mess!

Immortal qi, Demon qi, and now Devil qi, which was infused by this woman!

Moreover, she also imparted him the devil technique!

Red Blood Sutra Code!

Lin Tong dared not to imagine, what will Liu Yi’s future be like!

The Red Blood Sutra Code continuously circulated inside Liu Yi’s body.

Liu Yi’s body was filled with evil qi.

The silver-white long hair has been stretched out by him.

His eyes turned golden, one of his hand was inside his pocket while the other hand was placed in front of his body. His palm was slightly burning with red flame as he looked at Wenren Qian before him.

“Interesting....”

Liu Yi snuffed the red flame on his hand and then smiled, “Really interesting....Unexpectedly, someone will use this method to wake me up....”

“So this is the demon....”

Wenren Qian wrote a few flaming words in front of her.

“I must say, I’d like to thank you.”

Liu Yi smiled crookedly, “Being awakened by a beauty, who also gave me such a good heart sutra....This thing is called, red blood devil flame, right?”

“Yes, this is a high-level heart sutra that belongs to me and my foster

father. My foster father said, besides God's chosen people, no one can cultivate this cultivation technique. Instead, they will be consumed by the devil flame. But you....are not an ordinary man...."

A lonely light flashed through Wenren Qian's beautiful eyes.

"Oh? You mean....If I get rid of you, there are only two people in this world that can cultivate this heart sutra right?"

Wenren Qian's eyes opened widely in an instant.

"Hehe....I'm just kidding with you."

Liu Yi said, flicked his finger, then slowly flew out a flame from his finger, which turned into a long slender flame that snaked around his body and finally fell on top of his finger on his other hand.

That Wenren Qian watched this, unable to close her mouth.

She can't imagine that a person who just learned the Blood Red Sutra Code, could actually have such an exquisite control of this red blood devil flame!

Even she....the so-called reincarnation of God, when she first learned this Sutra Code, was impossible to exert such a high level of fine control.

This fellow....is really unordinary.

An exciting light came out of Wenren Qian's eyes.

"Fire Chain!"

At this time, in front of Wenren Qian, Liu Yi suddenly threw out a flame snake.

This snake-like fire formed a chain, about two fingers thick, which instantly wrapped around Wenren Qian's body.

Wenren Qian was surprised, red roaring flame burst out of her body, which instantly broke the fire chain of Liu Yi.

"Hehe, don't be afraid. I mean no harm." Liu Yi said.

A vindictive smile hung on his mouth, reading Wenren Qian's words, and said, "I was just trying your strength."

"You...."

Wenren Qian slightly frowned her eyebrows, and then wrote a bunch of ellipsis.”

“Your strength, according to my conservative estimate, is above five stars.” Liu Yi said.

“It seems like, temporarily, it’s good that you are not my enemy....I must go back. If I stay out for a long time, the other me would not be happy. Well, beauty, next time if you wish for me, use an ordinary method to find me.”

With that, Liu Yi slightly closed his eyes.

The demon energy on his body instantly melted away.

Wenren Qian curiously looked at Liu Yi’s eyes, and suddenly remembered something.

She left a string of text in the air and then turned into a flame and disappeared.

When Liu Yi slowly opened his eyes, that bright-eyed beauty was gone.

There were only a few flaming words left in the air, which slowly dissipated.

“Looking forward to our next meeting....”

‘Fuck! I don’t want us to meet again, ok!’ Liu Yi thought.

Liu Yi felt that the red blood sutra code was silently running within his body. Moreover, there’s also the flow of devil qi, which he didn’t know what to do about it.

A mess, such a mess....

But after he regained his consciousness, that devil qi gradually quieted down.

“Fox sister....what should I do now....”

Liu Yi felt that his other personality was becoming even more powerful.

“I don’t now either....just take one step at a time....”

Lin Ton can only say, “You have to cultivate your Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra and your Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra, and try to suppress your devil qi.”

“I know....”

Liu Yi nodded his head, then he remembered that he had to go to school. So this thing will have to, temporarily, be thrown to the back of his head.

“How come the boss still not activate his phone?”

Chen Cai put down his phone and gloomily muttered.

When he arrived at the class this morning, Chen Cai suddenly discovered that his gel pen doesn't work.

This guy always goes to school with only one pen, if anything happens he would usually borrow from Liu Yi.

But there seemed to be an English test today, so if when the time comes, Liu Yi only brings one pen, that would be bad.

Initially, he wanted Liu Yi to buy one along the way, but his call never got through, making him depressed.

After much deliberation, he got up and went out of the classroom, preparing himself to go downstairs to buy one.

When he just got out of the classroom, Kevin, with two other students, blocked his way.

“Hey, look who's here, it's Chen Cai.”

Kevin stopped in front of Chen Cai and wouldn't let him pass.

“You, what do you want....”

Chen Cai was somewhat afraid.

He is usually an overly cautious and prudent student. Although his mouth likes to spout nonsense, when he saw Kevin and his gang, he was a bit afraid.

“Hehe, we brothers want to play some billiard, but we don't have pocket money. Chen Cai, we are all good classmates, you should understand what I mean.”

With that, Kevin repeatedly rubbed his thumb and his index finger together.

His mean was too obvious.

“But....but I don’t have any money....”

Chen Cai did have 100 yuan in his pocket.

This is his pocket money from his mom. But he wants to spend it on gifts for the girl on the fourth class in order to woo her.

In Chen Cai words, this is the so-called the girl’s fund!

If it were extorted by Kevin....then what about him?

Won’t he be single forever?

No way....Prior to this ‘first of October,’ he must solve his bachelor’s issue!

Incidentally, if he can also solve his virginity problem, so much the better....

“No money?”

Kevin sneered, “Chen Cai, it seems you’re not honest with me. You have money or not, better let me search it for myself, how about it?”

“No way....”

Chen Cai unconsciously tightened his right pocket.

Seeing Chen Cai’s movement, Kevin was even happier.

“Chen Cai, if I found out that you have the money, don’t blame me for beating you. Lying is not a good thing to do you know.”

“Kevin! This is the school! You, you don’t be too presumptuous here!”

Chen Cai was particularly helpless.

“So what if this is school? I’m telling you, right now there’s no Yuan Shaojun, so, this school is my, Kevin, territory now, understand?”

Kevin proudly said, “If you don’t want to take this beating, honestly pull out your money!”

“I, I’m Liu Yi’s best friend....if you rob me of my money, aren’t you afraid Liu Yi will come looking for you?”

“Liu Yi?”

Kevin suddenly froze for a moment, and then he saw the two friends on his

side and laughed.

“So what if it’s Liu Yi? Not to mention that he’s not here, even if he’s here, I will make him kneel down in front of me and call me, Kevin, grandpa!”

“Who’s the one that you want to make him kneel and call you grandpa?”

At this time, a familiar voice sounded from behind Kevin.

Goosebumps suddenly burst out of Kevin’s body, his expression was like someone who was being cursed, his small face became pale.

He gingerly turned his head and immediately saw Liu Yi stood behind him.

His two friends ran away in horror, in a blink of an eye, they disappeared.

Kevin also wanted to run, but his legs have turned soft.

‘Why is such a difficult to extort money these days....’ He thought.

For several days, he was honest, until he finally bumped into a soft target Chen Cai, but in the end, he actually met with Liu Yi.

“I will kneel down and call you grandpa....”

Kevin said, directly softened his legs and kneeled down.

Liu Yi is the one who crippled Yuan Shaojun....

The matter of him fighting off one hundred students by himself has spread all over the school....

Kevin can’t think of a reason why he would be so unlucky.

Directly after speaking badly about a person behind his back, he actually ran into that person.

Kevin thought in his heart...

‘How could there be such a coincidence.....’

“Who wants to be your grandpa!”

Liu Yi was already in an unhappy mood. Seeing Kevin like this, he was even more unhappy.

“How could I met with such bad luck.’ Kevin thought.

‘Don’t tell me I’m the reincarnation of a crow?’ (In Chinese culture, when a

crow sings, it will bring bad luck) “Haha! Kevin, aren’t you very arrogant just a moment ago!”

But Chen Cai was excited at this time. The table has turned, so, he’s the one who sings right now!

He was usually being bullied by Kevin. After seeing this scene, Chen Cai would not let Kevin go that easily.

“Kevin, Kevin, unexpectedly, there is this day for you!”

“Chen Cai, forget it, let’s go back to the classroom!”

Liu Yi, who was not in the mood to play tricks on Kevin, said.

“No, if today I can’t make him call me Grandpa, I’m not surnamed Chen!”

“The two of you are the grandpas. You are all grandpas....”

Afraid of being beaten like the last time, Kevin has to beg for mercy But when Liu Yi tried to say something, suddenly there came a girl’s scream.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 95

## Chapter 95 You Are A Bastard

Liu Yi and Chen Cai looked back and saw Wang Yuzheng, who was carrying a bag, happened to pass by here. Kevin kneeling in front of Liu Yi was clearly saw by her.

After she had found out that Liu Yi has noticed her, Wang Yuzheng went pale, turned around and ran away.

“Boss, this chick seems to be afraid of you!”

Chen Cai on the side seemed unaware and put oil to the fire.

Liu Yi really wanted to kick this guy.

Damn, aren't this all because of him!

He was really unfortunate that Wang Yuzheng always bumps into him at inopportune times like this.

Are the two of them really unsuitable to each other?

Perhaps in this girl's eyes, he should be a heinous and evil villain....

“Bos Liu....can, can I go now....”

That kneeling Kevin weakly asked.

“Scram!”

Liu Yi let Lin Tong helped him so that when he look at the top of Kevin's head, he saw a floating number, Fear: +40. He didn't bother questioning the origin of that.

‘This guy....’ He thought.

He turned his head and saw the beautiful back of Wang Yuzheng.

Suddenly, he saw a number floating on top of Wang Yuzheng's head, Fear: +10.

‘Sure enough, this girl is afraid of him.’

‘She's too innocent. If a guy like me is wicked, then how could there be a



good guy in this world?’

‘I, Liu Yi am a good man, a truly good man!’ He declared to himself after arriving on this thought.

When Kevin was about to get up and ran away, Liu Yi put out a hand to stop him.

“Wait a minute!”

“B, boss....what, what do you want....”

Kevin was scared and almost wet his pant.

‘How could this Liu Yi be so indeterminate....’ He thought.

‘Could it be that he find my face handsome...therefore ....want me to satisfy his unusual hobby?’

‘Oh! NO! Absolutely not!’

‘However, Liu Yi is the most powerful now....’

‘If he wants to do something to me....perhaps I won’t be able to resist him.’

‘I just hope he won’t be too rough on me.’

Without knowing Kevin’s unscrupulous thought, Liu Yi asked.

“Am I not a good person?”

“Huh?”

Kevin, who was planning to lie on the wall and take his pants off, heard such a question from Liu Yi, suddenly went silly.

“I’m asking you, am I a good person?”

Liu Yi asked in earnest.

“Heaven! Boss, how could you be a good person!”

Kevin quickly flattered him, “Good person are those that can’t find a girlfriend....You are the tyrant in our school! Your evilness is awesome!”

The previous Yuan Shaujun likes to hear this kind of flattery, so he assumed Liu Yi would also like it.

“Get the hell out of here!”

Unexpectedly, Liu Yi sent out a curse instead.

Kevin, who was unaware of the situation, scared and ran away.

‘Liu Yi is too eccentric, too terrible....’ He thought.

“Ai....how could you just let him go like this....what a pity.”

Chen Cai could not help but complain, “I haven’t take my revenge on him!”

“What revenge!”

Liu Yi gave his friend a dirty look, “This is just relying on strength to bully the weak. What’s the difference between this and Yuan Shaojun?”

“Give me one good reason.”

Chen Cai pursed his lips, “In this society if you don’t bully other people, other people will bully you!”

“I don’t think so, there are still many good people in this society.”

Liu Yi said, “The bad guy is only a part of it.”

“Even if the bad guy is only a part of it, it’s still a part of a headache.”

Chen Cai shrugged his shoulder, “Boss, I don’t have any power, but if I do, I will go and try to change this part. I don’t want to argue with you about this useless truth! I’m going to buy a pen! There’s going to be a quiz today....”

With that, this fellow bounced downstairs.

While Liu Yi stood there, his heart was moved, thinking.

‘If I have the power, I should change this part?’

“Fox sister....can you tell me, what should I do....”

Liu Yi found himself trapped in confusion.

Lin Tong lay on the shoulder of Liu Yi, looking at the initially ordinary, but now face with an uncertain future teenager.

Every immortal cultivator will face such a mental dilemma.

When a person suddenly gains power, not everyone will want to be a superhero. Some people become selfish and act like the unscrupulous thug.

Liu Yi was having such dilemma right now.

Fortunately, Liu Yi's nature was honest and kind-hearted. Otherwise, the demonic and evil qi within his body would certainly lead him toward the path of no return.

Under the influences of these two forces, plus the matters that he recently encountered, Liu Yi's mind was constantly changing.

In the end, what will he become, Lin Tong herself is not too certain.

She thought that she is a prodigy in the Fox family. But now, she was like an ordinary silly girl, who can only walk step by step, following Liu Yi at his side.

"Don't listen to Kevin's nonsense. This lady thinks that you, the fool, is a good man."

"Huh? Really?"

Liu Yi's heart was moved, he was somewhat happy.

Liu Yong rolled her eyes, 'oh great, now he also wants to hear people calling him good person.' She thought.

"This lady has just given you a good person card, hello!"

'You actually happy about this.'

'Such a rare and unusual person!'

Liu Yi didn't know what's inside Lin Tong's mind, so his heart was a lot comfortable now. He turned and went to the classroom.

"Liu Yi, why did you run away last night?"

Entering the classroom, Liu Yi was immediately confronted by Murong Die, who tenderly scolded him.

"You didn't wait for this lady, and left without any warning!"

"What....I have something to do last night, so I left in a hurry."

Liu Yi quickly said.

This girl....can not be provoked....

"Liu Yi gege, are you alright?!"

The nearby Wang Lele reached out with her hands and started to touch Liu Yi's body.

People who don't know the situation would assume that Wang Lele is sexually assaulting Liu Yi.

"You, what are you doing...."

Although he was touched by a beauty, Liu Yi was still a bit nervous.

He always thought that Wang Lele was somewhat scary.

"I heard from sis' Die that you're hurt! It's very serious! Quickly take off your shirt, let me see it!"

Wang Lele said, and reached out to take off Liu Yi's uniform while still happily exclaimed, "I never saw someone who has such a big scar! Just let me look!"

"My...."

Liu Yi was shedding cold sweat.

"Lele...."

Murong Die didn't know whether to laugh or cry, pulled the sex-mad Wang Lele to the side, and then said.

"In short, you didn't even say a word to me before you left; you should not do that!"

Thinking about yesterday, when she found that Liu Yi has left, Murong Die was at a lost, and her heart was very uncomfortable.

'Murong Die oh Murong Die....' She thought.

'Do you really like this man?'

'Impossible, you are the big miss of the Murong Family!'

'How could you fancy such a boy!'

'For so many years, you didn't even spare a glance toward those rich and handsome young master.'

'Why are you keep thinking about this fellow!'

“That’s right. This must be because he doesn’t pay attention to me while I never want to lose out to someone!”

‘M, I must continue to pursue him, and then give him a merciless rejection!’

“That’s right! Just like that!”

“Then let me apologize to you.”

Liu Yi said.

“That’s it?”

Murong Die looked at Liu Yi in surprise.

“Of course, otherwise, what else you want me to do?”

“You, you, you!”

Murong Die thought that Liu Yi was just like a log!

How could there be a boy such as him!

“Our sis’ Die mean, you have to compensate to sis’ Die!”

Wang Lele at the side said with a smile.

“Compensation?”

Liu Yi suddenly understood, “Oh! That’s right, I almost forgot. I still owe you the Hot spicy soup! Rest assured. I will certainly pay it!”

“What does this have to do with the hot spicy soup....”

Murong Die’s face twitched, thinking.

‘How could it be so difficult to make this man grasp the point?’

“Forget it! This is for you!”

Murong Die said and pulled out a brand new cell phone from her school uniform’s pocket.

When Liu Yi took a look, my god, it was a new iPhone!

Suddenly, many envious eyes on the classroom fell on that black iPhone.

It was a new iPhone!

They heard that it was a superb machine, but unfortunately, it was too

expensive, how could these students afford it!

Liu Yi is really fortunate.

Not only he obtained the favor of Murong Die, she even gave him a good cell phone....

Too much of a good thing!

‘Murong Die is really blind, Liu Yi was inferior to me, how could she choose Liu Yi instead of me!’

The boys thought in resentment.

“Why do you want to give me this?”

Liu Yi was surprised to see Murong Die handed him a mobile phone and asked.

“Didn’t your phone break yesterday? Use this.”

Murong Die said, “You brought me to my home yesterday, so consider this as the replacement.”

“Thank you, but I can’t accept it.”

Unexpectedly, Liu Yi refused, making many of the boys in the class shocked, thinking.

‘If you don’t want it, I want it! Give it to me!’

“Why!”

Murong Die’s face was incredulous, and then, as if remembering something, smiled, “It seems your pride is at stake. Rest assured, this is for you bringing me back home yesterday. Your phone was broken, I’m also related to that. So, you can accept this gift.”

“I still don’t want that. It’s too expensive.”

Liu Yi shook his head. He is saying that he doesn’t want to receive any gift from Murong Family.

With that, from his bag, he pulled out a set of folded jeans and handed it to Murong Die.

“And here’s the jeans. I give it back to you.”

“Liu Yi! What do you mean by this!”

Murong Die’s complexion suddenly turned pale.

The nearby Wang Lele was surprised to see them.

She was unclear why these two people, who have such a good relation yesterday, suddenly became so stiff today?

‘Why Liu Yi gege want to return the jeans back?’ She wondered.

‘Isn’t this the matching outfit for the three of us?’

“Murong Die, I appreciate your kindness. But I think, if I have to get something, it should be because of my hard work. If you consider me as a good friend and respect me, take this stuff back.”

“Liu Yi....I ask you again, do you want it or not!”

Murong Die put the set of jeans on the table, as well as the iPhone in her hand. Her eyes suddenly turned sour.

At this moment, she wanted to cry.

“I’m sorry, I’m not...”

“Liu Yi, you bastard!”

Murong Die took the phone and the set of jeans on the table, and directly waved them at Liu Yi’s face, and then turned to run out of the classroom.

Wang Lele hurriedly went after her, but before that, she left some words to Liu Yi.

“Liu Yi gege, you’re an idiot!”

Lin Tong also spookily said the sentence, “This time....you really are a bit too much....”

Liu Yi was a bit silly, blinked his eyes a few times, thinking, ‘what kind of situation is this?’

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 96

## Chapter 96 Iron Palm

This was the first time Zheng Xiaolin arrived at H province.

When he was in Guangzhou, he practically took care of the martial art school everyday, and rarely went out.

He was initially a small fry thug. Afterwards, when there was a scuffle, he accidentally stabbed a wrong person.

He was very afraid and also didn't notice that the man that he stabbed didn't actually die. So, he fled to escape from his hometown and went all the way to Guangzhou.

Finally, by chance, he did obeisance in front of his master's door and learned some skills.

Under the suggestion of his younger martial brother, he came to the H province and got into this spacious and luxurious KTV room. Zheng Xiaolin felt like a country bumpkin coming to a city, everything was a novelty for him.

Especially the two beautiful women sitting beside him....their figures are hot, and their looks are outstanding.

Zheng Xiaolin was a bit hard to imagine, although he also has visited prostitutes in Guangzhou, the ladies there were nowhere near this classy!

These two girls are really beautiful....

Seeing their half revealed breasts and rounded thighs, Zheng Xiaolin could not help but swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

"Young master Lan, this is the one that I strongly recommended to you, Zheng Xiaolin, master Zheng."

Ma Wei was sitting in the middle of two girls, enjoying the feeling of being surrounded by beautiful women. A cigarette was dangling from his mouth as he said to Lan He opposite of him.



“Looks powerful and brave.”

Lan He was also sat on the sofa. An enchanting beauty sitting on his lap feeding him pieces of grapes.

In this Imperial Casino, as long as you have the money, you can enjoy emperor's treatment.

Especially since this Imperial Casino was one of Lan Family's estate, Lan He naturally can freely enjoy and being extravagant.

Lan He's hand was inside the beauty's clothes, constantly kneading as he smilingly said.

“It's just that, his Kung Fu is still unknown to me.”

“If you don't believe, young master Lan can find someone to give him a try.”

Ma Wei immediately said, “Master Zheng, I'm not making this up, is the most powerful person I've ever seen.”

“Although I and brother Ma's friendship is great, friendship is friendship, business is business.”

Lan He spoke and spank the bottom of the beauty in his arms.

“Go, bring Pierce here.”

“At once, young master Lan.”

That beauty immediately twisted her crisp buttocks and left swaying her hips.

“This Pierce is the head security of our casino.”

Lan He explained, “A boxer. I heard he played many International matches, and has a rank. He is the most experienced fighter here. Why don't you let master Zheng exchange a few skill to increase his skill, what do you think?”

“Master Zheng, please?”

Ma Wei didn't dare to neglect this master of martial art that he invited.

This is his cash cow!!

“No problem.”

That Zheng Xiaolin chewed the grapes as he nodded again and again.

Fighting, is what he most skilled at.

Moreover, he can also display his prowess in front of these beautiful women.

“Master Zheng would work hard then.”

“No need to be polite.”

Zheng Xiaolin waved his hand and then stood up.

At this time, the room’s door was opened. A tall white man dressed in a black suit shouted as he passed through the door.

“Young master Lan, you want me?”

Hearing this white man’s words, everyone’s face in this private room suddenly looked strange, looking at Lan He and thought.

‘Could it be, this young master Lan and this man have an unusual hobby?’

“Damn! I’m looking for you!”

Lan He immediately scolded, “Pierce, if your Mandarin is suck then don’t say it! I am looking for you, not I want you, OK?”

“Oh, yes, you look for me. Then, you don’t want me now?”

This white man Pierce looked at Lan He like he was suffering injustice.

“Want your sister! These are two different meanings ok!”

Lan He was driven mad.

“This...oh, no, Chinese are way too complicated.”

Pierce said with a half-cooked foreign accent.

“Young master Lan, then why do you want me....em, look for me? Is it like the last time, letting me taste your chrysanthemum (ass-hole)?”

These sentences made everyone’s complexion even weirder.

“Fuck, that’s when this young master gave you chrysanthemum tea! Don’t speak so ambiguous ok!”

Lan He flew into a rage.

“Why do you say that?”

Pierce was even more baffled, “Isn’t Chrysanthemum a flower?”

The beautiful women on the scene could not help but laugh out loud.

Ma Wei even clapped his thigh, smilingly said.

“Hahaha, young master Lan, this man is interesting, he thinks chrysanthemum is delicious, hahaha!”

“Are you laughing at me?”

Unexpectedly, the seemingly silly looking Pierce just a moment ago turned his head. A murderous look burst out of his eyes as he looked at Ma Wei.

Ma Wei suddenly stopped smiling.

“Yo...looks like this guy is angry.”

“Pierce, I look for you not to drink chrysanthemum, but to fight.”

With that, Lan He pointed at the opposite Zheng Xiaolin.

“Your opponent is him. If you win, the reward is ten thousand.”

“Ten thousand? Too little!”

Pierce couldn’t help but pursed his lips, “It’s not enough to play in here for a night.”

“Damn, your appetite is getting bigger and bigger!”

Lan He’s mouth twitched.

“Beat him, and I’ll give you fifty thousand!”

“Nice! Young master Lan, watch this Pierce!”

Pierce suddenly chuckled twice, clenched his fists and stood in front of that Zheng Xiaolin.

Zheng Xiaolin is not short, he is close to 1.8 meters tall.

But, before the 1.9 meters tall, full of muscle Pierce, he suddenly seemed small.

“Hey, hey....my fifty thousand, prepare to cry!”

With that, he swung a violent punch toward Zheng Xiaolin.

This fist pierced the air, with the howl of wind, it sounded very scary. One can see how frightening this punch's power and speed are.

But Zheng Xiaolin, with one footstep, easily avoided this ferocious left hook punch.

"Bam!"

This fist directly hit Ma Wei's little brother face. This little brother immediately wailed. His body flew up from behind the sofa to the front and fell into the sofa.

Seeing this, Ma Wei can't even close his mouth, thinking that this Pierce's strength is huge!

"A reckless bull."

Zheng Xiaolin, who stood to the side, actually sneered.

"If you're a man, don't run away!"

Pierce roared twice and rushed up as he brandished his fist.

Zheng Xiaolin really didn't dodge Pierce's fierce punch this time. His left palm lifted up and welcomed the incoming violent fist from Pierce.

"Crack!"

"Aaa!"

Pierce's right arm was strangely twisted. His bones were unexpectedly broken by Zheng Xiaolin!

Zheng Xiaolin's Iron Palm belongs to the category of hard martial art. To clash head on like this, Pierce is obviously not his opponent.

Zheng Xiaolin flung his left hand around and said.

"Has the strength, but doesn't know how to use it. Why on earth you still keep your arm then?"

With that, he suddenly drew close to the front of Pierce and maliciously shot his palm toward Pierce left arm.

With the sound of splintering bones, Pierce was directly hurt into pass-

out.

This originally level 7-8 boxer was actually unable to stand head to head with Zheng Xiaolin and was instantly knocked out.

Lan He was suddenly excited.

“Good Kung Fu!”

Ma Wei could not help but clap his hands, cheering.

“To be ridiculed.”

Zheng Xiaolin cupped his fists toward Ma Wei and, without even a single glance at Pierce, sat back on the sofa. He then put his arms around the two beauties and, learning from Lan He’s action, began to fondle them.

Lan He called two men in black suits to tow Pierce away.

About Pierce injuries, he was too lazy to care.

He was excited.

“Master Zheng is worthy to be called the successor of Iron Palm, you’re really powerful!”

“Young master Lan is ridiculing me, this is just superficial, not as powerful as my master.”

Zheng Xiaolin was somewhat proud of himself.

Sure enough, his decision to leave the mountain was right. The guy that was recommended by his junior martial brother for him to follow easily gave him fifty thousand.

Just for hitting a man, he already enjoyed such good treatment.

Zheng Xiaolin’s heart was moved. He wanted to stay in this Northern Dragon City and didn’t want to go back.

He doesn’t give a damn about the idea to go back to his martial art school.

If he stays here, he can hit people, earn money, and can play with women and be happy!

“Young master Lan, the man that I, Me Wei find for you, isn’t inferior right?”

Ma Wei chuckled and said as he smoked the cigarette.

“Since this place is young master Lan’s domain, why don’t we let our master Zheng enjoy the treatment of an Emperor? We two can also privately discuss our matters, what do you think?”

“Good, good, master Zheng, enjoy playing here. Carry, Lisa, the two of you serve master Zheng well, understand? If your services are poor, don’t blame me for being impolite.”

“Ai, rest assured young master Lan, leave it to us!”

“Yes, yes, master Zheng, your body is quite sturdy!”

The two beauties immediately entangled themselves with Zheng Xiaolin.

Zheng Xiaolin sank into their soft and tender flesh. But Lan He and Ma Wei went out of the room together and came to a small but quiet room.

“Young master Lan, what do you think, are you satisfied with this person?”

“Not bad, he seemed reliable.”

Lan He nodded his head, “As long as he gets rid of Liu Yi, I will be ninety percent sure in wooing Murong Die.”

“But you call me out here, what do you want to talk about?”

“Young master Lan, smoke.”

Ma Wei offered a high-grade cigarette.

“Thanks, I don’t smoke.”

Lan He smiled, “I am a good man. I don’t smoke and I don’t drink. If you, brother Ma, have something to say, just say it.”

“Ok then....actually, I just want to know why the leader was recently strict with us? Our Black Dragon Gang these days have to stay low....this kind of thing, is not be good for my domain’s development.

Lan He has an uncle who is a high ranking police officer, thus, Ma Wei wanted to test the water with Lan He.

“The last time matter, when we encircled Liu Yi, was too big.”

Lan He said, “Moreover, the fugitive of the 531 case has been hiding in our

Northern Dragon City. Therefore, the security has been beefed up!”

Ma Wei’s heart suddenly thumped.

‘The fugitive of 531 case....that kidnapping homicidal maniac who abduct and rape school girls and then kill them to silence the witness?’ He thought. (The criminal that Yuan Zhenyue refers to)

‘No wonder....This Northern Dragon City is so strict recently.’

“In short, you have to stay low key for a while. You just need to get rid of Liu Yi. When does Zheng Xiaolin plan to step in?”

“Since you want this to be low key, it’s not good to deal with him around school day.....Wait for the 1st of October, (The national holiday; Ma Yuanyuan’s school Autumn sports competition,) I’ll send my people to watch him. When there’s an opportunity, I’ll let Zheng Xiaolin kill him!”

# Chapter 97 Porcelain King

Liu Yi didn't know that danger is quietly approaching him.

At this time, he took advantage of the lunch break to buy a cell phone on a nearby mobile phone store.

His phone was broken, which is very inconvenient.

In any case, he has some spare cash to spend. Thus, it doesn't hurt to buy something he needs.

This mobile phone shop is quite large. There were a lot of people buying phones there. There was also some young pretty female shopping guide that greeted the customer with a smile.

Liu Yi approached the store, but he didn't understand these things and wanted to find a guide of purchase to consult.

The present smartphone are getting smarter by the day, and Liu Yi wanted to buy a good one with internet access so that he can take the mission directly from the phone.

Liu Yi went to the counter and looked for a long time.

However, because he was dressed in school uniform, nobody paid attention to him.

Liu Yi's time was limited, so he couldn't possibly waste it here.

He saw the shopping guide next to him enthusiastically introduce a mobile phone to a fat man wearing a mink fur, therefore, can't bear but come and asked.

"Beauty, can you help me about the cell phones?"

Who knew, that beauty gave him an eye, and said.

"You can check out the phone by yourself. That side has a demo stage with demo models that you can play, don't disturb our work."

Such a poor student who came to try and play a new phone model or just



wanted to window shop has been seen by her far too many!

How could she gave her time to provide them with the presentation, it is a waste of time!

“I didn’t come to look for a phone. I came to buy a phone!”

Liu Yi emphasized.

“You? Want to buy a cell phone?”

Because the beauty took the time to talk with Liu Yi, the fat man turned away impatiently.

The beauty was a bit disappointed, while at the same time, unhappily said to Liu Yi.

“There’s a shop for second-hand cell phone across the street from here, go there and take a look, perhaps it has something that suits you.”

“You this fellow, how could you have such a dog vision (TL: Snob)!”

“Who did you say has the dog’s eyes?”

The shopping guide beauty suddenly pinched her waist, and provocatively said to Liu Yi, “You can’t afford to buy a cell phone but still came to stir up trouble! Humph, this is not a place for a poor student like you!”

“Who says I can’t afford?”

Liu Yi suddenly sneered, held out his hand and pulled out a stack of thick red Grandpa Mao (100 yuan bill) and patted it on his palm.

In the morning, on the way to school, he took out 3000 yuan to buy a new phone.

Liu Yi didn’t have the time to research the price of a cell phone. Therefore, he took out more than necessary in case it’s not enough.

“Oh, young boss, what kind of phone do you want, I’ll help you recommend!”

Seeing this grandpa Mao, the beautiful shopping guide’s eyes suddenly lit up and joyfully said.

‘That’s a lot of money!’ She thought.

‘If he buys an expensive phone, I’ll get a lot of commission!’

“You’re not afraid I’m a poor student?”

“Oh, how could I! Little boss look rich, your forehead shines, and you bring honor to our humble store!”

This beauty suddenly turned 180 degrees from the rude and crass demeanor just a moment ago.

Liu Yi felt as though he was dealing with two completely different people.

“I better go check the second-hand store across the street, in any case, it’s not far isn’t it?”

“Come on! How could there be any good phone on the second-hand market? Those are the worthless refurbished phones. After you buy, it will easily break! If you buy here, there’s a guarantee!”

The beauty quickly said.

“Hehe, very well.”

Liu Yi’s heart was filled with emotion.

‘No wonder people say, money makes the world go around.’

‘Money can make a beauty smile!’

“Help me find a smartphone with quick internet!”

“Smartphone! I recommend this Samsung, it’s only 3998! It has 3G internet access and the latest Android....”

“I want the domestic brand.”

“Huh?”

Liu Yi’s word made that beauty directly fell to Hell.

Domestic phone....

There’s only small commission in Domestic phone....

Most Chinese brands are focused on price, a good spec could be bought around 1000.

Although the appearance is less appealing than the imported one, the

actual feature is not that different.

Her commission in selling domestic brand is so small compared to the imported one.

Unless it's a knockoff.

But they don't have any knock off in their store....

This student....obviously brings a lot of money, but why he's a cheapskate!

"How could domestic brand be compared to the imported one!"

The beauty rolled her eyes, and said with a glib tongue, "If you want to buy a phone, you might as well buy the big brand. The quality is excellent, and it has guaranteed, the price will not fall too!"

"Oh? The Chinese brand phone will depreciate?"

Hearing this, Liu Yi could not help but scoff, "You're also made in China, do you think your value has depreciated?"

"I, don't....mean it like that...."

The beauty, for a time, didn't know what to say.

"I want a domestic brand, recommend something for me."

Liu Yi insisted.

If he didn't support his country's own product, then how could they develop?

"You can buy this one."

The beauty lazily reached out a black large screen phone from behind the counter and placed it on top of the counter.

"Dual-core, 1GB RAM, powered by Android 2.2 system. It has 3G Network, fast, and less expensive, only 980 yuan."

"Then I'll take it. With the beauty discount, it should be 400 right?"

"Can you not tease me! This is not a grocery shopping, how could you bargain the price! 980, take it or leave it!"

This beauty thought that she can finally be unyielding.

A mobile phone store like this has clearly set all the price tag in advance and clearly displayed it for all to see.

“Alright then, I’ll take it.”

Liu Yi has no other way, sooner or later he will use a cell phone, to be able to accept the E-rank mission, which is not many, on the go.

If he has the phone, he can easily receive the mission and whatnot.

The beauty gave Liu Yi the purchase note, then he paid the money, and received the phone.

Although the phone’s appearance is a bit foolish, Liu Yi thought that it’s pretty good!

This one is easier to use than his previous phone.

“Go to the nearby KFC, and download the app.”

Lin Tong urged Liu Yi, “With the app, it’s even more convenient.”

“I’ll be damn....your immortal cultivation website....actually has an Android app?”

“Science and Technology can make life more productive....you see, isn’t this more convenient?”

Liu Yi, hearing Lin Tong’s explanation, was helpless.

He took the cell phone and returned the money to his pocket, and walked out.

But Liu Yi didn’t notice the old man that came out from the phone store and followed behind him.

Ma Yuxin was this street famous porcelain king.

To put it bluntly, it’s the ‘bumping into porcelain.’

This Ma Yuxin was holding a dozen of teapots that he bought on the second-hand market. Walking briskly, he soon overtook Liu Yi and went to a far away spot and then took a turn, standing around the corner.

He was watching Liu Yi coming toward him as he thought. ‘Kid, you’re out of luck, If I don’t fleece you today, I have to apologize to grandpa Mao!’

Liu Yi was toying with his smartphone, head down, and walked straight ahead.

At that time, Liu Yi felt a gust of wind rushed toward him from the left.

He unconsciously took two steps back, from the corner on the left, an old man suddenly came lunging toward him.

The old man looked surprised, staggered two steps, then fell to the ground.

The teapot in his hand dropped to the ground and broke into pieces.

The old man was a bit silly, thinking.

‘Fuck.’

‘This is not supposed to happen....’

‘How could this kid avoid that....’

‘Bad....this is not like the scenario!’

“Old man....are you okay?”

Liu Yi saw the old man fell and quickly asked.

“Oh, my treasured teapot!”

To Liu Yi’s surprise, the old man suddenly burst into tears, and then his hand held on Liu Yi’s leg, crying.

“You pay my teapot, pay my broken teapot....This is my lifeblood, an antique from Qianlong Era....” (TL: 18th Century Emperor)

Liu Yi was dumbfounded, thinking, ‘Your mother! What the hell is this!’

Suddenly they were surrounded by crowds of onlookers, each trying to position themselves to the front for a better view.

Liu Yi was somewhat anxious, the class was about to begin soon, but he was entangled with such a matter!

“Old man, you’re wrong! You fell yourself, why do you want me to compensate for that!”

“Nonsense!”

Ma Yuxin immediately said, “My old person’s body is hard! My legs and feet are also strong, if not for you walking with head down without looking at the road ahead, how could you bump into me, how could I fall! Those teapots from the Qianlong Era are the gift from the Emperor! If you don’t settle this matter today, don’t ever think you could leave!”

With that, he tightly grabbed Liu Yi’s leg and wouldn’t budge one bit.

Liu Yi felt a headache.

“Haha, idiot, you’ve bumped into a porcelain!” (TL: a person who pretend to be hit to ask for compensation)

Lin Tong, lie on Liu Yi’s shoulder, clapped her two little paws, cheering.

“This is so much fun! I’ve heard from my master that there’s such a person, today I finally meet with one of them! I’m so happy!”

‘Happy your sister....’ Liu Yi grumbled in his heart

‘This is taking pleasure in other’s misfortune!’

Liu Yi’s headache was getting big.

He can subdue the demon and slay the devil, but he was helpless against this old man’s pestering.

‘What should I do?’ He thought.

‘Hit him?’

In any case, the man is old....Liu Yi can’t bring himself to strike an old man.

‘Run?’

‘But how could I run, with so many people around plus the old man clutching my leg....unless I can fly!’

Liu Yi was miserable beyond description.

“My teapots....oh, my Emperor gift’s teapots....If you don’t pay me money, I won’t let you go!”

Ma Yuxin held Liu Yi’s arm while his eyes greedily looked at Liu Yi’s right pocket.

‘That pocket has several thousands of cash....’ Ma Yuxin thought.

‘This money will be mine today!’

“Old man....I don’t have any money....”

Liu Yi was forced to pretend to be poor.

He didn’t know that Ma Yuxin has been eyeing on him since he entered the phone store.

“No money? Even if you have no money, you can’t leave!”

Ma Yuxin thought.

‘Want to trick me? I know if you have money or not!’

“I see that you’re still a student, so, I don’t want to embarrass you. 2000, compensate me for 2000, and I consider this matter settled, what do you think?”

Ma Yuxin started using a psychological trick.

Liu Yi’s heart thumped.

‘A coincidence?’

‘I happen to have 2000 in my pocket.’

“This matter seems a bit strange....’

Liu Yi thought that something was not right.

But Lin Tong didn’t comment anything, she just watched the fun from the side.

At this time, from behind the crowd, a familiar voice suddenly snapped.

“Move away, move away! The police are handling the case!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 98

## Chapter 98 Class Transfer

Hearing the police, the surrounding onlookers immediately spread out to make a way, letting the dark blue uniformed policewoman came in.

Seeing her, Liu Yi's eyes were suddenly lit up, and then his heart started to squirm.

'How could I run into Yuan Zhenyue again....'

'Could it be that the two of us were predestined?'

'I don't want that....'

'This kind of misfortune is better to be as far away from me as possible.'

Seeing the police have arrived, Ma Yuxin was surprised, but he gritted his teeth and said.

"Look, the police have come! Quickly pay me the money, if there's a lawsuit, you'll have to give more!"

Liu Yi was helpless.

"Yo, Liu Yi, what a coincidence eh? I can run into you here at just the right moment."

Seeing Liu Yi, Yuan Zhenyue suddenly could not resist a smile, making the surrounding male onlookers slightly lost.

"Are you Conan?" (TL: I think it refers to Detective Conan)

"....."

Liu Yi was speechless.

But Ma Yuxin was frightened, thinking that this policewoman actually knew this kid!

This is a tough one!

"Police comrade, you can't cover this up!"



He hastened to launch the first attack, "This man hit me, making my Qianlong bestowed teapot fell and broken! You can't just shield him because you know him!"

"Ma Yuxin, how many of your cases that we have, do you want me to say it?"

Yuan Zhenyue couldn't help but curl her lips, "Mr. Porcelain King, do you have the nerve? In this third hectare area of Birds & Flowers Street, which police who doesn't know you?"

"But it's true! This is my Ancestral teapot!"

Ma Yuxin cried until his face red, and his neck bulged.

"Oh, really? Is that so?"

Yuan Zhenyue walked and picked up a fragment on the ground and then pointed to a piece of printing on the top.

"Made in China. Porcelain King, you old 'bump into porcelain,' didn't you see the printed label on this teapot?"

"I was wrong....there's a mistake....it looks like I brought the wrong teapot....that's it, see you, see you later...."

That Ma Yuxin was red in the face, didn't want his Emperor bestowed teapot anymore, and ran away with tail between his legs.

The surrounding onlookers, seeing that the man has run away, knew that the show is over, and immediately dispersed themselves.

"Why didn't you arrest him?"

Liu Yi quickly asked.

"How could I arrest him? The evidence is insufficient."

Yuan Zhenyue shrugged her shoulders, "This slippery old snake, is difficult to catch. Even if I arrest him now, he'll be released within a few days, and then he'll continue to swindle again. Recently there have been a crackdown in this Northern Dragon City; you're lucky if you bump into one of them again till winter."

"This thing is called lucky?!"

Liu Yi was helpless, “But thank you for helping me out. If not for your good eyes seeing the ‘made in China’ print, this time, I’ll definitely die of a headache.”

“Hey, where did you think I got that ‘made in China’ thing? I just made it up.”

Yuan Zhenyue smiled, “Ma Yuxin himself felt guilty, plus I’m a police officer. So he believed what I said and ran away.”

Liu Yi was surprised, unexpectedly this Yuan Zhenyue have a witty side. She casually scared off that old Porcelain King.

It seems like this policewoman, is not just a violent maniac.

“But how did you come to this area....I think you’re not supposed to be here?”

“Because of the previous incident, I was demoted.”

Yuan Zhenyue shrugged her shoulders, “I was originally in the criminal investigation team, now I’m a neighborhood police. I don’t want to be a neighborhood police, but because of your Headmaster’s report, they investigated my previous record. Previously, you saw my brother in arms Zhang Kening was also in the criminal investigation team, but he is now our deputy director, and can be considered as my boss.”

“It turned out to be so....but the previous case was not your fault...how could they gave you a demotion?”

“Hehe, you do have a point there, but....”

Yuan Zhenyue smiled and said, “I, as the law enforcement official, even in the course of law enforcement, can’t just casually caused such a huge loss to the people. Plus the previous serious traffic accident in the North and South bridge had to have an individual who is responsible. Not being directly fired, the Director has given my deceased father some face.”

Liu Yi was surprised, “Being a police also have to suffocate like this?”

“Without any background, everyone will be treated the same. So what if one is a cop, are cops not human?”

Yuan Zhenyue shrugged and said.

“Then why would you want to be a police officer....”

Liu Yi felt that this Yuan Zhenyue is too hot-tempered, and If nobody supports her in the back, the police department is not really suitable for her.

“My dad was a police officer.”

Yuan Zhenyue smiled, her eyes flashed a slight trace of sadness.

“This old man was a senior police officer, very stubborn, and finally killed in the line of duty.”

“I’m sorry....I didn’t mean to....”

Liu Yi didn’t know Yuan Zhenyue has such a past family history.

“It’s okay. I always remind myself to remember that.”

Yuan Zhenyue clenched her fists, “According to the investigation, the one who killed him is an assassin....I have been tracking that killer ever since. With the police identity, it would naturally easy for me to trace the killer, wouldn’t you say?”

“Assassin....is such a thing really exist?”

In the past, Liu Yi thought that this kind of stuff was a far too remote for him.

He only knew “Assassin” in the game that he played, and never seen one in the real life.

Who’s going to assassinate a mediocre high school student like him?

Which killer would be so stupid!

“Of course, it exists.”

Yuan Zhenyue said, “Moreover, some assassins are organized, and some are not. But in the assassin’s world, there’s a list called Heavenly List. This list contained the ranking of the assassins. After a long investigation, I finally found some information. The guy who killed my father should be the previously number three assassin in the Heavenly List, named Black Eye. One day, I will personally arrest this Black Eye guy, making him suffer the

penalty of breaking the law!”

Liu Yi instantly thought that this Yuan Zhenyue’s figure is slightly taller.

“But I think my skill is seemingly not enough. Liu Yi, come with me to practice, help me realized my dream, what do you say?”

“NO!”

Liu Yi flatly refused.

‘Damn, this girl still doesn’t change!’

“Ai, really heartless.”

Yuan Zhenyue bitterly looked at Liu Yi, “So to say, I’m also a girl. Can’t you be a bit modest in treating a girl?”

“Are you resemble a girl?”

“Shit, how could this old mother not look like a girl!”

Yuan Zhenyue thrust her chest out and angrily said.

‘Mm...this chest is actually worth considering.’

Liu Yi’s heart secretly nodded.

“You this fellow, what are you looking at!”

After discovering Liu Yi’s crooked eyes, Yuan Zhenyue’s eyes suddenly narrowed, followed by the incoming of a fist.

Liu Yi quickly stepped back two steps.

‘Almost forgot...’ He thought.

‘Tigress chest, can not see!’

“Humph, the things that I warn you about that day, have you forgot about it?”

“What things?”

“You want this old mother to beat you to make you remember?”

“Oh oh! Right, that most wanted man!”

Liu Yi suddenly realized, “What about this wanted man? I don’t know

anything about him because I don't watch any news....”

“Because the police don't want to cause any panic, we don't publicize this information.”

Yuan Zhenyue said, “But we will issue a notice in these two days, telling the people to be vigilant. This wanted criminal, has previously created a sensation....”

“Oh, really? What was it?”

“The 531 Case, do you know it?”

Hearing these words from Yuan Zhenyue, Liu Yi was immediately surprised.

“The 531 case! Could it be that psycho killer!”

On the internet, the 531 case is very sensational!

Six months ago, there was this super-perversed guy who killed several middle and high school girls!

Every time, he brutally disfigured the girl's face and then killed them.

He killed more than ten girls in a row, even if his victim narrowly survived, their face was already disfigured.

This case made the local people panicked. After the city's police force has been deployed, they finally caught the man.

“Wasn't he sentenced to death? How could he come to Northern Dragon City?”

“Prison break.”

Yuan Zhenyue's complexion was not so good, “This person, although a psycho, he is a natural born killer. He killed a guard with a sharpened toothbrush, and then changed his clothes and seized the opportunity to escape.

“This....”

After listening to this Liu Yi also felt the creep.

Such a psycho killer has fled to Northern Dragon City....

Moreover, he is in the vicinity....

“It seems dangerous....”

“Yeah, that’s why I’m on patrol.”

Yuan Zhenyue nodded, “Not just me, the entire police force in the Northern Dragon City were also deployed. This person must be immediately captured. Otherwise, he will create a huge case!”

“Mm, I will tell my friends to be careful.”

Liu Yi nodded, glanced at his phone, suddenly said.

“Not good....I’m going to be late!”

“Get away from here then, next time I see you, if you don’t accompany this old mother to practice, you’re dead!”

Yuan Zhenyue also can’t keep doing this chit-chat, so he waved and let Liu Yi go.

Liu Yi has no time to go to the KFC to download and has to use his card’s 3G internet to download the app that was told by Lin Tong.

“It’s hard to imagine....humanity could also produce this kind of guy.”

Lying on Liu Yi’s head, Lin Tong can’t help but comment on what Yuan Zhenyue’s just said, curling her lips, “This is worse than our crazed demons.”

“My grandpa said, In the big forest, there are all kinds of birds. By the way, this app, how big is it?”

“About 5 MB.”

“Damn! So big!”

Liu Yi looked at the loading bar of the download, his heart bled.

“Don’t be such a cheapskate, if you take a look, there may be a mission for this wanted man.”

“Seriously?”

“Don’t forget, the immortal cultivation world is a ‘kill the demon, slay the devil’ kind of thing. This psycho killer will, sooner or later, turn into a devil.

Perhaps, he's already a devil now."

"I see...."

Liu Yi nodded and continued to download as he ran back to the school, and finally, before the bell, he arrived back at the class.

Murong Die and Wang Lele haven't come back, the back seats were still empty. It seemed like this big Miss was furious.

Liu Yi had to sigh; he really didn't know what to do.

Just as he sat back on the seat, Li Juanhua suddenly pushed open the door and entered, and then declared.

"Students, there's an announcement. We have a new student transferred into our class. We'll have to get along well, learning together and progress together."

With that, she clapped her hands and said.

"Come in, Wang Yuzheng, you sit in...um, beside Liu Yi."

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 99

## Chapter 99 Want To Take A Good Look At Him

Wang Yuzheng of the experimental class!

How could they transfer her to the regular class!

Liu Yi was somewhat surprised.

But Wang Yuzhen just kept her head down, without saying any words while holding her bag,

Chen Cai himself was very upset, he and Liu Yi has been sitting at the same table for more than two years, but now his seat was given to someone else just like that?

However, how could he defy the homeroom teacher's words?

"Teacher....Um, where should I sit?"

Chen Cai can't help but ask.

"You sit in the first row, in this vacated seat, so that the teacher can directly look at you!"

Chen Cai smiled bitterly, "I become the priority target for the teacher to pay attention to....?"

"Give me a break!"

Li Juanhua gave Chen Cai a stern look, "The students in the fourth class have come to me to report that you harass one of the female student in their class. Chen Cai Chen Cai, now is the most critical time, you need to focus on studying, do you understand? Otherwise, you'll be sorry for your parents that have paid your tuition!"

"Yes, yes....Teacher, I understand...."

Chen Cai said, crestfallen.

"Wang Yuzheng, you share the same table as Liu Yi. His English is good and has made rapid progress, and you can help each other out."



Wang Yuzheng's English was slightly weak; therefore, Li Juanhua arranged her to sit beside Liu Yi so that his rapid progress in English would rub off on her.

We have to say this Wang Yuzheng is a little pitiful.

Her academic record was excellent, often in the top grade group, and had worked so hard to get into the experimental class.

Finally, because of the matter with Lin Huayang, she was eventually kicked out of the experimental class.

"Class is about to start. Wang Yuzheng, go sit down."

"Em, thank you teacher Li."

Wang Yuzheng weakly said, holding the back as she walked to the side of Liu Yi, and then sat down.

She sat there and, with a burst of fragrant scent, began to organize her part of the desk.

From the beginning to the end, she never said a word to Liu Yi.

Liu Yi felt it was quite strange, although a beautiful girl sitting beside him was a good thing, somehow, something was not quite right.

Thus, he wrote a note and then pushed it to the front of Wang Yuzheng.

"How come you came to this class?"

Wang Yuzheng saw the note, her eyes suddenly went red, tears welled up in her eyes.

Liu Yi panicked, thinking.

'Fuck me, I just ask her something, but how could this girl cry!'

'She's not sister Lin isn't it!'

(TL: Sister Lin (1918-1968): An Old movie star. Liu Yi questioned if she was just acting)

Liu Yi was somewhat panicked. When he was stumped on how to say or to comfort the silently crying, lying on the table Wang Yuzheng, his phone suddenly vibrated.

He got a text message. When he took a look, it turned out to be from Chen Cai.

This Chen Cai, even if he sat in the front row, he's still not honest.

"Boss....Do you know why Wang Yuzheng is transferred to our class?"

How could Chen Cai this fellow, heard the news so quickly?

Know-it-all-person....

Liu Yi hurriedly replied, "why".

"This morning, Lin Huayang asked Wang Yuzheng to be his girlfriend again, and threatened her, if she rejected him, he would make Wang Yuzheng out of the experimental class. Wang Yuzheng would rather die, so....Boss, you know."

Liu Yi, reading this text message, suddenly clenched his cell phone, thinking.

"This Lin Huayang....is too much!"

'Could it be he still thought he can be indiscriminate in this school!'

Liu Yi wrote a note and then gently nudge the lying in tears Wang Yuzheng beside him, and put the note on her table.

Wang Yuzheng wiped her tears and looked at that note. It read.

"Want me to help you get rid of Lin Huayang?"

Wang Yuzheng, with red eyes, picked up a pen and wrote few words and then threw it at Liu Yi.

Liu Yi took a look and, my goodness....her tone was pretty harsh.

"No! Please, you people don't disturb my life!"

This girl's resentment seemed very deep....

Liu Yi didn't know how to reply that, had to turn his head and pretend to listen to the lecture.

Lin Tong, who was lying on Liu Yi's table, started to gloat after reading the note.

“Hey hey, how’s it going, being hated by a girl feels good, right?”

“Fox sister....am I really that repugnant?”

Liu Yi can’t help but ask.

“Yeah, yeah, you are a flipping moron!”

Lin Tong blinked her eyes at Liu Yi.

“Really?....”

“But sometimes it’s very cute....”

Lin Tong felt so easy to pushed Liu Yi down into depression, so she also gave him some praise.

“How could a man be described as cute....”

Liu Yi was still not happy, “Forget it....I’d better look for a mission to blow off some steam.”

With that, he looked at his phone, opened the app, and began to search for a recently posted mission on Northern Dragon City.

However, it didn’t have the mission regarding that perverted killer. Instead, there’s an E-level task to hunt and kill a Wolf Demon!

Mission Content: The air on the Eastern outskirts of Northern Dragon City was recently filled with Demonic Qi. According to the probe, the area may be infested with Wolf Demon. Immediate need for someone to deal with it, so as not to endanger the safety of the surrounding resident.

“Wolf Demon?”

Liu Yi’s heart started to palpitate, “Can I take care of it?”

“Since this is an E-level task, it should be a little demon.”

Lin Tong said, “Such a low-level demon has no intelligence, but the hatred for the human is deep. If it’s not handled in a timely manner, it’s probably going to create a big problem.”

“Very well, I’ll take it.”

Liu Yi was worried that the Wolf Demon would cause trouble, so he accepted the task.

But his mind was still curious, and can't help but ask, "But I felt strange....who issued this kind of task...."

"Some are published by the cultivator, but some are issued by the organization that was set up by cultivators, called The Eye In The Sky."

"The Eye In The Sky?"

"That's right, This Eye In The Sky is a large Consortium."

Lin Tong explained, "They sent up several surveillance artifacts attached to the satellites. So, if there's any sign of trouble, like when the air filled with demonic qi, they can easily monitor. There is no certain method to shield oneself from their monitoring. I'm afraid it's even impossible."

"Holy sh...."

Liu Yi was secretly startled. Immortal cultivators actually have such an organization!

Lin Tong looked at Liu Yi's surprised face, thinking.

'Fortunately when the other Liu Yi appeared, he always gathered back his demonic qi. Otherwise, after a period, he will be discovered by the Eye In The Sky.'

'At that time, I'm afraid he will become the content of a mission.'

'I don't know what will his reaction be if Liu Yi sees a warrant for himself from a mission....'

Lin Tong was suddenly curious.

Meanwhile, in the Murong Family Mansion, Murong Die was enraged.

"I'm furious!"

She picked up a big bear doll and mercilessly beaten its face.

It seemed like she considered this big bear as Liu Yi.

"Sis' Die....I feel....Liu Yi gege didn't aware of your kind intention."

Wang Lele, who sat by her side, weakly said.

"What 'kind intention,' how could this big miss have any kind intention toward him!"

Murong Die angrily said, "This big miss just want to strangle him!"

"That....Isn't Sis' Die supposed to pretend to like him?"

Wang Lele quickly said.

At this time, Wang Lele and Murong Die were in a casual loose clothing, Murong Die wore a black lace nightgown, which appeared noble, yet cute. Her soft white skin and the black lace fabric was a brilliant contrast.

But Wang Lele was in a blue robe, with a large V-neck on the front, which clearly showed her massive chest. The front part of the clothes also clearly reflected the two small pointy bulge. If Liu Yi was here at this time, he would inevitably spray nosebleed.

The two people sat on the bed as Wang Lele tried to advise her.

"I think....we should use the next method. The previous suggestion method is definitely not strong enough!"

"Still not enough? Is there another method!"

Murong Die indignantly said, "Could it be you want this big miss to kneel in front of Liu Yi, holding flowers and cried: Liu Yi, I beg you, please be this miss' boyfriend? This big miss will not do that!"

"Hey? This method can actually work! How about we try it?"

"Go to hell, you dirty little girl, if you want to try, try it yourself!"

Murong Die grabbed a Kermit the frog puppet and threw it at Wang Lele, "You're chests are so big, I bet he'd love it!"

"Ai, Liu Yi gege is not a person who only likes boobs!"

Wang Lele held the Kermit the frog puppet in front of her chest, and then smiled and said, "Liu Yi gege is a bit wooden, but in order for Sis' Die to get him, you have to put up with him a little bit."

"Who wants to get him!"

Murong Die rolled her eyes, "This big miss just want to deceive his feelings! Humph, and then mercilessly avenge him!"

"Yes, yes, yes, but first you have to wrap him around your fingers!"

Wang Lele picked up a nearby iPad, and said, “Sis’ Die, let’s change our method.”

“What method, is there any other method?”

“It says here; there is a method. It’s called the indirect communication method.”

“What do you mean?”

“It’s a method to ask a friend to convey your feelings to Liu Yi gege instead of you!”

Wang Lele explained, “We all know that Liu Yi gege is the world’s densest wood. Actually, he gave everything back to sis’ Die because he probably thought that sis’ Die regard him as a pet, or even a beggar. We must make Liu Yi gege know that sis’ Die actually like him so that he can understand sis’ Die real intention, right?”

“For the record, I don’t like this guy!”

Murong Die rubbed the bear’s head as she said, “That’s one way to approach this. The guy has his pride and foolishness. If we don’t tell him, perhaps he’s really misunderstood.”

“Mm, then we go with this method! It should not be a problem!”

“Good! Lele, this challenging task is given to you!”

Murong Die nodded her head, then patted Wang Lele’s shoulder and said, “The organization depends on you!”

“Huh? Me?”

Wang Lele was silly.

“That’s right, it’s handed over to you! Good, it’s happily settled then! This big Miss is suddenly famished!”

“You hadn’t eaten in a day....”

Wang Lele’s face was bitter, “I’ll go downstairs to get you something to eat....big Miss Murong....”

“Sir....”

Wang An looked at Murong Hong who came down from upstairs, and asked, “How is Miss?”

“Liu Yi this fellow....actually dare to cause a grievance to little Die. Wang An, I want you to arrange....This evening, I want to take a good look at that Liu Yi.”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 100

## Chapter 100 Come To The Door

Throughout the day, Wang Yuzheng never said a word to him even though she shared the same table as Liu Yi, This girl even drew a line on the table, indicating the two people's territorial sovereignty.

Liu Yi was quite helpless. He never thought that one day he would be constrained by a line on the table.

Because in the past when Chen Cai was still sharing the table with him, Chen Cai this fellow was quite careless and wouldn't bother with this kind of thing.

Wang Yuzheng probably wanted to distance herself as far away as possible from him.

Liu Yi wanted to explain things to Wang Yuzheng, but he didn't know how to proceed.

This girl is studying very seriously, unlike himself, who often pretended to sleep with eyes closed but actually was practicing his technique inside the spiritual environment.

The table behind him was also empty, which meant Murong Die and Wang Lele didn't come back.

This day, for the whole day, Liu Yi felt really awkward.

"Looks like my life is hanging by a thread!"

Liu Yi, while carrying his bag outside the school, muttered.

"It is impossible to find a girl who is able to like me."

Lin Tong, who lay on Liu Yi's shoulder, was speechless after hearing his words.

'How could there be such a retarded man?'

'He is the first one under the sun....' She thought.



“Do you want to go home or doing the mission first?”

Lin Tong thought that she would not be able to clearly explain the matter to Liu Yi, but fortunately, she was able to directly ask the next good topic.

“Of course, I had to go home first.”

Liu Yi said, “I have to leave my bag home. Em, and then do the homework. Then do the mission.”

Before the school is over, the teacher had assigned several pages of homework, giving Liu Yi a big headache.

Students are really quite miserable....Demons are not his greatest enemy, pages of homework is!

“Hello....Can’t you look at the problem from the perspective of a real immortal cultivator?”

“I am an immortal cultivator.”

Liu Yi nodded his head, “Moreover, I’m an immortal cultivator who must do his homework assignment.”

“F4ck....”

Lin Tong did not want to talk anymore.

These two sentences from Liu Yi, each time she heard, it irritated her to death.

It seemed that this immortal Fox also had to cultivate her spiritual cultivation, otherwise, though she luckily escaped from that female immortal cultivator, sooner or later, she would die in Liu Yi’s hand.

Yes, that’s it.

Liu Yi was running. Since he became an immortal cultivator, he never took the bus anymore.

Moreover, after his star jade has been upgraded, his speed was getting increasingly fast.

Previously running from school to home in about half an hour was now less than twenty minutes.

Soon, he arrived in his neighborhood.

But before he entered his home apartment building, a few black cars suddenly came from the side, making a line in front of him and stopped there, directly blocking his way.

Liu Yi was suddenly surprised, thinking, 'What is this?'

Just as he confused about the scene in front of him, the car doors were pushed open, and several well-trained black suited men came out from the car and encircled around Liu Yi.

Liu Yi soon lost his confusion because he saw Wang An coming out of the car and walked toward him.

"What are you trying to do?"

"Mr. Liu shouldn't be worried, our master is here, and he invites you to talk to him."

"Hey, this seems not like an invitation."

Liu Yi glanced around, "If I want to go, are you going to stop me?"

"How could it be...."

Wang An's face slightly twitched.

"Then good, I'm leaving. Goodbye."

Liu Yi was reluctant to talk with Murong Hong. 'What's there to talk about?' He thought.

As the saying goes, when words get sour, adding words is useless. Not only he didn't want to talk to Murong Hong, Liu Yi didn't even want to see him.

Why does he want to see the kind of people who looked down upon others?

Isn't it just waiting to be humiliated?

Liu Yi didn't have time for such a pain in the ass man.

He still had to go back and do his homework.

"Blocked him."

Wang An's face was pale. He never thought this kid wouldn't want to give some face and immediately left.

A group of bodyguard suddenly came up, each of them was eyeing on Liu Yi, ready to make their move at a moments notice.

"Such an enthusiastic invitation."

Liu Yi sneered, "Today I'd like to see; I want to go home, who can stop me!"

With that, he forcefully rushed away outside of the encirclement.

A bodyguard suddenly stopped in front of him and held Liu Yi's shoulder with both of his hands, ready to use a grappling technique to take down Liu Yi.

"Scram!"

Liu Yi suddenly stopped running. At the same time, he did a roundhouse kick directly toward that bodyguard's head.

"Bam!"

That bodyguard immediately flew out and then hit the top of the car.

"This kid knows Kung Fu, do not hold back!"

Wang An said, clenching his fists.

If he didn't take down this kid now, it would be a big shame for him.

After losing out two times in a row against this kid, Wang An didn't want to lose for the third time.

This group of bodyguard no longer held back. They drew out their baton sticks and coming toward Liu Yi once again.

"Liu Yi, if you don't want to suffer, just enter the car."

Wang An urged.

"To suffer? I want to see who's going to suffer!"

Liu Yi looked at these bodyguards, who suddenly even took out the baton stick, and immediately furious, thinking 'By relying on a bit of money, you want to disregard the law!?'

‘In this public place, you openly besieged a weaponless student!?’

A bodyguard rushed forward and swung his baton stick toward Liu Yi’s face.

The force of a good baton stick is quite powerful. It’s sufficient enough to smash a brick.

And Liu Yi’s head seemed not to have the rigidity of a brick.

But he didn’t dodge. He stood there and stretched out his left hand to directly caught the man’s wrist and then severely squeeze it.

Immediately the bodyguard’s wrist was in severe pain, making him loosened his hand. Thus, the baton stick fell down and was caught by Liu Yi’s right hand.

Then Liu Yi flung the stick directly to the attacker from his right flank. The stick mercilessly hit the rushing bodyguard right on his face. That bodyguard muffled a cry and fell to the ground.

Toward the bodyguard that rushed to his left, Liu Yi waved his left hand, clutching the bodyguard in front of him like a weapon to swing him sideways. Immediately that bodyguard and the bodyguard on the left crashed together. Both of them cried out and then fell on the street.

In the blink of an eye, Liu Yi has taken down three bodyguards.

His action was smooth, and actually even better than the last time on the mansion, Wang An’s heart was inexplicably panicked, ‘Is there really an expert who secretly guide this Liu Yi?’

‘In this Northern Dragon City, who exactly that expert who can guide an ordinary student to such an incredible progress?’

“Bam!”

A bodyguard’s baton stick, crashed into Liu Yi’s previously grabbed baton stick, making a metallic sound.

The bodyguard’s hand muscle was suddenly a bit numb.

His heart was in shocked, thinking.

‘How could this uniform wearing kid have such a strength!’

‘Isn’t he just a student!’

But when was still thinking, Liu Yi came up to the front of his body, and whispered.”

“You’ve been following the wrong master, and you also picked the wrong opponent!”

With that, Liu Yi sent out his palm toward that bodyguard’s body.

The Great Brilliant Sun Palm, launched with just part of its power.

But, none of this bodyguard can handle this part.

That bodyguard felt like he was hit by a car with no brakes. He spewed out a mouthful of blood and was directly flung out, and then smashed into the arms of another bodyguard. That other bodyguard was pushed backward and ended up sitting on the ground. He too, crazily vomiting blood, making the other surrounding bodyguard scared.

Liu Yi swept his gaze and immediately saw Murong Hong sitting inside the Lincoln car.

“Murong Hong, don’t you want to talk to me? I’m coming.”

Liu Yi said and walked toward that Murong Hong in big strides.

“Stop!”

Wang An was surprised, thinking, ‘This is terrible!’

He suddenly threw the baton stick in his hand toward Liu Yi.

This baton stick was thrown with enough strength that it exuded a whistling wind in the air.

But Liu Yi just stretched out his left hand and with ‘pop’ sound, smoothly caught that baton stick.

With each hand holding a baton stick, he hit the bodyguards that came at him left and right. And, within a minute of effort, he has taken down all of the bodyguards.

Even Wang An was somewhat shocked as he never thought that Liu Yi could actually progress to this point.

If he knew that Liu Yi has been receiving the guidance from the little demon fox in the spiritual environment every day, he might not be too surprised.

In addition to that, Liu Yi also consciously developed his own fighting skill. Thus his progress is increasingly fast.

Although his power was dormant, his fighting ability has actually improved pretty quickly.

At this time, Liu Yi was carrying the two baton stick, walking toward that Lincoln car. Even Murong Hong, who sat inside the car, can't stay calm.

'Is....this the Liu Yi who I came across that day?'

"Liu Yi, stop!"

Wang An suddenly pulled out a gun from his waist and pointed its muzzle at Liu Yi's head.

Liu Yi stopped right in front of the Lincoln car. He was about to swing the baton stick to knock at its window.

"Liu Yi, you better think before you do that."

Wang An, holding the gun, advised, "There are some people that you can not provoke."

Fortunately, now it was already in the evening, so the neighborhood street was devoid of people.

Otherwise, even with a silencer, someone must surely be watching it and report it to the police.

"I did not want to offend anyone. It's you who provoked me."

Liu Yi looked at the Lincoln's window, clenching his teeth and said, "Don't think you can just bully an ordinary people! I'm telling you; even a rabbit will bite if anxious! Let alone me, a man!"

With that, Liu Yi suddenly threw the baton stick in his right hand toward Wang an.

Wang An unconsciously turned his head to the side to avoid that baton stick.

At the same time, Liu Yi loosened the baton stick in his left hand and sent a palm toward the car door.

“Bam!”

The Lincoln immediately sled aside two meters away.

Its tires left deep traces on the ground.

A deep palm print was left on the door. Its window's glass was directly shattered, revealing Murong Hong's paled with surprise face.

“Liu Yi, you are out of your mind!”

Wang An pointed his gun at Liu Yi once again, “Do you want to die!”

“I'm pretty sure I'm going to live longer than you two.”

Liu Yi said.

“Wang An, forget it. Let him come.”

Murong Hong opened his mouth at this time.

He then pushed open the car door.

Only to see the door shook twice and then fell to the ground.

Murong Hong's face twitched.

“Uncle Murong, I think the two of us have nothing to talk about.”

Liu Yi said.

“Don't be so full of yourself.”

Murong Hong is someone who is not to be trifled with. But he thought that his face has been completely torn into pieces today. If he did not return the courtesy, his heart would be uncomfortable.

“Liu Yi, don't forget, you still have parents.”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 101

## Chapter 101 The Rebellious Murong Die

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Index](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

Hearing him saying those words, Liu Yi was even more angered.

The black stream of qi inside his body began to surge up and somewhat uncontrollably whooshing outward.

A powerful devil qi was directly infused into his body.

Liu Yi's eyes were slightly suffused with golden threads.

"Murong Hong, are you threatening me?"

Liu Yi's body suddenly sent out a strong murderous aura toward the opposite Murong Hong.

Murong Hong's mouth was initially holding a tobacco pipe, but unexpectedly this tobacco pipe was not firmly held by him. Thus, it fell on the nearby leather seat.

"Liu Yi!"

Wang An was also sensitive enough to capture that murderous intent. His finger was on the trigger as he aim the muzzle on Liu Yi's temple, "Take one more step and I'll shoot!"

"I'm not talking with you right now!"

Liu Yi said and then swung his right hand.

The pistol in Wang An's hand suddenly became red and boiling-hot, making him instantly cried out in alarm. Hence, he loosened his hand, letting the gun fell on the ground.

Wang An looked at his hand in dismay as it began to show up some blisters.

'How could this Liu Yi do this!' He thought.

'Beside knowing Kung Fu, does he also know some kind of telekinesis?'



‘This....is unbelievable....’

“Liu Yi, what do you want?”

Murong Hong calmed himself down.

He picked up the tobacco pipe with his hand and tried not to show the shivers.

He has completely lost the control of tonight’s situation.

He was supposed to find Liu Yi and condescendingly talk to him.

But he never thought that Liu Yi, contrary to his expectation, was able to singlehandedly and completely crushed all his bodyguards, and then he even gave him some demonstration of his power.

This turn of event....

How could it happen?

He, Murong Hong of Northern Dragon City, had never been so humiliated.

Of all people, this Liu Yi was able to make him at a loss of what to do!

Moreover, he made him afraid....

This man, what exactly is his background?

Is he really just an ordinary student?

But how could an average student was able to make him, Murong Hong, flustered!

“What do I want? Uncle Murong, let’s not be so unreasonable.”

Liu Yi couldn’t help but sneer, “Shouldn’t it be what do you want to do? Listening to your words, you seem to imply that you are threatening me with my family.”

Liu Yi’s body was now filled with demonic and devil energy, and his speaking was thick with sarcasm.

“We can sit down and talk.”

Murong Hong said.

“I’m still saying the previous sentence. I think we have nothing to talk

about.”

Liu Yi said, “Also, Murong Hong, don’t even try to make a move against my family. Otherwise, even if you are the unofficial Emperor of this Northern Dragon City, I can make you disappear.”

His voice fell, his left hand suddenly made a piercing move toward Murong Hong.

A hole suddenly appeared on the back of the chair.

The meaning of this threat was self-evident.

Murong Hong did not speak, but his face has turned very ugly.

This was the first time someone threatened him.

Moreover, it was actually done by an unknown student!

His own daughter unexpectedly fell in love with such a dangerous man....

Murong Hong’s heart completely lost his confidence.

Liu Yi, having done all this, pulled his hand back, turned around and walked away.

The surrounding bodyguards were all lying on the ground, all of them were injured by him.

That Wang An also stood on the side. He did not dare to stop him.

No one dared to stop Liu Yi. To them, Liu Yi was like a death star.

Not after Liu Yi’s figure gradually disappeared did Wang An breathe a heavy sigh of relieve.

Today’s Liu Yi....was entirely different from the past.

It seemed like his master has stirred up this Liu Yi’s nerve....

“Sir...What do we do now....”

Wang An looked at that Lincoln car which has lost its door, toward Murong Hong, who was sitting inside while smoking a tobacco pipe, and asked.

“Liu Yi is a dangerous man.”

Murong Hong smoke that cigarette pipe for a long time, and finally, he

gloomily said.

“Today, I made a wrong move. I shouldn’t have mess with him. These days, don’t mess with Liu Yi anymore. We need to observe the situation first, and then we’ll see.”

Murong Hong summarily said.

“Then what about the little miss....”

“We can’t put our hands on Liu Yi. But for little Die, I think, I will see her drop out of school and then I’ll arrange a tutor from the Elite Educations for her.”

Murong Hong said, “I can’t control Liu Yi, but I can control my daughter. This source of danger must be cut off. Moreover, Liu Yi has humiliated me today....I, Murong Hong, will repay ten times, hundred times.”

“Sir...what do you want to do?”

Wang An’s heart was somewhat uncomfortable.

He thought that Liu Yi seemingly would face a disaster.

“Give me the contact of the Heavenly List.”

“This....sir, is this a good idea?”

“Do I, Murong Hong need you to teach me how to handle things?”

Murong Hong’s face turned sinister as he said that.

“Wang An knows his wrong....I will go and make the arrangement.”

Wang An sighed in his heart and said.

‘Liu Yi, I hope you kid many-many good luck.’

—

After Liu Yi had arrived in his home, he made a beeline toward the bed. His heart was incomparably depressed.

‘Damn Murong Hong....’ He cursed in his heart.

‘I didn’t look for him to create trouble, but he came to my place and provoked me instead!’

“Aaaah! My life is messed up!”

He couldn't help but scream.

“Actually, your life can transcend above all of this.”

Lin Tong landed on the table and reminded, “As long as you pay all your attention to cultivating immortal cultivation with me, you can come with me and gone into seclusion. Your talents combined with my guidance. In five years, you can be a super expert. At that time, when you come back to Northern Dragon City again, Murong Hong or anyone, is completely not your opponent.”

“No....That is not the life that I want.”

Liu Yi repeatedly shook his head.

“Then what kind of life do you want?”

“I don't know about the future, but for now, I want to focus my attention into getting admitted to a good university. Perhaps after going to college, everything will be different.”

Liu Yi remembered how the teacher and his parents used to persuade him.

You need to study hard now. After you went to college, you can do whatever you want.

Indeed, Liu Yi also yearned for the College life. He heard that in University there are many beautiful girls, and he'll be free to choose his lover.

“D4mn, such an unambitious guy!”

Lin Tong could not help but give a big supercilious look at Liu Yi.

“Who said that? My chest has two big moles!” (TL: Unambitious can also mean The chest has no big mole)

Liu Yi emphasized.

“You! Rogue!”

Lin Tong's pretty face could not help but blush. She covered her face and no longer looked at Liu Yi.

“Which part of me that look like a rogue?”

“Your thinking is rogue!”

“On the contrary, I think it’s you, Fox sister. Could it be all your thoughts are rogue?”

“Liu Yi! Believe it or not, this lady will use the self-explode technique in front of you! See if you can withstand this unique skill!”

“Fine...Just pretend I didn’t say anything.”

After teasing the little Fox, Liu Yi felt that his mood had improved a lot.

He felt that his personality had gradually changed.

He used to be pretty rigid, but now he actually can smoothly tease a beauty.

This must be because of the various forces that were interacting in his body....

In particular, the surging up of the devil qi from the Red Blood Sutra Code, which gave him the biggest headache.

“Humph humph, quickly do your homework and then do the mission! The Demon Wolf is waiting for no one. If you continue to procrastinate, perhaps other people will complete the mission!”

“Why do I need to do my homework just after I went home? It’s too depressing!”

Liu Yi currently has no mood to finish his homework. Better do the mission first.

Murong Hong has completely messed up his life. And now he needed to figure out how to deal with Murong Hong.

Liu Yi stood in front of the window and put on his black suit outfit.

When the ice-cold mask buckled on his face, Liu Yi suddenly had a kind of enlightenment. He thought.

‘So what if you’re the unofficial Emperor of the Northern Dragon City?’

‘The Northern Dragon City Night, belongs to me, Liu Yi.’

Thinking about this, Liu Yi’s mood improved a bit. He then jumped out of

the window.

---

“Sir, I have arranged a contact to the Heavenly List.”

After Murong Hong had returned home, Wang An stood beside him and whispered.

“Is there anyone available to order?”

“Yes, there is....It’s the number 47 on the Heavenly List, Poison Jasmine. However, Sir....Liu Yi is only a student, are you sure you want to....”

“He has threatened me.”

Murong Hong’s face was gloomy as he sat on the couch, smoking a cigarette pipe.

“People who threatened little Die and me cannot stay in this world.”

When they were still speaking, Murong Die suddenly came from the upstairs and, with an unhappy face, asked.

“Dad, why did the Butler suddenly say to me that you don’t want me to go to school tomorrow?”

“Em, I think your school is a mess. Later I will arrange a tutor for you. I want you to do homeschool, and that’s final.”

“Why?!”

Murong Die was suddenly furious.

“I am not yet 22. You can’t just take control of my life now!”

“I’m doing this for your own good.”

Murong Hong looked at her daughter’s angry face, and his heart turned slightly sour.

‘Oh, Liu Yi, if not for you, little Die will not become so disobedient.’

“What’s for my own good? Do you understand me? Do You know what I’m thinking?”

Murong Die’s repressed emotion that has been accumulating for a long time finally was about to explode.

“You are indeed my father, but you shouldn’t control my life! I am your daughter, and I love you, but I don’t want to be your puppet, your toy! For so many years, you have been trying to control me, treating me like a Canary in a cage. I know that I’m not a child of ordinary family, so I made a promise to you that after I reach 22 years old, I will wholeheartedly listen to your control! But I did that in exchange for the freedom that I have before that age!”

“Did I not provide for you enough? Are you still not satisfied?”

Murong Hong was somewhat surprised.

“What I want is not this. The material things are very good. But, I, Murong Die, am not just a pet, that you, Murong Hong, raise! A pet that will do whatever you told me to do. I’m sorry, I’m not a kid anymore, I have my own ideas. I am not your toy anymore, and I will not listen to your arrangement!”

“Little Die, don’t forget, you are the daughter of the Murong Family!”

“How could I!”

Murong Die’s eyes were red as she angrily said to Murong Hong, “Either you continue to let me go to school, or you’ll never see your daughter again! Your choice!”

With that, she turned around and ran back upstairs.

“Nonsense! Complete nonsense!”

Murong Hong was furious as he clenched his cigarette pipe.

“Wang An, did you see that?! Did you hear that?! This is my good daughter! If I don’t get rid of this Liu Yi, how could I eliminate this anger! Immediately arrange a hit order for Poison Jasmine! I need to let that kid know that I, Murong Hong, is not to be trifled with!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 102

## Chapter 102 You Did That On Purpose

Northern Dragon City Autumn's night is nearly as cool as winter.

Especially when the Autumn's wind blow, which makes people chill to the bone.

Liu Yi was wearing his black suit outfit. His immortal cultivation energy maintained the temperature inside his body. He was currently in the Eastern outskirt of the city, standing on top of a factory chimney, looking around at the situation all around him.

"Fox sister, where's the demonic qi coming from?"

"It is further to the Northeast, probably near the abandoned construction site."

Lin Tong was lying on top of Liu Yi's shoulder while giving him the direction.

"By the way, you should learn how to do this yourself so that you can detect the demonic energy on your own."

"I already got you, Fox sister, why should I learn how to do this?"

Liu Yi waved his hand and said.

"It's not that...."

The little Fox suddenly couldn't help but say, "If one day I had to leave, what are you going to do since you would be alone by then?"

"How's that possible? If that indeed happen, I would just bring Fox sister back!"

Liu Yi smiled and said, "Fox sister is so good to me, I will certainly take care of Fox sister."

"Cih...."

The little Fox's nose turned somewhat sour. She hardly able to open her



mouth, “But this miss is a four star jade expert....I don’t need you to protect me....”

“I will grow up....In order to protect Fox sister, I would continually upgrade my strength.”

Liu Yi clenched his fists and said.

“Humph, consider you kid have a conscience.”

“My grandpa said, a drop of grace will turn into a gushing spring....”

“Your grandpa again, I hate your grandpa!”

“My grandpa has died....your hate will go nowhere.”

“You, you, you! This lady hates you now! Go kill yourself!”

“If I die, who will protect Fox sister?”

“D4mn! This lady is fierce. I can take care of myself!”

When the two people were bickering, on the distant construction site, a huge fire suddenly burst out and into the sky.

“There’s a fighting over there!”

Lin Tong could not help but say, “Not good, someone else may also take the mission and arrived first! Liu Yi, let’s go and see!”

“Got it!”

Liu Yi nodded his head, and then started to pedal the ice skates below his feet, the whole person instantly jumped into the dark night.

Wei Yi felt that she was recently plagued by bad luck.

After a long time of unsuitable mission, she finally got one which only require her to kill a seemingly little demon.

But when she came here, oh boy....This place didn’t have a Wolf Demon. Instead, it was a nest full of Wolf Demon!

A big wolf demon with a pack of little wolf demon!

At this time, Wei Yi stood in a corner of the construction site. Her body was fully covered with Tuantuan’s hair, protecting her.

In front of her, there were six or seven werewolf-like creatures, each two meters high, approaching her little by little.

“Auu!”

A wolf demon was suddenly on all fours, the whole pack howled, and then suddenly rushed toward Wei Yi.

“Tuantuan!”

“Hu, hu!”

As soon as Wei Yi cried out her name, Tuantuan’s mouth suddenly spat out a red roaring flame toward that rushing Wolf Demon. The flame hit the Wolf Demon, which instantly sent its body fly out, turned into a heap of fire, rolled on the ground, and then cried out in pain.

But that Wolf Demon rolled on the ground several times, which then extinguished the flame.

The rest of the Wolf Demons ferociously stared at Wei Yi, ready to attack at a moments notice.

“Hihihi....I can’t believe that, in the middle of the night, there’s such a beautiful girl knocking down at my doorstep.”

A man in a black trench coat, with a cigarette dangling from his mouth, and a horrible scar on one of his eyes, was sitting on top of a row of cement pipes at the construction site. He was looking down at the little Wolf Demons and said with a strange smile.

“Once my kids take you down, I’m going to enjoy you first and then eat your delicious flesh.”

“D4mn! Enjoy your lecherous thoughts in your dream!”

Although her mouth was swearing, Wei Yi’s heart was very uncomfortable.

The level of the wolf demon that sat on the cement pipe is seemingly not low.

One can say that, at the very least, he is a third-star Demon!

Then there are these little one or two star demons....If she makes a tiny bit of mistake, she probably wouldn’t be able to leave here alive.

Wei Yi subconsciously touched the jade pendant on her chest. She was really tempted to use this jade to call her martial brother....

‘Can’t I complete the task by myself?’ She thought.

She who use to brag about being the heaven’s chosen female....

Will soon become a big loser!

As she continued to urge her fire civet Tuantuan to sent fireballs at the constantly approaching Wolf Demon, her heart was secretly worried.

“Au, Au, Au!”

At this time, these pack of Wolf demons suddenly spread themselves into two groups and then rushed toward Wey Yi from two sides.

“Tuantuan!”

Wei Yi quickly cried out.

That Fire Civet quickly turned into a heap of fireball and then flew out with a roar.

“Bam, bam bam!”

The blazing fireball was extremely fast. It hit three Wolf Demons in a row, knocking out their body away.

But another Wolf Demon slyly wounded up behind Wei Yi, opened his big mouth, and was about to bite Wei Yi’s white and tender neck.

Wei Yi only felt a cold wind coming from behind her, but it was too late to turn back. Her heart instantly went cold.

But at this moment, the air surrounding her suddenly turned cold.

“Ice Ball!”

“Bam!”

A cold air blasted out behind Wei Yi’s back.

The Icy blast froze that Wolf Demon on the ground, turning him into a Wolf ice sculpture.

“Who is it!”

The man in a black trench coat suddenly stood up, and loudly roared, “You dare to break into my Black Wind territory!”

“Your grandpa!”

The voice in midair said and suddenly turned into a shadow. Blue ice awns were unceasingly burst out from behind that shadow, which moved toward the spot on the cement pipe where that man in a trench coat stood.

“Atta boy, you come here to die!”

The Black Wind’s mouth uttered a roar and then launched his foot, doing a side kick.

Liu Yi’s palm and his foot clashed together and suddenly, with a loud bang, the two people simultaneously stepped back two steps.

“Three stars!”

Lin Tong instantly saw the strength of this Black Wind Wolf Demon and told Liu Yi.

“What, you again?”

Seeing Liu Yi stood up from falling on the ground earlier, Wei Yi hastily asked.

“I’m the one who want to ask here! With so many tasks, why did you took the same task as me!”

“Sh1t, do you think I want to!”

Wei Yi can’t help but exclaimed, “The E-level tasks are so few. There’s only a few that suit me....These days, the Eye In The Sky often cheat on people, this is obviously a D-level task, but they set it to an E-level task instead! I want to go back and find their customer services to lecture them!”

“ .... ”

Liu Yi suddenly shed out cold sweat while thinking, ‘this Eye In The Sky also has a customer service department....’

“They have everything!”

When Liu Yi wiped away his sweat, the Wolf Demon, who stood on the

cement pipe, growled.

“What! This father is just an E-level task! D4mn, this makes no sense! No wonder the two that came here are just weak little bitches! Kids, kill them both. Tonight, we’ll dine their meat!”

“Au, Au, Au!”

The Wolves immediately cried one after the other.

Wei Yi was surprised to find that there were, even more, Wolf Demons crawled out from the surrounding darkness.

“Oh my God! I’m in Wolf’s lair!”

“Fortunately, they’re not a color-wolf (pervert). Otherwise, you’ll lose big time!”

Liu Yi still has the mood to crack a joke.

“D4mn! Who says there is no pervert here? There are two in this place!”

Wei Yi recalled that Liu Yi almost took her first kiss that night. Her face suddenly went red, and she can’t help but tenderly scolded.

“Two? Why would there be two?”

“It’s you and that Black Wind! You’re all pervert!”

“Hey! I am innocent!”

“You, two brats, this is my place, not a place that you can casually chat!”

The Black Wind laughed, “Let my children rip you apart!”

As soon as Black Wind said that, those little Wolf Demons, one by one, jumped up on both Liu Yi and Wei Yi.

“Tuantuan! Don’t let them look down on our Linglong school’s disciple!”

Wei Yi cried out, “Come here!”

“Meow!”

That Fire Civet suddenly jumped on to Wei Yi’s hand and turned into a fire, and then turned into a strange cane, which unexpectedly looked like a pistol. One of its ends was on Wei Yi’s hand while the other end showed a shape of

the head of a cat.

“Taste our Tuantuan’s Cloud of Fire! You pervert!”

Wei Yi said as she grabbed that pistol-like cane with both hands while aiming it at the Wolf demon in front of her and then swept like crazy.

Suddenly, fireballs sprayed out from the cat’s mouth and fell on that pack of Demon Wolf.

“Boom, boom, boom!”

Like a barrage from the artillery, the fireballs were unceasingly blasted out, bombing those Wolf Demons back.

Liu Yi looked silly, thinking.

‘I’ll be d4mn....This summoner expert could actually bring out such toy!’

‘Too awesome!’

“This is called Armor Up.”

Lin Tong lazily blew off some air, telling Liu Yi that, “This is just a common technique of a spiritual cultivator. When you open up your third-star jade, I will teach you such a skill. Then you can also subdue a spirit animal to play with.”

“Huh? Didn’t you say double cultivation will not have a good end?”

“Summoning a spiritual animal will not interfere with your cultivation.”

Lin Tong explained, “The true summoner started to train their spiritual animal since they were kid. That’s why it is so difficult for them to cultivate. If you switch into raising a spiritual animal now, it would actually be ok. Generally, immortal cultivators don’t want to waste their immortal energy. That’s why they dislike this technique. But you are different. Your body has three different energy....Everyday, your energy would always overflow, it would be enough to feed some of it to the spiritual animal! Moreover, feeding a spiritual animal might be good for you, less your energy would be too much and you lose control of yourself.”

“Oh....Okay then....”

Liu Yi nodded his head, agreeing to Lin Tong’s suggestion of him raising a

spiritual animal. He thought 'In any case, I'm a compassionate boy.'

'Raising a cute pet will not only help me pass the time, it is said that it can also be used to pick up girls!'

'Hehe....I'm a genius!'

'How could that Chen Cai called himself the Saint of Love! That title should belong to me!'

'It's just that I'm a low-key man, not a show off like Chen Cai.'

"Boom, boom, boom!"

The nearby Wei Yi was constantly blowing out balls of flame, forcing back those Wolf Demons.

When she saw that Liu Yi was just standing there in a daze, her nose crooked with anger.

"Ten steps to milk a man, are you stupid! Quickly come and help! This old mom will be tired to death!"

This chosen girl has used a foul language, showing that she's extremely furious.

"Yes, I'm coming."

Liu Yi immediately rubbed his hands to create ice balls and then threw them one by one toward those Wolf Demon.

"Bam, bam, bam!"

Icy blasts suddenly exploded on the ground.

The fireball that Wei Yi just shot out was instantly condensed into a frost by Liu Yi's icy balls.

In her anger, Wei Yi almost sent a fireball toward Liu Yi.

"D4mn! Ten steps to milk a man, you did that on purpose!"

"No! Definitely not! I swear to God!"

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 103

## Chapter 103 Cat Mother Wei Yi

“You should coordinate your attack with this miss!”

Wei Yi was exasperated, thinking, ‘Is this ten steps to milk a man came here to mess with me?’

‘This 4sshole....’

‘Why did he, when turning into a demon, become so charming but also highly skilled?’

Wei Yi didn’t know what was so strange inside the body of Ten steps to milk a man.

But she’s unconsciously somewhat expecting for the demonic Liu Yi to awake.

“Wei Yi, gun down the spot that I’m going to freeze!”

Liu Yi said as he rubbed up a group of ice balls to shoot and then threw them out.

“Bang!”

Three Wolf Demons were instantly frozen to the ground, turning into ice sculptures.

“Boom!”

Wei Yi deftly fired a fireball toward those ice sculptures, exploding them into pieces.

“Continue!”

Liu Yi nodded with satisfaction, thinking, ‘This kind of destructive power is the strongest!’

He continued to throw ice bombs, making a field of ice sculptures.

Wei Yi began to continuously collecting heads. Her fireballs sent those ice sculptures into bits and pieces.



This powerful destructive force swept away this pack of Wolf Demons like crazy.

“Au, Au, Au!”

A pack of Wolf Demons was finally on their last leg. They were not ganging up the two people. Instead, they were massacred!

Even if they are low in intelligence, they know how to feel afraid!

“Not bad, not bad! Didn’t think you’re useful this time!”

Wei Yi happily said.

“D4mn! You actually treat my children like this! D4mn you!”

That Black Wind who stood on the cement pipe, seeing this scene, his eyes turned red.

“The two of you, die for me! Dark Demonic Wind!”

He pulled his hands behind his back, and then shot out to the front and clasped together.

Suddenly, two strong winds waved out from his hands and then gathered together, forming a black tornado, seven or eight meters high and one meter wide, and then rolled over toward Liu Yi and Wei Yi.

Those Wolf Demons knew the attack pattern of their boss. Thus, they flexibly dodge this tornado.

But Liu Yi and Wei Yi, two people were somewhat caught off guard.

“What do we do, what do we do!”

Wei Yi looked at the black tornado that was rapidly rolled toward them and asked, somewhat in panic.

“Grab me!”

Liu Yi loudly shouted.

“Who’s going to grab you! I am not....Ah!”

The tornado has arrived in front of the two of them. Its powerful wind was tearing their clothes.

Fortunately, the two people have the immortal energy to protect their body. Otherwise, they would certainly run naked into the camera.

Both of Liu Yi's feet condensed out a powerful frost energy, freezing the surface of the floor, making him tied to the ground.

Wei Yi, who almost flew out, subconsciously hugged Liu Yi's waist in a hurry so that both of their waists were pasted tightly together.

This time is not the time to keep her self-respect intact.

The strength of this tornado was extremely powerful. Liu Yi soon felt that his feet can't hold on any longer.

He crouched down and lie on the floor. Both of his hands condensed out icy frosts, binding him to the ground. But this posture can also reduce the drag and also better to steady himself.

Wei Yi also followed to bent over, lying next to Liu Yi and still clutching his waist. Their postures were quite ambiguous.

Liu Yi thought that if the tornado wasn't too strong, he would be able to smell Wei Yi's body fragrance.

'Amitabha....in times like this, what am I thinking!' He chastised himself.

Liu Yi repeatedly shook his head.

He increased the thickness of his ice and trying hard to resist the raging tornado.

After this continued for about a minute, the strength of the tornado gradually subsided.

The two people have become extremely pathetic.

Their clothes were torn open. Many gaping holes can be seen. Fortunately, Liu Yi is a boy, so it didn't matter to him.

But for Wei Yi next to him, many parts of her soft-white skin were exposed. Particularly on her curling upward buttocks. Because when they lie down on the ground just a moment ago, that spot was the most ripped apart. Liu Yi can even see Wei Yi's black lace panties....

'Oh my....this is the legendary tear dress pattern!'

Wei Yi obviously didn't know that her skin has been exposed that much. After getting up, she waved her fist in anger and shouted.

"Kill that d4mn Wolf Demon! My hairstyle is all messed up because of him!"

'Hey, hey....'

'Is it okay to be focusing on the hairstyle this time?'

Liu Yi wanted to ridicule, but he refrained from doing so.

"You two actually can withstand my Dark Demon Wing? Interesting, interesting."

The Black Wind couldn't help but sneer, "Although the two of you have some strength, your biggest mistake was picking the wrong opponent. This uncle Black Wind will send the two of you babies to the western paradise!"

With that, Black Wind bathed himself in the moonlight and suddenly spread out his arms-In Liu Yi's eyes, his posture was like someone who is suffering from constipation-and roared.

"Au, au, au, uu, uu, uu...."

Black Wind's appearance was unceasingly changing.

He no longer looked like a man eating guy. His hair started to unceasingly grow while his face continued to elongate.

His stature became a lot higher and much stronger. His four hands turned into the hungry wolf's sharp claws.

He stood there on both of his lower limbs' claws, a black haired werewolf. His green and glossy eyes landed on Liu Yi and Wei Yi.

"Holy sh1t, this is a Werewolf or a Wolf Demon!"

Liu Yi can't help but exclaim.

Before his voice even dropped, something already arrived in front of him.

That black figure who stood on top of the cement pipe ten meters away just a moment ago has vanished and instantly appeared in front of Liu Yi.

He waved his claw directly at Liu Yi's chest.

“Rip!”

There was a tearing pain in his chest. Liu Yi was sent out flying, blood spilling out of his chest.

This Wolf Demon....was too quick....

“Liu Yi, be careful! This guy’s technique attribute is the wind. The wood attribute creates the wind technique!”

Liu Yi’s icy qi came from the system of water.

He endured the pain and crawled up, full of wariness in his heart.

The nearby Wei Yi also met with a disaster at this time. After Black Wind swept a claw at Liu Yi, he prepared to get rid of Wei Yi.

“Tuantuan! Fusion!”

Wei Yi is indeed worthy to be a disciple of an Immortal Cultivation School. When she saw that Liu Yi was injured, she immediately reacted.

The cat head in her hand instantly turned into a flame and quickly spread into her whole body.

Wei Yi’s ears were suddenly transformed into a pair of furry cat ears.

A cat tail also extended out from the crack on her pants.

Her pupils have become very beautiful while her pair of claws were incomparably sharp.

‘Sh!t....’

Liu Yi was shocked.

“This....is beyond weird!”

‘But why does she looks so cute....’

‘Is this the legendary, the cat mother goddess....’

“Woosh!”

Black Wind waved his claw in an empty space.

But the fusion of the Fire Civet and the Cat mother Wei Yi, in the blink of an eye, appeared on the top of that Black Wind’s head. Simultaneously, her pair

of claws directly grabbed that Black Wind's face.

One of Black Wind's eyes was caught unprepared.

Blood spewing out followed by the scream of Black Wind.

"Aaa! You d4mn kid! This uncle's eye!"

His body burst out a violent dark tornado, making cat mother Wei Yi directly flew out and hit the nearby pillar.

"D4mn, d4mn you all!"

Black Wind was a bit crazy.

He kept waving his claws, each time carrying out a sharp wind, which cut everywhere around him.

Because he has the power of the Demonic energy, the injuries on Liu Yi's chest have been a lot better.

He flexibly walked away from those wind blade.

The cat mother Wei Yi was even more flexible. She unceasingly stepped on the flame, dodging those razor-sharp wind.

"Cat mother, what do we do next!"

Liu Yi dodged to the side and asked.

"Go to hell! You're the cat mother!"

Wei Yi glared at Liu Yi, "This is called a fusion, ok! It let my power temporarily reach three stars! But there's still some gap in years of experience with this Black Wind's three stars! I think I can't confront him head on!"

'Is there no way to deal with this Wolf Demon?' Liu Yi thought.

'How could this be.'

How to stop this wind attribute, ultra fast Wolf Demon....'

Liu Yi suddenly thought of a method that he once use when he trained with Lin Tong.

'Right....I still have this one move!'

“Hey, blockhead, you big black dog, one-eyed dog! Come here if you have the skill! Your grandpa is here!”

Liu Yi, all of a sudden, started to taunt openly, facing the Black Wind and cried out.

“Are you crazy....”

Wei Yi was terrified, thinking, ‘How could his mouth still happily shout?’

“Au, Au!”

Black Wind suddenly turned. His only remaining one eye looked at Liu Yi with a deep sense of anger.

“Little kid, you bring your own death!”

Even before his voice stopped, his body had suddenly disappeared.

Liu Yi’s feet suddenly condensed an icy frost and spread it out.

“Boom! Krak, krak, krak....”

That Black Wind’s figure suddenly appeared less than twenty centimeters away from Liu Yi. But both of his feet were temporarily freeze on the ground. His eye was full of dismay.

“Completely freeze for me!”

Liu Yi took a deep breath and then made a determined effort to continuously create ice balls and crazily smashed it on the ground.

“Bam, bam, bam, bam, bam!”

In one vigorous effort, he didn’t even know how many ice balls that he threw on the ground.

The Black Wind in front of him was now half frozen.

“Little kid, do you think you can freeze this uncle Black Wind!”

Black Wind roared, and his body was constantly erupting violent dark wind, trying to tear up the frost.

“Not over yet!”

Contrary to the expectation, Liu Yi didn’t retreat but move forward instead

and then pasted himself toward Black Wind's body.

Meanwhile, his left palm exuded out a glistening blue light. This palm energetically exploded on Black Wind's chest.

"Vein Seal!"

"Bang!"

This palm solidly exploded on its target.

A red palm print was left on Black Wind's chest.

The frost on his body constantly spread out as the Vein Seal suppressed his blood vessels.

The violent dark wind on Black Wind's body dispersed and, all of sudden, he could not move.

He can only stared with his one big eye, watching Liu Yi in front of him in horror.

"Cat mother! Quickly make your move!"

Liu Yi cried out.

"You're the cat mother!"

Wei Yi refuted, but she canceled the fusion and used her armored technique again.

The cat head first appeared on the palm of her hand and then an intense ball of flame constantly condensed at the front of the cat's mouth.

"Ten steps to milk a man, get out of there!"

Liu Yi was already stepping on ice skates and withdrew more than ten meters away.

Wei Yi's cat head blew out one powerful pillar of flame. Because the strength of this pillar of flame was truly powerful, her whole body shook.

"Boom!"

That pillar of flame hit the body of Black Wind. A dazzling fire suddenly blew up in this construction site.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 104

## Chapter 104 Blocking The Way Will Die

A huge cloud of fire rushed to the sky and then slowly dissipated, like a meteor rain, flying everywhere.

Black Wind's body was shattered, leaving only his head, which fell and rolled on the ground. Surprisingly, his one eye hasn't closed, and his mouth still moved.

Liu Yi sighed with emotion, thinking, 'Truly deserve to be a Demon race, his life force is really strong!'

"Damn....this uncle....this uncle....will actually die at the hands of these two bastards...."

A minor third-star expert was beaten by two second-star newcomers. This Black Wind perhaps will die leaving his grievance unresolved.

"You two....don't get too cocky with this...."

With his last breath, Black Wind left these words.

"The Lost Organization....will not....let you off...."

"Bam!"

Before he could finish, Wei Yi's foot kicked away the Wolf's head.

A "Boom!" sound was heard. The Wolf's head bumped into the side of a wall like a ball and then completely dead.

"He is still chatty even though he's on his last breath!"

Her tattered clothes revealed some of her forbidden body parts, which seen by Liu Yi in a glance, making him secretly swallowed his saliva.

"This is....the benefits of fighting....' He thought.

"No....This is a D-level task. I'm going back and report this to the customer service department of the Eye In The Sky so that they bump up the task level! Otherwise, the reward will not be enough!"



“This....task is finished with our cooperation, so, the reward will be divided in half, right?”

Liu Yi blinked his eyes and asked.

“Humph, although I hate to admit it, yes, the mission is completed by the cooperation of the two of us.”

Wei Yi unhappily said.

“It’s over....I lost five thousand yuan....”

Thinking that this task initially can give him ten thousand yuan, but in a blink of an eye he had to give away half of it, Liu Yi’s heart was in pain.

“You miser....the bounty will belong to you, happy now?”

“What’s this, the Sun rises from the East? Cat mother, you’re actually this kind?”

“Cat mother you sister! I don’t care about that little money!”

Wei Yi’s impulsiveness was drawn out by Liu Yi, “The money is yours, but the morality points belong to me, how about that!”

“This....is not a good idea....I seem to suffer a great deal of loss....”

Liu Yi blinked.

He suddenly felt himself started to become cunning!

The previous him will certainly agree to this arrangement!

But now, how could behave like this, this arrangement is actually fair for the two of them....

He doesn’t belong to any school or sect, so, the morality point is naturally useless for him.

Could it be he is born a miser?

Or is it because the awakening of his evil personality?

“You know that the morality points can be exchanged for an artifact....But no amount of money can buy a good artifact, right?”

Liu Yi awkwardly raised this issue with Wei Yi.

“What you said is reasonable....this arrangement is indeed a bit unfair to you.”

Wei Yi nodded her head, “1000 morality points is indeed quite a lot. How about this, I won’t take advantage of you, let us set the rate of 1 morality points per ten yuan. I’ll buy your part of morality points, which is 500, for a total of 5000 yuan, what do you think?”

“Ai....there’s still some loss in there....”

Liu Yi sighed, and then said, “But, seeing that the two of us is both an immortal cultivator, I will sacrifice this little interest of mine.”

“Thank you, sometimes I find that you’re very pleasing to look at.”

Wei Yi was somewhat grateful that she can keep so many morality points for herself, which is indeed will be very helpful for her.

This girl didn’t know that Liu Yi has cheated on her, making her pay more for what should be a fair arrangement.

Liu Yi’s heart was silently chanting, ‘Amitabha, this is not me, but my evil personality....Later on, the evil me will go to hell while I will enter the paradise, looking for beauties....’

“If each of us do the E-task alone, the reward is pitiful, and also a waste of time.”

Wei Yi suddenly had an idea, and suggested, “Why don’t the two of us formed a team to do the task. We’ll then directly take the D-level task and the bounty arrangement will be the same as this. What do you think about this?”

Hearing Wei Yi’s recommendation, Liu Yi’s heart was somewhat moved, thinking.

‘Indeed, the two of us is only a second star cultivator. If the two of us works alone, we’ll only be able to take the E-level task.’

‘A single E-level task will only reward 1000 yuan. Moreover, the number of tasks is very pitiful.’

‘In contrast, the D-level task is more common. Although its difficulty

increases, the bonus is ten times more than the E-level task!’

It’s ten thousand yuan per task....oh, no, it’s fifteen thousand per task! If the number of tasks is six or seven each month, I’ll be rich soon in no time!’

At this time, there are some little golden stars in Liu Yi’s eyes.

Seeing his miser look, Wei Yi can’t help but feel disdain.

“Hey, hey, have you done thinking about it? This big miss doesn’t have much time, no time to accompany you in a daze here! Quickly tell me if you accept my proposition or not!”

“Yes, I agree to it. It’s a deal!”

Liu Yi didn’t try to bargain. This deal is not bad for him.

As long as he can make money, it’s a good deal.

It’s not easy to earn money as ordinary people....Besides, Liu Yi is just a high school student.

“When it comes to money, look at yourself, your eyes have turned into grandpa Mao!” (TL: Grandpa Mao is Mao Zedong, whose picture is on the 100 yuan bill)

Wei Yi can’t help but quip.

“My grandpa said, A gentleman loves money, in a proper way. I’m not like you, born in a wealthy family. I want to be rich, but I have to rely on my own strength.”

Liu Yi said.

“Okay, okay, you love to work hard, I get it. In any case, we’ve made a deal. Quickly open your client account and add me. My username is Wei Yi.”

“Wait a minute!”

Liu Yi raised his head, turning away his eyes from his mobile phone and landed it on Wei Yi’s pretty face.

“Your username is Wei Yi?”

“Of course.”

Wei Yi nodded her head, “Do you think I’ll use such a weird name?”

“Then how did you get that name....”

“My real name had the “Wei” character on it. I also like to throw coins like the great master of Yi. Therefore, I call myself Wei Yi!” (TL: The “Yi” character here is the same as the character of “Yi” in the book of change, or Yi Jing/I Ching, master of Yi refer to someone who’s expert in the book of change)

Wei Yi blinked her eyes and said.

‘F\*ck!’

‘This name is too standard!’

“Then what’s your real name?”

Liu Yi asked.

“Damn, why should I tell you!”

Wei Yi rolled her eyes at Liu Yi, “I won’t tell you, you big pervert!”

“I’m not a pervert....”

Liu Yi felt very aggrieved.

“Humph! If I say you are a pervert, then you are a pervert, don’t try to deny it! Open your app and add me as your friend. Later on, it will be easier for us to contact each other.”

“This site...also have ‘adding a friend’ function?”

Liu Yi was in shocked.

“Of course! You underestimate the technological standard of our immortal cultivator!”

Wei Yi looked at Liu Yi with contempt, “Even people in rural areas have internet access, much less in the cities. Could it be all the immortal cultivators are hiding in the remote mountains and ancient forest, breeding fishes and planting flowers for a living?”

“This....”

“Cut the crap and quickly add me! Wei Yi, don’t get it wrong! The character of Wei is the same as Wei in a species of fern!”

Wei Yi loudly urged.

Liu Yi flipped through the app and found the add friend function and then successfully add Wei Yi as his best friend.

“M, I’ll go back and build the team mode. I’m the captain, and I’ll choose the mission for us.”

“Why are you the captain and not me?”

Liu Yi quickly asked.

“There’s no such thing as why, this miss want to be the team leader, and that’s it. You’re not going to object this do you!”

Wei Yi brusquely said, “No? Good, it’s a pleasant deal then.”

“.....”

Liu Yi thought, ‘I seem not to have the chance to agree to it.’

‘But why this girl is so quick to say it’s a deal....’

‘Sure enough, all big miss are brutal.’

‘Wei Yi is like this. Murong Die is also the same.’

Thinking about Murong Die, Liu Yi’s heart couldn’t help but felt some anxiety.

‘This big miss, I don’t know how to deal with her.’

‘She’s angry at me for no reason at all. After that, her dad came after me.’

‘I taught her dad a lesson....’

‘This, would not make Murong Die more angry would she!’

‘When I go to school tomorrow, there shouldn’t be a problem, right....’

‘Amitabha, I’m asking for the blessing of Buddha.’

‘That big miss, I can’t mess with her.’

‘Although I can put my hands on her dad....’

‘But she....’

‘I can’t hit her, and I also can’t quarrel with her. Such a big headache....’

“I will take the Wolf head back with me. We’re already a team now and I want to take this back to report our completion of the task. Hmm, some martial uncles from the school who likes to refine drugs should also want this.”

Wei Yi said, looking at the Wolf head as she pulled out a bag.

This bag is only palm-sized, but a freak wind suddenly emerged, sucking the Wolf head into the pocket.

“What kind of bag is this, it’s amazing....”

Liu Yi exclaimed.

“A storing bag, which is a sumeru bag!”

Wei Yi explained, “This bag was created by sumeru technique. There’s a sumeru space inside of it. Although this bag looks small, the space inside is actually very large. It can accommodate a lot of stuff.”

“Oh....it’s very useful.”

Liu Yi sighed with emotion, thinking, ‘If I learn this sumeru technique earlier, it would be really convenient for me.’

“This Wolf head is really disgusting....but, that guy previously said about the Lost Organization, have you heard that name?”

“No....”

Liu Yi shook his head. He didn’t know about the things in immortal cultivation world, let alone their specific organization.

“Lost....is a huge organization of Demon race.....”

At this time, Lin Tong on the shoulder opened her mouth.

“The strength of this organization....is really formidable....They are initially on par with some established immortal cultivation organization....But later on, they grew increasingly large....Right now, the strength of this organization will make anyone tremble in fear.”

As she spoke, Lin Tong’s body slightly shivered.

“Even to other Demon race like them, If one does not obey their

command....One fate will be very miserable....Liu Yi, I didn't dare to speak about this a moment ago, because I felt fear....This time, you really mess with people that shouldn't be messed with."

"...Wasn't it you who wanted me to be a Demon Hunter?"

Liu Yi hastily asked.

"I thought this was just a little Demon....Such as those little Wolf Demons who escaped just a moment ago...."

Lin Tong's voice was somewhat quivered, "I never thought....we would bump into a member of Lost Organization....There were so many Wolf Demon who escaped, some of them will send a message so that the Lost Organization will know the cause of death of Black Wind.....A human who oppose Lost, never has a good end. Liu Yi, right now your strength is so low....I'm really worried about you."

"Rest assured, my grandpa said to never afraid when I meet with difficulties."

Liu Yi said in his heart, 'His mother, no point in worrying when I have so many other problems.'

"I just need Fox sister to continue to help me train so that my strength would increase. No matter if it's Lost, or Great God, as long as someone block my path to make money, I will kill them all...."

"Hey, hey, shouldn't it be your path to immortal cultivation?"

"Ah...it's just slip of the tongue, slip of the tongue...."

"Slip your grandpa! You f\*cking miser!"

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 105

## Chapter 105 A Drink Well Earned

After a restless sleep yesterday followed by the night's homework, this morning, Liu Yi couldn't help but enter the classroom with a big yawn.

'The other Mr. Perfect was rubbing their hands on beautiful woman yesterday, too bad, this Mr. Perfect can only rub his hands on a stack of paper.'

Liu Yi's heart can't help but lament.

His heart was sighing with emotion when he looked up and suddenly discovered that his seat was actually being occupied by other people!

This man's face is quite handsome, and he is none other than Lin Huayang from the experimental class.

Oh, wrong....Lin Huayang could not be called a handsome man anymore.

Perhaps, a handsome sister?

At this point, Lin Huayang was seating on Liu Yi's seat next to Wang Yuzheng while earnestly urging her.

"Yu Zheng, as you can see."

Lin Huayang gently tapped the table with his finger and then said, "This general class is very different than our experimental class. With your academic record, you should be in the experimental class. Only the experimental class can let your wish to pass the National College Exam to come true. You are now in the general class, whether the teachers or its learning environment, they are all far inferior to our experimental class.

"It's none of your business!"

Wang Yuzheng spoke without raising her head to look at him. Instead, her eyes were firmly staring at the math problems on the table as she said, "As long as I want to study, it doesn't matter where it's all the same."

"It's not as simple as that. Wang Yuzheng, you think about it.



Lin Huayang quickly said, "As long as you agree to be my girlfriend, in one sentence, I can let you back to the experimental class. If you want the best teacher to teach you in private, I can do that!"

Wang Yuzheng's brows were deeply furrowed while her eyes were full of disgust.

"Lin Huayang, are you done yet! Please, stop harassing me, OK? I've already got kicked out of the experimental class because of you, what else do you want? You, this fellow, really make me sick!"

"Wang Yuzheng, you dare to speak to me like that!"

Lin Huayang felt embarrassed after what Wang Yuzheng said to him and immediately went livid.

"I'll ask you one last time, do you want to be my girlfriend or not! If you don't say yes to this, I'm afraid you will not be able to stay here anymore!"

"You, what do you want...."

Wang Yuzheng's pretty face was instantly pale.

'He is not going to ask his father to expel me is he....'

'This is not good....' She thought.

'One Mid has the highest college admission rate among the high school in Northern Dragon City....My family condition is not good, they're all counting on me to get into a good University so that I can bring honor to my family's ancestors in the future....'

"Humph humph...."

Seeing Wang Yuzheng finally had a scared look, Lin Huayang's heart felt satisfied.

'How could I not be able to handle this chick?' He thought.

'Wang Yuzheng has no background and she has no one backing her up. Her only good points are her pretty face and her determination to study. I am the young master Lin, if I can't handle this girl, how can I show my face in public anymore!'

Lin Huayang at home was always brooding about this.

‘The reason why I can’t get my lower part to get up again probably because the women are not beautiful enough.’

‘That Ma Yixuan, although she was quite pretty, compared to Wang Yuzheng, she was a couple of notch inferior.’

‘If I can get the beautiful stimulation from Wang Yuzheng perhaps my lower part will have improvement.’

“Wang Yuzheng, have you done thinking about it? I’m only going to ask you this one last time, are you....”

“Bam!”

Before Lin Huayang finished his words, he suddenly felt a gust of air, then his collar was directly lifted up, and he was thrown on the ground. His buttocks felt really painful as if it was broke into pieces.

“Motherf\*cker....who dared to touch this father? You don’t want to live!”

Lin Huayang rubbed his ass as he climbed up, turned around, and angrily cursed.

“Get out. You’re in my seat.”

Liu Yi was holding his arms, standing behind Lin Huayang.

Seeing Liu Yi here, Lin Huayang suddenly shuddered.

His lower part also seemed anxious and, there’s a tendency that it was going to shrink.

The great scene from that day where Liu Yi killed the four gangsters outside of the teahouse, could not help but come to Lin Huayang’s mind.

This is the character that even the Black Dragon Gang can’t handle....

Much less him, a single Lin Huayang....how could he dare to provoke the devil in front of him!

“You’re still here? Are you waiting for me to send you out?”

Liu Yi said as he squeezed his fists, exuding a cracking sound.

He didn’t know why, but when he saw Lin Huayang, he always had the urge to punch him.

‘Previously I liked to reason things out, but now, I am prone to violence.’

‘This must be because the devil qi is at work!’

‘Amitabha, wrong, wrong.’ He thought.

‘It must be because this Lin Huayang is long overdue to get punch.’

‘Em, this is the correct answer.’

How could Lin Huayang dare to argue with Liu Yi? Without any words, he quickly ran out of the classroom.

A wise man knows better than to fight when the odds are against him....

Lin Huayang planned to get even with Liu Yi later.

After he was out of the classroom, he immediately called Lan He to express his soaring to the heaven resentment.

“Young master Lan! When are you going to act against Liu Yi!”

Thinking that there’s an Iron Palm Master at Lan He’s disposal, Lin Huayang couldn’t help but be anxious.

“I’ve had enough of him! This guy is quite an eyesore! Young master Lan, can’t it be sooner?”

Lan He was sitting on the sofa in the Imperial room. He was holding the phone in one hand while his other hand was pressing on a beautiful woman’s head, enjoying the service of this woman’s lips inside and outside.

“Oh....this....hehe, young master Lin shouldn’t be worried, it will be carried out in two days.”

That beauty was quite good, sucking and licking, pleasuring Lan He until he came out.

He fantasized that this beautiful woman was Murong Die, which allowed his heart to feel relax and clear.

“I really can not stand him anymore. As long as he still in the school, I’m a dog sh\*t!”

Lin Huayang could not bear the anger in his heart.

“Ai....But the Master is recently in training.”

Lan He's eyes rolled, and then said, "To disrupt the other people's schedule, I'm afraid that's not okay."

"Then what should we do...."

"How much money you can get, you understand that, right."

Although Lan He is a young master who likes to throw away money recklessly, he is not a fool.

The money that he threw away, after a time, he naturally has to get it back.

After controlling the school for so many years, the Lin Family naturally have collected many ill-gotten gains.

Although they are advocating elite education, how many elite students could they have?

There are more average students with average scores.

If they really stuck with their very high standard, 90% of their students will get turn away.

Then how could these 90% students get into the school in the first place?

It is simply by using sponsorship fees.

By paying twenty to thirty thousand sponsorship fees, a student can be admitted to the school.

The score is not very important, as long as it doesn't get below the lower threshold.

If they could receive twenty to thirty thousand sponsorship fees per student, one hundred students will amount to two to three million.

For one thousand students....Every year, the school would accept at least two or three thousand students!

Thus, it can be seen that the Lin Family has fished out many oils out of the water.

If they don't squeeze out every bit of oil out of the water, they will feel sorry to the society.

What Lan He just said, Lin Huayang naturally understood.

He nodded and said, “Oh....in that case, I’ll bring out three thousand, so that the master will help me! I want him die a few days earlier!”

“Pff!”

Lan He nearly can’t hold his laugh.

“Three thousand? Oh, my young master Lin, you’re not kidding me, are you?”

“Eh....what’s wrong?....that’s not enough?....”

“This is far from not enough! What can you do with this little money? I’m afraid that’s not even sufficient to treat the master for a dinner!”

Lan He pursed his lips, thinking that this Lin Huayang was too inexperience.

“Then....how much do you need....”

Lin Huayang’s heart is somewhat uncomfortable. His own pocket money is not that much....

“One hundred thousand, this is the price because we’re brothers.”

Lan He’s words almost made Lin Huayang scared to death.

‘F\*ck me....one hundred thousand!’

‘Where can I get that much money....’

‘Wait a minute, looks like my mom has some connections....’ Lin Huayang thought, ‘In any case, my mom love me the most, so, it shouldn’t be difficult to get this money from her.’

‘As long as Liu Yi is killed, I will be the boss in this school!’

‘And that Wang Yuzheng, can’t possibly escape from my palm!’

“What’s wrong, is that too much?”

“No, no....so be it....Young master Lan, give me your account, I’ll go home now to ask the money. I’ll call you as soon as I transferred the money.”

“Ok. Don’t worry. This money is not for me, it will a be given as a gift to the Master.”

Lan He's heart secretly laughed, thinking.

'This dumb kid, he must be asking this one hundred thousand money from his family, they truly think highly of him.'

'This money will ultimately fall into my pocket. It is not me to decide when Zheng Xiaolin will take his action.

"Good, then I have to thank young master Lan for this."

Poor Lin Huayang, not only he doesn't know the situation, he even has to thanks Lin Huayang for cheating him.

After Lin Huayang hung up the phone, the KTV supervisor that stood next to Lan He quickly stepped forward to ask.

"Young master Lan....Do you want me to notify Master Lin?"

"No need, I'll inform him when I meet with Ma Wei."

Lan He waved and said to that supervisor.

"Oh, that's right, the previous young waitress that served me the fruits just now, is she new?"

"Young master Lan....she's a part-time college student...."

The supervisor quickly explained, his face was slightly awkward.

"Hehe, you should know me, right."

Lan He pushed away the beauty that served his crotch, and said, "The recent goods that you have, I've already seen them all, why don't you call that part-timer to come and serve me?"

"This....very well, please wait for a moment young master Lan."

That supervisor had to nod his head and led the previous beauty out of the room.

Soon, a lovely waitress came into this private room with a glass of red wine.

"Young master Lan, do you want to drink?"

"Mm....this master is a Young Master of a wealthy family, a lot of people want to harm me."

Lan He looked at that delicate waitress, and then said with a smile, “So, every time I drink, I will let someone else drink it first.”

“This....”

That waitress has a slightly pained look.

“Hehe, of course, this is not a free drink.”

Lan He said, “I will pay you two thousand for one sip.”

“Okay....I’ll drink.”

This waitress is working part time just trying to improve her life so that she can buy an iPhone or something.

When she heard this offer, she thought, ‘This is not just an ordinary wine, this an expensive wine, this drink is well earned.’

She picked up the wine glass and took a sip of that red wine. It tasted sweet and slightly weird.

“Young master Lan, you see, it’s okay, there’s nothing here....”

The waitress suddenly felt very dizzy, her eyes blacked out, the glass fell to the floor, and she collapsed in Lan He’s arms.

“This two thousand for a sip is not for you to earn....”

Lan He licked his lips and started a new journey.

# Chapter 106 A Good Teaching

Murong Die and Wang Lele still failed to come to school today

Liu Yi looked at the empty seats in the back and thought, 'Is Murong Die still angry with me?'

'This girl's temper is too big....'

'Yeah, narrow-minded....'

'Should I take my time to give her an apology?'

'Send a text message or something?'

'Em, I don't seem to have her phone number....'

Liu Yi was beginning to get worried.

It was at this moment, the seemingly not talking Wang Yuzheng who sat on the same table as him, suddenly sent him a piece of paper.

Liu Yi took the paper and read what she wrote.

"Don't think that I would be grateful to you, you are all the same!"

Liu Yi bitterly smiled again and again, thinking

'Oh boy, Wang Yuzheng's impression on me is really that bad!'

'As God is my witness, I am a good man!'

Liu Yi was helpless and unable to explain. In the end, he had to enter his spiritual environment and started his training.

Since the Devil Qi entered his body, Liu Yi felt that his mind was slowly changing.

Every so often, he can't help but become black belly (TL: outwardly kind but inwardly evil/two faced).

Without the need for his other personality to awake, he can settle the matter that he usually can't handle.

For example, when he cheated on that girl Wei Yi.



Liu Yi didn't like the change that was happening to him. He thought that this was not him.

When he entered the spiritual environment, Lin Tong was already there, waiting for him.

Liu Yi gazed at Lin Tong's shadowy figure and can't help but wonder.

'My Fox sister, what does she really look like?'

'Is she beautiful or ugly?'

'Well, she should be beautiful!'

'Afterall, she is a Fox immortal cultivator!'

'Since when there's an ugly Fox spirit!'

"Last night I was going to have a chat with you, but I never thought that you would be catching up on your homework, so I let you off."

Lin Tong stood there with hands behind her body, and then said to Liu Yi as she looked at him.

"Your body are seriously messed up now....there's Devil energy, there's Immortal energy....After being a cultivator for so many years, this is the first time I encountered such a situation."

"What's wrong, is it bad?"

Liu Yi has some mixed feelings, thinking.

'How can I be so unlucky....After meeting an immortal, I also bumped into so many strange things.'

"The Red Blood Sutra Code that was given to you by that Wenren Qian that day seems to be an Evil Sect's technique. You can't use it under your normal state."

Lin Tong said, "Only the Demonic you....can use it...."

"Isn't it dangerous.....?"

Liu Yi was worried that one day his consciousness would be completely consumed by his Demonic self.

"I know what you're worried about."

Lin Tong had cleverly guessed what's in Liu Yi's mind.

"Even if the Demonic you becomes even more powerful, he can't devour your consciousness. Because you are Liu Yi, no matter what consciousness you have, they're all you. It's like in the modern science, the Demonic you are your second personality. Your second personality is your personality."

"You've made me confused by all of that...."

Liu Yi felt dizzy.

"Don't be confused, the main purpose for today is for this big miss to awaken your second personality."

Lin Tong eyes gleamed with light, "I have to personally talk with him face to face, to know his limits....Otherwise, this big miss would not rest assured."

"Huh?"

Liu Yi was surprised.

"You want to wake my second personality? That....Isn't that somewhat dangerous?"

"Don't worry."

Lin Tong comforted him, "Although this spiritual environment is yours, this big miss helped you built it. I have shielded my own spirit, so even if the other you awake, he can't do a fatal injury on me."

"Do you really want to try this...."

"Of course, I am. Do you think this big miss have times to tease with empty threats!"

Lin Tong's heart was actually somewhat nervous.

Because the danger....was definitely real.

There are some words that she kept from Liu Yi. This spiritual environment is, after all, owned by Liu Yi. If the other Liu Yi was too powerful, he definitely could ultimately control this space. If that is the case, he can kill her in mere seconds.

But for Liu Yi, she must give it a try.

This is the risk that she had to take.

“All right, then....”

Liu Yi can see Lin Tong’s insistence, and had no other choice but to nod and agree.

“Close your eyes.”

Lin Tong loudly shouted.

Liu Yi obediently closed his eyes.

The leader has given the command, and he must obey.

After Liu Yi closed his eyes, Lin Tong’s figure suddenly changed.

Her vague body began to clear up, like removing a mosaic from a picture to turn it into an HD picture.

A stunningly beautiful woman appeared in front of Liu Yi, but unfortunately, Liu Yi can’t see her.

Meanwhile, Lin Tong’s body continued to change.

A pair of Fox’s furry ears grew out, and a red Fox tail appeared behind her, now, curling upwards buttocks.

In order to deal with the other Liu Yi, Lin Tong has to turn into her half-demon form.

Lin Tong stretched out her pair of sharp claws toward Liu Yi and cried out.

“Je!”

A red light suddenly jumped into Liu Yi’s body.

Liu Yi’s whole body shook, he felt that, in his mind, there was all manner of strange sounds continuously causing trouble.

There was a weird laughter, a shrill, which unceasingly rang inside his head, making Liu Yi somewhat felt sick.

All kinds of dark emotions flooded his heart.

At this moment, he was very angry, very annoyed, and very short

tempered.

These pictures from the past constantly emerged in front of him.

Murong Hong threatened his family, Yuan Shaojun hugging Ma Yixuan while ridiculing him, and various other memories....

“Ah!”

Liu Yi suddenly growled, a black and a red, two circles of lights, suddenly exploded out from his body, which quickly spread out in this spiritual environment.

Lin Tong, under the impact of this power, immediately back away several steps and almost sat on the floor.

What a terrifying explosion....

The opposite Liu Yi, also began to change.

A long silver hair grew out on his head, which was set to the back by his hands.

It was not clear whether he liked this kind of hairstyle, or because the previous disheveled hair would block his line of sight.

And his height was also taller. Now it was about 1.8 meter.

The original skinny appearance of Liu Yi has now become well-proportioned and brimming with a sense of coordination.

He stretched out his slender fingers, slightly stroking his hair for a moment, then opened his golden eyes, which fell upon Lin Tong.

The golden eyes opened!

Instantly Lin Tong felt that her body became soft, her face flushed, and her heartbeat accelerated.

Her favorability toward him increased!

‘D\*mn....this golden eye is too defying-the-heaven’s-will!’ She thought.

Lin Tong quickly closed her eyes, refusing to see the Demonic Liu Yi in front of her, lest the golden eye took effect on her, making her lost her fighting spirit.

“Hehe, another beauty has come looking for me again.”

Liu Yi’s voice slowly passed through Lin Tong’s ear, “My recent click-through rate is very high....However, the beauty seems to be very shy, afraid to open her eyes.”

That voice was getting closer, and suddenly arrived at Lin Tong’s ear.

Lin Tong was suddenly startled, hurriedly backed away very far, and then opened her eyes.

Even when her eyes were closed, she still suffered some loss.

But the lethality of Liu Yi’s golden eyes was too big.

“Do you want to spar with me?”

Liu Yi said, the hollow of his palm ignited out a crimson flame.

The appearance of this flame was somewhat strange, although it was a flame, it’s more like a mass of blood.

The Red Blood Devil Flame.

Lin Tong has never confronted this kind of flame, and she didn’t know how powerful it was.

The fact is, that Wenren Qian was a mysterious woman....

“I want to ask you, what do you want?”

Lin Tong asked.

“What can I do....”

Liu Yi’s body suddenly appeared in front of Lin Tong.

Lin Tong didn’t know how Liu Yi was able to appear in front of her that fast, could it be his achievement in Spirit Fox Steps has reached such a state?

When she was still guessing, Liu Yi suddenly reached out his hand and took Lin Tong in his embrace.

“You little Fox Demon, it really is quite lovely. You’re obviously very concerned about me, why must you covered it up?”

“Who, who cares about you!”

Lin Tong's face flushed. She wanted to get rid of Liu Yi's hand, only to find her body, as if being enchanted, was too weak to move.

"Such an adorable beauty....wanna take me on a date?"

Liu Yi said, his face was so close to Lin Tong's flushed face, it almost touched her ear as he spoke.

Lin Tong can even feel Liu Yi's breath!

'This is not right!' She thought.

'How can you be so rude to this big miss!'

"Charming Spirit Scimitar!"

Liu Yi suddenly felt there was a threat. Subconsciously, his figure suddenly flashed and in a blink of an eye appeared in the distance.

A silver scimitar, without knowing where it came from, whistled with the wind, ripping through the air around Lin Tong's body in constant rotation, as if a convoy of envoy escorting the Emperor.

"It turns out to be an artifact?"

Liu Yi's eyes showed a bit of curiosity.

"Humph, this is an artifact that was bestowed by my master! A work of art that my master most proud of!"

Lin Tong proudly said, "This is my life-insurance artifact! Liu Yi, with this Charming Spirit Scimitar, you'll never be able to come close to me."

"Oh, I see....good treasure. However, I really want to get into your body."

"You....pervert!"

Lin Tong was not stupid, and clearly heard Liu Yi's overtones.

"I love it when you compliment me. Then let me try if I'll be able to get into your body or not."

Liu Yi said, his body suddenly flashed a few times in a row, and in the blink of an eye arrived in front of Lin Tong.

Lin Tong immediately controlled her Charming Spirit Scimitar, which spun and launched an attack toward Liu Yi.

This Charming Spirit Scimitar was very flexible and very fast, but each time when it scratched Liu Yi's body, it cut the air instead.

Liu Yi seemed to know where this Charming Spirit Scimitar would come from, and will avoid it every time.

“Don't forget, this place is my spiritual environment.”

Liu Yi dodged to the side, and smiled, “Whichever you want to attack me, as long as this Charming Spirit Scimitar is still in this world, I can clearly see it.”

“Darn it....”

Lin Tong thought to herself, ‘Fighting here is really too disadvantages for me.’

But she can't get out of this place!

A four stars expert was actually being pushed by a two stars newbie!

If her master knew this, she would certainly criticize her severely....

But thinking that Liu Yi has knocked down two 3-4 stars boss, Lin Tong was also gratified.

‘Em, yes, it's because my teaching is good....’

‘Oops!’

‘Now is not the time to think!’

In the time when Lin Tong was distracted, Liu Yi suddenly made his move.

“Burning Blast!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 107

## Chapter 107 Swimming Class

“Bang!”

The fast flying Charming Spirit Scimitar was, all of a sudden, knocked out by the explosion of red blazing flame.

“Clang!”

This Charming Spirit Scimitar crashed and directly inserted into the ground.

“Such a powerful flame....”

Lin Tong couldn't help but be surprised.

‘The Red Blood Devil Flame is actually this powerful?’ Lin Tong thought.

‘This Evil Sect technique....Turns out to be so fierce.’

‘The girl Wenren Qian, what is her origin....’

“Fire Chain!”

After a move to get rid of the Charming Spirit Scimitar, Liu Yi simultaneously swung his hand toward Lin Tong.

Suddenly, a red chain of fire twisted its way in the air toward Lin Tong.

But Lin Tong immediately launched her Spirit Fox Steps, which made her instantly escaped the fire chain, leaving only a distorted blur.

“Spirit Fox Steps is very useful.”

Liu Yi smiled twice, “Unfortunately, this space is my Spiritual Environment.”

With that, Liu Yi suddenly turned around and launched his palm.

“Bam!”

Liu Yi's palm and Lin Tong's claw collide together.

Liu Yi retreated a few steps backward while Lin Tong's body rolled in the



air and fell to the ground. The moment she touched the ground she used the Spirit Fox Steps again and disappeared before Liu Yi.

“You want to rely on this method to defeat me? I say, it’s useless.

Liu Yi said, bent down, and violently shot his palm on the ground.

“Desolate Flame!”

A beautiful Sun print suddenly appeared on the ground.

Red flame instantly erupted and spread out to a range of four or five meters away from the Sun print.

The flame immediately shook Lin Tong’s figure, making her appeared.

“It’s hot, so hot!”

Although this was just her spiritual body, she can still fell.

She held out her hand to beat off the flames on her body.

“Too naughty and always likes to run.”

Liu Yi said, waved her hand, and instantly flung the Fire Chain.

Lin Tong didn’t have time to get away as she just extinguished the fire on her body.

The Fire Chain directly wrapped around Lin Tong’s body, solidly binding her.

“However, you could not escape the palm of my hand.”

Liu Yi said, pulling the Fire Chain along with Lin Tong toward him, and then laughed, “Now I can be in your body, right?”

“Charming Spirit Scimitar!”

Lin Tong’s face was unperturbed, she cried out.

Instantly, a piercing sound sounded from behind Liu Yi.

Liu Yi was surprised and suddenly dodged sideways. That Charming Spirit Scimitar whistled past him as it brushed against his hair.

This Charming Spirit Scimitar, while failed to cut his body, it succeeded in cutting off his Fire Chain.

Lin Tong's freed body fell to the ground. While she slightly short of breath, she looked at Liu Yi.

"You....What exactly do you want?"

"Just want to be closer to you."

Liu Yi recovered the half Fire Chain, and said, "But you do have some abilities, no wonder you can become my mentor."

"Humph, don't look down on this big miss!"

Lin Tong said, "I'm the sole disciple of my Master! I haven't fully opened the power of this Charming Spirit Scimitar, If I fully open its power, you'll die in mere seconds!"

"Oh, really? Why don't you let me taste it?"

Liu Yi's mouth was slightly hung in an arc.

"What do you think!?"

Lin Tong said and recovered her Charming Spirit Scimitar.

At this time, the tip of that Charming Spirit Scimitar shone out a bright crimson ray of light.

Seeing this light, Liu Yi's complexion finally changed a bit. He said.

"Sure enough....you're not lying...."

"Of course, naturally this miss wouldn't bother to lie to you!"

Indeed, the power of Charming Spirit Scimitar in Lin Tong's hand surpassed that of Liu Yi.

But this power can't be displayed casually.

Because it can significantly damage its user.

Moreover....Lin Tong doesn't want to hurt Liu Yi.

Not because of the effect of the Golden Eyes.....

It's just that, in her heart, she truly doesn't want to hurt him.

"Alright then, let us sit down and have a talk."

Liu Yi said and clapped his hands.

Suddenly, two chairs appeared in this Spiritual Environment.

Lin Tong was surprised, thinking, 'This other Liu Yi, his control of the Spiritual Environment is too great!'

'He's like a genius, all kinds of things; he can learn it by himself!'

'Completely different than the simple-minded Liu Yi!'

'These two personalities, are they really one person....?'

Lin Tong was incredulous.

"Have a seat."

Liu Yi pointed to the chair behind Lin Tong, and sat down first, "You called me out to have a good talk right? There's no need to yell kill and kill, am I right?"

"Humph, fine, I sit!"

Lin Tong was tired, thus, she directly sat on the chair.

"Whatever you want to ask me, just ask."

Liu Yi graciously said.

"How could you possibly be our Heavenly Fox Clan!"

Lin Tong immediately threw out her first question, "Heavenly Fox Clan....was already exterminated...."

In the past, the Heavenly Fox Clan was too defying-the-heaven, the then Fox race patriarch finally felt the crisis.

In order to secure her position, she drove a wedge between the two masters of the Heavenly Fox Clan, making them killed each other, then she incited internal war among the Heavenly Fox Clan.

The Heavenly Fox Clan finally embarked on the road of self-destruction.

Lin Tong's Master never raised this matter of Heavenly Fox Clan to her.

She only heard this story from the member of the other Fox Clan. She never thought that such a taboo in the Fox Race....to really exist!

"You ask me, how would I know."

Liu Yi shrugged his shoulders, “You’re the one who gave me this Demonic Energy, and now you’re asking me how can I be a Heavenly Fox Clan, don’t you think that it’s strange?”

“It is strange....”

Lin Tong could not guess what went wrong.

But she thought that some things were indeed too baffling.

“You don’t have to dwell on my power. Even I, myself never thought too much of it.”

Liu Yi clapped his hands, “Since now I have this power, I just want to train it. The Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra is suitable to the other Liu Yi, but the Red Blood Sutra Code is compatible for me. I want to see, between the two of us Liu Yi, who will be powerful in the future.”

“You...want to swallow Liu Yi?”

Lin Tong recalled the issue that Liu Yi most worried about, which she can’t be shy but to raise it.

Because the situation in Liu Yi’s body was too strange!

“Why talking about swallowing?”

Liu Yi chuckled, “We two are one and the same. However, right now the other me is too weak....So weak that it makes me anxious and angry. He confusedly erected so many enemies to himself but doesn’t know how to take the initiative to attack. Alas....I truly want to massacre all those sources of problems....”

Lin Tong felt Liu Yi’s murderous aura and slightly trembled.

‘This Liu Yi....is so terrifying.’

“You don’t have to worry so much....Liu Yi is me, I am Liu Yi....If Liu Yi is in danger, I’ll be the first one to come out and help him.”

Liu Yi said, slowly standing up.

“As for you, for me, you are a help, but also a threat.”

He looked at Lin Tong and said, “Little Fox, I can see through your heart.

You're just using me, wanting to use my strength to free yourself from the seal. If you are willing to keep your focus on mentoring the other me, I'll let you exist. But if I know you have any bad thoughts....Hehe, I promise, when I open my third star jade, I can kill you in my spiritual environment. Don't expect your Charming Spirit Scimitar will help you, I'm afraid, at that time, before you even have the chance to take it out, you'd be dead already."

Lin Tong sat there, not knowing what to say.

"The other me protested again...."

Liu Yi suddenly pressed his forehead and very uncomfortably said.

"I have to go back and continue to cultivate my Devil qi, try not to disturb me, the other me should appear soon."

With that, he closed his eyes.

The kind of suffocating pressure that Lin Tong felt started to dissipate.

She took a long deep breath, feeling that the previous situation was really dangerous to her.

But this risk that she took, can be considered to be not in vain. At least, she has a more in-depth understanding of the other aspect of Liu Yi.

"Fox sister!"

Liu Yi suddenly opened his eyes, his black pupils have been restored, looking panic-stricken, "Are you okay?!"

He has been worrying if the other him would hurt Lin Tong or not.

"Idiot...."

Lin Tong gently walked to his side and held up this guy who has fainted on the chair just a moment ago.

She also restored her fuzzy appearance like before. Lin Tong didn't want Liu Yi to see her face.

After all....her appearance is the same as that time when she sucked out Liu Yi's essence.....

If he saw his own murderer....she didn't know how would Liu Yi react to

that.

But one thing for sure, he would not trust her again.....

Lin Tong did not want that.....

After she had pulled up Liu Yi, she said, “You underestimate this big miss, did you think I cultivate for nothing?”

“Fiuuh....It’s good that Fox sister is okay...The other me, I can’t control him.”

Liu Yi said, “But vaguely, I can now somewhat affect him....At least, if I have a strong desire to wake up, I’m able to wake up.

“Em, you have to focus on cultivating the Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra and the Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra.”

Lin Tong said, “Only these two cultivation technique can suppress the Red Blood Sutra Code.”

Originally, the Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra can enhance Liu Yi’s Demonic energy, but compared to the Red Blood Sutra Code this purely evil sect technique....The Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra can somewhat suppress it.

Right now inside Liu Yi’s body, the red stream of qi of the Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra is the main axis. It’s also Liu Yi’s core Heart Sutra.

As for the other, whether it’s the Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra or the Red Blood Sutra Code, they all revolve around the main axis, as the auxiliary Heart Sutra.

Liu Yi’s future path of Immortal Cultivation....perhaps would be very rough.

Lin Tong still wanted to say something to Liu Yi when suddenly there was a clamoring noise, pulling Liu Yi back to the real world.

He opened his eyes and looked at the constantly banging the table Chen Cai in front of him. He was a bit surprised.

“What’s wrong? You want to be a drummer?”

“What! Boss, you’re too awesome, you can even sleep while you sit!”

Chen Cai said with a smile, "This is our first swimming class....Is boss just going to sleep here?"

"Huh? I'll go!"

Swimming Class....

Liu Yi can't miss this class!

Since a few years ago where there were several student drowning incidents in the Northern Dragon City, the swimming class has become one of the student's compulsory class.

As one of the key school, One Mid naturally can't lag behind in this class.

However, One Mid high school didn't have a swimming class, therefore, they can only have a swimming class this semester, because the pool had just been build.

The male students have looked forward to this swimming class for many years.

"Boss, I know where the girls change their clothes....Best friend for life....Do you want to go and see?"

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 108

## Chapter 108 Swimsuit Feast

The legendary girl's locker room?

Liu Yi's brain started to conjure up images.....

M The girls began to change their clothes and so on....

Liu Yi felt that his nose started to get warm.

No, it was the urge to nosebleed.

Liu Yi Oh Liu Yi, you're too disappointing....

If you're going to get aroused just for imagining this, how could you still have a promising future!

"Come on....Boss, a great adventure is waiting for us!"

"No....we're going to get killed if we're discovered!"

Liu Yi viciously glared at Chen Cai, the fellow who always did whatever ideas that came up on his mind.

They can't just casually visit the girl's locker room, moreover, it's highly possible that there would be a teacher who's responsible for watching that place.

Going there for an adventure....it's more likely they're going to court death over there....

"I'll just see them in their swimsuit."

Liu Yi said.

"Alas, such a great opportunity...."

Chen Cai said, "They change their clothes on the sixth floor. I thought that with Boss' ability, perhaps we'd be able to peep on them."

"Sh\*t, I'm not Spider-Man!"

"Alas, what a shame."



“Shame your sister!”

Toward this friend of him, Liu Yi was quite helpless.

Chen Cai was really a clown.

“Then let’s go, boss. We also need to change our clothes. Alas, the boy’s locker room, there’s nothing there....”

Chen Cai walked while lamenting, “Unfortunately, Murong Die and Wang Lele did not come today....Oh, especially Wang Lele that big breasted girl....truly worthy to look at....Do you think that these girls deliberately avoided the swimming class?....However, Wang Yuzheng is also one of such beautiful scenery....”

After hearing Chen Cai’s words, Liu Yi can’t help but whisper in his heart.

‘Are Murong Die and Wang Lele going to keep skipping school in the future?’

‘She shouldn’t be....that narrow-minded is she?’

‘But Murong Hong is such a heavy handed guy. Perhaps he did something.’

Liu Yi followed Chen Cai to the boy’s locker room on the six floor. The girl’s locker room was next door.

Regarding the next door, there’re no boys that weren’t curious about it.

When they came inside, Liu Yi saw several boys plastering themselves on the wall, seemingly trying to listen to the movement in the next room.

‘Crap, too wretched!’ Liu Yi cursed in his heart.

‘What men capable of such a thing!’

‘This will make them directly go to hell!’

When Liu Yi was thinking, the boys on the wall suddenly shouted in low voices.

“Quickly come, they’re talking about some girls’ bodies....f\*ck, so hot...”

Liu Yi and Chen Cai went over there without hesitation and put their ears on the wall.

‘If I’m not going to hell, who’s going to hell then!’ Liu Yi reasoned.

Suddenly, the voice on the other side of the wall floated into Liu Yi's ear.

But the voice is tiny and weak, and no one knew from whom it came from.

"Wow! Your chest is so big! This swimsuit almost can't cover you!"

"Huh, then what should I do? I don't want to go to the swimming class wearing this....It will only profit the boys...."

"Oh, it's nothing! Nothing's really exposed here! This purple swimsuit suits you just right. Your chest, even the dead envy them! We want to have this look. Unfortunately, we're unable to!"

"Really....then I'll wear it...."

"Come on, we'll go to class together, stop dilly-dallying!"

Hearing that the girl with the almost bursting chest will soon come out of the locker room, the boys in their locker room immediately caused a stir.

The boys rushed themselves out of the room.

Liu Yi was, naturally, among them. Relying on his now strong body, he grabbed the best location, looking at the slowly opened door of the girl's locker room.

Soon, a tall in stature, purple swimsuit wearing girl came out. All the boys breathed out cold air.

Holy sh\*t....A fat girl!

True, covered by that swimsuit, the girl's body looked like it was going to burst out....

Especially her two breasts....it was hard to determine if they were her breasts or her fat....

My Gosh....

All the boys felt that their eyes were about to go blind.

"Oh....this is really drawing people's attention. I'm too shy....Is there anyone want to teach me how to swim...."

The girl covered her face.

A group of boys were suddenly in disarray and fled to the locker room.

Liu Yi sat on a chair in the dressing room, and he kept patting his chest.

“Terrifying...truly terrifying....”

Chen Cai was also scared, and said while gasping for breath, “I won’t trust the voice on the other side of the wall anymore....his mother, it’s too d\*mn dangerous.”

“My grandpa said, you’re wrong in judging a person by their appearance!”

Liu Yi quickly scolded Chen Cai.

“Oh? Then boss, why don’t you teach her how to swim?”

“My grandpa has passed away....”

Liu Yi hurriedly added a sentence.

“Sh\*t....Boss, you’re too sly!”

Liu Yi hesitated, thinking, ‘I really am changing.’

‘My belly has become increasingly black....and also becoming more evil....’  
(Black Belly: two faced) ‘If this change continue, am I still going to be me....’

Liu Yi was increasingly upset. Fortunately, he directly flung this matter out of his mind and stopped thinking about it.

No matter what he would turn into, it’s fine as long as his heart is still upright.

“Boss, let’s suit up, we still need to attend the class!”

Chen Cai looked at the time and quickly decided that they were soon going to be late. Plus he can’t wait to see the grand feast of girls in swimsuits. Therefore, he quickly began to change clothes.

The two people changed into their swimsuits in a hurry. To be honest, only wearing small short to meet with other people, especially his female classmates, Liu Yi was a bit unnerved.

“Boss, we dressed like these and going out to meet the girls, would it not be a bit embarrassing?”

Chen Cai also has this doubt.

“It’s okay, my grandpa said, a tree without skin will die while a human

without skin is unmatched by them.”

“Hey, your grandpa is dead, isn’t he?”

“He will live forever in my heart.”

“Ooh....”

All the way from the sixth floor to the first floor, the swimming pool, these two people were annoyed by the attention that they got.

However, those gazes were full of envy. Envy that Liu Yi and Chen Cai were going to take the swimming class.

Liu Yi was curious, thinking, ‘Why don’t they make the locker room next to the swimming pool? Wouldn’t that be more convenient? It’s better than walking the long hall enjoying thousands of people jealous stare.’

After Liu Yi arrived at the swimming pool, he finally understood why. ‘Holy sh\*t, this swimming pool....is so tiny!’

Inside the swimming pool room, the ground nearby was so few.

The swimming pool was not as big as what Liu Yi initially thought. The deep water and the shallow water each accounted for half the pool.

It seemed the school was quite stingy. They definitely didn’t invest enough money in the construction of the swimming pool.

Alas, the school have cheated them all.

However, looking across at those swimsuit wearing teenage girls....This scenery definitely attracted the boy’s attention.

The swimming pool can be small, but the girls can not be too few!

Because the swimming class has just been opened, the school didn’t stipulate the swimsuit dress code yet.

Therefore, each girl wore a different swimsuit.

Conservative one piece suit.

Unrestrained two pieces suit.

Various milky-white bosom and beautiful buttocks were so vivid they made Liu Yi somewhat dazzled.

“Heaven on Earth....”

Chen Cai whispered in a low voice, “Even if my head is spilled, this view is worthed!”

‘Worthed....I see your thoughts need to be straightened out.’ (TL: Worthed and straightened sounds the same in Chinese) Liu Yi looked at Chen Cai in contempt, then his eyes fell on the nearby Wang Yuzheng, which immediately made him took all his words toward Chen Cai back.

That Wang Yuzheng was wearing a conservative one-piece swimsuit, but it can’t hide her attractive figure.

Liu Yi was impressed, Wang Yuzheng’s shape was very good, especially her nicely shaped buttocks which were well positioned.

Her buttocks reached upward to form a very attractive curve, which made people who saw have the urged to touch it....

But Wang Yuzheng’s chests were relatively small, making her upper figure seemed straight. When Liu Yi measured with his eyes, he surmised that the size is probably B.

‘Alas, if it were C, Wang Yuzheng’s figure would be perfect, a true hourglass figure.’ He thought.

Looking at the fat chick next to her, her chest was like a roaring sea, ready to burst out at any moment....Liu Yi couldn’t help but shed some cold sweat.

‘A hungry goddess....’

“Teacher....”

At this time, Wang Yuzheng, all of a sudden, slightly blushed, weakly raised her hand and said to the physical education teacher.

“Can, can I ask for a leave....”

“Wang Yuzheng, this is our first swimming class, why do you want to leave?”

The PE teacher was somewhat surprised.

“My, my physique is weak....I’m somewhat uncomfortable with this....”

Wang Yuzheng explained.

Without knowing why, seeing this pool full of water, her heart was somewhat nervous.

“Oh, you can just rest on the side then.”

The PE teacher thought that Wang Yuzheng was having her period. Therefore, she beckoned her hand, letting her rest nearby.

“The rest of the students, prepare to do warm-up exercise with me.”

They need to warm up first before swimming, less they would easily get cramp inside the water.

This was the first swimming class, the PE teacher didn't want the student to have an accident.

“You see, that wench Wang Yuzheng pretended to be weak.”

One of the girls curled her lips and said.

“Humph, a feigning ill beauty!”

Another girl also humphs, and said, “Deliberately seeking favor from boys. This kind of woman is the most annoying one.”

“That's right, that's right....having caught young master Lin's attention, she still deliberately put on air!”

“She needs a lesson, watch me....”

That girl pretended to be doing a warm-up exercise then approached Wang Yuzheng's position. Finally, she pretended to slip and gave her a push.

“Ah!”

Wang Yuzheng was standing on the edge of the swimming pool, looking at the pool water in a daze. When she was pushed, her body staggered a few times and then directly fell into the water.

“Splash!”

A huge water splash splashed out. Wang Yuzheng fell into the water, desperately struggling.

“Help.....save me....”

Wang Yuzheng didn't know how to swim, when she fell into the water, she lost all her balance.

She felt that the water in this pool was like a vicious monster, slowly devouring her body.

Seeing this scene, the girl who pushed her was scared silly, kneeling on the edge of the pool.

"I....I didn't know she can't swim...."

The PE teacher was also shocked. She quickly ran anxiously toward the water.

But the pool edge was too slippery, and the teacher wasn't paying attention. Suddenly, her foot slipped, and her whole buttocks fell to the ground.

"My foot...."

She grimaced in pain. When she tried to stand up, she found out that she can't stand up on her right foot. Obviously, it was a sprained ankle.

All of the students were stunned.

Seemingly, the only one who can swim was their PE teacher....

This was their first swimming lesson, and no one was able to swim yet....

At this time, Liu Yi jumped, leaping into the middle of this ice-cold pool water.

# Chapter 109 You Are Actually Not That Bad

“Splash!”

Liu Yi jumped into the ice-cold pool water.

This freezing cold water was a bit biting. After Liu Yi jumped into it, it almost made his muscle cramped.

Luckily there's an immortal energy within his body, which continuously circulated, making his body temperature rapidly elevated.

Liu Yi has never swam before, and this was the first time he's under the water.

But the Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra that he cultivated actually played a big part this time.

In this pool of water, Liu Yi felt as if his body has blended with the water. After he recovered his body temperature, he didn't feel any discomfort anymore.

Instead, it was especially comfortable, like being surrounded by beautiful women.

He saw to the side not far from him, Wang Yuzheng was slowly sinking into the bottom of the pool.

Liu Yi didn't dare to delay anymore and hurriedly kicked his two legs backward, making his body immediately went forward in the water, and then swam to Wang Yuzheng's side.

He held out his left hand and caught Wang Yuzheng's waist.

By this time, Wang Yuzheng's has lost her consciousness. Liu Yi took her by his hand and swam upward toward the surface.

But at this time, Liu Yi suddenly felt as if a pair of hands inside the water tightly held both of his legs.



He was surprised, immediately looked down and saw there was a vague silhouette inside the water, but he can't clearly see the face.

Only a tangle of black hair, like a water plant, wrapped around his legs, pulling him down toward the bottom of the pool.

"Water Demon!"

Lin Tong exclaimed, "There's actually a Water Demon inside this pool...."

Liu Yi didn't have the time to listen to Lin Tong's explanation of Water Demon. Although he had sucked a lot of air before he jumped into the pool and can hold for a much longer time.

But Wang Yuzheng can't hold on anymore.

In just a moment, perhaps she would suffocate to death.

Liu Yi circulated his white stream of qi on both of his feet, which suddenly created a layer of frost around them.

Inside the water, the frost quickly spread, and freeze that Water Demon's body.

The Water Demon's black hair suddenly froze into ice, after which, Liu Yi exerted himself and, following several crackling sounds, the ice broke. Using this opportunity, Liu Yi separated himself from the entanglement of the Water Demon.

Liu Yi then rapidly took the now soft body of Wang Yuzheng to the surface of the water and breathed a sigh of relieve.

The shadow of the frozen into ice Water Demon sank to the bottom of the pool Seizing this opportunity, Liu Yi quickly took Wang Yuzheng and swam back to the edge of the pool.

"Boss, impressive, I did not know you could swim!"

Standing on the edge of the pool, Chen Cai looked at Liu Yi with envy, if he could swim, he can also be the hero who saves the beauty.

It was clearly shown here that swimming is a very important skill to have!

"I have just learned."

Liu Yi pushed Wang Yuzheng up to the edge of the pool, then climbed up himself.

Everyone was relieved at the same time. Wang Yuzheng this person is finally rescued.

The girl who previously pushed Wang Yuzheng wiped off her cold sweat.

“Truly lucky....However, that was just an accident, don’t blame for this. Who let her stand near the pool....”

Liu Yi did not bother to respond to that girl. He watched Wang Yuzheng as she currently lies on the floor and still unconscious.

“Boss, artificial respiration!”

Chen Cai urged, “As it said in the book, you need to perform artificial respiration on her!”

“Is....this ok....?”

Liu Yi was somewhat hesitated.

“Go on, boss...Or else this opportunity will be taken by the PE teacher!”

Chen Cai looked at the nearby PE teacher who was tapping her foot; her ankle had swollen up. It was very inconvenient for her to perform the artificial respiration.

“Very well....”

Liu Yi thought that saving lives was more important.

Moreover, looking at the eager faces of the group of boys by the side, Liu Yi thought that if he let them come, they might not now how to perform an artificial respiration, and may do something else instead.

This kind of thing can only be performed by a righteous person like himself!

Liu Yi took a deep breath and leaned forward toward Wang Yuzheng’s body, then slowly moved toward her lips.

At this time, there was a crystal-clear drop of water on Wang Yuzheng’s lips, making it looked very alluring.

‘Well....’ He thought.

‘Looks like this would be my first kiss....’

When he was about to perform the artificial respiration, these thoughts suddenly flashed through his mind.

‘I hope this will also be Wang Yuzheng’s first kiss....Otherwise, I would suffer a big loss....’

Liu Yi was about to complete his first kiss when suddenly from the side, without knowing which one, a girl accidentally pressed Wang Yuzheng’s belly.

“Poof!”

Suddenly, Wang Yuzheng’s mouth spurted out a stream of water which directly hit Liu Yi’s face by surprised.

“Cough...cough...”

The water that choked her was spurted out and her consciousness restored.

When she opened her eyes, she saw Liu Yi was on top of her body, with his mouth and face so close to her.

“Ah!”

Wang Yuzheng screamed and knee-jerkingly slapped Liu Yi’s face.

Liu Yi quickly stood up, letting Wang Yuzheng slapped empty air.

‘Holy sh\*t....this girl seems to misunderstand what’s going on.’ Liu Yi thought.

“Pervert, you, what are you going to do to me!”

Wang Yuzheng’s eyes were red.

‘My first kiss...is it gone....’ She thought.

“Lady, I was trying to perform the artificial respiration to help you....”

Liu Yi reluctantly explained.

“Wang Yuzheng, you fell into the water a moment ago and was saved by

Liu Yi.”

The PE teacher, although still grimacing in pain, didn’t forget to help explain on Liu Yi’s behalf.

“When he was about to perform the artificial respiration just a moment ago...em, then you awoke.”

This PE teacher also seemed to regret that the kiss didn’t actually happen.

“.....”

Hearing this explanation, Wang Yuzheng didn’t talk, just lowering her head, and did not know what to think.

“Looks like we can’t finish this swimming class. Everybody, back to class.”

The PE teacher said with a wry smile, “Since Wang Yuzheng is alright, who can help carry the teacher back to the infirmary?”

The PE teacher is a young female teacher, so, this assignment is actually quite good.

Many boys volunteered and supported the teacher back to the school clinic.

The other students listlessly dispersed themselves.

They initially thought that they could have fun in attending the swimming class, but finally, they parted on bad terms.

“It’s all because of you, you jinx.”

The female student, who previously pushed Wang Yuzheng, wickedly snapped at Wang Yuzheng.

“What did you say!”

Hearing this, Liu Yi immediately became unhappy.

“Don’t think that I didn’t see, it was you who pushed Wang Yuzheng down to the pool!”

“I, I am not!”

That girl suddenly panic, quickly waved her hand, and hurriedly said, “You must be wrong!”

Then she hastily ran away with her few friends.

Wang Yuzheng's eyes were still red, but this time, she glanced at Liu Yi with a somewhat grateful look.

"Boss, let's go back to the classroom."

Chen Cai said.

"You go back first, when I was in the water, I accidentally dropped my ring. I have to go find it."

"Gosh, you want to look in this big pool?" Chen Cai worriedly asked.

Wang Yuzheng, who stood to the side, somewhat weakly asked.

"The ring....is it really expensive...."

"Not expensive, not expensive!"

Liu Yi quickly said, "I bought it for fun, but I was just a bit pity to lose it. You go back first while I look for it. If I can't, it's not that big of a deal."

"Why don't I help you find it...."

Wang Yuzheng said, lying on the edge of the pool while looking down to look for the ring.

When she lie like this, Liu Yi and Chen Cai couldn't help but gasp.

This young girl who initially has a curled upward buttocks, when lying like this, her firm buttocks immediately swell, forming a full arc, which almost made Liu Yi and Chen Cai have criminal's thoughts.

"See no evil, do no evil....I can't just randomly look at Boss' woman...."

Chen Cai quickly turned away and said, "Boss, I have to go....I won't disturb you."

With that, this boy swiftly ran away.

'F\*ck....what's with my woman thing.'

When Liu Yi was upset, he heard the sound of rushing water.

He quickly turned around in panic, only to find Wang Yuzheng still lying there, with hands fiddling with the pool water. He finally felt relieved.

But the pool water was a little weird. Therefore, Liu Yi quickly walked over and said.

“Let me look it by myself. You won’t see anything by lying in here.”

“That....Actually, I grew up afraid of the water....I don’t know why....”

Wang Yuzheng lying there and slowly said.

Liu Yi stood beside her and was able to see the gully on her chest.

‘Amitabha....’

Today Wang Yuzheng refused to give him a small advantage (when he failed to kiss her), but now he has received his due.

“It’s actually not that scary.”

Liu Yi said and sat beside Wang Yuzheng.

He was a bit nervous, afraid that the Water Demon would suddenly come out.

At present, he wanted to talk Wang Yuzheng to go back to the class so that he can deal with the Water Demon.

“Water is the foundation of many things. Without water, we could not possibly live. You can’t swim, and that is why you are afraid of the water. If you return to the locker room to change clothes now, you’ll be warm. Afterward, you can rest on the classroom and feel better then.”

Wang Yuzheng suddenly turned around and watched Liu Yi, with eyes unblinking.

Liu Yi became a bit nervous, thinking.

‘What is this girl looking at....Is there something wrong with my face?’

‘Is there a garlic chives, which I ate for breakfast, stuck on my teeth?’

When Liu Yi was wondering about what was wrong with his face, Wang Yuzheng spoke.

“I suddenly found....you don’t seem as bad as I imagined.”

‘Shoot, since the beginning this master is not bad, okay!’ He thought.

Liu Yi was about to explain when Wang Yuzheng continued.

“It’s just that, you are a bit too pervert, and too overbearing. I’m telling you, you don’t need to be bully in the school.... Even if you are the boss (of bullies), what is the point? It is better to focus on the study and get into a good College. Although I can’t be your girlfriend, we can be friends, or even good friends. I heard teacher Li said that your English is good; I can help you with the other subjects. Um, but you can’t have other thoughts toward me. Otherwise, we can’t be friends anymore.”

“.....”

Liu Yi was speechless, thinking, ‘What is she talking about?’

“Ah, I can’t continue chatting with you here....While nothing is wrong with this, I have to go back to do that set of mathematical problems....”

Wang Yuzheng suddenly ended the conversation, hurriedly stood up and walked away.

‘Such a resolutely good student....’ Liu Yi commented in his heart.

When Wang Yuzheng ran to the entrance, she turned around, with hands behind her back, and said with a slightly blushed face.

“For today....I thank you.”

After that, this girl continued her run.

Liu Yi foolishly stood there with a blank look. A sweet feeling suddenly burst out in his heart. He thought.

“This girl....sometimes she’s quite cute....”

Just when Liu Yi was feeling the sweetness in his heart, both of his legs suddenly felt tight.

Then immediately after, he was dragged and directly pulled into the water.

“Splash!”

The water surface rippled and then returned into quiet.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 110

## Chapter 110 Immortal Fairy Descend To Earth

Without knowing when, that Water Demon had broke free from the shackles of Ice and extended its hair to wrapped around Liu Yi's body inside the water.

The strength of this hair is extremely big inside the water. It quickly wrapped around the legs up to Liu Yi's neck, letting him nearly strangled to death.

"Gluk gluk...."

Liu Yi's mouth continuously discharged air bubbles.

Precious air....

Went to waste like that.....

Liu Yi suddenly gave up struggling to go to the surface and actually turned around and rush toward the Water Demon.

The Water Demon was shocked and, haven't had the time to react, slammed by Liu Yi's body.

Although there was some resistance in the water, Liu Yi's feet have been discharging frost to the back which directly accelerated him in the water.

Therefore, after that body slam, the Water Demon screamed out and loosened its hair.

Liu Yi took the opportunity to withdraw and reached for the surface once more.

Although he was in the water, he was actually as flexible as the fish.

If you thought about it, it probably related to the Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra.

After all, according to the Dao principle, Ice is the product of Water. Therefore, they were both closely related with each other..



Liu Yi leaped up, jumped out of the water, and then continued to step on the ice toward the edge of the swimming pool.

“Au!”

At this time the Water Demon, who was immersed in the water, suddenly growled.

A huge whirlpool appeared in this pool of water.

Moreover, Demonic Qi reverberated throughout the entire swimming pool.

“Bang bang bang!”

The surrounding doors and windows were suddenly closed and tightly shut, as if they didn’t want Liu Yi to escape.

But Liu Yi wasn’t actually trying to escape. He arrived at the edge of the pool and watched the Water Demon inside the water with heart beating fast.

Luckily their class was the first to take this swimming class....

If it was the other class, he can’t imagine what might happen to them....

This Water Demon was too dangerous, and he must get rid of it.

Thinking of this, Liu Yi returned to the swimming pool once again.

His feet were treading on ice, which constantly spread on the surface of the water, making him able to freely sled back and forth like ice-skating.

“Au!”

The Water Demon roared again, thousands of hairs twisted into a black tentacle, bursted out from under the water, and wound up toward Liu Yi.

“Taste this!”

Liu Yi threw out an ice bomb and, with a bang, freeze that sticking-out-of-the-water black tentacle into ice.

“Break!”

Liu Yi threw a kick. The ice skate cut through that frozen tentacle, which immediately crushed it into pieces.

The pieces of ice fell into the water piece by piece.

“You....die....”

Liu Yi's action seemed to have angered the Water Demon.

The pool of water violently trembled, making Liu Yi's footing a bit shaky.

A body that resembled a woman slowly appeared out of the vortex.

Her skin was terribly pale, and her face, as if suffering from a long term soaking in the water, was swollen up and puffy.

“His mother....you don't even wear clothes, this pool is not your family's bathroom!”

Liu Yi said, stepping on ice skates, and rapidly slid toward that Water Demon.

“Human....Deserve to die....”

That Water Demon was full of grievance. The hair on her head changed to a form similar to a Javelin and directly moved to stab Liu Yi in the face.

This Water Demon is only two-stars.

Liu Yi has the confidence to kill her.

Although the Javelin hair looked terrible, Liu Yi withdrew the ice skates on his feet and instantly submerged in the water.

In the water, Liu Yi discharged the ice through his feet once again, making him moved forward with accelerated speed and quickly arrived in front of the Water Demon's body inside the water..

He reached out his left hand and held the Water Demon's ankle, while simultaneously initiated the Vein Seal.

“Get out of here!”

Liu Yi took the, now, somewhat stiff body of Water Demon and leaped out of the water. With a flick of his hand, he flung the body of that Water Demon onto the edge of the pool.

It seemed somewhat difficult to deal with this Water Demon inside the water, But Liu Yi would be dominant if he deals with her on the land.

From the surface of the pool, he stepped on ice skates and arrived at the side of that Water Demon.

After ashore, that Water Demon seemed like a fish out of the water, her whole body lay softly there without any strength.

She struggled to crawl toward the water's edge.

"Liu Yi, quick, kill her!"

Lin Tong exclaimed, "If this Little Demon returns to the water, she will come back to life. Now is your best opportunity!"

"We need to focus on persuading her back to the right path!"

Liu Yi said, "Everybody deserve to live....We can't just kill her!"

As he spoke, he stood between the Water Demon and the pool, preventing her from returning to the water. Then he bent down and gently asked.

"This world is actually very beautiful, why must you degenerate into a Demon? Why don't we correct ourselves, slowly cultivating immortal cultivation, until we reach Buddhahood...."

"Poof!"

That Water Demon sprayed out a water bomb and hit Liu Yi in the face.

"Go to hell! You damn demon!"

Liu Yi put his palm on that Water Demon's forehead and then launched his Desolate Flame.

This formidable destructive power immediately made the Water Demon die without having the chance to cry.

Her body gradually turned to ash and dispersed into the air.

Meanwhile, Lin Tong opened her mouth wide and sucked that Water Demon's energy into her body, supplementing her own Demon energy.

She became incredibly happy and asked Liu Yi.

"Didn't you say you want to focus on correcting her path? Why did you change your mind so fast!"

"You heard it wrong. I said I want to give her a chance to correct her path."

Liu Yi went to the edge of the pool, furiously washed his face, and then said.

“Demon, though not all of them are wicked, they are not kindhearted either.”

Lin Tong teased Liu Yi, “Do you think all the Demons are the same as this big miss, wanting to help a mortal like you?!”

“Of course, Fox Sister is the best.”

Liu Yi stood up and said, “Whoever can marry Fox sister to become his wife, he would be very happy.”

“.....”

Lin Tong suddenly stopped talking.

“Fox sister, what’s wrong? Did I say something wrong?”

“You this fellow....Who says this big miss wants to get married....”

Lin Tong became half-angry, saying, “There are no good men in this world....”

“Whoa....My grandpa is a good man! Em, yes, I also inherited his glorious tradition!”

“You are a good man?”

Lin Tong’s face looked like someone who was about to curse.

“Am I not?”

“I think you are a very annoying person!”

“You’re kidding right....Am I that bad....”

“Absolutely, much worst than that!”

Lin Tong adamantly said. Liu Yi can’t help but shrugged his shoulders.

“You girls are such a hypocrite.”

“Shoot...!”

Lin Tong discovered that, as Liu Yi’s power increased, his facial thickness also increased along with it....

‘Could it be, there is an inevitable connection between the two....?’

When Lin Tong was pondering about this, her facial color suddenly suffered a huge change.

“Liu Yi, not good, quickly get back!”

Hearing Lin Tong’s warning, Liu Yi did not hesitate to move two steps to the side.

“Bam! Crash!”

The window next to Liu Yi was suddenly shattered. A sword made entirely of ice stabbed the position where Liu Yi previously stood.

This ice sword exuded a piercing cold air. It was submerged half a meter deep into the ground.

This sword has a familiar feel to it....

“Mysterious Icy Qi....”

Liu Yi looked at the window with surprise.

At this time, a woman slowly descended from that crushed window.

Seeing this woman, Liu Yi suddenly couldn’t help but took several steps backward.

“Why, why it’s you again!”

‘This white beauty again!’ Liu Yi thought.

‘The last time she found me on the roof, she imparted me the Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra!’

‘What does she want with me this time!’

“Bold Evil Demon!”

Guyu stood in front of Liu Yi, pointed her hand at him, then said with somewhat angry face, “Last time I let you off, and even left you with the Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra so that you can suppress your Demonic energy! I did not expect that, not only you are unrepentant, you actually blasted out this astonishing amount of Demonic energy!”

“I’ll be d\*mn! That Demonic energy is not mine!”

Liu Yi quickly explained, "It belongs to another Demon, ok...."

Liu Yi was bewildered and felt that he was thoroughly wronged. He thought.

'Could it be this white beauty is not a good person?'

"Enough talk, watch the sword!"

The white beauty said and moved her finger.

An ice sword quickly condensed out of thin air and rapidly moved to stab Liu Yi.

"Shoot! Can't you listen to my explanation!"

The power in Liu Yi's body rapidly circulated.

The world in front of him slightly slowed down, slowing that rapidly flying sword..

Liu Yi, with the aid of this profound perception, was able to dodge this ice sword.

But the ice sword turned its course in mid-air and flew toward Liu Yi once more.

"Spirit Fox Steps!"

Liu Yi suddenly sped up using this spirit steps and dashed toward Guyu.

"Courting death!"

Guyu sneered and extended her hand, waiting for Liu Yi.

Guyu's strength was unfathomable.

Liu Yi knew that he couldn't possibly be her match.

But if he wanted to beat this white beauty....he must take a risk!

"Technique \* Ice and Snow Punishment!"

A circle with two-meter radius suddenly appeared under Liu Yi's feet.

He felt a tremendous amount of pressure coming out from under his feet. Without any hesitation, he launched his Spirit Fox Steps; His whole body instantly flew upside down.

“Boom!”

Violent blizzard suddenly burst out of the circle which directly hit the ceiling of this indoor swimming pool.

But half of Liu Yi's body failed to break away, which then directly covered with thick layer of frost, making half of his body directly lost its ability to sense.

A huge icicle appeared between him and Guyu, which was very terrifying.

Thick cold air flooded this swimming pool area, making the place seemed like in winter.

This woman....was awfully frightening....

Liu Yi's mind was running at full speed, thinking about how to deal with this woman in white.

“In front of me, your strength is not worth mentioning.”

Guyu said with full confidence, “But you actually can open the second star jade in such a short time, which is rare. Merely, you let yourself to become a Demon, sooner or later you will become a scourge. Today, I immortal fairy Guyu, will eliminate you.”

Guyu....

“This name, why it seems so familiar!” Liu Yi thought.

Liu Yi has no time to think about this, his mind suddenly had a bold idea.

“Guyu, you boast yourself as an immortal fairy, yet, you use such a strong immortal power to bully me, an ordinary person!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 111

## Chapter 111 Defeat In One Move

“Oh?”

Hearing what Liu Yi said, Guyu put her hand down and tucked inside the cuff of her white long sleeves. She then looked at Liu Yi and asked.

“I, Guyu am a dignified immortal fairy, although my immortal power is profound, I never use my immortal strength to bully ordinary people. Why are you accusing me like so?”

Hearing this, Liu Yi thought that there’s still a chance!

The woman in front of him is truly old-fashioned to the extreme!

“You see, you have reached I don’t know how many star jade now, while I’m just a two-star cultivator, which is no different than a beginner! You are such a big expert, how could you bully a beginner immortal cultivator like me? If you give me at least ten years to painstakingly cultivate and then fight me again, that is only fair!”

“You are actually very cunning, kid.”

Guyu suddenly could not help but smile, a charming smile as bright as the blooming of one hundred flowers, making Liu Yi somewhat at a loss. He thought.

‘This Guyu....is actually gorgeous....’

“Do you think I Guyu am willing to wait you for ten years? In just several days you have grown from ordinary person to a two-star jade expert. If I give you ten years time, who knows what you will develop into.”

She said as she deeply looked at Liu Yi, “This immortal fairy has been in the cultivation world for so many years, but this is the first time I bump into such an existence like yours, making me can’t help but wonder....Ten years, stop fantasizing about this. It is imperative that I Guyu have to get rid of you today.”



“Such a big bully! Can’t an immortal fairy speak some sense?”

Liu Yi pretended to be angry and said.

“Who says the immortal fairy is not reasonable? This immortal fairy is just doing what she was supposed to do, which is slaying the Demon and eliminate the Devil.”

Guyu put both her hands behind her back and dismissively said.

“You can’t even give me ten years? Five years, how about five years then?”

“ ... ”

“One year, that should be acceptable, right?”

“ ... ”

Guyu was still not talking, making Liu Yi somewhat worried. He thought.

‘Don’t tell me she doesn’t understand what I said?’

‘How can I look for an opportunity then?’

“It seems like you are very confident in your talent.”

Just as Liu Yi was being discouraged, Guyu suddenly opened her mouth and said.

“How about this, I will give you a chance. I will stand right here, without hiding and without dodging. If you can defeat me in one move, I will let you off this time, what do you think?”

‘I’ll be d\*amn!’

Liu Yi looked at the slightly smug face of Guyu and can’t help but cursed ‘son of a b\*tch’ in his heart.

‘I thought this woman is an old-fashioned immortal fairy....

‘But she actually has these many bad intentions!’

‘How high her level of cultivation is, actually!’

‘She gives me one chance to make a move! But also have to defeat her!’

‘She is definitely just fooling with me!’

“Liu Yi! Your opportunity is here!”

Lin Tong reminded him, "Don't forget. We still have that killer move."

"Oh, that's right...."

Liu Yi suddenly realized that he still have his ever-victorious killer move....

'Very well, Guyu, you force me to do this!'

Liu Yi chanted two Amitabha in his heart, thinking, 'this is not my intention, that Guyu pushes me this far!'

"How about it, this is your only chance."

Guyu was indeed playing tricks on Liu Yi's mind.

This ordinary person was the most interesting one that she ever met.

Guyu felt that he was too confident of himself. She wanted to break his self-confident and then send him to hell.

In this way, when Liu Yi reincarnated again, he would perhaps keep some of that confidence.

And be an ordinary mortal.

Who accept the birth and the death, and the six samsara.

This is the fate of all human.

"Very well, since there is a chance, I will firmly hold it."

Liu Yi clenched his fists, and then said, "Guyu, do you mean what you just said!"

"This immortal fairy always keep her words."

"That's good!"

Liu Yi did not hesitate. Dressed in just a swimming trunk, he boldly strode toward Guyu.

Although the image was somewhat ungraceful, his palm actually condensed out a bright light, which was very dazzling.

"Your palm is nothing to this immortal fairy...."

Guyu suddenly noticed the smile on Liu Yi's face and immediately remembered something!

‘Not good!’

She forgot that this kid has some strange skills!

“It’s no use!”

She immediately scolded and condensed out a layer of ice around her body, “I have seen through your trick!”

“Bang!”

Liu Yi’s right palm had fallen on top of the layer of ice on her body.

This layer of ice was actually very solid, after all, Guyu’s level was very high. With her immortal power, the layer of ice that she condensed out was naturally very hard.

But it still can’t hold back Liu Yi’s Amorous Ripple Hand.

That power actually penetrated the layer of ice and directly entered Guyu’s body.

Guyu never thought that her defense was able to be penetrated with just one move.

Immediately, her whole body became weak. A tingling feeling shot through her body.

This weird sensation was still fresh in Guyu’s memory.

Her layer of frost was completely thawed and broke into pieces.

Her body stumbled to the ground, half-kneeling. Her original snow white skin has become slightly blushed now.

Guyu bent down on the ground and her mouth slightly short of breath. She has lost all her strength to stand up.

Liu Yi’s right hand was still on top of her shoulder. Although Lin Tong has said that the higher the skill of his opponent the faster they generate the resistance.

But he can’t actually let her go even for a second....

Because he can only use this skill to defeat Guyu!

“You....let go of me....”

Guyu's voice has a slight vibrato sound in it.

She didn't even have the strength to frown.

"Then do you admit defeat?"

"This immortal fairy....this immortal fairy...."

Guyu wanted to be brave and not admit defeat, but the might of Amorous Ripple Hand has already traveled all over her body.

Guyu's eyes were somewhat confused, as she looked at Liu Yi, she suddenly wanted to throw her body at him.

She shocked herself with these ideas, but she can't control her own thoughts anymore....

'This clothes are so burdensome....'

'Better to just take them off....'

'No....no....if this continue, I might as well die....'

"I admit defeat! I admit defeat!"

Guyu finally said these three words.

Liu Yi can't help but breathe a long sigh of relieve.

'Heaven, I finally got Guyu to surrender....'

He was so worried about this....

But the Amorous Ripple Hand was truly powerful....

"It's good that you admit defeat! But don't forget your promise!"

Liu Yi said and loosened his right hand.

The powerful sensation that Guyu felt suddenly vanished, leaving behind a worn out and limp body.

"You, you...."

Her immortal strength quickly circulated within her body, restoring her original state.

The somewhat boiling hot skin was now cooled down, which to Guyu, felt like she had a serious illness.

She staggered to stand up from the ground and angrily stared at Liu Yi.

“You actually....used such a foul method to this immortal fairy....”

“What foul method? As long as I can defeat you, it is a good method.”

Liu Yi quickly said, “You previously said that I can only attack you once, but you never specify what kind of attack I can use! What’s wrong, could it be such a dignified immortal fairy wants to renege on her words now? Which sect are you from? Did they teach you to break your promises?”

“Who wants to renege!”

Guyu was indignant but ultimately helpless, “This immortal fairy always keeps her words! This time, I will let you off! But next time, if you let me detect you Demonic energy once again, don’t blame this immortal fairy to be impolite! I’m telling you, this immortal fairy will be watching your movement from now on!”

“Really?”

Liu Yi blinked and looked at his reflection on the surface of the pool, “Am I, Liu Yi, so handsome that it makes a beautiful immortal fairy took a fancy to me?”

“Bah, who takes a fancy of you!”

Guyu scolded.

“You said it yourself, do you want to deny it?”

Liu Yi proudly said, “You said, you are going to watch my movement, i.e., stalking. Isn’t that the same as taking a fancy at me? Isn’t that the same as chasing me? Ai....such a handsome guy like me, the pressure is big, even an immortal fairy come chasing after me!”

“I, I, I, I want to watch your movement!”

Guyu’s speech stuttered, “If you do something bad, I will be the first to come out and kill you!”

“Alas, a woman always deny what’s in her heart.”

Liu Yi waved and said, “Immortal fairy, I already know your intention. But your chest was really too small, it doesn’t suit my taste. People said that

your immortal technique is pretty powerful, do you have some skill that can make your chest bigger? Ai, when you have a big chest, you can come to me and declare your intention. I'm leaving, bye."

With that, Liu Yi turned around and went out of the swimming pool.

Guyu trembled in anger behind him, stamping her feet and loudly shouted.

"The next time we meet, you die!"

Finishing that, this immortal fairy Guyu completely exploded.

Layers upon layers of ice spread out from her body, which directly turned this swimming pool area into the world of snow and ice!

The water in the pool has completely turned into frozen ice; white frost appeared on each of its corners.

Guyu's body braved this cold dense air; the mysterious icy qi was circulated to the extreme inside her body.

This was her first time to be so angry toward a man!

The guy has used a despicable method to defeat her, although she can let this one go....

But he actually made fun of her small chest!

A person can be killed, but can't be humiliated!

She can't allow others to tarnish her body!

Guyu began to regret her own decision. She should just slap that kid to death instead of giving him the Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra!

She never thought that the kid could be so cunning....

Really hateful....

When she was depressed, a vague silhouette suddenly appeared before her.

Seeing this silhouette, Guyu's face suddenly changed and her body stood up straight.

"Master...."

“Guyu, have you found the Five Spiritual Bodies yet?”

“Report to master ....I, I haven’t found them....”

If Liu Yi knew the uneasy appearance of Guyu before this figure, he would certainly surprise.

Is this the proud immortal fairy that he knew!

“Useless, you failed to handle such an important matter like this! The Water Spiritual Body has appeared in this Northern Dragon City, and I want you to find it for me! If you let the other immortal sects succeed in obtaining the body, our Celestial Sect chief position will be snatched away!”

“Disciple understand....”

“Quickly leave, don’t disappoint the master for the trouble she had in teaching you immortal cultivation! Stop paying attention to other people’s business, finding the Water Spiritual Body is the most important, do you understand?”

“Disciple understand....Disciple will leave now....”

Guyu repeatedly nodded her head, and then jumped up and flew away from this world of snow and ice swimming pool.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 112

## Chapter 112 How Could There Be An Immortal

“Boss, when are you going to officially take Wang Yuzheng out? I have a hotel membership card, do you want me to lend it to you?”

After school, Liu Yi and Chen Cai have the rare occasion of going back together.

At the school gate, with a wretched face, Chen Cai suddenly asked a question.

“What?”

Liu Yi puzzledly looked at Chen Cai, “Boss, aren’t you and Wang Yuzheng in love with each other?”

“Since when I was in love with Wang Yuzheng? You think too much!”

Liu Yi didn’t know what kind of things that filled Chen Cai’s wretched head.

“Are you sure? But there is this rumor in the school....it said you already have sex with her....”

“F\*ck! Let me know which son of a b\*tch spread that rumor; this father will crush him!”

Liu Yi tightly clenched his fists, cursing in his heart at the wretched man who has nothing to do but spreading gossip!

“Hehe, this....hei hei....”

Chen Cai touched the back of his head and awkwardly laughed twice.

“F\*ck your sister!”

Liu Yi suddenly understood what happened, glared at Chen Cai and shouted, “You are the one who spread this gossip aren’t you?”

“Hey, what is that? Boss, someone is selling roasted sweet potatoes at the entrance, it must be delicious, come on, my treat!”

Chen Cai said while pointing to the sweet potato seller.



“Eat your sister....you this fellow....can you not randomly spread gossip!”

Liu Yi said, “It is okay if it was just me, but Wang Yuzheng really cherishes her reputation, moreover, she is truly a good and diligent student.”

He explained, “If you spread this gossip around, what would other people think? Have you thought about Wang Yuzheng’s feeling?”

“This....I think Wang Yuzheng is a good girl! Boss, you got a great catch!”

Chen Cai said.

“Do you really think you are the Saint of Love! How could a beautiful girl so easy to get!”

Liu Yi rolled her eyes.

“Sh\*t! Boss, you look down on me!”

Chen Cai rolled up his school uniform sleeves, “No, this Saint is going to prove it to you today! Picking up girl is not difficult at all, Boss, if you follow me, I’ll show you how to pursue Wang Yuzheng!”

“Oh, really? How?”

Liu Yi’s curiosity was piqued, he wanted to know how Chen Cai pursue a girl.

“Hehe, Boss, you asked the right guy. Today’s girls, after some deliberation, I come to the conclusion that all they want is vanity! You think, how could Lan He and Lin Huayang have so many girls around them? That’s because they have the money!”

“You can’t say that....”

Liu Yi thought something was not right with these words.

Love should be pure and not mixed with any interest.

If it involves money....can it still be called love?

Perhaps it would be insulting to place the two words in the same sentence.

Especially the early love of the high school students, which majority of them caused by simply liking each other.

Liking because of money....

Liu Yi would not blindly agree to this.

“Boss, you don’t believe me, right? Come, I’ll show you.”

Seeing Liu Yi questioned his sentence, Chen Cai hastily said, “Boss, you see the girl at three o’clock in front you? She’s pretty isn’t it!”

“I see her ....It seems like she’s above average in the school.”

Girls who are above average are relatively beautiful.

“Hehe, Boss, see how I pick her up!”

Chen Cai smiled twice, rearranged his hair and swaggered forward.

“Hey, schoolgirl, wait a minute.”

“Ah? Senior ....what, what can I do for you?”

The girl meekly asked.

“Schoolgirl, ehm, my phone ran out of battery, can I borrow your phone?”

“Oh, o, ok....”

As if to think that Chen Cai was probably vicious, that girl was afraid to say no and took out her pink phone and then handed it over to Chen Cai.

Chen Cai took it, casually dialed a number and said the following.

“Hey hey, Housekeeper Wang, help me tell the client, I have no free time to play golf with him. Um, Steve Jobs will be coming to China these few days, and has invited me to dinner in two days! Yeah, that’s right, the CEO of Apple, Steve Jobs himself! Yes, yes, my time is worth hundred of thousands per minute, how could I have the time to play golf with him, just let him wait! Right, Housekeeper Wang, the weather is a bit cold now, don’t forget to put the antifreeze on my private airplane! Yes, one more thing, the steering wheel on my private plane is a bit old, I want you to change it into pure gold, make sure it’s real, hear me! You don’t need to worry about how much, we don’t lack the money, what I want is quality, you understand?”

Liu Yi, who listened from the side, was stupefied, thinking.

‘F\*ck...this kid’s bragging power is too much!’

“Um....Senior ....”

The girl seemingly wanted to say something.

“Also, I want the aircraft wings change into pure gold! Yes yes, when it fly it I will feel that boom thing! I love this ride, so you must make it impressive....”

“Senior....”

“Ai, Schoolgirl, do not worry, I will reimburse your phone credit, ok!”

Chen Cai waved and said.

“It is not that....Senior....”

The girl somewhat anxiously said, “That...senior, I want to tell you....”

“Tell me what? Your phone number? Hehe, this young master see that you’re quite pleasing the eyes, how about I postpone the dinner with Steve Jobs and treat you to some Hot Spicy Soup?”

Chen Cai felt that his trick was going well.

“No....senior, I want to tell you....my phone is out of credit....”

Hearing this, Liu Yi almost laughed out loud.

Chen Cai widened his eyes and incredulously stared at the girl before him.

“Your phone is out of credit! F\*ck! I made a phone call for such a long time and you tell me your phone is out of credit! Why did n’t you say anything when I first borrow your phone!”

“I....I thought senior was just going to check the time....”

“Checking time, why would I want to check the time....”

Chen Cai was really going to cry.

Liu Yi almost died laughing.

‘Chen Cai this loser!’

‘Even with elaborate act of pretending, he was still easily seen through.’

“No! You have to compensate me! Give me your phone number and I will count this matter as over!”

Chen Cai unyieldingly said.

“Senior, you give me my phone, and I will tell you my number.”

The girl blinked her eyes and said.

“Oh, ok.”

Chen Cai returned that pink phone to the girl.

After the girl took her phone back, she suddenly looked behind Chen Cai, and said with a surprised.

“Wow, what a beautiful schoolgirl!”

“What? Where is she?”

Chen Cai immediately turned and excitedly looked behind him.

But there was no beauty to look at.

“School girl, you are wrong....”

Chen Cai turned his head again only to discover the school girl with the pink phone has run away.

“F\*ck....me.....”

Chen Cai was rooted on the spot until he finally said those two words.

“Hahaha.....”

Liu Yi laughed so hard.

“Boss....you can’t laugh at me like that....this is only ....occasional defeat....once in awhile!”

“I don’t see this as just an occasional defeat....”

Liu Yi rubbed the tears that burst out of his eyes as he laughed, and said, “If you can pick four pretty girls in a row, I will acknowledge your skill.”

“Boss....your are looking down on me.....”

Chen Cai looked at Liu Yi with some resentment.

“Well, we’re actually the same, no girl will come looking for us....”

Liu Yi quickly comforted Chen Cai.

“Liu Yi, wait for me, I have something to tell you!”

At that time, Wang Yuzheng also emerged from the school. Seeing Liu Yi stood at the school entrance, she hastily greeted him.

Chen Cai was ready to find a rope to hang himself.

“Huh....what’s wrong?”

Liu Yi didn’t know why Wang Yuzheng would call him. This was the first time she took the initiative to greet him.

“Thank....thank you for what happen today....My mom said if someone helped me I must return the courtesy....”

Wang Yuzheng’s face slightly blushed, but at night, it was difficult to see.

“I do not like to owe people a favor....so, I’ll treat you to a meal....”

“Em....you don’t have to do this.”

Liu Yi was too embarrassed to let a girl pay for dinner, “It’s nothing....”

“But you have saved my life....at least let me show some gratitude....”

Wang Yuzheng rubbed her fingers, lowered her head, and said, “If you refuse me....I will be really embarrassed....Later on, I won’t know how to talk to you....”

“Very well....my stomach happens to be a bit hungry.”

Liu Yi touched his belly and smiled.

Chen Cai, who was off to the side, looked at Liu Yi with some resentment.

Liu Yi somewhat can feel this resentment from Chen Cai.

“Chen Cai, do you also want to go?”

“No, I’m just going to be the unwanted third wheel, see you later! No, it should be, never see again!”

Chen Cai thrown Liu Yi a supercilious looked and then ran away.

Liu Yi helplessly shrugged his shoulders.

“Let’s go then....”

Wang Yuzhen lowered her head and walked out of the school gate carrying her back behind her. Liu Yi hurriedly followed.

‘Why this girl is keeping her head down, is she trying to find fallen money on the ground!’

‘But where is she going to treat me for dinner?’

‘It seems like her family condition is not particularly good.’ Liu Yi thought.

Sure enough, Wang Yuzheng led Liu Yi to one of the barbecue stalls near the school and then nervously asked.

“Um....do you have something you prefer to eat....”

The smoke from the grills floated around the area. Standing within this smoke, Liu Yi thought that Wang Yuzheng’s appearance was a bit like a fairy.

He smiled and said to the food vendor, “Boss, give me two skewers.”

He ordered two skewers of meat grill, for a total of two yuan.

Wang Yuzheng seemed relieved, and pulled out a couple of old but neatly folded one yuan bill and gave it to the boss.

“You don’t eat?”

Liu Yi looked at Wang Yuzheng in surprised.

Wang Yuzheng swallowed her saliva, shook her head, and then said, “I....am not hungry....”

“I see....”

Liu Yi took the two skewers from the food vendor and handed one of them to Wang Yuzheng.

“Actually, I’m also not that hungry, one skewer is enough for me; two would be a waste. Help me finish this will you!”

“This....”

Wang Yuzheng looked at that string of skewered meat and blinked her eyes, looking a bit embarrassed.

“Don’t let me waste this food, my grandpa said, wasting food is a sin! I don’t want to go to hell after I die!”

“Well....okay then....”

Wang Yuzheng somewhat embarrassedly took the skewer and then gingerly took a bite.

This stuff is the famous snack in the Northeast part of the country. Every kid likes to eat this, and Wang Yuzheng seems to be no exception.

Wang Yuzheng lowered her head to eat and then suddenly asked.

“Liu Yi...are you aware of the existence of immortal beings?”

“Huh?”

Liu Yi was taken aback, the skewered meat on his hand nearly fell down.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 113

## Chapter 113 Tricycle Racing

‘Wang Yuzheng this girl....why did she ask such a question?’

Liu Yi was surprised, thinking, ‘Did she know something about this?’

“If there really are deities in this world, that would be nice.”

Wang Yuzheng’s next sentence put away Liu Yi’s doubt, “If there are Deities, they will cure my mom....”

“What happen to Aunty?”

Liu Yi thought in his heart, ‘Is there some secret that she can’t tell me?’

“It’s nothing, why don’t you eat? It would get cold.”

Wang Yuzheng as if to not want to talk about her family problem, quickly changed the topic, and said.

“Oh....”

Liu Yi was just wondering about things, but he forgot to eat the food; It is a sin!

When he was about to finish the skewered meat in his hand, a Songhua River type van suddenly howled and stopped beside them.

Then, the van’s door opened, two tall men grabbed Wang Yuzheng, covered her mouth and dragged her into the van, making Wang Yuzheng’s eyes stared in horror; She wanted to cry out for help but it was too late as they already put her into the van.

“Click!”

These men deftly acted and quickly shut the door. Then the van roared and sped away.

Liu Yi, who stood to the side, stared in awe, Wang Yuzheng’s unfinished skewered meat fell to the ground.

‘What is this....kidnapping?’



“F\*ck! You can’t run away from me!”

Liu Yi can’t let Wang Yuzheng be taken away just like that. He saw a tricycle that was parked at the side of the food vendor. Without too much considering, he immediately stepped on that tricycle.

“I borrow your tricycle!”

This tricycle is a modified pedicab bike. There is a small trailer behind which used by the peddler to draw their goods.

After he was robbed by Liu Yi, the food vendor immediately anxious.

“D\*mn it, you f\*cking steal my bike!”

“I’m going to save people!”

Liu Yi could care less if the food vendor did not want him to use the tricycle. He pedaled the tricycle like he was riding a motorcycle and rushed to chase the already quite far van.

“Holy sh\*t....my tricycle can actually be that fast!”

The vendor looked at the speeding away tricycle and can’t help but stared in shocked.

“Oh....it’s good to be a youth. I used to be like him, until my knees failed me....ah, wrong....my tricycle was robbed, sh\*t, I’m calling the police!”

While the food vendor reported this to the police, Liu Yi continuously pedaled the tricycle, whistling through the wind, chasing that van.

Liu Yi pedaled the tricycle too hard, to the extent that pain shot through his feet.

That night on the road, a van sped away in the front while a nondescript tricycle chased it from behind.

“F\*ck, this has to be a mistake! That kid is actually chasing us on a tricycle!”

A guy saw from the car rear window how Liu Yi unforgivingly still continued to pursue and called out in alarm.

“That’s just electric tricycle! Relax, watch how I left him in the dust!”

The driver in the front thought otherwise and increased the van's speed, unceasingly speeding along on top of this road.

Liu Yi felt their distance was getting far and far away, suddenly somewhat worried.

His power was constantly circulating inside his body, toward both of his legs as he attempted to pedal this tricycle faster and faster.

"Krak krak...."

The tricycle's sound was getting louder and louder; it seemed to hover on the brink of collapse.

"I beg you....hold on for me...."

Liu Yi's heart was incredibly anxious, but also uncomfortable.

'Wang Yuzheng's impression of me is finally turning for the better....but now....'

'Is her birthday and mine unsuitable with each other? Why when every time we met, bad things would somehow appear!'

'What am I thinking, I need to save her first!'

Liu Yi was determined, and he pedaled the tricycle faster and faster.

Chen Jia was a new recruit in the police department. He stood at the road intersection, observing the traffic.

A couple of days ago there was an accident in this small intersection, so the police were quite strict in enforcing the speed limit.

Chen Jia was responsible for the night shift, which he only took once in awhile, making him awfully sleepy.

He stood on the security post junction, drowsy, and was about to yawn.

It was at this moment, a van suddenly screamed from his side, setting off winds and immediately woke him up.

'Shoot! That's speeding!'

Chen Jia quickly picked up his speed gun. The road maximum speed limit is 70 kmh, but the van has reached 110 kmh!

‘Daredevils, they don’t want their lives anymore!’

Chen Jia didn’t have the chance to see the van’s license plate and was annoyed, but at this time, a vehicle suddenly roared past him from the side.

“F\*ck! This is a night race!”

Chen Jia saw the 105 kmh number on his speed gun and immediately took the radio and shouted.

“Command center, command center, this is intersection XX.”

“This is the command center, please go ahead.”

“Some vehicles over speed in this XX intersection, probably a night race.”

“Report the vehicle type and the license plate number.”

“Em, the type is....sh\*t, it’s a tricycle....”

“Are you insane! Don’t joke in this middle of the night will you! What’s the license plate!”

“It’s really a tricycle....d\*amn, I’m not sleepy and mistaken....”

Liu Yi didn’t know he had caused one police officer to get punished; He madly pedaled the tricycle, bent on recovering Wang Yuzheng back.

But just as he was about to push the pedal down, his foot suddenly fell on an empty place; he didn’t feel the pedal anymore. He suddenly lost control of the tricycle, which slowly stopped after some distance.

“F\*ck! The chain must’ve been off!”

Liu Yi quickly jumped out of the tricycle and ready to install the chain.

But when his hand bumped into the tricycle, with a thud, the entire tricycle suddenly collapsed, crumbled into pieces of parts.

This vehicle finally dead and turned into a corpse.

Liu Yi’s power has caused a great burden on this vehicle.

But how could a crappy tricycle withstand such a power?

“F\*ck!”

Liu Yi panicked and viciously punched the trunk of a nearby tree.

“Crack!”

The thick tree trunk immediately snapped under Liu Yi's vicious punch and fell to the ground.

‘I can't catch that van?’

‘What about Wang Yuzheng?’

‘Should I call the police now?’

Liu Yi's heart was in a mess.

When Liu Yi did not know what to do, his cell phone suddenly rang.

He took it out and saw an unknown number.

Liu Yi frowned and answered the phone.

He suddenly heard a chilling voice from the other side of the phone.

“If you want to take back your friend, come to the river pier third warehouse. Remember, you must come by yourself, otherwise, you will only see your friend's corpse.

With that, the other side hung up the phone.

Liu Yi's eyes immediately emitted his anger.

‘So this is not a coincidence, but a planned job!’

‘Who are these people? Why would they kidnap Wang Yuzheng and use her as bait for me?’

“Perhaps they were the people who besieged you on the streets a few days ago.”

Lin Tong, who sat on Liu Yi's shoulder, analyzed, “There's a high probability....the opposite party is part of a gang.”

“I won't let them get away with this....”

Liu Yi's voice was icy cold.

The opposite party used such a despicable mean to lure him into a bait; They are all bastards.

“You can't use your own identity out there.”

Lin Tong suggested, "You will only implicate the people around you."

"Yes, I noticed."

Liu Yi nodded and stepped back, making his body hidden between the dark woods.

Dressed in a black suit, Liu Yi's face was blocked by an ice-cold mask.

He didn't know why, but when he put on the mask, he felt a sense of security.

'Yes, the night, belongs to me.'

'The third warehouse on the river dock....good, wait for me.'

Liu Yi clenched his fists and stepped on the ice-skates. His whole body quickly leaped forward into the night sky.

——

Wang Yuzheng slowly woke up from her unconsciousness.

She smelled the dampness in the air and saw herself sat on a chair.

After that, she stared in horror as she found her hands and feet were tied up, unable to move from the chair.

She remembered eating with Liu Yi on the side of the street and then some people grabbed her and brought her here.

Suddenly, Wang Yuzheng's face, as if dying, looked deathly pale.

"Hey, this chick is awake."

The group of men near her all hung creepy smiles on the corner of their mouths.

"Say, this chick is quite pretty."

A man wearing a mink coat sat right in the middle with a cigarette dangling on his mouth. Sitting there cross-legged, he looked at Wang Yuzheng and smiled twice.

"If it wasn't for the strick police surveillance in this Northern Dragon City I really want to execute this chick on the spot, hehe...."

“You....let me go....”

Wang Yuzheng’s voice slightly trembled, “My family was very poor....no use in kidnapping me....”

“Hehe, don’t say that, you’re very useful for us.”

Ma Wei spurted out smoke rings from his mouth, and said, “This Liu Yi is quite loose, each time there’s a different beauty beside him.”

Wang Yuzheng’s heart suddenly tightened, thinking.

‘I’m being kidnapped, because of Liu Yi?’

‘Could it be....Liu Yi has some relation with this gangster....?’

“Master Zheng, at the appointed time, it will be hard for you.”

“Don’t worry.”

Zheng Xiaolin wore a martial art suit, punching a sandbag, doing warm-up exercises, “Brother Ma has spoken, I will kill that Liu Yi.”

With that, his palm maliciously hit the sandbag.

“Bam!”

The sandbag was instantly penetrated, leaving a gaping hole, and made the sand inside constantly poured out.

Wang Yuzheng was horrified.

“They want to kill Liu Yi?” She thought.

‘My God....what could possibly he do to provoke these scary people to kill him....’

‘And me, how did this happen to me....’

“Right, Boss, will that Liu Yi dare to come here?”

A nearby younger brother asked Ma Wei.

“Definitely.”

Ma Wei smoked and confidently said, “This is not our first time in dealing with this Liu Yi. This kid knows some Kung Fu, so he shouldn’t be a wuss. When he come, he will die.”

“Then what about that chick....”

“Hehe, I am sure she would not dare to say anything.”

Ma Wei spoke, an ominous light flashed through his eyes.

# Chapter 114 Break Your Arms

Ma Wei never intended to let Wang Yuzheng off.

She already saw his and his men's faces, moreover, he has more important matter to do and killing her is not that big of a deal.

He can't let Liu Yi survive this night, much less her.

But in order to make this girl quiet, it was easier to just lie to her.

After he kills Liu Yi, then he will consider how to deal with Wang Yuzheng.

Is it to kill her and sell her organs, or sell her to Guangzhou, turning her into a prostitute who receive guests day and night?

Hehe, no matter which one, he must first taste her.

This chick is a beautiful young girl, mustn't waste her in vain.

After hearing nothing really dangerous would happen to her, Wang Yuzheng really quieted a lot.

But she secretly worried about Liu Yi's safety....

'There are so many violent gangsters here....plus the terrifying master boxer....Liu Yi, you....must not come.' She thought.

"I'm going down to wait for him."

Zheng Xiaolin said and went downstairs.

"Did you prepare that?"

After Zheng Xiaolin had gone downstairs, Ma Wei asked that question.

"In here, Boss."

A little brother took out a set of Hualong-made heavy gun from his waist, making him felt doubly secure.

"Mm."



Ma Wei took that Hualong-made gun and played it in his hand, "This is a good stuff...."

"Boss, aren't we suppose to let Master Zheng make his move....Why do we need to prepare this thing...."

Another little brother asked, somewhat puzzled.

"That's why I am the boss, and you're just an ordinary member."

Ma Wei chuckled, "In any matter, we must think of all the possible outcome. If Master Zheng can't defeat Liu Yi, I can kill him with this gun. However, shooting is a big case, and it's easy to leave behind clues. If I don't have to use this, that would certainly be the best."

"Boss, you are wise!"

The little brother quickly flattered.

"Boss, I am sure my martial brother would not lose!"

Zheng Xiaolin's younger martial brother hastily said, "I am in the martial art school for such a long time, but other than master, I never saw anybody defeated my martial brother!"

"F\*ck, so much nonsense, I said, this is just a precaution!"

Ma Wei gave that younger brother a stern look, "If you spout crap nonsense again, I'll shoot you!"

That fellow bit his tongue and didn't dare to say anything.

Although Iron Palm is brutal, it can't block a bullet.

Just when Ma Wei and the others were a bit impatient, the warehouse front door was suddenly being slowly pushed open.

"Is Liu Yi finally here?"

Several men lay on the second-floor window and looked downward.

Between the shadow, the moonlight fell into the middle of the warehouse.

Zheng Xiaolin watched as from the outside, a man in black suit slowly walked inside. The man wore a white mask and a red neck scarf.

"Are you Liu Yi?" Zheng Xiaolin asked.

"I'm your grandpa." The man said in a funny voice.

Liu Yi, learning the skill from Lin Tong, has changed his own voice.

Now his voice was a bit hoarse, so people can not figure out his identity.

"F\*ck, If you are not Liu Yi, get the hell out of here! This is not your place."

Zheng Xiaolin impatiently said.

"Are you blind? You've kidnapped our family's big miss; you're the one who should get out of here."

Liu Yi's eyes rolled and said.

"Big miss? Are you the bodyguard of that young girl?"

Zheng Xiaoling squeezed his fists, "A bodyguard, don't die just because of money!"

Liu Yi no longer spoke and just raised his finger and made a hook gesture toward Zheng Xiaolin.

First, he can't reveal his identity, second, he must rescue Wang Yuzheng.

Therefore, he can only pretend to be a passer-by to provoke this guy.

"F\*ck, court death."

Zheng Xiaolin was a bit impatient. Seeing the guy in front of him dared to provoke him, he immediately took a few steps forward and arrived before Liu Yi.

"Lie down for me!"

Zheng Xiaolin launched a vicious palm strike toward Liu Yi's rib cage, making Lin Tong called out in alarmed from Liu Yi's shoulder.

"This guy's strength....almost reached three stars!"

"Three stars strength? This guy knows Kung Fu?"

These thoughts flashed through Liu Yi's mind, while at the same time, his feet stepped on the Spirit Fox Steps to get away from Zheng Xiaolin's palm.

"Wheew!"

Zheng Xiaolin's palm hit empty place, but there was a sharp wind as if the

air was torn up.

A formidable palm!

Liu Yi can't help but wonder, how could Zheng Xiaolin achieve this kind of strength?

"You can dodge, but let see how much longer you can dodge this!"

After his palm hit empty air, Zheng Xiaolin was surprised, but he immediately turned toward Liu Yi and went at him again.

Liu Yi pulled out a piece of wood from the shelf next to him and placed it in front of him.

This wood plank was about two fingers thick and pretty solid.

"Krak!"

Zheng Xiaolin hit from the top and directly snapped that piece of wood.

'F\*ck, such a powerful palm!'

"Humph, Iron palm was known throughout the world! Since you dare to provoke me Zheng Xiaolin, you're out of luck!"

Zheng Xiaolin sneered, after breaking the plank, his other palm moved to strike Liu Yi's chest.

"Desolate Flame."

Liu Yi has no time to dodge; therefore, he launched his own palm.

"Bam!"

The two palm bumped into each other, a crisp sound resounded inside the warehouse.

"You actually dare to receive my palm head on,...."

Zheng Xiaolin has no time to be proud, a crackling voice suddenly sounded from his left arm. His bone was actually fractured by Liu Yi's palm!

"What!"

Zheng Xiaolin felt silly, he could not understand why his palm strength was actually inferior to the opponent.

Moreover, his entire left arm fractured, without any strength left.

Liu Yi sneered.

Although the opponent's power was close to three stars, when facing his Desolate Flame, it was indeed akin to face the God.

"D\*mn you!"

Zheng Xiaolin was angry, his right palm quickly moved toward Liu Yi's cheek.

Liu Yi lowered his head to dodge the incoming palm.

Meanwhile, his left hand once again posted on Zheng Xiaolin's chest and then he launched his Desolate Flame.

"Bo!" "Boom!"

This time, the palm also contained the power from the Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra.

Zheng Xiaolin's body instantly turned into a shell, directly flew out after the hit, flying across seven to eight meter distance and finally crashed into the second-floor window.

"You guys think you can hide from me? Come out. Hand over our family's big miss, otherwise, you are all going to die."

Liu Yi recovered his palm and put it into his pocket, while his face looked toward the second floor.

Ma Wei was shocked looking at the lying nearby Zheng Xiaolin.

Before him lie the illustrious and powerful Master Zheng, whose chest was now covered with a layer of frost, and skin lost its color, apparently half-dead.

'Who is this black suit man!'

'Is he Liu Yi?'

'No, his voice is different than Liu Yi.'

'Is it really the girl's bodyguard?'

'But this girl said she didn't come from a wealthy family....Looking at her

temperament, she doesn't resemble a wealthy big miss.'

'Am I mistaken, provoking someone who I shouldn't provoke....'

'But I am the Hall leader of the Black Dragon Gang, how could I release the people just because someone threatened me!'

'If I do this, how could I call myself a gangster!'

Ma Wei was about to speak when Liu Yi, who stood on the first floor, all of a sudden, slightly bent over, and then jumped.

White frost blew out from his feet, as he directly leaped into the second floor by breaking through the window 'Holy Sh\*t....'

'Is this guy still a human?'

All of the Black Dragon Gang member on the second floor were terrified.

Wang Yuzheng was surprised to speechless.

'Do....this world really have immortal beings?' She thought.

"Those who don't want to die, scram!"

Liu Yi stood in front of Ma Wei and the others and left this words.

"F\*ck! I don't care what kind of bodyguard you are! This is the Black Dragon Gang's place!"

Ma Wei suddenly pulled out a gun from his bosom, aimed the muzzle at Liu Yi, and furiously said, "Let us see if you are more impressive than the bullet!"

"I don't like it when people point their gun at me."

Liu Yi remembered when that night Wang An pointed his gun at him, his heart began to feel uncomfortable.

This stuff could have been used to defend someone's safety.

But now, it has become a tool for a murderous criminal.

"So what, now I am in control here!"

Holding the pistol, Ma Wei's heart calmed a lot.

"Aren't you so arrogant just now, come on, where is your arrogant? I have

kidnapped your family's big miss, what can you do about it?"

Ma Wei said. As he pointed his gun at Liu Yi, he stretched out his other hand to touch Wang Yuzheng's neckline.

"I am going to play with your big miss in front of you, what are you going to do about that!"

"Don't touch her."

Liu Yi's eyes became cold, seeing the panicked expression of Wang Yuzheng, his was distressed without any reason.

"If you touch her, I would kill you."

"Are you stupid!"

Ma Wei laughed, "At present, I can kill you anytime! Don't you see the gun in my hand! What are you going to do? If you move, this father will put a bullet into your silly head."

With that, Ma Wei continued to stretch his hand and was about to touch Wang Yuzheng.

"Ice blade!"

Liu Yi muttered.

A long slab of ice blade suddenly appeared out of nowhere and directly stabbed Ma Wei's wrist.

He immediately screamed in pain again and again as his hand lost all of its strength and the Hualong made gun fell to the ground.

Liu Yi strode forward and viciously hit Ma Wei's chin.

"Bam!"

Several of Ma Wei's teeth immediately broken as his entire body flew out and knocked back a lot of goods behind him.

Seeing this scene, the other gang members were all scared, screaming as they ran off toward the stairs.

"Nobody is allowed to leave."

Liu Yi did not intend to let them off.

People who murder for money must be punished.

He threw an ice bomb toward the door downstairs.

“Splat!”

A layer of frost immediately appeared on the door, blocking it from opening.

“Motherf\*cker, I’ll kill you!”

Zheng Xiaolin’s younger martial brother growled and rushed up to him, a knife was on his hand.

Liu Yi stretched out his left hand and pinched the knife with his finger and then snapped it into two pieces. He then flew his foot and kicked his opponent’s lower abdomen.

Zheng Xiaolin’s younger martial brother spewed a mouthful of blood and then hit the wooden wall on the second floor. The wooden wall directly broke into pieces and then fell down on the ground floor.

The other gangsters collapsed to the ground, trembling in fear.

“Evildoer, I want to break your arms.”

Liu Yi’s eyes slightly exuded traces of gold. He walked in front of a gangster, aimed his right hand, and viciously stamped on it.

“Krak!”

The right arm was directly destroyed, its appearance was twisted and deformed.

The gangster immediately screamed and fainted because of the pain.

Liu Yi smiled and moved on to the next gangster.

# Chapter 115 I Control My Own Destiny

“No, please no....”

After consecutively broke several gangsters' arms, there's only one left. That gangster knelt on the ground, repeatedly kowtowed Liu Yi, and pleaded with tears streaming down his nose.

“I, I still have both of my parents I need to take care of....and little sister I need to look after....I beg you, please, please let me off....”

“When you kidnapped this innocent girl, why don't you think about your little sister?”

Liu Yi coldly said, the Devil and Demonic qi inside his body were constantly moving, making the world in front of him somewhat black and white.

“I was wrong....I will never do it again....”

That gangster kept on kowtowing; his forehead began to show some blood.

“Too late....”

A voice sounded inside Liu Yi's head; he followed the voice and said.

“For people like you, if there's no bloody lesson, you're not going to repent.”

With that, he directly grabbed that gangster's left hand, lifted his foot then viciously kicked his shoulder.

“Krak!”

“Aaa!”

That gangster blacked out in pain, directly fainted to the ground.

“Useless.”

Liu Yi shook his head, “Fainted just because of this. Such a useless crowd,



but still call themselves gangsters.”

When he put that gangster to the side, Wang Yuzheng suddenly screamed.

“Watch out!”

“Bang!”

A gunshot sound.

Liu Yi suddenly felt a sharp pain on his shoulder, his body staggered forward and nearly fell to the ground.

A force erupted from his left shoulder and pushed out the bullet.

But the blood continued to pour out, making Liu Yi's eyes became dark.

Human strength comes from the blood; The blood circulation came from the heart's pulsation.

But when human loss a lot of blood, it can easily make the heart stop.

Fortunately, with Liu Yi's demonic energy, the bullet was pushed out and the wound rapidly healed. The speed of the blood that poured out of the wound gradually slowed down.

The moonlight that shone through the window fell on Liu Yi's body.

This moon essence was inhaled by his body, supplementing his loss of power.

At that moment, Liu Yi felt the death was so close to him.

So cold and suffocating...

He gasped for breath, kneeling on the ground.

Ma Wei with bloody mouth looked abnormally excited.

He put one hand on Wang Yuzheng's chair while his other hand was holding a gun.

“Hahaha, aren's- (aren't) you sicious (vicious), aren's- (aren't) you arrogans (arrogant)! Af-er (After) ea-ing (eating) -his (this) bro-her (brother) Ma's bulle- (bullet), I wan- (want) -o (to) see if you're s-ill (still) arrogan (arrogant)!”

Ma Wei had lost several teeth in his mouth, when he spoke, there's some air leakage.

"If I pu- (put) ano-her (another) bulle- (bullet) in you, you will die for sure!"

Saying that, Ma Wei raised the muzzle and aimed it at Liu Yi again.

"Watch out!"

It was at this moment, the sitting on the chair Wang Yuzheng suddenly twisted her body, along with the chair, making her stumbled to the right and hit Ma Wei's body.

"Bang!"

Ma Wei fell down, the pistol also lost its accuracy, making the bullet hit and penetrated the wooden wall next to them.

While Liu Yi fortunately, didn't eat another bullet.

"F\*cking bitch....you want to die...."

Ma Wei said and was about to slap Wang Yuzheng in the face.

But Liu Yi endured the severe pain on his shoulder and threw an ice bom.

"Bam!"

Layers of ice condensed out of a large area, freezing half of Ma Wei's body to the ground.

"What....what is this...."

Ma Wei watched in amazement as half of his body freeze, unable to move, and it even hindered his talking.

A coldness crept through his heart.

Ma Wei appeared to be in a state of confusion and silly; He felt he was unable to comprehend what just happened. He thought.

'Where the hell is this guy coming from....'

'Am I in a nightmare....'

"You, deserve to die."

Liu Yi slowly stood up.

His wound was no longer bleeding, and his whole eyes were a bit red now.

A stream of dark emotion appeared in his heart.

“You, you dare to kill me?”

Ma Wei vomited blood, and shouted, “This father....is the Hall Leader of Black Dragon Gang....If you kill me, you mess with Black Dragon Gang! Do you know what Black Dragon Gang is? It is the largest gang in this Northern Dragon City! If you mess with Black Dragon Gang, you’ll be met with endless retaliation! Not only you, but they will also take revenge on those around you and your family! All of them will have to suffer because of you!”

“You should not....threaten me with these.”

Liu Yi slowly walked toward Ma Wei, his left hand was on top of his forehead, “This can only accelerate your death.”

“You, you can’t kill me!”

Ma Wei’s whole body trembled.

Liu Yi smelled a smell of urine. This guy was actually too scared and peed his pants.

“And you call yourself a Hall Leader?”

Liu Yi couldn’t help but laugh, “Are all the Black Dragon Gang members useless like you?”

“Mercy....mercy....”

Ma Wei also did not know why, since he became the Hall Leader, his courage was getting increasingly small.

His previous unyielding character was gone.

All he cared about was enjoying the life and how to earn money.

But now, when the death was so near....he was afraid, extremely afraid.

He didn’t want to die.

“Liu Yi, finish him.”

Lin Tong continued to remind Liu Yi from the side, "If you don't kill him now, your future will fill with endless trouble! Just kill him, once and for all!"

"Kill him...."

Despite the anger in his body, when it comes to killing people, he still has some reservation.

"This is not the time to hesitate! This man is not a human anymore, he's completely crazy, he deserves to be killed!"

Lin Tong quickly added, "You think about it, if it wasn't for that chick saving you, you are already dead! If you don't kill him now, not only you, the people around you will also be in trouble!"

"I...."

Liu Yi's heart trembled.

"If you won't kill him, let me!"

At this time, another voice sounded in Liu Yi's mind.

Then, his whole body shuddered, his eyes suddenly burst out bright golden lights.

"Accept your death."

Liu Yi's voice became extremely cold.

Ma Wei's eyes and mouth suddenly spat out crimson-colored flames.

All his organs inside his body were burned, but his external body remained intact, which then stumbled to the ground.

Wang Yuzheng saw Ma Wei lying motionlessly there, her heart slightly has some fear.

She was just an ordinary girl....This was her first encounter with death....

"Whiirr...."

Demonic Liu Yi quickly faded, his eyes looked at the two black holes where the eyes burned, and the corpse which lied there. A surge of fear welled up inside Liu Yi's heart.

At the same time, there was also a feeling of disgust.

His first kill....

These feelings lingered in his heart....

“What are you afraid of, if you don’t fear the living, why should you fear the dead.”

Lin Tong advised, “You’re not killing innocent people, this man is guilty, he deserve to die.”

“But....the law can punish him....I, I shouldn’t casually kill people....”

Liu Yi’s heart slightly flustered.

“Slowly get used to it, you are not an ordinary people, you are an immortal cultivator.”

Lin Tong sighed, thinking.

‘After all, Liu Yi still thought of himself as an ordinary student first and foremost.’

‘He has yet to understand the implication of being an immortal cultivation. For him, killing people would indeed cause no small psychological pressure.’

‘But this Ma Wei had to die.’

‘If he didn’t die, Liu Yi would be in a big trouble.’

‘However, why did he jabber on and on about Liu Yi?’

‘Logically speaking, Liu Yi and the Black Dragon Gang should not have any relation to each other.’

‘Why did he continue to confront Liu Yi again and again?’

Lin Tong racked her brain trying to find the answer to these questions.

“Are you okay?”

Liu Yi tried not to think about the matter regarding Ma Wei. He squatted beside Wang Yuzheng, reached out his hands and ripped open the rope that bound her.

The thumb-thick rope was as fragile as a paper in Liu Yi’s hands.

“I, I am okay....”

Wang Yuzheng's face paled as she crawled up from the ground, She didn't dare to look at Ma Wei, instead, she asked Liu Yi in a low voice.

"Is....is he dead...."

"Yes."

Liu Yi heavily nodded, he had to admit this fact.

He killed people....

However, that person is an evil person.

'Um, that's right, he is an evil person.'

From far away, Liu Yi heard the faint sound of the police sirens.

They probably were alerted by the gunfire. Therefore, they came here to check.

He has to get out of here as soon as possible.

"The police are coming, I'm leaving now."

Liu Yi said, stood up, and was about to leave.

"Deity, Deity don't go...."

At this time, Wang Yuzheng suddenly pulled Liu Yi's arm and begged.

"You are so great....you must be able to help me...."

Liu Yi suddenly raised his eyebrows a bit, thinking.

'Wang Yuzheng would actually lower herself to beg other people?'

"My mother has been paralyzed for years....My family doesn't have the money to treat this illness of her....Deity, you are so powerful.... you certainly can help cure my mother, right...."

Wang Yuzheng tearfully begged Liu Yi.

Liu Yi felt awkward.

"Fox sister....is there any technique that can help cure Wang Yuzheng's mother?"

"Do you really think this big miss as an omnipotent Deity!"

Lin Tong rolled her eyes at Liu Yi.

“Then what should we do....is there no other way....”

“Immortal cultivation can only be used to enhance our own bodies and spirit, it could not be used to help other people. The Taoist principle said, after one cultivates one’s own body, then one can rule the world! Cultivation of one own’s body is the most important, you haven’t even properly cultivate yourself, yet you are thinking about helping others? Even if you cultivate to the highest level, you still can’t treat other people’s illness. Everyone’s life has been determined by the Heaven, you can’t change someone else’s life!”

“Why not!”

Liu Yi said, “Initially, I am just an ordinary human, but after Fox sister appeared, wasn’t my destiny changed?”

“You....are different....”

“Where is different! I believe the destiny can be changed! I control my own destiny!”

“You this fellow....”

Lin Tong was feeling awkward, her tone was getting somewhat unsure, “In the immortal cultivation world....there’s this place called the King of Medicine’s Valley....The elixir that they refine can actually bring back the person from the brink of death....”

“Really?”

Liu Yi’s eyes lit up. Just as he wanted to say something to Lin Tong, the police sirens suddenly sounded from the outside of the warehouse’s front door.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 116

## Chapter 116 I Am Ten Steps To Milk A Man

The warehouse door has been blocked by the police cars. Several police officers rushed in; their hands were holding guns.

After hearing the gunshots on the second warehouse, they immediately rushed over.

A gunfight is a huge case! Therefore, their response speed was extremely quick.

At a time when Liu Yi was still standing on the second-floor conversing with Lin Tong, they heard the movement on the first floor and suddenly surprised.

“People on the second floor don’t move. You have been surrounded!”

Several police officers used their tactical flashlights to focus on Liu Yi and Wang Yuzheng.

“I have to go.”

Liu Yi can not delay anymore; he must get out of here immediately.

“Brother Deity....Will, we meet again?”

Wang Yuzheng hurriedly asked.

“We will....”

Liu Yi nodded his head, left behind a sentence, and then leaped, crashing his body toward the window.

“Crash!”

The window on the second floor was directly crushed by Liu Yi into pieces of broken glasses. He rolled over in the sky, then stepped on the ice-skates, and galloped toward the outside of the pier.

“Stop!”

Just when Liu Yi thought he had escaped the police, all of a sudden, his ears



heard a charming voice from below.

Then, a gunshot was heard, Liu Yi felt a bullet hit the ice-skate on his foot, which directly broken, making him instantly lost his balance. His whole body rolled several times to the side.

“Bam!” Liu Yi finally crashed on top of a pile of goods and then stopped.

His injury has not healed yet, so, when he bumped into those goods, he felt his wound split open again, which directly made him grimacing in pain. He thought.

‘Shoot....which police officer has this excellent marksmanship? He really knows where to shoot....’

“Humph! Little thief, you think you can escape from my Yuan Zhenyue’s palm!”

A familiar figure with both hands holding a pistol slowly walked toward Liu Yi.

“Stay right there, and wait for the punishment of the law!”

“I am innocent.”

Liu Yi got up and said, “The real criminals have been taken down by me!”

“Cut the crap, keep those words and save it for the judge!”

Yuan Zhenyue was aiming her gun point blank at Liu Yi, “Raised your arms, squat on the ground and don’t let me see you make even a little unwarranted movement! Otherwise, I can not guarantee my next shot would hit where!”

Liu Yi rolled his eyes and looked at Wang Yuzheng, who held her gun with one hand while her other hand pulled out a handcuff. An idea suddenly came to him.

He squatted on the floor, pretending to surrender.

Yuan Zhenyue walked next to Liu Yi while still pointing her gun at him. Her other hand was groping at the waist.

The moment Yuan Zhenyue touched the handcuff, Liu Yi suddenly moved.

With a lightning fast speed, he stretched out his left hand, reached for the gun in Yuan Zhenyue's hand and pushed it aside.

“Bang!”

Yuan Zhenyue involuntarily squeezed the trigger, but the bullet hit a faraway place.

“Click!”

At the same time, Liu Yi pinched Yuan Zhenyue's wrist, making her felt the pain and dropped the gun.

But while Yuan Zhenyue was surprised, her body subconsciously moved.

She directly put the handcuff on Liu Yi's left wrist and then put the other part on her own wrist, making them chained together.

“Let me see where are you going to run this time!”

Liu Yi was dumbfounded, thinking.

‘D\*mn, this Yuan Zhenyue's automatic reaction is faster than Superman!’

‘When I dropped her gun, she handcuffed me to her hand!’

‘She is truly a deity!’

“Don't mess around. You can not get away from me!”

Yuan Zhenyue snappily said.

Liu Yi was helpless, ‘Don't tell me I have to use my right hand to deal with this woman?’

‘My identity will be seen through without a doubt!’

Liu Yi has no other choice, he suddenly condensed out a layer of frost on his left hand toward the metal handcuffs, with the intent of directly destroying the handcuffs.

Seeing the handcuffs being covered by the layer of frost, Yuan Zhenyue suddenly widened her eyes, and a strange look appeared on her face.

“This is....The Ice ability? You are the Black Eye!”

‘Black Eye?’

Liu Yi vaguely remembered this name.

“Sure enough, you are the third assassin on the Heavenly List!

Yuan Zhenyue clenched her teeth, her eyes became blood red, looking at Liu Yi with much hate, “I finally found you! I am going to avenge my father’s grievance!”

Then, the moment the handcuffs broke by the frost, Yuan Zhenyue suddenly came rushing at Liu Yi with the ferociousness of someone who doesn’t care about the life anymore and rained down a flurry of attacks at him.

Liu Yi was bewildered. He didn’t understand why she would suspect him as the Black Eye. He has nothing to do with that killer nor the Heavenly List.

He didn’t want to spend anymore time getting entangled with this attractive female police officer. Therefore, he turned around, ready to ran away.

But Yuan Zhenyue’s speed was surprisingly fast. As if she suddenly made a breakthrough of her potential, she rushed behind Liu Yi and directly embraced his waist with both of her hands.

Liu Yi suddenly felt as if his waist was being caught by iron bars. He instantly lost his balance.

“Stay down!”

The upper chest of this policewoman was soft, but Liu Yi has no time to appreciate it. His body was, as if soar into the cloud, directly thrown by this policewoman, fluttered semi-circle in the air, and finally came into intimate contact with the Earth.

If his head really hit the ground, not only he would bump silly into it, his brain would suffer a concussion!

When his hands touched the ground, Liu Yi suddenly condensed out two streams of frost from both of his hands.

Suddenly, his falling speed slowed down and even raised him up a bit.

“Get down!”

Striking while the iron is hot, Liu Yi continued to eject more stream of ice from the palm of his hands.

He used this momentum to resolutely pulled up from Yuan Zhenyue's push. His body stood up once again.

Meanwhile, in order to break free from her, Liu Yi subconsciously made a backhand grip toward her hand, but his left hand unexpectedly caught a mass of softness.

This soft, round, and bulging thing, felt exquisite.

'Holy sh\*t....'

Liu Yi quickly realized what it was.

Although he wanted to continue to touch it, Yuan Zhenyue wouldn't let him....

"I am going to kill you!"

Being raided in the chest by her father's killer, there's nothing more infuriating than this!

Yuan Zhenyue pushed Liu Yi to the side, rolled on the ground, picked up the pistol that was previously dropped and pointed it at Liu Yi.

"You made a mistake. I really am not your father's killer!"

Liu Yi hurriedly explained.

"Go to hell for this mother!"

Yuan Zhenyue's anger has soared to the sky, how could she listen to Liu Yi's explanation. She pulled the trigger, making the gun spat out bullets again and again.

'Fuck....such a close distance shoot, she really wants me dead!'

Liu Yi was shocked, while simultaneously the three forces inside his body quickly circulated to the max.

At that moment, the world in front of Liu Yi once again turned into black and white.

The bullets exuded the red light, speed slowed down a bit, and their

trajectories were clearly visible, all coming right at him.

Liu Yi suddenly felt he has now entered a more mysterious state.

He felt confident he can dodge these bullets.

Liu Yi's launched his Spirit Fox Steps and slightly moved his body to the side.

These bullets rippled through the air, rubbed against Liu Yi's clothes, and hit empty spaces.

Although Liu Yi's world has slowed down, the time where Yuan Zhenyue pressed the trigger and spent the bullets happened in split seconds.

She discovered that her gun failed to hit the target, Liu Yi's body unceasingly moved like an afterimage, making Yuan Zhenyue truly shocked.

Her hands that were holding the gun shivered a bit.

"This is....the sign you are going to break through the third star jade!"

Lin Tong was pleasantly surprised and said, "This big miss will finally be able to break free from my seal...."

"Click click!"

Yuan Zhenyue finally ran out of bullets. She breathlessly began to change the cartridge.

Liu Yi seized this opportunity to throw an ice bomb.

He considerably lowered the power of his ice bomb and made this ice ball fell under Yuan Zhenyue's foot. When it touched the ground, the frost exploded out and half of her body, along with the gun, frozen in ice.

Yuan Zhenyue felt her body stiffened and wouldn't listen to her command.

"This frost won't cost you your life. It will only bound you temporarily."

Liu Yi said, "Moreover, I am not a killer on the Heavenly List, nor I am that Black Eye."

"Who are you then!"

Yuan Zhenyue fell into deep despair. She was unwilling.

The suspected killer of his father was right in front of her, but she can not kill her personal enemy with her own hand!

It made her nearly mad.

“My name is Ten Steps To Milk A Man.”

Liu Yi thought about his own nickname and honestly said to her.

“What?”

Hearing this name, Yuan Zhenyue almost didn't believe her ears.

Liu Yi laughed a hollow laugh twice, although this name is a bit exotic, he was already accustomed to it.

“Ten Steps To Milk A Man....How can there be such a weird name....are you lying to me?”

Liu Yi said nothing, just looking at Yuan Zhenyue's chest that was hiding behind her clothes.

“F\*ck! You are a pervert!”

Yuan Zhenyue seemed to understand Liu Yi's gaze and glared at him.

Liu Yi can't wait anymore, the ice on Yuan Zhenyue's body would soon melt.

“In any case, I am not the person you're looking for.”

Liu Yi didn't want to delay; his feet stepped on the ice-skates once again, his body quickly turned into a shadow, rushing toward the outside of the pier.

“D\*mn it! I will definitely catch you!”

Yuan Zhenyue's shout came from behind.

When a group of police arrived, the ice on Yuan Zhenyue's body was more or less gone.

She awkwardly stood up and angrily looked at the distance place.

“Little Yue, what's wrong, are you okay?”

Zheng Kening a bit worriedly asked, he had heard the sound of gunfire a

moment ago and knew that Yuan Zhenyue has a gunfight here.

“I am okay.”

Yuan Zhenyue shook her head, “I just met the suspect, but accidentally let him escape!”

“It’s hard to say he is the suspect.”

Zhen Kening’s brows tightly knitted together, “There’s a female student in the warehouse, she was kidnapped here.”

“Oh? Kidnapped?”

“Yes, that’s right, we have indeed received two alarms....One said that a girl seemingly being kidnapped, the other one said someone robbed his tricycle. The girl in the report should be her.”

Zheng Kening analyzed the situation and said.

“Moreover, the several injured men in the warehouse have already woken up. They are indeed members of the Black Dragon Gang.”

“Black Dragon Gang?”

Yuan Zhenyue couldn’t help but surprise, “At this juncture, they actually dare to come out and make trouble?”

“The girl said those men kidnapped her, then the man who escaped just now suddenly appeared and saved her. Since the Black Dragon Gang Hall Leader Ma Wei threatened to shoot him, he unavoidably killed Ma Wei.”

“This....seems a bit weird.”

“Yes, come with me and see it for yourself.”

# Chapter 117 We Are Close To Each Other

Wang Yuzheng's body slightly trembled.

There were so many things that happened tonight which made her unable to calm down.

Kidnapping....Killing.....

There's also that brother Deity....

She was wondering....if she would be able to meet with him again....

"That man claimed to be your bodyguard?"

Yuan Zhenyue asked Wang Yuzheng once again.

"Are you sure? You are not trying to protect him are you?"

Wang Yuzheng's eyes were slightly red.

"Little Yue, what's going with you? You are really short tempered tonight."

Zheng Kening pulled Yuan Zhenyue to the side and scolded, "That girl is not a prisoner, why are you asking her like you are interrogating a criminal?"

"I....I don't know...."

Yuan Zhenyue's was terribly upset, thinking of that man in the suit with the Ice ability, her heart was tightly clenched.

'Even if he is not the Black Eye, they should have had some connection!'

'Otherwise, how could he has the Ice ability?'

Yuan Zhenyue didn't believe there's such a coincidence in this world!

"I, I have said all that I need to say...."

Wang Yuzheng weakly said, "When can I go home....my mom is at home, she needs me to take care of her...."



“There are still many cases that are unclear, you can’t go back yet! Please cooperate with our investigation!”

Yuan Zhenyue stiffly said.

Wang Yuzheng suddenly wanted to cry.

‘Tonight, how could I be so unlucky ....’ She thought

‘Liu Yi this fellow, where the hell is he!’

“Director Zheng, there is someone outside who claimed to be the girl’s classmate, and wants to come in!”

A police downstairs shouted through the intercom.

“Ah, that’s Liu Yi!”

Wang Yuzheng was taken aback, wondering if her wish has suddenly come through.

‘When I think of this guy, he immediately appears?’

“Liu Yi?”

Yuan Zhenyue and Zheng Kening both were startled, ‘how could this matter also related to that kid?’ They thought.

“They kidnapped me so that they could threaten Liu Yi to come over here....”

Wang Yuzheng hurriedly said.

“These things are getting weirder!”

Zheng Kening waved his hand, “Let him in.”

There were many questionable points in this case, whether it’s the first floor or the second floor, there were many men who broke their arms.

Perhaps if they investigate it clearly, one of these men might be the escaped criminal they were looking for.

If he was among them, they could save a lot of trouble when they hospitalize all of these men.

After all this time he was on the run where no one can catch him, he finally

ended up here.

It seemed that nobody can mess with this Black Dragon Gang! Zheng Kening reasoned.

“Let him come.”

Zheng Kening said.

“Wang Yuzheng, Wang Yuzheng where are you?”

Liu Yi ran into the warehouse gasping for breath.

“I am here....”

Seeing Liu Yi, Wang Yuzheng was somewhat impressed.

Unexpectedly, Liu Yi really came by himself to find her.

Whether or not she was captured because of him, at least, this proved that Liu Yi had not given up on her.

“What the hell is going on here!”

Seeing Liu Yi coming up to the stairs, Yuan Zhenyue was suddenly in a bad mood, thinking.

‘How could everything is related to this kid!’

‘He is not fast becoming Detective Conan is he!’

“Dead, dead people?”

Liu Yi glanced around at the people that were lying on the ground, and when he saw Ma Wei he suddenly pretended to be afraid.

“Forget about this, let me ask you, what does this have to do with you?”

Yuan Zhenyue was really impatient tonight.

“I am not very clear either....”

Liu Yi cried injustice, “I am also as baffled as you. Today when Wang Yuzheng and I was eating a snack a van suddenly came, grabbed Wang Yuzheng and took off! Then someone called me and told me to go to the warehouse. After much difficulties, I finally arrived and saw you here.”

“Why would Black Dragon Gang want you to come?”

Yuan Zhenyue wrinkled her brows.

“Enough, both of you can go home now.”

Zheng Kening, as if realizing something, waved his hand and said, “Keep your communication, when we find something we will tell you.”

“No, this case is still not clear, we can’t let them walk away!”

Yuan Zhenyue loudly exclaimed.

“Both of them are students, they shouldn’t be involved with this. Em....This is probably a gang fight.”

Zheng Kening gave his judgment.

“What a joke!”

Yuan Zhenyue did not believe Zheng Kening’s nonsense. She pulled up the nearby thug, put the unloaded gun on that thug’s head, and angrily said.

“Speak, why did you kidnap the girl, and why did you threaten Liu Yi! If you lie to me, I’ll kill a trash like you on behalf of the people!”

“I, I, I’ll confess....”

That thug was scared silly, he was just a little thug, and Ma Wei’s death has unnerved him.

“We, we were paid by Lan He, young master Lan’s money....”

“Shut up!”

Zheng Kening immediately shouted in anger and pulled Yuan Zhenyue away, “Yuan Zhenyue, what you are doing is illegal! You can’t use force to extract confession! Escort them all to the hospital with police guard!”

“Yes!”

Several policemen immediately marched in and escorted those thugs out.

Liu Yi secretly frowned.

‘So....this is all because of that fellow Lan He?’

‘He secretly colluding with the underworld gang, to deal with me....’

‘This guy....is really rotten to the core.’

“Brother, what are you doing?”

Yuan Zhenyue pushed away Zheng Kening’s hand, “Why did you take them away? The investigation is not finished!”

“We will continue to investigate!”

Zheng Kening said, “These small thugs are full of nonsense, you can’t take their words seriously. This case will be investigated the people from the Criminal Investigation Team. The two of you, I will look for a police car to take you home.”

He turned to Liu Yi and Wang Yuzheng and said.

“Thank you, uncle police officer....”

Wang Yuzheng was relieved, thinking that she finally was able to go home.

Liu Yi did not mention anything, a voice sounded in his mind.

‘Since Lan He is trying to harm me....I can’t just let him get away with this.’

“Silly kid, you go downstairs, I will stay here for a moment.”

Lin Tong exerted her spiritual power to maintain her little fox form and landed on a nearby window.

Liu Yi nodded his head. A police officer led him and Wang Yuzheng downstairs.

The second floor was left with Yuan Zhenyue and Zheng Kening. There was also the little fox which invisible to them.

“Brother, why did you prevent my investigation?”

Once Liu Yi and Wang Yuzheng went downstairs, Yuan Zhenyue immediately asked.

“Investigate? What’s there to investigate?”

Zheng Kening helplessly watched her younger police-force sister, “Haven’t you learned after so many years in the police department? A little police officer like you want to topple the Lan Family?”

“Everyone is equal before the law!”

“An Emperor breaking the law is the same as common people breaking the

law! That Lan He has broken the law, he should be punished by the law.”

“Ai, this character of yours, when can you change it.”

Zheng Kening wryly smiled and said, “I understand your feelings, but this is not as simple as you think. Lan Family’s asset is big, their influence is staggering. Among other things, who do you think Lan He’s uncle is? He is your immediate superior, younger sister.”

“So what, if he violated the law, he should be punished!”

“Punishment, is not as simple as that.”

Zhen Kening scolded Yuan Zhenyue, “Why haven’t you still understand how these things work? Do you think with just a few small fries confessions you can put young master Lan into the trial? The law is only for ordinary people. Toward people like Lan He....you and me, we have no way to deal with him.”

“We are the police, the police must remove the criminals and bring peace to the law abiding people!”

Yuan Zhenyue remembered what her father said to her, and immediately said the same.

“These words, are what Captain Wang used to say those days....but then, look at what happen to him.”

Zheng Kening shook his head, “Even if you insist on arresting Lan He, do you have any evidence? I already told you, you can’t use those thugs’ confessions, it’s useless.”

“I will collect the evidence!”

Yuan Zhenyue clenched her fists and bit her teeth, then turned around to go downstairs.

“Ai, she is still too young....”

Zheng Kening pulled out a cigarette, put it in his mouth, and lit it.

“Northern Dragon City, is full of events these days.”

Lin Tong’s eyes flashed, then she leaped from the window, turned into a gust of wind, and quickly returned to Liu Yi’s side.

She clambered back from the opened window of the police car to Liu Yi's shoulder and relayed Yuan Zhenyue and Zheng Kening's conversation to him.

Liu Yi silently frowned, thinking.

'The law can not touch him?'

He remembered that night when he met with the follower of the Cult of the Great God. To pursue their own selfish desire, they did not hesitate to kill other people.

'If the law really can't punish such people, then, it will up to me to punish them.'

Black light flashed through Liu Yi's eyes as he clenched his fists.

'Grandpa....I am afraid, this world is not as perfect as you said.'

'But no matter, I am going to wash it clean, with my own hands.'

"Liu Yi....how did you provoke the Black Dragon Gang...."

At this time, Wang Yuzheng who sat next to Liu Yi suddenly asked.

"I don't know either....how could I provoke those Black Dragon Gang, I am just an ordinary good student!"

Liu Yi shrugged his shoulders and said.

"Pfft...."

Wang Yuzheng suddenly unable to hold back her laughter, "You....call yourself a good student?"

"In which way I don't look like a good student?"

Liu Yi looked at Wang Yuzheng as if he was suffering an injustice.

"From the day I met you, I never saw that good student side of yours!"

"How can you say that? I really am a good student!"

"The way you carry yourself (everything, from top to bottom), there is not an ounce of good student in you!"

Wang Yuzheng didn't believe Liu Yi's words, if he is a good student, pigs

can climb trees!

“How did you know that I am, from top to bottom, not a good student? Did you peek at me when I change my clothes!”

Liu Yi was hugging his own chest and looked at Wang Yuzheng in horror.

“Go to hell! Who’s going to peek you change your clothes! Shameless guy....”

Wang Yuzheng was rendered speechless.

‘This Liu Yi’s mouth is so naughty, how come I didn’t discover this side of him before this!’

Liu Yi was also unclear about this matter, perhaps he was being influenced by the Devil qi.

‘Forget it, it’s not that big of a deal even if my mouth turned dirty.’ Liu Yi thought.

‘Mm, yes, as long as I still have the sense of justice!’

“I am going to have bad luck if I stay close to you....later on, you must be at least three meters away from me. Otherwise, bad things will happen to me!”

Wang Yuzheng helplessly said.

“But the two of us share the same table!”

Liu Yi blinked his eyes, and said, “How could I be three meters away from you? Look at us now, are we not being intimate (close to each other)?”

# Chapter 118 Imperial Nightclub

“You, go to hell....”

Wang Yuzheng’s tender face immediately flushed.

‘How could his mouth is so bad now....’

‘Thoroughly, completely bastard.’

“Liu Yi, we have arrived at your house.”

The police officer in the front suddenly said.

“Oh, ok, thank you for sending me home tonight, you’ve work hard.”

Seeing they have arrived at his home apartment building, Liu Yi quickly nodded.

“Wang Yuzheng, when you get home, remember to give me a call ok!”

When Liu Yi got out of the car, he didn’t forget to left her this sentence.

“Who is going to call you....”

Wang Yuzheng turned away, but her heart was actually nervous.

Although her mouth said she want to distance herself from Liu Yi, the more she looked at Liu Yi, the more she thought that he was pleasing to the eye.

Really....weird.

Liu Yi smiled, turned around and walked toward his house.

“Ready to settle your matter with Lan He?”

At this time, the little Fox who lie on his shoulder finally asked.

“Kill him?”

“I don’t want to kill people casually....”

Thinking about his other personality, who awoke and burned Ma Wei’s inside, Liu Yi’s heart shivered a bit.



“Even if I don’t want to kill him, he must be punished.”

Liu Yi went upstairs, opened the door and replied.

“Then what do you want to do?”

“First, I need to find him....”

Liu Yi said, the clothing on his body instantly turned into a black suit.

He did not intend to let Lan He off so easily and wanted to give him some punishment.

If the law can’t punish him, no matter, he will punish him himself.

After Liu Yi had changed his clothes, he looked downstairs and found the police car has already far away.

He suddenly jumped, leaped out of the window.

At this time, Lan He has taken Lin Huayang for a drink in a private room in the Northern Dragon City biggest entertainment area.

Although Lan He’s family controlled the best entertainment area in the Northern Dragon City, the girls in the Imperial Nightclub have been tasted by Lan He repeatedly.

A few days ago he had eaten a part-time college student, afterward that college girl can’t do anything but to directly plunged into the entertainment industry to work as a hostess.

“Young master Lin, relax, your one hundred thousand will not be in vain.”

Lan He was drinking, sitting opposite of Lin Huayang and said, “The thorn in your side will be eliminated tonight, come, come, drink, we’ll find some beautiful woman and be happy.”

“Can....it really succeed this time?”

Lin Huayang held the wine glass, but his heart was still a bit disturbed.

“Haha, look at you, coward.”

Lan He couldn’t help but laugh, “I have personally seen Master Lin’s Kung Fu. He is a master, genuine Master martial art. He alone is more than enough to deal with Liu Yi. Moreover, Ma Wei from the Black Dragon Gang will

personally assume the command over there, do you still think there will be a problem?”

“I hope everything will be as planned....”

Lin Huayang was somewhat uneasy.

He didn't know where this uneasiness came from, but it was there.

“Young master Lan, why didn't you call some beautiful woman here?”

Lin Huayang changed the topic.

“I am tired of them. They are all boring.”

“Why don't we call Ma Yixuan to spend some time with us.”

Lin Huayang suggested.

“She's just a pretty school girl with no style. There's nothing fun in it.”

Lan He waved his hand, “Why young master Lin's vision is so low?”

“Ma Yixuan is not that bad....but the truth is, my favorite is Wang Yuzheng....unfortunately....ai....it's a long story.”

“Hehe, without Liu Yi, would it not be easy for young master Lin to get that girl?”

Lan He said with a smile, “How could that Wang Yuzheng, who has no background, escape from young master Lin's palm?”

“Young master Lan, you don't know this, although it looks like that Wang Yuzheng can easily be squeezed by anyone, she is actually very stubborn! It would not be easy for anyone to get her. Otherwise, with my position in the school, I would have got her by now.”

Lin Huayang was depressed.

“Since young master Lin wants to obtain Wang Yuzheng, you might as well try this thing.”

Lan He said, and suddenly pulled out a bottle of spray from his bosom.

“Oh? What is this?”

There were a bunch of English words on the bottle, which Lin Huayang

simply did not understand.

“This is a good stuff....I got it with great difficulty.”

Lan He smiled evilly, “This is a newly developed spray by a famous pharmaceutical company in the US. With just one spray, the other person will be confused and immediately in heat, and will fall into your mercy.”

“Sh\*t, is this for real?”

Lin Huayang’s heart was moved.

“Of course....This stuff has not been in circulation yet, and I spent a great deal to get it. For such a bottle, since I saw young master Lin really need it, I can lend you one. Don’t spray too much; one is enough.”

“Great, thank you young master Lan, you truly are a good friend!”

Lin Huayang was ecstatic to have this thing. With this stuff, it would be so easy to capture Wang Yuzheng!

Just when the two people were talking evil, Lan He’s phone suddenly rang.

It was from an unknown number. Lan He frowned but still picked up the phone.

“Who is this?”

“Young master Lan, it’s me, Ma Wei.”

A familiar voice came from the other side.

“Oh, brother Ma, what happens, is it done?”

“With me Ma Wei went into action myself, how could it not succeed? It is over. Young master Lan, where are you, we will drink the celebration wine.”

“I am on the third floor of Imperial nightclub, VIP room. Come brother Ma, we’ll have a good drink together, haha!”

At this time, at a far away telephone booth, Liu Yi hung up the phone and rubbed the little Fox’s head with his fingers.

“Go away, this big miss’ head is not for you to touch!”

Lin Tong opened her mouth and bit Liu Yi’s finger.

Liu Yi suffered the pain, but he was secretly delighted.

Not because he was a masochist, but because he had his Fox sister, who was able to change voice at will.

Calling Lan He was not difficult. As a classmate, it was easy to look for his number.

Liu Yi hung up the phone, turned around, and leaped into the night sky toward the Imperial Nightclub.

‘This Lan He pays for other people to do his dirty deed, but he is actually enjoying himself in the nightclub.’

‘This scum....’

‘Death is not enough for him.’

Liu Yi flashed through the night. But the Autumn night of the Northern Dragon City seemed to understand Liu Yi’s mood and began to rain.

Cold rain dropped on Liu Yi’s body. Even with his immortal energy, he still felt the chill.

In the middle of the dark sky, a faint thunderclap could be heard from afar.

“Autumn’s thunder.....perhaps, someone is Passing the Calamity.”

Hearing this thunder, Lin Tong admiringly said.

“Oh? Passing the Calamity?”

Hearing this term, Liu Yi could not help but curious, “What is Passing the Calamity?”

“This big miss has told you, immortal cultivation is divided into Mortal Realm, Earthly Realm, and Heavenly Realm, three big stages, right?”

“Yes, I remember, I am currently two star jade, a lower Mortal Realm stage.”

“That’s right, you can still be considered as a novice. But, your third star jade will soon be broken. When you opened your third star jade, you can make a great stride forward toward the middle Mortal Realm.”

Lin Tong was even more envious, “Later on, when you have the

opportunity to enter the Earthly Realm, and reached the upper Earthly Realm (18 star jade), you are essentially the powerhouse that could sweep the world. That Li Biyue (The girl from the Hunter Organization), who seems so powerful, belongs to the Earthly Realm, but she appears to only reach the lower Earthly Realm (around 10-12 star jade)."

"Are these have any relation with Passing the Calamity?"

"Of course, there are!"

Lin Tong emphasized, "Although Earthly Realm cultivator is powerful, in the end, they are still in the 'Human' category. If they want to enter the Heavenly Realm, they must Pass through the Calamity! Only after they succeed in Passing the Calamity, can they become the true 'Immortal'! You look at that immortal fairy Guyu, although she claims to be immortal, she's nothing more than an immortal cultivator. There is a big gap between her and the true immortal!"

"Wow....I also want to Pass the Calamity...."

Liu Yi yearningly said.

Becoming free and unrestrained like an immortal, who doesn't want that....

"Stop dreaming!"

Lin Tong curled her mouth and said, "Passing the Calamity is not an easy matter! Even if you reach the upper Earthly Realm, you still need some artifact to protect your body, and some luck! From the ten thousand people who try to Pass the Calamity, only one person can succeed, and that's because of luck!"

"For f\*ck's sake....one out of ten thousand....this odd, is too cruel!"

"Do you think it would be easy? Passing the Calamity is very dangerous, but many people still want to try it. Because after Passing the Calamity, they can enter the Heavenly Realm and will be able to genuinely pursue the Immortality. Moreover, after becoming Immortal, they will have the ability to move the mountain and shift the ocean! There is more, if they continue to practice until they reach 28 star jade, then....they will become a true God....However, since ancient times, I never heard anybody who was able to

cultivate until 28 star jade....But there should be. Perhaps my knowledge is not enough, after all, this big miss barely enters the world of immortal cultivation....”

While Lin Tong was still talking, Liu Yi secretly thought.

‘Although the odd is low, I still want to Pass the Calamity.’

‘Immortal?’

‘A mortal can do immortal cultivation to go against the heaven.’

‘I must succeed.’

“Boom!”

A big thunder blasted through the air, cutting the night sky in two.

Liu Yi finally landed in front of the Imperial Nightclub.

Initially, Liu Yi wanted to directly enter fair and square.

But to his surprise, Imperial Nightclub was closed for the night!

Several bouncers stood in front of the entrance and blocked the guests who wanted to enter and said.

“Sorry, tonight the Imperial Nightclub has been privately reserved, we are temporarily close. Please come back tomorrow.”

Liu Yi crouched on the roof of the nearby building, slightly frowning.

‘Privately used?’

‘Who is this big spender who reserves all of the Imperial Nightclub for himself?’

‘Is it because Lan He wants to give Ma Wei such an ostentatious treat?’

‘It shouldn’t be, although Lan He is the young master of the Lan Family, he can’t possibly arrange this nightclub for private use, only his father can.’

‘But no matter what, I still need to go in.’

Liu Yi thought for a while, jumped and landed on the ground. Then, taking advantage of the night rain, he walked toward the entrance of the Imperial Nightclub.

“Stop!”

Seeing a man in a black suit with a strange mask walked toward them, the bouncer quickly shouted.

“Who are you!”

“I am from the Black Dragon Gang, looking for young master Lan.”

Liu Yi pretended to say.

“Black Dragon Gang? Take off your mask then. I want to know who you are!”

The bouncer looked at Liu Yi suspiciously.

“You do not want to know.”

Liu Yi thought, ‘looks like my half-cooked plan has failed. Oh well, the hard way it is.’

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 119

## Chapter 119 Knocking At The Door

“Go away. This is not a place where you can pick a quarrel with.”

That bouncer noticed Liu Yi seemed to have an ill intention, looked at his skinny appearance, and can't help but smile, “If you don't want to die, leave, don't bring your craziness here. Even wearing a mask, f\*ck; you think you're the death god aren't you.”

The two bouncers suddenly couldn't help but laugh.

“If you don't make way, I won't be polite anymore.”

Liu Yi clenched his fists.

“Won't be polite? Hahaha, let us how you are going to be impolite to us!”

“This guy, did he run away from a mental hospital? This place is owned by Lan Family, what do you want, do you dare to be so presumptuous? Be careful or the Lan Family will break your legs! The Lan Family is not something to be trifled with!”

The two bouncers at the door suddenly quipped with disdain.

“Lan Family is indeed not something to be trifled with.”

Hearing those two bouncers words, Liu Yi sneered, “But I am also someone you can't afford to provoke.”

“F\*ck, truly a dead seeker!”

“Just hit him!”

Another bouncer pulled out a baton stick from his waist and walked toward Liu Yi.

“On the street, you would dare to raise a hand?”

Liu Yi backed away two steps and asked.

“Hehe, kid, you're asking for this.”

The bouncer carrying the baton said, “Seeking trouble in Lan Family's



place, even if we both beat you to death, you will die in vain. If you don't get lost now, I will give you this suffering."

"Lan Family want to go against the rule? Then I have to give it a try."

'Want to play God in the Northern Dragon City?'

'Even that old fellow Murong Hong I don't give a d\*mn.'

'You want to play with me, then I'll play with you,' Liu Yi said in his heart.

"This is your own death wish!"

The bouncer came in front of Liu Yi and ruthlessly swung the baton toward Liu Yi's head.

But Liu Yi was quicker, while his hands were still in his pockets, he directly lifted one of his foot and kicked that bouncer in the belly.

"Bam!"

The bouncer was kicked and flew out more than one meter away, and then fell to the ground.

The other bouncer was shocked, he could not understand how the thin guy in front of him have so much strength.

But he has withdrawn his baton stick and move to beat Liu Yi in the face.

Pre-emptive strike to gain the upper hand!

"A child's play."

Liu Yi's hands still haven't left his pockets, turned and did a side kick which hit the bouncer in the chest.

The bouncer was kicked to the ground and landed on top of the previous bouncer.

The wound on his shoulder hasn't completely healed yet, so this move made him felt a bit of tearing pain. Liu Yi's mind became clear and bright.

After experiencing many life and death battle tonight, he felt that his strength and awareness have improved a lot.

Just like what Lin Tong said, his third star jade will soon be opened.

At that time, his power will experience a qualitative leap.

When he reach the third star jade, Wang An, and the likes....he will no longer afraid of them.

Moreover, even without the help of Wei Yi, he can do a simple D-level mission by himself.

Liu Yi was full of confident at this moment.

Looking at the two bouncers on the ground, Liu Yi coldly said.

“This is what you’re asking for.”

With that, he went to the Imperial Nightclub entrance, pushed open the luxury door, and entered.

“Report....someone is looking for trouble, dressed in a black suit and a white mask....he also wear a red scarf....need backup....”

The bouncer hastily pulled out the intercom and quickly reported.

“Don’t let him get upstairs....”

“Bang!”

Liu Yi turned around and kicked on the threshold.

The threshold was kicked off, one of its section directly flew and hit the bouncer’s head, which directly knocked him out.

“Has been beaten but still talking nonsense, you deserve to be hit.”

Liu Yi withdrew his foot and said.

At this time, the Imperial Nightclub was a mess.

Receiving the news from the bouncers at the entrance, the other bodyguards, dressed in black uniforms, carrying anti-riot batons in hands, raced toward the entrance.

“That’s him!”

“Dare to make trouble in Imperial Nightclub, courting death!”

These bodyguards took money from the Lan Family to become the Family goons, so everyone of them fiercely came at Liu Yi.

Liu Yi stood in the doorway, without the slightest bit of panic.

He was very different than the previous Liu Yi.

Seeing this scene, he was not afraid at all.

He suddenly lifted his leg high and kicked the bodyguard who was fiercely rushing toward him, kicking the bodyguard to the ground.

“Bam!”

This bodyguard viciously slammed to the floor, blasting the dust off the ground and made other nearby bodyguards startled.

At this moment, the black stream of qi was quietly circulating inside his body.

Although his personality didn't change, his mindset was affected.

“If you don't want to die, scram.”

He coldly said.

“Don't be intimidated by him, go!”

“Kill him!”

These bodyguards, relying on their numbers, continued to pile on Liu Yi.

“You ask for this. It has nothing to do with me.”

Liu Yi shrugged, “I am a peace loving person.”

Then, he stretched out his leg and kicked the bodyguard's body on the ground before him.

That bodyguard's 1.8-meter body continued to roll and immediately hit a few of his companions.

Another bodyguard charged from Liu Yi's left side and was about to strike his cheek with the baton.

Liu Yi stretched out his left arm and blocked this stick.

At the same time, he stepped back, put his hand directly on that bodyguard's head, pushed his head, and viciously slammed the head into the wall.

“Bam!”

That bodyguard was badly beaten, and his body softly slipped to the ground.

Liu Yi patted his left arm to shook off some of the numb and said, “Oh, why bother.”

These bodyguards, if counted, their strength would be at most one star, some might not even reach one star.

A group with the fighting strength of five trashes.

Liu Yi continuously took down the bodyguard in front of him then walked upstairs step by step.

VIP room on the third floor. He clearly remembered his target.

‘Lan He, young master Lan, you wait for me there.’

At this moment, on the fourth floor Office, Lan He’s father, Lan Jiaying and a middle-aged man in a black-and-red coat were talking about something.

Hearing the noise downstairs, the middle-aged man suddenly frowned.

“Mr. Lan, it seems downstairs is quite lively.”

“Oh, it’s all right.”

Lan Jiaying waved, “Someone might cause trouble, my people will handle him.”

“Doesn’t Mr. Lan need to go downstairs to take a look?”

That middle-aged man asked.

“Hehe, rest assured Mr. Long. I have been in this business for quite a long time, occasionally some ignorant people would come to look for trouble. Hear that, it’s quiet now, sounds like they’ve handled him.”

“Since Mr. Lan said so, then let us continue our talk.”

The middle aged man nodded, “Our leader expressed his gratitude for the financing from Mr. Lan. If the project succeeds, he will definitely not forget Mr. Lan.”

“You said these words as if I am an outsider. We are all people of the Great

God.”

Lan Jiaying chuckled, “However, when will I be able to meet with the leader, so that I can learn the method to immortality that was bestowed by the Great God?”

“Don’t worry, no need to be anxious.”

The middle-aged man laughed, “At that time, even if the leader doesn’t have the time, he will dispatch the Law Protector to bestow that method to Mr. Lan. The Great God Religion can grow to today’s scale is inseparable from the help of Mr. Lan. Our leader is thankful for Mr. Lan from the bottom of his heart.”

“In order for the Great God to recover, this is just my meager contribution to the Great God Religion.”

“Hehe....then let us talk about that contribution thing....”

“Good, Mr. Long, please....”

On the fourth floor, the two people continued to talk about the transaction, while on the third floor, Lin Huayang and Lan He, without knowing that Liu Yi was coming at them, impatiently waiting at the VIP room.

“F\*ck, this Ma Wei since he was elected as the Hall Leader, is getting more and more arrogant.”

Lan He complained, “We have been waiting for him for quite a while, and he still hasn’t come.”

“Yeah, I am getting sleepy already.”

Lin Huayang yawned.

But, thinking that Liu Yi has been settled, his mind was nonetheless jubilant.

The unsightly guy was finally removed!

When Lan He was about to phone Ma Wei to urge him to come fast, someone suddenly knocked their VIP room door.

“It’s probably him.”

“I’ll go open the door.”

Lin Huayang stood up, walked to the door, and opened the room door.

“Brother Ma, why did you make us wait this long....”

The man before Lin Huayang was not Ma Wei of the Black Dragon Gang, but a man in a black suit and white mask.

Simultaneously, that man lifted his foot.

“Pow!”

That foot directly kicked him in the chest. Like a broken kite, Lin Huayang’s body flew out and finally landed on the sofa near Lan He’s side, and then his mouth started to foam.

Liu Yi was surprised for a moment, he thought his foot would land on Lan He, but he didn’t expect this scum Lin Huayang was here too.

It seemed, the kidnapping of Wang Yuzheng and the subsequent threat against him was also related to this guy.

‘Just in time then, I can deal with them at the same time.’

“Who, who are you!”

Seeing Lin Huayang was kicked out so far and fell to vomit at his side, Lan He’s whole body suddenly shivered.

“Your killer.”

Liu Yi walked into the private room.

“Don’t, don’t come here!”

Lan He was trembling with fear, the previous aura of young master was completely gone.

“This is Lan Family’s place....as long as I shouted a voice, my people will immediately take you out!”

“Okay, let me help you with that.”

Liu Yi smiled then shouted twice.

“Help, your young master Lan are going to be killed!”

But after a long time, nobody came.

Lan He's face instantly pale.

"You understand your situation now, right?"

Liu Yi clapped and exclaimed, "Yes, except for the crazy, all of the bodyguards in this building have been settled by me."

"You, what do you want....If you want money....I, I can give you!"

Lan He hastily said, "How much money do you want, tell me....money is just a trivial matter, but you better calm down and don't hurt me. Otherwise, you can't imagine our Lan Family's power. Even if you flee, we will not let you off."

"Hehe, it seems our young master Lan is very rich."

Liu Yi jokingly looked at Lan He and sneered, "Since our young master Lan is so rich, why not use it for the common cause instead of hoarding the illicit money for yourself? Money is indeed a splendid thing. But alas, it seems young master Lan can't use it in this room...."

"You, you're not looking for money?"

Lan He vaguely felt that something was not right.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 120

## Chapter 120 I Am Long Yang

“Money? Of course, I want that. But I don’t want your Lan Family’s money.”

Liu Yi curled his lips and said, “I suspect your Lan Family’s money is too dirty.”

“Then, what do you want....”

Since the other side didn’t want his money, Lan He lost his self-confident.

“Do you think I came here to settle the score with your family?”

Liu Yi sneered, “I am the devil who crawled out of Hell to settle your account.”

“Account? What account...”

“Young master Lan, perhaps you don’t know this, on the King of Hell, there’s a book which record all the wicked things that were done by all of the living people.”, Liu Yi said, and gestured with his hands, “You, young master Lan, is too much, the part of the book which record your conduct is so thick like this. The King of Hell is unhappy, because if this continue, he will run out of paper to write. Therefore, the King of Hell send me to teach you a lesson, making you know that there’s a retribution for doing bad things.”

“You, you have got to be kidding me....”

Lan He’s body slightly trembled, feeling like he was in a dream.

‘King of Hell? Record book?’

‘How could there be such nonsense things.’

“Kidding? Young master Lan, don’t you know that the God is always watching over you?”

Liu Yi thought, ‘yes, except when you are masturbating, no god would want to watch you.’



‘Unless you do bad things....’

“When you did something bad, don’t assume that nobody knows, and no one can punish you. Today, your retribution is coming after you.”

With that, Liu Yi walked toward Lan He. With every step that he took, Lan He’s heart was pounding faster and faster.”

“Don’t come! You can’t touch me. Otherwise, you will die miserably!”

“Relying on your Lan Family again?”

Liu Yi curled his lips, “To tell you the truth, I don’t give a d\*mn about your Lan Family.”

After provoking Murong Hong, how could he be afraid of Lan Family?

Moreover, with the mask covering his face, he was not afraid of creating trouble.

Sometimes, it was very useful to have another identity.

“That’s because you don’t know our Lan Family’s power!”

Lan He said, “Touching me will bring you a lot of trouble....However, if you want anything, just say it! Money, women....”

“Since when your Lan Family become the King?”

Liu Yi deeply sighed, “If I forgive you, I’m afraid the King of Hell will not forgive me.”

With that, Liu Yi extended his hand toward Lan He.

Lan He was scared sh\*tless. Since the man in front of him was able to defeat all of her Family’s bodyguards, how could he stand a chance!’

Suddenly his eyes landed on the nearby spray, his hand subconsciously picked that bottle of spray and then sprayed it on Liu Yi.

Blue smoke suddenly appeared on Liu Yi’s face, which he accidentally inhaled, making him coughed twice and felt unbearably choked.

Meanwhile, a strange feeling numbed Liu Yi’s nerves, making him suddenly felt lustful to the lovable Lan He in front of him.

‘Holy sh\*t....’

‘What is going on here?’

‘This spray....have the similar effect with my Amorous Ripple Hand?’

Liu Yi quickly activated his Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra and circulated the immortal energy inside his body to disperse the spray from his body.

“You are dead!”

Seeing the result of the spray, Lan He suddenly overjoyed and, without caring for Lin Huayang, lifted his buttocks to leave the room.

But Liu Yi waved his hand to disperse the smoke while simultaneously made two breathing technique and quickly adjusted his state.

“Did I tell you to leave?”

Liu Yi threw an ice bomb which fell on Lan He’s feet.

“Bam!”

The floor immediately covered with ice and freeze Lan He’s feet on the ground.

“What is this!”

Lan He discovered that both of his legs were frozen to the ground, and exclaimed in horror, “Help me!”

“Even if you shout until your throat is sore, no one is going to come and save you.”

Liu Yi suddenly felt that his words were quite evil.

‘Forget it, now is not the time to care about this thing.’

“No, don’t kill me....”

Lan He’s eyes were panicked stricken.

He didn’t want to die....

He was still young, and great future was waiting for him!

He also wanted to pursue Murong Die, and then acquire the Murong Family’s assets.

“Letting you die....is too good for you.”

Liu Yi said, picking up the fruit knife on the table, and then arrived at Lan He's side.

"I heard you like to play Basketball, and is a member of the City's youth reserve team."

Liu Yi played the fruit knife in front of him and said with a smile.

"You, what are you going to do...."

Lan He's heart suddenly twitched a bit.

"Nothing, I just thought that people like do not deserve to play Basketball."

Liu Yi said, reached out his left hand, grabbed Lan He's wrist, and put the fruit knife on his little finger.

"No, don't do that!"

Feeling the tip of the knife, Lan He didn't dare to move carelessly. Instead, he desperately begged.

"I can't live without my finger....absolutely can't...."

Lan He has two great hobbies in his life.

One is to play with women, and the other is playing Basketball.

If he lost his finger....His Basketball career would be over.

"You can't cut my finger....you will ruin my life...."

"Oh? Ruin your life?"

Liu Yi raised his head and looked at Lan He in the eye, "Then, young master Lan, have you ever thought about all the other people's lives that have been ruined by you?"

"How could you compare their lives with me...."

Lan He subconsciously said, "I am Lan He....the young master of Lan Family."

"But in my eyes, you are nothing."

Liu Yi's voice was very cold, and he was about to cut Lan He's finger.

But at this time, Liu Yi suddenly felt an intense sense of threat coming from

behind him.

He subconsciously turned and dodged to the side.

A blood-red arrow passed through the space between him and Lan He and then slammed the wall behind them.

Suddenly, the wall blackened and a hole appeared on it.

“Hehe, at Lan Family’s place, you actually tried to make a move against young master Lan. Hehe, you underestimate the Lan Family too much.”

At the entrance of the room, a middle-aged man in a red-and-black coat smiled and said to Liu Yi.

Although the middle-aged man was smiling, Liu Yi can’t force himself to smile.

Instead, there’s a terrible threat coming from him, which brushed up against Liu Yi’s gut.

But this was not what made Liu Yi shocked.

What shocked him the most was, the deformed baby who was sitting on the man’s shoulder.

The baby’s body was partly visible. It has three eyes. Its upper body was lying on the man’s shoulder while its lower body seemed to be snake-shaped, which wrapped around the man’s neck.

“Ghost Baby! Cult of the great God!”

“Hey? You actually know about our Great God Religion?”

The middle-aged man’s face changed its color, “It appears that I can’t let you off. Today, you have to die here.”

Liu Yi never thought that this Lan Family actually has a connection with the cult of the great god!’

“Haha, someone is here to help me! It’s my dad’s partner!”

Lan He has a vague impression of this middle-aged man. According to what his father’s said, the man should be a fierce expert!

His heart suddenly settled down, while simultaneously waiting for the

man who has previously humiliated him to die.

“Young master Lan rests assured, I will help you kill him.”

That middle-aged man smiled with confidence.

“I, Long Yang, is not an ordinary follower, but a true priest of the Great God. Since he has provoked me, his only result is to die.”

“Oh my god....”

Hearing the cult priest’s name, Liu Yi almost spurted out blood.

“You are Long Yang? So, you are a gay....” (TL: Long Yang is slang for gay in China) “I am not a gay!”

That Long Yang suddenly flew into a rage, “Boy stop talking nonsense!”

“Then why are you called Long Yang?”

“How would I know!”

“Okay, okay, you don’t need to deny it, don’t worry, I do not discriminate against gay.”

“That’s more like it....F\*ck! I told you, this father is not gay! This father is Long Yang!”

“Then what does that mean?”

“You must die!”

“Trying to change the topic, I am tired of you, Long Yang.”

“I already told you, this father is not Long Yang, this father is gay....Motherf\*cker! I am going to kill you!”

Long Yang was completely exploded.

The ghost baby on his shoulder suddenly cried out loud, and its mouth swelled up.

“Silly kid be careful, this man has three-eyed ghost baby....its strength is three stars, you need to pay more attention!”

“D\*mn, why recently I always bump into three stars bosses!”

Liu Yi suddenly couldn’t help but cursed in his heart, “Every day I go out, I

stepped into dog feces (Out of luck)....”

“Puff puff puff!”

Before he could continue his complained, the ghost baby’s mouth, like a machine gun, barreled out three blood arrows straight at Liu Yi.

“F\*ck! Why there are so much blood!”

Liu Yi moved with the Spirit Fox Steps and activated the forces in his body.

The world in front of him once again turned into two colors, black and white, and everything slowed down.

This ability came from his Demonic energy, although Liu Yi always thought it was from his Immortal energy.

In Lin Tong’s eyes, the world almost turned completely black and white.

Being a Demon race is hard.

They were all incomplete. Therefore, they diligently cultivated.

But they have unique abilities, which are, faster reaction time so that they are more sensitive, and the innate fighting talent.

The three blood-arrows were so fast.

But in Liu Yi’s eyes, they have been slowed down and were clearly visible.

Liu Yi used his Spirit Fox Steps to moved his body and flexibly dodged the fast incoming blood-arrows.

“How is that....you can actually get away from my blood-arrow!”

Long Yang was surprised, he did not expect his opponent, who seemed like a kid with mediocre skill, to have such a reaction speed.

‘His strength....seemed to be so-so!’

“Now freeze for me!”

Taking advantage when Long Yang was still surprised, Liu Yi condensed out an ice bomb and threw it at the opposite party.

“Puff!”

But the ghost baby on his shoulder automatically spat out a blood-arrow,

which shattered and blasted his ice bomb, creating a large track of icy fog in the air.

‘The f\*ck....’

‘That ghost baby also has an automatic defense!’

But Liu Yi did not hesitate, the moment the ice bomb exploded and created the icy fog, he leaped up onto the ceiling and condensed out layers of frost from all his limbs, making his hands and feet stuck on them.

When the icy fog dispersed, Long Yang discovered that, in front of him, there was only Lan He, who was still frozen on the ground.

“Young master Lan, where is he?”

Long Yang subconsciously asked.

“I don’t know either ....just now, he suddenly went behind me....”

He’s feet were frozen solid, his whole body tingled with numbness, and it was pretty hard for him to turn his head around.

“I don’t believe he can evaporate out of this room!”

Long Yang suddenly entered the room and looked up.

A half-meter long cone-shaped ice quickly fell toward him.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 121

## Chapter 121 Long Yang's Transformation

"Cunning, but it's just a small trick!"

Long Yang did not feel surprised. Instead, he sneered.

Then, the ghost baby on his shoulder sent out a sad and shrill cry, A transparent blast instantly spread out, and the cone-shaped ice that was falling toward Long Yang's head smashed into smithereens by the shockwave.

Liu Yi wrinkled his brows.

This Long Yang was indeed more powerful than the Great God follower that he previously encountered.

The power of the three-eyed ghost baby was not weak! Its voice was also a lot more powerful than a Dolphin!

All of the bottles and jars in the room were also shattered by the shock wave.

The layer of ice that covered Lan He's feet started to crack.

'Really powerful....'

'This is indeed the power of the third star.'

"You see, this is the gap between our power."

Long Yang said as his hand touched the ghost baby on his shoulder, letting the baby bit his finger and sucked his blood.

"Fox sister....Is there any method to defeat him...."

Liu Yi came down from the ceiling and nervously looked at Long Yang who stood opposite of him, somewhat did not know what to do.

He cannot hit from afar, but it was also seemingly dangerous if he attacked from close range....

"Yes, there is a way, and it is a very powerful method."



“What method?”

“Run!”

Lin Tong gave her best suggestion.

“I am not going to run!”

Liu Yi refused to budge and protested, “Today, Lan He must be punished....Moreover, that Great God follower is too ruthless. I simply can’t leave!”

“Fool....if you don’t run, can you defeat him?”

“Even if I can’t beat him, I have to try!”

While thinking about how to deal with Long Yang, the forces inside Liu Yi’s body continued to circulate.

“I have very important things to talk about, and have no time to play with you, therefore, be a darling and die, let the power of the Great God wash your soul.”

Long Yang said, and activated his ghost baby.

The three-eyed ghost baby opened its mouth and, puff puff puff, continued to eject the red colored blood-arrows toward Liu Yi.

The world before Liu Yi slowed down and he dodged those blood-arrows.

Luckily his power has been upgraded just before this. Otherwise, these blazing fast blood-arrows might end up taking Liu Yi’s life.

The room was constantly bombarded by the blood-arrows, its walls were scarred, leaving holes everywhere.

But that Long Yang avoided Lan He and the still fainted Lin Huayang. Otherwise, these two fellows would quickly turn into pools of blood.

“Crafty little bug, are you going to continue to evade?”

After a while, Long Yang became somewhat impatient.

His blood-arrows have hit almost the entire room, but he still can’t touch that d\*mn Liu Yi.

“Being abused in the ass too many times have made your eyes blurred and

can't properly aim, aren't you, gay brother!"

While dodging to the side, Liu Yi did not forget to openly mock Long Yang.

If he could provoke this man, letting him out of his mind, then he might have a change on defeating him!

"D\*mn! You really are tired of living!"

Long Yang trembled with anger, his eyes almost bulged out of its socket.

He suddenly held his palms together and appeared to perform some kind of technique.

The three-eyed ghost baby on his shoulder suddenly went missing, making Liu Yi jumped in scare.

'Where is that three-eyed ghost baby?'

'This doesn't look like a joke....'

'Does Long Yang intend to discard his ghost baby to fight hand to hand with me?'

'It shouldn't be....'

'He should not have such a heavy taste....'

When Liu Yi was still in doubt, Lin Tong suddenly cried out loud.

"Liu Yi, watch your right shoulder!"

Liu Yi's heart panicked and turned to look at his right shoulder.

At this time, he discovered that the missing three-eyed ghost baby, without knowing when, has wrapped his waist with its snake-shaped lower body, while its upper body was on top of his right shoulder and then it fiercely bit his shoulder!

Liu Yi's shoulder was hurt!

This made Liu Yi's vision turned dark, his body directly trembled, and partly knelt on the ground.

After the three-eyed ghost baby had bitten Liu Yi on the shoulder, it cackled a laugh, and then flew back to Long Yang's side.

“Hahaha! You have been bitten by my precious, the toxin has entered your body, now you don’t even have the strength to stand up!

Seeing that he finally was able to put Liu Yi down, Long Yang couldn’t help but laugh and said, “Don’t you like to dodge? How are you going to dodge now?”

With that, the three-eyed ghost baby shot two blood-arrows at Liu Yi’s left arm which was supporting his body.

Liu Yi’s arm was hit and can no longer support him, making him fell on the floor.

‘F\*ck....’

Liu Yi’s mind was murky and then became dark.

‘Am I....going to die here....’

‘No....How could I “game over” just like this....I am not willing....’

“Uncle Long, you, you’re awesome!”

Seeing the man who threatened him has been taken down, Lan He was pleasantly surprised and exclaimed.

“Hehe, rest assured young master Lan, there’s no danger anymore.”

Long Yang came over to Liu Yi, “Let me see what kind of face hidden beneath that mask.”

With that, he extended his hand toward Liu Yi’s mask.

At this time, Liu Yi, while still lying down on the floor, suddenly sent a cold voice from behind the mask.

“I urge you....best not to touch it. I am a normal person, and don’t have your hobby.”

“F\*ck, still fooling around aren’t you! It looks like I should let the God heavily punish you!”

Long Yang said, the three-eyed Ghost baby on his shoulder started to collect blood on its mouth, ready to give Liu Yi a deadly attack.

At this time, Liu Yi’s body, who was initially on the ground, suddenly burst

out a huge force.

“Hoo!”

The Demonic qi blasted out and directly impacted Long Yang’s body, hitting him back two steps.

“What....is this....”

Liu Yi’s injuries quickly healed.

His hair turned into silver-white long hair, and his entire attire also changed.

Soon, he stood up from the ground, stretching out his limbs and body, and said.

“This guy was too careless....he actually got so many injuries, tsk tsk....wasting a lot of my power to fix it....”

“Demon energy....it’s actually Demon energy!”

Looking at his opponent who appeared to suddenly become a new person, Long Yang stared with disbelief.

“Well, you’re actually quite knowledgeable, it’s a shame you have a small issue regarding your sexual orientation, what a pity.”

Liu Yi re-wound the red scarf around his neck and then made a hook gesture with his finger toward Long Yang.

“Come on. I will play with you.”

Lin Tong lay on Liu Yi’s shoulder and opened her Eyes of Star Jade.

She watched in horror as the star jade inside his body has completely changed.

Of the twenty-eight star jade, three of them have been brightly lit.

But the entire immortal universe chart has a shade of red mixed with black.

Obviously....this was the result of the other Liu Yi who secretly cultivated the Red Blood Sutra Code!

Three Star-Jade!

The other Liu Yi had secretly awakened the third star jade!

But because his other personality did not awake until now, this has no effect on Liu Yi's strength!

Liu Yi's body....was simply too weird!

"Humph, overestimating one's capability!"

Long Yang coldly snorted, "Even if you have the strange Demonic energy that healed your injuries, you are still not my opponent! I will destroy your body once again!"

With that, Long Yang clasped his palms again and launched the teleport spell on the three-eyed ghost baby.

"Tsk tsk, Long Yang, you definitely seldom watch anime."

Liu Yi calmly stood there as if nothing happened, and faintly smiled, "So you certainly don't know, the same tactic can't be used twice on the protagonist..."

With that, he suddenly pulled out his right hand from his trouser pocket and directly grabbed and squeezed the struggling three-eyed ghost baby out of thin air.

"What!"

Long Yang was shocked. He didn't understand how Liu Yi could discover his three-eyed ghost baby.

"The same trick is useless toward the Saint Seiya!"

"Alas....you're actually not bad, such a shame....."

Liu Yi smiled while still holding the ghost baby in his hand, "Pray for your pet."

With that, Liu Yi's entire right hand became red like a devil's hand, and red stripe covered his whole hand.

That three-eyed ghost baby was instantly burned with the crimson-colored flame, screaming again and again.

"Not good!"

Long Yang's face paled, he quickly grabbed an empty space and directly withdrew his three-eyed ghost baby with his technique.

He told his three-eyed ghost baby to spew out a blood-arrow to extinguish the flame on its body.

But the three-eyed ghost baby was dying at this time. Long Yang was in distressed, bit his finger and let the ghost baby sucked his blood to replenish its strength.

"Such an evil way to feed it."

Liu Yi can't help but quip, "Man's most precious essence is his blood, but you used it to feed this evil thing. It seems you are doomed to die a miserable death."

"D\*mn you!"

Long Yang's eyes were red, "I've worked hard to cultivate this three-eyed ghost baby, but nearly wasted by you! I Long Yang, want you dead here, Great God will kick you to hell today!"

"I hope your Great God doesn't have athlete's foot."

Liu Yi shrugged indifferently.

"Aaa! Courting death! Ghost Body!"

Long Yang suddenly opened his mouth and stuffed the ghost baby into his mouth.

Seeing this scene, Lan He can't hold back anymore and directly threw up.

Liu Yi, fortunately, knew that this ghost baby was a spiritual body, so he didn't have such a big reaction like Lan He.

As Long Yang swallowed the ghost baby, his body slightly changed.

His pale and wrinkled forehead suddenly split out three openings and showed out three bloodshot eyes!

"He actually let the ghost baby possessed his body..."

Lin Tong shivered a bit.

"This guy....is so sick...."

“What else would he be called other than Long Yang, he’s fond of another man’s body.”

Liu Yi remained indifferent as if the one who stood before him was not a formidable enemy but a cute little baby.

“We...are not going to escape?”

Lin Tong asked.

“Running away is not my style.”

Liu Yi said, standing there while making a hooking gesture with his finger toward Long Yang, “Come on, Long Yang, let me see your progress after that transformation.

“You....die....”

Long Yang’s three eyeballs on the forehead fully stared at him, looking very scary.

He opened his mouth and spurted out blood-arrows, which were heavier, larger, and more powerful.

“Puff puff puff!”

The blood-arrows pierced several holes on the wall, but Liu Yi had actually dodged with a simple stroll.

“I thought you would have something new....but you still use the same old tactic.”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 122

## Chapter 122 Flesh Pain

Liu Yi curled his lips, indicating his disdain toward Long Yang.

“Do not underestimate me!”

Long Yang said and spat out some blood-arrows at Liu Yi’s feet.

Suddenly, the floor under Liu Yi’s feet corroded, making Liu Yi almost fell to the ground.

He immediately jumped to the side as he looked at the piece of floor falling down.

“Tsk tsk....biological weapon....”

Liu Yi sighed with emotion.

“Puff puff!”

Long Yang continued to spray blood-arrows at Liu Yi.

This blood-arrow was more powerful and extremely corrosive. Liu Yi continued to dodge around while simultaneously snapped his fingers toward Long Yang.

“I can’t just let you take all the fun....I will also send you a gift....Flaming Shot....hmm, this name is very evil.”

“Boom!”

Along with the sound of Liu Yi snapping his fingers, a meter thick column of flame erupted out from beneath Long Yang’s body, and directly attacked his body.

“Aaa!”

Long Yang’s whole body was covered with fire, the man turned into a burned man. With endless screamed of pain and struggle, he finally rolled around on the floor.

“Hey, I did not expect you could survive this long.”



Liu Yi clapped his hands, "If you roll again, you'll extinguish all the flame."

With that, he unleashed a chain of fire, wrapped it around Long Yang's body and hook it into the ceiling.

Long Yang continued to struggle but was restrained by the fire chain.

If he were not a cultivator, he would already dead.

"Great God Religion...will not let you off...."

Long Yang roared.

"Then let them come after me, but remember to make an appointment, otherwise, all my time will be set aside for beautiful women."

Liu Yi did not care the threat of Long Yang.

"Even if I die....I will not let you off!"

Long Yang suddenly roared, a huge yin qi burst out of Long Yang's body.

This huge yin qi continued to condense and finally broke the fire chain.

A huge black skull, almost as large as half the room, tried to swallow Liu Yi.

"Already at the death's door but you're still such a disgusting person...."

Liu Yi sighed, a powerful flame burst out from his left palm as he welcomed the huge black skull with this palm.

"Mountain Mist!"

"Boom!"

A huge palm print, as high as a man, emerged out in front of Liu Yi.

"This is....the third palm strike of the Great Brilliant Sun Palm...."

Lin Tong was surprised in amazement.

Truly speaking, the third palm strike of the Great Brilliant Sun Palm can only be trained by a fourth star cultivator!

But the Liu Yi before her....completely defied all the common sense!

Lin Tong felt that her head was completely thrown into confusion....

'Master, quickly tell me....what the hell is going on with this....'

“Au au....”

The huge skeleton was unwilling and roared twice as it, under the might of Liu Yi's third Great Brilliant Sun Palm palm strike, reduced to ashes and dissipated from the middle of the room.

“Finally settled.”

Liu Yi clapped his hands, and said, “I have wiped your ass, if I stay out any longer, the beautiful immortal fairy will find me for sure, I'll leave the rest to you.”

With that, the silver long hair began to fade, and Liu Yi soon returned to his original form.

Liu Yi's original personality reawakened, stood there while leaning on the wall, gasping for breath.

Whenever his other personality awakened....it consumed a lot of his strength.

Although Long Yang has been successfully resolved, he was uncomfortable about it.

‘Is the other me always going to be better than me?’

‘Being looked down upon by my own self....this feeling is so weird.’

‘Grandpa said....everyone hid a small monster in their heart....’

“Young master Lan, that eyesore has gone now, it is time to talk about our matter.”

Liu Yi put the discussion about his little monster to the back of his mind, he still has some pressing issue to handle.

“No....do not come here....devil....you are the devil....”

Lan He was so scared that he wet his pants, the two people's fight that he saw just a moment ago was completely beyond his imagination.

‘His mother....’

‘Are they still human....’

‘What's more, Uncle Long was so powerful....but this man actually able to

defeat him....’

“Don’t hurt me...whatever you want, I will give it to you....”

Lan He begged.

“I only want one thing.”

Liu Yi arrived in front of Lan He and said.

“What is it, just tell me!”

Lan He’s heart was excited.

‘As long as I am able to buy this guy!’

‘I thought he is already otherworldly, but he actually still has a desire!’

‘As long as I can escape this time....With Lan Family’s power, we will find this person and kill him....no problem....’

“What I want is very simple.”

“Tell me!”

“It’s your finger.”

Liu Yi said and, without giving Lan He any other choice, took the fruit knife then directly cut Lan He’s right little finger.

“Aaa! My finger....my finger....”

Lan He pitifully screamed as the blood gushing out of the root of his lost little finger and covered his hand.

If this continued, he would die for sure.

So, Liu Yi smoothly covered the wound with a layer of frost. Although this stopped the flow of blood, it also froze to death the blood vessels and flesh around the wound. Even an excellent medical team would not be able to reattach Lan He’s little finger anymore.

“Seems like cutting your finger is not enough....”

Liu Yi looked around the room and noticed Lin Huayang, who was about to awake. He suddenly had an idea.

He picked up Lan He’s spray which was dropped on the ground and

spurted the lying on the sofa Lin Huayang.

Then he pulled Lan He from the frost that bound him on the floor and threw him on the sofa.

While Lan He was still feeling an extreme pain, he vaguely saw Lin Huayang crawled toward him, and he immediately shouted in horror.

“Don’t....don’t come here....”

“The other people seems to be interested in you, why would you resist it?”

Liu Yi smiled, shook that bottle of spray, aimed it at Lan He’s face, and sprayed it.

The spray filled the entire room, and Lan He instantly quieted down. His finger pain also disappeared.

“I won’t disturb the two of you, enjoy it.”

Liu Yi said, walking out the room and closed the door.

“Kilk,” the door automatically locked itself. In this VIP room, the doors are automatic.

As for what happened inside the room, he did not care it anymore.

Lin Huayang woke up in a daze and suddenly found Wang Yuzheng was lying on the sofa, his blood boiled (excited) immediately.

He felt his lower part seemed to respond this time, making him wild with joy.

‘This beauty ....finally arrives in my palm....’

Lin Huayang came up, ripped off his “dream girl’s” clothes, and vented all his pent up desire.

After dreaming it for a long time....today, it finally happened....

Especially because his lower body returned to normal again, although it was a bit small, it was enough to satisfy Lin Huayang.

After he vented it twice, he finally tired, and lie on top of the sleeping “Wang Yuzheng.”

‘This beauty is tight....but her chest is quite small....’

After he had fallen asleep, a pounding sound came from the room door.

Lin Huayang got up with bleary eyes and angrily shouted.

“D\*mn, who disturb this father’s sleep....”

“Lan He, Lan He are you in there?”

A middle-aged man roared from the outside.

Lin Huayang suddenly remembered that he and Lan He was inside a VIP Karaoke room....

He was going to open the door, but everything that just happened....he didn’t remember it.

He looked down and saw that he did not wear any pants.

And Lan He’s upturned buttocks were lying underneath him.

‘Holly sh\*t!’

Lin Huayang was so frightened that he almost peed himself.

‘What the f\*ck is happening here....’

‘What did I do....just now....’

Lin Huayang’s eyes suddenly caught the spray, which was lying nearby, and suddenly seemed to understand what was going on.

“Lan He! If you’re in there, come out!”

The shouting from the outside was getting louder.

Lin Huayang was terrified, but he can’t afford to be timid.

Very quickly he put on his clothes, then put Lan He’s pants and clothes back regardless of how torn they were from their previous sexual activity. He then closed his eyes and continued to pretend to sleep.

At this time, the room door crashed open with a loud sound.

Lan Jiaying took several bodyguards and burst into the room.

When he saw Lan He motionlessly lying there, he was suddenly frightened and quickly rushed over.

“My son, my son....”

“Dad....”

Lan He woke up confused, turned around and gaze the shouting Lan Jiaying.

“My son, you’re alive, that’s great....”

Lan Jiaying cried.

This is his only son....

Just now he heard him screaming, so he let Long Yang downstairs looking for him.

After a long time, Long Yang never came back.

“Son, where is your uncle Long?”

After seeing Lan He was alive and well, Lan Jiaying felt relieved. Therefore, he was now concerned about the whereabouts of Long Yang.

“Dad....Uncle, uncle Long is dead....”

Lan He suddenly remembered the previous scene and instantly pale.

“My, my finger....was also cut off....”

“What!”

Seeing what was left of his son’s right little finger, Lan Jiaying was surprised and angry at the same time.

He was surprised that Long Yang has died and angry that his son’s little finger was cut off.

What kind of person....who was able to do this!

Long Yang’s power....he, more or less, knew some of it....

‘No, I have to report this to the Great God cult, so they will personally deal with it!’

‘I can’t let someone get away with cutting off my son’s finger!’

“Son, did you see his face?”

“No...he wore a mask....”

Lan He shook his head, remembering that person’s appearance, his eyes

were panicked stricken.

“It’s all right....Dad will find a way to avenge you....”

Lan Jiaying secretly clenched his fists.

“Dad....I’m feeling really hurt....”

“What, son, where is the pain?”

Lan Jiaying jumped out of his skin, fearing the man has done something evil to his son.

“My butt is hurt....”

Lan He held his buttocks and said as he grimaced in pain, “I don’t know why it’s so painful....”

Lin Huayang, who was pretending to be unconscious to the side, listened with horror....

‘Mom....I hope Lan He does not remember what just happened....’

‘It was a nightmare....’

Lin Huayang felt his lower part was even more withered.... ‘I, could actually do that thing to a man....’

‘My God....’

Lin Huayang suddenly had an impulse to die....

‘Who is the man who harmed us....’

‘If I know, I will make him die miserably!’

# Chapter 123 Playing With Cell Phone

Over the next several days, Liu Yi passed his days in quiet and comfortable.

In the past, this quiet and comfortable life were basically how he spent his life.

But now, it felt like a luxury instead.

Murong Die and Wang Lele still have not come to school, the two seats behind him were still empty. As if something was missing, Liu Yi felt inexplicably sad.

Liu Yi also never talk to Wang Yuzheng in class. This girl is natural born study freak.

He knew the situation in Wang Yuzheng's home and also worried for her. However, the matter of King of Medicine Valley can't be easily solved. Based on his present strength, if he wanted to go to the King of Medicine Valley to seek the cure there....Perhaps it would be harder than reaching for the stars.

Recently, he also can't find an appropriate mission. Wei Yi did not even try to contact him. So, Liu Yi took a break from the mission these several days.

"There is still a bit of time...."

When Liu Yi left his spiritual environment, Lin Tong gently jumped on his shoulder and opened her mouth to say, "And then you can open the third star jade...."

'By that time....I can leave you.....'

But Lin Tong never said those words, only silently said it in her heart.

Although this was her plan from the very beginning....

But in the end....when she think about it, she felt something was not right....

Sure enough, after being in a relation with a human for a long time,



everything will become complicated....

‘Demon relationship is better....’ Lin Tong thought.

‘Good is good, bad is bad, and never had to intentionally hide their feelings.’

Lin Tong thought that compared to a Demon, she was becoming more and more like a human girl.

“This....is this a good sign?”

“I will try hard!”

Liu Yi clenched his fists, “Fox sister, do not worry, as soon as I can, I will open the third star jade and liberate you!”

Although Lin Tong did not bring up this matter, Liu Yi still remember.

“So....you really want me to leave?”

Lin Tong could not help but ask.

“Doesn’t Fox sister want to be free?”

Liu Yi blinked his eyes as he looked at the little Fox who lie on his shoulder and said, “I can’t let Fox sister locked up in my hand forever....”

“There’s a way....by becoming a trans.”

Lin Tong suddenly murmured.

“What?”

Liu Yi didn’t hear what she said. Lin Tong’s voice was too small.

“It’s nothing, go check if there’s new mission. You haven’t had an actual combat for several days, and you need to get more experience.”

Lin Tong quickly changed the subject.

“All right.”

Liu Yi nodded his head. After spending several days in leisure, Liu Yi was looking forward to the next excitement.

He sat down in front of his computer and was about to turn it on when his cell phone suddenly rang.

‘It’s already late, who is playing with me?’

When he picked up the phone, Liu Yi was surprised to find that it was from Wang Lele.

‘This girl has been gone for several days, why would she call me at this time?’

“Liu Yi gege...”

The girl on the phone seemed to be crying.

“Wang Lele? What’s wrong, what happened to you?”

Hearing Wang Lele’s crying voice, Liu Yi’s heart immediately tightened.

“Liu Yi gege....you have to save sis’ Die as soon as possible....”

“Murong Die? What happened to her, she had an accident?”

“She, is being kept in her room by Uncle....can’t get out....”

” Wang Lele cried, “I am the only one who is allowed to spend time with her....Sis’ Die’s face is not very good, she doesn’t want to eat anything....I’m afraid if this goes on, sis’ Die will take things too hard....”

“Oh, no....”

Liu Yi was shocked, ‘Murong Die is actually held inside her room by that old man Murong hong?’

‘That’s why she can’t go to school these several days?’

“Liu Yi gege....I don’t know what to do....You have to save sis’ Die, ok....You must have a way, right?”

“I....will try my best....”

To be honest, Liu Yi didn’t know what to do.

Murong Die was trapped in her room, did he have to tell the police that Murong Hong restricted other people’s personal freedom?

The police would think he’s crazy.

“Go and see her.”

Lin Tong said, “Perhaps....the person that needs to be hurriedly freed by

you is not me, but her....”

“Liu Yi gege....please....you have to help sis’ Die, Lele....Lele will work extremely hard (TL: originally “Will work like an ox/cow”)....”

Cold sweat....

Hearing Wang Lele’s words on the phone, Liu Yi can’t help but have some evil thoughts.

‘Work like a cow....’

‘Working on your cow milk....’

“Lele don’t worry, I’ll figure it out.”

“I knew Liu Yi gege is the best....”

Wang Lele’s voice on the phone suddenly turned coy.

“Also....I, I now know what chest, chest push really means....If Liu Yi gege want it....I, I wouldn’t mind....”

Liu Yi was tempted to spurt out blood from his nose.

‘It’s finally happening?’

“I can also....spend money so that Liu Yi gege can go to some high-class place to find some people to do it....”

Puff!

Liu Yi’s old blood almost sprayed on the phone.

‘Wang Lele, your sister!’

“Alright, alright, don’t say these things anymore. I want to figure out what to do.”

“Hehe, then I will wait for Liu Yi gege’s good news!”

Wang Lele soon burst out laughing, her pleading voice completely disappeared.

‘Shoot, this girl’s emotional shift is too rapid, faster than switching a channel on television!’

“I gotta go now, bye!”

Hearing the sound of footstep from the outside, Wang Lele hastily hung up the phone.

“Lele, why are you in the bathroom for so long!”

Someone knocked the door, followed by Murong Die’s voice.

“My stomach hurts!”

Wang Lele quickly put away the phone, erased the smile on her mouth, and walked out of the bathroom.

“Sis’ Die, I suddenly have some family matters to attend, so, I can’t be with you tonight, I’ll see you tomorrow.”

“Oh....”

Murong Die’s face was somewhat lost.

Wang Lele was the only person who can accompany her....

“Go home then...Ask Uncle Wang downstairs to take you home...”

“Em....Bye bye sis’ Die....”

After Liu Yi hung up the phone, he put on his outfit and ready to go.

“How do you plan to save this pretty lady from a rich family?”

Lin Tong lay on the bed and asked, her voice filled with acid.

But Liu Yi apparently didn’t catch it, and said, “I don’t know....I’m going to her house in secret and take a look. Her phone is off, so I can’t contact her. I will have to go to her house to see her.”

“It seems....you are also very concerned about her.”

“After all she is good to me. I also thought that I was too excessive a few days ago....Suddenly giving back the things that she gave me; She should be very sad.”

Liu Yi remembered the cowboy’s clothing and can’t help but say, “At the very least, I owe her an apology.”

“Em....This big miss is somewhat tired, can’t accompany you....I am going to practice.”

Lin Tong said, turned into a red blur, entered Liu Yi's body, and stay silent.

'Tired but want to train?'

Liu Yi thought that her Fox sister was a bit weird tonight.

'Could it be Fox sister is having the Aunt?'

'No way...that thing came after all this time?'

'Well....a girl's mind is hard to guess.'

Liu Yi sighed with emotion, opened the window, and directly leaped into the night sky.

He had once gone to Murong Die's house, so he knew where it was.

This Mountain Manor was so huge....Perhaps, it was impossible for someone to miss it.

With lightning speed, Liu Yi quickly arrived before this Mountain Manor.

There were many trees around this Mountain Manor, although many leaves have fallen, by night, squatting on a tree branch, he was still hidden. No one found his presence.

While squatting there, Liu Yi watched the silent scenery around the Manor below him.

This Manor was extraordinarily huge. From his view, Liu Yi can only faintly see the castle-like villa at the center.

Inside the Mountain Manor, many bodyguards were patrolling back and forth. It would rather difficult for him to infiltrate.

"If I have a genjutsu or something, that would be nice...."

Liu Yi can't help but lament.

'I am indeed still a bit lacking.'

But after he carefully observed, all these bodyguards wore black suits, and under this night sky, they were almost indistinguishable from one another.

This can greatly help him.

Liu Yi quickly changed into his Ten Steps To Milk A Man's outfit while

simultaneously took off the mask and the red scarf.

Under the cover of the night sky, he leaped into the air like a bird and landed before the Mountain Manor fence.

This three meters high steel fence can't stop Liu Yi.

As light as a swallow, he jumped and grabbed the bars and then leaped over the fence into the Manor.

He landed on the ground and stay silent.

Subsequently, Liu Yi pulled out a pair of sunglasses from the suit.

He previously wanted to use this sunglasses to finish the mission in style, but he never thought it would now come in handy.

After Liu Yi put on the sunglasses, he swaggered toward the center of the Manor.

He passed through several other guards along the way, but they only caught a glimpse of him and paid no further attention.

The bodyguards in this Mountain Manor were too many, they may not know each other.

Exploiting this loophole, Liu Yi successfully slipped inside.

However, he didn't know the location of Murong Die's room.

'If I knew it would be like this, I would have asked Wang Lele.'

Thinking about this, Liu Yi took out his phone and sent out a text message to Wang Lele, asking for Murong Die's room position within the Villa.

Soon, Wang Lele texted back.

"Liu Yi gege want to know the whereabouts of sis' Die's room....are you going to do a night raid?....Hehe, good, sis' Die never close her window when she sleeps!"

'....This girl Wang Lele....what's inside her melon head!'

"On the second floor, one of its windows hang a purple curtain, that room belongs to sis' Die! Liu Yi gege....remember to take security measures so no one will bother the two of you together!"

“ ... ”

If Wang Lele was now in front of him, Liu Yi definitely had to swat her head.

‘This girl’s thought is nasty, deserve to get hit.’

When Liu Yi was still wondering what he should reply to Wang Lele, he heard someone scolded him from the distance.

“What are you doing!”

Liu Yi was taken aback, looked up and found someone with a different bodyguard’s outfit came at him.

‘Am I discovered already?’

Liu Yi secretly condensed his qi around his palm.

“Why are you playing with your cell phone while working, quickly continue your patrol!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 124

## Chapter 124 Promise Me Something

Liu Yi was relieved and quickly put away his cell phone, then turned around.

“Today’s bodyguard....is not professional anymore.”

That bodyguard’s head muttered a few words, turned and walked away.

‘Fiuh, that was really close.’

Liu Yi almost made his move a moment ago, planning to knock out the guy and hid his body.

He checked his own pulse and found his heart was pounding.

‘I even handled the Water Demon, and Wolf Demon then faced off against immortal fairy....’

‘What Murong House, there’s nothing to be afraid of.’ Liu Yi convinced himself.

After his heart stabilized, he continued to walk toward the Castle-like Villa.

In order to not arouse other people’s suspicion, Liu Yi didn’t dare to walk too fast, but rather the same speed as the other bodyguards, acting like he was on patrol until finally arrived at the bottom of the Villa.

Purple curtain....

Liu Yi looked at the Villa and began to check the windows on the second floor one by one.

‘His mother....This Villa is so big....there are so many windows.’

He looked around and finally saw the aforementioned purple curtain.

Sure enough, just as Wang Lele said, the windows were opened wide and the curtain slightly undulated by the night breeze.

But the Villa was surrounded by a lot of patrolling bodyguards. It would be a bit tricky if he wanted to find a chance to climb to the second floor.



Liu Yi thought for a moment and finally had a brainwave.

He turned around and walked to the nearby woods then he extended his right.

“The other me....lend me some of your strength....sh\*t, these sounds so weird....”

Liu Yi said to himself, then his right hand suddenly covered with crimson-colored flame.

The red flame constantly swayed, making Liu Yi can't help but scolded.

‘D\*mn, the other me is so cheap, how could he gave me such a small flame.’

‘His mother, this flame is so weak, it won't be blown out by the wind isn't it?....’

Liu Yi curled his lips, created another flame and put them at the bottom of two trees. He then turned around and back toward the purple curtain location.

Soon, one of the flames suddenly shot up and set fire to the whole tree.

“Fire!”

“Go and put out the flames!”

Seeing that the nearby woods were on fire, the surrounding bodyguards near the Villa immediately surprised and rushed away to put out the fire.

As for Liu Yi. When those bodyguards were heading that way, he immediately jumped up toward the Villa and climbed the wall to get to the second floor.

He touched the balcony and lightly jumped just outside the window and walked into Murong Die's boudoir.

The purple curtain fluttered behind Liu Yi.

Before him was a gorgeous and lovely bedroom.

A very big bed, covered with velvet, which by the look of it, was very comfortable to sleep on.

On top of the nearby table, there's an approximately 27 inch LCD

computer display, making Liu Yi very envious.

‘If I watch my....adult video collections on this screen, it would certainly look extraordinary!’

‘Rich people, truly lives in different world.’

To his surprise, Murong Die was actually not in the bedroom.

But in this big bedroom, there’s a large bathroom.

Liu Yi can faintly hear the sounds of water coming from the inside.

‘Holy sh\*t....’

‘Is she taking a shower?...’

When Liu Yi walked toward the bathroom, he inadvertently kicked one of the bed’s leg.

“Squeek!”

Suddenly, the whole bed moved a bit.

Liu Yi’s foot hurt like hell. While grimacing in pain, he sat down on the bed.

“Lele, you come back?”

Murong Die’s voice was heard coming from the bathroom.

Liu Yi held his breath, didn’t dare to make a sound of pain.

‘His mother....this situation seems a bit weird....’

“Well then, help me find a new set of underwear from the nightstand....”

Murong Die said, opened the bathroom door a bit and extended out her full of water drops silky white arm.

“I’m too lazy to go out and find it.”

Liu Yi’s heart immediately in heat.

‘What is this....Do I have to find her underwear....’

‘This big miss, what kind of underwear does she have?’

There was an intense battle on Liu Yi’s mind.

Two little Liu Yi appeared on his side.

The one with gentle eyes said.

“Liu Yi, you can’t do that, such a behavior is wrong. You can’t take this opportunity to check the girl’s underwear. This isn’t a gentleman’s behavior.”

The other one, with a pair of red horns and a small devil tail, waved his fist and said.

“What gentleman! It’s better to be a villain! Liu Yi, come one, take a look!”

“Little friend, you are just too dirty, how could you act like this?”

The well-mannered Liu Yi pushed the glasses on his nose, and said.

“Liu Yi, we are a gentleman, peeking on girl’s underwear is not a good behavior. However, as a gentleman, we must help the others. The path of gentleman is hard and bitter. Even if you sacrifice yourself, you will be mistaken as a rogue, but you need to stay strong. Therefore, Liu Yi, I trust you, go help Murong Die with all your heart!”

“You, you, you....”

The nearby evil Liu Yi was dumbfounded and candidly admitted defeat.

“You are the big brother! You win!”

Liu Yi nodded his head, thinking, ‘That’s right, it’s exactly like this!’

“Hurry up Lele, you’re so slow!”

Murong Die waved her arm and urged.

“Crack!”

Liu Yi immediately opened the nightstand.

‘My God....a whole drawer full of underwear....’

‘Neat and tidy, and there are all kinds of underwear....’

‘This drawer is simply....An otaku’s heaven.’

‘Amitabha....’

‘I must have the strength to resist....I am an honorable gentleman, that’s right....’

Liu Yi reached out his trembling hand toward the drawer....

A sexy, transparent black lace underwear was instantly picked by Liu Yi....

‘This, this is great....’

He carried the underwear and walked toward Murong Die.

Murong Die received the underwear, took a look, and charmingly roared.

“Ai, Lele you are so bad, how could you pick this set for me. This is from the last time we went outshopping together and you bought this for me....but I never wore them....”

Liu Yi imagined how would Murong Die look when she wear this piece, and can’t help but feel the blood coming out of his nose.

“Fine, since you picked this one for me, I will wear it for you.”

Murong Die said and seemingly started to wear that underwear.

Soon, Murong Die, dressed in black lacy underwear, came out of the bathroom, waving her pair of jade legs.

“Lele, what do you think, is it a bit strange....”

Murong Die’s eyes fell on Liu Yi before her and instantly opened wide.

Liu Yi’s eyes were straight.

Murong Die’s chest is a bit small, but her waist and slim legs were long, coupled with her pretty face, she was like a cute beauty coming out of the water.

Especially since her body was still carrying water droplets, plus the fragrant smell of shampoo, making people can’t help but want to eat her....

Murong Die suddenly remembered the situation and was about to subconsciously opened her mouth to scream.

But Liu Yi hurriedly extended his left hand, covered her mouth, and whispered in her ear.

“Shh....don’t shout....I secretly snuck in....”

Murong Die raised her eyebrows and pulled away Liu Yi’s hand.

“Bastard....What are you doing sneaking into my house....”

Murong Die lowered her voice and said.

Although the timing of the meeting was not right....but seeing Liu Yi, Murong Die’s heart felt some satisfaction.

‘This guy ....where exactly his attractiveness, bastard....’

“I came here to apologize to you....”

Liu Yi said.

“Humph....”

Murong Die’s heart was delighted, but her mouth still unforgiving, “You are not worthy enough to come and see me.”

“Oh?”

Liu Yi blinked his eyes.

“Then how hard should I be for me to be worthy to look for you?”

“You...pervert!”

Murong Die suddenly wanted to kick this guy out of the window.

But after remembered that she didn’t have the strength to do it, she let it pass.

“You ass\*le....except to bully me, what else can you do!”

Murong Die was upset.

“I can do many things....”

Seeing Murong Die’s delicate appearance, Liu Yi sighed with sorrow.

“Murong Die....you’ve lost weight....”

Murong Die was indeed lost a lot of weight.

“It’s none of your business....”

Murong Die turned around, feeling sour in the heart.

‘If I’m not in this room all day...I wouldn’t feel lock up like this.’

‘Plus....I still think about this fellow....’

‘Making me lost my mood to do anything, and lost appetite to eat.’

“Don’t be like that....How about for tonight I will listen to you. Anything you want me to do, I will do it. Em, even if you want to hold me here, I will sacrifice myself and agree to it.”

With that, Liu Yi took two steps back and lay on the bed.

“Ai! Who wants to hold a smelly guy like you!”

Murong Die rushed forward, and hastily pulled up Liu Yi’s arm, “You haven’t taken off your clothes, don’t lie on my bed, it’s dirty....”

“I’ll remove my clothes then?”

“You die! Quickly get up!”

Murong Die pulled Liu Yi’s arm hard, but suddenly slipped and caught his right hand.

Liu Yi immediately began to panic.

‘F\*ck, my right hand can’t be touched like that!’

‘That is forbidden area....’

Sure enough, after Murong Die touched it, her whole body immediately trembled, turned soft and directly lay on top of Liu Yi.

The two people almost stuck together, body pressed on each other, and face touching one another.

Liu Yi can feel Murong Die’s soft and tender body.

His lower body began to rise, so he quickly pulled his right hand away from Murong Die.

But Murong Die can’t quickly recover her state. She lay there on top of Liu Yi, dressed only in underwear, feeling shame and shock.

But she still didn’t have the strength to crawl up....

‘Hateful....’

‘What kind of method is this....’

‘How could I suddenly lost my strength....and my whole body become soft,

also....I especially want to kiss him....’

‘Hateful, hateful....’

‘Why is this....’

‘This is not the springtime!’

“Liu Yi!”

Murong Die suddenly exclaimed, “Why are you so hard down there! Let me up!”

“Ahem....Yes, elder sister....”

Liu Yi’s face immediately blushed, and busily helped Murong Die to sit up with his left hand.

Too awkward....

“You bully me....and do something to my body....no, tonight you must promise me one thing!”

“Huh? What thing?”

Liu Yi sat on the bed beside Murong Die. The two people seemed to forget how bad their previous quarrel was.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 125

## Chapter 125 We Will Get Out

“Sneak me out of the house....I want to go out and play.”

Murong Die looked at the moon outside the window and can't help but say.

“.....”

Liu Yi was stunned. He did not expect Murong Die to put forward such a request.

‘This girl is that bored!?’

“If you won't take me out of the house, I will hate you forever!”

Murong Die put forward some terrible words.

“Okay, okay, but you need to put some clothes on....If you go out like this, you will freeze to death.”

Liu Yi pointed to Murong Die's semi-naked body and said.

“Ah!”

It suddenly occurred to Murong Die that she only wore underwear.

She was stunned, and her face immediately flushed, then she put her hands around her chest and charmingly told Liu Yi.

“Quickly turned around, this miss is going to wear clothes!”

“I couldn't see it, I couldn't see it....”

Liu Yi hurriedly stretched out his hand to cover his eyes.

“Go to hell!”

Murong Die reached for a pillow and threw it at Liu Yi's face.

Liu Yi has no other choice but to honestly turn around. It seems he can't sneak a peak. From behind him came the sound of Murong Die putting on her clothes.

‘Alas....I really want to see it.’



At least he was curious about the difference between how the boys and the girls change their clothes.

His mind was very curious about this.

When Liu Yi was still lost in reverie, Murong Die said to him.

“You can turn around now, this lady is ready.”

Liu Yi turned around and immediately suddenly sucked some cold air.

Murong Die before him wore a long white dress, although it was probably just an ordinary white dress, when Murong Die wore it, she was like a Princess.

But she still put her attention to keep herself warm, at least, she put on a set of thick silk stocking around her legs.

Otherwise, with the autumn temperature on the outside, she would certainly freeze to death.

“You’re not wearing a coat or something?”

Liu Yi asked in surprised, “The outside is very cold....”

“When a girl wants to look good, she doesn’t feel any cold.”

Murong Die rolled her eyes at Liu Yi, “Am I not attractive wearing this dress?”

“Attractive....”

Liu Yi swallowed his saliva and said.

At this time, Murong Die looked like a descended-to-Earth little angel, very dazzling.

“Hehe....There you go.”

Murong Die seemed happy and satisfied.

Liu Yi didn’t understand why this girl would be so happy.

“Let’s go....”

Murong Die asked Liu Yi, “How are we going to slip out....there are so many bodyguards outside.”

“Leave it to me.”

Liu Yi has left behind a path for him to leave, but he didn't think he would use to sneak Murong Die out with him.

“How are you going to do it?”

“Watch how this poor monk makes way for you!”

Liu Yi said, walked toward the window and pretended to chant some spell.

“Heavenly spirits, Earthly spirits, Three ancestors quickly come! True Buddhist Fire! Go!”

“You're kidding me, right...”

Murong Die thought Liu Yi was just joking, but at this time, fire suddenly burned in the distant woods inside the Manor. The raging flame soon spread throughout the woods.

‘I have to admit, this Red Blood Sutra Code....is really useful.’

“You....are you a fortune teller?”

Murong Die looked at Liu Yi in surprised.

“Hehe, this poor monk's supernatural power is boundless. Female donor, please come along with this poor monk.”

Liu Yi said, then extended his left hand toward Murong Die.

“What are you doing?”

“I'm going to hold you, otherwise, how are we going to get down?”

“You're crazy....this is the second floor!”

Murong Die said in amazement, “Moreover, my family's home is five meters high per floor....”

“Trust me.”

Liu Yi said, “Close your eyes, and leave the rest to me.”

“Okay, this miss will trust you this time.”

Murong Die closed her eyes, then fell into Liu Yi's arms.

Liu Yi took this opportunity to embrace this soft-bodied princess, then

jumped out from the bedroom window.

Murong Die felt like she was among the clouds and somewhat felt nervous.

She subconsciously held onto Liu Yi. Although the night wind was cold, Liu Yi's body transmitted some warm to her, making her feel relieved and comfortable.

'If I can keep on holding like this, that would be nice....'

Murong Die longed to say these words: Liu Yi, take me away.

Unfortunately, they were still a student, and their parents still responsible for them.

'Liu Yi's condition was better. After he got into college, graduate, then look for a job, he can take responsibility for himself.'

'As for me....'

'I will always be in a cage....'

Thinking about this, Murong Die's heart slightly twitched.

But at this time, Murong Die felt her body sank. When she opened her eyes, she found out they were both had landed on the ground.

"How did you do that...."

Murong Die asked with amazement.

"This poor monk is almighty."

Liu Yi said with a smile.

"Humph, if you don't want to say it just forget it, this big miss is not interested in your answer."

Murong Die rolled her eyes.

"Let's get out of here, those bodyguards will be back."

Liu Yi said, bent over, and squatted on the ground.

"Let me carry you on my back....your running speed is too slow."

"This big miss won't slow you down."

Although Murong Die said that, she still obediently lay on Liu Yi's back.

Her long hair fell down and floated in front of Liu Yi's nose, making him felt itchy and appreciated the fragrance.

"Go, hyah, let's go!"

"Shoot, I am not a donkey!"

"But you're a cute little donkey!"

Murong Die's words made Liu Yi speechless. He bent his feet and ran, sprinting across this spacious Manor courtyard.

"Obedient daughter, dad personally come to bring your midnight snack."

Murong Hong knocked on his daughter's bedroom door

Recently, Murong Die hardly ate anything, making Murong Hong distressed and angry.

Distressed in thinking about his daughter's health, and angry because Murong Die was too obstinate.

But after all, she is his baby daughter. Murong Hong brought an exquisite midnight snack and planned to have a talk with his daughter.

After knocking her door for a long time, nobody answered him.

'Could it be Lil' Die doesn't want to talk to me?'

'Unlikely. If she doesn't want to see me, even if she doesn't open the door, she would still tell me to go away.'

Murong Hong felt something was not quite right. So, he immediately looked for the key from Wang An and opened Murong Die's room door.

As soon as he went inside to take a look, he immediately shocked.

His precious daughter was not in the room.

Thinking about the two fires in the woods inside the Manor, Murong Hong's face suddenly changed greatly.

"Lil' Die has run away, Wang An, immediately block the area around the Manor! They definitely haven't gone too far!"

Remembering the second fire that just happened not too long ago, Murong Hong correctly made an intelligent guess that Murong Die hasn't run too far

yet.

“Understood, Sir!”

Wang An was surprised, who would dare to take Murong Die away under his nose!

Unforgivable!

The security in this Mountain Manor was his responsibility. If his big miss was successfully abducted, the lost of face would be so big!

He immediately arranged for the bodyguards to go all out and block the entire Mountain Manor.

Liu Yi, with Murong Die on his back, was running toward the outside.

At this time, the loud sound of alarm blasted through the entire Manor.

‘F\*ck, is this an air strike?’

Hearing this alarm sound, Liu Yi was immediately surprised.

Murong Die’s face also changed. While lying on the back of Liu Yi, she said.

“Not good....my dad must have found out that I run away....”

“Don’t worry....We’ll continue our run. It won’t be long before we get out of here!”

Liu Yi said as he looked at the already visible fence in the distance.

“Come on, hyah! Red rabbit, quickly run!”

“.....”

The sound was whistling around the Mountain Manor, and the lights shone brightly.

Three Helicopters directly lifted off, moving around with a huge searchlight, searching the entire Manor.

“Get away from all those lights.”

Murong Die anxiously said, “If my dad found out you are carrying me on your back, he will definitely vent his anger on you!”

“I know....”

Liu Yi certainly understood Murong Hong's harsh temperament.

He was not a good man!

Liu Yi took two deep breath and launched his Spirit Fox Steps, still carrying Murong Die on his back.

Under the effect of the breathing technique, Liu Yi felt his own body lighter, and spirit brighter.

But taking a deep breath also meant that he inhaled a lot of Murong Die's fragrant scent, making Liu Yi felt that he was somewhat lightheaded.

'How could this girl be so fragrant....must be because she just took a shower.'

A helicopter light came at them. Liu Yi quickly stepped on his Spirit Fox Steps, pulling down his body until he almost touched the ground and escaped from that searchlight.

"That was really close...."

Murong Die wiped her cold sweat, "But that was exciting....hehe...."

'....this girl....'

"The person who kidnap my daughter."

When Liu Yi successfully got away from the Helicopter light, the landscape around the Mountain Manor suddenly filled with Murong Hong's voice.

The audio equipment around this Mountain Manor seemed to be very good.

"No matter who you are, I Murong Hong is giving you a chance now. Give me my daughter back, and in exchange, I will give you a lump sum of money and let you leave. If not, this Mountain Manor will be your burial ground. Don't think you can run away, the entire fence around this Mountain Manor has been fully electrified. This is an inescapable net, you can't escape."

'The fence is electrified?'

'Shoot....this Murong Hong is too ruthless.'

"What should we do....can we still get away?"

Murong Die somewhat nervously asked.

“Don’t worry, since I’ve promised you that I will take you out, I will definitely do it.”

Liu Yi told Murong Die on his back, “My grandpa said, people who break their promises, are the lowest kind of people.”

With that, he ran to the front of the fence.

‘Do all this three-meter high fence really electrified?’

When Liu Yi was still wondering, a small crow descended from the night sky and landed on top of the fence, seemingly tired of flying.

“Zzzt!”

Immediately, bright electric spark showed up.

That small crow was instantly burned by the electricity. Without any spark of life, its corpse fell on Liu Yi’s side.

“Holy sh\*t....How high the voltage in this fence could be! It can even make a BBQ!”

Liu Yi’s facial expression greatly changed.

‘This is not a mistake, sh\*t.’

Murong Die’s pretty face also went pale.

“It seems....we really can’t run away....”

She smiled bitterly.

“I told you, I will definitely bring you out!”

Liu Yi clenched his teeth and suddenly said to Murong Die.

“How?”

Before Murong Die could respond, Liu Yi already put her down and then grabbed both of her hands with his hands.

Immediately, the Amorous Ripple Hand began to work.

# Chapter 126 A Game

Murong Die suddenly felt her whole body weak.

“What, what are you going to do....”

Her two eyes revealed an irresistible desire, brightly looked at Liu Yi.

“Don’t be afraid, I will definitely catch you!”

Liu Yi said, his whole body suddenly turned and directly swung Murong Die’s frail body into the air.

“Aaa!”

Murong Die screamed again and again as she looked at the clouds and in the blink of an eye reached the top of the fence.

Liu Yi bent his knees and leapt up high.

He can’t display his icy qi in front of Murong Die.

But his best jump was only three meters high, just above the fence.

And his body was falling rapidly and was about to fall on top of the fence.

Liu Yi extended his right foot and stepped on the top of the fence.

“Zzzzt!”

The electric current instantly drilled through the sole of his foot and spread over his entire body.

At that moment, Liu Yi felt his whole body was going to be torn apart.

But he quickly activated all the forces inside his body to forcibly resist this electric current attack.

At the same time, he pushed his foot to free himself from this attack and threw himself toward the whereabouts of Murong Die.

“Bam!”

At the last second she was about to touch the ground, Liu Yi has solidly stood there, ready to catch Murong Die.



In order to avoid his Amorous Ripple Hand, Liu Yi quickly took back his right hand.

“Really, really ....”

Murong Die’s eyes were slightly red. Liu Yi thought that this girl was going to say ‘really scary,’ but it turned out she actually cheered in pleasant surprised.

“Really exciting!”

‘F\*ck, exciting your sister ....’

‘I almost died by the electric charge there.’

Although he succeeded in dispersing the electric charge from harming his body, it still left him with a tingling feeling.

‘This fellow ....is actually excited by this electric experience....’

‘But I don’t want to try it for the second time.’

“I got you out, where to go next?”

Liu Yi reluctantly crawled up and helped pulled up Murong Die and then asked.

“Well....I want to go to the Amusement Park.”

Murong Die proposed.

“What?”

Liu Yi blinked his eyes, “Big Miss, are you kidding me! It’s late, why do you want to go to the Amusement Park? They are already close now.”

“What are you afraid of? You can even go in and out of my family’s house with ease, let alone the Amusement Park.”

“Shoot....I am not Doraemon, I don’t have the door to anywhere!”

“Since when you’re cute like Doraemon!”

Murong Die rolled her eyes at Liu Yi, “Quickly take me to the Amusement Park, I don’t want to get caught here.”

“All right.”

Liu Yi has no other choice but to bent his knee once again and put Murong Die on his back and then took her to the Northern Dragon City amusement park.

—

“Sir....The entire Mountain Manor have been searched, there are no traces of big Miss....”

At this time, Wang An reported the search result to Murong Hong, who was currently sitting on the sofa smoking his pipe.

Wang An spoke cautiously because Murong Hong's current gloomy mood made him a bit afraid.

“All of them are useless....Tomorrow, I want those useless replaced by a new group of bodyguard!”

Murong Hong tightly squeezed the tobacco pipe, seemingly going to crush it.

“Also....the assassin from the Heavenly List has not made her move, how long do I need to wait?”

“It should be tonight....”

Wang An calculated.

“Directly trace Lil' Die's cell phone, and give the coordinate to Poison Jasmine.”

Murong Hong smoked his pipe and then said.

“Sir, do you mean....”

“The one who took away Lil' Die is none other than Liu Yi. No one else can do this other than him.”

Murong Hong said, “Directly go to where they are and finish him.”

“Yes, understood, sir.”

Wang An sighed, thinking.

‘Liu Yi, Liu Yi, why are you still entangled yourself with big Miss.’

‘I knew very well how fierce the Assassins from Heavenly List are....’

‘You kid, good luck with that....’

—

Outside the first Amusement Park on the Northern Dragon City.

Liu Yi looked at the giant lock at the gate of the Amusement Park as well as the lifeless recreational facilities in there and said.

“Big Miss Murong, you see, it’s close now. Even if we go inside, those rides can do nothing.”

“This big Miss said we go in there, it means we go in there, stop saying this nonsense!”

Murong Die pointed to the giant lock at the gate and said, “Get this gate open!”

“Shoot, how could you have such a huge interest in this!”

“This big Miss like it!”

Murong Die looked at the Amusement Park. Liu Yi saw the look of anticipation in her eyes and correctly guessed something, and then asked.

“Have you....never been to the Amusement Park?”

“How, how could this big Miss never been here!”

Murong Die forced herself to say, “It’s just an Amusement Park....”

But her voice was getting smaller and smaller.

Liu Yi has seen through her.

“You’re just boasting!”

“No, I am not....”

Murong Die looked at her skirt and said.

“My dad never lets me come to the Amusement Park....he said this place is dangerous....”

“Your childhood is too regrettable.”

Liu Yi was surprised, “You don’t even have the chance to visit the Amusement Park.”

“What’s wrong, are you looking down on this big Miss! In the future, this big Miss will build her own set of Amusement Park in her house, humph! I heard you have to queue in here, in my place, I don’t need to get in line!”

With Murong Family’s financial resources, this is achievable.

‘Well then, the poor can’t argue with that.’

Liu Yi wiped his cold sweat, “Then are we still going to enter?”

“Of course! Of course, we’re going to enter! Can’t you open this lock!”

Murong Die glanced at Liu with one eye, “If you can’t open this lock, perhaps this big Miss will look down on you!”

“You underestimate me.”

Liu Yi stretched out his hand and touched the lock.

This giant iron lock was very cold and firmly sealed.

While Murong Die didn’t pay attention, Liu Yi sent out his icy qi into the lock and directly used the cold to break its internal structure.

Then he pulled the big lock which immediately cracked and fell to the ground.

“You....did you learn some magic?”

Murong Die looked at Liu Yi with a strange look, “Later on, this big Miss want you to hack into the internet....”

“D\*mn, I can’t do that!”

Liu Yi hastily explained.

“Speak for yourself....today you molested this big Miss’ underwear....”

“Shoot! That wasn’t on purpose, it was you who told me to give you the underwear!”

Liu Yi felt he was wronged.

“Pei....I told Lele to do that....who asked you to deliver it....”

“But there’s no Lele!”

Liu Yi sternly explained, “You see, what I am doing is for your own good. If

you are in a hurry and get out of the bathroom bare naked, wouldn't that be more awkward?"

"You this fellow....deserve a beating...."

Murong Die waved her small fist.

"Haha, really?....But I think I am good person...."

Liu Yi laughed and then opened the big iron gate.

The Amusement Park is very quiet at night, nobody was around in the evening.

"How about we go to the famous Haunted House to take a look?"

Murong Die asked.

"Can you knock it off!"

Liu Yi quickly put a stop to Murong Die's curiosity, "At night there's no electricity in the Haunted House, you can't see anything there. If you are looking for excitement, I might as well take you to stroll around the Cemetery."

"No....it's too dark and gloomy....why would I want to go there...."

"Then why do you want to go to the Haunted House?"

Murong Die blinked her big beautiful eyes but said nothing.

She wanted to tell Liu Yi: The book said when a man and a woman went to play at the Haunted House it would quickly increase the romantic feelings for each other.

Liu Yi....is a big fool.

"I know a facility that we can use, it's called bungee jumping. Do you want to try it?"

"Good! I like it!"

Hearing Liu Yi's suggestion, Murong Die's eyes suddenly lit up and said.

"I've always wanted to play that exciting game...."

"Sure enough....People with no money look for a job, while wealthy people

look for stimulation....”

Liu Yi shrugged his shoulder.

“F\*ck you, what kind of talk is that!”

Murong Die immediately glared at Liu Yi, “That money are my father’s, I have nothing to do with it. My dad also told me that, later on if I’m looking for a man, that man have to enter into our family. Even if that man and I properly match, the man has to agree to marry into our family. Moreover, he has to be on the same level as me.”

“Your dad....is too overbearing.”

Liu Yi can’t help but sigh.

If he was not the unofficial Emperor of the Northern Dragon City....how could he be so overbearing?

“Hehe....such a nice place here, I don’t want to talk about him, quickly take me to that bungee jumping!”

Murong Die pulled Liu Yi’s arm and said.

“Oh, okay, okay.”

Liu had once come to this Amusement Park with his parents.

But that was when he was only ten years old. So, he can only watch with envy toward a lot of the facilities.

One of those facilities was bungee jumping. He watched as people yelled from the bridge and jumped and wondered about how it would feel.....

It was too scary for him.

At that time, Liu Yi thought that those people who took the bungee jumping....are definitely people who take things too hard.

If the rope is not strong then....

But he never thought that one day he would bring other people to play this.

Of course, the present Liu Yi was more confident. After all, he was not an ordinary human anymore, but an immortal cultivator. Even if he fell off the

bridge, he would not be afraid.

This Amusement Park has a large artificial lake. On top of it, there's a very high suspension bridge.

The bungee jumping facility is here. After tying the safety rope, one will jump down from this suspension bridge and enjoy the excitement of falling down head first.

At this time, Murong Die was standing next to Liu Yi and said with some nervousness and excitement.

"Come on, faster...."

"Why are you in such a hurry...."

Liu Yi was tying the safety rope to himself and asked Murong Die, "Why are you asking me to be quick, Why don't you wear it?"

"I won't, I want you to wear it!"

Murong Die simply said.

"Very well....look carefully, big Miss."

After tying himself, Liu Yi stood on the edge of the suspension bridge and asked Murong Die.

"Big Miss, you see how I did that?"

"Ehm...Liu Yi, do you know that there's this game?"

"What game?"

Liu Yi didn't understand what Murong Die was trying to say.

"A game to test whether the two people can truly depend on each other...."

Murong Die said, walked to the front of Liu Yi, and directly grasped Liu Yi tightly around his waist.

"Liu Yi, hold me...."

With that, she kicked her feet, pushing Liu Yi and herself down from this suspension bridge.

What do you guys think would happen next?

How long before the assassin Poison Jasmine come and ruin their moment together?



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 127

## Chapter 127 Poison Jasmine

The moment he slipped and fell down from the suspension bridge, Liu Yi thought Murong Die was nuts.

Without bolting the safety rope, she actually pulled both of them off the bridge.

My God!

With a huge inertia like this, if not careful, Murong Die will fall down!

Although below them was a lake, even so, it was still a dead end.

On TV shows and Movies, they show people can safely fall down from high places if there's water below them that act as a buffer, but it was actually a lie!

If a person fell from high places and fell into the water, the impact would be similar as when one fall to the ground.

Forget the buffer, one would be lucky if one doesn't directly turn into a pulp.

Liu Yi felt his body was falling rapidly with wind whirring beside his ears.

While Murong Die in his bosom seemed comfortable enough, with hands holding Liu Yi's waist and legs coiling around his legs.

Liu Yi didn't dare to be careless, no matter what, he can't let anything happen to Murong Die.

He put his right hand on his back while his left hand held Murong Die's back tightly against his bosom.

Meanwhile, he put his head against Murong Die's shoulder, doing everything possible to lock Murong Die, lest she should fall.

The rope was tightened into the extreme.

The two people distance from the surface of the lake was getting closer

and closer.

The smell of the lake was getting heavier by the second, and Liu Yi can smell the taste of water.

At this moment, Liu Yi felt an enormous pulling force acted against his feet.

With a loud thud, the rope was stretched to its full extent and then flipped them both upward.

Liu Yi felt Murong Die became very heavy at that point, almost dropping her to the lake.

But Liu Yi immediately burst his huge immortal power to increase his strength.

Cannot let go!

Must not let go!

With such perseverance, Liu Yi was able to hold his hand back.

“Ahem...”

The rope bounced back, pulling their two bodies high up into the air.

But Murong Die, who was still in Liu Yi's bosom, actually coughed up.

“You....you want to strangle me....”

“You silly girl....why would I want to strangle you if I could just let you go....”

Liu Yi somewhat reproached her.

“You're anxious for me?”

Murong Die tightly held Liu Yi back, posted her mouth on his ear and said.

“Of course!”

Liu Yi's words made Murong Die's secretly delighted.

But his followed up almost destroyed her worldview.

“No matter what, we are all good friends, am I right?”

“Liu Yi....you're the reincarnation of Zhu Bajie!” (TL: The Pig in Journey To The West) Murong Die really wanted to leave behind several scratch marks

on Liu Yi's hateful face!

"Why do you say that? I am not fat!"

Liu Yi was relatively thin. Therefore, he asked back with amazement.

"I'm not talking about your body, but your intelligence!"

Murong Die heavily emphasized.

Liu Yi was silent, although sometimes he was a bit slow, he absolutely had no issue with his intelligence!

It was high on the scale!

"Nonsense...."

Holding Murong Die like that, he felt the softness in his bosom, but he suddenly remembered a very serious issue and can't help but ask.

"How....should we go up?"

"Em...."

Murong Die was a bit dumbfounded.

A moment ago, on impulse, she jumped down while holding Liu Yi to test whether he was a person she can rely on or not....

But she actually enjoyed the feeling afterward....

If possible, she very much wanted to continue to hug Liu Yi like this....

If they can't go up....so be it....this was the best....

She didn't want to go back home.

That ice-cold, cage-like home....

Thinking to this, Murong Die didn't answer Liu Yi's question, and instead held him tighter.

"This is not good...."

Liu Yi looked at the suspension bridge under the night sky and sighed with emotion.

That's pretty far....

If it were just him, it wouldn't be a problem if he wants to go up to such a high place like that.

Afterall, he is an immortal cultivator.

But because he carried a young girl with him, Liu Yi can't expose his true strength, making him somewhat embarrassed.

'This is tough....'

When Liu Yi was depressed, he suddenly saw a silhouette of a girl standing on that suspension bridge.

'How could there be other people in this Amusement Park?'

When Liu Yi was still wondering, the night wind carried that girl's words into his ears.

"Looks like this job...is very easy...."

Liu Yi flooded his eyes with immortal power, turning his pair of eyes into a high-powered telescope.

That shadowy figure on the suspension bridge was suddenly enlarged.

The girl on the bridge wore a black trench coat, with boot pants and a pair of little black boots.

Her figure seemed beautiful and slim, and well proportionate whether it was her front or behind.

But Liu Yi didn't know what she looks like because she used a half piece of fine silver mask which blocked half her face from the nose up.

But looking at her mouth and nose, she was actually delicate and cute.

Especially her slightly upturned and pink lips which made people have the impulse to suck it.

But this seemingly attractive woman was actually holding a black dagger which she pressured it above the safety rope.

Liu Yi's heart suddenly tensed, thinking.

'What is she doing?'

"Don't blame me, blame it on my employer."

After she said that, she moved her knife to cut the rope.

Liu Yi was immediately anxious.

‘If she cut the rope, wouldn’t that be terrible?’

Liu Yi immediately activated his immortal energy.

This immortal energy moved into his feet and transferred to the safety rope.

The safety rope slightly swung from the ripples, the power spread along the safety rope and transmitted upward toward the suspension bridge.

When the beauty was about to cut the rope on the bridge, the rope suddenly burst out a force that jarred her dagger flying and numbing her palm.

“What?”

The young beauty was shocked, immediately grasped the dagger and watched this rope which just suddenly made a mischief.

“Murong Die, hold me tight!”

Liu Yi quickly said. Murong Die suddenly nervous and simultaneously blushed.

‘Why would Liu Yi suddenly become so bold....is he going to declare now?’

“Someone want to harm us....hold tight....”

Liu Yi’s explanation undoubtedly shattered Murong Die’s fantasy.

Then, while holding Murong Die, Liu Yi pulled the safety rope, rocking it violently.

He and Murong Die were like a pendulum clock, vigorously swung under this suspension bridge, continually doing the pendulum movement.

“What is he going to do....”

On the suspension bridge, the young beauty didn’t know what Liu Yi’s goal was and wondered if he wanted to hypnotize her?

But when the rope swung toward the ground, Liu Yi burst his immortal power through his feet and directly shredded the safety rope.

“Plop!”

Leveraging the swinging momentum, Liu Yi moved through the air with Murong Die in an attractive parabola trajectory.

He crossed the lake, made two spinning motion and then down to the lake shore.

Liu Yi forced his waist to turn, making his whole body inverted again. With both feet backward, body leaned forward, left hand holding Murong Die, the right hand grasping the ground, the whole body skidded on the ground pretty far and then stopped.

“This guy....is an acrobat?”

The beauty on the suspension bridge looked silly, thinking.

‘I thought this job would be easy....but the target which from the mission info just an ordinary student....turns out to be so tricky!’

‘No wonder the initial offer from the employer would be so high!’

“What happened....”

Murong Die felt her body shook, but when she opened her eyes, they’re already landed on the ground.

She was surprised that Liu Yi could make a landing here and still didn’t understand the situation.

“Someone is coming...with ill intention.”

Liu Yi didn’t know how to answer Murong Die. He was still unclear about the identity of the beauty on the bridge.

‘But, I will not be overcome by her!’

Liu Yi stretched out his right hand and raised his middle finger toward the beauty on the suspension bridge.

‘Humph, humph, you want to deal with me, Liu Yi? You still lack experience!’

“Oho....dare to look down on me, Poison Jasmine?!”

The young beauty said, put down the waterproof bag from her back and

took a full-bodied black sniper rifle from the inside, and then pressed her face on top of it, looking at Liu Yi on the lakeshore through a sniper scope.

“Holy sh\*t....you’ve got to be kidding me!”

Liu Yi’s amazing eyesight watched all of this. He noticed the young beauty actually pulled out a sniper rifle, and was suddenly stunned.

‘Because I gave her a middle finger....she takes this extreme measure to deal with me!’

Liu Yi felt a terrible pressure. A sniper rifle....is no joke!

‘How could there be such a thing in real life!’

‘His mother....’

But thinking that he is an immortal cultivation, Liu Yi calmed down a bit.

Although he was holding Murong Die, she was not heavy.

Liu Yi prepared his Spirit Fox Steps and, when the young beauty on the suspension bridge took aim at him, his figure suddenly disappeared from the telescopic sight of the beauty.

“Huh?”

Poison Jasmine was a bit surprised, “Where did he go?”

She quickly pressed her face on the rifle again and kept on looking on the shore, searching for her target.

But Liu Yi’s figure was incredibly weird. Whenever Poison Jasmine was about to aim him, his figure suddenly crouched down and then disappeared from her telescopic sight.

This made her unable to aim and shoot, making Poison Jasmine slightly impatient.

Liu Yi ran toward the outside of the Amusement Park bringing Murong Die with him which made him very passive.

This feeling of unable to fight his opponent head on was very unpleasant.

“Humph, don’t think you can escape my, Poison Jasmin, palm!”

Poison Jasmine retracted her sniper rifle, put her hand in the waterproof

bag, and pulled out a small hang glider!

She put the bag behind her back, pulled the hang glider bar, stepped on the rail of the bridge and then jumped down toward Liu Yi's direction.

The night wind immediately lifted her body up, making Poison Jasmine glided through the night time air like a bat, steadily moving toward Liu Yi from the air.

When Liu Yi looked back, he suddenly stunned and scared out of his wit, thinking.

‘Who exactly is this d\*mn girl....’

‘Does she have Doraemon's magic pocket! How could she have so many gadgets!’

Murong Die, still in his arms, clearly saw the hang glider gliding under the shadow of the moon.

“My God....What is that....”

Liu Yi rolled her eyes, thinking, ‘How would I know!’

—



# Chapter 128 I Am A Professional

Poison Jasmine skillfully controlled the glider, gliding fast through the night sky and soon caught up with Liu Yi.

“D\*mn....”

Liu Yi can't use the ice-skates, feeling it would be too inconvenient.

At present, he can only run. But the girl above him used a hang glider!

‘His mother, why can't she just fall!’

‘This is so unfair!’

“Do you think you can escape from my palm!”

Poison Jasmine said, reached out her hand to pull out a canister-like thing from her bosom, and threw it down at Liu Yi.

‘Holy sh\*t, that's a grenade!’

Liu Yi was surprised and quickly wanted to dodge, but it seemed somewhat too late.

Before that canister-like thing landed, it exploded.

But it did not send out a fierce fire. Instead, smoke rushed out and instantly wrapped Murong Die and Liu Yi two people.

“What is this thing....”

Before Murong Die finished her words, her eyelids suddenly sank, and her head directly rested on Liu Yi's shoulder, asleep.

Liu Yi also felt a wave of dizziness, making his pace somewhat unstable.

It was like a sleeping gas....

Liu Yi did not think he would encounter this kind of unconventional weapon....

He quickly circulated the immortal energy inside his body to support his own consciousness.

“Huh?”

Seeing her target did not fall, Poison Jasmine was even more surprised.

This sleeping gas can even put down an elephant in an instant!

But the guy before her ....was actually still standing!

‘My God, is he still a human!’

‘However, even though he can still stand, looks like he can’t resist me anymore. He doesn’t even have the strength to escape.’

“Stay right there!”

Poison Jasmine said, pulled the glider and circled above Liu Yi twice.

Only after the sleeping gas was blown away by the wind did she slowly descend to the ground.

Liu Yi’s eyelids were heavy, his whole body seemed sluggish, standing there while holding Murong Die.

“It looks like you are too tired, why don’t you just sleep.”

Poison Jasmine said, pulled out a dagger from her bosom and slowly walked toward Liu Yi.

Although there were many weapons inside her waterproof bag, Poison Jasmine’s favorite weapon is dagger!

Moreover, her dagger was quenched with dangerous poison, as long as it enters the blood of her opponent, the opposite party will immediately die a violent death.

This type of poison can make the body of a person gradually dehydrate, and death will come after ten minutes. The victim’s corpse can become like a mummy.

Poison Jasmine was known as Withered Jasmine.

That’s why her codename is Poison Jasmine.

Poison Jasmine knew that her mission objective was just to assassinate a student and thought that it would be a walk in the park.

But she never thought it would waste her so much effort.

“Able to withstand me, a Heavenly List assassin, this long proved that you have some skills. Rest assured, after you die, I will help build your tombstone.”

Poison Jasmine said, the dagger in her hand moved to slice Liu Yi's neck.

Just at that moment, that should be unable to move Liu Yi, suddenly opened his eyes, which were bright and shiny.

He took Murong Die, and directly made an Iron Bridge movement, dodging Poison Jasmine's dagger.

“What!”

Poison Jasmine was surprised. She did not think Liu Yi was still able to move.

“Stay away from me!”

After he dodged the dagger, Liu Yi's body stood up straight, and he sent out a left-hand palm toward Poison Jasmine's shoulder, which directly hit her body, making her back away several steps.

Poison Jasmine's face under the mask revealed a surprised look.

“This student....is he really a student?”

However, after years of being an assassin, Poison Jasmine's mentality was already tempered.

She quickly calmed down, looked at Liu Yi, and said with a mocking tone, “You don't understand style do you? How could you be so rude toward a beauty...Moreover, how could you make a beauty stay away from you?”

“How would I know that you're a beauty!”

Liu Yi took two deep breaths, using the breathing technique to adjust his state of mind.

The previous sleeping gas was too strong....Like smoking marijuana, he almost fell asleep.

‘Well, I have never smoked marijuana, so I don't know what it feels like.’

“Do you want to look at it....”

Poison Jasmine said, her palm gently pulled her own mask.

Liu Yi's curiosity can't help but arise, 'Is the face under that mask....really that beautiful?'

'If her face is ugly, it would directly scare me to death; she doesn't even need to move her hand.'

But at this time, the other hand of the beauty who was previously posted on her back, suddenly moved.

"Whoosh!"

A dagger flew out from her hand and turned into a black light, flying straight at Liu Yi.

Liu Yi was shocked, didn't think this girl turned out to be so crafty!

'Grandpa was right. The more beautiful the woman, the more she would deceive other people!'

'Em, this sentence seems to have come from the Heaven Sword and Dragon Saber and not from Grandpa....'

But Liu Yi is not someone to be trifled with. The power inside his body instantly circulated.

The speed of the dagger in front of him immediately slowed down and clearly visible to him.

This initially deadly dagger now moved in slow motion in Liu Yi's eyes.

Liu Yi held out his left hand and grabbed the handle of that dagger directly from the air.

"....."

Poison Jasmine was speechless.

Her flying dagger was unexpectedly caught!

"You....are you really a student?"

"F\*ck, not only my identity as a student is questioned, but I'm also being targeted by an assassin!"

Liu Yi can't help but ridicule.

‘Who’s the one I provoked!’

‘How could even an assassin come out!’

‘This has to be a mistake!’

“When I received this mission to kill a student, I was also surprised.”

Poison Jasmine pouted her sexy lips and discontentedly said, “It never crossed my mind that killing a student would be so difficult....Are all the present students so hard to deal with?”

“Well, that depends on the situation.”

Liu Yi thought, and said, “If it is purely to engage in (sex), I believe that it should not be difficult. But here, the ground is rough like a battlefield; it’s easy to catch a cold!”

“Shoot! You dare to take advantage of me, Poison Jasmine!”

Hearing Liu Yi’s words, Poison Jasmine immediately exploded in anger.

In the world of Assassin, she is well-known!

Whoever dare to sexually harass Poison Jasmine, is to court death!

This student....is simply courting death!

“I’m going to kill you.”

“You’re not coming to play house with me to begin with.”

Liu Yi wryly smiled, “But coming to get rid of me. It’s just, the girl in my arms is innocent.”

“Rest assured, she is not my target. I won’t kill for nothing.”

Poison Jasmine pursed her mouth, and said, “Only by killing you, will I receive the money....”

“I’m afraid this money will be difficult to earn.”

Liu Yi said and, while one of his hand held Murong Die, his other hand made a come at me gesture at Poison Jasmine.

“Come, this young master is not afraid of you!”

“You kid is pretty confident!”

Poison Jasmine smiled, "I admit you have some abilities! But unfortunately, you bump into me, Poison Jasmine! I am a professional assassin, do you know what professional mean?"

With that, she took out her bag and dug out every kind of weapons for Liu Yi to see.

"You see, AWP! Silencer Pistol! Sleeping Bomb! Poison! Poison Needle, Dagger...."

Liu Yi was bedazzled by this pile of tools.

"See there! This old mother is a professional assassin, do you understand! You dare to question my professionalism, that is an insult to my profession!"

"No....definitely didn't mean that...."

"Humph, whether you meant it or not, I must teach you the meaning of my professionalism!"

With that, Poison Jasmine took out two daggers, and said, "The top 50 Heavenly List people, are not someone to be trifled with!"

Her voice fell, Liu Yi felt chilly wind lunged out toward him.

He immediately launched his Spirit Fox Steps and took two steps back.

Poison Jasmine suddenly appeared in the position he had just stood while making a stabbing movement with her two daggers.

"A big man, but do nothing other than dodge!"

Poison Jasmine's trick failed and can't help but immediately surprised.

"You're just too slow. An old woman is faster than you!"

Liu Yi retreated back while opening a taunt.

"Nonsense, this old mother is a professional! Professional, do you understand!"

"Don't understand...."

"F\*ck, let this old mother make you understand!"

Poison Jasmine's heart was uncomfortable. She has gone out to do many assassination missions with untold difficulty.

But she never expected that today, a student would sexually harass her!

This was too hateful! Too bad mood!

Poison Jasmine moved her daggers in cunning and vicious ways. Were it not for Lin Tong's long time teaching, plus some actual combat experience, Liu Yi wouldn't be able to contend this female killer.

But at this time, with the aid of the Demonic energy inside his body, Liu Yi was able to slow down the speed of everything in front of him.

Coupled with the amazing Spirit Fox Steps, Liu Yi easily dodged each of Poison Jasmine's attack.

Even if Poison Jasmine's attack move was cunning, she can't touch Liu Yi's shirt.

"D\*mn! You force me to this!"

Poison Jasmine suddenly anxious and quickly leaped back; her two clad in leather legs stood high, and then her two hands pressed her waterproof bag and took out a pair of pistols with silencer.

'My God....'

'This girl doesn't play according to the rule!'

'How could this happen!'

'This is his d\*mn uncle's joke, right!'

Liu Yi quickly held Murong Die, while at the same time, circulating the Demonic energy inside his body. His entire world turned black and white.

Only the opposite of him, Poison Jasmine, has a trace of red.

It was clear that Poison Jasmine's hostility toward him was so deep....

'In some aspect, it's possible to say that I am her parents (provider)!'

'But how could she be so disrespectful toward her own parents, d\*mn it!'

Liu Yi's heart was perturbed, but he has no other choice. The person that he bumped into was a female assassin and not a female teacher.

Although female teacher can be rude and unreasonable, one can still reason with her.

But the female assassin in front of him....was completely unreasonable!

“As I said, I am a professional! Don’t underestimate my professionalism!”

Then, she pulled the trigger again and again.

“Poof poof poof!”

Several muted gunshot was heard.

He had to admit that this girl’s marksmanship was very accurate.

In Liu Yi’s eyes, all those bullets came straight toward his forehead.

‘This chick....’

‘With this many bullets, does she want to burst my head!’

‘Is this how she vented her anger when she lost playing CS!’

Fortunately, Liu Yi’s strength was about to reach the third star jade.  
Therefore, those speedy bullets were clearly visible.

While holding Murong Die, he moved his upper body to the left and dodged all those bullets.

—



# Chapter 129 Ginseng Baby

Poison Jasmine was in a sluggish state, thinking.

‘This guy....’

‘Is he a student?’

‘No....is he a human?’

‘This is too inconceivable!’

‘He actually can dodge the bullets!’

‘Is he like The Matrix Keanu Reeves!’

‘That’s too ridiculous!’

“Apparently you don’t know how to shoot.”

After dodging several bullets, Liu Yi’s confidence soared.

‘Although this woman is a top killer in the Heavenly List, I am an immortal cultivator!’

‘Moreover, my strength will soon reach the third star jade. Consequently, I am a bit stronger now!’

‘Yes...I should be more confidence in myself.’

‘The reason why the other me is so powerful is that he is fully confidence about his own ability!’

‘That’s right, just like what Grandpa said, to be a powerful man, one must have a strong heart.’

‘Then, one also need to have a thick skin!’

‘That’s right, exactly like that!’

“I, I am a professional!”

The tone of Poison Jasmine words showed that her conviction started to waver.

‘Not even a pistol can kill the target before me....Am I going this mission?’

‘Absolutely not!’

‘I had worked so hard to reach the rank 47 on the Heavenly List. If this mission fails, surely will fall out of the top 50!’

‘How could I let this happen!’

‘No, Liu Yi must die!’

‘If not, the miserable one will be me!’

“I am a professional killer, I certainly can.”

Poison Jasmine did not know if those words were for Liu Yi or her.

Suddenly she discarded her two pistols with silencer, put her foot inside her waterproof bag, kicked out a submachine gun with silencer, picked up the gun, and aimed it at Liu Yi.

‘Holy sh\*t....’

‘This girl is incredible....’

‘Does her family own an arsenal store?’

‘That’s too ridiculous!’

‘Is she going to come up with an RPG to blow me up!’

‘Based on this girl’s conduct, that’s hard to say.’

‘No....That thing draw too much attention, and this girl said she’s a “professional” killer, so she shouldn’t do something so unprofessional like that.’

“Puff puff puff!”

The sound of the submachine gun was muffled.

But the bullets knew their targets, firing at Liu Yi like rain.

‘Sh\*t....’

‘This girl is not afraid she will hit Murong Die in my arm!’

Liu Yi can see that Poison Jasmine has reached a dead end. Therefore, she didn’t take Murong Die into account anymore.

Liu Yi's left hand gently pushed Murong Die so that she lightly fell behind the nearby large wooden doll.

At the same time, his body dodged to the side in a flash and continued to dodge those hordes of bullets.

Liu Yi's body turned into a shadow in the night, making Poison Jasmine's body somewhat numb.

'This guy....'

'Is he came from the Matrix!'

'This has to be a mistake!'

Poison Jasmine was about to go insane. She had never met such a target.

She pulled out the submachine gun and continued to rain fire at Liu Yi.

"D\*mn, how much bullets do you have!"

"This clip can fire fifty rounds, this old mother is a professional, and I will kill you!"

Poison Jasmine didn't care how many bullets will she spent, as long as she can kill Liu Yi, she would be free from worry.

The bullets became increasingly deadly!

'His mother, after this is over, I want to ask for more money from the employer!'

'This mission objective is too cruel!'

'Wasting many of this old mother's brain cell in thinking about this!'

'Looks like I haven't temper myself enough....Back home, I will continue to hone my skill.'

The bullets unceasingly rained down toward Liu Yi.

At the same time, Liu Yi's body constantly moved like a blur, directly dodging all those bullets.

Even though Poison Jasmine wasted all her bullets in earnest, she can't even touch Liu Yi's clothes.

“I don’t believe it!”

Poison Jasmine said, flipped backward, exchanged her weapon to the previous two pistols with silencer, bent her knee, and directly rushed toward Liu Yi.

Poison Jasmine is indeed a “professional” killer. This changing tactic movement happened so fast, and less than a second later, she already arrived in front of Liu Yi.

But, no matter how fast she was, it was impossible to her to beat a bullet.

Poison Jasmine’s intention was obviously not to attack Liu Yi like this, but to decrease her distance with him.

She aimed the two pistols with silencer in her hands and continued to pull the trigger, shooting out the bullets.

In such a point blank range, the bullets continued to pounce on Liu Yi, and almosts hit him!

‘This girl....her assassination skill is really high!’

‘I shouldn’t underestimate her too much!’

Liu Yi quickly stepped on his Spirit Fox Steps. His body floated, wandering between all those bullets.

The longer Poison Jasmine pulled the trigger, the more scared she was!’

‘My excellent shooting ability turns out to be nothing in front of this student!’

‘Am I still not awake this night, and still in a dream?’

Just when Poison Jasmine was in dismay, Liu Yi’s figure, in a blink of an eye, suddenly arrived in front of her.

He stretched out his hand toward Poison Jasmine’s face mask.

“Ah!”

Poison Jasmine suddenly cried out and immediately blocked her face with both of her hands.

‘No matter what, I can’t let him see my face.’

“This is the assassin’s code!”

But Liu Yi’s real purpose seemed to be not her mask because his hand suddenly snatched away her two pistols. Holding them in their hands, he pointed at Poison Jasmine’s head.

Poison Jasmine was unable to blink and did not dare to make a noise.

“If you are a professional, then I must be a super professional.”

Liu Yi said, aimed one of the pistols down and shoot twice at the two pistols on the side holster of Poison Jasmine’s smooth thighs, making them fell on the ground.

His action was very neat and very pretty.

“This old mother....admit defeat!”

Poison Jasmine said through gritted teeth, “Just kill this old mother!”

“You this fellow, how could you shout “kill” at every turn.”

Liu Yi curled his lips, “Moreover, I’m an ordinary student and won’t casually kill people.”

“You are an ordinary student?”

Poison Jasmine really wanted to bit her own tongue to commit suicide, “This old mother might as well be hit by a car and be done with it.”

“Why are you keep on saying “this old mother, that old mother,” Aunty, are you very old?”

“Who said I am old!”

Poison Jasmine immediately chin up and chest out, and proudly said, “This old mother is 19 years old! It’s just that my body is quick to develop!”

“Your waist is very thick.”

Liu Yi took one look at Poison Jasmine and said.

“Your waist is the thicker one!”

Poison Jasmine smoothly pulled out a soft sword from her waist, and said, “As you say, I am a professional, and this is my professional props....eat this!”

With that, this silver dragon made a beeline toward Liu Yi

Liu Yi extended out his two fingers and directly clamped this sword sneak attack.

In his black and white world, all of this girl's sneak attack action was significantly slowed down and simply can't escape Liu Yi's eyes.

Therefore, Liu Yi gripped this soft sword with ease.

"You...."

Poison Jasmine fiercely attempted to pull her soft sword, but Liu Yi's fingers were like an iron pincer, making her attempt failed.

"You're too weak."

Liu Yi looked at Poison Jasmine's anxious with anger flushed face, and couldn't help but quipped, "At your age, you should be at the University! Instead, you waste your best year by becoming a killer."

"What do you know!"

Liu Yi seemed to hit the touchy spot of Poison Jasmine, and she immediately scolded. Without knowing when, two black daggers appeared in her hands, and she moved the daggers to stab Liu Yi on both of his temples.

"This attack is too vicious!"

Liu Yi could not help shaking his head, "So feisty, too bad you can't find a boyfriend!"

"None of your business!"

Poison Jasmine's dagger was about to stab Liu Yi's head, but Liu Yi didn't retreat. Instead, he moved forward and directly crashed into Poison Jasmine's bosom.

Poison Jasmine's pretty face instantly turned pale, and her body instantly stumbled backward.

Liu Yi quickly stretched his left hand unconsciously, trying to embrace and hold Poison Jasmine's waist.

But Poison Jasmine's helpless stature was a bit tall, approximately 1.73 meters.

Liu Yi's hand that subconsciously reached out didn't arrive at Poison Jasmine's waist but touched a somewhat bulging spot.

'Huh?'

'This girl's waist is really that thick?'

'But it feels soft....and comfortable....'

After squeezing it a few more times, he suddenly woke up.

'Oh sh\*t....this is probably not Poison Jasmine's waist....'

'Rather, her curling upward buttocks!'

The two people were dumbfounded, staring at each other's face for a long time.

"You you you!"

At this time, a woman's scream was heard in the Amusement Park.

"I am going to kill you!"

While she spoke, Liu Yi was looking at her chest, but from inside her breast, suddenly came out an intense cyclone!

This cyclone was so violent and directly impacted Liu Yi's body.

With this small portion of huge storm, Liu Yi's body was abruptly pushed several steps backward and finally, with a loud bang, hit the outside fence of the roller coaster ride, and stopped there.

'Holy sh\*t....'

'What the hell happen with her, how could she send out a large storm?'

'Em....but her "storm" is not particularly big....'

'At least, when compared with Wang Lele....'

'I never saw a woman whose chest is comparable to Wang Lele!'

At this time, Poison Jasmine's whole body seemed to have changed.

Her body floated out small and large cyclones, while the ground under her

feet grew a lot of lush green grass.

‘F\*ck...what happen!’

‘Now it’s already Autumn!’

‘How can there be such a lush green grass!’

‘What the hell is this?’

Lin Tong, who initially slept inside Liu Yi’s body, suddenly came out, turned into a red light, and landed on Liu Yi’s shoulder.

The little Fox turned pale, blankly looked across at Poison Jasmine, who seemed to have changed into a Super Saiyan.

“My God....I... am not mistaken am I?....”

“What’s the matter, Fox sister? A Saiyan finally appeared on this planet?”

Liu Yi seemed excited.

“Saiyan your stupid head....this girl....has such a strong affinity with the Wood Element....I’m afraid....this girl, is the legendary Wood Spiritual Body....”

“What is that stuff? Can you eat it?”

“Can eat your sister....this Wood Spiritual Body is not the ginseng baby (The immortality fruit in the Journey To The West that appears like a baby)!”

“Oh? Can I eat this ginseng baby?”

“If you’re not afraid of her, you will die!”



# Chapter 130 Do Not Go With Grandpa

Liu Yi was just joking. He didn't dare to have such thought toward this floating out cyclones beauty.

Liu Yi noted that Poison Jasmine's eyes were closed, seemingly similar to himself being unconscious when in the "Saiyan" state.

Remembering his other powerful negative personality....Liu Yi suddenly felt a chilling sensation.

'Oh God...this girl isn't that abnormal is she?'

When Liu Yi was still thinking, Poison Jasmine's feet suddenly off the ground, slightly floating in the air.

"What the....still said not a Saiyan? This dancing in the air is the proof!"

Liu Yi was envious, thinking, 'I also want to fly!'

Unfortunately, his strength was too lacking.

"This girl, if she is the Wood Spiritual Body, now above the ground she should derive her power from the Wood Element's derivative, which is the power of the Wind.

Lin Tong reminded Liu Yi, "Just like the Werewolf from the LOST organization that you met several days ago...."

"Die..."

Although Poison Jasmine lost her consciousness, her mouth vaguely muttered a sentence.

An oval shaped cyclone suddenly flew out from above her shoulder and directly attacked Liu Yi.

He only heard the sound of air pop and the cyclone, with a twinkling of an eye movement, already appeared at Liu Yi's feet.

"Boom!"

Liu Yi felt a powerful blast coming from below.

He immediately put his hands in front of his face as his entire body blown off the ground and directly crashed the railing behind his body.

His body along with a piece of iron bar flew and hit the previously mentioned roller coaster track.

The track was directly ruined. Liu Yi felt pain on both of his eyes as his vision darkened and his whole body convulsed.

‘Holy sh\*t....’

‘If this is an RPG attack, I would be fried for sure!’

‘Although there was no fire damage, the shock wave was too strong.’

‘Almost got my old bones shocked loose.’

“So scary....”

Lin Tong’s tiny claws tightly pulled Liu Yi’s collar, had not been blown away.

Although she was in her spiritual form, the opponent’s strength has been able to affect her.

“This eruption of Wood Spiritual Body’s power, allowed her to get directly to the fourth star level....Before this, her strength was no more than two star, and was also aided by various tools. Now....Spiritual Body is really terrible.”

“What should we do....”

Liu Yi somewhat hesitated, he didn’t know how to deal with this young girl who has lost her usual self.

“Die....”

Poison Jasmine’s eyes slowly fell on the nearby Murong Die.

Liu Yi immediately anxious and, without any time to think, threw an ice bomb toward Poison Jasmine.

“Bam!”

Before the ice bomb reached Poison Jasmine, it was shattered by the air wave in front of her body.

The icy blast flew everywhere, which obviously angered Poison Jasmine.

“Come to me! You unprofessional girl!”

Liu Yi deliberately provoked her, constantly taunting and threw two ice bombs at Poison Jasmine, only to be shattered by the protective airwave around her.

“Liu Yi....you have to deal with her as quickly as possible....Spiritual Body is a very special existence....She will attract many experts from the upright sects who want to snatch her....If you don't deal with her soon, those elders from the big upright sect will soon recognize the aura of this Spiritual Body and rush over.”

“That's easy then! I will just have to not deal with her!”

Liu Yi looked at the flapping trench coat behind Poison Jasmine, coming at him.

He quickly stepped on ice-skates and landed on the nearby roller coaster track.

He rushed along that roller coaster track, sliding fast.

Poison Jasmine's speed was also fast as she firmly pursued Liu Yi from behind. Her cyclone constantly spun, putting tremendous pressure on Liu Yi.

He can only press on the ice-skates, forcing out his power to the max, allowing him to run faster, trying to get rid of Poison Jasmine.

“Whoosh!”

Liu Yi heard a strange wind sound coming from behind him.

He looked back unconsciously and almost fell off the track because of the scare.

‘Sh\*t, a cyclone was coming at me.’

‘She really wants my life!’

Liu Yi quickly put his hands behind his body and spewed out icy-frost  
With this additional boost, he quickly made a small distance jump.

“Bam, bam!”

The track behind him immediately blown by the cyclone as Liu Yi’s feet landed on the other section of the track and continued to dash away.

Liu Yi’s speed went to the extreme, both of his hands unceasingly spewed out the icy-frost, accelerating his slide.

If only he can use the power of Red Blood Sutra Code, that would be nice. The flame acceleration is definitely better than ice acceleration!

Failed to hit her target, Poison Jasmine go increasingly violent.

She growled, pressed her hands together and squeezed out a group of cyclone and then sent them away to the already in the distant Liu Yi.

Such as the power of the fourth star.

The track behind Liu Yi broke apart into pieces.

‘F\*ck....this is too thrilling....’

‘It seems like my life has been completely messed up, getting drawn into the activity that I previously would never have imagined.’

Even though he complained, Liu Yi still has to run away.

When he was still wildly rushing forward, a figure suddenly appeared in front of him.

None other than the transformed Poison Jasmine.

“What the....why do you keep on tightly entangle me....”

Liu Yi’s heart twitched, “Am I so unlucky in love this year (rotten peach blossom)?”

“Boom!”

Poison Jasmine stretched out a finger and sent out an airwave attack at Liu Yi, making him felt as if he was directly hit by a truck head-on. His whole body flew out like a shell, and finally smashed into the ground with a loud thud.

Liu Yi’s vision went dark.

He felt all his internal organs twitched, several of his bones also broke.

‘Bloody hell....this woman is too terrifying....’

‘A fourth star....’

Liu Yi finally tasted the true terror of a fourth star power.

The evil ghost that he previously encountered was also a fourth star, but he finally able to deal with him only with luck, and the power of his other personality....

‘Do I have to always rely on the other me to fix my problem?’

“Hehe....Liu Yi....Let me help you....”

At this time, a voice sounded inside Liu Yi’s head.

“Only I....can help solve all of your problems....”

“No, I will rely on my own!”

“I am you, you are me....”

“You are not me....you’re just my dark side!”

Liu Yi grimaced in pain, suppressing the dark thoughts that rose up in his mind and crawled up from the broken iron.

His body was badly hurt with several broken bones, making the corner of Liu Yi’s mouth twitched.

Liu Yi activated his Demonic and Immortal energy, making them circulated, unceasingly healing his injuries.

“Die....”

The floating in the air Poison Jasmine flung a cyclone toward Liu Yi.

The cyclone blasted Liu Yi’s body once again, blowing him far away and finally fell to the ground.

“Poof....”

Liu Yi spewed out a mouthful of blood, splashing the ground in front of him. The pattern was as beautiful as a blooming rose.

His consciousness was similar to a shattered bone.

In a trance, a voice roared inside his mind.

“Let me help you! As long as you let me, you are invincible!”

“I don’t want....I want....to rely on myself....”

“Do not exclude yourself! Liu Yi, you got the power, let me help you deal all those damn enemies of yours!”

“No! I am not going to kill her!”

Liu Yi shouted in his mind, “She is just a pitiful person who is controlled by her own power....”

Toward this Poison Jasmine, he saw his own vague reflection on her.

“My strength....will not be used for killing....but to be used as protection....”

“Without absolute power, who are you going to protect!”

The other voice roared, “You can’t even protect Murong Die! You can’t even please Ma Yixuan, what can you do! As long as you let me awake, completely taking over you, no matter what you want, power, women, the world, it’s all yours!”

Hearing these words, Liu Yi’s mind started to wander.

‘In the end, why do I still insist on this?’

“Boom!”

At this time, several large cyclones blasted Liu Yi’s body.

Liu Yi was thrown away again, lying on the ground.

He was seriously injured in many places. His back was horribly mangled, blood flowing out, dripping all over the ground.

This blood loss continued to take away Liu Yi’s physical strength and awareness.

This made Liu Yi increasingly weak, and everything before him became a blur.

An old man’s figure slowly appeared in front of Liu Yi’s body.

With him was a dazzling light. He stretched out his hand toward Liu Yi.

“Come on, go with me.”

“Grandpa?”

Liu Yi looked at the old man and blankly said.

“I....am going to die?”

“Come, go with grandpa to Heaven. There are two winged beautiful girls, a wonderful place.”

“Really? Are you serious?”

“Of course, when has Grandpa ever deceived you.”

Liu Yi blankly extended his hand to reach out his Grandpa.

“Liu Yi! Liu Yi!”

At this time on Liu Yi’s ears, vaguely, as if coming from the distant, came a couple of anxious calls.

“Liu Yi....wake up....you can’t give up....”

‘This sound....’

‘Is it Fox sister’s....’

‘Right!....I can’t die yet....If I die....Fox sister will also die....there’s also Murong Die, she certainly could not survive....’

‘I....have to keep on living....’

‘Have to survive....’

Liu Yi told himself to rely on his own strength to keep on living.

“I’m sorry, Grandpa....I can’t go to Heaven to see the winged girls with you....Because....I have a couple of very important people here.”

Liu Yi said, the immortal energy inside his body suddenly accelerated.

The white stream of qi led the other two stream of qi to make a complete big revolution and continued to circulate crazily.

At this moment, Liu Yi’s entire body seemed to be slightly changing.

Cool feeling wandered inside his body.

His injuries seemed to have not hurt so much.

“Die....”

At this time, the floating in the air Poison Jasmine, stretched out a finger, condensed out a cyclone and swung it straight at Liu Yi.



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 131

## Chapter 131 I Am Hot

The air was distorted.

The power of this cyclone was very strong. If it hit Liu Yi, it would definitely annihilate him.

Lin Tong suddenly gritted her teeth, turned into a red light and, in a blink of an eye, coalesced into a human form, becoming a spirit essence, standing in front of Liu Yi.

Just then, the air under the red sky of the late Autumn suddenly floated with white snowflakes.

A revolving blue-white ice rolled around Liu Yi's body and spread out.

Lin Tong was surprised but immediately understood. She quickly went back to her little Fox form and landed on the side, looking at the roaring spinning ice.

The air wave fell on top of the roaring ice and instantly cancelled each other out.

Lin Tong's eyes widened in surprise. She discovered that Liu Yi's power....right now has become very voluminous and billowing like a rushing of a turbulent wave.

A portion of immortal energy dispersed on all direction.

The strength of Liu Yi's current immortal energy actually surpassed that of his dark personality!

‘...What just happened....exactly...’

Lin Tong opened her Eyes of The Star Jade, and looked at the Immortal Cultivation Universe's Chart inside Liu Yi's body!

The third star jade was impressively lit up with dazzling light, surrounded by three forces.

The white stream of qi was the most powerful, the black and red stream of

qi silently wound on the side.

Immortal-Evil, all into one.

A Sovereign is easy to become a devil, while difficult to become immortal even in a millennium.

Although Liu Yi was constantly being influenced by the Demonic and Devil qi, what is rare was that, his awe-inspiring righteousness has never changed.

At this time, his breakthrough was complete, all of Liu Yi's barrier were broken through.

His strength finally reached the third star jade....

'This also means, I can be free from Liu Yi's body....'

Without knowing why, when she thought about this, Lin Tong's heart was somewhat ached.

'Why am I feeling hurt....'

'Must be because I'm forced to changed into my human form just a moment ago....yeah, that's right, it must be so....'

"Sssh...."

Her attack failed, the spiritual form of Poison Jasmine was definitely angry.

She raised both of her hands, her palms faced against Liu Yi, sending out cyclones after cyclones, continuously bombarding Liu Yi.

"Mountain Mist...."

At this time, within the roaring ice, came Liu Yi's voice.

A huge frost palm print of a three or four meters in diameter, flew out from the roaring ice to welcome those cyclones.

"Boom! Boom! Boom!"

The cyclones, one by one, hit the frost palm print and blasted out.

The ice chipped away in all directions, but the frost palm print was still largely intact and continued to charge forward and then finally arrived in front of Poison Jasmine's body.

“Boom!”

Poison Jasmine was thrown upside down very far. The frost palm print also completely broke off her shock wave blast.

The roaring ice gradually dissipated, and Liu Yi came out from the inside.

His attire has some slight change.

His suit collar was dotted with white snowflakes.

The clothes under the suit turned into a white shirt, and the red scarf changed into a red tie and squeezed under the shirt collar.

Liu Yi's sleeve cuffs and trousers hems were adorned with dots of white snowflakes pattern.

His hair has several strands of blue and white mixed therein.

He held one of his palms before him, apparently having sent out a palm strike.

His other hand was inside his pocket. With such a cool appearance, Lin Tong thought that the other Liu Yi has awoken.

“Nice power, all the injuries turn out okay.”

Liu Yi put his palm down, touched his own body, and said with surprise.

Seeing him like this, Lin Tong breathed a sigh of relieve.

It appears this was the original Liu Yi....

Not being encroached by his black belly (two faced) character....that was really great...

Breakthrough the third star jade....from that day, Liu Yi was a genuine immortal cultivator.

He was no longer a little newbie.

“Die, go die!”

That spiritual body state of Poison Jasmine, after being sent flying by Liu Yi, apparently infuriated.

The airwaves around her constantly rolled and formed several true black

whirlwinds on her left and right sides, like a several Black Dragon.

“That girl is going to retaliate....big fool, be careful!”

Lin Tong cautioned.

“I know, Fox sister! Look at me....although I am only a third star jade....but I’m not the same as before!”

Liu Yi obviously felt he has some transformation.

His way of thinking was clearer.

At present, not only he can use his immortal power.

He felt that he could use all the three power inside his body.

But it was primarily the Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra and the Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra. The Red Blood Sutra Code was only a supplement.

Liu Yi’s power was not a simple third star jade power....

His Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra plus his Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra, both have the power of third star jade.

While his Heavenly Fox Heart Sutra plus his Red Blood Sutra Code, both also have the power of third star jade.

If all his three forces can be fully mobilised....

Then, to defeat a four star jade expert....should not be a difficult problem.

But unfortunately, Liu Yi felt his Devil qi was still like a wild horse, making him difficult to tame.

Although he has smartened up now, if he wanted to truly mobilize, it was still tough.

However....there must be a way.

“Whoosh whoosh whoosh!”

These black whirlwinds suddenly rushed toward Liu Yi.

Liu Yi stepped on the Spirit Fox Steps, turned into several afterimages and instantly dodge those cyclones.

The roaring whirlwinds entangled all things around them, making the

surrounding seats and facilities in the Amusement Park twisted and broke down.

Luckily Liu Yi has brought Poison Jasmine far away from their original encounter. Otherwise, it will definitely affect Murong Die.

Liu Yi rejoiced in his heart.

The several black whirlwinds that were controlled by Poison Jasmine continued to sweep over toward Liu Yi.

Those whirlwinds directly moved from several directions toward Liu Yi at the center.

“Liu Yi.... Be careful....”

Lin Tong was very concerned.

Those cyclones have blocked all his exits.

“Don’t worry, Fox sister.”

A confident smile hung on Liu Yi’s face as his palm mercilessly struck the ground.

“Desolate Flame!”

The first palm strike of the Great Brilliant Sun Palm.

The ground under Liu Yi’s feet suddenly covered with a thick layer of ice.

This layer of ice burst open and spread out around him.

The surrounding whirlwinds were impacted by this blast of ice and immediately twisted.

Taking advantage while two of the whirlwinds exposed a gap between them, Liu Yi immediately stepped on the ice-skates and quickly passed through, escaping the siege of these cyclones.

Lin Tong was surprised.

She did not expect Liu Yi’s judgement to improve so much!

His fighting awareness was getting higher and higher....

‘His fighting ability, from the newbie stage to the present....’

‘Really is the result of my teaching?’

‘As for me....on the aspect of fighting....it was as if, somewhat inferior to Liu Yi....’

‘Could it be, Liu Yi is really a genius?’

‘This is impossible....’

‘Liu Yi is a fool, a simple-minded fool.’

Lin Tong always felt that her encounter with Liu Yi was similar to Huang Rong’s encounter with Guo Jing (Condor Heroes).

That simple-minded Liu Yi, sometimes, totally made her want to die in anger.

But the present Liu Yi....who stood before her, in Lin Tong’s eyes, his figure was taller and more straight.

Moreover....she was filled with a sense of security.

Liu Yi....was no longer that green youth she previously met....

“Come on....I’ll deal with you....”

Liu Yi rubbed his hands, looking at the floating in the air Poison Jasmine.

This breakthrough of the third star jade, although it didn’t give him a new ability, he was now able to fully control his Amorous Ripple Hand.

Liu Yi looked at the floating in the air, oppressive woman, and said, “I will wake you up....”

“Die....”

Poison Jasmine stretched out her finger, pointing at Liu Yi. A black whirlwind suddenly flew out from her finger and went straight at Liu Yi.

Liu Yi stretched out his left hand, which was fully covered with ice, forming a thick ice claws and welcomed the rushing tornado that was coming from above.

“Pow!”

A lot of ice chips floated up, like snowflakes, blown away in the night.

Liu Yi's left hand literally caught this violent black whirlwind.

Meanwhile, Liu Yi exploded out his icy-frost power.

"Vein Seal!"

This whirlwind started to unceasingly condensed into ice.

Soon, a long column of frozen ice appeared between Liu Yi and that Poison Jasmine.

Liu Yi jumped, stepped on ice-skates and rapidly rushed toward Poison Jasmine.

Liu Yi's speed was increasingly fast, gliding above the ice column like a wind.

"Whiz whiz whiz!"

But Poison Jasmine obviously will not let Liu Yi easily come close. She released a cyclone along the track toward Liu Yi.

But Liu Yi's body magically moved down. In a blink of an eye, he hung upside down from the ice column and continued to slide.

The skates and the ice column seemed to have a mysterious suction force, keeping Liu Yi from falling down.

With such a circular motion, he directly evaded the cyclone.

For the next few cyclones, Liu Yi dodged using the same method.

His whole body glid upside down around the icicle and, in the blink of an eye, has bypassed all those cyclones and came to the front of Poison Jasmine's body.

An invisible air wave protected Poison Jasmine.

Liu Yi maliciously struck with his right palm

"Desolate Flame!"

"Bang!"

This palm mercilessly hit that wall of air.

Suddenly, Liu Yi's palm stopped followed by the tremendous impact

sound.

The four star automatic defense was very tough....

Liu Yi felt his chest tightened, his blood swelled upward.

Obviously, he was shocked by this reaction force.

But Liu Yi did not give up. His eyes burst out a dazzling light.

“Krak krak krak....”

The wall of air suddenly froze into ice.

Liu Yi's right hand broke through the ice wall and came before Poison Jasmine's face.

The power of Desolate Flame instantly faded away.

Liu Yi launched his Amorous Ripple Hand and caught Poison Jasmine's forehead.

The whole cyclone around Poison Jasmine's body was instantly gone.

Her body also lost the ability to float and, along with the broken icicle as well as Liu Yi's body, fell to the ground together.

While he kept on clasping Poison Jasmine's forehead with his right hand, Liu Yi supported her body. His left hand unceasingly erupted out blue-white frost to control their momentum as they charged into the ground so as not to experience a hard landing.

At last, when they finally landed on the ground, Poison Jasmine breathed heavily again and again.

Her whole tender body collapsed into Liu Yi's bosom.

Her voice echoed near Liu Yi's ears.

“Ehm....I....I am hot....”

Liu Yi's firm and upright belief almost collapsed at that moment.

—



# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 132

## Chapter 132 Acknowledge You As Master

“I am so hot....take, take off my clothes....”

Poison Jasmine’s faint gasping voice, blew like a fragrant flower near Liu Yi’s ear.

Liu Yi’s willpower almost collapsed.

‘F\*ck....no, it seems my Amorous Ripple Hand was at work here....’

‘Should I let loose my right hand?....’

‘But if I release her, is Poison Jasmine going to erupt again?’

‘No, I need to completely destroy her spiritual body state....’

‘This is also....for Poison Jasmine’s sake....’

‘Alas, in order to help others, I have to endure such great torment....’

‘Liu Yi, Liu Yi, you are the living Lei Feng (The model citizen)!’

‘Top notch moral quality!’

‘Good people, genuinely good people!’

For his noble character, Liu Yi admired himself to the max.

But Poison Jasmine’s body started to rub against his body while her pair of hands started to stroke his back.

Her ample chest rubbed against Liu Yi’s chest, making Liu Yi somewhat unable to control himself ‘I never thought....being harassed by a woman....would lead to happiness....’

Liu Yi’s breathing became slightly heavy.

This was a test of his willpower....

Two little men appeared on both of Liu Yi’s side.

The little man in a suit with glasses nudged his glasses and said.

“Liu Yi, you can’t take advantage of other people’s condition, this is not the

behavior of an honorable gentleman.”

“F\*ck, since the meat has arrived in front of the mouth, there’s no reason not to eat!”

The other tiny evil Liu Yi waved his tail and said, “Quick! Get on top of her, end your more than ten years of virginity!”

“How can you do this? Liu Yi, don’t forget, we are an honorable gentleman! Pursuing a girl must certainly be in the open and aboveboard, am I right? This girl was confused by your shady method, even if you sleep with her, she does not love you. If you do such thing, what’s the difference between you and Lan He?”

‘That’s right....’

‘I must not do such a wicked thing.’

‘Only Lan He and his gang would do such a shady method to acquire girls.’

‘If I like a girl, I must obtain her heart first.’

‘Let alone this girl only meet me by chance. If I take this opportunity to sleep with her....’

‘That’s too evil!’

Liu Yi waved his hand and pinched the little devil until it disappeared and then high-fived the little man with glasses to celebrate their success to stay as an honorable gentleman.

“Liu Yi, that’s right, this is the right thing to do, we are an honorable gentleman, we....”

Before the little man with glasses finished his words, Poison Jasmine’s suddenly hooked her arms around Liu Yi’s neck; the whole body was like an octopus hanging on Liu Yi’s body. And that lusciously hot and wet sexy little mouth kissed Liu Yi’s mouth.

Liu Yi was stunned.

‘My first kiss....gone, just like that?’

‘Sh\*t....I’m being taken advantage by Poison Jasmine!’

‘It’s gone!’

‘My innocent!’

That seemed to be Poison Jasmine’s first kiss too; her action was too inexperienced.

Occasionally her teeth would nibble on Liu Yi’s lips, making Liu Yi felt somewhat pain.

But Poison Jasmine was indeed a professional....assassin.

Soon, she mastered that skill, gently biting on Liu Yi’s lower lip.

Liu Yi’s whole body went stiff, didn’t know how to respond to Poison Jasmine’s action.

And then, Poison Jasmine’s fragrant tongue crossed into the center of Liu Yi’s mouth.

“F\*ck his mother’s second son!”

That little Liu Yi with eyeglasses instantly took off his glasses, ripped open his suit, and growled.

“What are you waiting for! Get on top!”

“On top your sister....”

Liu Yi quickly pinched away the little man and then trying desperately to restrain himself, spending a tremendous amount of willpower to finally push away Poison Jasmine.

At the same time, he withdrew his right hand.

The evil right hand....

The source of this trouble.

After Liu Yi pulled back his right hand, Poison Jasmine woke up from her trance.

Although her body was slightly weak, she recovered all her sanity.

Poison Jasmine’s whole body froze....

Her body still hung on Liu Yi’s body; the two people looked at each other in

the eyes.

Seeing Poison Jasmine's seductive lips, Liu Yi couldn't help but licked his lips.

"Aaa!"

At this time, Poison Jasmine finally, completely sober.

She screamed, seemingly thinking that Liu Yi was going to get on top of her.

But soon after she remembered what happened and felt she was cheated....

Therefore, Poison Jasmine fiercely bit on Liu Yi's neck.

"F\*ck! It hurts, hurts, hurts....."

Liu Yi felt that his neck was about to be bitten off.

"You....are you a bloodsucking vampire...."

"I am going to bite you to death....You son of a b\*tch...."

Poison Jasmine still maintain her bite while mercilessly squeezed out these words.

"I didn't mean it, OK....It's obvious that you're the one who take the initiative to kiss me! My first kiss, has been taken by you, and now you also bite my neck, don't be unreasonable!"

Liu Yi shouted.

Poison Jasmine almost faint with anger.

"I am a girl....who's first kiss is more important!?"

She didn't know how Liu Yi did it, but it certainly made her turned into a lustful woman.

'I also never kiss anyone before this....'

'In the end....I actually kiss a young high school student on my own initiative....'

'Moreover....moreover, it's the shameful tongue kiss....'

She is a professional killer....

A professional killer....how could she made a mistake like this....

She actually....kissed her own target....

‘My God....’

‘How can I call myself a killer....’

‘My reputation....’

‘All gone!’

‘Too hateful....’

Right now, Poison Jasmine very much wanted to kill Liu Yi as quickly as possible.

But she also knew she didn’t have the ability....

Previously....she must’ve entered the terrible state once again.

The only person besides Liu Yi, who saw this state....was her father....

Her father was a legendary hit man....but as soon as he saw this terrible state, he died.

To this end, Poison Jasmine always regretted it.

Therefore, she tried to be an outstanding killer, then exercised herself, trying to suppress this state.

But this time....she actually failed to contain it.

Moreover, unexpectedly the opposite student actually survived and even succeeded in dealing with this state.

‘Is he really a human....’

‘Is he stronger than my father?’

‘This...how is it possible!’

‘An ordinary high school student, how could he possibly be more formidable than my father!’

“If you don’t loosen your mouth....I’m not going to be polite anymore!”

Liu Yi was badly bitten and couldn't help but shouted.

If he didn't have a strong physique, he would have long been bitten to death by Poison Jasmine.

"I'm going to bite you to death!"

Poison Jasmine wasn't planning to let Liu Yi be polite to her; she won't stop until she dies.

Her first kiss was gone....

Her killer reputation (face) was thoroughly discredited.

Liu Yi extended his left hand, outstretched his index and middle finger and activated his Vein Seal power to flood the two fingers.

After his third star breakthrough, Liu Yi gained new insight on utilising his power.

In his vision, Liu Yi can see his own blood vessels position.

Therefore, he also knew the location of other people's blood vessels.

He directly put these fingers on Poison Jasmine's blood vessels position.

Immediately, Poison Jasmine's blood slightly stopped flowing.

Her body went stiff, her vision turned dark, and her mouth subconsciously loosened Liu Yi's neck. Her whole body froze to the ground.

"You....what did you do to me...."

Poison Jasmine can only move her eyes and mouth. She stood there in panic and asked Liu Yi.

"This is just a move to keep you calm for a while."

Liu Yi secretly delighted.

'It seems like my abilities have improved a lot!'

'This time....I can do the D-level mission alone!'

If I can completely utilise all the three forces....Perhaps, I can even challenge the higher task.'

'I need to keep on training.'

‘And strive to become stronger!’

Thinking that he still have to confront the Great God Cult, and the other problems, Liu Yi felt he should continue to better himself.

“You, you....”

Poison Jasmine was shocked to the extreme.

“Me what?”

Liu Yi was considering whether or not to give her several more Vein Seal, to keep her well-behaved.

This girl’s dangerous factor was too high.

“You....take me as your disciple.”

Poison Jasmine suddenly said.

“What?”

Liu Yi almost jumped in scare.

‘What the hell?’

‘This assassin girl want to worship me as master?’

‘F\*ck....this has to be a mistake....’

‘What a joke!’

“I want you to accept me as your disciple....I want to become the best killer in the world!”

Poison Jasmine said.

“F\*ck, are you kidding me.”

Liu Yi waved his hand again and again, “You are a killer, and I am a student, how could I be your Master!”

“You are stronger than me, you can be my Master!”

Poison Jasmine firmly said.

“That’s not enough. I am not a killer.”

Liu Yu would never agree to become the Master of a killer....even if said

disciple is a beauty....that's not enough.

Let alone, he still didn't know what exactly this girl's face look like....

'Wearing a mask....'

'If she's ugly....'

'Then my first kiss was robbed by an ugly woman....sh\*t....'

Although Liu Yi is usually impartial with people's appearance, his first kiss....is not a trivial matter!

"Besides....you are a professional....why must you look for me...."

"You do know that I am a professional."

Poison Jasmine's voice carried a threat, "If you don't teach me....I will haunt you....and I will kill you...."

"How could you!"

Liu Yi suddenly somewhat anxious, and said, "How could there be people like you!"

"I am a killer."

"F\*ck....you can't even kill me!"

"My goal is to harass you."

Poison Jasmine conjured up a smile on her lips, "If you don't want to be harassed by me, just let me worship you as Master!"

'F\*ck!'

'How could this threat be used as an argument for a Master-disciple relationship!'

'I would rather die than agreeing to this threat!'

"No way!"

"Then just wait for the endless harassment from a professional killer."

After saying that, Poison Jasmine was almost able to control her own body again.

She turned and walked back to her waterproof bag.



She picked her bag filled with professional killer arms and walked away.

Liu Yi wanted to cry, but no tears would come out.

‘Truly unreasonable girl!’

However, he didn’t have the time to think about this now, because Murong Die still lay near that waterproof bag.

In order for this girl to avoid any danger, Liu Yi quickly returned to her side, holding the princess in his arms.

‘I finally able to control my Amorous Ripple Hand....’

‘This feeling is excellent....’

When Liu Yi was filled with emotion, the girl in his arms suddenly chirped twice, seemingly about to wake up.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 133

## Chapter 133 Go To Your Home

At this time, Poison Jasmine's figure has disappeared into the night. This female killer went to God knows where.

Liu Yi's clothes had changed back into his school uniform when Poison Jasmine woke up.

Murong Die faintly chirped twice, sober in Liu Yi's bosom.

"Where am I....what happens?"

Murong Die discovered she was lying in the arms of Liu Yi; her whole body was hugged by him. Her heart immediately filled with sweet delight, but also slightly trembled.

Just a moment ago....

Someone seemed to chase them....and, she noticed that person threw a canister-like thing, and then she remembered nothing.

"You inhaled a sleeping gas just a moment ago and fell asleep."

Liu Yi explained, "After I beat the killer away, you woke up."

"You said I'm like a pig...."

Murong Die pursed her mouth and said, "This big miss didn't mean to fall asleep....did you fight off the killer?"

"You see, I'm just a messenger."

Liu Yi vaguely laughed.

"As long as there's justice, no need to be afraid, no matter what kind of evil it is."

"Humph!"

Murong Die didn't believe in Liu Yi's nonsense, but it seemed no one came after them anymore.

"You this fellow....before this, I never knew that you are actually so

formidable.”

“That’s because you didn’t take a closer look.”

Liu Yi smiled mysteriously at Murong Die, “Moreover, my grandpa said, a man has to be low-key.”

Hearing the words from Liu Yi, several words suddenly flashed through Murong Die’s mind.

You can’t judge a person by appearance....

This saying was really appropriate if applied to Liu Yi.

She remembered at that time when she and Lele took the bus. When Lele pointed at Liu Yi and shouted his name, she didn’t have any impression on him.

But in less than a few months....this youth, has dug deep into her heart.

‘Liu Yi, Liu Yi....what charm you have in your body....’

While he was holding Murong Die in his arms, Liu Yi suddenly remembered it was late, and he should send her back.

“Right! Murong Die, I should send you back home.”

“Back home?”

Murong Die suddenly blinked twice, “This big miss doesn’t want to go home.”

“If not home, where do you want to go then....”

Liu Yi said, “Even if you’re angry with your dad, you can’t just run away from home, that’s a childish act. Be good okay, I’ll send you home.”

“I don’t want to!”

Murong Die desperately struggled to get away from Liu Yi’s arm, “Let go of me, you smelly rogue!”

Cold (-sweat, speechless)....

‘How could I suddenly be promoted to smelly rogue!’

Liu Yi had to put Murong Die down.

After Murong Die this girl landed on the ground, she angrily walked toward the outside of the Amusement Park.

Liu Yi quickly followed behind her.

“Big miss Murong, where are you going!?”

“Humph! Where this big miss is going to go is none of your business!”

Murong Die didn’t look back and said, “You don’t need to care about me anymore!”

“Hey, hey....do n’t talk like that....the night is so cold, where are you going to sleep, you could catch a cold.”

“None of your concern! In any case, you’re a jerk!”

‘Does Murong Die really hate me?’

Liu Yi felt weird.

He opened his eyes of favorable impression.

On Murong Die’s head, suddenly floated a string of numbers.

Favorability: 58.

‘Holy sh\*t!’

‘It’s actually 58!’

‘With such a high degree of favorability, how could she lost such a big temper at me!’

“Murong Die, stop running will you!”

After he figured it out, Liu Yi pursued Murong Die from behind.

“Who do you think you are? This big miss’ housekeeper? Leave me alone. This big miss doesn’t want to see you!”

“I’m not sending you home, okay!”

Liu Yi has no other choice than to turn 180 degrees on his decision.

“Wherever you go, I’ll go with you, OK?”

“Really?”

Murong Die halted her footsteps, turned her head around, and looked at Liu Yi suspiciously.

“Of course, it’s true!”

Liu Yi nodded, while thinking, ‘finally have some effect....’

‘Girl...really is a lot of trouble....’

“You said this yourself!”

Murong Die seemed to seize this opportunity, and said, “But this big miss is now a bit sleepy. I want to find a place to take a shower and get a good night’s rest.”

‘Your mother....’

‘This girl has just taken a bath and slept!’

‘She even slept a sleeping beauty sleep while I’m being surrounded by perils.’

‘Girl is really a strange species!’

“Then let us go find a Hotel....”

Liu Yi thought, ‘this girl doesn’t want to go home, so I have to let her stay outside.’

“This big miss doesn’t bring any money with her.”

Murong Die spread out her hands and said.

“Shoot, a big miss like you go out without bringing any money?”

“What? What’s wrong with that?”

“Nothing....what now then.”

“This big miss want to stay in your house!”

Murong Die’s words were truly astonishing.

“What?”

Liu Yi was petrified.

‘Is this a joke....’

‘Murong Die the wealthy big miss, want to stay in my house?’

‘Murong Die....is not kidding is she!’

“My, my house?”

“Yes, don’t think I don’t know. Your parents rarely stay at home all year round.”

Murong Die said, “I’m sure nobody is in your house tonight. This big miss will only stay for one night, ok?”

“This....”

Liu Yi was somewhat awkward, thinking.

‘In case my mom suddenly get back and saw a beautiful girl sleep in my room....’

‘She would not appreciate my picking up girl skill....rather, a beating would be inevitable....’

‘I still want to live several years more.’

“Humph, if you don’t want to, just forget it!”

Murong Die was about to burst with anger.

‘Does a man like him really exists!’

‘Is he still a man!’

“This big miss will sleep on the street! Sleeping in a dumpster is better than seeing you, you son of a b\*tch!”

With that, Murong Die turned around and walked.

Liu Yi quickly reached out and pulled Murong Die’s arm.

“What are you doing? Let go of me, this is bullying, I will shout for help!”

Murong Die shouted.

In this middle of the night....if the police were provoked, then....

Liu Yi quickly said.

“My big miss Murong, don’t shout, I’ll take you to my house, okay?”

“No! You make me look like I’m a child who begs you to go to your home!”

Murong Die immediately said, “This big miss doesn’t have a place to live!”

“Yes, yes, yes, my big miss Murong, I beg you to go to my house, OK?”

Liu Yi wryly smiled, “You’re a girl who runs outside in the middle of the night....but the murderer in the 531 case is still on the loose in the vicinity, aren’t you afraid?”

“This....”

Hearing what Liu Yi said, Murong Die was indeed nervous.

“Therefore, it’s better to go to my house. It’s safe there.”

“Humph....this threat of death is your ruse to beg me to go to your house!”

Murong Die haughtily raised her chin, and said, “This big miss is not asking you to go to your home!”

“Yes, yes, yes, I’m begging you.”

“Very well, if this big miss doesn’t go, it means I’ll let you lose too much face. If you lose your face, perhaps you will take things too hard and commit suicide. In order to prevent you from killing yourself, this big miss would reluctantly promise you.”

Liu Yi was speechless.

This Murong Die was too much!

But, in any case, he managed to temporarily calm the girl.

‘I hope my mom doesn’t come home tonight.’

“This big miss is tired, carry me on your back.”

Murong Die stretched out her hands and said to Liu Yi.

‘This girl....’

Liu Yi has no other way but to obediently squat down

He has become this girl’s royal mount for the night.

‘Truly....a female knight!’

Murong Die happily lay on Liu Yi’s back, enjoying the pleasant sensation of

the night ride.

‘Humph, so long as I show him my power, I can certainly defeat this d\*mn smelly guy!’

‘Murong Die, Murong Die, sooner or later you’ll be able to make this guy worship under your feet!’

While Murong Die was pondering about how to deal with Liu Yi, Murong Hong was nervously walking back and forth in a spacious Hall.

“Why there’s still no news....”

“Sir, would you like me to find out?”

Wang An can see Murong Hong’s anxiety.

No matter how you look at it, the precious daughter of this unofficial Emperor of the Northern Dragon City was still missing.

And the Heavenly List’s assassin that they sent out has not given them any news even after waiting for a long time.

This matter was indeed odd.

“Very well, you can go!”

Murong Hong has never been so anxious.

Even when in the past he was framed and almost bankrupt, he was not this anxious. Finally, after calmly thinking out a solution, turning defeat into victory, not only he successfully navigated through the crisis, he framed his rival and acquired his company.

Murong Die....is the Achilles heel (soft underbelly) of this Northern Dragon City’s unofficial Emperor.

“Wang An, I give you a mission to bring back little Die home safe and sound. If you want to bring any support, just tell me.”

Murong Hong gave his command.

“Understood, sir. Wait here for the good news.”

Wang An nodded his head, turned around and walked out of the door.

He never let Murong Hong down.



He would not let him disappointed tonight.

Wang An walked out of the Villa entrance, came to the courtyard, lit a cigarette, and smoked.

Heavenly List assassin didn't send any messages even after this long....there's only one possibility.

Poison Jasmine failed.

Although he didn't dare to believe this fact, Wang An was a senior police criminal investigator. He knew that in order to deduce one thing, the first thing to do is to get out of his own shackles of thinking.

And who knew, perhaps the master behind Liu Yi's back suddenly lend a hand to help him.

After much thoughts, he finally went straight to the garage, got into an SUV, and prepared to go directly to Liu Yi's house.

His big miss went out without bringing any cash; the purse was still in her room.

And Liu Yi didn't seem like a wealthy youth, in this late at night, no matter where the two of them go, they will certainly get back to Liu Yi's home.

'If I want to look for big miss, that place is the likeliest place to find her.'

'Liu Yi, Liu Yi....what kind of ability you have that could possibly make big miss dead set on you. Which in the end even make her doesn't even hesitate to quarrel and become enemy with the old master?'

Since the Madame passed away, the relationship between the big miss and the Master has been excellent. After all, big miss is personally raised by the Master.'

'Worry that big miss will be deprived of fatherly love, the Master never invite a nanny to take care of big miss.'

'But now....'

'Alas, Liu Yi, you make a wrong move this time, why for God's sake must you invite the wrath of the Master.'

'The unofficial Emperor of Northern Dragon City....even if the Heavenly

List's assassin fails today, Master can continue to put a higher bounty to attract the higher rank assassin.'

'By that time, Liu Yi would not be able to deal with it anymore....'

Wang An looked at the night sky outside of the window and suddenly felt this Northern Dragon City doesn't seem to be so calm anymore.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 134

## Chapter 134 Art Magazine

“Your room is actually not as messy as I imagined!”

Murong Die looked around Liu Yi’s bedroom and somewhat surprisedly said.

“Of course....having a clean freak mother in the house, it was inevitable....”

Liu Yi’s mom is a head nurse and a clean freak.

Even if she had a tiring day, after coming home and saw the house did not live up to expectations, would clean it up before going to sleep.

That included Liu Yi’s room.

“What is this thing?”

Seeing a large thing on Liu Yi’s table, Murong Die asked in surprised.

“Is it some kind of high-tech equipment?”

“That is a computer....”

Liu Yi awkwardly said.

“This is a computer?”

Murong Die asked in amazement, “How could this be, you think this big miss never saw a computer! I have one in my room!”

“That’s your room....”

Liu Yi thought, ‘How could there be no difference between the have and the haven not?’

“Your monitor....why is it so big? Does it have any special features?”

Murong Die asked, perplexed.

“Um....there’s a unique picture processing function.”

Liu Yi thought for a moment and said, “It allows the screen to remove the clothes of the actress or actor.”

“Oh....so magical.....”

Murong Die nodded her head, apparently unaware of the concept of adult films.

“Go help this big miss heat the water. This big miss wants to take a bath.”

Murong Die did not bother to deal with computer things and stretched out. Her languid appearance was infinitely graceful.

“My whole body is sweaty, sticky, and ugh, dirty....”

Girls do love cleanliness.

Liu Yi has no choice but to heat the water for Murong Die.

“Fox sister, what do you think I should do....”

While adjusting the water heater, Liu Yi asked Lin Tong.

“This lady is not Baidu....I don’t have all the answer....”

Lin Tong was not in a good mood tonight.

“Fox sister is more powerful than Baidu....Moreover, what do we do to let Fox sister break free from the seal?”

Liu Yi has not forgotten about that.

He tried hard to make a breakthrough to the third star jade, just to let Fox sister free from the seal early.

“I have no mood tonight, let’s talk about it tomorrow.”

Lin Tong felt agitated, put off the issue brought by Liu Yi, then returned to hide inside the spiritual environment.

‘Why is Fox sister acting strange tonight?’

Liu Yi can’t figure it out, turned back to the room and suddenly saw the already took off the stocking Murong Die, her pair of white legs dangling on the bed.

“This is my first time passing the night outside the house....it feels exciting.”

Murong Die joyfully said.

Liu Yi immediately shed out cold sweat.

Kids from rich families....

He can't comprehend the logic of their thoughts.

"Don't you think our house is a bit small?"

Liu Yi couldn't help but ask.

"It's actually good!"

Murong Die looked at Liu Yi, and said, "Although it is a bit small, old, and somewhat worn out, the other's are quite good!"

"...."

'Can it still be called good?'

"At least, I feel very relax here...."

Then, Murong Die lay on the bed, holding his pillow, and said, "I don't know why....but in here....I feel very comfortable...."

Murong Die's whole body was laying on Liu Yi's bed but didn't notice her white skirt was up a bit, two white jade legs completely exposed in the air.

And between the legs, looming a tiny bud of black lace, which constantly challenged Liu Yi's mental defense.

Although Liu Yi had previously seen this set of underwear when he gave it to Murong Die, the way it was partly visible actually more seductive!

Didn't the ancient have a say?

The wife is inferior to the concubine, the concubine is inferior to stealing (someone else's wife,) stealing (someone else's wife) is inferior to unable to steal (someone else's wife.) Liu Yi swallowed down a mouthful of saliva and began the ascension of the lower part.

'Recently....Do I really unlucky in love?'

Just as Liu Yi's heart was preparing to blow off the ascension, came a tapping sound from the balcony door.

"Stupid Ox, open the door, open the door!"

‘Holy mother of sh\*t!’

All the fine hair on Liu Yi’s body stood upright.

‘F\*ck me....’

‘This has to be a mistake....’

‘How could Ma Yuanyuan suddenly came visit at this time?’

“Who’s that?”

Murong Die suddenly sat up, then strangely looked at Liu Yi.

“No wonder you don’t want me to come, turns out you’re planning a night tryst with a young girl?”

“No, it’s not like that, really!”

Liu Yi hastily said, “That’s the neighbor’s little sister, always run here when she has no other thing to do! It’s okay, if we don’t answer her, she’ll back to her house in no time.”

“Is it?”

Murong Die’s face filled with doubt and there’s an extra contempt coming out of her eyes.

Liu Yi felt truly wronged.

“Stupid Ox, open the door quickly, I see the light in your room, you must be at home!”

Liu Yi continued to pretend to hear nothing.

“If you don’t open the door, I’ll give Aunt a call, and say you don’t come home, let her get even with you!”

\*Cold sweat....

Liu Yi gorgeously defeated.

“That....Murong Die....can I wronged you this one time....”

Liu Yi was forced to say this to Murong Die.

“Oh? Wronged me how?”

Murong Die looked at Liu Yi sideways.

“Wronged you....to hid under my bed for a while....”

“What did you say?”

Murong Die almost explode with anger, “You want this big miss to hide under your bed?”

“Hush!”

Liu Yi quickly covered Murong Die’s mouth, for fear her voice would be heard by Ma Yuanyuan.

“My big missy....If you let that little girl knew there’s a girl in my room, she would surely tell my mom....at that time, you won’t feel at ease sleeping in my room....please bear with it for awhile until I send her away, okay....”

Murong Die can’t talk, stared at Liu Yi with her bright and watery eyes, and tried to kill Liu Yi with that look.

“Consider this as me begging you, okay?”

Liu Yi was going to cry.

‘I truly am a rotten peach blossom....hopelessly unlucky.’

“Humph!”

Murong Die grunted, and then fiercely bit Liu Yi’s hand.

“Ah! Are you a dog!”

Liu Yi felt pain and retracted his hand.

“You bastard....this big miss hate you so much!”

Although Murong Die swore at Liu Yi, she obediently jumped out of the bed, lie down on the floor, and went under the bed.

“This big miss do this because I want to sleep well, not because I care about you!”

She cried while crawling under the bed.

“Yes, yes, yes....Murong Die you are the best....”

Seeing Murong Die finally went under the bed, Liu Yi finally felt relieved. He pulled some part of the sheet down to block the gap under the bed.

But Murong Die under the bed was depressed.

‘Why is this happening!’

‘This big miss didn’t come here to have an affair, really!’

But soon, Murong Die found some interesting magazine under Liu Yi’s bed. She couldn’t help but borrow the weak light, thumbing through these magazines, looking at their content.

But this time, Liu Yi has come to the balcony and opened the balcony door.

“Dead stupid Ox, Smelly stupid Ox, you let me wait for so long!”

Ma Yuanyuan dressed in pajamas, came in with arms crossed, shivering in cold, “It’s freezing outside!”

“Come on....you don’t see what time it is now!”

Liu Yi said, “I was already asleep when you knocked, okay?”

“Why would you go to sleep so early?”

Ma Yuanyuan tilted her head and somewhat suspiciously looked at Liu Yi, “You’re not doing your homework?”

‘Oh sh\*t....’

Ma Yuanyuan’s reminder made Liu Yi thought about his pile of unfinished homework!

‘The evil homework....’

“I....will woke up early to finish it.”

Liu Yi wanted to cry but have no tears.

“Humph, I knew it, you’re not doing your homework, bad kid. I’ve finished all my homework.”

Ma Yuanyuan said, “But after that, the water heater in my home broke again, so I want to borrow your hot water to take a shower.”

“.....”

‘Take a shower....’

‘Since when this girl thought my house as a bathhouse?’



‘She doesn’t even pay for the entrance ticket!’

‘Totally free of charge!’

“I’ll go to your room to play the ‘Fight the Landlord’ game, and you heat the water for me!”

“It’s already heated! You can directly shower!”

Listened to this girl wanted to go to his room, Liu Yi was surprised and hastily said.

“It’s heated? So considerate.”

Ma Yuanyuan nodded her head with satisfaction, “Keep heating the water for me, I’ll be coming here to take a shower from time to time.”

‘Sh\*t....she really regard this place a free bathhouse!’

‘This have to be a joke!’

But seeing Ma Yuanyuan turned around and went to the bathroom, Liu Yi, at least, felt relieved.

‘Luckily she doesn’t come into my bedroom....’

While Ma Yuanyuan went to the bathroom, Liu Yi quickly ran to his room, crouched by the bed, and wanted to explain to Murong Die.

Never thought that Murong Die has lifted the sheet, lying under the bed while holding a magazine, indignantly waiting for him.

Seeing the magazine in Murong Die’s hand, Liu Yi’s face instantly pale.

‘Sh\*t....this is the nude magazine I hid under the bed....’

‘His mother....how could I forget about this thing!’

“Very good Liu Yi....you see what is this? This big miss’ eyes were almost blind!’

“That’s nothing....it’s just the acupuncture points chart on the human body....”

“Acupuncture points your sister....”

“Ahem....my big miss, we don’t tangle with this, okay? The neighbor’s little

sister is taking a shower, after that she will go back, be patience for a while, okay....”

“Sh\*t, she takes a shower! This big miss hasn’t even wash, still hiding under this dirty bed....and there’s also these nasty things!”

“Bear with me....You need to use the artistic point of view if you want to see this magazine.

Liu Yi pointed to the magazine and said, “You see, the curve of the human body is beautiful, compound this with the complex golden ratio, oh so magical, and so artistic....”

“Artistic my ass (originally: your head), you even reason out the adult magazine! Humph, you’re so wretched, tell me, are you having an affair with that neighbor’s little sister!”

“How could it be possible!”

Liu Yi quickly lifted up his right hand and swore, “The relationship between her and me is absolutely unblemished and pure! Stop thinking crookedly, okay!”

“Are you sure?”

Murong Die 99% suspicious.

“Definitely and certainly, she’s just the neighbor’s little sister, okay....The water heater in her house is broken, so it’s very normal to borrow the bathroom to take a shower!”

“That is true....”

Murong Die was just about to nod, but then from the bathroom came the pretty shout of Ma Yuanyuan.

“Stupid Ox, come here and rub my back!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 135

## Chapter 135 Hiding

“Liu Yi! I am going to kill you!”

Murong Die at this moment almost became violent.

“No, don’t, I’m innocent!”

Liu Yi quickly held Murong Die’s arms down, not letting her temper flared.

“Yuanyuan, no monkey business, men and women should not touch hands when they give or receive things (citation, from Mencius)!”

Liu Yi pulled his lungs and shouted, trying to settle down Ma Yuanyuan.

‘If she spouts out nonsense again, the result will be fatal!’

“You see, I’m innocent, I already let her know!”

After he shouted out, Liu Yi said to Murong Die.

Although Murong Die was still angry, this action satisfied her.

It seemed like Liu Yi is not some kind of sex maniac like she imagined.

“Ai, what are you talking about, which part of me that you haven’t seen! Come here quickly!”

Ma Yuanyuan’s words directly plunged Liu Yi into the depths of Hell.

“Liu Yi....I’ll fight you.....”

“No, no, it’s not the way you think!”

Liu Yi hastened to explain. He noticed this big miss was really going to freak out. Therefore, he argued.

“We are neighbors since childhood, and usually took a shower and played together when we were kids! As brother and sister, you know!”

He started a series of lies.

After all these things are....too complicated....

So he needed to fabricate a lie to deceive her!

“Humph, you think I would believe it?”

“But the fact is indeed like this!”

Liu Yi pointed to his nose and asked, “Murong Die, you and I were not strangers, don’t you know me already? Do I look like that kind of sex maniac?”

‘On the emotional intelligence scale, Liu Yi is more like a mentally retarded.’

‘To say he is a sex maniac....is indeed a bit too much.’

‘If he is indeed a sex maniac, he wouldn’t take so much effort....’

“Really not?”

“Really! How could we possibly have the kind of relationship that you imagine!”

“Then I can....”

When Murong Die was about to let Liu Yi off, Ma Yuanyuan’s voice rang out again.

“Oh, come on, really, haven’t you changed my sanitary pad!”

“Liu Yi! You sick pervert!”

Murong Die through gritted teeth said, “This big miss will not believe your nonsense anymore!”

“My big missy....don’t make a noise....it’s not like what you think!”

Liu Yi had to shout out, “Ma Yuanyuan, don’t talk nonsense again! Rub your own back!”

“Hateful....hateful stupid Ox! I’ll use up all your hot water so you can’t take a shower!”

The sound of Ma Yuanyuan’s complain passed through.

“Liu Yi....you super sick pervert....”

Liu Yi suffered a total scold by Murong Die.

He did not know how to cope with this young girl.

At this time, they suddenly heard footsteps coming from outside the bedroom.

Liu Yi was frightened and said.

“Big miss, bear with me!”

He quickly pushed Murong Die back under the bed, then pulled the bed sheet, and sat down on the bed.

“Stupid Ox, I finished my shower!”

Ma Yuanyuan’s hair still wet, only her upper half draped with a piece of pajama, and nothing covered her lower part, showing her bare white legs.

But the upper body pajama happened to cover her thighs, blocking the important part and her sweet B size, which was very hot.

“What are you doing here? Is it something evil?”

“How....could it be....hehe....”

Liu Yi felt someone pinched his leg; his calf muscle made a 720-degree rotation movement.

But he still supported his smiling face, showing Ma Yuanyuan his foolish laugh.

“Humph, my sister said, boys will always do some evil things!

Ma Yuanyuan pursed her lips, and said, “I came here to remind you, don’t forget, tomorrow is our sports day, don’t you forget it!”

“I know....”

Liu Yi smiled guiltily.

If it weren’t for Ma Yuanyuan’s reminder....he would have forgotten about it.

After he deals with Ma Yuanyuan’s sports thing, he would have to confront his school mid term exam....

A terrible exam....

He didn’t know if he could successfully pass it.

Since he discovered the magical effect of the breathing technique, he read all the books but never took a glance at them after that.

The rest of the time he spent on training.

Because Liu Yi discovered that studying will not help him defeat his enemies!

The only way to do that is to enhance his own strength continuously!

Although training is harder and more tiring than studying, this is Liu Yi's chosen path.

Since it has been chosen, it was necessary to firmly go all the way!

"Look at your face, you already forget about this aren't you?"

Ma Yuanyuan thought Liu Yi's smile was not confident enough. She was not a silly girl, on the contrary, she was intelligent. Therefore, with a glance, she immediately saw through his lie.

"I am not....I always remember it!"

Liu Yi cooked up a story on the fly, "I just thought if I skip classes tomorrow to go to your sports games....I don't know how I should face the teacher's anger...."

"Humph, humph, that's your problem."

Ma Yuanyuan humphed a smile, "In any case if you don't come tomorrow, I'll tell Aunty you take liberties with me!"

'Sh\*t!'

'Is there a girl this cruel!'

'Is this how she ask for help attitude!'

'This kind of thing is absolutely unforgivable!'

'Must firmly reject!'

'Liu Yi, you are an immortal cultivator, what are you afraid of!'

"Ma Yuanyuan!"

Therefore, Liu Yi, with hands on his waist, sternly called Ma Yuanyuan

with a righteous voice.

“What?”

“What time is it tomorrow?”

“It’s nine o’clock in the morning, you can come at ten; I’ll pick you up.”

Ma Yuanyuan giggled, seemingly jubilant, “Em, our two schools are close, so you know which way to go, right?”

“Yes, yes....I know, I know....”

Liu Yi quickly nodded his head to deal quickly with this girl.

Otherwise....if she continued to stay here, it would be over for him.

Previously in his room, except for his mom, no woman has ever come in.

But this time, unexpectedly there are two girls inside his room!

Liu Yi felt he had a dream!

Moreover, it was a nightmare dream!

Too miserable.

“Thank you stupid Ox....this....”

Ma Yuanyuan suddenly rubbed her hands then walked to the front of Liu Yi.

“What’s wrong? Is there anything else?”

Liu Yi asked.

Suddenly, Ma Yuanyuan’s beautiful face leaned forward, puckered her lips, and solidly planted a kiss on Liu Yi’s mouth.

“Stupid Ox, this is your reward!”

With that, before the stunned eyes of Liu Yi, the blushing Ma Yuanyuan carried her pajama pants and bounced out like a mischievous deer.

Liu Yi’s entire body was in a trance state.

‘Was it....another stolen kiss?’

‘Why this is happening again....’

‘Before this, my first kiss is stolen by that Poison Jasmine....’

‘Now, it’s stolen by Ma Yuanyuan....’

‘But Ma Yuanyuan is still a kid....’

‘I....am not committing a crime am I!’

Liu Yi has some apprehension.

‘The state are not going to arrest and execute me, right....’

‘I am innocent!’

Hearing the sound of the balcony door being closed, Liu Yi suddenly felt an extreme calf pain.

“Ah!”

He screamed out, awakened from his trance, and saw Murong Die desperately pinched his calf.

“You, you want to cut off my leg!”

Liu Yi grimaced in pain, unbearable pain.

This girl’s level of pinching technique was several stars high!

Truly deadly!

“I’ll strangle you to death, you sick pervert!”

Murong Die crawled out from under the bed but didn’t let Liu Yi off. She threw herself at him, grabbed his arm, and ruthlessly pinched it.

“This big miss will choke you to death to rid the people from harm!”

“Big miss, mercy....”

Liu Yi repeatedly begged for mercy, “You are going break my arm....”

“So what, it’s useless anyway!”

Murong Die fiercely said.

“You this girl....”

Liu Yi finally irritated by her pinch, suddenly rolled over, pressed Murong Die’s body directly with his body, and held both of her hands down, so she



can no longer continue to exert the destruction technique upon his body.

Liu Yi's body was quite heavy, after all, he is a boy.

And Murong Die is certainly not as strong as Liu Yi, so she was easily pressed down.

Her two arms were also being mercilessly pressed on the bed, unable to move.

Her two jade white legs were upright by the bedside. Liu Yi was standing at the bedside, pressing her down between her legs.

Because she struggled, her skirt was almost pulled up to the waist, the small black lace totally exposed to the air.

But the two people still unaware of that.

"Let go of me! You bastard!"

"No, I won't, if I let you go you'll pinch my arm!"

"Quickly let go! This big miss is angry!"

"D\*mn, can't you calm down a bit?"

"Let go of me, and I'll calm down!"

"Really?"

"This big miss mean what she said!"

Liu Yi loosened both of Murong Die's arms, half believing half doubting.

Murong Die promptly grasped and squeezed Liu Yi's neck.

"D\*mn! I knew I shouldn't trust you!"

Liu Yi immediately pressed Murong Die's hand again, this time, he didn't let her go.

Letting her go would likely lead to a fatal result!

And the victim is certainly not going to be Murong Die!

"D\*mn Liu Yi! You're an asshole, bastard!"

"You're the one who bully me, okay! How could you still swear at me!"

“I swear at you, what are you going to do! I curse you!”

It seemed Murong Die wasn't going to spare Liu Yi.

“Then I'm not going to let you go, go ahead swear, I'll just listen to it.”

Liu Yi has that dead-pig-is-not-afraid-of-boiled-water look.

“Liu Yi, you're a complete jerk! You, you're hurting me!”

Murong Die desperately struggled, constantly wiggling.

“Your pinch hurt me too! Why don't you say that!”

For fear Murong Die would break free, Liu Yi pressed even tighter.

At this moment, it looked like Murong Die was almost straddling over Liu Yi.

Both of her legs were wide open while Liu Yi was at the center.

“I want to bite you to death!”

Murong Die lifted her upper body and tried to bite Liu Yi's arm.

“Are you playing acrobatic with me!”

Liu Yi hastily put his body down and pressed Murong Die's upper body with his chest.

“You bastard....”

Murong Die was completely mad. She also tried to use her teeth to bite Liu Yi's neck.

But Liu Yi's neck was just healed from Poison Jasmine's bite!

How could he let his neck be bitten again!

Therefore, Liu Yi put more pressure while subconsciously looked for something to block Murong Die's mouth.

—

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 136

## Chapter 136 Iron Man

At this time, both of Liu Yi's hands were busy, so there was only one way he can stop Murong Die Liu Yi blocked Murong Die with his mouth.

Initially, it was just a subconscious movement, but the moment their four lips contacted each other, they both simultaneously awakened.

Murong Die's beautiful eyes were wide open, and her pupils were slightly enlarged, unblinkingly looked at Liu Yi.

Liu Yi himself was silly, thinking....

'I....kiss Murong Die?'

'Is tonight the night of kissing?'

'Or I'm becoming a pro in kissing, so it went down smoothly....'

Previously, Liu Yi was hardly able to hold the hand of a girl, but tonight he even kissed three girls consecutively....

This made him slightly unable to believe!

Sex life, would happily arrive just like that?

Murong Die's eyes soon became misty and cloudy.

While Liu Yi automatically opened his Eyes Of Favorable Impression and saw Murong Die's favorability toward him suddenly jumped +10 points.

'Shoot!....This kiss actually increases Murong Die's favorability this much....'

He looked at Murong Die's head again, and the favorability points were now impressively 65 points, an amazing value!

It seems like in the game of love....Any choice or any action will affect the girl's favorability.

If done right, favorability will increase.

If done wrong....favorability will drop.

‘With this many favorability points, does Murong Die like me?’

‘Unlikely.....’

‘She is, after all, a wealthy big miss who always get what she want!’

‘The boys who try to woo her should amount to a platoon.’

‘I’m just an ordinary student....Living in a small house and can only afford to buy a girl a hot spicy soup.’

‘With this condition, how could Murong Die take a fancy at me!’

‘Moreover this value is just a favorability number. When it pass 100 points, that’s the friendly level. That’s the true favorability.’

‘Above the friendly level, is the love level.’

True love is actually very difficult to achieve.

The reality is, real love need trial and time.

It’s not like I like you, you like me, the two people become a pair, and stays together.

Love and like, are two different things.

Liking a person is simple, Loving with a person is hard.

Liu Yi thought that was the reason the Eye Of Favorable Impression would put the love on such a high level.

But Murong Die probably couldn’t think Liu Yi was able to think so many messy thoughts while they were kissing.

At this time, her entire body was nervous and somewhat stiff, not sure what to do.

‘Can I....reject him?’

‘Push him away?’

‘But if I do that....Will he mad at me?’

‘But if I don’t refuse....continue to kiss....Will he think I am too easy?’

Murong Die was caught in a dilemma.

While Liu Yi, after he tasted it, found Murong Die’s lips to be sweet...very

tasty....

He couldn't help but copy the move from Poison Jasmine, gently bit Murong Die's lower lips, sucking it a couple of times.

"Em...."

Murong Die suddenly couldn't resist and chirp twice.

First kiss is like tasting delicious food, it's easy to become addicted.

Unconsciously, she couldn't bear but to respond Liu Yi back.

With a jerky movement, she learned from Liu Yi, and the two people started to deeply kiss each other.

While they were kissing, Liu Yi suddenly felt Murong Die's small fragrant tongue began to stretch over.

In automatic response, his tongue rolled out; the two tongues intertwined.

Meanwhile, one of his hand couldn't help but let loose Murong Die's arm and began to trace Murong Die's exposed white jade thigh.

Very soft, very smooth, and very delicate.

Especially coupled with Murong Die's slightly enjoined chirp, it was like injecting him with chicken blood (folk remedy), making Liu Yi seething with excitement.

His hand moved upward, continued to explore.

Murong Die was somewhat lost.

Her brain paled, didn't know what to do.

And just when Liu Yi was about to touch that small black lace, his phone suddenly rang out.

This ringtone sound instantly pulled the two people back from the edge of losing themselves.

Murong Die also completely sobered.

"This is not good!"

'Even if I like Liu Yi....I still can't do this thing with him....'

She held out her hand and pushed Liu Yi away.

Liu Yi wiped his cold sweat, standing there with a slightly pale face.

‘Shoot!....That was close....’

‘But a pity.’

‘I somehow....almost eat Murong Die....in my own room....’

Before this wasn’t the two people still a bit awkward....?

How all of a sudden progressed so fast....

Just like a dream.

“You....answer the phone....” She said with a weak voice.

Murong Die lowered her head, too afraid to look up.

“Oh....ok....”

Liu Yi also woke up from the spell, quickly picked up the phone from an unknown number.

This is called indiscriminate....

But when he picked up the phone, the other side was actually a familiar male voice.

“Liu Yi, I am Wang An.”

Wang An!

When Liu Yi heard this name, he actually started to have a cold sweat.

‘Shoot!’

‘When their family big miss almost being eaten by me just a moment ago, he suddenly makes a phone call....’

‘Is this an act of God?’

“Big miss....is there with you?”

“Wang An, what do you want?”

Liu Yi didn’t directly answer Wang An, but warily asked instead.

“I’m downstairs, let’s have a chat.”

Wang An said, and hung up the phone.

Liu Yi went to the window and really saw a black SUV parked downstairs.

Wang An stood against the car door, putting away his mobile phone.

“I’m going downstairs, you can go take a bath.”

Other people visit him on site, he has no alternative but to see.

Liu Yi told Murong Die and was about to go downstairs.

“You....where are you going....”

Murong Die suddenly caught Liu Yi’s arm and asked.

Right now, she can only depend on Liu Yi.

“I’m going downstairs to buy you something, will be back soon. You can take a bath at ease now, I won’t sneak up on you.”

Liu Yi sprinkled his words with lies.

“Okay then....”

Murong Die nodded her head, “This big miss is not afraid you’ll sneak up on her, this big miss will waste your lower body part, humph!”

Hearing Murong Die’s response, Liu Yi was relieved.

He turned around to go downstairs and arrived at the quiet neighborhood.

Wang An beckoned to Liu Yi, “You finally come down.”

“Of course, otherwise, I’m afraid your Murong Family will really come knocking at my door.”

Liu Yi directly came up with verbal satire.

“Why the harsh response.....”

“Me, harsh response?”

Liu Yi sneered, “Your Murong Family even invited an assassin to kill me. Fortunately, my Liu Yi’s blessing is big, I didn’t die. If I died, these harsh words perhaps would be directed at me.”

After breaking through the third star jade, Liu Yi’s mind and logic became sharp and sound.

Many previously impervious thoughts can now be unraveled after slight ponder.

The matter of assassin was naturally one of them.

The Lan Family has the backing of the Great God Cult, if they want to look him for trouble, they will certainly invite the Great God Cult's people.

But the one who can invite the expensive Heavenly List's assassin is naturally none other than Murong Hong.

"You....already know?"

Wang An was slightly awkward.

"If you don't want people to know, don't do it."

Liu Yi folded his arms and coldly said.

"So, for Murong Family, there's nothing pleasant to talk about."

"Don't say that."

Wang An lit up a cigarette, took a puff, looked at the slowly disappeared tobacco under the night sky, and slowly said, "Big miss should be at your place, right?"

"What if she is, what if she is not?"

Liu Yi was no longer the previous meek and coward student; With folding arms, he stood there, remain unmoved, and said, "Are your Murong Family going to hire another assassin for me? If you want, you can, but, the next time, I am not going to just deal the assassin."

Reading between the line, the threat was very obvious.

"Are you threatening Murong Family?"

Hearing Liu Yi's words, Wang An was startled and somewhat angry.

The Northern Dragon City was so big, but the first person who dares to look down on Murong Family was this kid!

"I threaten Murong Family?"

Liu Yi finally couldn't bear the grief and indignation; how could there be such truth.



“I’m afraid it’s your Murong Family who first come to bully me, Liu Yi, right? Do you really think, with your large fortune in this Northern Dragon City you can hide the truth from the masses and bully the little common people? Go back and tell your master Murong Hong, even the common people can’t be bullied at will by you!”

“Do not underestimate the power of our Murong Family.”

Wang An slightly narrowed his eyes, “Boy, I am kindly reminding you. There are some people, some families, that you can’t annoy. You won’t be able to topple the Emperor by splashing him with water .”

“What if I insist on give it a try?”

Liu Yi’s eyes flickered.

“Then you have to pay the price.”

“Threatening me? Good!”

Liu Yi stretched out his finger at Wang An and made a hook movement, “Murong Die is in my house, if you want to take her away, you have to walk over my dead body.”

“It seems like you really need a lesson.”

Wang An squeezed his fingers, his aura suddenly changed.

His hard qigong started to surge.

“Boy, remember, this beating, is for your own good!”

Wang An said, and walked over toward Liu Yi in a threatening manner.

“Is hard qigong that good?”

Liu Yi bent his waist, picked up a piece of brick, and threw it at Wang An.

“Bam!”

Wang An waved his fist and directly destroyed that brick.

“For me, this small trick is just like a tickle.”

Wang An’s muscle was like a slab of iron. He sneered at Liu Yi and continued to walk.

Liu Yi took two steps backward, grabbed a section of two fingers thick iron bar from the nearby bicycle rack and swung it toward Wang An's head.

“Bang!”

A loud bang sound!

Wang An stretched out his right arm before his body.

That section of iron bar suddenly changed into a concave shape.

“F\*ck, you think you're Iron Man!”

Liu Yi was very envious; If he can have that defensive power, that would be good!

“Lie on the floor for me!”

Wang An stretched out both of his hands and grabbed Liu Yi's shoulder.

# Chapter 137 Must Have A Talk

Wang An excels at hard qigong and grappling technique.

These two can be considered as his major.

Wang An intended to take Liu Yi down in one swoop, giving him a lesson so that he quit.

“Plop!”

Wang An’s pair of iron hand landed on Liu Yi’s shoulders, and he put pressure on it, trying to directly put Liu Yi down.

But Liu Yi’s body was like an iron pillar, firmly stood on the ground, motionless.

“Huh?”

Wang An was surprised for a moment, but he quickly changed his pose.

He bent over, put his hands on Liu Yi’s waist and exerted his strength to directly pushed Liu Yi.

But Liu Yi’s body still firmly embedded in there like an old tree, simply can’t be pushed.

Wang An’s forehead shed some sweat.

How could he know there was a layer of frost invisible to naked eyes wrapped around Liu Yi’s feet fixing him to the ground like a root.

Wanted to put him down? Easier said than done.

“Wang An, is that all you got? Is this the lesson you want to teach me?”

Liu Yi’s strength has increased sharply, no longer afraid of Wang An.

Although Wang An’s strength was also third star, he didn’t know any cultivation technique.

Therefore, it’s not difficult for Liu Yi to defeat him.

Wang An’s heart was alarmed.

‘Haven’t met him for just a few days....how could he become so powerful!’

‘Even my grappling technique is useless?’

“Now it’s my turn.”

Liu Yi said, his body suddenly shook.

His immortal strength erupted out of his body.

“Bam!”

The impact from this power forced Wang An to go backward several steps.

“What!”

He looked at Liu Yi with disbelief, never imagined his hard qigong would be forced out by Liu Yi.

“Wang An, take this!”

But Liu Yi didn’t spout nonsense, suddenly stepped forward to mercilessly hit Wang An in the chest with his palm.

“Useless, I have the hard qigong to protect....uf!”

Wang An hasn’t finished his words, suddenly spewed a mouthful of blood, his whole body flew more than three meters until finally hit the top of his SUV door.

The physical pain was no match for Wang An’s inward shock.

‘This is so terrible....’

‘In just several days....how could Liu Yi’s strength grew at such alarming rate!’

‘Previously, I basically dominated him!’

‘Now....’

‘He seems able to completely overwhelm me!’

‘Such a terrifying student.’

‘Who exactly the expert behind him!’

Wang An’s mind was extremely shocked, while his chest ached with pain.

“Looking at Murong Die’s face, I’ve shown mercy toward you.”

Liu Yi said, “But if Murong Family look me for trouble again, don’t blame me for being impolite.”

“Liu Yi....cough cough....”

Wang An spewed out a mouthful of blood, thinking, ‘His mother, this is called mercy!’

‘If not mercy, then what!?’

‘Too terrible!’

“Is there something else you want to say? I seemingly said, we have nothing to talk about.”

Liu Yi looked at Wang An and said.

Watching Wang An vomiting blood, Liu Yi secretly thought.

‘My palm’s power, actually progress this much?’

‘It seems like the third star jade power is too freaky.....’

Liu Yi didn’t know, his power progression and the general cultivator are not the same.

His third star jade is not purely a third star jade, but also contain some hidden power.

Even if he run into a fourth star expert, he still has a fighting chance.

This power comes from his other personality who can share power with him.

Moreover, this power can be improved and enhanced unceasingly.

“Liu Yi....I know right now....cough cough, I am not your opponent.”

Wang An pressed his injury and said to Liu Yi.

“But....I still have some words, let’s calmly sit down and....have a good talk, okay?”

“Your attitude is not bad.”

Liu Yi withdrew his footstep and turned his head around to look at Wang

An, "Speak, I am listening."

"Actually, in my heart, I didn't mean to look down on you. But think, Murong Die is Murong Hong's daughter....If you have a daughter, and she runs into a boy's home to live with him, what do you think?"

"Em....I don't have a daughter."

Liu Yi understood what Wang An tried to say.

"Okay, I understand that I'm rude this time. But Murong Hong locked up her daughter, restricted her personal freedom, right? This will not close the distance between him and his daughter. Instead, the gap will be bigger."

"I understand....I also tried to talk the master out...."

Wang An sighed, "You don't know....Ever since his wife left this world, Master put all his thoughts on Murong Die. Otherwise, don't you think it's strange that the president of a large group, the unofficial emperor of the entire Northern Dragon City, doesn't even have a woman?"

Liu Yi remembered that the last time he went to Murong Manor, never saw any mistress.

'Very well, that's assuming Murong Hong isn't gay.'

"Master....truly love her daughter, but, his love might be a bit overbearing."

"You call that a bit overbearing? That's quite overbearing. If I'm Murong Die, I'm afraid can't stand it either."

Liu Yi said.

"Yes....but this matter, needs to be slowly resolved by them. Liu Yi, you're not angering the unofficial emperor of Northern Dragon City, you're angering a father. You can be indifferent about this, but what about your family? I'm not threatening you, but an angry father may put undue things upon your family."

Liu Yi stood there, calmly thinking about it.

"What you said make sense, so be it, I will bring little Die home together with you. I want to speak with Murong Hong."

“Are you sure?”

Wang An was surprised, ‘Liu Yi unexpectedly want to speak with Murong Hong on his own initiative?’

‘He isn’t going to do something is he....’

“Rest assured, I’m not going to hurt Murong Hong.”

Liu Yi’s words made Wang An wanted to cry but have no tears.

If other people speak about the unofficial emperor of Northern Dragon City like this, Wang An would certainly snort in contempt.

But toward this kid, he can only nod and relieved.

‘Right now, this kid’s strength....is too terrible.’

‘Even if I pull out a gun....I don’t have the confidence to take him down.’

“Some things must be talked face to face, otherwise, it will never be resolved.”

Liu Yi said and turned around to go upstairs.

“Wait!”

Wang An suddenly stopped Liu Yi.

“What else do you want? Can’t you just quietly wait down here?”

“This...I want to take this chance to ask you something....”

Wang An somewhat apprehensively asked, “Who is this expert....Master of yours?”

“My master?”

Liu Yi was stunned for a moment and then smiled.

“My master is a beauty.”

With that, he went upstairs leaving behind the silly looking Wang An.

‘Shoot....’

‘A beauty....’

‘This kid is truly lucky....’

‘Ah, wrong, there are many beautiful women, which one is his master!’

Liu Yi went to his house and saw Murong Die already showered, dressed with a piece of Liu Yi’s clean white shirt, standing in the bathroom entrance wiping her hair.

This simple shirt became like a nightgown on Murong Die’s body.

She stood in the bathroom entrance, with waist slightly bent, and head bowed, constantly wiping her hair with a towel.

The small shirt wrapped Murong Die’s sexy ass, like two halves of watermelon, very round and seductive.

Liu Yi stood at the entrance of his room with a stupid look.

“You’re back?”

Hearing Liu Yi walked through the door, Murong Die looked up and grinned at him.

“Your clothes is very suitable on me, it’s mine, okay.”

Murong Die was like a stay at home wife, wiping her hair as she said to Liu Yi.

“My shirt is very expensive....”

Liu Yi was a bit reluctant, “I bought that for 40 yuan....”

“D\*mn, dead Liu Yi, this big miss will give you 40; this shirt is mine!”

Murong Die mercilessly glared at Liu Yi.

Meanwhile, above Murong Die’s head pop out a number.

Favorability -1.

‘Shoot, how could this Eye of Favorable Impression still open!’

Liu Yi hastily closed his Eye. Otherwise, he would feel funny.

‘I just feel sorry for my shirt....no need to be angry.’

‘As for this reduced favorability....’

‘Too cruel.’

“By the way....”



Liu Yi remembered the injured uncle waiting downstairs, quickly said.

“Quickly get dressed and go downstairs, I’ll send you home.”

“What?”

Murong Die suddenly shuddered, her beautiful face went pale.

“You, what did you say?”

“Huh? What’s wrong?”

Liu Yi said, “I’m going to send you home....Don’t you want to go home?”

“Liu Yi, I hate you!”

Murong Die threw the towel, “Who want to go home! I don’t want to go home! If you don’t want to see me, this big miss will sleep on the street!”

“No, that’s not what I mean!”

Liu Yi quickly explained, “Wang An comes to pick you up. I decided to go back with you and have a talk with your dad.”

“What?”

Murong Die’s grieving heart immediately shocked when she heard Liu Yi’s words.

“What do you want to talk about with my dad?”

Murong Die didn’t think Liu Yi could have such a thought.

“Yes, I believe that this thing can’t go on like this.”

Liu Yi said, “Your dad, after all, is right; you have to go back sooner or later. You can’t just sleep outside every day, am I right?”

“Humph, this big miss doesn’t need your care.”

“How could I not care!”

Liu Yi loudly scolded, “Murong Die, how could I not care about your matter?”

Murong Die tender body trembled, thinking, ‘this....is this the prelude of his confession?’

“We are after all a good friend, right?”

“Right your big-headed ghost!”

Murong Die has the impulse to kill Liu Yi.

“Therefore, I want to have a good talk with your dad, how could he treat his daughter like that, it’s wrong!”

“My dad....can be very overbearing....”

Murong Die somewhat worriedly said, “I advise you not to have this talk....I’m a bit worry....”

“Don’t worry about me, I’ll carefully handle this. Murong Die, please have some faith in me!”

“Very well...then....”

Murong Die suddenly felt Liu Yi’s words made her powerless to resist.

‘Just listen to him this time.’

“Come, get dressed and go downstairs with me.”

“No need, those clothes are dirty. I’ll just put on my tights.”

Murong Die said, turned into the bedroom.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 138

## Chapter 138 Are You Sure

“Master....”

Murong Hong was waiting anxiously at home when Wang An and his daughter walked in, and all of a sudden pleasantly surprised.

“Little Die, you finally came back!”

He was initially sitting on the couch, saw daughter walked in, without enough time to put on his slippers, immediately went forward.

Murong Die to see her father so anxious, the heart was slightly sour.

‘If only he could understand me a little bit....that would be nice....’

Murong Hong was originally happy, but when he suddenly saw behind the two of them also came Liu Yi dressed in school uniform, immediately pulled down his face.

“What are you doing here?”

“Uncle Murong, this sentence is not right.”

Liu Yi said with a smile, “You have entertained me quite a few times, right? So I have to come to return the courtesy.”

Liu Yi’s words made Murong Hong’s eyes slightly squint a bit.

“You’re right, little Die, you go upstairs and take a rest, I and your schoolmate are going to have a talk.”

“I, I....”

Murong Die became very nervous, She didn’t trust Liu Yi and her father to talk alone.

Her father’s temper, she knew too well....

But Liu Yi’s temper wasn’t soft either....

Seemingly genial and easy to bully.

But his heart was actually stubborn, unable to be forced by anyone!

“It’s okay, little Die, I will calmly have a good talk with uncle.”

Liu Yi said with a smile, “I think someone with uncle’s experience and knowledge would also have a calm conversation with me, right?”

“Right....”

Murong Hong’s corner of the mouth slightly twitched.

He didn’t think that after being in the business for many years, unexpectedly being challenged by a boy today.

Moreover....the boy still lived....

It seemed that the assassin failed.

“Okay then....you guys have a good talk.....do not quarrel.”

Murong Die said.

“Got it, go upstairs, you’re tired now, have some good night’s rest.”

“Em....”

Murong Die nodded her head, looking back while walking upstairs, always felt....The atmosphere was somewhat tense.

“Now it’s just us, let’s talk about it.”

Murong Hong said, but seemed to forget his side also stood Wang An, as well as three bodyguards.

“No peeking!”

Liu Yi suddenly raised his head to look upstairs and said.

The upstairs suddenly came a gasp, followed by a burst of footsteps.

Saw Liu Yi’s eyes, Wang An knew his big miss was hiding upstairs.

After scaring Murong Die away, Liu Yi said nothing, haughtily sat on the couch behind Murong Hong.

After entered the third star jade, he has some magical abilities.

One of them was, when he entered the black and white world of perception, the sight of living creatures before him are no longer black and

white, but exudes a touch of yellow.

He can also feel their breathing.

Liu Yi just now noticed the slight yellow light from the upstairs and felt the rapid breathing of a young girl.

He knew Murong Die didn't go to her room, but hid there.

"This is our second official meeting."

Murong Hong calmly said and then sat down.

He deliberately ignored the last meeting near Liu Yi's home; being threatened by Liu Yi.

If he raised this matter again, he wouldn't know where to hide his face.

"If uncle Murong likes, then this is our second time."

Liu Yi actually didn't care.

Today he came to solve the problem, not to quarrel, there's no need for him to be too tit-for-tat.

Moreover, the opposite party is an uncle; it's appropriate for him to make some concessions.

"I don't know....what do you want to discuss with me?"

Murong Hong's speculation about the boy's intention before him was unclear.

He was just a student....

But why would he exude some kind of elusive feeling?

Was it just his own illusion?

How could this be....

Murong Hong began to lack-confidence deep in his heart.

"We are going to talk about many issues."

Liu Yi said, looked at the empty table.

"Uncle Murong does not entertain me with coffee today?"

“Bring Coffee.”

Murong Hong’s heart became even more unsure.

‘This Liu Yi....’ He thought.

‘Like an experienced businessman, turned out to be so calm.’

‘Only people with strong self-control could act like this.’

‘Could it be he really have such self-control?’

‘What are the things that he relies on?’

Soon, the fragrant coffee carried before Liu Yi. He picked it up, drank a mouthful, and said slowly.

“Hmm....really fragrant, the coffee of the rich is indeed different, compared to KFC’s coffee, this is simply immeasurable.”

Liu Yi lamented.

‘Fuck! Of course, it can’t be compared!’

This was not the country’s original Blue Mountain coffee (Lanshan); Murong Hong spent a high price to buy this from overseas.

How could it be compared to those KFC’s instant coffee!

“Uncle Murong, the enthusiastic friend of your who entertained me, has been graciously sent away by me, you wouldn’t blame me would you?”

“How could I....”

Murong Hong laughed a hollow laugh twice, “What do you really want to talk me about?”

“I want to talk about your daughter.”

Liu Yi put down the coffee cup and said.

“Tell me, what’s your price, for you to leave my daughter.”

A flash of light went through Murong Hong’s squinted eyes.

“Uncle Murong, I think you’re wrong about one thing.”

Liu Yi said, “Your daughter, is not a commodity, but a person. So please don’t use your merchant’s perspective toward your daughter. Also, do not

use business stuff to deal with me. It will not work, uncle Murong.”

“Then what do you want? Speak your purpose.”

Murong Hong felt this should be the time for them to lay down their cards.

“My purpose is very simple, is to ask you to free your daughter.”

“Hehe....”

Murong Hong suddenly smiled, “Liu Yi, I acknowledge that you have some skill. But the matter between my daughter and me, that’s my family’s business, aren’t you meddling too far? Or do you regard yourself as our family member? Sorry, I have no intention to make you my son in law.”

“I also don’t want to be your son in law; I still want to live for another two years.”

Liu Yi was relentlessly ironic, “Murong Hong, don’t get too conceited, you think everything you have is pretty, and others will only envy. I’m sorry, this is not what I want.”

“On the surface, who wouldn’t say that.”

Murong Hong sneered, “If all this is not good, how come there are so many people busted their asses to win all of this?”

“I admit, some people are indeed fighting for this.”

Liu Yi nodded his head, “But uncle Murong seems to forget one thing. Gentlemen love fortune, in a proper way. Just like me Liu Yi, I have hands and feet, I can earn for myself. Your money is yours, my money is mine, I feel at ease to spend my own money.”

“How much can you earn?”

Murong Hong condescendingly smiled.

“Not more than you, certainly can’t buy a big house such as this, also can’t invite so many bodyguards, maids and live a luxurious life such as yours.”

Liu Yi resoundingly replied.

“I can’t afford a big house; I could buy a small house to live with my loved one. Moreover, living with the beloved person is warmer and can help each

others in difficult times. Even if the house is bigger, you can only sleep in one bed. I can't afford a luxury car, but I can buy a vehicle; even a two wheels bicycle can be used to make ways through the city, and can also pick up my girlfriend from work. Although it looks cheap, it is our romance. Romance can't be measured by money, but with intention and effort."

"What's the use!"

Murong Hong aptly said, "No money, no one will ever be able to look up to you, no one will respect you."

"Uncle Murong, I'm afraid you're wrong about one thing."

Liu Yi stretched out a finger, shook it, and said, "Those people respect, not you uncle Murong, but your money, your property, your family background. And all this false respect that you have, can't be traded for your daughter's love."

"You!"

These words absolutely touched Murong Hong's heart.

"Liu Yi, what do you mean by this?"

"The meaning is quite clear."

Liu Yi said, "Do you really think Murong Die is happy with your treatment of her? I feel that you don't regard your daughter as your daughter, but as your, Murong Hong's puppet. Unfortunately, she is a living being, not your marionette. Therefore, over time she slowly resented you. If not so, why would she follow me to escape from here tonight?"

"You kidnapped my daughter, yet reason with me?"

Murong Hong thought Liu Yi was ridiculous.

"Do you believe I can now call the police to arrest you?"

"If you truly want this to be in accordance with the law, the one who should be arrested is you."

Liu Yi asked, "Wouldn't imprisoning own daughter be counted as breaking the law?"

"The law is against you."



Murong Hong arrogantly said, "With me here, it will not work."

"But your cover, with your daughter there, is equally invalid."

Liu Yi bluntly retorted, "Moreover, even if you call the police, I'm not afraid of you. Because I'm confident, before the police came, I can send uncle Murong to hell first."

"Brush, brush, brush!"

Liu Yi's voice fell, a lot of bodyguards behind Murong Hong immediately took out their electric batons.

Wang An quickly pulled out his gun and pointed it at Liu Yi, for fear he makes a sudden movement.

"Liu Yi, aren't you afraid talking big will sprain your tongue?"

Murong Hong chuckled, "Don't you forget it, this is my territory. Let alone you can't even send me to hell, if I'm angry, you can't even get out of the door alive, no problem at all."

"Are you sure?"

Liu Yi just looked at Murong Hong's smiling face; in front of so many people, as well as Wang An's gun, he didn't look scared.

"Can't you see?"

Murong Hong reached out his hand and pointed to the surrounding, "You blind...."

Murong Hong hasn't finished his words; the rest suddenly stuck in his throat.

Because a hand was outstretched from behind, holding the fruit knife which previously on the table.

The sharp edge of that knife, was resting on his neck.

"Uncle Murong, are you really sure?"

Without knowing when, Liu Yi already appeared at Murong Hong's back. His hand held a fruit knife, gleaming under the room's lighting.

The other bodyguards were frightened, but they dared not to casually

come forward.

Wang An hastily shouted, “Liu Yi! You, you calm down!”

# Chapter 139 Son In Law's Qualification

Murong Hong was actually being held hostage in his own home!

Moreover, it was right under Wang An and the other bodyguard's nose.

This was a big slap in Murong Family's face.

No one saw how Liu Yi went behind Murong Hong. He stood behind Murong Hong, holding a fruit knife against the master of Murong Family's neck.

Moreover, Liu Yi stood in the right position, pulling Murong Hong's body slightly leaning against him so that it block Wang An's muzzle.

Unable to aim his gun at Liu Yi, Wang An's heart somewhat felt anxious.

After years in the special forces, many years in the criminal investigation department and a lot of years being bodyguard....

This was the first time he felt this anxious.

"Uncle Murong, are you sure?"

"Li Yi....you may want to think clearly about this."

Murong Hong deserved to be an experienced businessman, although there was a knife on his neck, still spoke calm and gentle, in perfect order.

"This is my Murong Family, even if you kill me, it is impossible for you to walk safely out of here. If you do this, you'll only harm one person."

"Oops...."

Liu Yi smiled, "At this time, we are equal right? I, Liu Yi, an ordinary high school student, a destitute, before dying can actually kill a big boss, big entrepreneur; This sacrifice is worth it. Man, I did not come into this world in vain!".

Murong Hong almost vomited blood because of anger.

Who exactly is this Liu Yi!

How could he suddenly acted like a marketplace rascal!

But Murong Hong was indeed afraid of this act....

Sacrificing oneself to topple the Emperor.

Murong Hong didn't think....Liu Yi would dare to do such thing.

Anyone who is wealthy and famous, there is a characteristic....They all do not want to die.

As the saying goes, in the remote and desolate place, people are wicked because they all have no money and live a dull life, so they dare to sacrifice everything to the bitter end.

But nobody who is slightly well-off would do that.

The Chinese are fond of easy living, which basically mean, if they are full they will not cause any trouble.

For those people in power and wealthy individuals, their fear of death is even bigger.

What fear of death? If a person with financial means can still abandon their own life to be brave enough to sacrifice, that person is truly fearless.

Obviously, Murong Hong was not such a fearless man.

Facing the edge of Liu Yi's knife, especially his 'perish-together' manner....

Murong Hong became timid.

"You....say your conditions...."

"Uncle Murong, how come you're still in businessman's mindset."

Liu Yi said, "I said, the conversation between us, is not a transaction. I am here today mainly to solve uncle Murong's problem; I am Murong Die's classmate, could not bear to see her being imprisoned by you. You, as a father, do not care about it at all?"

"This is my family's matter...."

"Uncle Murong, do not say that. Your family's matter seems to include me since the beginning."

Liu Yi's voice fell, Murong Hong suddenly felt the pressure on his neck was

now gone.

His heart suddenly jumped a bit, but saw on the sofa in front of him, Liu Yi already sat back, hand holding a coffee cup, slowly sipping.

“.....”

The present people were all startled, absolutely terrified.

‘Is Liu Yi a ghost?’ They thought.

Liu Yi secretly proud of himself, after entering the third star jade, he became more adept at Spirit Fox Steps.

‘Sure enough....the things that Fox sister teach me, are good things....’

“Uncle Murong is too polite, please sit down and have a talk.”

Liu Yi reached out his hand and made a gesture at Murong Hong.

Murong Hong’s eyebrows shook, but soon resumed his face and sat down.

“Today....you come here to give us Murong Family a demonstration?”

“Of course not.”

Liu Yi said while drinking his coffee, “I’m here to seek an explanation for Murong Die, and to remind uncle Murong that ordinary people like us can’t be easily bullied.”

“Dare to say this in front of me, you are the first.”

Murong Hong also picked up his coffee cup and slowly shook the liquid inside.

“Looking for an assassin to take care of me, uncle Murong is also the first.”

Liu Yi raised his coffee cup and made a toasting gesture.

“Ahem....”

Murong Hong smiled awkwardly.

He now discovered that the high school student before him was someone not to be trifled with.

To give him trouble....will result in him seemingly give back the trouble.

Murong Hong was not only a businessman, he was also smart.

He will never want to give himself any trouble, but will use the most intelligent method.

He saw Liu Yi appeared to be like a reasonable donkey, immediately used a way to cope with such reasonable donkey.

“On this point, I apologize. If it caused you any loss, I am willing to compensate.”

“Oh?”

Liu Yi was surprised, thinking, ‘This Murong Hong’s attitude, how could it suddenly change?’

“Also hope you can understand, I, after all, am the unofficial emperor of the Northern Dragon City, with such a threat by you, my face simply can’t hang still. Of course, I admit I was wrong, for my own honor to pay the killer to assassinate you....This behavior is simply shameless and selfish. But these are not important, the important thing is....I only have one daughter.”

Murong Hong said with an outstretched hand.

The bodyguard next to him immediately grounded the tobacco in his pipe. Murong Hong lit the matches, and slowly lit the tobacco.

He took a puff, and then said.

“Since before I started my business, my wife faithfully stayed beside me....Completely different than those women who later took a fancy at me, those women fancy my, Murong Hong’s property. But my wife....She really loved me. Unfortunately, in those days, I can only give her a bitter life....When my business is picking up, she passed away because of overwork, leaving little Die and me....You’re right, although at present my business is big, I forever lack such a piece.”

Murong Hong’s words made Liu Yi somewhat surprised.

‘It turns out this unofficial emperor of the Northern Dragon City is such a sentimental man?’

‘Hard to see....’

“So you see, today I have not been re-marriage. In my heart, no one can

replace my wife's position. Therefore, I give all my love and devotion to little Die...."

After saying all these, Murong Hong suddenly somewhat excited.

"Liu Yi, you don't know a father's feeling....when I hold my newborn little Die, she was so innocent looking, only knew how to cry; that kind of feeling....just like looking at my whole world....She is my daughter, my Murong Hong and wife's daughter. Therefore, I tried to give her everything she wants, giving her the best Princess-like life! I want her to live in the most perfect world, and then let her be the Queen of my Murong Hong's business empire...."

"But you never thought, this life, is not the life that little Die wants."

Liu Yi can't help but interjected, breaking Murong Hong's fantasy.

"These are all your own ideas....Perhaps you are a good father, but you are not a good friend."

Parents should not just be a parent, they also should be the child's friend.

"Oh?"

Murong Hong slightly wrinkled his brows. Liu Yi abruptly interrupted his speech and questioned the way he educates his daughter, making him uncomfortable.

"Perhaps uncle Murong thought that I, Liu Yi am only an ordinary high school student, what qualification do I have to talk about your daughter's education. But uncle Murong do not forget, even though I'm not a father, I am Murong Die's peer. What she thinks, I should know better than uncle Murong. Uncle Murong, if you really want to be a good father, you ought to have other feeling toward Murong Die."

"What feeling?"

"Respect."

Liu Yi said slowly, "If you really want to be a good father, then please respect Murong Die's thoughts."

"You guys are still very young, the thoughts are still immature."

Murong Hong said, "Only I can correctly guide her thoughts."

"And then groom her to be the next Murong Hong?"

Liu Yi could not help but say, "Do you think, the life of Murong Hong, is happy?"

"....."

Murong Hong was stunned.

"Uncle Murong, you're not playing a grooming game, Murong Die is a person with her own thoughts. You want to make her into the next you, but did you have a happy time? I think, if Murong Die's mom is still alive, to see the way you treat your daughter, I'm afraid she'll be distressed into tears

"I...."

Murong Hong was speechless.

Was he....really wrong?

He wanted to refute....

But thinking about Murong Die's recent attitude, he failed to come up with a proper refute.

Because he remembered, he saw the loathing from his daughter's eyes.

When Murong Die was still a child, the look in her eyes, was full of dependence and worship.

But now....the distance between father and daughter....gradually widened....

"So, uncle Murong, don't you think that there's some truth in my words?"

To see Murong Hong has somewhat softened, Liu Yi quickly asked while the iron is hot.

"I now acknowledge...."

Murong Hong suddenly took a long breath, then deeply looked at Liu Yi, "That you Liu Yi, have the qualification to be our Murong Family's son in law."

"Huh?"



Liu Yi almost burst out the coffee that he just drank.

‘How could it suddenly wandered into this?’ He thought.

“Hehe, except for my, Murong Hong’s family member, I, Murong Hong will not allow others to interfere with my family matters.”

Murong Hong also said, “If you want to help little Die, and want to change our family relationship, you Liu Yi, should strive hard to be our Murong Family’s son in law.”

“Is there another way....”

Liu Yi wiped the cold sweat from his forehead, thinking, ‘how could it turn into this?’

‘It seems we never talk about this before.’

“Very good, it’s settled. Although you are qualified, that doesn’t mean I will select you as my, Murong Family’s son in law. Tomorrow, I will let Murong Die to go back to school. And Liu Yi, I hope you do not disappoint me.”

With that, Murong Hong laughed, seemingly thinking about happy things.

While Liu Yi was thoroughly silly.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 140

## Chapter 140 My Parent

Liu Yi in the morning squatted in the back of the school eating hot spicy soup, still thinking about last night's event.

'Murong Hong that old ghost....how could he, on a whim, make me compete for this....son in law position?

Moreover, this competition for position....is there only business in this old ghost's eyes?

But I couldn't refuse him, this old ghost had promised me to let Murong Die go back to school. If I didn't pretend to comply first, I'm afraid things would get more complicated...'

Although since Liu Yi entered the third star jade his thoughts and ideas opened a lot.

But this time, he could not understand....'what is that old ghost's advantage for doing this?

I will have to ask Wang An, he is Murong Hong's closest confidante. If Murong Hong has any plan, he would certainly tell this guy.

But for God's sake, Wang An is also a tight-lipped person, his grandma's leg....'

This feeling of facing a conundrum made Liu Yi very uncomfortable....

'D\*mn it....who's going to explain what the hell is going on....'

While Liu Yi racked his brain, his mobile phone suddenly vibrated.

When he look, it turned out to be a message from the Eye In The Sky app.

Wei Yi's profile picture constantly flashing.

"This girl finally look for me?"

Liu Yi touched the notification, and a message suddenly popped out.

"On the evening of October the 1st, at 10 PM, meet me at God Dancing City

Gate.”

“This girl....

Is this a date, or a mission appointment?

She also didn’t explain!’

Liu Yi immediately messaged back.

“Mission?”

“Nonsense! Could this princess ask you, a dog sh\*t, for a date!”

‘Very well.’ Having accepted Wei Yi’s answer, Liu Yi finally felt at ease.

Sure enough, he will not go for a romantic encounter.

‘There’s a task tomorrow night....good, I also need an enemy to test out my current strength.

I hope Wei Yi doesn’t take any abnormal task again....

The first two mission with her....always lucky; encountered two big opponents.

Always having this luck....is not a good thing.

Grandpa said, men cannot rely on luck, but must rely on their own strength.’

Liu Yi was about to put down his phone. Suddenly his phone vibrated again.

‘Wei Yi want to chat with me?’

He picked it up, and it turned out to be a text message from an unknown number.

“Murong Die said you were ill, is it serious? Did you go to the doctor?>\_<”

The later part of the message turned out to be a cute character emoticon....

“This morning I ask Murong Die to request the teacher for a leave of absence. After all, Murong Die has some weight when talking to teacher.

Sometimes, this relationship is quite useful.

Otherwise, if I run out for no reason at all, teacher Li would explode in

anger!

But who is the one sending me this text message?’

“I’m okay....still breathing, thank you for asking, who is this?”

Liu Yi was about to finish his hot spicy soup when he got the reply message.

“I’m your table mate, idiot!(#’)☹

‘Shoot! The one who sent me these text messages turns out to be Wang Yuzheng....

This girl must have my phone number from Murong Die....

Didn’t expect this girl to be quite concerned about me....also know how to post emoji....it’s pretty vivid even.’

Liu Yi thought it’s better for him not to reply, afraid that he would delay Wang Yuzheng to attend the class.

“Fox sister....when can I go to the King of Medicine Valley?”

Liu Yi remembered Wang Yuzheng’s crying and begging look, couldn’t help but ask.

“Based on your current strength, It’s still early....The people on the King of Medicine Valley, are all masters! Want to go to the King of Medicine Valley....at minimum, you need to be at seven star jade....”

Lin Tong hastily cautioned, “If go now, you will only die!”

“Very well....I hope Wang Yuzheng’s mom can hold on for a while....”

Liu Yi said, “I will soon reach the seven star jade power, and then rush to the King of Medicine Valley!”

“You ah you, you fool!”

Lin Tong sighed deeply, thinking, “This guy....how each time, try to improve for someone else!

Can’t he think for himself?

Truly the biggest fool under the heaven!’

“What’s wrong? By the way Fox sister, when are we going to release you from the seal?”

Liu Yi suddenly thought this issue, hastily asked.

Yesterday evening, Lin Tong ran away to rest, didn’t talk to him about this thing.

But they should talk about it today.

“Your strength is not enough!”

Lin Tong really doesn’t want to talk about this issue. Her eyes suddenly rolled and said.

“Not enough?”

Liu Yi was very surprised, “Didn’t Fox sister say you can be free when I reached third star jade?”

“This....this big miss’ estimation is wrong!”

Lin Tong quickly said, “You need to have, at least, four star jade....no, five star jade!”

“Okay then, I will try hard to break through the fourth star jade!”

Liu Yi said confidently.

“You....”

Lin Tong’s nose crooked with anger, “Forget it, this big miss reminds you that haste makes waste!”

“Huh?”

“Your strength progress too fast, meaning that the foundation is unstable which make your mind unstable.”

Lin Tong said, “If you don’t want the other you to give you trouble, you need to consolidate your cultivation! As soon as possible to fill the third star jade!”

“Very well....I listen to Fox sister.”

Liu Yi nodded his head.

Lin Tong was helpless, thinking.

‘Alas....this peerless bonehead....’

“It’s almost time, I have to go to the Northern Dragon City Jiayu Middle School.”

Liu Yi looked at the time and thought he couldn’t delay that girl Ma Yuanyuan’s matter anymore, otherwise, she will retaliate!

Thus, Liu Yi hurriedly drank the rest of the hot spicy soup, wiped his mouth, and got up.

The One Mid High School and Jiayu Middle School is very close. The two schools separated by a few blocks.

At this time, before he even arrived the Jiayu Middle School’s entrance he had heard the noisy sounds of drums and percussions.

‘Whoa, this is truly a Sports Games.’

Liu Yi was a bit envious.

On the previous Sports Games, he didn’t use it to develop his motor neuron, but to enjoy life without a class with his friends.

In general, halfway through the game, they would stop participating the sports and secretly ran out to access the internet.

Playing twice CS, CF and then ran back to continue the sports game in order to avoid the teacher’s wrath.

Liu Yi walked to the school entrance and quickly blocked by the door guard.

“Who are you?”

“The student’s parent, the third year class four Ma Yuanyuan’s parent.”

Liu Yi hastily said.

“You are the parent?”

The guard looked at Liu Yi.

Today Liu Yi didn’t wear his school uniforms, but a very ordinary jeans.

So, he didn't look like a student....

"You look like you're just a student...."

"This....I'm Ma Yuanyuan's brother."

Liu Yi hastily said, "Mom and Dad are on a business trip. Therefore, I come to attend the sports games with her."

"Oh....Third year class four....Ma Yuanyuan, right."

The guard looked at the name on the computer's register, nodded, and then said, "Go, the third year class four is on the playground northeast side."

"Okay, thank you."

Liu Yi expressed his gratitude and entered the Jiaoyu Middle School.

This Jiayu Middle School is a very famous local middle school. Want to get into here, the test score must not low.

In the past Liu Yi failed the test and then later when he entered the One Mid High School, his parents spent no less sponsorship fee.

But this Jiaoyu Middle School doesn't accept such fee; to enter one must have sufficient score.

It seemed Ma Yuanyuan's achievement were also good....

After entering the school, Liu Yi immediately saw in the playground each class in square formation.

'Shoot....

This square formation of this middle school was fascinating!'

Liu Yi remembered his previous sports games opening ceremony, the students all dressed in school uniforms, holding a sign while walking in a square formation.

But now...

It's good....

Walking in the front of a group of students, all dressed in military uniform, the two leaders were very handsome and mighty.

But this was nothing....Behind that first square formation team....

My goodness, a row of students in black suits, each person carried a wood ax coated with paint, which they held high.

‘His mother....

This is the ax gang!

Too ridiculous!’

Next to that group walked a group of palace maid and eunuch of Qing Dynasty, led by two students dressed in Emperor robe attire.

Liu Yi was thoroughly dazzled....

‘This is his mother’s sports games....

Truly envy them....

At my previous sports games, why didn’t they make it like this?

Alas, times have truly changed....

The past students didn’t so well-organized like this, the only condition they need is to have the vigor to walk.

Now, they are full of tricks.’

Liu Yi felt that he had to follow the rhythm of this era.

‘But, where’s Ma Yuanyuan....’

Liu Yi looked around and, sure enough, on the northeast side, there is a sign for the third year class four.

But Ma Yuanyuan wasn’t among those students.

‘Could it be, she is in the square formation?’

Liu Yi was somewhat curious, looked around several times toward the square formation teams.

‘My goodness....’

Cold sweat appeared on Liu Yi’s forehead.

Among these square formation teams, he was surprised to see a full cosplay team...



In that square formation team, there were various anime characters.

Dorameon....Naruto, Bleach, One Piece....

It truly was....everything-you-name-it, it's there....

And Ma Yuanyuan walked in front of the formation.

This girl dressed up as....

'Holy sh\*t, no kidding!

It's One Piece Pirate Empress!

How could she dress as Pirate Empress!

It's more suitable if she plays as a little loli!

This bunch of group, how could they let Ma Yuanyuan play the role of a Queen?

Are they crazy....'

Liu Yi stood beside the entrance gate while rows of square formation teams walked pass him.

Like he was reviewing them.

As Ma Yuanyuan came to the entrance gate, her eyes fell on Liu Yi, and immediately somewhat excited.

But then she suddenly remembered her costume; This girl's pretty face immediately blushed.

'My appearance....seems so shameful....'

Liu Yi noticed that Ma Yuanyuan this girl has been making a sentence "Wait for me" silently with her mouth.

He has no other choice but to walk to the third year class four area, waiting for the Loli Queen.

But just when he stood next to that area, an elegantly dressed girl, with arms crossed, bluntly said to Liu Yi.

"You there, this is the third year class four area, you're standing in the wrong place!"

“Oh, sorry, I’m Ma Yuanyuan’s parent.”

Liu Yi quickly explained.

“Parent? Ma Yuanyuan’s parent?”

That girl suddenly laughed.

# Chapter 141 Wonderful Father And Daughter

“Ma Yuanyuan had no one at home, you this kid want to play me for a fool!”

The girl spoke some harsh words.

“The student, what you said is not right.”

Liu Yi was somewhat uncomfortable, but he can't be angry because of a girl. Therefore, he said, “In any case, I am older than you, right? Moreover, the school didn't stipulate that the elder brother can't participate in this sports game, am I right?”

“Nonsense!”

The girl gave Liu Yi a middle finger, “We have long known that Ma Yuanyuan had no father and mother! Otherwise, how could they raise such an uncouth wild girl.”

Hearing this, Liu Yi's brows deeply wrinkled, thinking.

‘Even if Ma Yuanyuan usually likes to trouble me, but truly speaking....this girl is too lonely, lacking someone who can accompany her. As a result, she becomes mischievous, wanting others to pay attention to her.

To say she had no father and mother, an uncouth wild girl....

I'm afraid this is too much.’

“The student, please pay attention to propriety when speaking.”

Liu Yi, therefore, returned the courtesy, “In my opinion, your manner of speaking, should belong to the uneducated.”

“You dare to say that to me?”

The girl suddenly exploded in anger.

The other surrounding female onlookers stood behind her and menacingly

looked at Liu Yi.

“Do you know who I am? You dare to say that to me?”

“Then you know who I am?”

Liu Yi asked back.

“Em....”

The girl instantly asked in amazement.

“How will I know who you are....”

“You don’t know who I am, how could I know what are you?”

Liu Yi curled his lips, “This morning news said that a gorilla ran out of the zoo, is that you?”

“D\*mn, you dare talk to me like that!”

That girl was furious, initially wanted to give Liu Yi a harsh satire, but didn’t expect Liu Yi to embarrass her instead.

This anger was hard to swallow.

“Your mouth is too cheap! No wonder you’re Ma Yuanyuan’s brother, you’re just as bad as her (originally: Jackals of the same tribe)! No father and mother to discipline the both of you!”

The girl viciously scolded.

Liu Yi’s heart became more uncomfortable, thinking.

‘Where did this girl come from?

As long as I live, this is the first time I see such a loathful girl.

Compared to Ma Yuanyuan and Wei Yi....they now seem like an obedient girl!

Poison Jasmine that killer is one hundred times better than her.

This girl must’ve been spoiled rotten at home, much much more than Ma Yuanyuan!

Otherwise, she will not be taught to talk this way, can’t even understand a little courtesy.’

Liu Yi really doesn't want to quarrel with girls. He felt only a b\*tch who scold at others.

He turned around, wanting to ignore the girl.

"See that, he's afraid, sure enough, what I said is right!"

The girl noticed Liu Yi's silence, immediately said in triumphant.

"The kind of people without parents to teach is exactly like this, loathful to see."

"Yes, that's right."

"Look at his long and ugly face, with a monkey-like wide mouth, ugly to death."

A group of girls twittered around together.

Liu Yi's nose crooked with anger, thinking.

'F\*ck, who has the long and ugly face?

Are these girls blind?

Even if I'm not handsome, my features are delicate, a fresh and cool youth!'

Liu Yi wanted to walk away in anger, but he thought that if he leaves, Ma Yuanyuan would surely be disappointed. Liu Yi sighed, stood there, despite whatever curses those girls threw at him.

"You also come to attend the parents' 800 meters race? Based on you, you think you can win? See your small arms and legs, poor and mediocre; Better give up earlier, and take that d\*mn Ma Yuanyuan back to your house! Save us from being annoyed!"

That girl continued.

Liu Yi's mouth twitched twice.

He hated people said he is poor, mediocre, has no future, and so on.

This world should differentiate between those who are tall, rich and handsome, and those who are poor, mediocre, and no future?

Liu Yi thought that this division is not natural.

Even those tall, rich and handsome, or those of second generation rich, they all have to start from nothing.

In this world, there are only two kinds of people, one is the upper-class people, the other is one who abandon oneself to wanton ways.

Even Murong Hong didn't dare to talk like that to him, where did this girl come out from?

"Xu Xin, pay attention to your mouth!"

When Liu Yi was extremely tired of listening, a beautiful girl in red cosplay costume, furiously came over, pointing the keep on hammering away girl, and said.

"My Liu Yi gege is not someone who you can scold! If you let me hear you scold my Liu Yi gege once again, don't blame me for not being polite!"

"Whoops, hey, the little bastard is back?"

That Xu Xin actually grinned, and carelessly said, "You're not going to be polite to me? How are you going to not being polite to me?"

"Xu Xin, you don't go too far!"

Ma Yuanyuan's mouth has always been powerful, but actually, this girl never knew how to fight.

Otherwise, how could she let Liu Yi spank her ass?

"I go too far? How am I too far? I heard your elder sister is one of those bad girls, how could the brother and little sister be any good, gee...."

"I forbid you to talk about my sister!"

Ma Yuanyuan was furious and was about to rush over to scratch that girl's face, but was stopped by Liu Yi by grabbing her waist, and holding her in his bosom.

"Stupid Ox, don't try to stop me, I want to tear her mouth!"

Ma Yuanyuan struggled and said.

"Yuanyuan behaved, my grandpa said, don't lower yourself to the same level as the villain."

Liu Yi said to comfort Ma Yuanyuan.

“Who is the villain, tell me one more time?”

Xu Xin suddenly stared at Liu Yi and shouted.

“Who wag one’s tongue, that one is the villain.

Liu Yi said with a smile, “This is the characteristic of a villain.”

“Bastard! You dare to say I’m a villain! I’m going to get you out of here!”

“This school is seemingly not owned by your family, right?”

Liu Yi said, “Moreover, I openly came here as the parent to participate in the competition. You want to get rid of me? I’m afraid you don’t have this ability.”

“You, you!”

That Xu Xin was speechless with anger, eyes staring at Liu Yi.

Being stared at, Liu Yi didn’t care one bit; let her stared to death.

But at this time, some parents slowly walked over.

One dressed in sportswear, a handsome middle-aged uncle went to Xu Xin’s side and gently asked.

“My little Princess, who make you angry?”

“Him!”

Xu Xin stretched out her finger toward Liu Yi, “Daddy, this man is especially cheap! At 800 meter race, I want you to beat him!”

“Hehe, sure.”

The middle-aged uncle touched her daughter’s head, dotingly smiled.

“Humph, my Daddy is in the Sports Bureau, before that he was a long-distance race star athlete in the national team!”

Xu Xin smiled smugly, “He will quickly leave you, this soft legs behind!”

“I have to say, uncle, you spoil your daughter too much.”

Liu Yi can’t help but ask the middle-aged uncle.

“My, Xu Tianliang’s daughter, is naturally a princess.”

The middle-aged uncle said with an arrogant attitude, “Unlike you two kids, who have no father to teach and no mother to raise.”

‘Shoot....’

‘Sure enough, they really are a pair of father and daughter, the kids imitate the parents; their conduct is similar!’

Liu Yi clenched his fists.

It’s not proper for him to pick a fight with the daughter, but he can’t be polite to the father.

“People speaks need to pay attention to propriety.”

Liu Yi’s voice became somewhat cold.

“Hehe, why do I need to give you any propriety? Me talking to you is already giving you big face.”

Xu Tianliang is a young cadre of the City Sports Bureau.

His frame of mind is very arrogant, never put common people in the eye.

Much less a guy with student appearance like Liu Yi.

“One’s behavior shouldn’t be too crazy.”

Liu Yi’s voice was even colder, “My grandpa said, Overbearing one tend to die quickly.”

“I think the one who’s arrogant is you, do you know who I am?”

“How come this sentence again....Is your dad Li Gang?”

(TL: “My Dad is Li Gang!” is a popular catchphrase used ironically among Chinese netizens to avoid responsibility. The phrase stems from a fatal hit and run incident that occurred near Hebei University in Baoding, China, in which a drunk driver named Li Qiming yelled at his pursuers, “Go ahead, sue me if you dare. My dad is Li Gang!” referring to the Deputy Director of Baoding Public Security Bureau. As a result, any reference to “Li Gang” has become associated with acting recklessly above the law because of supposed connections to government officials.)



Liu Yi asked.

“.....”

Xu Tianliang was dumbfounded for a moment.

“F\*ck, just a young Sports Bureau cadre, but think himself as Li Gang. Tell you, don't believe that you're above everyone, your right is given by the people; the people can give and take it back. Go back and discipline your daughter. You can't even teach your daughter well, and you want to act high and mighty as a high-ranking official?....You don't deserve it!”

Liu Yi's words suddenly made Xu father and daughter flew into rages.

“Good boy, remember me!”

“No problem, I'll remember.”

Liu Yi smiled and said, “But uncle, the next time you participate the sports competition, remember to hide your Patek Philippe, don't be too obvious.”

He said and faintly smile, glancing at that uncle's wrist.

Xu Tianliang subconsciously covered his right wrist.

Indeed....there was a Patek Philippe on it....

This Xu Tianliang has no other hobby besides collecting wristwatch.

This Sports Ministry appears to be a 'dry' place, but it's not.

Do not know how many people per year, to try to forge relationships, gave gifts to Xu Tianliang.

And although Xu Tianliang is not the Head of the Bureau, he also occupies an important position.

Many people know that Xu Tianliang never collects the money....He only likes wristwatch.

Thus, Patek Philippe, Vacheron Constantin....

Various brands of wristwatches, went into Xu Tianliang's pocket.

“In short, in the competition, I'll make you look bad.”

Xu Tianliang said, “I am the former long distance race star athlete in the

National team....Although you are young, in running, you are not my opponent.”

Xu Tianliang after these many years, although enjoying corruption, never reduced his physical exercise.

After all, he is the face of the Sports Bureau. If you let people see the former National team star athlete, now the Deputy Bureau Chief, turned into a fat person, what would it look like.

“That’s good, at that time do not cry when you lose.”

Liu Yi replied with irony.

“Humph, when the time comes, we’ll see who is going to cry!”

Xu Xin smiled proudly, “To compete long distance running against my Daddy, you’ll simply embarrass yourself!”

“When the time comes, you’ll know.”

Liu Yi actually didn’t care. In running, he is confident with himself.

Because he is an immortal cultivator.

At that time, the one who bring disgrace upon himself, will not be Liu Yi.

“The competition will begin soon, I’ll see you on the field.”

Xu Tianliang said, and turned away.

“Stupid Ox....”

When they left, Ma Yuanyuan apprehensively looked at Liu Yi.

“What’s wrong?”

“I, I’m sorry....”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 142

## Chapter 142 You Use Drugs

“I’m sorry....”

Ma Yuanyuan actually apologized to Liu Yi for the first time, this made Liu Yi very surprised.

‘What the hell, the Sun rise from the West?’

‘Ma Yuanyuan can actually apologize to me?’

‘I thought this was impossible....’

“I’m sorry....Liu Yi gege....if I didn’t bite the bullet and signed up for parents racing, you will not encounter such trouble....”

Ma Yuanyuan lowered her head, afraid to look at Liu Yi, “I just wanted to....tell others....I also have parents....”

“Don’t worry, I will help you to win this race.”

Liu Yi can’t help but scratch Ma Yuanyuan on the nose.

At this moment, Ma Yuanyuan in his eyes, turned out to be delicate and kind of cute.

“I will let that Xu Xin see how fierce our Ma Yuanyuan is. Later or you’ll have me, no one can bully you.”

Liu Yi’s heart was somewhat distressed.

He originally thought Ma Yuanyuan was like a little Princess, at home being spoiled and pampered.

In his eyes, she was like a typical little devil.

Unexpectedly in the school, she is in such environment.

Being excluded by the girls, and seemingly more popular among the boys.

But if there’re no same-sex friends, it really is a very sad thing.

“Who wants the Stupid Ox protection....”

Ma Yuanyuan was suddenly happy, pretended not to care and said, "Obviously only I can bully you, that Xu Xin actually spoke ill of you, huh, can't be forgiven!"

"Yes, yes, yes, only you this little devil can bully me, okay?"

"When I became a little devil! I'm really cute, OK!"

Ma Yuanyuan immediately pinched her waist and said.

"You....very well, you're really cute."

Liu Yi had to nod, otherwise, the little girl wouldn't let him go in the evening.

He has a female next door neighbor, a devil, named Yuanyuan!

"Parents 800 meters ready to begin!"

At this time, the school's loudspeaker broadcast a message.

For this parents 800 meters race, there was Liu Yi, as well as Xu Tianliang.

Two men stood on the starting line, Xu Tianliang glanced at Liu Yi, and slowly said.

"You will soon see the gap between us."

"Good, I'd like to see that."

Liu Yi squatted on the racetrack, hands pressed on the ground, with un-standard posture.

By contrast, Xu Tianliang's posture was very much according to standard, after all, he was originally a long-distant runner.

The host stood on the podium and cheerfully said.

"Everybody, see the parent on the fourth runway, he is our Northern Dragon City Sports Bureau Deputy Director Xu Tianliang!"

This Sports Bureau leader personally attended this parents meeting, has given much face to this Jiaoyu Middle School.

Many of the school's leaderships also attached great importance to him, one teacher even quietly arrived at Liu Yi's side, and said to him.

“The parent of Ma Yuanyuan....later on, please run a bit slower.”

“Why?”

Liu Yi was surprised.

“This....I ask you to forgive me.”

“That teacher spoke in whisper, “That is our City’s Sports Bureau Leadership....You know.....”

“Sorry, I don’t know.”

Liu Yi sneered, “Moreover I won’t yield to him. Here is the school, not society, nor is it government. I don’t want the kids here to learn how to flatter the official that filthy thing! I want them to see the spirit of sportsmanship!”

“ .....

That teacher was speechless for half a day.

Liu Yi’s words made him unable to refute.

At the same time, he muttered in his heart, “This kid didn’t give Xu Tianliang face....wouldn’t it be bad for the school’s image.

If the leadership is not happy then what to do?

But this guy is not the school’s student, even if we want to control, we can’t.’

“Ready!”

At this time, the sports teacher shouted the ready signal.

Liu Yi didn’t move, but that Xu Tianliang slightly raised his ass, ready to start the early sprint.

Liu Yi wanted to kick his ass, but thinking that he would miss the starting signal, retracted his thoughts.

“Bang!”

At this time, the sound of gunfire resounded, signaling the start.

That Xu Tianliang immediately like a runaway horse, quickly jumped out.

He really is a former long distance runner, that Xu Tianliang ran very strong and vigorous, the speed was also very fast, in the blink of an eye flung other people's behind him.

"Daddy, come on! Daddy, you can do it!"

Xu Xin kept cheering.

But Ma Yuanyuan's face was somewhat ugly, because Liu Yi stood on the starting line, tying his shoes.

Liu Yi didn't slow or pretend to be slow, just didn't know when his shoelace loosened, so he needed to fasten it first.

But this time, Xu Tianliang has already run for 50 meters, which basically, in the 800 meters distance running, it would be very difficult to catch up.

Other people in the race also deliberately yielded to Xu Tianliang.

"Haha, you see that, your brother is a waste, garbage, except his mouth everything is worthless!"

Xu Xin couldn't help but smile, "My daddy will win!"

"....."

Ma Yuanyuan clenched her fists, did not know how to refute.

Just when she was worried, Liu Yi finally started running.

His whole person was like an arrow leaving the bowstring, instantly leaped up.

Barely in the blink of an eye, Liu Yi has quickly surpassed other people, catching up to Xu Tianliang.

Xu Tianliang ran on the curve and caught a glimpse of Liu Yi catching up to him, the heart suddenly surprised.

"This kid sprinting power is strong...."

If this is fifty-meter run, I'm afraid I'll probably lose to him....

Fortunately this is 800 meters distance running!

At long distance race, in addition to active professional athlete, no one can beat me!

Moreover that kid sprint so hard, he will soon lose his steam.

Long distance running needs to maintain stamina, he madly sprints like this, soon he will be tired like a dog.'

Liu Yi didn't hurry to overtake Xu Tianliang, but kept his running rhythm, without any worry.

While he ran, he also shouted.

"Hey, hey, uncle, your Patek Philippe are going to fall!"

'Fuck!'

Xu Tianliang really wanted to curse.

"This kid is too f\*cking deserve a beating!

Next time I'll go out, to avoid the limelight I can't always wear these watches....

Otherwise, if one day I am exposed, I would be finished.'

"Uncle, you're so relaxed, can I overtake you?"

Liu Yi's voice behind Xu Tianliang made him depressed.

'How could this kid not tired now?

Moreover, he still has the strength to talk?

His stamina is that good?'

When Xu Tianliang was depressed, Liu Yi spoke again.

"Very well, since uncle does not speak, I'll just help myself then. This time's champion, is my family Ma Yuanyuan."

With that, the wind appeared under his feet, his whole body suddenly accelerated, and instantly went beyond Xu Tianliang.

"Yes!"

Ma Yuanyuan was instantly excited and kept on cheering.

But the nearby Xu Xin was dumbfounded.

Xu Tianliang raised his thighs high to run, confident on beating Liu Yi, but now Liu Yi has overtaken him, his suddenly startled eyes nearly burst out.

'F\*ck me!

This has to be a mistake, are you kidding me!

This kid just sprinted a moment ago, but now how could he easily overtake me?

Is he still human?

What stamina is this?

Too incredible....

I ran distant running for so many years, never seen someone this vicious!

But there's still 600 meters left! He will definitely spend all his stamina before I do!

After running for a while, he will slow down.'

"Liu Yi gege come on! Liu Yi gege you can do it!"

Ma Yuanyuan has never been so happy!

His Liu Yi gege strove to win the race for her!

Looking at Xu Xin that small face, she was inexplicably refreshed!

'It truly is...invigorating!

Hahaha'

While Liu Yi ran, Ma Yuanyuan made an OK gesture.

'Humph!

You happy now, let see how long you'll stay happy!' Xu Tianliang thought.

He kept on running behind Liu Yi, looking for an opportunity to overtake him.

"Uncle, I go first! You really are too slow, I won't wait for you anymore."

Liu Yi said, waved his hand, and began to pick up speed again.

Xu Tianliang was silly, he looked at Liu Yi's instant acceleration, running farther and farther away; he felt he was in a dream.

'That kid is a robot?



How could he not feel tired?

F\*ck me, this kid is not inferior to an active long distance running athlete!’

Liu Yi easily ran on the track, the whole people was in an unrestrained state.

The three forces unceasingly circulated inside his body, flowing, and turned into his physical strength.

If in the previous year he ran 800 meters, he would be exhausted halfway through.

But now, it was as relaxed as hair.

With ten seconds of effort, Liu Yi has left Xu Tianliang far behind.

Even if Xu Tianliang was able to fly, for fear it might be too late.

Let alone he was just a several years retired middle-aged man!

Xu Xin was also quiet, blankly standing there.

The few girls next to her did not know how to say, all of their complexions were splendid as if they’ve received a slap in the mouth.

When Liu Yi was about to cross the finish line, some people burst out cheering, some people jaws dropped.

The most exciting expression belong to those school leaders, all opened their mouth.

Liu Yi’s behavior is tantamount to give all the Jiaoyu Middle School leadership a slap in the face.

Moreover, it was a very hard slap.

But they can’t do nothing about it, Liu Yi’s spirit of sportsmanship is indisputable.

Sports competition....is to cultivate students’ sportsmanship, isn’t it?

Therefore, these people can only show their bitter face, and swallowed their own uncomfortable feeling.

“Liu Yi gege, you’re great!”

After Liu Yi pass the finish line, Ma Yuanyuan was the first to rush forward.

Regardless of Liu Yi's physical strength, this girl threw herself at him.

Fortunately, Liu Yi is a cultivator, reached out his hands to put the girl in his arms, hugging her.

"You're great (can also mean club/stick, i.e., lower body part)....really...."

Ma Yuanyuan's excitement was intense.

But Liu Yi secretly thought something evil, 'this is so....evil....

Moreover....

Ma Yuanyuan's (chest) development seems to be better....'

"D\*mn!"

At this time, Xu Xin with a group of girls came running up, pointed at Liu Yi's face, and loudly cursed.

"How could a waste like you beat my daddy! You must have taken some drugs!"

"Huh?"

Liu Yi was surprised, thinking, 'this girl is crazy!

I've won, but she said I took some drugs?

Since when she's in the Olympic Games Organization Committee!'

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 143

## Chapter 143 Psycho Killer

“Liu Yi gege....I’ve wronged you....”

Ma Yuanyuan looked at Liu Yi sitting inside the school infirmary, somewhat apologetically said.

“It doesn’t matter, in any case, my body doesn’t fear slanderous accusation.”

After Liu Yi had won the game, Xu Xin and her group were not convinced.

Xu Tianliang also directly looked for Liu Yi, asking him to take the urine test.

It’s actually no wonder that Xu Tianliang couldn’t believe the result, because the world record for 800 m race is 1 min 41.09 seconds.

But on the previous match, Liu Yi’s time turned out to be 1 min 42 seconds.

A near world record time....How could this number appear in youth who seemingly never received a professional training?

This is simply inconceivable!

Therefore, Liu Yi had to go to the school infirmary, to take a simple lab test.

“Humph humph, after the result comes out, you will cry!”

Xu Xin wrinkled her nose, smiled smugly, “Nobody can beat my daddy on 800 m, doping trash.”

“Xu Xin, if you don’t have anything to say then shut up, no one will think of you as a mute!”

Ma Yuanyuan very unhappily looked at Xu Xin and said.

“What, angry out of shame after being poked at the center?”

Xu Xin continued to ridicule, “If you’re afraid, don’t do the urine test!”

“Who’s afraid of you! If it needs to be checked, then check it!”

Ma Yuanyuan was holding Liu Yi's arm; Standing next to Liu Yi, she felt emboldened.

"My Liu Yi gege is standing on the right path! Not afraid of any test! But what about your father, does he dare to let the disciplinary committee to come and inspect him?"

"Why, why not...."

After saying this words, Xu Xin felt a bit guilty.

"The doctor will come soon, if you don't have any guilty conscience, then just calmly wait here."

Xu Tianliang also sat on the side.

In this infirmary, now sat four people.

The sounds of gongs and drums still came from the outside, the games atmosphere was quite thick.

But in this small infirmary, the mood was sharp and tense.

Soon, a man in a hospital mask, wearing a white coat, slowly walked into the clinic.

"Doctor, you're finally here."

Xu Tianliang saw this doctor, immediately said, "Quickly give him the test, I really don't want to sit a minute more in the same room with this people, it's too cheapening."

"Oh, okay...."

The doctor was slightly sluggish for a moment but soon responded, chuckled and said.

"You guys sit down, I don't like the smell of disinfectant, we light the fragrant incense first."

With that, the doctor walked over to the bed, closed the windows, and lit a piece of incense with sandalwood-like fragrance.

Although the doctor's behavior was a bit weird, Liu Yi thought the smell of this fragrance was actually quite nice, moreover, it made his spirit relaxed.

“Don’t be too hard on yourself, you all can relax your mind.”

The doctor’s voice was like the friction of metals, slightly jarring.

However, Liu Yi felt his whole body very comfortable, very relaxed.

He was a bit tired.....

Last night was a busy night, and this morning he also participated in the games....

Mmm....this is a good sleep....

In this state of extreme relaxation, Liu Yi soon fell asleep.

“Stupid Ox....help me....”

In Liu Yi’s vague dream, he saw Ma Yuanyuan stretched out a hand, helplessly trying to reach him.

“Yuanyuan!”

Liu Yi was taken aback and opened his eyes.

After opening his eyes, he was suddenly surprised.

Because he was not at the infirmary, but in the dark worn out warehouse-like place.

The outside seemed to be dark, because he was surrounded by darkness.

Only a faint yellow light came from a low angle toward Liu Yi’s chest.

This light....might as well not hit him. Instead, it gave Liu Yi a depressing feeling.

“I beg you....let my daughter go....what ever you want, I will give you....”

Liu Yi suddenly heard a familiar cry from the side.

He turned around and saw that arrogant Xu Tianliang before him. At this time, he was actually chained with a big iron chain to a chair.

His previous proud and arrogant look were gone, leaving only the ability to beg.

Liu Yi then found that his body was also locked by a section of thick chain.

These chains, each has two fingers thick thickness, tied him solidly.

Even if Liu Yi forced out his full strength, the chain still can't be broken.

'This is....what is happening here?' He thought.

'Previously I was going to take a urine test, right?'

'How could I, in the blink of an eye, come to this place?'

"Daddy....daddy....help me...."

At this time, a faint cry for help came from the above.

Liu Yi looked up and found there were two girls hung above his head.

One is Xu Xin, the other is Ma Yuanyuan.

At this time, tears were streaming down their pretty faces. Their hands were tightly tied together, hanging from the ceiling.

The previous doctor, was standing on the stairs on the second floor, behind the two girls. He laughed and said with a smile.

"Come on, keep screaming....I like to listen to the sound of girls before they die....This kind of sound is more beautiful than any kind of music in the world."

'D\*mn....this is so perverted....'

'Wait a minute....'

Liu Yi suddenly remembered something....

'Is this man....the suspect of the major case 531?'

'That psycho killer who butchered more than ten girls in a row?'

'Oh my f\*cking god....'

'This time....I hit a jackpot....'

"Please don't hurt my daughter....I beg you...."

Chained near Liu Yi, Xu Tianliang kept on his bitter cry.

Liu Yi was somewhat touched, thinking that even a corrupt man could have a fatherly side.

"If you let go of my daughter....no matter what the conditions, I will promise you...."

“Hehe....a man’s pleading voice, is not pleasant to hear.”

The psycho killer stood there, hand carrying a large scissors, it’s sharp edges gently clamped Xu Xin’s tiny toe.

“Tell me....your pretty daughter....if missing a toe, would she still cute?”

“No! Please don’t!”

Xu Tianliang was frightened and quickly shouted, “Please don’t hurt my daughter....”

“Klik!”

“Ahh....”

The scissors shone with cold light, followed by the light of blood spurting out.

A small section of toe, fell along with that blood.

Xu Xin immediately screamed in pain, and then fainted.

Xu Tianliang’s gut cracked, started to curse.

“F\*ck you....you dare lay a finger on my daughter, I will not let you go! Aaa! Let go of my daughter, if you want to do something, do it to me!”

Liu Yi was stunned, thinking, ‘this is truly the psycho killer....this guy, is the kind of guy who kills without batting an eye....’

“Hush....”

The psycho killer extended his finger to press his mouth and whispered.

“Your beautiful daughter has fallen asleep....your voice is so loud, it will wake her up.”

“God d\*mn it....”

Xu Tianliang cried, then suddenly called out, “Please don’t hurt my daughter....if you want to harm a girl....I, I can help you get more girls....I beg you, just let go of my daughter....”

Liu Yi was suddenly covered with cold, thinking.

“This Xu Tianliang, what does he mean by this?”

“Oh? This seems a bit interesting.”

The psycho killer raised an eyebrow, put down the scissors, looked at Xu Tianliang, and said.

“How can you help me?”

“I’m the deputy chief of the Sports Bureau, as long as I say a word, there will be many female students to follow my arrangements! I can make them come here, and you can kill them all, I just ask you to spare my daughter!”

Liu Yi felt a burst of dismay, his hands and feet were covered with cold.

Is this their benevolent officials...?

“Hehe....if that’s the case, I can consider....”

That killer touched his smooth chin, and said, “I want a dozen, or several dozens....yes, that’s good....”

“Yes, yes, that’s a good deal, as long as you let go of my daughter, please....”

“Then so be it.”

The killer smiled, “I want to select some fun things, and make the arrangements. Before I come back, you all stay quietly here.”

With that, he took out a spray and sprayed Xu Xin’s bleeding wound a few times.

“What are you doing!”

Xu Tianliang suddenly paled with fear.

“Hehe, look at you so scared like that, this is good stuff, if you spray it on the wound, it can stop the bleeding. If you don’t want this, then just wait for your beautiful daughter to bleed to death.”

That killer sneered twice. After he sprayed the wound several times, he stowed the spray back, then turned around and slowly left this dark warehouse.

“You actually....can do such a thing....”

Liu Yi coldly looked at Xu Tianliang and said, “Your conscience was eaten by a dog?”



“The one who was harmed is my daughter!”

Xu Tianliang mercilessly stared at Liu Yi, “What do you know! If the one being harmed is the girl in your family, what are you going to do?”

Liu Yi slightly frowned.

Ma Yuanyuan was still unconscious.

‘If she was hurt....what am I going to do?’

This point....Liu Yi himself was unable to predict....

But, at least, he will not do the same as Xu Tianliang....

In order to save himself and his family, he was willing to sacrifice many innocent lives....

This kind of thing....Liu Yi really can’t do.

But at this time, there was no movement from Lin Tong. Liu Yi wondered whether his Fox sister is too devoted in practice that she didn’t know what happened on the outside.

“Humph....as long as my daughter and I can live....even if I betray all the people in the Northern Dragon City....so what!”

Xu Tianliang bowed his head, eyes stared ahead, and dully said.

“In any case, you guys are worthless....all are trash....I have made many contributions to this society....I’m the leader....I shouldn’t have to die, but all of you trash should....If your death....can be exchanged for my life....then, then you will not die in vain....”

‘F\*ck!’

Listening to this made Liu Yi burned with rage.

But he had no other choice, other than silently circulated his forces, and strived to break these chains!

That psycho killer was really careful....he actually locked Liu Yi with such a heavy chain....

Although he has the third star jade power, if he wants to break open this thick iron chain, he still has some difficulties....

‘Liu Yi, you can, you can do it....Ma Yuanyuan is waiting for you to save her!’

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 144

## Chapter 144 The End

A night passed by, Ma Yuanyuan was still unconscious.

“This little sister’s constitution seemed to be very poor....even after a long time the drug efficacy still has not abated.”

‘However, this is also good....lest she’ll be scared to cry.

As long as I still breathing, I will not let her have an accident....’

Liu Yi never closed his eyes to sleep this whole night.

When the day began to dawn, the psycho killer finally returned to the warehouse.

“Hehe, come on, our highness secretary.”

The killer said, walking straight to Xu Tianliang.

“Give your staff a call, and let them put the Jiaoyu Middle School girls to the vacant land behind the construction area of Jiaoyu Middle School.”

The killer said with a smile, “There, I put the time bomb that I bought last night. As long as they come at that time, those girls will go to the Western Paradise....Gee, if I didn’t just like killing girls....I’m afraid I will blow up this entire school.”

This psycho killer is named Huang Zhongyi, was a famous international mercenary.

In the past, he busted his ass in life and death situation on the battlefield and earned a lot of money. After returning to the homeland, he concealed his identity, ready to enjoy the rest of his life.

As a result, when he played an online game to pass his boredom, he met a middle school little sister.

Already approaching 40s Huang Zongyi, the internationally famous ruthless mercenary, unexpectedly fell deeply in love, and was fooled by this middle school little sister.

In the end, all his properties had been cheated by this girl. After that, this girl as if turning into thin air, disappeared without a trace.

This made Huang Zongyi crazy.

Finally, he used his means, and ultimately found that girl. When he found the girl, she was flirting with another man online.

It seemed like she was going to swindle another man.

But Huang Zongyi still liked this girl....

He asked the girl to change her mind and be with him again.

But the result of his painstaking effort was that, the girl ridiculed him.

The girl satirized Huang Zongyi, that he didn't look at how old he was.

The girl was in her youth, plus she now has the money, there will be many handsome guy around her side.

How could she have the heart to follow an uncle?

This made Huang Zongyi completely crazy.

The girl dated Huang Zongyi for so long, the only thing that she didn't know about him is, Huang Zongyi was once a brutal mercenary, and has taken an unknown number of human lives.

If she knew, she would not utter such words.

So, the girl was disfigured and then killed by Huang Zongyi.

Subsequently, Huang Zongyi completely gone mental, constantly killing girls of the same age, thinking that the girl at this age deserves to be killed.

Finally, he became a psycho killer.

"You're crazy!"

Liu Yi heard Huang Zongyi's plan, the whole body covered with cold.

"You can't promise him!"

He hoped Xu Tianliang's heart still has a trace of humanity.

"Good, good, as long as you let go of my daughter and me, other people's death will not matter to me...."

Xu Tianliang nodded, crushing Liu Yi's final fantasy.

They've already....without any humanity.

"Leave it to me...."

Xu Tianliang volunteered.

He uttered a number, after Huang Zongyi pressed that number, he put the phone on Xu Tianliang's ear.

"You know what to say....Think of your daughter...."

Huang Zongyi threatened.

"I know, I know...."

On the phone, Xu Tianliang pretended to hold a City's sports event, ordering the female student of Jiaoyu Middle School to go to the said vacant spot for rehearsal. He will soon arrive and personally supervised the rehearsals.

Xu Tianliang's word is still very influential in schools.

After finishing his instruction, the man on the phone immediately went to follow it.

"Very good...."

Huang Zongyi nodded with satisfaction, "That's more like it....Now it's 7 AM, at 8 AM, the bomb will explode. At that time, this period's sinner will reduce a lot....Thinking about it made me happy...."

"Then, what about my daughter...."

"Hehe....I can spare her."

Huang Zongyi said with a smile, "If the bomb really killed those girls, your daughter can keep her life."

In Liu Yi's eyes, his smile has a trace of strange taste.

"Therefore, all we have to do now, is to wait."

He said, playing the scissors with the other hand, and continued.

"However....the most annoying thing is to wait....I wonder if there's

anything interesting to do to pass the time....”

“That girl! That girl!”

Xu Tianliang immediately exclaimed, “You can free to play with that girl! Even if you chop off her limbs, that’s nothing!”

“Hehe....this is a good idea.”

Huang Zongyi seemed very satisfied, “Then let’s give it a try.”

“If you dare lay a finger on her....you’re dead.....”

Liu Yi suddenly looked up, his eyes fell upon that Huang Zongyi.

Huang Zongyi suddenly took two steps backward, his forehead slightly shed some sweat.

As a well-known mercenary, he felt a terrible murderous aura coming from Liu Yi’s body....

A student....how could he emit such a terrifying murderous look....

At that moment, Huang Zongyi seemed to have an illusion of returning to the battlefield.

“Actually ferocious....”

Huang Zongyi remembered Liu Yi’s present appearance, and couldn’t help but sneer at it, “Unfortunately, I’ve tied you up, what else can you do?”

He said, slowly walking toward the second floor while holding the scissors.

“I will slowly cut off all of this girl’s pretty toes....then the fingers....I’ll enjoy her nice shrieks....”

He said, suddenly turned around and looked at Liu Yi with a glance.

“Or....Do you want to be like that man, leading other girls to me?”

“I will not lead any innocent people to you....”

Liu Yi said slowly, “But if you touch her, I’ll kill you....”

“Fool.”

The nearby Xu Tianliang scolded, “Don’t even realize your own situation, how are people going to listen to your threat? A fool is a fool, a hopeless.”

“It seems, if I don’t make you see the thing that you’re afraid of, you will not understand your situation.”

With that, he gently put the scissors on Ma Yuanyuan’s left thumb.

“As long as I put a bit of pressure....you will see the red color of blood spurt out....I promise you, you will love the feeling.”

Huang Zongyi said and was about to close the scissors, to cut off Ma Yuanyuan’s finger.

Just then, the color of blood flew out.

Not Ma Yuanyuan’s, but Huang Zongyi’s.

His right hand flipped and landed on the ground, along with the scissors.

“My hand, my hand!”

Huang Zongyi held his wrist and continued to scream

This sudden scene made him unable to think of what to do, and also let that Xu Tianliang froze.

An ice dagger punctured the wall beside him, still sending out dense cold air.

And the chain on Liu Yi’s hands suddenly became red, under Xu Tianliang’s eyes, Liu Yi’s hands broke free from that chain.

Liu Yi stood up, his whole body emitted a vague white smoke.

He opened his eyes, a pair of golden eyes exuded a cold chill.

Liu Yi’s clothes were constantly changing.

Soon, a black trenchcoat appeared on his body, a bright red scarf wound around his neck.

The long silver hair stood straight to the back, cool and neat.

“My hand....why did my hand gone....”

That Huang Zongyi was still wailing in pain.

“This is your own consequences.”

Liu Yi said, his whole people suddenly jumped up, into the air.

His figure, in the blink of an eye turned into a flame, instantly fluttered to the second floor and landed in front of Huang Zongyi.

“Hateful, d\*mn!”

Huang Zongyi, after all, was a mercenary, he put the spray out and sprayed his broken wrist, and then pulled out another scissors to fiercely stab Liu Yi’s heart.

This stab was quick and ruthless, and most people would certainly be stabbed to the heart.

But Liu Yi just stretched out his left hand, using only two fingers to caught that fastly moving sharp scissors.

“Ah!”

Huang Zongyi felt his hand holding the scissors was severely burned, just like holding a red-hot iron bar. He screamed in pain and withdrew his hand. There were many red blisters on his palm.

“Don’t you like listening to other people’s scream?”

Liu Yi stood there, and slowly said, “Might as well listen to your own scream.”

With that, Liu Yi stretched out his right hand’s index and middle fingers.

Two red boiling hot fingers.

“Poof!”

Without any obstacle, this two fingers entered Huang Zongyi’s right shoulder.

The smell of charred meat suddenly passed out.

Huang Zongyi screamed in pain again and again, directly peed himself, kneeling on the ground.

“Spare me....I beg you....spare me....”

“Spare you?”

Liu Yi’s eyes shone with golden light, “But those resentful spirits around you....do not agree to that....”



“Resentful spirits....what, what resentful spirits....”

After Liu Yi pulled out his finger, Huang Zongyi’s pain reduced a bit.

Listening to Liu Yi’s words, his heart suddenly emerged out a deep sense of fear.

“You don’t know? Then, let you see it for yourself.”

Liu Yi said, and clapped his hands.

“Those spirits still wandering in this world....use my flame as the medium, so that you can show your figure....if you have a grudge, take revenge, if you have resentment, complain....

With that, a flame roared, a figure made of flame one by one appeared around the two people.

These flames are not illusory, and each has their respective shape.

One by one, flame with woman shape, floated between the two people.

These more than ten women, probably have fine and delicate features, but in the flame form, they looked doubly ferocious.

“How....how could it be you....”

Seeing these women’s faces, Huang Zongyi directly paralyzed to the ground.

“They are coming to demand your life....”

Liu Yi sneered, “Enjoy their services....this is what you deserve....”

While speaking, those more than ten flame spirits, instantly threw themselves at Huang Zongyi’s body.

“Aaa....”

Huang Zongyi began to scream out again and again, soon, he was burned down unable to make a sound again.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 145

## Chapter 145 Thou Shalt Evildoer

After these flame spirits finish gnawing Huang Zongyi, they floated back to Liu Yi's side.

Leaving behind a brown mummified corpse on the ground

"You guys want to follow me?"

Liu Yi looked at those flame spirits, and slowly said, "You will have no future if you follow me....you have avenged your grievance, it is better to be reincarnated....hoping that, in your next life, you can grow up healthy, get married, and have children...."

But those flame spirits still would not go away, just quietly hovering around Liu Yi.

"If this is your choice....alright then."

Liu Yi nodded his head. Those flame spirits seemed happy with this as they keep circling around Liu Yi's head.

Ma Yuanyuan and Xu Xin were still unconscious.

Xu Tianliang was scared silly.

He didn't understand how it could turn into this....

How in the blink of an eye....Huang Zongyi was killed....

Moreover, he died in such a strange way.

This....is simply unscientific....

At this moment, Xu Tianliang wished the thing that he wore on his right hand was not Patek Phillipe, but a string of prayer beads.

Those flame spirits quickly flew down from the second floor, floating in front of Xu Tianliang.

Xu Tianliang trembled with fear. He wanted to run away but was firmly locked in chains there.

“Wha, what are you going to do....”

“They say they hate you.”

Liu Yi also jumped down on the second floor and landed on the ground.

Two rows of red flame came out of his feet on the ground.

“They told me....your behavior, compared to that Huang Zongyi, is more perverted and more shameless.”

“I, I....”

Xu Tianliang’s face pale.

“Therefore, you should go down to accompany Huang Zongyi.”

“No! No!”

Xu Tianliang repeatedly shook his head, shouted in horror.

“How could I be the same as that scum....”

“Where do you think you’re going?”

Liu Yi sneered, “If I let you go, I’m afraid that even the other me probably won’t be happy.”

He said, stopped in front of Xu Tianliang, held up two fingers and placed it against his forehead.

“In order to save yourself, you are willing to sacrifice so many innocent people....how could there be a reason for people like you to be alive?”

Then, Liu Yi planned to launch his heart sutra to directly burst Xu Tianliang’s forehead.

“Don’t kill me, don’t kill me!”

Xu Tianliang seemed to feel the arrival of death, desperately begging for mercy, “I also do that for the safety of my daughter....my daughter is everything to me....”

Liu Yi’s arched eyebrows slightly trembled a bit.

“Your daughter is one human life. Do you think other people’s daughter, are all animals?”

Although Liu Yi was currently displaying his fire power, his voice was incomparably cold, as cold as the winter's wind in December.

"Perhaps in your heart....Other people's lives are simply not worth mentioning."

Liu Yi said, "But I have to tell you, in my heart, you Xu Tianliang are not worth mentioning. Therefore, to me, killing you is just like crushing an ant."

"Do not! Do not kill me....Those girls, after all, have not dead, right? I did not kill anyone, did not kill anyone!"

Xu Tianliang pleaded.

"Because of you....they have already died once...."

Liu Yi sneered, "In hell, confess all of your sins in front of Yama."

With that, he started the Red Blood Sutra Code in his body.

The red blood devil flame lit out of his fingers.

"Stay out of that man!"

At this moment, a sharp cold awn suddenly pierced the ceiling of this warehouse and rapidly fell toward Liu Yi.

Liu Yi suddenly looked up; the world slowed down before his eyes.

Within the world of black and white, the sword edge was cutting down toward him, exuding a red awn.

The sword came from above, with an unstoppable momentum and force.

Liu Yi almost subconsciously outstretched his hand and released out his flame.

With the aid of this force, his body rapidly flew upside down at a distance.

"Splat!"

The sword edge cut into the ground.

A cold force instantly spread out within an area of more than ten meters in radius, forming a layer of ice.

The chair under Xu Tianliang's body has been frozen for the most part.

But his legs were safe and sound.

This power control precision is very high!

Clearly, the person is a master.

“We finally meet.....”

Liu Yi was standing there. Those flame spirits floated beside him.

“Alright....we are going to meet after all.”

The voice has not fallen, but the white figure fell down from the hole in the ceiling.

Her stature was very graceful and lovely.

Her pair of feet tread above the sword hilt, her whole body was standing on the sword, looking at the opposite Liu Yi.

“This time, I will definitely catch you.”

Guyu’s feet was standing on the treasured sword, her big attractive eyes exuded out aggressive gleam.

“Our matters can be discussed later.”

Liu Yi pointed to Xu Tianliang behind her, “Let me kill that man first.”

“Bold evildoer! Presumptuous!”

Hearing that Liu Yi still want to kill someone, Guyu’s beautiful eyebrows immediately pricked up, her almond eyes filled with anger as she charmingly scolded.

“In front of this immortal fairy, you’re actually still thinking about killing! A demon is truly difficult to tame!”

“Gee....you seem to care about so many things, big sister.”

Liu Yi, with arms crossed and curled mouth, said, “Do you know that the person behind you has done such a heinous thing? And you’re trying to defend him?”

“This immortal fairy, only see you are about to kill innocent people!”

Guyu coldly said, “Sure enough, a demon is a demon, your demonic

character is difficult to tame....even if you used to be a human.”

“I am a demon, but I think I’m more human than you.”

“Nonsense! With you this evildoer, what else there is to say! See this immortal fairy; I will kill you and finish what I should do from the beginning!”

With that, Guyu’s body floated out white snowflakes.

The air in this warehouse instantly turned into winter.

White snow continued to fall.

Even Liu Yi felt a bit of biting cold.

“This woman....is indeed very scary....

But she is my enemy.

Too bad, it would be nice if she’s my girlfriend.

The other me didn’t live up to expectation, if I had his power, I would’ve captured this immortal fairy really quick!

Of course, I’m referring to her feelings.’

“Don’t expect your right-hand power will help you.”

Guyu said, “I won’t let your right hand hit me. You will not have this opportunity. Your only chance is being reincarnated.”

“My chances are many...in the presence of beauty, my potential is unlimited.”

Liu Yi smiled.

“D\*mn womanizer!”

Hearing Liu Yi dared to verbally molest her, Guyu was even more angry, “It appears that you are in a hurry to die! This immortal fairy is ready to help you!”

With that, the snowflakes in the warehouse, suddenly eerily stopped in mid-air, motionless.

Something abnormal was about to happen....

Liu Yi already felt a terrible threat.

“Freeze for me!”

Guyu said and waved her hand.

Suddenly, the snow in mid-air suddenly fell rapidly to the ground.

Any spot that was covered by the snow immediately froze into a thick layer of frost.

Soon, the warehouse turned into the world of ice and snow.

In addition to the two-meter area around Guyu, as well as Ma Yuanyuan and Xu Xin, all the other places were full of snow.

All things have been frozen into ice.

Thick raw cold wind unceasingly attacked Liu Yi's body.

But the several flame spirit beauties floated on their own initiative, hand in hand, they huddled in a circle around Liu Yi.

These beautiful flame spirits' flame constantly flashed, blocking the invasion of these snow and ice.

“D\*mn....you're hiding behind the girls?”

Guyu can't help but angrily said.

“They're not ordinary girls.”

Liu Yi said slowly, “Moreover....I didn't issue any order to them, they protect me on their own initiative....You've got your revenge....let me deal with this.”

Although feeling overwhelming pressure from Guyu, even if this was the other Liu Yi, he also doesn't like to admit defeat.

Unexpectedly, these several flame beauties shook their head, still floating on his side.

“So stubborn....”

Liu Yi was touched.

“Demons and spirits, are jackals of the same tribe (birds of a feather and so

on)”

Gu Yu coldly snorted, both of her hands made a seal sign.

Suddenly, the ice and snow in this warehouse blew even more fierce.

Those flame beauties immediately freeze into ice sculptures, standing around Liu Yi.

“Come back!”

Liu Yi quickly pulled his right hand.

Suddenly, those layers of ice broke, the flames flew out into his hand, forming a mass of red ball similar to magma flame.

This flame finally integrated into the middle of his hand.

“I won’t let you hurt them....their fate has been very sad.”

“Then let me send you demon and spirits into the afterlife!”

Guyu said as both of her hands continued to make the seal sign.

The snow and ice impacted Liu Yi’s body from everywhere, reducing Liu Yi’s body temperature.

Liu Yi’s hands guarded in front of his chest.

Red flames erupted out from both of his hands and then continued to flow on his own body.

But his flame was too weak compared to Guyu’s ice and snow.

Soon, Liu Yi’s body began to freeze.

The frost continued to spread around and thickened.

Soon, Liu Yi’s body was about to completely freeze.

Even if this was the other Liu Yi....he also could not bear this kind of cold.

Guyu’s power....really was too strong....

The strength disparity between those two was really too much....

‘Alas....I am currently not her opponent....

If I could use my three forces simultaneously, that would be nice....



Unfortunately....

I just need a little bit of time....’

At this moment, a red colored lotus flower slowly floated down from the ceiling.

“What...is this?”

Guyu looked at the red lotus, slightly wrinkled her brows.

“Boom!”

That red lotus suddenly burst open.

Crimson flame instantly flooded half of the warehouse, flushing out the snow and ice.

The room temperature instantly elevated.

The ice and flame separated in the middle of the room, like two opposing worlds.

A woman’s figure, came out from that bursting lotus, floating in the air; a pair of flame wings flapped behind her.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 146

## Chapter 146 Working Together

That woman slowly opened her red flame wings, her pair of eyes, as if talking, fell upon Guyu.

“Who are you!”

Guyu looked at the woman who suddenly appeared in front of her, and her heart suddenly had a bad feeling, thinking.

‘This woman....her strength is not inferior to me....

My power is tenth star jade....

This woman....is likely the same.’

Although Guyu had asked a question, the opposite woman didn’t say anything. Instead, she glanced at the half frozen Liu Yi with a worried look.

“Are you worried about him?”

Guyu saw that the two people use the same type of fire technique and immediately understood what’s going on.

“Turn out to be jackals of the same tribe!”

She quickly charmingly scolded, “Since you have come, then don’t leave!”

The person who came is none other than Wenren Qian.

She held out her slim finger and wrote some fire words in mid-air.

“Why do you want to kill him, he didn’t do evil things.”

“To kill Demons like you, what reason do I need?”

Guyu disdainfully explained to the demon and coldly snorted, “All the devil in the world, behave differently, but in this immortal fairy’s eyes, all deserve to die!”

“Pei!”

Wenren Qian wrote a word, and then both of her hands made a seal sign.

Suddenly, the pair of flame wings behind her began to transform rapidly, in the blink of an eye turned into a pair of giant flame hands, each of them was clutching a huge flame sword, which she wielded down toward the opposite Guyu.

“Cover!”

Guyu didn't dodge, just lifted one of her hand.

Suddenly, a huge ice shield appeared in front of her.

With a “Bam” sound, the flame swords hit the ice shield, frying up a large chunk of ice and blasting off pieces of ice chips, impacting everywhere.

Initially Xu Tianliang saw someone came to save him and was very excited about it.

But then he saw such a girl, who came in flame, the two of them then started swinging at each other. He was suddenly so frightened that he peed his pant. He thought.

‘Your mother....

What if those things spread here!

I am just an ordinary person....

Your mother, why am I reduced to just being an ordinary people!

I'm obviously a noble dragon among men....

This hateful feeling....these guys, go to hell all of you!’

“I admit you have some strength.”

Guyu easily blocked Wenren Qian's attack, and said, “But this immortal fairy has received many teachings from Master over the years regarding how to use the force, something that evildoer like you who only know how to massacre can't possibly comprehend!”

With that, she suddenly swung her foot, directly kicked out an ice sword from behind the ice shield.

The ice sword constantly rotated in the air toward the opposite Wenren Qian, trying to chop her.

Wenren Qian suddenly waved her hand, a section of flame flew out forming a long snake, weaving toward that ice sword.

But that ice sword was under Guyu's control, making it exceptionally flexible, constantly drawing an arc, and in the blink of an eye evaded the long flame snake entanglement to continue to fly toward Wenren Qian.

"Two terrible women...."

Lin Tong lie on Liu Yi's shoulder, trembling with fear.

The power of the two women....can't be seen through her Star Jade Eyes....She thought Guyu was much less stronger than this, only today she knew....It turned out that she previously didn't come up with her full strength....This woman's power should belong to the Earthly Realm....

The two women were both cultivators, who knew variety of techniques, with huge destructive force.

If the two of them simultaneously launched their destructive forces on this warehouse wall, perhaps this warehouse would be reduced to the ground.

Meanwhile, Liu Yi's body was still half-frozen by Guyu's power. Even if he wanted to break free....fear that would be very difficult.

But the thing that weighed heavily on Lin Tong's mind was, 'why would that Wenren Qian want to help Liu Yi?

Exactly for what purpose?

Is this woman have a liking for Liu Yi?

Unlikely....even with the Friendly Aura, it would not be so dramatic like this.

That Wenren Qian's strength is very strong, and she is also an extremely gorgeous woman.

Even though she is mute, it can't conceal her goddessly charm.

How could she possibly take a fancy of Liu Yi!

Em, definitely not....'

Lin Tong tried to comfort herself.

“Thou shalt evildoer, received this punishment!”

Guyu controlled the ice sword, steering away from the flame snake, and came to the front of Wenren Qian.

But Wenren Qian gently opened her lips, spitting out a blossoming red lotus.

That red lotus quickly exploded, the hot shockwave immediately impacted the ice sword.

In the blink of an eye, the ice sword turned into a mist.

“D\*mn....”

Guyu didn’t expect Wenren Qian’s technique to be so weird and varied, and she felt that something seemed faintly amiss.

“Who are you, why are you meddling with this immortal’s matter!”

Guyu finally couldn’t bear to ask

“You should not hurt him.”

Wenren Qian wrote a few flame words, which caught Guyu’s attention. She thought.

“This woman doesn’t speak?

What a pity, she actually has a beautiful face.’

“Demon, should not exist in this world.”

Guyu continued to stick to her principle. An ice sword floated beside her body.

“Moreover, he actually killed a mortal; this is such a heinous crime. Even I am impossible to give him a chance again and again. This time, he must die.”

“Then I have to protect him.”

Wenren Qian’s figure seemed to be somewhat unhappy.

She waved her hand, a red lotus flower floated out, hovering at her feet.

The two people’s power seemed to be somewhat uncontrolled.

“Uh....it hurts....”

At this time, Ma Yuanyuan, who was still hanging on the ceiling, issued a painful cry, cold sweat covered all over her body.

The Immortals fighting, the mortal suffers.

The power used by these two beautiful women was getting more intense, their uncontrolled strength has already affected Ma Yuanyuan.

Originally, Ma Yuanyuan's physique is fragile, therefore, after being affected by cold and hot, her body soon began to feel pain.

"Liu Yi gege...."

That half-frozen Liu Yi suddenly opened his eyes.

His pupils were no longer golden, but back to his original crystal clear eyes.

"D\*mn....let me goooo!"

He desperately forced out his power, trying to break free from the layer of ice.

"It's no use."

While vigilantly controlling the ice sword, Guyu shot Liu Yi a glance, and then said.

"The ice that I made is not something that a third star jade people like you can break through. Obediently accept your fate, evildoer."

"Whizz!"

Wenren Qian immediately released several red flames Lotus flowers, seemingly wanting to help Liu Yi.

But Guyu, almost simultaneously, emitted out a few ice swords and punctured those flame Lotus flowers.

"As long as I'm here, you can't help him."

Guyu said.

This time, it was Wenren Qian's turn to be anxious.

"Liu Yi gege....I'm really hurt..."

At this time, Ma Yuanyuan's weak voice drifted into Liu Yi's ears.

Liu Yi's heart violently trembled.

He felt as if there was a mountain pressuring his body. He thought.

'I want...to save Ma Yuanyuan....

I must....carry this mountain....'

It was at this moment, Liu Yi vaguely saw a figure of a man appeared in front of him.

That man's appearance....was very similar to him....

He was high above, with hands inside his pant's pockets, and his golden eyes looking down at him.

"You want power?"

He asked himself.

"I...."

"I ask you, do you want power?"

He asked again.

"Yes....I want...."

"Aren't you afraid that I will devour you?"

That figure asked again.

"I will....defeat you."

Liu Yi said through gritted teeth.

"Hehe....then let's give it a try....the two of us cooperate.....will give them....many surprises."

That figure said and held out a hand toward Liu Yi.

"Alright...."

Liu Yi also stretched out a hand, and grabbed the other hand.

The two figure instantly coincide together.

"Crack crack..."

The sound of rupture echoed throughout the warehouse.

Guyu was surprised, her beautiful face turned pale, turning her head to look at Liu Yi.

Only to see the layers of ice that kept Liu Yi's body unmoved continued to crack open, and began to break apart.

"This...."

She couldn't believe her eyes when she saw this scene, thinking.

'This is the ice that I created....how could it possibly be burst open by a guy with the power of third star jade?

This is absolutely impossible!

Could he subvert the rules of immortal cultivator's world?

Or....he just subvert the laws of logic of this world?'

"Break!"

Liu Yi uttered an explosive roar.

A burst of force, instantly spread out of his body, forming a circular ripple, which impacted everything around him.

"Bam bam bam!"

All of those layers of ice completely broke, turning into fragments of ice.

Liu Yi was half kneeling on the ground, with one hand on the floor.

His body was draped in a black coat.

The edge of the coat was printed with flames, but the sleeve cuffs and the collar were actually cited with snowflakes mark.

A bright red scarf waved along the airwave, unceasingly fluttering.

Liu Yi slowly opened his eyes.

A pair of golden eyes, blooming with brilliant luster.

At that time, the hearts of Guyu and Wenren Qian were shocked.

On that moment, their hearts were throbbing like when someone fell in love for the first time, letting the two people's faces blushed at the same



time. Their heartbeat increased, while their breath shortened.

In their vision right now....Liu Yi was quite pleasing to the eyes....

Wenren Qian was quite alright, but Guyu was actually terrified. She thought.

‘How could it be like this....

How, all of a sudden....I lost all of my hostility toward Liu Yi?

What kind of Demonic technique....

Which can affect a tenth star expert like me!

Even if he cast a Demonic technique, how could it directly affect me....

Strange....it’s really strange....’

After Liu Yi completely broke out the three forces in his body, he felt he was now stronger than ever.

But he also found out that, the two women opposite of him....were even more unfathomable.

Even though he now can use all his three forces simultaneously, his basic strength was third star jade; it was still too big of a gap compared to the ten star jade.

He had to be extremely careful....

“D\*mn evildoer....Go to hell!”

Guyu forced herself to flung out rows of ice swords toward Liu Yi.

“Mountain Mist!”

Liu Yi stood up, took a step, and launched his palms.

A pair of giant palm attached to each other suddenly flew into the air.

A fire palm, and an ice palm, each with four meters in size; together they reflected the ice swords falling from the air.

“Boom boom boom!”

Explosive sounds continuously echoed throughout the warehouse. The ice swords began to burst, but the two palms were also increasingly weaker.

Liu Yi was still in a very dangerous situation.

# Chapter 147 I Decide Your Punishment

“Let me freeze you into ice forever!”

After piercing the pair of giant palms, Guyu sent out a huge amount of ice swords toward Wenren Qian, harassing her. While at the same time, she turned around, made a knot seal with her hand, held it in front of her mouth, and blew out a mouthful of air toward Liu Yi.

This immortal breath immediately turned into a ferocious ice storm sweeping over toward Liu Yi.

This ice storm was like a Silver Dragon, moving toward Liu Yi, threatening him as if it wants to swallow Liu Yi as a whole.

Looking at the incoming ice storm, Liu Yi has a deep sense of powerlessness.

‘I....really can’t resist a ten-star expert’s strength....?’

“Liu Yi gege....”

At this time, his ears seemed to hear Ma Yuanyuan’s cries for help.

Liu Yi’s eyes instantly lit up.

‘No matter what, I have to hold this!’

‘I, still have people that I need to protect!’

At this time, magnificent white lights appeared on Liu Yi’s body.

Feeling this force, even Guyu can’t help but surprise.

“Such an overwhelming uprightness! How could this uprightness appear in this evildoer body!”

Uprightness is a precious power that each immortal cultivator in the immortal cultivator world wants to cultivate.

But uprightness is not something that can be cultivated by doing good deeds daily.

It seems like a state of mind. If a person has no perception and correct state of mind....Even if someone cultivates daily good deeds, that person will not be able to attain this uprightness.

Uprightness is truly powerful....

The reason why every immortal cultivator wants to have it is that it can make an immortal cultivator infinitely strong! It has unlimited upgrade potential!

Even Guyu herself, even her master, all of them never have this uprightness....But now, it appeared in this having-demonic-aura guy's body....

This made Guyu somewhat can't accept.

"Break! Desolate Flame!"

Liu Yi stepped forward one step, and mercilessly struck back with his right palm.

This palm strike....filled with all of his strength....

'I have to believe in myself!'

'I, must save Ma Yuanyuan!'

Liu Yi's right hand burst out a dazzling white light.

His entire right arm directly covered with a piece of frost armor.

His entire right hand also turned into ice claws. The power of his Great Brilliant Sun Palm was pushed into the extreme.

That ferocious ice storm arrived in front of Liu Yi and was met head on with Liu Yi's palm strike. Seemingly hitting a wall, that collision of forces wheezed like a bomb flying upward and directly broke through the ceiling at the top of their heads.

"Boom!"

The ceiling was frozen, and then instantly broke, opening up a huge hole.

The ice storm went straight into the sky, and in the blink of an eye melted into the early morning sky.

In this autumn, snow fell down in the Northern Dragon City.

“What....”

Guyu saw that Liu Yi's palm strike unexpectedly can off-set her own ice storm, her surprised went through the roof.

‘This....how could this possible!’

‘I am but a ten star jade master!’

‘My ice storm is enough to engulf everything!’

‘But now, this three star jade kid....actually able to swat it away!’

‘Is this a joke!’

‘How could there be such a possibility!’

‘This is simply a dream!’

“Whiir....”

After fully displaying his palm strike, Liu Yi's power was almost exhausted. He knelt down, constantly panting.

“D\*mn evildoer....receive your death!”

Never been bullied by a newcomer like this, Guyu was furious.

“This time, I will kill you for sure!”

With that, she began to knot the next seal sign with her hands.

But this time, Wenren Qian attacked her once again.

Flame lotuses unceasingly rained down toward Guyu, and in the blink of an eye, it almost drowned her.

“Bang bang bang!”

Everywhere there were bursts of flame.

Guyu was caught unprepared and was inverted out by the explosion.

“D\*mn, you're all evil devils!”

Guyu was upset to the extreme.

When she attempted to rearrange her great spell, she and Wenren Qian

simultaneously changed their complexion.

“The spiritual body is born....”

The two women looked at each other in the eye.

“This time, I will not let you hinder me!”

Wenren Qian left these few words in the air, and then instantly turned into flames and disappeared.

“Do you think this fairy will lose to you?”

But Guyu coldly snorted and then turned to take a glance at Liu Yi.

“This time, I will let you go....Next time, you’ll die.”

With that, she stepped on an ice sword and flew out from the open ceiling.

Snow was still slowly falling.

The two women suddenly came and went away, to Liu Yi, it was a bit like a dream.

‘These two women....what exactly they want to do....’

“Don’t go....don’t go....”

Xu Tianliang was completely dumbfounded.

His only savior left just like that, leaving behind this abnormal guy here....

“Now it’s time to deal with you.”

After his misery went away, Liu Yi was relieved.

He looked at Xu Tianliang tied there, and slowly said, “No one can save you, scum. Just wait for your moral judgment.”

Liu Yi said, walking in front of Xu Tianliang.

“You have done so many wicked things, today for your daughter’s life, you tried to ruin so many innocent people.”

Liu Yi said while looking at Xu Tianliang.

Xu Tianliang’s face went pale, and his whole body trembled, fearing the worst.

“Do you think the law can’t punish you? Good, if the law can’t punish you, no problem, I’ll do it.”

Liu Yi said, held out his hand and took away the white mask on his face.

The white mask also slightly changed this time.

Half of it flowed with blue-white frost, while the other half sculpted with flaming blaze pattern.

“You, for your own selfish desire, attempt to murder so many innocent people. Come out, the punishment spirits.”

Liu Yi said, reached out his hand and snapped his fingers.

Suddenly, more than a dozen flame beauty appeared on his side.

After counting, there was a total of 15 flame beauties; these are the spirits that were hurt by Huang Zongyi.

“You come and help me make a choice. If you think Xu Tianliang is guilty, stand behind me. If you think he’s innocent, stand by his side. Whichever side that has the most number, will be the final outcome of this trial.

Liu Yi decided to use this method to determine the life and death of Xu Tianliang.

If he judged it himself, perhaps it would be somewhat extreme. Therefore, he let these girls helped him make a judgment.

They were already dead, so didn’t have any conflicting interest.

Xu Tianliang saw these flame beauties, and can’t help but tense up.

‘I...can be judged innocent?’

While he was still speculating, those flame beauties began to move.

To Xu Tianliang’s despair, no flame girls thought he is innocent.

Soon, that 15 flame beauties floated behind Liu Yi.

“You see.”

Liu Yi sighed and said, “I don’t need to say the result.”

With that, he stretched out his two fingers until they reached Xu

Tianliang's forehead.

"No, no!"

Xu Tianliang cried, "These 15 people are your people, of course they will listen to you! You shouldn't have sentenced me just like that, you can't!"

"If we wait for another half an hour, I'm afraid there will be more than just these 15 people."

Liu Yi coldly said, "At that time, it'll be hundreds, thousands!"

If they stayed there for a while, Huang Zongyi's bomb in the school area would explode.

After handling Xu Tianliang, he planned to immediately deal with that bomb.

Therefore, Liu Yi didn't want to delay things too much.

"No...."

Xu Tianliang kept pleading, "I don't want to die....really don't want to die....what do you want, whatever it is, I can give it to you!"

"What do I want?"

Suddenly heard such a question from Xu Tianliang, Liu Yi couldn't help but loudly sneer.

"Yes, that's right, whatever you want, I can get it for you! Money, beauty! I can!"

Xu Tianliang thought there's a glimmer of hope, hastily shouted.

"It seems like your sin has deepened a layer."

Liu Yi coldly said, "Money? Woman? Which one these that you earned with your own hands? You use other people's money, in exchange for your life? Such behaviour, compared to your previous act, what's the difference? Not only you are guilty, but you are guilty of the most serious crime."

"I, I...."

Xu Tianliang began to despair.

He quickly broke down.



‘I....am really going to die?’

“In your next life, be a good person.”

Liu Yi said, his two red-copper iron like fingers instantly poked into Xu Tianliang’s forehead between his eyebrows.

Xu Tianliang’s brain instantly died.

Liu Yi’s high heat fingers directly evaporated his brain.

After killing Xu Tianliang, Liu Yi didn’t have any anxiety.

Because he thought that person deserved to die.

He’s dead, and there’s nothing to regret about it.

Liu Yi then put the two girls down from the ceiling. Xu Xin’s right foot is missing a toe.

‘Alas....This is you to repay a part of your father’s debt, hope that you can be a good girl later.’

After Liu Yi put the two girls away, he left the warehouse and made an alarm call.

At this time, he had more important things to do.

Liu Yi took a deep breath, and his whole state began to change.

He transformed back into that set of black suit dotted with blue snowflakes, and his mask changed into his previous white mask.

His other self’s state has been lifted.

Although in that state Liu Yi was powerful, the power consumption is also great.

To dismantle the bomb, his current state was enough.

Liu Yi stepped on ice skates, and instantly slid forward, rushing toward the Jiaoyu Middle School.

At this time the Jiaoyu Middle School female students dressed in school uniforms were standing on the playground, arranged into several square groups.

The school principal is very happy to stand in front of these groups and excitedly said.

“Schoolmates, be diligent, and work hard, to do this activity. Let the City Leadership knows that our Jiaoyu Middle School students are excellent!”

But his mind said.

‘The above said, if we do well in this activity, they can set aside a special fund to support the school’s construction.’

‘Humph, humph, I will certainly get this fund!’

“Schoolmates, it’s almost time, we are ready to accept the inspection from the leadership!”

With that, he picked nine gorgeously dressed, beautiful young girls, and led them toward the open area behind the school.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 148

## Chapter 148 Blocking The Road

But just then, a man in black suit and white mask blocked their path.

“I’m sorry, this is a dead end.”

The man blocked the only passage.

Because behind the school there’s a construction site, so a wall was erected on its side, and there was only one door leading to the other side.

Now the man stood in front of that door, blocking everyone’s way.

“Who are you? This is our school. Please step aside.”

The principal unhappily said, thinking.

‘Who is this man, he’s delaying the time here!’

‘If this goes on, it will harm the leadership things, if I offended the leadership then what do I do!’

“Go back, there’s a bomb on this side.”

Liu Yi explained.

“You’re crazy!”

The principal didn’t believe what Liu Yi said, “Are you here to make trouble?! If you don’t go, I will call the security!”

Liu Yi had also guessed early that this school’s leadership is certainly not going to believe what he said.

But there are still ten minutes....

As long as in this ten minutes he could keep them off from the construction side, that will do.

‘I can do this....’

Liu Yi cheered himself up.

To deal with these girls....It can be said that it’s much more difficult than to

deal with Huang Zhongyi.

“Who is this guy! Minding other people’s business!”

“What a strange costume, this is not the place to play cosplay!”

“Hey, Uncle, stop your act!”

Sure enough, a group of girls thought that Liu Yi was meddlesome and began twittering.

They want the inspection to finish early so they can go back and rest. This autumn wind is so cold, the longer they stayed outside, the colder they got.

How could they have the time to spend with him here.

“You step aside now, if not I will really call the security!”

The principal once again warned.

But Liu Yi still crossed his arms there like a door guard, not letting anyone pass.

“Good, good, I tell you, this is our school, don’t be so presumptuous!”

The principal immediately made a phone call and called a group of male teachers as well as a group of security guards to come over here.

The first to come naturally was the five uniformed security guards, which directly tried to pull Liu Yi’s arm.

“Go away, this is a school! Not your presumptuous place!”

“Pull him!”

Five security guards pulled Liu Yi, trying to drag him out of here.

But Liu Yi’s feet were like roots, with arms folded as he stood there motionless.

Although the five men tried to pull him, he remained motionless, letting those five big men sweating profusely.

“Truly strange....Is this man grow up in this ground?”

A security wiped away his sweat and then cursed.

“This is a marvel, let us all pull together!”

A group of male teachers ran before Liu Yi, and pulled him by their hands, trying to drag him away.

But Liu Yi was like a thousand ton in weight, kept on standing there, no matter how hard other people tried, they couldn't pull him away even an inch.

"His grandma, strange, really bizarre!"

These people were very shocked.

Right now at least a dozen people tried to pull this man in black suit.

But the other remain motionless.

"F\*ck! Is he a monster!"

A security guard became impatient and tried to reach Liu Yi's mask to see his face.

However, Liu Yi finally made his move. He stretched out his hand to swat away the hand coming at him.

"Pop!"

The security guard's hand was suddenly patted away to the side.

"There're some things you shouldn't see."

Liu Yi coldly said.

"Hey! I don't believe it! Come, let go of your mask!"

A group of security guards and male teachers immediately turned and tried to grab Liu Yi's mask.

Liu Yi was tired of them.

"These people are really annoying, I do this for their own good...."

'Ai, it's difficult to become a good man.'

Liu Yi right now felt like he is a Spiderman.

But his face, definitely can't be seen by outsiders.

Liu Yi suddenly bent over and struck his palm against the ground.

An amazing scene appeared.

The people around Liu Yi instantly flew up.

The faces of these men were filled with surprise. They didn't know what just happened and was shook to fly as if they were blown away by a hurricane a moment ago, making them inverted out.

"My God...Where did this guy come from...."

"So amazing...."

"Is he a magic performer?"

A group of girls were surprised by what they just saw, could not believe their eyes even a little bit.

'How could there be such a man?'

'What does he do for a living?'

"I said, this is a dead end, everyone, please turn back."

Liu Yi again stood up and folded his arms, standing like a ruthless door guard, and coldly said.

His height is less than 1.8 meter, but with his imposing manner, he was able to guard the pass alone.

No matter who comes forward, Liu Yi will not let them pass.

"Call the police! Call the police!"

The principal angrily stamped his feet. They were already five minutes late, the city leadership must be angry!

If he leads the girls now, they wouldn't get in.

'What is this thing!' He exclaimed in his heart.

"Immediately call the police, let the police put this troublemaker away!"

The principal commanded. A security guard started to alarm the police.

Liu Yi didn't stop his effort, letting them call the police.

In any case, when the police arrive, he would have long gone.

What is he afraid of!

"You quickly move away, our school has an activity, why are you troubling

us?”

“Yes, yes, if you have a problem with us, just tell us, and we will talk about it. When the police arrive, this will not end well, just tell us now!”

Some of the male teachers began to use their mouth to advise.

“I said, there’s a bomb buried on the ground back there.”

Liu Yi had no other choice but to patiently explained.

“If you go there, you’ll die.”

“Hahaha, you guy really know how to tease us! How could there be a bomb, this is a school, what nonsense, hahaha....”

Those people laughed, no one thought what Liu Yi said is true.

“Get out of the way. Otherwise, we’re not going to be polite anymore!”

“The police will soon come, and will immediately arrest you!”

Various kinds of threats and inducement were spoken, but they all lost in Liu Yi’s ears.

Alas....

Liu Yi can only faintly sigh.

“See that, this is humanity’s deep-rooted bad habits.”

Lin Tong appeared on Liu Yi’s shoulder, yawned, and then asked.

“Do you really want to sacrifice so much for them?”

“Human may have some disadvantages.”

Liu Yi said through his virtual environment, “But among them, there are love and goodness....Moreover, I am also a human. I am not an immortal, nor a monster. I am a flesh and blood, a sentient being who have feelings.”

“Humans are stupid....”

Lin Tong could not help but curl her lip and said, “Why don’t you follow me up the mountain. This filthy mortal world will only delay your cultivation. With me up the mountain, you will attain immortality, and soaring through the calamity is very possible!”

“I’m not going up the mountain.”

Liu Yi shook his head, “In here....I still have a lot of things to do. Moreover, there are still many obstacles....”

‘Alas....fool....’

Lin Tong did not want to talk anymore.

‘Without going up the mountain....this guy can only end up parting ways with me....’

‘Although right now I can still be with him, not for long.’

‘If I don’t go back....sooner or later, my master will come.’

‘At that time....Even if I don’t want to leave him, I still have to go.’

Lin Tong didn’t dare to imagine what would happen that day.

One thing for sure....it will be very sad.

‘After I’m gone....Will Liu Yi think of me?’

‘Could it be....He will quickly forget me?’

Lin Tong thought in her heart.

‘This guy ....Sometimes, really make me depressed....’

“Step aside. The police will soon come!”

The principal kept on threatening.

Liu Yi simply chose to ignore him.

This headmaster was too much.

“I don’t believe you’ll be able to block me!”

That principal was furious, went straight to the wall, reached out, and tried to climb the wall.

This wall is not high, the height is only about two meters.

Usually, it only served to isolate, not letting the students get into trouble.

Seeing this 50-something principal tried to climb the wall, a group of male teachers also followed his example.



“Principal, let us climb, you can take a rest!”

“Yes, yes, let us see how this person is going to stop us!”

Liu Yi’s brows deeply wrinkled up.

“These guys, don’t they know how to tell the good from the bad?”

“Hahaha, you can’t stop us!”

The principal stopped climbing the wall midway and took a look sideways.

Seeing the others one by one scrambled to climb the wall, he suddenly couldn’t help but proudly laughed.

Hearing him laughing, Liu Yi suddenly coldly snorted and stomped his foot heavily on the ground.

“Bam!”

The earth seemed to shudder a bit.

Then, frost immediately spread out.

The surrounding wall was instantly covered with a thick layer of ice.

Those male teachers were unable to control themselves. Before they even reached the top of the wall, they all slipped down, just like the stuffed dumplings, they fell to the ground with a crackling sound – their asses must be hurt.

“Ouch, ouch....What is this....?”

“It hurts....”

“How could this wall is suddenly covered with ice!”

The principal was also shocked, thinking, ‘What the hell is this?’

“This man....is he really a monster?”

This scene made the girls excited.

“Wow! It turns out he is giving us a magic performance?”

“Hehe, this is so awesome, handsome, give us your autograph!”

Cold sweat suddenly appeared on Liu Yi’s forehead, ‘These little girls....’

“Please sign on my chest!”

A bold middle school female student bulged out her chest and said.

“Where did you get your chest, might as well sign on me!”

Another female student shouted.

These two girls soon quarreled, and finally made a mess.

Liu Yi kept shedding out cold sweat.

‘What is happening here....’

‘The present girls’ thoughts are too mature!’

Liu Yi was a bit shocked.

At this time, police siren suddenly sounded from around the school.

Initially, the principal was driven to distraction by the girls, but now he is immediately excited and said while laughing.

“Hahaha, you hear that? The police have come, you’re a goner now! You this madman will certainly be arrested!”

He laughed while patting his thigh, not showing the appearance of a principal.

At this time, the earth suddenly trembled.

Immediately, a violent explosion sound flooded into their eardrums.

That principal directly sat on the ground with his butt, unable to respond for quite a while.

Red flames burst out behind the wall, a mass of black mushroom cloud went straight to the sky.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 149

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Index](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

A huge shockwave spread around from the source of the blast which quickly crossed over the wall and rolled into the school ground.

Many students failed to stand firm, being flown upside down by the shockwave and fell to the ground.

The force of the expression was so strong that it directly shocked open the door behind Liu Yi. The billowing blast directly fluttered behind Liu Yi's back.

Even though Liu Yi has extraordinary strength, he also came close to being lifted to air like the other people.

The sound of the explosion was deafening, and for a long time, the people's ears were still buzzing with loud noise.

Liu Yi kept on sending his immortal strength toward his ears to drive off the effect of the explosion.

When he saw the students and teachers in front of him, they all looked dumbfounded, and some even had their saliva flowed out.

The aftermath of the explosion has too much influence on them.

"It....it really exploded...."

The principal opened his mouth wide, just looking at the explosion, toward the black cloud in the sky, and muttered.

He never thought there could be such a strange thing as this explosion in his school.

"The rest is not my thing."

Liu Yi saw that although they were all somewhat shaken silly, they were all safe and sound, "The police will deal with the rest."

With that, Liu Yi stepped on ice skates, quickly accelerated himself on the two-lane frost that he constantly created below his feet, flashed past the

other people, and then disappeared without a trace.

“What....the hell....?”

The principal's scalp was still numb.

“This man....where is exactly he came from!”

“So....there really is a bomb....”

“This man was helping us all along....”

“He saved us....”

These teachers and students finally realized Liu Yi was not making trouble for them.

“Who exactly is he....”

A group of people started to guess Liu Yi's identity.

“I do not know....but that red scarf is pretty cool....when I go home I will look for it, and then wear it here.”

“Cut, it would not look good on you, only I who would look beautiful wearing it.”

Some of the girls started to discuss about the red scarf.

Liu Yi did not know that, because of his sudden impulse to wear the red scarf here, would cause a new fashion trend in the Northern Dragon City.

He has changed his outfit to a high school uniform and returned to his school.

Ma Yuanyuan had been taken care of by the police. After he saw the trembling Ma Yuanyuan sent to the police car, he finally felt relieved and then returned.

Huang Zhongyi, this atrocious guy....He hoped there were no more people like him in the society.

When Liu Yi went to the class, he was obviously late.

But Li Juanhua did not bother Liu Yi too much. After saying a few words to him, she let him go to attend the class.

“Liu Yi, the midterm exam is soon coming, you have to pay more attention.”

“I know, teacher Li.”

Liu Yi's heart was ashamed. He really did not want to skip the class.

Recently however, he indeed had things he needed to take care of.

Seeing Murong Die and Wang Lele sat in the back of his seat, Liu Yi beckoned with his hand to wave at them.

Wang Lele almost excitedly called out Liu Yi's name, but Murong Die quickly covered her mouth from the side.

Wang Lele very bitterly looked at Murong Die.

‘Sis Die is so hateful....’

‘I have not seen Liu Yi gege for several days....’

‘But she can still meet with him secretly....this is so unfair....’

Without knowing why, this was the first time Wang Lele experienced the feeling of resentment.

“Big bully, finally decided to come back to the class?”

When Liu Yi sat down on his chair, Wang Yuzheng pushed over a piece of paper toward him.

“I was sick....why did you call me a big bully....”

Cold sweat appeared on Liu Yi's forehead as he quickly explained to her.

“Sick? I see you are actually bursting with energy....and very much alive!”

Wang Yuzheng was a clever girl, otherwise, she would not be called a bookworm since she was three years old.

“This....Actually, I am very uncomfortable....but I am a boy, and have to be strong.....”

Liu Yi hastily made up some lies.

“Humph humph, you braggart! In any case, after the first of October holiday, there will be midterm exam! I have an agreement with my family

member, they do not want me to play with bad kids! If your test score did not reach the top 100, do not come to talk to me!"

‘Em....’

Seeing the note on the paper, Liu Yi felt a bit strange....

‘This seems like a girl acting like a spoiled brat toward her boyfriend, right?’

‘I am probably thinking it too much.’

‘After all, my relationship with Wang Yu Zheng is not particularly deep....Although we have shared some experience together, that is only to resolve the misunderstanding between us.’

Liu Yi was very curious and could not help but open his eyes of favorable impression.

A string of number immediately appeared above this girl’s head.

Wang Yuzheng: 26.

‘What?’

‘Wang Yuzheng’s favorability toward me has actually risen these much?’

Liu Yi was shocked.

‘A couple of days ago, her impression of me was on the fear level, but now it is already 26 in favorability....’

‘Unbelievable....this girl is finally not afraid of me.’

After Liu Yi sat down, he actually did not know that behind him, Wang Lele and Murong Die were also conversing by exchanging notes on paper.

“Sis Die, have the two of you made progress in your relationship?”

Wang Lele said, “The two of you were alone together all night long, right?”

When she wrote this, the young girl’s heart was somewhat jealous.

‘Who told me to be best friend with Sis Die...em, yes, I am just going to let it slide this time.’

“No....”

Murong Die somewhat bitterly said.

‘What progress....’

‘Liu Yi seems to still think of me as a good friend....’

‘Is this guy really made of wood?’

“Then what should we do? Sis Die, let us proceed to our next plan!”

Wang Lele immediately recommended.

“Next plan?”

“Yes, yes....we do not do such a complicated step anymore, we will going to directly confess to Liu Yi gege!”

Wang Lele’s words made Murong Die surprised.

“Lele, what nonsense are you talking about! This big miss does not really like Liu Yi....just, just trying to deceive him....”

When Murong Die wrote this words, she felt somewhat guilty.

“But....Liu Yi gege is emotionally idiot....If we do not use strong medicine, then what should we do?”

“This big miss is not going to confess to him!”

Murong Die’s face flushed as she wrote on the paper, “It is not like there are no other people who like this big miss!”

Wang Lele was flustered, ‘If this goes on, how could the two of them be together....’

“Besides....I do not know if this guy cares about me or not....”

Murong Die then wrote.

“Turns out Sis Die is worried about this!”

Wang Lele suddenly smiled, “That is easy!”

“Easy? What stupid idea do you have now?”

“What stupid idea....other people is also a talented girl like Huang Yueying in the ancient times!”

Wang Lele proudly wrote and straightened out her chest.

“Huang Yueying may not have such a big breast like yours....”

Murong Die joked, “All people said you have big boobs but no brain....how can you be smart?”

“Sis Die is so hateful! If you keep doing this, other people will not help you!”

Wang Lele clutched her chest and very sadly looked at Murong Die.

“Alright, alright, talented, girl, quickly tell me, what is your idea?”

Murong Die fawningly said.

“Humph humph, this talented girl will teach you this move! If Sis Die wants to know whether Liu Yi gege cares about you or not, it is actually not difficult....As long as I go to Liu Yi gege and say to him that Sis Die had an accident, we will know it by looking at Liu Yi gege’s reaction.”

“This is a good idea....”

Murong Die’s heart was moved.

She always wanted to know....what was her position in Liu Yi’s heart.

“Then we will try this method!”

Wang Lele smiled very smugly, thinking that she was so clever.

“How....”

“Um....I will tell that Sis Die is kidnapped....Sis Die, you do not come to school tomorrow, I will tell Liu Yi gege and see what he would do. If he is alarmed and directly rush to save Sis Die, it will prove that Liu Yi gege has you in his mind. If he is indifferent....Well, then Sis Die will know....”

“Humph humph....In order to let this guy pursue this big miss, both of us have spent so much effort, consider this is an honor to him!”

“Yes, of course....Liu Yi gege should be very happy, hehe....”

The two girls secretly laughed.

At this moment, in the middle of the warehouse where Guyu and Wenren Qian have fought.

A figure of a woman slowly floated down into the warehouse.



Her topless chest showed her abundant breasts, her figure was tall and voluptuous, as seductive as a Vamp.

Around her neck, there was a string of skull necklace.

This person was none other than the Law Enforcement Protector of the Great God Cult, Jiang Qini.

She stood inside the warehouse with one hand on her waist, and her abundant breasts gently shook.

“Hehe....Looks like there seems to be a battle here....This force is familiar....That is right, this is Wenren Qian.”

Jiang Qini sniffed with her nose and surprised herself.

“Strange....Wenren Qian that girl, why was she not executing the plan....What was she doing here....There must be something strange here....”

With that, her hand took a large amount of bone dust and sprinkled it everywhere.

Soon, she sensed something and excitedly said.

“There is actually a very strong resentment here! Fantastic....This is going to be great for the ghost servant!”

Her body trembled with excitement, followed by the shaking of her two huge breasts.

“If Leader know that I contribute a very powerful ghost servant....He must be very happy, and will definitely reward me....”

She continued to launch her spell as he muttered.

“Wenren Qian, Wenren Qian....you have nothing to be proud of....Wait until I help Leader complete the plan, I will become the Vice Leader of the Great God Sect....At that time, see if you will be able to compete for the Leader’s affection with me! I am truly in love with Leader....You this girl....sooner or later I am going to kill you!”

With that, on the spot where Huang Zhongyi died, a black figure slowly stood up.

“Kill....I want to kill....”

No one can clearly see that figure's face, one can only see a pair of blood-red eyes.

“Very good....very delicious resentment.....”

Jiang Qini very satisfyingly said, “Finish your wishlist....kill your enemies, and you will evolve to become a perfect Ghost Servant....Go finish your dream....”

With that, she waved her hand, and that black figure instantly disappeared from the warehouse.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 150

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Index](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

“Boss, are you ready for the midterm?”

After school in the evening, Liu Yi got a call from Chen Cai.

“I am ok, what about you?”

Liu Yi was going to the meeting place that was agreed upon by Wei Yi as he went back home.

The exam always put an insurmountable pressure on students....

Of course, other than Wang Yuzheng, Jiang Youcai, those types of students who were more than just excited to have a test.

They were not human, but a terrible creature called bookworms.

“Haha, I have written the answers on the table!”

Chen Cai’s voice was filled with a little bit of smug, “Hehehe....On the self-study class, I do nothing other than to write the answers on my entire table....No matter what the questions are, I will have no problem!”

“....Be careful of being discovered by the teacher, you know you sit in the front row, right buddy?”

Liu Yi quickly urged caution.

“Boss, you do not know, this is the so-called the daring one will produce result!”

Chen Cai laughed out loud, “So what if I sit in the front row? It is because I sit in the front row that the teacher will not pay much attention to me! The most dangerous place is the safest place! Haha, this exam will be mine!”

“You still need to be careful....I wish you the best of luck....”

Liu Yi can only offer a silent blessing.

“Of course....This exam is too important....The homeroom teacher said....If the test results are not good, the school will call the parents....I do not want they call my parents....It will only result in my butt getting hurt....”

Chen Cai parents taught him to do things right, as long as the school called for them, when they went back home they would immediately use a small willow branch to trash his buttocks.

Therefore, the thing that Chen Cai most afraid of was the school calling his parents....

“Okay then, I will not say anything, I have to go to do something. I still advise you to review the test subjects. Copying and cheating, those kinds of thing come with danger after all.”

Liu Yi persuaded his friend one last time and then hung up his phone.

The time was almost up. He needed to rush to the meeting place to look for Wei Yi.

Liu Yi walked to the nearby deserted alley. When he walked out again, he has changed his outfit into the black suit.

He had to admit that the dressing up using spatial ring was so convenient. And if later on, he did not want to do the mission anymore, this magical changing outfit should earn him some small profit....

While daydreaming, Liu Yi rushed toward the God Dancing City Game Arena.

This God Dancing City Game Arena was a very big place where many families liked to play games in Northern Dragon City. Every day there were many men and women who went there.

While playing games there, they would get to know many handsome and beautiful people.

Chen Cai and Liu Yi also wanted to go there to \*\*\*....But whether it was true or not, Liu Yi himself did not know it.

In any case, he has never been there before, because he could not afford it. Today he can take the opportunity to see it for himself.

Liu Yi with lightning speed arrived before the God Dancing Game Arena and suddenly saw a beautiful figure standing on the roof of God Dancing Game Arena.

‘Wei Yi actually came early....Um, according to stories, aren’t women supposed to show up late?’

Today, Wei Yi did not wear her school’s uniform, but instead, wore a small white trenchcoat, with jeans on the lower part, and stepping on a pair of small brown leather boots.

Lying on her shoulder licking its paws was the civet Tuantuan.

Feeling someone approaching, the civet Tuantuan warily looked up. But after discovering that the person who arrived was Liu Yi, that Tuantuan lazily yawned, and then continued to lick its paws.

‘F\*ck....This uncle cannot even raise the interest of a cat?’

Liu Yi could not help but want to cry but no tears would come out.

“You finally came!”

Seeing Liu Yi lightly fell to her side, Wei Yi slightly frowned her pretty eyebrows and said, “But you are late!”

“Hey, hey....big sister, now is 9:50, there are still ten minutes before 10:00!”

Liu Yi quickly took out his mobile phone and said as he pointed at the time.

“If you want to meet with a girl, you need to come early! You do not even know this kind of common sense, no wonder you have no girlfriend!”

“What does it have to do with this....d\*mn, how do you know I have no girlfriend!”

“If you have a girlfriend, do you still have the free time to go out to do the task every day? These days, everyone uses various kinds of way to communicate like phone, text message, QQ, all the time!”

“.....”

Liu Yi was directly speechless.

‘How could there be such a logic....’

‘However, the way it sounds is very reasonable....’

“Therefore, for you this stinking insect, a girl took the initiative to ask you out, moreover, this girl is as beautiful as the heaven. But you this stinking insect did not obediently come one and a half hours earlier, and actually make me wait for you! This is a crime that cannot be redeemed!”

Wei Yi with her beautiful small chin proudly said.

Liu Yi was almost killed on the ground.

‘F\*ck, this girl’s narcissism is almost perfect!’

“We....this....is a date?”

Liu Yi could not help but ask.

“A boy and a girl go out at night, if not for a date, then what?”

Wei Yi looked at Liu Yi with surprise, “In any case, my mom told me so. Therefore, it must be right!”

Then she quickly added some sentences.

“Of course, I do not want to date you, this is just to perform the task! Therefore, while we are dating, you are not allowed to touch me! If you have any little trick....humph humph, I certainly cannot guarantee the safety of your body! My Tuantuan, has this skill of spirit animal possession, very fierce! It can kill you in seconds!”

Listening to Wei Yi’s threatening voice, Liu Yi can only wryly smile.

‘This girl....’

‘Is truly a little queen.’

‘However, her present strength....I am afraid she is not my opponent.’

The cat mother Wei Yi can reach the pseudo third star jade by using the spirit animal possession. While he was actually a genuine third star jade cultivator.

If they really had to fight....who can kill who, that was still uncertain....

Not to mention, he can still transform into his super form....

Which was the combined version of him and his other self....

‘His mother! It sounds like I am so evil and so wretched!’

“Little cat mother, is this task difficult?”

Liu Yi was more concerned with the task issue.

At this time, the Dancing God Game Arena under the two of them was crowded with people.

Although it was almost ten o’clock at night, the stream of people here was still huge.

Countless men and women dressed to the nines can be found here.

They found themselves at night, looking for their youth, and perhaps also to find their bed partners.

“Go to hell, you are the cat mother, your whole families are all cat mother!” Hearing Liu Yi’s words, Wei Yi was like a cat being stepped on the tail, immediately jumped up and retorted, “My name is Wei Yi! Not cat mother! If you call me cat mother again, I will let Tuantuan scratch you! Call me Wei Yi, you hear me?”

“I hear you, cat mother.”

“D\*mn, you are just being deliberate!”

Wei Yi angrily stomped her feet.

“How could I look like a cat mother?”

“How could you not look like a cat mother?”

Liu Yi rhetorically asked back.

“Ten steps to milk a man! Hateful! You are here to do the task, or to annoy me! You d\*mn stinking insect!”

“How did you know I stink? Did you secretly smell me?”

Liu Yi covered his own body with his hands.

“D\*mn....Nasty bedbugs, do you want me to cancel our reward sharing agreement!”

Hearing Wei Yi's threat, Liu Yi quickly stopped his teasing.

"Oh, tonight's weather looks really good....you see, you see, the moon is really round!"

"You shameless....miser...."

Wei Yi was speechless.

"Gentleman loves to make money, in a right way."

Liu Yi said with a strong sense of righteousness, "How about it, the time is almost up, we should do the task now!"

"I cannot stand talking to you!"

Wei Yi rolled her eyes at Liu Yi, and then said, "This is a D level task that takes me a long time to find it. This one is the most suitable task for us."

"What kind of suitable task? Before you always pick those perverted tasks....Do we need to put our lives at risk to complete it?"

"This is a D level task, it certainly has some difficulties!"

Wei Yi said, "But if both of us coordinate well, there should be no problem. Humph, humph, do not be a drag!"

"I will try my best."

"Then good, follow me down, we are going to see the boss."

"What? Why do we need to see the boss?"

Liu Yi was startled.

"Of course, this task is ordered and paid by the boss."

"Ordinary people can also contact the God's Eye...?."

"Idiot, do you think your question is stupid or not?"

Wei Yi threw a disdainful glance at him, "In this society, as long as someone has the money, is there anything impossible?"

"You are right...."

Liu Yi admitted her superiority.

'Sure enough, in the immortal cultivator world....I am still too naive.'



Wei Yi jumped down and landed on this Game Arena.

Behind that place, there was a narrow alley, which was messy, dirty and with no people in it.

Her body was very flexible as she continuously stepped on both sides of the wall, falling down little by little.

The six story high building cannot hold Wei Yi back at all.

Liu Yi has no such qualm, from the edge of the building, he leaped up and directly jumped down to the ground.

He put his head down and pressed his legs with his hands. The whistling of the wind went inside his ears as he fell down like a bullet.

But when he was near the ground, his body suddenly made a turn, so that now his feet were facing the ground.

Meanwhile, his hands ejected out fierce ice streams.

The frost not only impacted the ground, it also slowed down his speed.

At the same time, it also wrapped around his body, protecting Liu Yi from harm.

“Bam!”

Liu Yi finally landed on the ground. The soles of his feet also spread out the streams of ice.

“You....when going down, can you stop being so showy?”

Looking at the splash of white ice and snow, and Liu Yi in the middle of all of that, Wei Yi could not help but strangely said.

“I am trying a new, more exciting method....”

Liu Yi withdrew the surrounding ice and snow and then said, “Once you have the power....Inevitably you want to do something a bit more stimulating....”

“Taking drugs is also stimulating, why don’t you do that?”

“I do not want to gamble myself with drug!”

Liu Yi patted his chest and said, “A manly man like me, how could I touch

those kinds of thing!”

“Humph, I see you are just a tofu man!”

Wei Yi gave a supercilious look at Liu Yi and then stretched out her hand to touch the back door.

The back door was unlocked, it seemed like the boss deliberately left the door open to them.

“Later on, you must not speak, you have to listen to me on everything.”

Wei Yi said, pulled out a cat face mask and buckled on her face.

‘What the....’

‘Still saying you are not a cat mother!’

“Then what do you think is that?”

Liu Yi grumbled in his heart as he followed Wei Yi into the back door of this Game Arena.

The long corridor was relatively dim.

Compared to the bustling noise in the front part of the God Dancing Game Arena, the back seemingly led to the offices.

After entering this corridor, Liu Yi immediately detected a thick concentration of demonic aura!

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 151

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Index](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

After Liu Yi and Wei Yi came in, they immediately frowned.

Liu Yi in particular, because his body has demon energy, he was especially sensitive to this demonic aura.

He felt the demon energy in his body was stirred, and he has the impulse to let it out.

Liu Yi immediately exercised restraint to this impulse, lest it caused unnecessary trouble here....

Guyu that girl was always watching him....He did not want to provoke that evil star again!

That chick was too strong....Too vicious, he was no match for her.

But based on his present strength....As long as he can enter the Nine Star Jade level, it seemed like he can deal with her!

Yes....He needed to strive hard in practice.

“Such a thick demonic aura....”

Wei Yi wrinkled her nose and said.

The civet Tuantuan on her shoulder stood up, all the hair on its body trembled, and its mouth issued a strange hissing sound.

It seemed like her ability to detect demonic strength was also quite high.

“Em....I feel it too....It seems....This task is quite tricky.”

Liu Yi pinched his finger and immediately saw the world in black and white.

He was looking for the location of the demon.

Everywhere in front of him, there were faint yellow silhouettes.

And Wei Yi's body was slightly tinged with blue light, which was the symbol of immortal energy.

If it was a demon....There should be a more vibrant color.

Liu Yi searched inside the God Dancing Game Arena through his black and white world vision. But after struggling to look for a long time, he found no other color.

"It is useless."

Lin Tong reminded Liu Yi at this time, "Do you think the true identity of Immortal cultivators, or demon cultivators, can easily be seen through by you? Just like the other you who has the ability to restrain his demon energy, the demon that you want to look now....should also possess such a skill. If you want to rely on your eyesight to find him, it would be too hard....He must have disguised himself as ordinary people."

"Ai....Demons are so clever...."

Liu Yi had to lament.

"Of course....For example, this....In any case, you have to be very careful!"

Lin Tong almost blurted out that she was also a demon.

If she said it....Then it would be over for them.

It would be strange if Liu Yi's worldview did not crash!

"Let us talk with the boss first."

Wei Yi pulled Liu Yi back to the real world.

"Come this way."

Wei Yi said as she led Liu Yi to a door and shoved it open.

Suddenly, the visions of the two people were somewhat widened.

The corridor became much more spacious, but there were also several men dressed in black suits standing in the corridor. After seeing Liu Yi and Wei Yi, they were suddenly nervous and put their hands on their waists.

Lei Yi found out that their waists were bulged out, but those should not be firearms....It should be, some kind of stick or something similar to it.

“Do not worry, we are here for the task.”

Wei Yi seemed unfazed by this strange sight and explained.

The several bodyguards relaxed a bit, but their vigilance was still there.

“Take me to your Boss, we are the demon slayer experts.”

Wei Yi said.

“This way please....”

A bodyguard held out his hand to invite.

“Stinking Insect, follow me, do not wander around aimlessly.”

Wei Yi took the role as the big sister and led Liu Yi to walk forward.

Liu Yi’s heart was depressed, cold sweat appeared on his forehead, thinking, ‘She really think herself as the captain.’

‘Forget it, seeing that she is a girl....I let her have her way this time.’

‘Moreover, this will also save a lot of trouble for me.’

‘But the name Stinking Insect....How could I make her change it?’

Wei Yi did not know what was in Liu Yi’s mind, together with him and the bodyguard, they walked around in the hallways for a few laps, and finally came to the office area on the second floor.

The bodyguard knocked on the door to get permission to go inside. After the confirmation, he led the two Liu Yi and Wei Yi in.

The office was very spacious, and the build was also very luxurious.

‘It seems like this Game Arena....Is really a sucking money place.’

Because he had his mask on, Liu Yi looked around a few times.

Wei Yi hastily reached out and pat him several times, lest he embarrassed her.

‘How could he act like a country bumpkin visits the city....’ She thought.

But Liu Yi was indifferent, in any case, he had never seen this place. Therefore, he wanted to take a good look at this time.

“The two experts please sit down.”

The boss was a middle-aged man, with a very fashionable appearance, completely different than the appearance of the other middle-aged man. He was even more well dressed than Liu Yi.

But unfortunately his head was bald, in addition to a large decorative sunglasses, his speech was also quite effeminate.

“Aiyo....The two experts, other people wait for quite long....”

His talking almost made Liu Yi vomited.

‘F\*ck me....He is actually this effeminate....’

‘The light from his bald head has made him blind and savage!’

‘This is the legend of the ten baldies – the nine are rich, but the last one is a butcher....’

‘This guy really let me down!’

“Aiyo....Recently, other people has been annoyed to death....But now, since the two experts are here, other people can finally feel at ease.”

Liu Yi can see the twitch in Wei Yi’s eyebrows.

Apparently, she also cannot stand this.

“Boss, are they really reliable?”

At this time, a big rugged man stepped forward two steps from behind the boss, patted his chest and said, “I am a professional bodyguard. Those demons or monsters, I do not believe it. It was definitely sent by the other Game Arena to disturb here! Boss, give me some manpower, I guarantee you that I will definitely catch that guy.”

“Get the hell out of here!”

That boss pointed his finger with plucking an orchid gesture, and angrily said, “Do you know that I have spent so much effort to invite these two experts? They are professional demon slayer experts! You are just my bodyguard, can you fight a demon?”

“How could there be a demon....What demon slayer....That’s bullshit....”

That bodyguard curled his lips, refusing to believe.

‘In this world, how could there be a demon, how could there be a demon slayer!’ He thought.

“It seems like this friend is skeptical with our line of work.”

Wei Yi smiled, her finger was touching the civet Tuantuan’s small head.

“I definitely do not believe you, hurry up and leave, do not cheat our boss’ money! In my life, I hate liars the most!”

With that, he stretched out his fists, waving them around. His threatening gesture was obvious.

“Tuantuan, someone does not believe us, what do you think?”

Wei Yi playfully asked the civet on her shoulder.

“Boss, you see, this woman is crazy, she is talking to a cat....”

Before that bodyguard finished his words, the civet Tuantuan on Wei Yi’s shoulder suddenly jumped up, directly leaped across seven or eight-meter distance away, and fell on that bodyguard’s shoulder.

“This dead cat....”

That bodyguard reached out his hand, trying to throw Tuantuan to the ground.

At this time, Tuantuan’s appearance suddenly changed rapidly. In the blink of an eye, it turned into a red spotted big Leopard. On the soles of its four limbs, there were traces of flames.

It stretched out its front paw, which directly overpowered the bodyguard to the ground. Pressing his shoulder, Tuantuan opened its toothy mouth and loudly roared.

“Roar!”

The roar of this big Leopard was really amazing, it frightened the other bodyguards to back two steps away until their back was against the wall.

The boss was also scared, sitting on the ground with his ass.

‘My uncle got a mother ....!’

‘Where did this spotted Leopard come from....’

‘That was obviously just a cat!’

‘How could it turn into a big spotted Leopard in the blink of an eye?’

‘Is it just a trick?’

‘But how could a cat possibly overwhelm a big man....?’

“Aaa! Help....help me....I am going to be eaten....”

The previous unyielding bodyguard was now completely paralyzed in fear, kept crying out.

“Make it go away....I beg you, make it go away, aaa....”

“Tuantuan is angry.”

Wei Yi stood still, and said with a smile, “If you do not apologize, it will not leave you!”

“I, I am sorry....”

That bodyguard wet his pants in fear and quickly apologized.

The large Leopard was licking its front paws, blinked and turned into a civet, and then fell back on Wei Yi’s shoulder.

“Meow, meow!”

Tuantuan very affectionately rubbed its cheek against Wei Yi.

‘Such a cute cat....how could it become a huge Leopard....’

That bodyguard’s body trembled. He did not even have the strength to climb up.

The other bodyguards stepped forward and quickly pulled this guy away.

“Experts, the two experts!”

The boss immediately got up from the ground, and sat back on the chair, and then bitterly pleaded.

“Experts, please help me....If the two experts help me, other people can continue to do this small business....If the two do not help....other people, other people will die in front of you....”

“Hold on!”



Liu Yi, all of a sudden, snappily said, “I have the urge to punch someone....”

“Huhu, the two please kindly help other people....Since that strange thing happened....Our business is now especially poor, the visitors are less than half! If this goes on, it will definitely crash!”

“What?”

Liu Yi almost jumped up.

“You say the visitors are now half the usual?”

‘D\*mn, that entrance is almost crushed by the visitors!’

If the visitors of this place was doubled....Liu Yi did not dare to imagine what might happen then.

“We came here to solve this problem.”

Wei Yi, with a very sophisticated look, said, “Now tell me about the problem?”

“Actually ....the matter is like this.”

The boss rubbed his bald head with his hand, and then gestured with his fingers as if picking up an orchid as he said with resentment.

“Initially, we operate this God Dancing Game Arena really good....Every day, there were many visitors visiting here....Of course, the majority are young boys and girls, they like to play in this place. Not only they can play, they also can know a lot of the opposite sex....therefore....ahem....”

He smiled sheepishly, “In our place, there are many boys and girls....And there is also \*\*\* (TL: The raw censored three characters, I think it means prostitute) We naturally did not care....Because it can attract more visitors....”

Wei Yi curled her lips, seemingly showing her look of contempt.

Liu Yi said in his heart, ‘If I knew, I would ask Chen Cai to come here together to have a look....’

“Initially, all is well....But suddenly, one day, there are several guests. After coming back from our place, they somehow died....The police said they died in the hotel rooms....The cause of death is, according to the report – their

bone marrows have been sucked out of their bodies....”

When he said this, a chill suddenly went through the boss’ body, making his forehead sweating out cold sweat.

The other bodyguards were also covered with sweat, and their faces were somewhat pale.

‘Things...started to get weird?’

Liu Yi began to get curious.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 152

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Index](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

“A few days ago I invited a Feng Shui master....He came in and just said we have demonic aura here and then turned around to leave, after that, I went to look for help from the God’s Eye....”

The boss worriedly said, “After asking a lot of people....I finally obtained the contact of God’s Eye....And then, I give it a try, issuing this mission. I did not expect the experts really come....Oh, experts, you must help the other people....Whether our business can return to its previous heyday, will depend on you!”

“I know, since we already took this task, we intend to help you finish it.”

Wei Yi said, “But you need to cooperate with us.”

“The two please rest assured, we will give the two experts our maximum cooperation!”

The boss handed over two black cards, and humbly said, “These two black cards, are our highest level VIP cards, they can be used to overdraft the in-game currency to play unlimited games.”

“We do not need....”

Before Wei Yi finished her words, Liu Yi already outstretched his hand and took the two cards.

“It would be impolite if we refuse.”

“D\*amn, why do you want this?”

Wei Yi gave Liu Yi a glance.

“It is useful, cat mother.”

Liu Yi said in his heart, I can take girls to play here with this card....

However, he naturally did not say this reason. Instead, he said.

“You see, this monster is obviously posing as a prostitute to trap the boys....If we want to lure her out, there is only one way.”

“Oh?”

Wei Yi was very clever, besides forgetting that Liu Yi had just called her cat mother, her eyes became bright as she said.

“You want to disguise yourself as a bait, to lure that monster to take the bait?”

“Yes....”

Liu Yi nodded his head, “The two of us will pose as school boys there. You are responsible for secretly protecting me, do not let me make a mistake or anything.”

“Humph, stinking insect!”

“Hey, hey, I mean, what if our opponent cast some kind of spell that will confuse me....If that happen, you must rescue me!”

“Humph, who knows you will not take this opportunity to do something with the beautiful female monster.”

Wei Yi could not help but ridicule.

“How could I! All of the victims have been sucked dry!”

Liu Yi quickly stressed, “Even if I am hungry and thirsty, I will not sacrifice my life in bed!”

“Who knows....men are all cheap bastards.”

Wei Yi bluntly said.

“That’s right, that’s right, men are all dirty bastards....”

The boss chipped in from the side.

“This has nothing to do with you!”

Liu Yi, through the mask, gave the boss a stern look, “Aren’t you a man?”

The boss shrunk back his neck.

The two of them were experts, he could not afford to provoke them.

Initially he wanted to pat someone's ass, unexpectedly he patted another person's butt. He thought.

Silence is golden, silence is golden....

"Then it is settled, the two of us will go to the Game Arena to play, do not bother us. Moreover, you also must not look for us...."

"Good, good....the two experts, then please....

The boss kept on saying thank you.

"You are welcome, this is our task."

It seemed like Wei Yi did not want to deal with the boss, after some polite talk, she and Liu Yi walked out of the door.

"Go change your outfit."

Wei Yi said, "We simply have no way to hide our appearance here."

"This."

Liu Yi somewhat hesitated, "This....my face...."

"Ai, you are a man, what are you afraid of, do not you want to know how my face look like?"

Wei Yi rolled her eyes at Liu Yi, "Moreover, we are partners now, if we do not even know what each other's look like, can we still call ourselves partners!"

Liu Yi always felt this girl Wei Yi took everything seriously, but unexpectedly, the corners of her mouth seemed to hang a smile.

This girl....is absolutely intentional.

"Aren't there artifacts that can disguise our appearances or something?"

"D\*mn, do you think this big miss is Tinkerbell! Hurry up! Are you a man or not!"

"Of course I a man, wait for me!"

Liu Yi was effectively goaded by Wei Yi, turned around and went to the nearby restroom.

Wei Yi could not help but giggle twice, rubbed her civet Tuantuan, and then went to the women's restroom to change her outfit.

When the two people came out, they both dressed in ordinary school boys and girls uniform.

Wei Yi even put Tuantuan away, obviously walking around with cat was even more conspicuous.

When Liu Yi walked out of the restroom, Wei Yi suddenly stared at him.

Turns out....This ten step to milk a man is like this....

Hehe....he is actually not bad....

There is a certain kind of appearance.

Liu Yi originally was not ugly, but after entering the cultivation world, his entire personality traits have changed. Moreover, some minor flaws on his face have been modified.

Such as his previous blackheads on his nose. Now, they were all gone.

Since he always slept better now, his once somewhat baggy eyes were also recovered. And his thick eyebrows and big eyes were even more pronounced.

After looking at him, Wei Yi was happy very happy in his heart.

At least she knew that the guy who almost took her first kiss....Was not ugly.

Actually, in everyone's heart, hid a little monster called appearance.

But even though Wei Yi was pleased to see Liu Yi's appearance, her mouth said another thing.

"Stinking insect, so ugly, how could I become a team with an ugly fellow like you."

"Hey, hey....Since when I am ugly...."

Liu Yi felt this girl was too much, spoiled brat, yes, definitely a spoiled brat!

Humph humph, if this girl is my daughter and she acts so outrageous and unreasonable in front of me, I will mercilessly spank her ass!

Right now Liu Yi had the impulse to spank Wei Yi's ass, but upon remembering that Wei Yi still had her big Leopard....Well, you know what, just forget it.

“What ‘since when I am ugly’! Forget it, who put me in a team together with you, I, Wei Yi is magnanimous, so I do not care about this.”

“What the....”

Liu Yi felt he had suffered a lot.

This girl is certainly intentional!

“Come on, we had to finish our task!”

Seeing that Liu Yi has admitted defeat, Wei Yi secretly was pleased!

Very pleased indeed!

She even thought that this feeling was better than when she beat her school martial brothers in the tournament!

Hahaha, I will continue to bully this ten step to milk a man!

This is so much fun!

Sure enough being in a team together with him is the right choice!

Liu Yi and Wei Yi turned to leave the corridor and opened the door of the Game Arena.

When they opened the door, the two people came close to being blown out by the huge noise.

My god....too loud....

In this Game Arena, there were shouts from the video game characters, the yelling from men and women, and there was also the roar of music. All of these almost made Liu Yi and Wei Yi two people collapsed.

The two of them apparently never came to this place before, therefore, they were a bit overwhelmed.

The place was really noisy.

Yet, when they looked at those men and women, all of their faces looked excited.

Liu Yi began to have a headache.

This place is so densely packed with people.....How to lure the female monster out....

“Ai....You are not cool enough....”

Wei Yi frowned as she looked at Liu Yi, “How can you catch a beauty with this appearance?”

“This....why don’t you try it?”

Liu Yi looked at Wei Yi and said.

“Me?”

Wei Yi was surprised.

“Yes....you can dress up like a man....”

Liu Yi smiled and then said.

“What a joke! How could I become a cross-dresser!”

Wei Yi suddenly shook her head, “I do not sign for this!”

“Are you afraid?”

Liu Yi used Wei Yi’s previous mind trick, a Jedi strike back.

“Who said I am afraid, just wait!”

Wei Yi suddenly turned back to enter the toilet on the corridor leading to the office. Liu Yi could not help but laugh.

Hehe, goading someone into action, who said it was hard!

This technique is not that hard!

Humph, humph, playing mind tricks against me, this girl is still inexperienced.

Liu Yi crossed his arms, standing on the second floor, waiting for the result under the boisterous music.

Soon, he felt the demonic aura became even more intense.

This demonic aura, it seems like it comes from nearby.....



Liu Yi started to get puzzled.

A monster who knows how to restrain her demonic energy....How could she release such an intense demonic aura?

Is this monster in the middle of practice?

The demonic aura has fluttered into Liu Yi's nose, making him could not help but suck it.

At the same time, the demon energy in his body, as if uncontrolled, tried to get out.

Restrain!

Liu Yi did not want to let his other self to cause trouble.....

He made two breathing technique and adjusted the rhythm of the power in his body.

Meanwhile, he also looked around a bit, looking for the location of the most intense demonic aura.

Unfortunately, everywhere around him were densely packed with people, which made him simply unable to see where the demonic aura drifted out from.

"Strange...."

Lying on Liu Yi's shoulder, the little Fox could not help but wrinkled her nose, "Judging from this demonic aura....This monster should not be too powerful....How could they classify this as D level task....Could the God's Eye people made a mistake?"

"We will soon know....This monster is near....I can feel it."

The little Fox closed her eyes, sniffed her nose, and said.

"Close....she's coming!"

The little Fox screamed, making Liu Yi suddenly became full alert. His two palms were held in front of his body, warily watching the person who suddenly appeared in front of him.

"What are you doing!"

Dressed in black coats, Wei Yi, in men's appearance, was suddenly startled.

"You want to die!"

With that, she mercilessly stared at Liu Yi, "You scared me to death!"

"Eh....How come it is you...."

Liu Yi was taken aback by the sudden appearance of this girl. How could she come back so fast?

But, in men's clothing....she is actually quite handsome.

Wei Yi's hair was hidden inside a hat that she wore on her head. Her delicate feature seemed like an innocent young heroine.

Standing on the second floor, she immediately captured the attention of many girls downstairs.

"Handsome, come down and play with me!"

"Handsome, want to 'Dance Dance Revolution' with me?"

The girls were a lot more forward, they directly said hello to Wei Yi.

Liu Yi found that Wei Yi's face was slightly red.

Does she have no resistance to girls?

Hehe....Is this girl a lesbian?

Perhaps....

How could a proud girl like her put boys into her eyes?

"These annoying girls....really boring."

But unexpectedly, such words came out of Wei Yi's mouth.

Alas....It seems like this girl is doomed to a lonely life.

# Chapter 153 If I Win, Call Me My Husband

“I seem to feel the position of that Demonic aura....”

Wei Yi, sitting on the railing on the second floor, suddenly said.

“It seems to come from....that woman....”

She held out her hand and pointed at a girl who was sitting in front of a racing game machine.

The girl was wearing a red coat, with small leather shorts, while her plump thighs were wrapped in black stockings.

That girl was surrounded by several men, most of them did not look at how this beauty drive but at her towering chest and the deep ravine that was squeezed out from her neckline.

This girl seemed to be very good at playing racing games and has probably defeated several challengers.

“Have you heard?....As long as you can win against this beauty....You can go out with her to book a hotel.....”

“Really? Then I want to try it!”

“Stop dreaming....This is girl’s racing skill is especially fierce, didn’t you see there are already several challengers who were beaten silly by her!?”

Several boys around her kept on talking.

“Her? You are not wrong, right?”

Liu Yi looked at that compelling beauty and asked Wei Yi.

“When will I misread? You stinking insect!”

Wei Yi gave Liu Yi a dirty look, “If you do not believe me then you do not need to follow me.”

This girl really has character.

Liu Yi obediently followed behind Wei Yi through the crowd toward that beauty.

The beauty really has amazing driving skills. Drifting, fast turning, a virtual rampage on the road, defeating challenger after challenger.

“Humph, a bunch of waste, beauty, tonight you are mine.”

A rascally dressed boy sat in front of the other racing game machine, blew a whistle toward that beauty and said to her.

“I, this little master, am the ‘race king’ here.”

“You....better not come....”

The beauty said hesitantly.

“You look down on this little master? See how this little master conquers you!”

That rascally dressed boy said and started to choose a car.

His action was smooth, apparently, he was a regular here.

Moreover, he took out a race car card, showing that he was definitely an old player.

In the Game Arena, most racing games have memory cards. This memory card can be used to buy in-game items, and it was specialized to record your game history. This card was very expensive.

With this card, you can transform your ordinary car, or choose a dedicated racing car.

The beauty also has her car, her car was a sexy red little sports car.

The so-called ‘race king’ chose a black sports car, which seemed to have a very good performance. When Liu Yi saw the screen above, he noticed that the stats of that car were high.

The race king’s face seemed to show a lot of confidence, and he also chose a familiar track, seemingly ready to match with the beautiful woman.

“Beauty, I will make you feel happy tonight!”

He evilly smiled twice and then started the game.

But in less than a lap later, his face was stiff.

All of his previous confidence and smiles were frozen on his face.

Before the lap even finished, he was already thrown half a distance away by the beauty.

“Impossible....”

His eyes were filled with inconceivable feeling, “How come I....am being so easily overtaken! At this corner, you are actually faster than me!”

He was thoroughly defeated.

Playing this game for a long time, he never met his match. But today, he was unexpectedly defeated by this beauty.

Finishing the two laps race, he was never able to catch up with the beauty, so he covered his face with his hat, and ran away with tail between his leg under the booing crowd.

Liu Yi discovered that the beauty seemed to be quietly relieved.

She does not like that guy?

Although a bit obscene, and somewhat rascally, but he was a handsome man.

Really strange.....

When the surrounding boys were still hesitating whether or not they should challenge her, the beautiful young racer suddenly shuddered. Turning her head, she suddenly looked at Wei Yi and hooked her finger at her.

“Do you dare to have a match with me?”

“Why wouldn’t I dare!”

Wei Yi could not stand being provoked like that. She frowned, pushed her shoulders back and chest out, and then said.

Before she walked to the racing machine, she snapped her fingers at Liu Yi “Go....swipe the little card!”

“Yes....”

His mother! Since when she consider me as a little brother.

However, Liu Yi still obediently walked to the racing machine and swiped the card on the magnetic spot.

Suddenly the game started.

The nearby onlookers began to chatter.

“Damn....That looks like a black card.”

“The legendary VIP card? So awesome....”

All kinds of jealous eyes were thrown at Liu Yi and Wei Yi.

“Can you drive....?”

Liu Yi lowered his voice to whisper on Wei Yi’s ear.

“Are you looking down on me!”

Wei Yi immediately glared at him, “I am the heaven’s most gifted....the most gifted child, is there anything that I can’t do?! Soon, I will let you see my driving skills!”

With that, she chose a vehicle from the system and then prepared for the match.

“If you win....I, I am yours....”

The way the beauty spoke seemed to show that she was somewhat afraid and filled with apprehension.

When he saw this, Liu Yi felt that something was not quite right.

All kinds of buzzing sounds came from the crowd of onlookers.

“Really a handsome fellow, the beauty even took the initiative to invite him.”

“Truly make people envy....”

“Come on, you are coming with me tonight!”

Wei Yi laughed, and then stepped on the gas to start the race.

Soon, Liu Yi could not bear to see the race anymore....

Truly terrible to look at!

Is she riding a car?

A plane is more appropriate!

This should be called 'charging around violently!'

The track quickly turned into a battlefield. Many innocent vehicles were smashed.

But Wei Yi kept on slamming the gas, charging forward like a tank.

"Ai....Why this is so difficult to control....Hateful....Damn steering wheel!"

Liu Yi was about to cry.

My goodness....this girl would destroy the steering wheel....

The beauty did not take much effort to easily beat Wei Yi.

"Hateful! Damn, this is certainly the steering wheel's mistake!"

Wei Yi lifted her foot to kick the steering wheel.

"Calm down! Calm down!"

Liu Yi quickly grabbed her and dragged her away from the machine.

This is really not the mistake of the steering wheel....

If you kick and break the machine, you cannot afford to pay the damage....

This machine is expensive!

"Hateful! Too hateful!"

Wei Yi was furious.

"Cool down....do not be angry with the machine...."

Lei Yi quickly tried to appease Wei Yi.

"But what about our task!"

Wei Yi lowered her voice and said to Liu Yi.

"Let me try it...."

Liu Yi looked at the still sitting at the racing machine beauty and said.

"You?"

Wei Yi curled her lips, "Can you? Aren't you a student? Can you drive?"

“I always play the game!”

Liu Yi patted his chest, “In the past, I was also called the Drift King!”

“Oh? You are the so-called Drift King? In what game, Need For Speed?”

“If I say it, you will be scared to death!”

“Less nonsense, quickly tell me the title of the game?”

“Kartrider Rush!”

Liu Yi said and moved his butt to sit at the racing machine.

“Damn....”

Wei Yi put up two middle fingers behind his back.

“I do not like you....you better go.”

When the beauty looked at Liu Yi sitting at the racing machine, she popped out such words.

Liu Yi was hurt.

No need to treat me this differently right?

Although I am not as handsome as Wei Yi in disguise, I can still be counted as a handsome guy!

He thought about giving her fierce slogan to let her know how amazing he was!

After pondering it over, he thought about his life most fierce declaration line.

“Friendship first, and then the match.”

Cold sweat poured out of the beauty’s back.

Liu Yi took out his black card and swiped it over the magnetic part and restarted the machine.

At the same time, he found that his black card has the same shape as the memory card of the previous ‘Race King.’

Thus, Liu Yi put his black card into the memory card slot.

Suddenly, a cool silver sports car appeared on the screen.



This sports car stats were much better, much higher than the stats of the regular car option!

“The Silver Dragon....”

“F\*ck me, this kid actually has the best car....”

“That’s the sports car from the VIP card, it does not mean that he can play it well.”

Several envious eyes and voices floated out of the crowd once again.

Liu Yi’s heart was somewhat giddy because, after all, he actually can play with a very good car.

But soon, under this noisy environment, he gradually settled down.

That beauty is an expert in driving....Even if I have a good car, it does not necessarily mean that I can beat her.

After all, there is a precedent in that previous ‘Race King.’

I must not treat this lightly!

Liu Yi made two breathing technique, and the world turned into black and white in his eyes.

The movement of the onlookers around him became slower.

Those noises were stretched longer and longer.

Liu Yi seemed to be able to hear the slow ticking clock from around him.

While the images on the screen seemed to slow down.

Liu Yi picked the car and then choose for 2p match.

He did not know which track was good for him, fortunately, the beauty directly told him.

“This is the track that I excel the most, you can choose another one.”

The beauty turned her head and said to Liu Yi.

Her sentence was stretched in Liu Yi’s ears.

But Liu Yi was already adapted to this rhythm. For the match, for the task, for the money....

“Begin!”

Liu Yi did not want to talk aimlessly, immediately pressed the start button.

The two cars immediately appeared side by side on the starting line. Liu Yi was holding the steering wheel, waiting for the countdown.

Because the time was stretched, waiting for the countdown was hard on him.

“Do not lose too badly!”

Wei Yi gloated from the side, believing that it was impossible for Liu Yi to win.

Even I, the heaven’s most gifted child, cannot win, much less him, humph humph.

“Want to make a bet?”

Liu Yi could not accept being looked down upon by Wei Yi.

Therefore, he suddenly thought about a method to trick Wei Yi, and then whispered to her.

“Why not, if I win, I want you to give something to me!”

Giving something to you?

I can do that....

Liu Yi thought evilly.

“All of the rewards will be mine.”

Wei Yi added.

“Then what if I win?”

Liu Yi blinked his eyes and asked.

“Tell me, what do you want if you win!”

“If I win....I want you to call me ‘my husband!’”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 154

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Index](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

“What did you say?”

Wei Yi’s pair of big beautiful eyes were wide open, peering at Liu Yi.

“Do you want to....die?”

“If you are afraid to make a bet then just forget it.”

Liu Yi indifferently beckoned with his hand, “I do not insist.”

“Who is afraid to make a bet!”

Wei Yi was goaded into action, immediately wrinkled her brows, “I am just afraid that you will cry if you lose!”

Ten steps to milk a man is greedy for money, if I make him work for free, he would surely cry to death!

Humph humph, just wait and see!

“Very good!”

Liu Yi could not help but titter, When the moment comes, I will make you see the true fact!

Long live the black and white world!

“Begin!”

At this moment, the countdown on the screen came to an end.

The beauty who sat on the right side has skillfully launched her car.

She flexibly pushed the gear with one hand and steered the car with the other hand. At the same time, his foot pushed the gas pedal, letting the car ran like a wild horse, leaping up from the starting line.

Her every move were captured by Liu Yi’s peripheral vision.

He did not choose the manual transmission but picked the auto transmission instead.

Liu Yi was not a 'manual player.' He always chose the automatic transmission in every racing game.

This action made the nearby people scoffed at him again and again.

"An 'automatic player' dares to challenge a 'manual player,' what a joke."

"That's right, truly overestimating one's ability."

These people's ridicules were actually justified, Liu Yi knew that in some corners, human reflex simply cannot keep up.

If it was an automatic transmission, the speed was very difficult to control, making it easy to crash at the corners because it was hard to lower the speed.

If it was a manual transmission, one can rapidly decelerate through corners and then faster to accelerate again.

"It is impossible for you to beat me using the automatic transmission."

The beauty said to Liu Yi as she drove.

At this time, Liu Yi was in a straight line. With the car's exceptional performance, it has surpassed to the front of the beauty's sports car.

But the beauty did not panic because the real victory or defeat moments were on the various corners.

The race track that they used was a winding mountain path so there were many rolling curves in front. With this track, the automatic transmission car would not be able to pick up speed.

In front was a giant curve, a typical S route.

The beauty immediately pulled and held the gear shift, and she started to change the speed to prepare for the excessive curve.

While Liu Yi kept on stepping on the gas, having no intention to decelerate at all.

"Is this guy crazy?"

“He is going to directly hit the railing!”

“A complete novice!”

The crowd of onlookers could not help talking about it.

But they did not know that the route was clearly marked in Liu Yi’s eyes.

He stepped on a brake, pulled the steering wheel, and quickly began turned.

His car immediately drifted horizontally to the right side, drifting through this road curve.

“What!”

The group of people behind him were immediately surprised.

They could not imagine that this ‘automatic player’ could actually perform such a powerful high-speed cornering!

This....This is simply impossible!

Did he give his car a stimulant?

Could human reflex able to do that?

This must be a coincidence!

When everyone was thinking about that, Liu Yi arrived at the second curve. As with the previous, he used the same high-speed cornering flick, and in the blink of an eye left the beauty’s car far behind.

The people behind him stood still, My God....is this the legendary Car God?

While Wei Yi was completely dumbfounded.

If this goes on....ten step to milk a man will win....

Am I really going to call him my husband?

My God, he might as well kill me....

I don’t want to call him that....huhuhu....

After the two super high-speed curve drifting, Liu Yi has fully mastered this skill.

Having various cheats like breathing technique and all kinds of spells feels

really good.

The beauty panicked, no matter how she tried, she could not overtake Liu Yi and has been thrown very far away. Basically, as long as Liu Yi did not make mistakes, it was impossible for her to catch up.

“D\*mn....”

Wei Yi was first to become angry, I am being cheated!

Do not win....must not win....

Wei Yi began to silently cheer, Crash, crash, crash!

But Liu Yi’s technique was getting more and more smooth, in a big U-shaped curve, he did a beautiful drift.

The beauty has no hope of catching up with him.

Her look was slightly pale as she glanced at Liu Yi.

“You lose.”

Liu Yi said to the beauty when he passed the finish line All of the onlookers sighed, feeling as if a flower was inserted into a cow dung.

Wei Yi on the side was tight-lipped with anger.

I actually lose the bet!

Do I really have to call this guy my husband!

No....absolutely not!

Even if I am beaten to death, I will not call him that!

“Come with me....”

The beauty simply said as she stood up and made a hook gesture with her finger at Liu Yi.

Liu Yi did not hesitate. He turned and followed her toward the outside.

Wei Yi hurriedly followed from behind, secretly tracking the two people.

After Liu Yi followed that beauty out of the door, the beauty immediately put her hands on his body. The faint fragrance on her body quickly floated into Liu Yi’s nose.

“Handsome....What do you want to do with me....”

Her breath was like an orchid, flowing into Liu Yi’s ears, making him somewhat itch.

Wei Yi should follow us from behind....

Liu Yi bit his tongue to stop his impulse to kiss this beauty’s hot neck.

He must admit that this beauty....has a hot body, and was also quite tall.

Especially the gully at her chest, which seemingly made Liu Yi wanted to fall into it.

“Seductive technique!”

On Liu Yi’s shoulder, Lin Tong curled her mouth in disdain and said, “Compared with the Fox clan charm technique, the difference is too much. This little monster, with this little skill, how could she dares to come out! Does she have a death wish?”

Thinking about the task, Liu Yi said, “If possible....I want to have an in-depth talk with you....”

“Then come with me....”

The beauty pointed to a nearby Express Hotel, “That’s a quiet place....only for the two of us....”

“I did not bring my ID.”

Liu Yi said

“So you like to do it in the open....”

The beauty blinked her eyes, “Though the weather is a bit cold....but it is fine....come with me.”

The beauty said, turned around, and walked toward one of the alleys.

As they went deeper and deeper, the Demonic aura was getting more intense.

It seems like....this chick is going to make her move soon.

This alley was terribly quiet, everywhere was full of garbage as well as the stench of smoke.

The beauty suddenly halted her footsteps, stopped, looked at Liu Yi, and then said.

“It is quiet here....no one will disturb us....”

But her hands immediately lifted up her phone and very quickly typed a few words.

“I hate you, quickly leave!” Were her words on the phone.

Liu Yi was a bit silly.

What’s with this girl, does she have split personality?

“The beauty is actually hardcore....”

Liu Yi decided to ignore the content of the message, looked at the surrounding environment, and ridiculed, “But this is actually pretty fun....”

“As long as you like it....”

The beauty pressed some few words on her phone....”

“Leave! Do you still have a face?”

Damn....

Is she having a relapse?

Liu Yi was somewhat unclear.

But upon seeing that Liu Yi has yet to leave, the beauty was suddenly anxious, and unexpectedly pulled out a dagger from her waist.

She raised the dagger high and viciously stabbed at Liu Yi.

“Bold evildoer! I tell you to stop!”

At this time, a red light suddenly flashed in the sky.

Then, a fireball hit the chest of the beautiful woman with a puff sound, directly knocking the beauty to the ground.

The dagger in her hand also fell down with a clatter.

“Whirr, whirr!”

The fireball quickly turned into a civet. Liu Yi wanted to reach out to touch that civet but never thought that Tuantuan would scream and extend its



paw to scratch Liu Yi's face.

What the....

This dead cat!

"Serves you right!"

Wei Yi lightly landed on his side, rolled at Liu Yi and said, "Do you think everyone can hug my civet?"

"Who do you think I am? I am your husband!"

Liu Yi took this opportunity to retort.

"Hateful! Shut up! If you mention this matter again, I will kill you!"

Wei Yi stomped the ground in anger.

The civet Tuantuan on her shoulder seemed to feel its owner anger-because-of-shame emotion and immediately roared.

This normally deserted alley was visited by three uninvited guests.

The one sitting on the ground, with a pale face, and a trace of fire on the chest, said.

"You....you...."

The beauty seemed to understand about what their intention was, and her beautiful face lost its color.

"Bold evildoer!"

Wei Yi charmingly roared, "You actually dare to mingle among the crowd and take the human lives! Such a bold evildoer, I must deal with you today!"

With that, her civet Tuantuan on her shoulder immediately covered in flame. The cat's mouth seemed to aim at the beauty on the ground, seemingly wanted to incinerate her.

"See how I burn you to ashes!"

"No, no...."

The beauty was suddenly afraid and trembled.

"Stop!"

When Wei Yi was about to launch her attack, Liu Yi hastily reached out his hand to stop her.

“What are you doing?”

Wei Yi fiercely stared at Liu Yi, “Were you confused by her, and therefore, feel sorry for her?”

“What are you talking about!”

Liu Yi explained, “I just think that we should not kill people for no reason....I always feel like something is wrong.”

“What do you mean by wrong? I think you are just being confused by her!”

Wei Yi humphed, “Wasn’t this evildoer going to stab you just now? Or have you forgotten already?”

“This is true....But I still feel like....something is not quite right....”

Liu Yi deeply frowned, but he was actually unable to think of what was wrong.

“Really annoying, If you are unwilling, let me do it myself.”

Wei Yi pushed Liu Yi’s hand that was blocking her, “Subduing the demon and eliminating the devil are our duty-bound affair!”

With that, the civet Tuantuan opened its mouth, which was filled with hot red flame.

“Whooz....”

“Whirr....”

When Wei Yi was about to launch her spell, the two people’s expressions suddenly changed, because evil wind suddenly erupted and Demonic energy filled the air.

This was a powerful demonic energy ....Which obviously did not come from the beauty in front of them!

“Hihihi....You want to kill my bait?....I can’t let you do that....”

A smirking woman’s voice echoed throughout the alley.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 155

[Previous Chapter](#) | [Index](#) | [Next Chapter](#)

Hearing that woman's laughter, Liu Yi and Wei Yi, two people's faces greatly changed.

It turns out....there is a monster in hiding?!

At that time, the scene around the two of them started to change.

The nearby bags of garbage, in the blink of an eye, turned into rancid dry bones.

And everywhere around them was filled with cobwebs, blocking the two people's path.

White spider web with strange breath flooded around Liu Yi.

A rich source of demonic aura finally unfolded out in the open.

"So....my cute little bait....in order to prevent me from eating, even tried to scare away my food?"

A spider silk suddenly fell to that scarlet beauty on the ground and she, in the blink of an eye, wound up in mid-air with a panic-stricken look.

"Stop eating people anymore...."

The scarlet beauty sobbed, "This....this is not right...."

"You, this little Butterfly demon, has some courage; actually dare to talk like that to me."

Liu Yi suddenly noticed, high above, not far from the cobwebs, a woman covered in black silk cloak.

That woman was very enchanting, but there was a negative aura on her forehead that was hard to dissolve.

This should be....that man-eating monster....

“I used to cut you some slack so that you can be my bait....”

The tone of that enchanting woman in black silk cloak was getting cold by the seconds, “If you don’t have the awareness....then you will be my food.”

“Bold evildoer! Turns out you are the one behind all this!”

Wei Yi, with Tuantuan on her shoulder, scolded the woman on high above.

But Liu Yi noticed that Wei Yi’s body slightly trembled.

“What happened....” He lowered his voice and asked.

“We are in her illusion....”

Wei Yi also replied in low voice, “The one who is able to cast such advance technique....should be at least, a four star demon....we....we may have to suffer....”

With that, her hand quietly touched the Jade on her neck.

Finally taking a D-level task....But I didn’t expect, the enemy turns out to be this abnormal....

It is a four star monster....

It seems this will be difficult....

“But....before that, I want to enjoy these two little cultivators.”

That female demon said, and her eyes turned toward Liu Yi and Wei Yi, two people.

Suddenly, Liu Yi felt his whole body was bound by ice.

Huge amount of Demonic aura wrapped around his body.

The nearby Wei Yi also trembled, seemingly feeling the same as him.

“Hihi....it seems like you two are pure newcomers....”

The female monster said and licked her lips, “I really like tender newcomers like you two....[Read this on subudai11.com] There are supplements but also young and tender....hihi....just thinking about it make me drool.”

“Perverted! Take this!”

Wei Yi suddenly held Tuantuan and exclaimed.

“Spirit Animal Possession!”

Her whole body suddenly changed, a pair of cute cat ears and a tail appeared on her.

Red flame lit around her feet, making her look cute and awe-inspiring.

“Oh my, a spirit-cultivator, good, good, interesting.”

That female monster looked at Wei Yi’s with arms crossed, not to stop her, but to said with great interest.

“This will add my appetite before my meal.”

“You will taste the power of spirit-cultivator!”

Wei Yi said, and suddenly moved in a flash, and in a blink of an eye appeared behind that female monster.

Meanwhile, her flaming claws swung to tear that female monster on her vest.

After evolving into the cat mother, Wei Yi’s speed was incredibly fast.

But that female monster....seemed to show a careless appearance....

She wasn’t aware of Wei Yi....or, did not care for her at all?

“Die!”

Wei Yi loudly shouted in a delicate voice, her claws were about to tear that female monster on her vest.

But at this time, that female monster suddenly sprayed out a white spider silk from her back and directly wrapped Wei Yi’s body tightly.

“Damn....What is this....”

Wei Yi’s whole body was tightly strapped like a silkworm cocoon.

She burst out flames from around her body, trying to burn off those spider silk.

But the spider silk was neither burned nor broken, it kept on strapping her.

“It’s useless, little dudes...my spider silk cannot be invaded by fire and water....Unless it is the Samadhi (or ultimate) true fire, otherwise, don’t ever think of breaking my spider silk.”

Wei Yi was flustered.

Samadhi true fire....

Her strength was not enough to cultivate such flame!

Moreover, her hands were now tied, so there was no way for her to crush the jade.

Now....she was really in a big trouble....

“Ten steps to milk a man, run away!”

Wei Yi’s mouth has not been blocked, so she shouted at Liu Yi, “Go to my school, and inform the disciple of Linglong school! They will save me!”

“Hehe....little dude is really funny.”

That female monster covered her mouth to chuckle, “Today....No one can run away from here....”

With that, a spider silk spread out and turned into a white fence-like barrier.

“You look quite delicious....people will finally eat you....em, first take the other one as an appetizer.”

With that, the female monster turned around and walked toward Liu Yi.

“Run away!”

Wei Yi did not give up; she suddenly took a deep breath, making her mouth swollen.

Then, she sprayed a mouthful of fire to the back of that female monster.

A pillar-like red flame went straight toward the back of that female monster.

This mouthful of flame seemed to contain all of Wei Yi’s power. Even the female monster did not dare to resist head on.

She suddenly bent over, and the fire went past over her, burning a strain

of her hair.

Wei Yi was trying to harass the female monster in order to create an escape opportunity for Liu Yi.

But Liu Yi was still standing there and did not move.

Soon, Wei Yi's flame went out, gasping her breath. Watching Liu Yi still did not leave, she scolded.

"Bastard....why, why don't you run....you fool...."

"Sorry, little cat mother."

Liu Yi stood there, clenching his fists.

"I told myself....Never again will I run away from a fight."

Never again will I flee from the face of the enemy.

This was Liu Yi's oath to himself.

"Fool, you big fool, this is not the time to be a hero!"

Wei Yi could not help but scold, "You will make both of us killed!"

"Alas....this little dude is actually quite interesting in his foolish way."

That female monster put an arm on her waist, smilingly looking at Liu Yi.

"Unfortunately, the strength is still too weak....there is no fun in playing with you."

"Don't worry, I will make you satisfied."

Liu Yi moved his joints and then laughed.

"These new people are interesting."

The female monster clapped her hands, and smiled, "Especially the one who doesn't know how high the sky is, those are the most interesting one."

With that, she reached out her hand, and the white spider silk immediately flew toward Liu Yi.

"Ten Steps To Milk A Man, watch out!"

Wei Yi suddenly shouted in horror.

That spider silk is terrible....

Even my flame is invalid to them....moreover, they are so fast....can Ten Step To Milk A Man....get out of here?

But Liu Yi stood there and did not move, looking at the hordes of spider silk that were coming at him like he was petrified.

The corner of that female monster hung a proud and contemptuous smile. While Wei Yi's heart twitched.

But at this time, Liu Yi suddenly moved.

He suddenly lifted his right foot, and then stomped his foot on the ground in front of him.

"Bam!"

Suddenly, mysterious icy qi soared toward the sky.

Blue-white icy mist burst out.

Those attacking spider silk have been frozen and freeze in front of him.

Since the flame didn't work out, then I'll just use ice.

Liu Yi did not believe that the spider silk was really invincible!

"What?"

That female monster was surprised; she did not expect the other party to actually able to deal with her spider silk.

"Do not think that would be so easy!"

She waved her hand, and many spider silk unceasingly moved toward him from behind .

"Poof, poof, poof!"

These spider silks went right through Liu Yi's body.

The female monster turned pale; aware of something, she subconsciously glanced up.

She saw from above her head, the young man in a black suit was on top of her as he viciously threw a palm toward her.



“Courting death!”

After sucking many people’s life essence, I have finally been promoted to four star expert!

But a newcomer dare to be so close to me!

Court death!

That female monster scolded, her right hand moved to meet his palm as the demonic strength surged out from her body.

The two people’s palms struck each other.

“Desolate Flame!”

At the same time, Liu Yi’s mouth let out a roar.

Dazzling white light burst out from his left palm.

“Ah!”

The female demon’s mouth uttered a scream, her mouth spurted out blood, and her whole body directly fell from the sky like a broken kite and severely hit the ground.

“Turns out to be....a third star....cultivator....”

That female demon suffered a big loss.

She was a skill-cultivator, so her body technique originally was not very good.

Her palm just now contained a huge amount of her demonic strength.

But she was careless, the opposite party was actually a third-star body-cultivator.

Moreover, the power of this third-star body-cultivator was actually close to four-star!

Body-cultivator’s greatest strength was in the melee!

In addition, his strength was not necessarily inferior to her....so when the two of them exchanged palms....she suffered a heavy loss.

The organs inside her body twitched, and her mouth couldn’t help but

bleed.

The female monster partly knelt on the ground, unable to stand up.

Liu Yi also brought himself down to the ground; his feet trod on ice.

His mouth slightly exhaled a mouthful of cold air while his left hand tightly clenched the leftover ice crystals.

My palm can actually deal with a four star monster.....

Sure enough, after entering third-star, I can simultaneously control the three forces inside my body....My power began to increase by leaps and bounds.

From the sidelines, Wei Yi was also surprised, staring at him with wide eyes, she cannot believe what she just saw.

A few days ago, he was just a newcomer who struggled hard together with her to defeat a two-star monster....

With just a few days of effort, how could he become so powerful!

Did he eat an elixir?

“What do you think?”

Liu Yi’s eyes fell on the trembling body of that female monster, “I told you I will make you satisfied. Remember to praise me, my dear.”

With that, he walked step by step toward that female monster.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 156

## Chapter 156 Thirteen Aunt

“D\*mn it!”

The female monster was surprised and angry.

To her surprise, this seemingly newcomer kid....was actually very strong!

He was obviously just a newbie....

But turned out to be a third-star. Moreover, he also cultivated the most difficult cultivation method, which was body-cultivation!

What exactly the story behind this kid!

What made her angry was that she let herself being tricked by him!

Now she has suffered an internal injury because of his palm strike.....

Shame!

This is a big shame!

“I, Thirteen Aunt absolutely will not spare you!”

Thirteen Aunt.

Cold sweat poured out of Liu Yi’s head

How could there be such a wonderful name....

This is so weird....

No wonder she is a monster.

Although they were both demons, Liu Yi still felt that the name Lin Tong was much pleasant to hear....

That’s right, Fox sister is my Fox sister!

“Surrender your life!”

That Thirteen Aunt said, and her figure suddenly soared as many spider silks appeared behind her and spread out, making her hung in mid-air overlooking Liu Yi from high above.

*“Your time is up....” You are not supposed to read this! If you are, you are in the wrong place!*

She said, and her figure suddenly changed.

Soon, sharp claws appeared on her back.

And three pairs of little green eyes appeared on her forehead, which made her look very frightening.

What the f\*ck....

This is not a beauty anymore.....

This kind of look.....is something that can't be commented!

“Prepare to die....”

With that, she suddenly threw a bunch of spider silks in front of Liu Yi, completely blocking his view.

White spider silks were all that Liu Yi can see, which made him unable to see anything else.

He quickly threw out several ice bombs, which blasted out wide expanse of icy frost, shattering those spider silk.

But there was no Thirteen Aunt in front of him.

That female spider demon....where is she running to?

When Liu Yi was puzzled, he suddenly heard Wei Yi's terrified yell from the distance.

“Liu Yi! Behind you!”

At the same time, Liu Yi also felt a wave of bone-chilling cold wind from behind him.

He quickly turned around and his body was suddenly covered with cold.

That female spider demon was hanging behind him, the two of them were only separated by a few centimeters.

Liu Yi can clearly see the gloomy smile on the corner of Thirteen Aunt's mouth.

“Poof, poof, poof!”

Four pairs of sharp claws immediately entered Liu Yi’s back, directly pierced into his body.

Liu Yi suddenly stared, wide-eyed.

Tearing pain randomly wandered around his body.

“Let me taste you....”

The female spider demon said and sent out her spider silk to capture Liu Yi’s whole body. And then she instantly pounced into the air, bringing him with her.

At the same time, her mouth revealed a pair of poisonous palate as she moved to fiercely bite Liu Yi’s neck.

“Ten Steps To Milk A Man!”

Wei Yi was freaked out and issued a hysterical scream.

While Lin Tong on Liu Yi’s shoulder also prepared to make her move.

Absolutely....cannot let this woman harm Liu Yi!

But this time, Liu Yi suddenly opened his eyes wide.

His whole body was wrapped in a forest of white icy qi.

“I am not that easy to eat!”

With that, he endured the pain on his back and mercilessly struck a palm strike toward Thirteen Aunt’s chest.

It was too late for him to feel the softness of Thirteen Aunt’s breast. This was a vicious palm from Liu Yi.

The Desolate Flame from the Great Brilliant Sun Palm was launched.

Turbulent immortal power as well as mysterious icy qi directly struck Thirteen Aunt on the chest.

“Bam, bam, bam!”

Thirteen Aunt’s back was blown away by the revolving tornado of white icy frost.

Liu Yi's palm strike was really 'went against the heaven's will.'

This palm strike directly created a giant hole on Thirteen Aunt's chest.

Flesh and blood were frozen into ice, flying everywhere.

Thirteen Aunt's body dropped, and fell to the ground with a thump.

Liu Yi also came down, but he endured the pain from his wound while sending out icy frost to stabilize his body.

Although his wounds were healing, they were a total of eight wounds....It was truly shocking. Even if he wanted to fully recover, it still took some time.

Liu Yi felt as if his body was drained....It was very uncomfortable.

But his healing was so fast that it was visible to the naked eyes.

The healing power of Demon race was exceptionally great.

Even Wei Yi from the side was looking at him with envy.

If a common immortal cultivator suffered such a heavy injury and wanted to heal, if one has no elixir as a supplement, it was impossible to heal so fast like Liu Yi.....

This Ten Steps To Milk A Man, where exactly did he come from....

A prestigious big Sect?

This is certainly impossible....

There is no way a disciple of a prestigious big Sect could have such a strong demonic strength.

The scene that happened at the grave now appeared before her eyes. It was impossible for her to forget this.

Ten Steps To Milk A Man....Who exactly are you....

He is obviously my partner....but, I did not know anything about him.

"Thirteen Aunt, you have done many terrible things, and also killed many innocent lives...."

Liu Yi looked around at those rotten bones and his whole blood could not

help but become cold.

“Today, I must not spare you....”

“A little immortal cultivator! A third-star one at that!”

Thirteen Aunt was lying on the ground. Although her chest was blown out, leaving a huge gaping hole in the middle. But as she also has the tenacious vitality of Demonic race, she was still alive and strong as before.

“I am going to kill you!”

After that hysterical wail, Thirteen Aunt propped herself with her eight claws, and then slowly crawled up from the ground.

Meanwhile, the demonic aura, as well as the evil wind that filled the air drilled back into her body.

This Thirteen Aunt's body began to swell quickly.

Soon, she became a five-meter long, four-meter high spider with a beautiful woman face as the head.

This spider head condescendingly looked down on Liu Yi, while her mouth spat out human words.

“D\*mn immortal cultivator, I, Thirteen Aunt will turn you into a Chinese Food!”

With that, her mouth spat out a huge amount of spider silks toward Liu Yi, right in his face.

This time, the amount of spider silk....was really too many!

But Liu Yi did not dodge. His feet took a horse stance position and he pulled his right hand back at his waist, and then he gathered all his power.

“Mountain Mist!”

“Whooz!”

A huge white ice palm immediately flew out from Liu Yi's right hand.

This giant ice palm was about three to four meter in size, blocking Liu Yi's entire body before it flew up.

Almost all of those falling spider silks were blocked. Like putting an

umbrella on a rainy day, those spider silks that encountered the giant ice palm were pushed to the side, leaving a big save space for Liu Yi.

“Useless, this can only delay your death.”

That female spider demon Thirteen Aunt sent out waves of strange laughter.

With that, after those spider silks fell to the ground, they constantly spread out, like water spilling on the floor. And then they spread toward Liu Yi's feet.

Liu Yi's figure dodged away from the pursuing spider silks on the ground by jumping up.

The spider silks on the ground quickly caught up, pursuing Liu Yi's feet. They then turned into a giant white hairy hand, wanting to catch Liu Yi by the waist.

Compared to that giant hairy hand made of spider silks, Liu Yi's body was like a toy.

“You cannot escape my palm!”

That female spider demon kept uttering bizarre scream.

The giant hairy white hand was about to catch Liu Yi's waist.

“I want you to freeze!”

But Liu Yi was not careless and reached out his hands; On each fingertip, there was a piece of ice projectile. He then sent out that ice projectiles toward that giant hairy hand.

“Bang, bang, bang!”

Ice bombs constantly blasted out on that palm.

Soon, this huge palm was completely frozen.

Liu Yi fell on top of that huge palm, and then put up a middle finger toward the high above Thirteen Aunt.

“This little spell of yours is useless, come down and have a vigorous fight with me!”



Liu Yi shouted.

“Are you stupid? I am a big monster, and also a skill-cultivator!”

Thirteen Aunt coldly grunted in disdain, “This is just a tip of my skill, an appetizer. I still have some things that will absolutely make you terrified!”

With that, Thirteen Aunt’s huge body suddenly fell to the ground.

Then, hand-sized spiders crawled out from her pores.

These palm-sized spiders were big, but compared to Thirteen Aunt’s figure, they were very small.

Wei Yi, who was still caught in mid-air, watched this scene in stunned silence.

Hand-sized spiders were everywhere, like a mass of dark tide, they crawled in all direction, truly made one’s hair stood on end.

Liu Yi felt that his scalp was tingling, let alone Wei Yi and the beautiful Butterfly demon.

“Really....disgusting....”

Looking at those surging spiders coming at him, Liu Yi condensed out an ice bomb and threw it to the ground.

But unlike the giant hand, these spiders were alive and conscious.

Seeing the ice bomb came at them, they immediately escaped, leaving out an open space. When the ice bomb exploded, it did not affect them.

After the effect of the ice bomb went away, they gathered back together, and then continued to move toward Liu Yi.

His mother....!

These things are getting weird, it seems like my battle experience is still too low compared to this monster!

I still have a lot to practice!

But for 15.000 yuan....Liu Yi, you can do this!

Those spiders quickly climbed up the frozen giant hand and converged toward Liu Yi.

“You will be devoured clean by my children....”

Thirteen Aunt excitedly laughed, “Just wait for your death, die!”

“Do not underestimate us, immortal cultivators.”

Blue crystal awns burst out of Liu Yi’s eyes.

White icy frost started to wrap his whole body like a silvery-white armor.

Meanwhile, the frozen giant hand under his feet began to tear apart, seemingly unable to hold the power that burst out of Liu Yi’s body.

“What, what are you doing....”

The excited Thirteen Aunt suddenly felt a burst of pressure coming from Liu Yi’s body.

The pressure was so huge that her complexion could not help but changed.

“I am digging your children’s grave!”

Liu Yi suddenly roared loudly, and then his whole body jumped up to the air.

In the blink of an eye, he jumped up more than ten meters high, then his body flipped as he started to fell down. His palms were facing the sky while ejecting out white icy frost.

With the aid of this stream of jet-like ice, Liu Yi moved down to the ground like a bullet.

The wind roared in Liu Yi’s ear.

He seemed to enter a kind of extremely mysterious realm.

All of a sudden, in Liu Yi’s eyes, the entire world changed their appearance.

# Chapter 157 Two Conditions

After entering the black and white world, everything seemed quieter.

Although he closed his eyes, Liu Yi can still feel the dense hordes of spiders on the ground.

Liu Yi seemed to sense the vulnerability of those spiders.

“Die!”

His body fell faster and faster. Finally, his body fiercely turned upside down and his feet directly stepped on the ground.

His silvery-white frost armor instantly collapsed.

Liu Yi felt his body suddenly sank, and his feet were somewhat in pain.

But his collapsed frost armor burst out, exploded in all directions.

This blast sent out shock waves around the position where he landed.

All the spiders within a radius of more than ten meters were frozen into ice and then shattered by arrivals of the shock waves.

“My children!”

Thirteen Aunt’s heart was very distressed.

“The next one is you.”

Liu Yi slowly stood up from the mass of shattered spiders, and then pointed his finger toward the huge spider.

“D\*man it! You must die!”

Thirteen Aunt roared. A giant hairy claw swung down to smash Liu Yi’s face.

This spider’s leg was large. Liu Yi felt as if the arm of the crane was about to pound him.

But he did not flinch. The immortal strength inside his body instantly

erupted.

“Bam!”

Liu Yi stretched out his hand, keeping it off away from his head. It turned out Liu Yi’s small human hand can abruptly catch that huge hairy spider claw.

A surge of airwave burst out from Liu Yi’s feet.

This was the power of the body-cultivator!

Even if it was the true body of Thirteen Aunt, if it went against him head-on....She was not his opponent.

“Open!”

The immortal force surged out from Liu Yi’s body, wandering around from top to bottom, making his internal very comfortable.

This force dispelled all the unpleasant feeling in his body.

After clutching Thirteen Aunt’s hairy claw, Liu Yi loudly roared, and fissures suddenly appeared on the ground under his feet as he exerted his strength.

“Aaah!”

Thirteen Aunt issued a series of scream, and then her body soared into the air. It turned out, she was sent flying by Liu Yi.

“Boom!”

Thirteen Aunt did not understand how, but her body was severely smashed on the ground.

The surrounding spider webs constantly swung by the winds that came from the impact, seemingly about to be blown away at any moment.

Wei Yi looked silly watching the whole scene.

What is happening!

Did Ten Steps To Milk A Man take drugs?

How could he be so fierce!

When I first met him, he is a newcomer just like me. But now, he can actually beat a four star perverted monster!

Am....Am I dreaming?

With Ten Steps To Milk A Man's power, obviously, he can do the D level task alone!

Why would he want to team up with me to do the D-level task?

I really can't imagine why....

"Who, who exactly are you!"

Thirteen Aunt was lying on the ground. Her huge body was extremely hurt. She felt as if her whole body broke into pieces.

She can't even have the strength to crawl up. And can only watch in horror as Liu Yi shouted at her.

"I am here to punish you."

Liu Yi said, and then jumped up. He leaped toward Thirteen Aunt's body, stepping on her massive spider body.

"No! You can't kill me!"

Thirteen Aunt hysterically screamed, "Since I was a little spider, I have worked so hard and spent a huge amount of effort on my cultivation....You, You can't kill me...."

"Then what about all those people you killed?"

Liu Yi pointed to those bones around them, "Do you think their lives were easy? You ruthlessly deprived them of their lives, have you ever thought of them?"

"I am a demon....It is natural for a demon to kill human!"

Thirteen Aunt justified herself.

"You are wrong."

Liu Yi shook his head, "In this world, demons are divided into good and evil. Human is also like that, some people are wicked and even worse than the demon."

He then remembered Huang Zongyi, as well as Xu Tianliang, and the blood in his body could not help but turn cold.

“And some of the demon....Are much better than human....”

After saying that, Liu Yi's body started to emit blue-white energy.

“In your next life, be a good monster.”

Liu Yi said.

“Don't kill me, I beg you! I am willing to be your servant for you to use! Anything you want me to do, I, I will do it!”

Thirteen Aunt's eyes were full of fear.

Liu Yi looked at Thirteen Aunt's massive body and then toward the few pairs of green eyes on her forehead....

“I am sorry, my taste is not that heavy.”

With that, he stretched out his hand, ready to kill this harmful monster.

“I don't want to die!”

Thirteen Aunt suddenly opened her mouth wide and spat out a large amount of black liquid toward Liu Yi.

This liquid has a horrible stench. Before he even touched it, it already made Liu Yi gasped for breath.

“Liu Yi, watch out! This thing is her venom!”

Lin Tong quickly reminded him.

Actually, it was unnecessary for Lin Tong to remind him, Liu Yi already felt that this stuff was not a good thing....

He immediately struck out his palm.

“Mountain Mist!”

A huge ice palm went out in front of Liu Yi's body, covering him from the venom.

“Pshh....csh, csh, csh....”

When the venom hit that ice palm, it corroded the ice, creating many holes

on that huge ice palm.

Liu Yi was alarmed.

If this venom touched my body....

I am afraid, by now, I would already turn into bones.

Liu Yi could not help but think that he was lucky for having to understand the third palm strike of the Great Brilliant Sun Palm....

Otherwise....

“D\*mn! Ahh!

Because her trick failed to hit Liu Yi, Thirteen Aunt uttered a screeching and unwilling roar.

“Ice Bomb!”

Liu Yi will not give her the opportunity to launch a sneak attack again.

His right hand threw out several ice bombs, which hit Thirteen Aunt’s head.

“Pop, pop, pop!”

Those ice bombs immediately exploded, directly freezing Thirteen Aunt’s head.

Then Liu Yi walked to the front of Thirteen Aunt’s head, reached out both of his hands, and then grabbed her gigantic head.

“I want you to get down!”

Liu Yi loudly roared. A huge amount of strength erupted out of his hands.

He firmly held that woman’s head, and then abruptly pulled out the head from its spider body.

“Crak!”

“Poof!”

Crimson blood poured into the air.

Demonic energy flew out along with the blood.

Lin Tong rushed to open her mouth, desperately trying to absorb this

demonic energy.

Cannot be wasted.... She thought.

To Lin Ting, this was an excellent supplement!

Moreover, this energy came from a four star monster, so this was perfect for Lin Tong, who was also a four star.

“There is also internal alchemy, this can’t be wasted!”

Lin Tong suddenly thought. She immediately turned into a red light and penetrated that huge spider body.

Liu Yi did not know what his Fox sister intended to do, but soon, Lin Tong emerged out from the spider’s body while holding a purple-black tennis-table-like ball with her mouth.

“Take this and swallow it!”

Lin Tong threw this little ball to Liu Yi’s hand.

When he grabbed it, he suddenly felt a burst of icy cold on his right hand, like he was holding his own ice bomb.

“What is this?”

Liu Yi was somewhat puzzled.

“Don’t ask too much, just eat it!”

Lin Tong gave Liu Yi a glare.

“Oh....ok....”

Liu Yi never doubted his fox sister’s words.

He opened his mouth, pinched his nose, and swallowed that ball like it was a medicine.

Unexpectedly, when the ball entered his mouth, it was like an ice cream ball, it suddenly melted and entered his belly.

A moment later, a refreshing feeling randomly walked inside his body from top to bottom.

At that moment, he felt as comfortable as bathing in a hot bath.



All the pores in his body seemed to open, feeling extremely high.

What the....

Did Fox sister just give me marijuana?

“This is the spider’s internal alchemy essence, the most important part of her body. After you ate it, it will help your cultivation.”

Lin Tong did not know what Liu Yi was thinking, so she explained it to him.

But at this time, the force which was wandering around inside Liu Yi’s body quickly gathered in Liu Yi’s pubic area.

Not long after that, a little golden egg-like thing gradually condensed out in Liu Yi’s pubic region.

Lin Tong was still unaware of this and continued to talk.

“Each of the demon race has its own internal alchemy, this internal alchemy is the essence of their entire cultivation. If there is no internal alchemy, they will return to their original form. After having internal alchemy, they will start to have various magical abilities. And from that time, if they continued to cultivate unceasingly, after passing the tribulation, they can become immortal demon....”

As she spoke, Liu Yi’s eyes emitted out two bright lights.

“Sure enough....I feel like my strength stabilized a lot....My third star is getting full.”

Liu Yi did not pay attention to the condensation of internal alchemy in his pubic region and excitedly said to Lin Tong.

“Now I have more confidence....Fox sister, when I break through the four star, I will try to liberate you!”

Liberate your sister!

Lin Tong cursed in her heart.

After losing the internal alchemy, that spider’s giant body gradually disintegrated.

The surrounding scene also began to collapse. The illusion slowly

vanished.

Liu Yi glanced around at his surrounding. They were now back to that small abandoned alley.

Wei Yi and that beautiful Butterfly demon were released from the spider silks and the two beautiful women successively fell down.

“Ten Steps To Milk A Man....”

Wei Yi rushed forward, grabbed Liu Yi by the collar, and charmingly scolded.

“You lied to me!”

“Who lied to you?”

Liu Yi thought, What’s with this girl, is she crazy?

“You are so powerful! But still acting like a newcomer! When we killed that werewolf, why didn’t you show your strength!”

“I just entered the third-star, this is new to me too....”

Liu Yi pried open Wei Yi’s hand and explained, “I started my cultivation less than a month....”

“Bullsh\*t!”

Wei Yi couldn’t help spat out a foul language.

Cultivate less than a month?

Are you kidding me!

In less than a month, he is able to cultivate to the third star?

There is no precedent for this! Even a fairy would not be able to do this!

Wei Yi suddenly rolled her eyes and said, “In short, you lied to me. You have to compensate for my psychological damage!”

“What? What compensation?”

Liu Yi showed a bitter face.

“First, later on, you must team up with me to do the task together, and I don’t want to hear any complaint!”

Wei Yi secretly proud of herself, Humph, humph, this is called taking an opportunity!

“Fine....No problem....We are a team after all....”

Teaming up with Wei Yi was good because she was from the immortal cultivation world, which she knew more than him.

“Secondly, the previous bet is void, I am not going to call you my husband!”

“You are not going to call me what?”

“My husband!”

“I understand, my wife.”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 158

## Chapter 158 Spirit Animal

“Bast\*rd, you took advantage of me!”

Wei Yi suddenly stamped her foot and grabbed Liu Yi by the neck, trying to strangle him.

“I did nothing wrong....hey....you said it yourself....”

“Hateful....you deliberately set me up!”

Wei Yi was about to go insane. She had never called another man in such an intimate way!

But today, she was actually taken advantage by that d\*mn Ten Steps To Milk A Man!

“I am just teasing you....How could I know that you actually fell for it!”

“Hateful, who would have thought that you are actually so crafty!”

Wei Yi shouted, “Hateful, today, one of us must die!”

“Stop it....we have yet to divide the booty!”

Thinking about the money, Liu Yi immediately said to her.

“What do you mean by booty! It’s called a bounty!”

Wei Yi mercilessly rolled her eyes at Liu Yi, “You, this guy....How could you be so greedy for money!”

“This is me, fighting for my own future! And also saving for my wife!”

Liu Yi had the idea of buying a house so that he can marry his wife, but thinking about the current house price, he felt a burst of pressure in his heart....

A mountain-sized pressure!

“You want to save it for your wife?”

Wei Yi looked at Liu Yi in surprised, An immortal cultivator is still talking

about a wife?

A harmonious couple will naturally be together, how could a cultivator will care about it so much?

“Of course!”

Liu Yi hastily said, “If you marry, won’t you ask for money?”

“When I marry, of course I will ask for money....wait!”

Wei Yi suddenly grabbed Liu Yi’s neck, “But I am not your wife! You hear me, I am not your wife!”

“Okay, okay....No need to be angry at me....Us immortal cultivators must unite....We are a team you know....”

Liu Yi appeased the hot-tempered Wei Yi.

“Humph!”

Wei Yi straightened her somewhat crumpled clothes, and then looked at the huge spider corpse on the ground, and said.

“That Thirteen Aunt is back to his original form, I must take her corpse back to report our completion of the task.”

With that, she took out a spatial ring from her pocket and put that spider’s corpse into it.

Liu Yi seemed very envious.

Be patient Liu Yi, you only need to continue your practice....And then you can learn this spatial ring technique.

At that time, you will no longer need to bring your things in a bag everywhere.

“We still have a little monster here, we need to take care of her first.”

Wei Yi, under Liu Yi’s envious eyes, took the corpse of Thirteen Aunt, turned around and saw the nearby trembling beautiful Butterfly Demon.

The face of this beautiful Butterfly Demon was pale, noticing that Wei Yi was looking at her, she immediately felt cold.

“Miao!”

Tuantuan left Wei Yi's body to lie on her shoulder. It called out the nearby beautiful Butterfly Demon.

The Butterfly Demon's tremble was getting worse.

"She is innocent, we don't need to deal with her."

Liu Yi hastily said.

"Humph, she is also an evildoer!"

Wei Yi bluntly said, "Moreover, she definitely has an inseparable part in the death of so many innocent people!"

"She was threatened by Thirteen Aunt, moreover, she has tried to protect us."

Liu Yi remembered when they just entered this dark alley, this beautiful Butterfly Demon constantly tried to scare him away.

It also happened in the game room, where she desperately warned him.

"Humph, but she enticed me to play the game, didn't you forget it?"

Wei Yi reminded Liu Yi.

"That one....Is on Thirteen Aunt's...."

The beautiful Butterfly Demon weakly said from the side, "When Thirteen Aunt saw you....She said that you are her type....So, she told me to seduce you...."

"Gee, so charming eh."

Liu Yi clicked his tongue in amazement, "Even a Spider Demon took a fancy on you!"

"You....go to hell...."

Wei Yi's face was red as she cried, "No matter what, she is still a monster, so she must die!"

With that, she turned toward that beautiful Butterfly Demon, told her civet to turn into a flame, and prepared to burn her.

The beautiful Butterfly Demon was terrified, she was just a small demon and basically cannot run away from this attack.

As the pressure from the civet on Wei Yi's shoulder continued to build, she can only crouch there, trembled, waiting for her death.

"Stop!"

But Liu Yi suddenly went in front of the beautiful Butterfly Demon, looking at Wei Yi with a frown.

"What are you doing? She is a demon!"

Wei Yi looked at Liu Yi in surprise.

"If you think like that, it means I am also a demon, why don't you kill me then."

Liu Yi pointed to his chest and said.

"Hateful, Ten Steps To Milk A Man, don't take advantage of someone else's weakness!"

Wei Yi was mad, How could this guy be so unreasonable!

How could he conspire with a demon!

Master always said, as long as one is a demon, one will always be a danger to a human!

Therefore, even if they are just a small demon, you absolutely can't let them go.

"Stop creating a scene, get away from her and let me do my job!"

Wei Yi glared at Liu Yi and fiercely said.

The flame on Tuantuan the civet's mouth on Wei Yi's shoulder was getting increasingly concentrated.

"Sir....you don't have to save me...."

The beautiful Butterfly Demon suddenly pulled Liu Yi's clothes and weakly said.

"In any case....I am just a small Butterfly Demon...."

"I have decided to save you, and that's that!" Liu Yi bluntly said, "Listen to what I say, hide behind me, and no one will dare to put their hands on you!"

“.....”

The little Butterfly Demon's eyes suddenly wet.

No one has ever been kind to her....

Before all this happened, she was just an ordinary Butterfly, but one day, the alignment of the five planets happened, making her absorbed the energy and turned her into a demon. Thus, she became a little Butterfly Demon.

But then, she accidentally crashed into Thirteen Aunt's cobwebs. After Thirteen Aunt threatened her life, fearing for her safety, she let Thirteen Aunt hid behind her and comply with her order to seduce humans.

In her previous experience dealing with people, especially the men, all of them wanted to have sex with her.

But the man in front of her....was willing to save her....

This man was very strong, so strong that he can even defeat Thirteen Aunt. But this man was actually willing to save a little Butterfly Demon like her.

It turns out....someone is willing to save me....

“Ten Steps To Milk A Man, enough of this!”

Wei Yi could no longer hold on anymore and shouted, “If you don't get out of the way, I'll hit you!”

“Come on then!”

Liu Yi fearlessly said, “I said, as long as I am here, no one can touch her!”

“Ten Steps To Milk A Man!”

Wei Yi was about to explode in rage.

But no matter how angry she was, she will not attack Liu Yi with her power.

When Wei Yi was about to withdraw her attack, a dark shadow suddenly fell from the sky.

“Die....”

This dark shadow eerily roared. Like a black lightning, he suddenly struck



Liu Yi's back.

"Watch out!"

Wei Yi was surprised and immediately reminded Liu Yi.

But it seemed too late.

That black shadow has already arrived behind Liu Yi's back.

Liu Yi wasn't paying attention, still putting all his attention on Wei Yi's body. He thought that she wanted to distract him.

But at this time, the beautiful Butterfly Demon who has been hiding behind Liu Yi all this time suddenly moved.

She suddenly jumped and stood between that dark shadow and Liu Yi.

"Poof!"

That dark palm was covered with blood as it pierced the belly of that beautiful Butterfly Demon.

Right now, Liu Yi finally realized that something was wrong. He turned around, only to see the beautiful Butterfly Demon slowly stumbled to the ground.

"You...."

Liu Yi's heart was shocked, he did not expect that this Butterfly Demon would actually sacrifice herself to protect him.

This was something that truly surprised Liu Yi.

After the sneak attack failed, the dark shadow flew to the nearby wall, constantly wandering around as if looking for the next attack opportunity.

The civet loudly screamed and jumped to the ground. Its body fully covered with flame.

"Thank you....for caring about me...."

The beautiful Butterfly Demon was lying in Liu Yi's arms while her mouth was dripping with blood.

"To....be able to protect you once....I am content....."

“D\*mn....” Liu Yi looked at the increasingly frail body of the beautiful Butterfly Demon, feeling really useless!

Just now I vowed to protect her, but now, I can’t even keep her life!

What kind of cultivator is this!

Liu Yi, Liu Yi....

You are truly a waste!

“Liu Yi, use this formula and save her!”

At this time, Lin Tong bit Liu Yi on the nose.

Big installation technique was launched.

A pile of complex text suddenly appeared in Liu Yi’s mind.

This was obviously some kind of a method!

Liu Yi subconsciously lifted the middle finger on his right hand according to the method. After he bit that finger, dropping his essence and blood, he then pressed that finger on the forehead of that beautiful Butterfly Demon.

In that moment, a strange seal symbol appeared on the forehead of the beautiful Butterfly Demon.

This symbol unceasingly emitted a golden light, which quickly wrapped the whole body of that beautiful Butterfly Demon.

“You....you actually....”

Standing behind him, Wei Yi looked at all of this with a silly look. She did not expect Liu Yi would actually use this method to save the Butterfly Demon!

“From today onwards, she is your spirit animal.”

Lin Tong’s voice slowly entered Liu Yi’s ears.

“Your spiritual force will nourish her. But she can no longer turn into a human. Starting today, she is your weapon.”

Spiritual force? Spirit animal?

Liu Yi blinked his eyes, looking at the beautiful Butterfly Demon who now

has turned into a beautiful multicolored Butterfly. The Butterfly slowly landed on his finger, constantly flapping its wing.

Is this my own Spirit Animal?

Then, from today on....wouldn't I be a part-time spirit-cultivator?

"Are you crazy!"

Wei Yi shouted at him from the back, "You are actually trying to do a double-cultivation! You are wasting your strength!"

"....."

Liu Yi did not answer her because he and Lin Tong were the only people who understand his real situation.

His spiritual strength was really big, because his three forces constantly replenished it, like an engine that was powered by a limitless amount of gasoline.

With his spiritual strength, he can even raise several spiritual animals at once.

The three forces that joined together inside his body was not simply a problem of '1+1+1.'

These three forces complemented each other, each will stimulate or act as a catalyst to the other two, which was truly 'went against the heaven's will.'

That multicolored Butterfly seemed to be very happy, constantly patting its wing on Liu Yi's index finger.

Liu Yi seemed to be able to feel the thought of this Butterfly. The two of them felt as if they were as close as flesh and blood.

"Don't worry, I am not in danger...."

Liu Yi looked at the little Butterfly, and said with a smile, "You want to protect me? Good....This time, we are going to work together!"

With that, Liu Yi held out his hand. That butterfly flapped its wings, turned into a multicolored light, landed on Liu Yi's palm, and then wound around his arm.

“Au-au!”

That dark shadow, who circled around the wall, once again jumped to the ground.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 159

## Chapter 159 Afraid Of Illness

A multicolored chain wound around Liu Yi's right arm.

But the dark shadow moved really fast, so fast that Liu Yi was unable to see him clearly.

The chain on his arm automatically flew, turned into a multicolored light and directly entwined that dark shadow.

"Klak!"

That chain finally exuded a sound.

"Au, au!"

The dark shadow was instantly tied by the chain and pulled in front of Liu Yi.

Liu Yi can clearly see the face of the man in front of him.

The man's whole body was dark, his face was grim, and blood came out of his eyes.

Traces of sinister ghost qi continued to gush out of his body.

Every time he growled, he will give off a unit of evil wind.

Moreover, his scream made people chilled to the bone.

This feeling was familiar to Liu Yi....

This is an evil ghost!

Liu Yi stared with his eyes to look this evil ghost in front of him.

The ghost actually seemed familiar to him....Isn't this....Huang Zhongyi? (The psycho killer) Huang Zongyi actually turned into an evil ghost?

Is it that easy to turn into an evil ghost after someone died?

"You, this guy....When you are still alive, you are not a good man , after dying, you want to continue to do evil?"

Liu Yi was holding the multicolored chain, which firmly tied the opposite evil ghost.

“You....die....”

After Huang Zongyi turned into an evil ghost, his thought became a lot simpler.

And his only thought now was to kill Liu Yi.

“Since now you have become an evil ghost....Let me help you cross into the afterlife....”

Liu Yi said, tightened the multicolored chain, and condensed out his strength on his left-hand palm, ready to send Huang Zongyi into the underworld.

But at this time, Huang Zongyi suddenly opened his mouth.

After he turned into an evil ghost, he was able to do a lot of things that seemed impossible by ordinary people’s eyes.

His mouth suddenly turned big, while a black hand suddenly stuck out of his mouth and swung to claw Liu Yi’s face.

Liu Yi quickly dodged his head to the side. That hand almost scratch his face, instead, it directly grabbed the wall behind Liu Yi.

“Bam!”

A large piece of wall directly broke by this black hand.

“What the...This claw is quite fierce!”

Liu Yi suddenly looked silly.

“Tuantuan!”

Wei Yi’s reaction was not slow, she quickly ordered her Tuantuan to burst into flame and charge toward the evil ghost of Huang Zongyi.

“Wu, wu, wu!”

Crimson flame burned the body of Huang Zongyi which was tied by the chain.

Although the strength of an evil ghost was really strong, he can’t break

free from Liu Yi's chain. Therefore, he can only stand in place as Tuantuan's fire burned him.

"Au, au, au!"

The flame made the evil ghost suffer, his body constantly distorted.

The colorful chain tied him in place, not letting him dodge and attack.

But all of a sudden, a black arm suddenly grew out from his body.

In the blink of an eye, this guy already has more than a hundred arms.

"Holy sh....he really turned into a ghost...."

Liu Yi suddenly discovered that a hand suddenly grew out of Huang Zongyi foot and tried to grab his leg.

"Go away!"

Liu Yi lifted one of his foot and stamped down.

White icy-frost immediately exploded.

Those palms on the ground were suddenly frozen into ice and began to break.

"Women....kill....you also....kill...."

Huang Zongyi seemed to change.

His body suddenly began to swell, making Liu Yi hear the constant distress sound from the beautiful Butterfly Demon.

Because of this, he hastily withdrew the multicolored chain back to his hand, which released the evil ghost.

When he looked at the chain, Liu Yi was surprised to find there were several cracks on it!

Huang Zongyi's multiple arms also tried to grab the civet Tuantuan. The scared Wei Yi rushed to call Tuantuan back.

Meanwhile, Huang Zongyi's body continued to expand and, in the blink of an eye, a more than three meters high evil ghost, whose body covered with multiple arms, stood before them.

“This evil ghost....actually transform.”

Wei Yi, being a person from the immortal cultivator world, naturally knew more about this.

“All of a sudden, this evil ghost has the strength of a third-star cultivator....”

“It’s okay, it does not matter to me.”

Liu Yi has just beaten a four star Spider demon by himself, so what he said was true.

Moreover, he just ate the Spider demon’s inner alchemy. So, right now, he felt his strength has consolidated and progressed a lot.

As it happens, there was this guy, who he can test his increased power with!

“Die....”

That Huang Zongyi wailed, his arm stretched out toward Liu Yi, trying to grab him.

The power of this claw was known to Liu Yi.

He can’t block it head on....Otherwise, he would certainly be crushed.

At this time, the chain on Liu Yi’s arm re-transformed into a colorful Butterfly and landed on his finger.

“Magical Butterfly!”

Liu Yi launched a spell that was ‘pre-installed’ from the beautiful Butterfly Demon.

Suddenly, the multicolored Butterfly flapped her wings, flying toward the face of that evil ghost.

That evil ghost subconsciously stretched out his hand, wanting to beat that multicolored Butterfly away.

But that Butterfly was actually an illusion. This was the well-versed illusion technique of the beautiful Butterfly Demon.

Using this opportunity, Liu Yi suddenly jumped toward that evil ghost and



struck his palm on the head of that evil ghost.

“Boom!”

A majestic palm strength directly poured into that evil ghost's head.

Immortal power can be said to be the nemesis of the evil ghost, although it did not have the Buddha's power which was the real evil ghost subduer, this power was definitely hated by the evil ghost.

“Ao, ao, ao!”

The evil ghost suddenly took two steps back. His huge body hit the wall behind him.

And the entire wall crushed.

The evil ghost roared twice, sitting on that broken wall, unable to get up.

“Come here again, and I'll send you to the underworld.”

Liu Yi clenched his palm and coldly said.

If he let this kind of evil ghost free, it would only cause harm to others. So he must remove him as soon as possible.

“Hihihi....Such a fierce little brother....”

At this time, a woman's laughter suddenly rang.

This laughter penetrated everyone's ears, with an irresistibly seductive voice, which resounded throughout the alley.

“Who is it!”

Wei Yi looked around vigilantly, “Evildoer, where are you hiding? Quickly come out!”

“Hihi....This chick has a great temper....No wonder you like to dress like men.”

The opposite party seemed able to see through Wei Yi's disguise as she laughingly said.

Liu Yi and Wei Yi looked at each other.

This is bad....But since she doesn't want to come out.... Liu Yi thought

Better finish that evil ghost first!

Liu Yi wanted to avoid further complications, so he stepped on ice skates and rushed toward that evil ghost.

“Fierce little brother, that one is sister’s toy, I can’t let you destroy him.”

Just when Liu Yi approached that evil ghost, several black lights suddenly flew up from the ground.

Then, a lot of dark figures suddenly rushed toward Liu Yi.

“So many ghosts....”

Lin Tong could not help but exclaim, “The opposite party must be good at controlling the ghosts, a ghost controller cultivator....”

“Get away from me!”

Liu Yi threw out several ice bombs toward the lower part of those spirits, freezing all of them to the ground.

“Little brother seems to have some skills....Oops, it seems like a Mysterious Icy Qi.”

While she spoke, Liu Yi suddenly felt something appeared behind him.

For the first time, Liu Yi subconsciously wore his face mask.

I absolutely can’t let her see my face....

“Ten Steps To Milk A Man, watch your back!”

At the same time, Wei Yi’s warning voice also came.

Behind him, the sense of terror deepened.

Liu Yi felt as if there were thousands hands of ghost grabbing him from behind, it was very creepy.

All the fine hair on his body stood up.

Unconsciously, he turned away, but was surprised to actually see a beautiful woman.

He thought that it would be some kind of terrifying evil ghost, but never thought it was actually a stunningly beautiful woman!

This beautiful woman has crescent moon eyebrows and almond eyes, luscious red lips and white teeth, and her eyes were alluring.

Those kind kind of eyes can easily electrify many male students.

Moreover, her most prominent feature was....her really huge breast....

Even Wang Lele....Can't compare to her!

Holy mother, is that real?

This thing can only be found on a cow!

That pair of plumpness were as high as the mountain, making Liu Yi wanted to climb and conquer her....

"Little brother....Where are you looking at? What do you think about sister's chest? Are they good?"

Those words from the beauty almost made Liu Yi spurt out blood.

This beauty is definitely something....

"Who are you?"

Even though the one in front of him was a beautiful woman, it did not decrease his sense of terror.

"Hihi....Little brother is really impatient....We just met, but you already want to know my name."

The beauty said, and squeezed her chest with her arms. It's deep ravine almost made Liu Yi's eyeballs pop out.

"The next step....You want to know the size of sister's cup....Next, you want to climb on top of sister...."

"Pei! Shameless! You slut!"

The nearby Wei Yi suddenly cursed.

"Don't you have any face! D\*mn it! Stay away from Ten Steps To Milk A Man!"

"Little beauty seems to be jealous."

That big breasted beauty said. Suddenly, she put her hand on Liu Yi's

shoulder, pressed her body against Liu Yi, and intimately said in his ear.

“She wants sister to stay away from you....But my dear little brother....Are you willing to stay away from sister....?”

Her exquisite sound felt like someone was rubbing his ear, making Liu Yi's whole body tingled with numbness....

His reaction was quite normal, after all, his 'little brother' still hasn't tasted that forbidden fruit....

Under such temptation....He seemed to have no ability to resist.

At this time, two little people came out to watch the show.

“Liu Yi, you can't give in to her temptation!”

The little people who wore a suit and a pair of glasses quickly said, “We don't know the origin of this woman, whether she is an enemy or not! You can't enter her honey trap!”

“F\*ck, what are you afraid of, you d\*ckhead!”

Another little people with chest full of hair spout out a mouthful of curse.

“This woman is too damn pretty, Liu Yi, are you a f\*cking man or not? You can't just give her up! It doesn't matter if she is a friend or a foe, just use your strength to conquer her!”

This time, the little devil truly showed his unruliness....

Liu Yi actually somewhat agreed with him.

“No! Definitely not!”

The little people with a suit touched his glasses and reminded Liu Yi again.

“F\*ck, are you a man or not!”

“Of course I am a man, but a man can't just give in to the temptation from a random woman and climb on top of her....Because, there is something very, very important.”

“What is it?”

The little devil curiously asked.

“Because we didn’t bring any condom, I am afraid we are going to get sick!”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 160

## Chapter 160 It's You!

"F\*ck!"

The evil little person immediately expressed his admiration, "You're the man, I've lost!"

With that, the evil little person disappeared.

The glasses little person smiled and then disappeared.

Liu Yi backed away two steps, looked at the enchanting beauty in front of him, and then said.

"Who are you, why are saving this evil ghost?"

"Hihi....Little brother is having too many thoughts."

That beauty pushed up her breasts, lightly covered her mouth, and then enchantingly laughed.

"But what sister really hate is to answer a question....If you really want to know the answer....You have to come here and conquer sister first...."

"D\*mn it! You, this woman, are too shameless!"

Listening from the side, Wei Yi's face was flushed. She really can't take it anymore. She held out her hand and made her civet Tuantuan turn into a flaming gun. He took that flaming pistol and aimed it at the beauty.

"Sister is talking with this young handsome lad and do not want to be disturbed by aother woman!"

That beauty did not seem to feel the pressure from Wei Yi. She leisurely raised her right hand and stuck it into the gully on her chest.

Finally, under Liu Yi's widely staring eyes, that beauty pulled out a black pirate-like skull.

That skull's mouth suddenly opened and released a gray smoke.

This beauty is releasing some kind of spell with that skull!

Before Liu Yi could understand what just happened, from the side, he heard the sudden scream from Wei Yi.

Her body was put into mid-air by a bunch of arms that were coming out from the ground.

“To tear the body of a beauty into several parts....That would look ugly indeed.”

The beauty rubbed her skull and sighed with emotion.

“Let her go!”

Seeing Wei Yi in immediate danger, Liu Yi immediately flew into rage.

At the same time, he was secretly afraid and alarmed.

The level of this beauty....Must be really high....

I am....probably not her match!

But, no matter what, I can't let her hurt Wei Yi!

Liu Yi felt today he was like a firefighter, unceasingly saving people from danger.

He lifted his finger and the multicolored Butterfly who was lying on his finger suddenly turned into multicolored light.

But at this time, the beautiful Butterfly demon did not turn into a chain.

Her two wings continued to stretch out, and then gradually turned into a pair of colorful curved blades.

In the blink of an eye, this little Butterfly has turned into a double blade and appeared on Liu Yi's hands.

Turning the spirit animal into a weapon was truly wonderful.

Moreover, Liu Yi was a bit surprised that the multicolor Butterfly could actually turn into more than one type of weapon.

He raised that pair of curved blades and threw them at the opposite huge-breasted beauty.

“Whirl, whirl, whirl!”

The curved blades continued to rotate – it was as if they were cutting the air – and went straight toward the huge-breasted beauty.

“Yo, handsome lad, can’t wait to conquer this sister?”

That beauty clapped her hands.

Many ghosts suddenly appeared and piled on each other to make a wall in front of that beauty.

Can ghosts turn into a wall?

Or are they the five chief demon? (Five chief demon from the folklore) Liu Yi was surprised.

Wow, this spell is really amazing....

This ghost-base spell....Should be the derivative of Earth-base spell!

Liu Yi has to admit that these spells were very powerful.

“Bam, bam, bam!”

But the curved blades of the beautiful Butterfly demon were not too shabby either. That thick wall were crushed by that swirling double curved blades.

But after they shattered that wall, they seemed to have lost their power. After they flew in an arc trajectory, they went back toward Liu Yi’s hands.

Liu Yi can feel that the beautiful Butterfly demon was exhausted.

“Hihi....Little brother’s spell is quite naughty. However, to deal with sister, they still fall short by a long margin.”

With that, that beauty gently rubbed the skull in her hand.

Black smoke came out from that skull’s mouth, and then floated into Huang Zongyi, the evil ghost’s nose. Soon, that Huang Zongyi stood up again.

His soul became more real as they condensate, and his eyes exuded crimson light.

At this moment, Liu Yi suddenly felt he was no longer that evil ghost’s opponent....

What kind of spell is that? How could this woman able to make this evil



ghost so powerful?

“Big sister really likes to feed her ghost servant....But big sister does not know if this ghost servant could subdue my naughty little brother.”

She said, and then controlled that Huang Zongyi, who was now transformed into an evil ghost, with her skull.

That evil ghost beat his own chest, roared, and then swoop up toward Liu Yi.

Liu Yi felt an enormous pressure, pressuring his body, which made him somewhat breathless....

Am I....going to die here?

No way!

I, Liu Yi am not going to be stopped here....

I still want to release Fox sister ....I also want to save Wang Yuzheng's mom....em, I still have to accompany Murong Die and Wang Lele to swim, and I still have to go to College....And want to date a girlfriend....

At this moment, many things passed through Liu Yi's mind.

In the dying moment, many people's mind will flash a lot of things.

There was nothing quicker than a person's thought.

Especially in this struggling for life moment, Liu Yi's mind became 'overclocked.'

Fusion....

If I want to survive....It seems like this is the only way....

Flames seemed to burn in Liu Yi's eyes.

The power of the Red Blood Sutra Code began to ramp up within his body.

In front of Liu Yi, the world suddenly turned into a black and white world.

His body began to boil as the power of flame in his body began to ignite.

But as Liu Yi was about to use his maximum power toward his enemy, a dark shadow suddenly flew past him from behind.

“Woosh!”

This dark shadow swooped down on that evil ghost.

Suddenly, Huang Zongyi’s body stopped in mid-air, and then slowly split in two.

The dark shadow landed on the ground in front of Liu Yi and turned into an attractive female in a black coat.

“Aw, aw, aw!”

Huang Zongyi sounded out several shrill screams and then his body began to vaporize and slowly disappeared.

“I never thought that I would encounter a remnant of the Great God Cult in this dirty alley....

That woman put her hands inside her coat pocket, standing there brimming with confidence.

This beauty is....

Li Biyue!

Liu Yi never thought that someday, he would encounter this woman again!

“Looks like I saved you again.”

Li Biyue turned her head. Her beautiful face looked straight at Liu Yi.

“Remember, you owe me a favor.”

What....

Liu Yi thought to himself, The most annoying thing in life is to owe other people a favor!

But where did this girl come from?

“It’s you!”

Seeing Li Biyue, on the opposite, the huge breasted beauty’s face suddenly fell.

She tightly held her skull, seemingly very vigilant.

“Hehe....Jiang Qini, I have been watching you for a very long time.”

Li Biyue smiled as she looked at the big breasted beauty and said, “What are your Great God Sect trying to do? Why would you suddenly create these many ghost servants? Could it be....this has something to do with the Twelve Zodiac plan?”

“Ai, what are you talking about? I really don’t understand them at all.”

Jiang Qini pretended to be ignorant, blinked her eyes, and then said, “Moreover, our Great God Religion thing has nothing to do with you, right?”

“Great God Sect is an evil sect, everybody has the right to execute them.”

Li Biyue coldly responded, “Jiang Qini, I don’t know how many men died in your hands. Everytime you, this demon, see a man, you will seduce them and suck their yang essence. But today you are out of luck, because I, Li Biyue, am here.”

What the f....

Sucking the Yang essence!

Is such a good thing really exist?

Liu Yi could not help but swallow his saliva.

“Low class!”

Noticing Liu Yi’s throat movement, Wei Yi suddenly called out from the side.

F\*ck....

I’m not doing it on purpose! It’s just a natural reaction, okay?

Liu Yi said in his heart, Who told this Jiang Qini to be this seductive....

This is the so-called ‘If I die under a skirt, I can still flirt as a ghost’ ....

Perhaps a lot of men would risk their life for a night with this Jiang Qini.

“Li Biyue, even if you’re an A-level hunter, but I, Jiang Qini, am not afraid of you.”

“Oh? So you have the confidence to defeat me?”

Since the start, a confident smile has been hanging on the corner of Li Biyue’s mouth.

Jiang Qini squeezed up her breasts and then said.

“At least, on the cup level, you are not my match.”

Liu Yi noticed the obvious twitch on Li Biyue’s mouth.

Um, although Li Biyue’s legs are pretty slim, it looks like her chest is not that big....Moreover....It seems to be somewhat flat....

“Very good....”

Li Biyue stretched out her right hand, which was holding a black blade. A trembling sound seemed to come from that black blade.

“Today, let me cut your chest in two....Prepare yourself!”

Wow....This Li Biyue’s taste is actually very heavy....

But it seemed like Jiang Qini did not want to entangle with Li Biyue.

She waved her hand to call out a lot of ghosts to become dozens of walls in front of her.

“Do you think you can block me with this?....My target is your pair of rotten meat!”

Li Biyue waved her right hand at Jiang Qini.

Suddenly, a long black awn sprang up from the ground. It was as if a giant black blade shot up from the ground, sweeping away those dozen walls.

Then, this dozen of walls was split into two halves.

But behind these walls, there was no shadow of Jiang Qini.

“Humph, people from the Great God Cult can actually run really quick!”

Li Biyue withdrew her right hand back and put it in her coat pocket, looking very unhappy.

It appeared that she was very unhappy because she can’t cut Jiang Qini’s chest in two.

The ghosts’ hands that were holding Wei Yi in mid-air were also gone. She fell down to the ground, gasping for breath.

Tonight is so thrilling....

Again and again, I rushed into an enemy that I can't fight....

If not for Ten Steps To Milk A Man....I would have died!

I can't allow this to happen again....When I get back, I must endure the hardship of training with master in the cave....

When I come out again, I will make Ten Steps To Milk A Man amaze with my strength!

Humph, that's right, I will do that!

"How could you be in this place?"

Li Biyue turned around and asked Liu Yi, "Is this a task from the Eye In The Sky?"

Before Liu Yi could speak, Wei Yi suddenly came over and said.

"This is a secret! You want to take our task? Humph, let me tell you, you're late! The task has been completed by this blessed girl from the Linglong School!"

# Chapter 161 Sudden Sister

Cold sweat appeared behind Liu Yi's back

Hey, the one who completed this task is me....

She only stood on the side like a bystander....

"Oh? You are the Linglong School's disciple?"

Li Biyue looked at Wei Yi in the eye and softly said, "So you are from the immortal cultivation world....No wonder you make me uncomfortable."

"You look down on us immortal cultivation world?"

Wei Yi suddenly asked warily, "Are you from the demon world?!"

Is this woman a demon? And that's why she came and helped Ten Steps To Milk A Man?

This could turn bad!

"Do I look like a demon?"

Li Biyue asked Liu Yi.

"Of course not!"

Liu Yi quickly pulled Wei Yi behind him and then smiled apologetically.

"Hehe....She is still a kid....And quite outspoken, Great Master Li, don't take it to heart...."

This Li Biyue is an Earthly Realm expert....

People who can't be messed with!

Liu Yi did not want Wei Yi to provoke this terrifying woman....

"Hateful! Who....um, um...."

Before Wei Yi finished her sentence, Liu Yi already covered her mouth with his hand.

The nearby Tuantuan tried its best to bite Liu Yi's hand. But the pain was

not too unbearable, so Liu Yi just ignored it.

Feeling the pain is much better than dying!

“In fact, the Hunter Organization is part of the Eye In The Sky.”

Li Biyue slowly said, “So, it can be said that we were brought together by fate.”

“Brought together by fate?”

“Correct, people who can meet me twice can be regarded as being ‘brought together by fate.’”

Li Biyue proudly said, “You should know that I am not that easy to be seen, even by the people in the Hunter Organization.”

“This....”

Liu Yi also thought that Li Biyue was a very remarkable character....

How come the powerful figures that I know are all women?

Like Guyu, Wenren Qian....And this, Li Biyue.

“I once said some words.”

Li Biyue’s sharp eyes were suddenly focused on Liu Yi, sweeping his body from top to bottom twice. She then said, “If we met again, I will invite you to join our Hunter Organization. Are you interested?”

“Huh?”

Join the Hunter Organization?

What kind of Organization is that?....I only know very little of it from Lin Tong.

“No! He will not join the Hunter Organization!”

At this time, Wei Yi suddenly broke free from Liu Yi’s hand, and then loudly roared.

“Why not? If I am not wrong, he is a loose cultivator.” (not attached to a school or sect) Li Biyue said with a smile, “The people in our Hunter Organization are all loose cultivators. And we have many people with abilities. Therefore, we can help each other. Just like today when you

encountered a powerful enemy, which almost made you lose your life. But in our Hunter Organization, not only you can increase your companion, you can also know a lot of useful information. And the next time you take the task, you are not going to stupidly encounter an enemy that is a lot more powerful than you.”

“Really?”

Liu Yi was actually moved by these words.

He felt like he was too passive, and has too few resources....

If he can have the help from the Organization....That would actually be very good.

“So what if he’s a loose cultivator? I can introduce Ten Steps To Milk A Man to my people so he can join our Linglong School!”

Wei Yi unconvincingly said.

“Ten Steps To Milk A Man?”

Hearing Liu Yi’s code name, Li Biyue could not help but raise her eyebrows.

Liu Yi remembered about Li Biyue’s chest resentment....And started to pray that this girl did not understand this game terminology....

“It’s just a random name that I pick, there’s nothing meaningful about it....”

“That name is not good. When you join the Organization, we will give you a new codename.”

Li Biyue waved her hand and said.

“Hey, he never said he want to join your organization!”

Wei Yi placed herself between Liu Yi and Li Biyue, blocking Liu Yi from Li Biyue like a hen protecting her chicks, and then said, “He wants to join our Linglong School!”

“Oh, really? You sure you have the final say in that?”

Li Biyue was not angry, but smiled instead, “Can he really join the Linglong School based on your word alone?”



“This....I, I can make a recommendation....”

Wei Yi grabbed her earlobe and somewhat said with a guilty conscience.

“I am an A level hunter in the Hunter Organization, and the person in charge of the Northern Dragon City area.”

Li Biyue proudly said, “For me to introduce him into the Hunter Organization is only a matter of a few words. Little girl, do not trouble us. Go pack your things and return to your school to report the task.”

“Hateful....D\*mn it....”

Wei Yi stomped her feet in anger.

“He is my partner! How could he join the other organization!”

“No matter what kind of organization he’s in, it will not delay his partnership with you will it?”

Li Biyue blinked her eyes and suddenly said.

“Why would I suddenly feel like you are protecting your own sweetheart? You’re too jealous.”

“Who is his sweetheart!?”

Wei Yi suddenly blushed, and then took Liu Yi’s hand and said.

“Tell me, do you want to join the Hunter Organization?”

“I....”

Liu Yi slightly hesitated.

“You b\*stard! Go to hell!”

Wei Yi suddenly lost her breath and then turned around and leaped up into the night sky.

“Alas....What a grumpy little girl....”

Watching Wei Yi disappeared into the night sky, Li Biyue acted as if she was just a bystander.

“You made her angry, don’t you want to pursue her and coax her back?”

F\*ck!

You're the one who made her angry!

Liu Yi then thought about their gap in power and decided that it was best not to tell her that.

This is the so-called, food can be eaten randomly, but words can not be said irresponsibly.

Talking nonsense is bound to make someone beat you....

"Do you really want to accept me into the Hunter Organization?"

Liu Yi then remembered this key issue, so he asked her.

"Yes, you are very lucky."

Li Biyue nodded her head, "When you join the Organization, you can get more tasks, gain more resources, but also get a lot of useful information. Our Hunter Organization is a very old organization. In fact, some of them have abilities that are on par with me."

She said, and then sighed, "People with abilities like me are different than those immortal cultivators. The immortal cultivators are more orthodox than us....We are being discriminated by the Immortal Cultivation world like we are some kind of mutants. If we want to survive in this world, we must join our forces together. People in the Hunter Organization are mainly people with abilities, but there are some loose cultivators. The Hunter Organization is like a community for people with abilities. After hundreds of years of effort, the Organization is finally being acknowledged by the people in the immortal cultivation world. Our power can no longer be ignored."

"This sounds very good....But how could such a good thing fall into my lap?"

Liu Yi can't help but wonder.

"I think....You are not the same with other people...."

Speaking about this matter, Li Biyue also felt that it was strange.

"I am confident that you will become a qualified Hunter."

"Thank you beautiful Li, for your great concern."

Liu Yi felt overwhelmingly flattered.

She is an Earthly Realm expert!

And she is so optimistic about me!

The power of the Friendly Aura is really strong!

"I think you and I hit it off."

Li Biyue's eyes were gazing at the moon as her mouth slowly said.

"Later on, you don't have to call me beautiful Li, that's just going to hurt my ears. You can call me sister instead."

"Sis, sister?"

Liu Yi opened his eyes in surprise.

Where did this word sister come from?

Although she is a very beautiful woman....It is more important to have an Earthly Realm expert as an elder sister....

But no matter what he thought, Liu Yi still felt that this matter was weird.

Liu Yi's luck has been pretty bad, so he never believed such a good thing would fall on his lap.

But this time, he wanted to smack himself in the head to check if this was not a dream.

"What? Not happy?"

Li Biyue suddenly raised her chin and condescendingly looked at Liu Yi.

Liu Yi suddenly felt as if he sweat out cold sweat.

Facing this super strong Earthly Realm beauty....Liu Yi felt unsure of himself....

Perhaps....This will turn out bad....

"I, Li Biyue, never failed....in things that I do."

Liu Yi felt nervous and uneasy as cold sweat kept on dripping on his back.

"Do you want to be my younger brother or not?"

Liu Yi really wanted to say, he doesn't want to....

But he was afraid that he would instantly die as soon as he said that....

But how could a real man submit himself in front of an evil force?

Grandpa said it right, a man must have an indomitable spirit!

If today I agree to Li Biyue's request because of fear, what would become of me then?

Wouldn't I be bullied everyday?

Liu Yi, you have to be strong!

Liu Yi, you are the best!

"Well, tell me, do you want to be my brother or not?"

Seeing that Liu Yi seemed to have a psychological struggle, Li Biyue asked him again.

"Elder sister, in the future, please take care of this younger brother."

Liu Yi said as he bowed his head.

"Hehe...."

Unexpectedly, Li Biyue, who seemed like an iceberg on the outside, could smile so bright and look so happy.

Li Biyue covered her mouth and laughed for a long time; she even bent her waist in laughter.

After some period of time, she rubbed her belly, stood up, looked at Liu Yi, and then said.

"I never thought that younger brother is actually so lovable....em....Okay, okay, I will stop laughing. Don't tell anyone that I laugh like this....Otherwise, sister will make brother embarrassed."

Seeing that kind of smile from Li Biyue, Liu Yi shuddered in fear.

He suddenly felt that Li Biyue was more terrible than Jiang Qini....

"Don't look at sister with that fearful eyes."

Li Biyue suddenly reached out her hand and touched Liu Yi's head, stroking his hair.

Hey, that's my head....

I'm not a child anymore....

But looking at Li Biyue's 1.75 m height, which was almost the same as him, he can only endure.

How could this girl be so tall....

If she wears high heels....I would be the shorter one!

"Since you are my younger brother, of course, I will not mistreat you. Come on, I will take you to the Organization's Headquarters in the Northern Dragon City."

"Okay...."

Liu Yi reluctantly followed behind Li Biyue.

Li Biyue quietly looked at Liu Yi at a glance, and her heart softened a bit.

If my brother did not have that accident....Now he would be at his age....

I wonder if this kid is also....All muscle with no brain....

Looking back at Liu Yi, Li Biyue seemed to be in a trance....

Perhaps our meetings....Were arranged by the Heaven.

The Heaven thought that he could be my younger brother....

Don't worry, I will definitely take a good care of you with all my heart....

# Chapter 162 Will Listen To Anything You Say

“It’s this....The Hunter’s Headquarters?”

Liu Yi looked at the beautiful office building in front of him.

“More accurately, Hunter’s Headquarters in Northern Dragon City.”

Li Biyue corrected Liu Yi’s words.

“Hunter Organization is all over the country, and Northern Dragon City is just one of them. The Organization is huge, you will understand it later.”

Li Biyue said in her mind, If not, they wouldn’t have been able to contend with the immortal cultivation world all these years.

“Em....But sister....There is something that I want to say.”

Liu Yi suddenly looked up and said, carefully looking at Li Biyue.

“Oh? What is it?”

“In the future, I want to want to build my own school (Literally: To open a monastery, establish a school)....”

Li Biyue was taken aback by Liu Yi’s words.

My brother actually have this kind of ambition?

Why didn’t I see this before?

“My grandpa said, in everything, I have to do my best.”

Liu Yi held his fist and said, “Therefore, since I enter the path of immortal cultivation, I swore to myself that I, Liu Yi must succeed on my own, to establish my own school in the immortal cultivation world!”

“My brother is so cute, but how could such a thing as ‘opening a monastery, establishing a school’ so easy to do.”

Li Biyue chuckled, “It is better if you set your mind at ease in this Hunter Organization. Starting from basic Hunter, and later become an A level

Hunter like me. You will have countless of people who worship you, respect you, and fear you.”

A level Hunter?

Lin Tong, who stood on Liu Yi’s shoulder, said.

“Liu Yi, I support your ‘open a monastery, establish a school’ ambition! Their A-level hunter is just an Earthly Realm expert. Even their legendary S level hunter is only around Middle-Earthly Realm expert. And I, Lin Tong believe that you, Liu Yi, one day, will surpass all of that. Earthly Realm is, by no means, not going to be your apex. If you continue in your current cultivation path, you will have the opportunity to be more powerful than that! Perhaps, you can even cross the boundary and soar to the immortal world!”

Lin Tong became more and more excited as if the one who soared to the immortal world was not Liu Yi but her.

“Sister, I am determined to do what I just said.”

Being encouraged by Lin Tong, Liu Yi became more confident.

“Sooner or later, in the world of immortal cultivation, everyone will know my name. My school will become the most powerful cultivation school. I want my enemies to tremble in fear whenever they hear my name. And I want my friends to feel proud of me every time they hear my name.”

“.....”

Li Biyue was speechless for half a day.

In Liu Yi’s heart, he is actually harboring such a lofty ambition?

I really look down on him.

I thought he was just a money grubber, opportunistic little fool....

Now I know, he is not like that. He has the whole world in his heart.

Are all men....ambitious like this?

Li Biyue could not help but become absent-minded.

She remembered the words of his little brother, who at the time was in the

junior high school, that he said overbearingly to her.

“Sister, sooner or later, I want to get out of the Hunter Organization!”

“Oh? Why do you want to leave the Hunter Organization?”

“Because the achievement in Hunter Organization is limited! So I must leave this place sooner or later. I want to make myself stronger. I want to stand at the top of the world! When the time comes, I can protect sister!”

Li Biyue felt at the time that her little brother was silly, silly but cute.

When she saw Liu Yi behave the same as her little brother, her heart suddenly turned sour.

“Being an ordinary person and protected by sister, aren’t these good enough?”

Li Biyue suddenly asked.

“Sister, I know you mean well, and although you are powerful, I don’t like being protected by girls!”

Liu Yi patted his chest, and said, “Sister, you see, boys shoulders are wider, that’s because we want to protect the girls from harm.”

“.....”

Li Biyue’s vision became blurred.

Her brother’s shadow seemed to overlap with Liu Yi’s figure in front of her, separated and then overlapped, again and again.

If she hadn’t witnessed the death of her younger brother that time, she would suspect that the one in front of her was her own younger brother....

“Then sister will help you to be strong....”

Li Biyue’s voice was warm and gentle. She held out her hand to hold Liu Yi’s hand.

Liu Yi immediately felt his heart started to beat fast.

When all is said and done....Li Biyue is an outstanding beauty....

And now she actually took the initiative to hold his hand....



Uh....Sister's hand is really soft....

"Do you like sister's hand?"

Just when Liu Yi was thinking about that, Li Biyue suddenly asked icily.

"Huh? I, I...."

Liu Yi was frightened, This Li Biyue won't blame me for this, won't she?

She looks scary....As if she wants to kill someone....

"If you like it, later on, sister will hold your hand more often."

Unexpectedly, Li Biyue suddenly burst out smirking, sweeping away the previous cold indifference as she held Liu Yi's hand tighter.

Oh my god....

Cold sweat suddenly burst out in Liu Yi's crotch area.

Are you kidding me!

This Li Biyue....What exactly is her personality?

Why is it so weird?

How could she turn from cold to hot almost in an instant!

Li Biyue did not know she almost made Liu Yi collapse. She held her hand as she led him into the office building.

In the evening, the office was still open, but almost all the lights have been turned off.

The uncle security guard on duty lazily sat on a nearby chair, listening to the "Sui And Tang Dynasties Historical Novel" from a radio next to him.

Seeing Li Biyue walked in, he did not say anything and continued to listen to the part where Li Yuan showed his prowess.

With Li Biyue as the lead, Liu Yi went to the service elevator on a nearby corner.

She took out a card and brushed it on the magnetic console on that service elevator.

Soon, the service elevator door slowly opened and the two people

immediately went in.

“When we’re there, don’t talk nonsense, let sister help you manage everything.”

Li Biyue closely held Liu Yi’s hand, She seemed to be afraid of him getting lost if he walks on his own.

“Oh....”

Liu Yi nodded his head but thought it was strange.

Li Biyue seemed to think of him as a child.

Li Biyue did not realize how uncomfortable Liu Yi was, she has completely regarded Liu Yi as her own little brother.

The service elevator door slowly closed.

Li Biyue took out a card and brushed the magnetic area in the elevator with it.

“Authentication, A level Hunter, Li Biyue.”

A computerized female voice resounded in the elevator, “Good evening, welcome back to the Northern Dragon City Headquarters.”

During the speech, the elevator started to descend.

Liu Yi suddenly found the metal wall behind him automatically opened, revealing a completely transparent glass window, which made him see the outside.

He curiously looked out of the window, only to see the sudden emergence of a vast underground world.

The thing that was most obvious was the ten-meter high statue.

That statue was a man, with hand held high, and a butterfly on top of his finger.

The other hand was hanging by the side, clutching a treasured sword.

But on his shoulder lied a small scorpion. This small scorpion was very imposing as it held out its pair of giant clamps.

Beside his feet, there was a cute beautiful Alaskan dog.

This entire statue looked mighty and majestic and was very conspicuous.

“Sister....Who is he?”

Liu Yi cannot help but ask.

“This....Is a God-like man that was deduced from many generations of prophecy.”

Li Biyue’s brows slightly wrinkled as she said, “Legend says he will appear on our Hunter Organizations. His appearance will lead to one of the two results....One is the rise of the Hunter Organization, sweeping away all the other organizations and become the number one organization.”

“That sounds good. What about the other one?”

“The other one is....He will destroy the Hunter Organization....”

“Huh.....”

Liu Yi felt as if his balls were hurt.

This prophecy is too ridiculous.

It will either lead to glory or to destruction....

Is this fellow good or bad!

“But no matter what, this person is also the hope of the Hunter Organization.”

Li Biyue explained, “Therefore, over the years, the Hunter Organization have been waiting for this legendary man. Hehe....Brother, do you think it’s going to be you?”

“How is that possible!”

Liu Yi quickly shook his head, “This man seems to be a sword cultivator! But I am a body cultivator, the difference is too big!”

I don’t have any small Scorpion.

But I do have the small Fox, Lin Tong.

Although I also have a Butterfly....But this man is God-like, his spirit animal, the Butterfly, must be very powerful.

My own spirit animal, Little Cai, the Butterfly....This was the name Liu Yi picked for the Beautiful Butterfly demon.

Little Cai is only a young level two spirit animal.

Compared to Wei Yi's level six, the difference is too big.

According to Lin Tong, if Liu Yi wanted to upgrade little Cai's level, it won't be because she eats much spiritual energy because that was useless.

Instead, Liu Yi has to have a 'rare encounter,' taking an elixir and so on.

But in actual battle, little Cai's help was actually not small.

She was very useful.

"Hehe....Sister is teasing you. Little brother is so silly, how could you be this legendary man."

Li Biyue laughed again.

She seemed to enjoy picking on Liu Yi.

"This hateful woman...."

Lin Tong, who was lying on Liu Yi's shoulder, could not help but say acidly.

"She robbed me of my pleasure....Humph!"

"I hope this man will not appear in our time, otherwise, it will lead to a reign of terror."

Li Biyue looked at the huge statue and said in a slightly melancholy tone.

"According to the prophecy....If he chooses the path of destruction....Not only he would destroy the Hunter Organization....He will also destroy the entire immortal cultivation world....And the entire human world."

"What?"

Hearing this, Liu Yi, all of a sudden, became alarmed and filled with dread, "Wouldn't that mean the end of the world? And no one can stop him?"

"He is very strong."

Li Biyue said, "If the prophecy is true, even if it is me, I am afraid I am far from becoming his opponent. Not to mention me, even if the gods on the heaven descend to earth, they will also be killed by him. His task, his

mission, is to destroy, destroy everything.”

“This....Is too scary!”

Liu Yi can't help but pout his mouth, “No matter what, when he appears, I will stop him!”

“My little brother, can't you stop being so cute?”

Li Biyue smiled again, “With your current power.....Alas, the difference is too big!”

“Sister, don't look down on me! I will become more powerful!”

“Very good, then sister will wait until you can defeat me!”

Li Biyue said with a smile, “If you can defeat sister, sister will listen to anything you say.”

# Chapter 163 Put On The Mask

Will listen to me on everything?

Liu Yi cannot help but think something evil....

If in bed....Sister will listen to me and do it in some special position....

Oh my God!

Liu Yi, Liu Yi, what are you thinking!

Li Biyue is now your sister!

That's some mess up stuff you're thinking about!

You deserve to get beaten....

Thinking of this, Liu Yi cannot help but stretched out his hand, lifted his mask, and then slapped his face.

"Brother, what's wrong?"

Seeing Liu Yi give himself a slap, Li Biyue was surprised and suddenly asked.

"There, there is a mosquito...."

Liu Yi's face slightly reddened.

"Mosquito? Impossible....In this season...."

Li Biyue cannot come up with a logical reason.

"By the way....Do you still need to use your mask in front of sister?"

She suddenly looked at that white mask closely.

"Em....In front of sister, of course, I can open my mask...."

Liu Yi touched his mask, and then said, "But after we get off the elevator, can I put it on again?"

"You can...."

Li Biyue nodded her head, "This self-protection mentality is actually good."

At the same time, Li Biyue felt a sweetness in her heart.

Liu Yi's true face can only be seen by me? That's really good.

Liu Yi also nodded and then took off his mask.

“.....”

The moment Liu Yi took off his mask, Li Biyue's breathing almost instantly stopped.

Watching her blankly looked at him like that, Liu Yi felt scared.

“Sister? What happened? Talk to me?”

“You....You better put the mask back on....”

“Huh? Okay.”

Do I look so ugly? Was she afraid of my face?

It should not be that....Liu Yi felt although he was not that handsome, his face was not something to be ashamed of....

I am obviously not a bad-looking fellow.....

But how could sister have such huge reaction....

“Brother....When you meet the other Hunter, you always have to wear your mask and never take it off, okay?”

Li Biyue's tone of voice even has a trace of pleading in it, “Listen to sister, okay?”

“Okay....”

Liu Yi gave no objection.

“Sister, did I scare you? Am I too ugly?”

“No....Brother, though you're not handsome, you're not ugly either.”

Hearing Li Biyue's words, Liu Yi did not know whether to laugh or cry.

My sister, can't you restrain your words a bit!

“It's just that....It's just that....”

“It's just that what?”

“It's nothing....Anyway, whenever you meet with other Hunters, especially

A level Hunters, never let them see your face, okay? Regardless of what they say, by threats or by rewards, never agree to any of that. In this Hunter Organizations, sister alone can see your face, OK?”

“Okay....Sister, you’re too bossy.”

“I am bossy, so what?”

“Nothing, being bossy is good....”

Liu Yi was helpless.

But he did not understand the shock in Li Biyue’s heart.

The face of the legendary man from the prophecy, have long been revealed.

But it was a top secret that not everyone can access.

The true face of this legendary man....Can only be known by A level Hunters and above.

And her brother....His face....Was exactly like that legendary man....

Li Biyue never imagined that....After she finally got her brother....Her brother was actually that legendary man!

But their gap was too big!

My brother is so weak....How could he be that legendary man?

Headache....Truly a headache....

But even if she suffered a headache, Li Biyue still can’t believe what she just saw.

If brother is really that legendary man, then the one who lead him to the Hunter Organization is me!

Do I, Li Biyue, also occupy such an important position in this prophecy?

But the future is still uncertain, my brother has two paths in front of him.

Protector, or destroyer.

That’s right....I am his sister!

I just have to guide him to the right path!



Li Biyue, Li Biyue, this is your chance!

Chance to save the world, as well as your brother....

Li Biyue's eyes suddenly lit up.

"You better put your mask back again, we are about to arrive."

When the elevator slowed down, Li Biyue reminded Liu Yi.

"Em!"

Liu Yi nodded his head and very obediently fasten his mask.

He did not understand how he has such a trust in Li Biyue. He felt that whenever he was around her he was at ease and comfortable.

Moreover, Li Biyue could not possibly harm him. If she really wanted to, she could kill him from the very start and did not have to trouble herself to bring him to the Hunter Organization.

"A lot of people in this Hunter Organization maybe weird....Em, although the person in charge here is not a good one, since sister is here to protect you, you don't have to worry about him."

The more he listened, the more disturbed Liu Yi was.

Is this Hunter Organization really a good place?

"At the top of this Office Building there is a satellite receiver, and the Eye In The Sky belong to the Hunter Organization Industry."

Before the elevator stopped, Li Biyue explained, "Therefore, every so often, some tasks were issued by the Hunter Organization itself. Not only it can improve the cooperation between ourselves, it can also give the disciples of various schools and sects the chance to temper themselves. At the same time, this can also be used to tap some talented person into our Hunter Organization."

So that's how it is....A win-win strategy.

Liu Yi cannot help but secretly nod, admiring the cleverness of the higher ups in the Hunter Organization.

"Well, here we are."

Her voice fell, the elevator door opened, and a spacious underground world appeared before Liu Yi's eyes.

A vast space was in front of them. Liu Yi felt as if he came to a high-tech spaceship.

The first thing that caught his eyes was a row of large screens.

Next to that row of large screens, there was a beautiful girl who was busy about something.

Her hair was curly blonde, dressed in a black lace skirt and matching black stockings; very cute and attractive.

"There seems to be a problem in the A-2 area."

"Someone has gone to Z-8!"

"A task need to be issued in S-26....Em, just make it an E-level task, it's a small errand task!"

This girl spoke fast while her hands typed the keyboards as if in a hurry.

On the side, some staff dressed in black coats were also busy.

These people did not seem to be Hunters, but staffs responsible for the internal operations.

"My office network is broken! When can you come and repair it!"

"Logistic unit, give me a cup of coffee!"

"Vacation, I want a vacation!"

The situation here was just like in a normal company, which made Liu Yi dazzled.

"Welcome to Hunter Organization."

Li Biyue pulled Liu Yi's hand to walk out of the elevator.

"Hey, looks like sister Li Biyue is back."

The beauty who sat on a swivel chair and who acted as the coordinator turned around and looked at Li Biyue.

The keyboard in her hands suddenly fell to the ground with a crackling

sound.

The nearby busy night duty staff incidentally loosened the cup of coffee in his hand, making it fall to the ground, and the coffee splashed all over the floor.

These people's jaws almost fell on the floor, watching the two people walked out of the elevator.

"Go back to your work, I am looking for Liu Yufan.

Li Biyue waved her hand. Her facial was as cold as ice.

"Oh...."

Everyone nodded their heads.

"Go busy yourself!"

Li Biyue's eyes suddenly flashed with light, scaring everyone and making them tremble. Everyone quickly went back to their respective works, picking up the phone, quarreling, and continuing their overtime....

"Brother, come with me."

When Li Biyue talked to Liu Yi, her voice became tender.

It was like two completely different person!

"Em...."

Liu Yi was also shocked by this.

Sister change too fast....

Which one is the real her....?

In this regard, Liu Yi cannot help but wonder.

When Liu Yi and Li Biyue walked away, these group of employees, who previously pretended to work as normal, suddenly began to discuss among themselves.

"Heaven, the iceberg brought a man back!"

"She also pulled his hand!"

"Could it be...."

“Impossible! According to legend, this iceberg only likes women.”

Hearing these people’s gossip, the liaison beauty could not resist and charmingly scold.

“Everybody get back to work, what nonsense are you talking about! Didn’t you hear Li Biyue call that guy brother!”

“Oh, Little Leng, you did not know this.”

An older employee interrupted her, “Li Biyue’s brother....Has long died....This man is absolutely not....”

“Bad....Will our director Liu go crazy?”

“Not necessarily....We just wait and see....”

Leng Mo picked up the keyboard from the ground and cannot help but look at the corridor with worry....Is there really not going to be a problem?

At this time, Liu Yi was being stared at by a man dressed in a suit.

“Li Biyue, what is your relationship with this man?”

After that man swept his eyes at Liu Yi several times, he finally turned his head and very unhappily looked at Li Biyue.

“Liu Yufan, even if you are in charge here, aren’t this a bit too far?”

With iceberg-like face, Li Biyue coldly replied, “Whatever his relationship is with me, that has nothing to do with you.”

“Li Biyue!”

Liu Yufan seemed a bit angry, “Even if you want to recommend people, at the very least, I need to know if his background is clean or not! You can’t just casually recommend people with unknown backgrounds like this! I will absolutely, will absolutely not let him join the organization!”

“His background is clean, he is my brother.”

Li Biyue said, crossing her arms.

“Nonsense, your brother has already died a long time ago!”

Liu Yufan’s voice fell, a black blade suddenly appeared on his neck.

“If you dare, say that one more time.”

Li Biyue’s voice was as cold as the cold wind in September, bitter cold and piercing to the bone.

“You....Li Biyue, how dare you!”

Liu Yufan was shocked to see that black blade rested on his neck, and almost unable to speak.

Although he was the person in charge here, his power level was just B+.

While Li Biyue....Was a genuine A-level Hunter!

If not for her elusiveness, and her dislike for office management, the head of the Northern Dragon City Hunter Headquarters would definitely be hers....

“My brother is here, and I want to recommend him to enter the Hunter Organization. Director Liu, I think you can start the formalities, right?”

Li Biyue asked Liu Yufan one word at a time, but reading between the lines, the threat was very strong.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 164

## Chapter 164 Test

“Li Biyue, introducing a new member is good, but this is a threat.”

Liu Yufan pressed the fear in his heart and tried to communicate with Li Biyue.

“I am in charge here, but you are actually threatening me, the director! Do you want to face the elders?”

“Those elders are a group of old-fashioned stubborn old men....”

Li Biyue coldly snorted, “Tell me, will you arrange for my brother to join or not!”

“This....of course, of course, I will....”

Liu Yufan wiped his cold sweat while in his heart he was secretly jealous.

He liked Li Biyue for a long time, but Li Biyue was like an iceberg, never gave him a chance.

He thought that with his skill, in time, he can melt Li Biyue, this iceberg’s heart.

Unexpectedly, half-way through he actually met with this Cheng Yaojin (Someone inept who appear at the right place and the right time to save the day)!

Where did this kid come from?

Brother?

Even if I am beaten to death, I will not believe it!

“But....Even if I want to arrange him to join, we still need to test him.”

Liu Yufan’s small eyes turned several times and then said.

“What test? That’s so troublesome.”

Li Biyue was somewhat unhappy.

“This is the rule by the Elders! Even if you and I want to complain about it, it’s useless. Yueyue, you have to tell the Elders directly.”

“Call me by my name.”

Li Biyue withdrew her black blade and bluntly said.

“Next time you bark again, this blade will not be recovered but will stab instead.”

“Yue....Li Biyue....We have known each other for a long time, and can be considered as friends, right?”

Liu Yufan was very unwilling and said, “Between friends, aren’t we supposed to not treat each other as strangers!”

“Friends?”

Li Biyue icily said, “Director Liu, you presume too much. I, Li Biyue, never have friends....Not before, nor after....”

“Then what is he?”

Liu Yufan pointed his finger at Liu Yi and furiously said.

Liu Yi secretly thought, Hey, I am just a soy sauce here (Onlookers).

“He is my brother.”

Li Biyue dismissively said.

“Your brother is already....”

Before Liu Yufan finished his words, he abruptly swallowed it back.

“Fine, Li Biyue, I accept your recommendation. You, come with me!”

“Go on, sister believe in you.”

Li Biyue made a ‘you can do it’ gesture toward Liu Yi.

Seeing this from the corner of his eyes, Liu Yufan’s whole body was filled with jealousy.

Kid, don’t blame me, you brought this upon yourself!

“Li Biyue, in this assessment process, we can’t allow any relatives to accompany him!”

Seeing Li Biyue was catching up to them, Liu Yufan hurriedly said.

“I am not here as his relative, but as a senior member of the Organization.”

Li Biyue crossed her arms and dryly said.

D\*mn! How could you say you’re a senior member now!

Just now you proclaimed to everybody that you’re his sister!

His mother!

Liu Yufan had the impulse to spurt out blood.

But he did not dare to contradict Li Biyue, making her angry. Instead, he prepared for Liu Yi’s assessment.

I can’t touch Li Biyue, but can’t I do something about this so-called brother?

Kid, you force my, Liu Yufan’s hand!

Liu Yufan and the two people arrived at the edge of a corridor and opened the door of a room.

Inside the room, there was a bald old man, but his beard and eyebrows were quite long.

When they went in, they saw the bald old man was holding a bottle of liquor while his other hand was clutching a roasted chicken leg. His lips were smeared with oil.

Seeing Liu Yufan and the other two came in, the old man was suddenly panic and hurriedly hid his liquor and the chicken leg.

“Ma Hua, don’t try to hide it, you’re drinking at work again!”

Liu Yufan’s body trembled with anger.

“Ahem....this....”

The old man named Ma Hua touched his bald head, regardless of his oily hand and smiled.

“That’s not a liquor, right, that bottle is filled with coffee, right, it’s coffee!”

“Your mother! Is that supposed to be the color of coffee? You think I’m



blind!”

Liu Yufan was even angrier.

“White coffee, it’s white coffee!”

The old man explained, “Leadership, you see, this is just a white coffee....Don’t deduct my wage will you....I have been deducted enough for this month....”

“You are still thinking of wage! Ma Hua, Ma old man, you’re lucky I don’t fire you!”

Liu Yufan became enraged.

“Director Liu, aren’t we going to test my brother? Or do I need to continue to listen to your tirade here?”

Li Biyue suddenly interrupted him.

Liu Yufan immediately choked back what he was about to say.

Ma Hua the old man cast a grateful eye toward Li Biyue.

“Ma Hua, this kid is a new recruit that we need to test first. But I want you to record his file first!”

Liu Yufan was very depressed.

D\*mn, is there no one reliable here?

As a Director here, I am being held back by these useless employees.

“Oh, a new recruit, ok, ok.”

Old man Ma nodded his head and said to Liu Yi with his alcohol breath.

“Come, come, come to me, let me take a good look at you.”

Liu Yi covered his nose and walked toward him.

OMG, How many cups of white coffee did this old man drink? The alcohol smell is so strong!

Is he drunk already? How large is his alcohol capacity?

But when he saw his sober look, the old man seemed to have a strong alcohol resistance.

“Can you take off your mask?”

Old man Ma asked.

“No.”

Liu Yi remembered Li Biyue’s words and repeatedly shook his head.

“F\*ck, this kid has no respect for elders! I, old man Ma, am already old, can’t you at least, let me see your face?”

This Ma Hua started to pester him.

Liu Yi blushed with shame, This is ridiculous.

But Li Biyue slightly frowned, as if ready to make her move if the old man Ma continued to pester him.

“Grandpa Hua, my face is ugly, I can’t let other people see it.”

“Grandpa Hua....”

Ma Hua curled his lips and repeated the words.

“Did you just intentionally make fun of my name!?”

“Grandpa Hua, this is me respecting you as an elder! I am younger than you, so you must take a good care of me.”

Liu Yi felt that in this place....He must be a bit shameless.

In any case, I am wearing a mask, so I shouldn’t be afraid of being cheeky.

“Kid! You have potential!”

Ma Hua traced his own bald head and said, “You are shameless like me when I was young! Very well, seeing that we are a pair of shameless, this old man will not force you to take off your mask anymore. Come, let’s begin the registration.”

Ma Hua said, took out a form, and spread it on the table.

The oil in his hand immediately smeared on the form.

Seeing the oily form, Liu Yi was distressed.

Hey, this is my registration form....If other people see this, won’t they think I am a chowhound?

“Name?”

“Ten Steps To Milk A Man.”

“F\*ck, what’s with this name!”

“What’s wrong? Is it bad?”

“Of course it’s bad!”

Ma Hua touched his old head and said, “Ten Steps To Touch The Breast is more enjoyable to hear!”

Liu Yi almost fell on the floor.

Liu Yufan’s face turned dark, while the nearby Li Biyue tenderly scolded the old man.

“Dead old man, don’t influence my brother with your bad behaviour!”

“Hey? So this kid is your brother?”

Old man Ma somewhat surprisedly looked Liu Yi in the eye, as if looking at a monster.

“Also, he needs a new name!”

Li Biyue did not satisfy with Liu Yi’s name.

“Anything other than that....”

Liu Yi began to worry, I am not good at creating a name.

“You want a loud and clear, as well as imposing name?”

Ma Hua suggested.

“Yes, what is it?”

“What about Ten Breasts? This is a unique and powerful name!”

“.....”

Liu Yi especially wanted this old man to be his master, This old man is really something.

“Ma Hua....”

Li Biyue touched her black blade, “Would you like me to help you sober

up?”

“Em, this name seems inappropriate, let’s think about other names.”

The old man quickly corrected himself.

Who dared to mess with Li Biyue....

It was suicidal!

“Just stick with Ten Steps To Milk A Man, no need to change it.”

Liu Yi said, “Sister, you can call me by my real name.”

He turned around to comfort Li Biyue.

Ma Hua and Liu Yufan thought that Liu Yi would definitely die because he dared to contradict Li Biyue’s words!

Did he have a death wish?

Since Li Biyue has decided, who would dare to change it!

This kid is finished, Li Biyue will definitely cut him!

“Okay....”

Who knew, to their surprise, Li Biyue meekly nodded.

F\*ck me!

This has gotta to be a mistake!

Did the sun rise in the west?!

God must be crazy!

Li Biyue is actually so easy to agree....

Is there something magical in this kid?

This is so wrong!

Ma Hua was quite all right, he was just shocked.

But Liu Yufan almost died with jealousy.

Such a thing as jealousy will destroy a person.

“Kid....You have a bright future in front of you....”

Ma Hua secretly cast Liu Yi a thumb up, “You are just like the younger

me....A ladies killer!”

Watching Ma Hua’s big bald head, Liu Yi was difficult to imagine his past ladies killer appearance....

“Come, come, let me test your strength so that I can determine your level.”

Old man Ma said, took out a box and put it on the table.

“Come, hit this box as hard as you can. Your strength will then be displayed at the top.”

“Huh? So convenient?”

Liu Yi was surprised.

“Of course, this is a very advanced stuff.”

Old man Ma clapped his hand, and said, “Go on, hurry up, stop dawdling.”

“Okay then....I’ll try....”

“What try! This stuff is very solid....”

Liu Yi was very curious, lifted his hand and sent his palm strike toward that box.

“Krak!”

This legendary sturdy box suddenly broke, revealing several liquor bottles, which also broke into pieces.

“Oh noo! This is my hidden liquor box! F\*ck, I took the wrong box! Oh, my box of Maotai (A Liquor brand)....”

The smelled of alcohol filled the room while the old man cried in distress.

“My Maotai....”

“Hey, give him the test!”

Liu Yufan loudly roared.

“Hu, hu, my liquor....”

The old man took another box while he continued to cry.

The two boxes were actually very similar!

Liu Yi suddenly enlightened, This old man Ma actually use this box to secretly hide his liquor, ckck....

But this time, he suffers a huge loss.

Liu Yi secretly thought, Amitabha, you can't blame me on this.

Old man Ma, don't look at me with that resentful eyes....

"This is the test box."

Seeing the old man Ma was so distressed with his destroyed bottles of liquor, Li Biyue explained it for him.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 165

## Chapter 165 Holographic Simulation

“This box is made of special materials, specifically used for new recruits to test their strength.”

Li Biyue pointed the box and explained from the side, “Many spells were put on it, so it can be considered as an artifact. Even if you hit it with all your strength, it will be okay.”

Hearing from the side with arms crossed, Liu Yufan cannot help but interrupt.

“This test of strength is your preliminary test, it will measure your level of strength.”

With that, he proudly walked to the front of the box, clasped his fist, and then fiercely punched that box.

This time, the box did not break and reveal bottles of liquor.

A dashboard on the side of the box suddenly lit up.

The indicator, which has a total of 28 points, continued to tick upward. The indicator moved passed the seven points until it finally stopped near the eight points.

“See, this is my strength!”

Liu Yufan proudly said, “Seven stars strength or B+ level, and will soon become A!”

“There is still a big gap between B+ and A.”

Li Biyue ridiculed from the side, “Besides, relying on strength alone to reach A level is useless, A level requires more than just power.”

“Sooner or later I will achieve it!”

Liu Yufan looked at Li Biyue, “You just wait!”

“Why would I want to wait? Whatever.”

Li Biyue did not appreciate his words and flatly said with arms crossed.

“You!”

Liu Yufan was about to explode with rage.

This Li Biyue is really too d\*mn hard to penetrate!

Do I have no other way?

D\*mn it!

No matter what, I, Liu Yufan can also be considered as dragon among people, and I am also the Director of the Hunter Organization in Northern Dragon City, how come I couldn't even conquer a single Li Biyue!

Li Biyue, Li Biyue, just wait....Sooner or later you'll be mine!

“Your turn!”

Liu Yufan said to Liu Yi as he walked away from the box to make way for Liu Yi.

“Let me see your strength, rookie. Even if the scale doesn't move, it doesn't matter, a lot of rookies like you can't even move the scale. A rookie, hehe....”

The points should represent the star jade.

Liu Yi surmised in his heart.

However, he still can't help but curiously stretched out his palm and strike that box using a wee bit of strength, just to test how it felt.

“Pop!”

The box emitted a loud and clear voice.

Liu Yi felt a heavy metallic feel, but he also can feel a slight rebound force from the box.

And the indicator began to move and finally stopped slightly below the first point.

“Hahaha!”

Seeing this scene, Liu Yufan cannot help but laugh out loud.

“Sure enough, he is indeed a tender rookie! Li Biyue, Li Biyue, your brother



doesn't even have the power of one star, he can't even be considered as an E level hunter, how could I assign him a task?"

Li Biyue slightly frowned and did not speak.

My brother's strength is not like this....But how could it show such value....

Being ridiculed by Liu Yufan, she felt very uncomfortable.

It's okay if he jokes about me, but he makes fun of brother....Anger began to well up in Li Biyue's heart.

Ma Hua handed Liu Yi a half bottle of liquor.

"Kid, why don't you try it again?"

"It's useless, even if you give him immortal pills."

Liu Yufan snorted contemptuously, "This kid is simply a waste...."

"Desolate Flame!"

At this time Liu Yi suddenly lifted up his hand and sent out a palm strike toward that box.

"Bam!"

The box emitted a dull explosive sound.

It trembled along with the table.

The indicator on the box suddenly moved up and reached the third points and finally stopped close to the fourth points.

Liu Yufan gawked, with mouth open like a toad and unable to speak for half a day.

"Oh, good kid, you actually have the power of three stars. Moreover, you almost reach four stars!"

Old man Ma could not help but roared and clapped his hands, "Li Biyue, your brother's talent is so big. So young and already have this power. It seems like your family is really abnormal."

"Try to talk a bit less, you're not going to suffocate."

Li Biyue trimmed her nail with a small black dagger. That old man Ma

immediately stopped talking.

She was also secretly pleased, Sure enough, I didn't make the wrong choice.

Brother is still young and his power is already close to four stars.

When I met him the first time, he was still two stars.

In the blink of an eye, he has rapidly progressed. This shows that his future is unlimited.

But at the same time, her innermost feelings became complicated.

In that case, it also means that brother is getting increasingly closer to that legendary man....

Ai....Why it has to be him....?

Heaven, you really know how to torture people.....

But the one who was truly shocked was Liu Yufan. He did not dare to believe Li Biyue's brother actually have the power of three stars!

Three stars can basically be considered as D level Hunter!

As long as he can pass the next round of assessment, the D level status would be his!

D\*mn it....I don't want this kid to join this organization so smoothly!

Looks like I have to do some tricks on the next round of assessment!

"Old man Ma, prepare the second round of assessment!"

Liu Yufan very unhappily gave his order.

"Oh, why worry about it? Let us sit down and drink a couple of cups first, how about it?"

"Drink your uncle! Hurry up!"

Liu Yufan was pissed off.

This Ma Hua always does things very slowly, it pisses me off.

This old man was the personal staff of the previous Director. Moreover, his seniority is very high, some of the elders even know him personally.

It's hard for him to expel this old man.

Therefore, sometimes when the old man Ma angered him, he can only endure it. The only way to control this old man was by giving him various punishment.

Such as wage deduction.

"Director is always impatient, very well, let's begin."

Me Hua reluctantly put down the bottle, touched his head, and walked to the door at the next room, and then pressed a few buttons on the door.

Suddenly, the wall slowly lifted up, revealing a huge glass wall.

Across the glass, there was a large spacious room as big as a basketball court. The wall inside was all white and looked somewhat strange.

"This is the test room, go on, enter the room."

Old man Ma gently pushed Liu Yi.

"This...What should I do?"

Liu Yi was confused.

What kind of test is this?

"This room is a high-tech product, and supplemented by immortal cultivation technique."

Old man Ma triumphantly said like he was like explaining his own child, "After you enter, you will encounter virtual enemies. But do not underestimate these enemies, they will draw spiritual power from the walls and they have the same power as the real demons. Kid, your strength is good, but it doesn't mean everything. Some people have power but don't know how to use it. If you can successfully pass this virtual combat, you will become a D-level hunter!"

"Okay, I'll give it a try."

Combat?

Fortunately, this is not the first time for me.

Fox sister really helped me a lot.

“Come on! Sister believe in you.”

Li Biyue cheered for Liu Yi from the side.

When Liu Yi entered the room, Liu Yufan pulled old man Ma to the side and whispered.

“I want you to give four stars enemies to him.”

Four stars?

Old man Ma was suddenly alarmed and strangely looked at his Director.

“Logically, I should give him three stars enemy, right?”

“D\*mn it, didn’t you hear what I said? Who do you think is the Director here!?”

Liu Yufan suddenly glared at him.

If not for fear Li Biyue would flatten him on the spot, he really wanted to give a bunch of five stars enemies to Liu Yi.

“But....This is unreasonable....And I am a man of great integrity....”

“This month, I will give you a bonus.”

“Em, right, I should give a newcomer a bit of a test. Leadership, rest assured, you can count on me.”

Old man Ma immediately operated the nearby instrument.

On the side, Li Biyue slightly frowned, thinking that something was not quite right.

What’s with these two, so mysterious.

At this time, Liu Yi stood inside the room, curiously thought.

The Hunter Organization is actually like this, they actually have such an interesting test room.

Holographic simulation room?

If this place is used for gaming, wouldn’t it be awesome?

But I wonder how much money did they spend to build this thing!

Liu Yi cannot help begin to feel envy.

But this time, the room suddenly turned dark. Liu Yi was enveloped by total darkness.

But demon race has a night vision ability so he soon became adapted to the darkness in front of him. He then started to notice there was something continuously changed on the wall.

Soon, the room once again lit up.

Liu Yi was surprised to find that he had stood on a desolate desert.

High above him the sun glared brilliantly and below his feet, the sand was scalding hot.

He was completely alone there, no other human, no other vegetation, and no other living thing.

What the ef....This is so real....

Liu Yi even felt the hotness from his surrounding.

This holographic simulation room is too amazing!

But an old man voice suddenly sounded there.

“Ten Steps To Milk A Man, for this test, your environment is a dessert. In this dessert, there is a dessert killer and also scary monster. You must be careful. When you get out, I’ll buy you a drink....hiccup....”

He finished his words with a hiccup, which completely destroyed the dessert atmosphere.

Liu Yi can’t help but shake his head, thinking, this old man is too funny.

And he is much better to look at than that Liu Yufan.

When Liu Yi was still thinking about how powerful is Ma Hua, he suddenly felt something moving under his feet.

He quickly looked down and found the sand under him continuously flowed.

This is not a good sign!

Under such a strong pressure, Liu Yi unconsciously stepped on ice skates and slid several meters away.

“Boom!”

The sand where he previously stood collapsed and then flew up, forming a black sandstorm.

Within the sandstorm, there was a giant centipede-like insect with a pair of terrible protruding teeth. This giant insect fluttered into the air.

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 166

## Chapter 166 For The Beautiful Girls

That big insect's body was very amazing, with one leap it soared high into the air, reaching more than ten meters high.

Looking at that centipede-like huge insect, Liu Yi was stunned.

"Centipede spirit."

Without knowing when, Lin Tong ran out to lie on Liu Yi's shoulder and then said.

"Moreover, it's a centipede spirit that has cultivated for a long time....At the very least its strength is....Four stars!"

Shoot!

Liu Yi can't help but want to curse 'motherf\*cker.'

How could the assessment be so perverted like this?

They let me face a four stars monster?

F\*ck, this has gotta be a mistake!

This Hunter Organization is playing with people!

But Liu Yi did not know Li Biyue outside has flown into a rage. She grabbed Liu Yufan by the collars and fiercely asked.

"Liu Yufan, what do you mean by this? Why did you send a four star virtual monster to my brother? Do you want to die?"

"Eh, eh, Li Biyue, how could you say that."

Liu Yufan already came up with a good argument, his eyes rolled, and then said.

"Your brother's strength is close to four stars. If I give him a three stars monster, not only it would insult him, it would also insult you, Li Biyue!"

"This...."

Li Biyue slightly frowned her eyebrows.

He does have a good point.

“So, after much thought, I finally decided to get a four star monster to test your brother’s real strength. In any case, this is just a virtual test, if there’s something dangerous, I will tell that old man Ma to turn off the simulation.”

Liu Yufan said with a fake smile.

But he secretly thought otherwise.

Humph, humph, if that kid is in danger, I will not care about him.

I will just say there’s an error in the machine and let that boy die!

Since you have offended me....Do you think you will have a good end?

Ten Steps To Milk A Man, blame yourself for snatching away this father’s woman!

“Very well.”

Li Biyue thought there was some truth in Liu Yufan’s argument, and coupled with her arrogant temper, she did not think too much about it. She loosened Liu Yufan’s collar, looked at Liu Yi on the other side of the window, and said.

“My brother will definitely pass this test, I believe in him.”

“Yes, yes, Li Biyue’s brother is definitely not a weakling!”

Liu Yufan said with a smile.

He secretly shifted his position to a spot next to the instrument. And taking advantage while the old man Ma went to get the liquor, he quietly pressed a button.

A third-stars has some power (‘Some power’ is a slang for cockroach)?

This allows you to turn into a real cockroach!

Liu Yi was skating on his ice skates, wandering around the dessert, constantly dodging the Centipede spirit’s underground attack.

Although the Centipede spirit can move fast underground, Liu Yi’s ice skates were not slow either.



Combined with his demonic race's perception, he can easily perceive the threat from the underground.

As a result, Liu Yi once again successfully avoided the underground sneak attack on this desert, then he waited for an opportunity to launch a counter-attack.

This Centipede spirit was so huge that each time it came out, there must a sandstorm, making it difficult to see its appearance.

My other me said that no matter how difficult the enemy is, there will always be a way to deal with it....

After observing its attack pattern several times, Liu Yi suddenly got an idea.

He increased the force on his feet, stepped on the ice skates and glided away.

The giant Centipede spirit attacked from below once again, and like before, only caught air.

Liu Yi turned around, produced a big pile of ice projectile and threw it at the side of that Centipede spirit.

“Pop!”

The ice bomb exploded on that Centipede spirit's side.

Large tracts of sand suddenly condensed into ice, and the Centipede spirit's half body was caught up in there.

“See how you're going to escape this time!”

Liu Yi seized this opportunity and stretched out his left hand.

Xiao Cai, his spiritual animal, immediately departed into air, turned into a swirling multicolored blade, and then fell on Liu Yi's left hand.

“Try the power of my Xiao Cai, your grandpa!”

Liu Yi said and flung his multicolored blade.

All of a sudden, a multicolored neon light appeared in the sky.

This neon light was very fast, with just a brush, it directly cut one of the

Centipede spirit's legs; red blood was immediately spurted out.

After this swirling blade drew an arc in the air, it came again and cut off its leg on the other side; finally, it flew back to Liu Yi's hand.

"Sweet!"

Liu Yi could not help but praise Xiao Cai.

This is so great!

Several more of these and that Centipede spirit will die for sure!

After I cut off its legs, see if it's still going to be so smug!

But as Liu Yu prepared to throw out the swirling blade once again, he was suddenly shocked.

At this moment, felt as if he suddenly turned incomparably heavy; A terrifyingly huge pressure pressured his body.

Holy sh\*t.....

What the h\*ll is this....

Cold sweat dripped down his forehead, he now can't even move a single step.

That Centipede spirit took this opportunity to break free from the surrounding ice and reburied its body under the sand.

Seeing Liu Yi who was sweating profusely and standing there motionless, the corner of Liu Yu emerged out a smile.

Even if you have a little strength, so what.

With this ten times gravity, you'll turn into a soft egg.

This ten times gravity was the room's special feature, it only affected the human and not the holographic projection.

But Li Biyue didn't know what really happened. Seeing Liu Yi suddenly stopped moving, she thought Liu Yi was thinking about his next move.

How could she know that her own baby brother fell into other people's scheme?

D\*mn it....

With his sense, Liu Yi knew the Centipede spirit was moving underneath the sand toward him. His cold sweat has reached his nose.

If this goes on....I'll become Centipede's sh\*t....

How could I lose my life in this Hunter Organization....

Liu Yi struggled really hard to move and somewhat did not know what to do.

“Immortal Power! You have the awe-inspiring righteousness, let your body filled with the Immortal Power!”

At this time, Lin Tong also felt Liu Yi was in a crisis and quickly reminded him.

Immortal Power....

Liu Yi was not the silly boy that year, he had long understood that his own body has Immortal Power, as well as Demonic Power....

He just did not say it out loud.

He immediately launched his Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra. Liu Yi's eyes emitted two blue awns, and he shouted.

“Mooove!”

The majestic Immortal Power rolled up his awe-inspiring righteousness, which continued to wander around his body.

This Awe-Inspiring Righteousness was a unique force between heaven and earth, a very special force.

Only people who harbor true righteousness can catch this Awe-Inspiring Righteousness and turn it into their own strength.

With Awe-Inspiring Righteousness, everything is possible.

Blue-White air stream rushed into Liu Yi's body, flooding his meridians.

At this moment, Liu Yi suddenly did not feel so heavy anymore.

Although he still felt as if he was carrying a giant on his back, at least he can move again.

“Bam!”

At this time, the sand under his feet flew up and black smoke rolled out.

The giant Centipede went out to swallow Liu Yi.

It's huge teeth were like two huge blades, wanting to tear Liu Yi completely.

Liu Yi did not hesitate, immediately threw his multicolored chain, which wrapped around this huge Centipede spirit's head.

This Centipede spirit's teeth and mouth were completely locked by Liu Yi's multicolored chain.

He grabbed the two sections of the chain and stepped on the Centipede spirit's head and then pulled as hard as he could so that he won't be swallowed by this Centipede spirit.

“Gluk, gluk!”

The Centipede spirit produced two dull gulping sound, it clearly did not feel very happy being sealed by the mouth.

It was furious.

This Centipede spirit twisted its huge body and, in the blink of an eye, slammed into the sand, disappearing into the ground, pulling Liu Yi with it.

Li Biyue's heart started to palpitate, and her whole body tensed up.

She tightly clutched her sweating palms.

“Hey, how could this kid suddenly turns weak?”

Old man Ma, who was sipping his white liquor, still did not know about the situation. He looked in surprise at the scene inside the virtual room.

The scene inside the virtual room suddenly change, Liu Yi was actually being pulled to the ground but what the other people saw on the screen was that the Centipede spirit pushed him with his mouth to the ground, forcing his body into the sand.

In addition to Liu Yufan, who was the source of all these, the other two did not know that the gravity inside the virtual environment has turned ten

times its original value.

In the comic, the superhero Superman came from an environment with far more gravity than Earth.

Therefore, when he came to Earth, he became a veritable Superman.

It's the same reason humans can jump up more than ten meters on the surface of the moon.

Liu Yi's original weight was 60 kg, but under the ten times gravity, he was now 600 kg, more than half a ton.

For an average person, their bone density and hardness simply could not withstand such a huge force of gravity and would simply crush under the huge weight, instantly killing that person.

But Liu Yi was a cultivator, plus his body has an endless amount of Awe-Inspiring Righteousness, making him not only able to withstand the pressure, but also move.

But his current situation was not particularly good.

The Centipede spirit has pitted his body against the sand, burying him deep in the sand.

Liu Yi felt that if this went on, he would be buried alive here.

He wanted to fight back, but the Centipede spirit was like a train that constantly pushed his body so that he was unable to resist.

No....I want to live....

Liu Yi didn't want to inexplicably die in the Hunter Organization just like that.

Demonic power, Immortal Power, as well as the Awe-Inspiring Righteousness fully operated inside his body.

The Devil qi also began to mobilize, silently flew within his body and gathered in his hands.

Old man Ma, who was still drinking, suddenly realized something and looked at Liu Yi inside that room.

Liu Yi dimly remembered when his strength was still two stars, under his other personality's control, once used a strange move to kill the evil ghost in the cemetery.

I should use....

This move....Perhaps, it will be effective.

Using his Demonic Power as the base foundation, the other two power quickly flowed into Liu Yi's chest.

A portion of these powers then rushed toward Liu Yi's left hand, and the other portion went to his right hand.

Liu Yi felt he was like a ton of TNT, full of explosive power that was ready to explode.

D\*mn....For my future girlfriend in the University! Fight!

Liu Yi suddenly loosened the chain and put his hands on that Centipede spirit's head.

# Chapter 167 Hunter's Skill

No one knew how badly Liu Yi wanted to have a girlfriend in those days.

Things were different than when Liu Yi's older cousin was a freshman in high school.

That year, when high school students were in love, they were secretive about it for fear that their classmates would know.

Even when they were on a vacation away from the school, they would only hold hands if they knew no one would know. If they were caught, they would be very sorry.

But times have really changed.

When Liu Yi first entered the high school, dating between students has become a normal thing.

Not only high school, even middle school students can go out and open a hotel room.

Of course, although Liu Yi wanted to, he hasn't really done that.

Moreover, even if he wanted to let loose....He needed to find a girlfriend first!

After pursuing Ma Yixuan with all his might for a long time, to no avail, Liu Yi almost planned to become a monk.

Watching his classmates went 'lovey dovey' at school, and some even secretly went out to taste the forbidden fruit....Liu Yi was so envious of them!

Although the matter of tasting the forbidden fruit secretly was not a good thing, who doesn't want to have a pretty cute girlfriend?

His teachers and parents have said to Liu Yi that if he studies well now, he would have a girlfriend in the University!

But, at the time, Liu Yi felt that, with his behavior....It was hard for him to

pass the high school, much less being admitted to the University.

But right now, Liu Yi was more confident about himself, at least he was no longer the useless old him.

He wanted to have a girlfriend....

With the numbers of girls in the University, one of them would definitely take a fancy of him!

For the college! For the girls!

Fight!

Liu Yi's right hand was imbued with immortal power and his left hand with devil qi.

Icy-cold and crimson flame exploded out of his hands.

And poured into that Centipede spirit's head like they suddenly found their holes.

At this time, inside the glass' room, there was suddenly a gust of snow that distorted the outside's view.

This was the impact of that force's explosion.

"What happens in there?"

Li Biyue could not help but worry.

"I don't know....But it actually affects the glass."

Old man Ma was surprised, "But I believe it would soon adjust itself."

Liu Yufan was secretly proud, It seems like the energy eruption from the Centipede spirit kills that Ten Steps To Milk A Man.

Hehe....I did it!

And right at this time, the glass on the glass room suddenly shook.

The image was restored.

A headless Centipede spirit lifelessly lied there, drowning in its own river of blood.

But Liu Yi stood there, his whole body soaked in blood.



His body was scarlet red, but without any injuries.

Clearly, the blood was not him, but from that headless Centipede spirit.

At this time, Liu Yi stood on the ground with his small stature which was completely dwarfed by the giant body of that Centipede spirit.

But at that moment, Liu Yi's figure seemed to be a lot larger than that Centipede spirit, which made Liu Yufan felt a surge of great pressure.

Under ten times gravity....This guy actually kills a four-star monster!

Is this even possible?

This kind of thing is simply impossible!

Liu Yufan's mind was like having a big bang, his entire life's worldview completely collapsed!

This Li Biyue's brother....Who exactly is he!

He actually survived my plot!

"Good kid, you have skills!"

Old man Ma exclaimed, "Truly worthy to be Li Biyue's younger brother, both are monsters."

"Impossible....Impossible...."

Liu Yufan subconsciously said, "I obviously set it to 10 times gravity....How can he still be alive!"

"What!"

Hearing this, Li Biyue pulled out her black blade.

A black shadow flashed and Li Biyue suddenly stood in front of Liu Yufan. Her black blade was already on his neck.

"You're actually trying to kill my brother!"

Ten times gravity!

How could he let my brother face off against a four star monster with ten times gravity!

This is a bloody murder attempt!

“It’s a misunderstanding, misunderstanding!”

Liu Yufan almost wet himself.

If Li Biyue really wanted to kill him....Even if he fights back, the result would still be the same.

“What misunderstanding, you’re still trying to quibble with this!? Liu Yufan, what do you mean by this? Is my brother not pleasing to your eyes? If you have something, you can take it out with me!”

Li Biyue pressed the black blade, “But anyone who dares to clash with my brother....I will make him die miserably....”

Seeing Li Biyue pressing his black blade on his neck and coldly staring at him, Liu Yufan seemed to see the terrifying god of death staring at him.

His breathing became somewhat cold, and his blood seemed to stop flowing.

Fear....

Dread....

The fear of death....

All the negative feelings came up to him.

His legs faintly trembled. He did not know how to explain himself.

“Li Biyue, calm down, calm down....”

Seeing this turn of event, Old man Ma quickly picked up a new bottle of liquor and handed it to Li Biyue.”

“Here, drink this good Maotai, it will calm you down.”

Li Biyue reached out to take that bottle of liquor from old man Ma’s hand, opened the cap with her finger flick, and directly drunk half of it like it was just a water.

Old man Ma grinned in distress.

“Oh, you can’t drink like that, be slow, okay....Girl, leave me some of that will you....I don’t even drink like that!”

After gulping half bottle of liquor, Li Biyue handed it back to old man Ma.

After she wiped her mouth, old man Ma asked her.

“Have you calm down now?”

“F\*ck, Liu Yufan, I am going to kill you!”

Li Biyue’s eyes became somewhat red.

“Old man Ma, you’re trying to help me or harm me!”

Liu Yufan was scared sh\*tless.

“Oh....How would I know....Perhaps because she drunk it too fast, so she becomes a bit muddled.”

Old man Ma did not look at Liu Yufan. Instead, he fixed his gaze at that half bottle of liquor, as if he was trying to study it.

“Sister....”

Just as Li Biyue was about to cut off Liu Yufan’s neck, Liu Yi pushed open the door and walked out with a limp.

As soon as he passed the threshold, the huge pressure immediately vanished.

Instead, a wave of unprecedented ease washed through him. Liu Yi was extremely jubilant, feeling his blood flow has become incomparably light.

This feeling....Is so great....

Can I use this gravitational field to practice?

Liu Yi was a comic book fan, and one of his favorites was Dragon Ball!

The heroes in Dragon Ball liked to practice using gravitational field!

They practiced under several hundred times gravity, and then they became Super Saiyan!

This is a one of a kind room....

Liu Yi suddenly found another place that he liked besides the swimming pool.

Hunter Organization....I did not come in vain here!

“Sister, this room is great!”

After he came out of the room, Liu Yi immediately said to Li Biyue, “Practicing under increased gravity....Is too fun....Can I come here again?”

“Of course, of course, you can!”

Seeing this chance of survival, Liu Yufan quickly appeased this seemingly little monster Liu Yu.

“You are now officially a Hunter from our Hunter Organization....You can come here whenever you like. You can use the room as much as you like. Old man Ma, this is Li Biyue’s younger brother and he is one of ours, you can bend the rules for him.”

“Many thanks, Director Liu.”

Seeing the black blade rested on Liu Yufan’s neck, Liu Yi could not help but want to laugh.

Sure enough, sister is indeed powerful.

“Humph!”

Hearing what Liu Yufan said, Li Biyue’s heart was a bit uncomfortable.

On the side, old man Ma touched his beard and said.

“Kid, if you want to use this test room, that’s actually okay. However, I am in charge of this place....Ahem, if you want to use....”

“Relax, uncle Ma, you will not short on liquor.”

There ain’t no such thing as a free lunch; Liu Yi knew this truth.

Giving a bottle of liquor for this unique practice chance was already a great deal for him.

“Hehe....Kid, well said!”

Old man Ma immediately stroked his beard happily, “You are a promising young man! I, Ma Hua, am not a common drunkard, my liquor requirement is high. The liquor must, at least....”

“Old man Ma, you dare to threaten my younger brother?”

Li Biyue glared at him, making old man Ma inwardly shivered.

“Ahem....”

Old man Ma dryly coughed twice, and then said, "Later on...You can just bring this old man boiled water...."

"Hehe....all right...."

Liu Yi wanted to laugh, My sister is really good.

"Come, walk to the practice room with me, I am going to give you some Hunter's skills."

Li Biyue led Liu Yi out of there.

Liu Yufan finally relieved, D\*mn, I am saved.

Ten Steps To Milk A Man, this is not over yet.

In any case, this is my place, I will have plenty opportunity to deal with him.

Moreover, as an A-level Hunter, Li Biyue would always go out to do big tasks and often not in Northern Dragon City.

This kid's strength is still far away from me, if I want to squeeze him, it would be too easy, hehe....

Liu Yi was naturally unaware that he was already blacklisted by Liu Yufan, and he would face constant hardships in the future.

"Most of our Hunters are people with abilities, although our strength can be graded with jade stars, there are some differences with the cultivators."

Li Biyue stood in the middle of a spacious practice room and said to Liu Yi face-to-face.

"We don't have any of those immortal cultivation techniques like those immortal cultivators, that can enhance our body's immortal strength so that it can continue to progress. But Hunters are intelligent, they invented some skills that can make our abilities to continuously progress. But you are an immortal cultivator so Hunter's ability training isn't going to work with you. But there are some skills that I think might be useful for you."

Li Biyue has already regarded Liu Yi as her own younger brother so she did not hide anything from him.

"Is it difficult to learn?"

Liu Yi somewhat apprehensively asked.

My sister is not a cultivator, she certainly won't be able to directly pass the skills to my head like Fox sister.

I am not smart, and my comprehension is only so-so.

If she teaches me in a normal way....Will I be able to learn it?

"Don't worry....I, Li Biyue, never fail to teach other people."

The beautiful woman before him suddenly smiled, but to Liu Yi, that smile seemed scary....

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 168

## Chapter 168 Sister, I Want To

“Wait....Sister, I have a question for you!” Liu Yi stopped his footsteps and asked.

“About what? Tell me.”

Anything Liu Yi might ask, Li Biyue would not hide anything from him.

“Sister, I am a bit curious, how do people with ability practice their skills?”

“It’s actually a set of method to cultivate our ability.” Li Biyue smiled, “This method was discovered by one of the predecessors of the Hunter Organization. It will turn our ability into a kind of energy that will slip into our body’s meridians. In this way, we can open our star jade.”

“So it’s like that. It seems like it’s not that complex....”

“It sounds easy, but the actual practice is very difficult.”

Li Biyue somewhat enviously looked at Liu Yi, “It’s not as good as your immortal cultivation method that can easily make your body’s heavenly circulation flow smoothly. Therefore, our Hunter’s growth is limited. I heard the immortal cultivators can reach the Heavenly Realm and so on....But our Hunter can only reach the S level, and the legendary SS level. Although these two levels are very powerful, they can’t be compared to the immortal cultivator’s Heavenly Realm.”

“It seems like the predecessor’s method of cultivating the ability is still not perfect.” Liu Yi slightly pondered.

Li Biyue waved her hand and said, “Let those elders’ rack their brains with this. Come on, sister will teach you some knowledge about our Hunter Organization.”

After that, she reached out her palm, which then emitted a mass of black gas that constantly wound around her palm.

“The energy of our Hunter’s ability, frankly speaking, is actually the

spiritual energy. This spiritual energy is the foundation of our ability. Sister's ability, which you have seen, is the shadow."

With that, Li Biyue's body suddenly turned into a black light and disappeared before Liu Yi's eyes.

Then, Liu Yi felt a cold wind behind him.

He quickly turned around and saw Li Biyue slowly crawled out from his shadow.

Holy sh\*t....

This ability is too weird....

Not to mention a fight, this can even make people scared to death!

"As long as there is light....There will be a shadow...." Seeing Liu Yi's surprised look, Li Biyue could not help but smile, "My foolish brother, don't worry, sister is not going to use this against you."

"That's good, that's good...." Liu Yi was relieved, This ability is really strange....

"Using spiritual energy to strengthen our ability is just the first step." Li Biyue took two steps back and said, "There are many wondrous uses for our Hunter's spiritual energy. For example, using it for our Shadow Steps."

With that, her body suddenly flashed and continuously appeared in every corner of the room in succession.

Liu Yi was dazzled, he thought it would be similar to his Fox Sister's Spirit Fox Steps!

"This is our unique Shadow Steps." Li Biyue's figure flashed again and appeared in front of Liu Yi, "Shadow Steps is a very strange ability. It can make you move at a short distance instantaneously, like a teleportation. How far is the maximum distance depends on your spiritual energy."

"Teleportation!" Liu Yi was really shocked this time.

This technique was different than the Spirit Fox Steps. Spirit Fox Steps was a technique to move fast and elegant, which, although fast, not to the point of teleportation!



Shadow Steps is actually a technique similar to teleportation, d\*mn....This made Liu Yi thought about the speed of the 'Grim Reaper.'

Awesome, this is so awesome.

"Can, can I practice it?" Liu Yi cannot help but ask.

"This Shadow Steps has always been practiced by our Hunters' with ability, but those Hunters who are cultivators, they have their own unique Steps. I don't know if the immortal power can support the movement of the Shadow Steps." Li Biyue blinked her pair of seemingly-can-discharge-electricity eyes and said.

"Let me try it! I am very curious!" Liu Yi eagerly said.

"What if there is a danger!" Li Biyue worriedly shook her head.

"It's okay, sister, everything's gonna be fine. This is just a Step technique, not some awful killer!" Liu Yi decided to act cute, "Sister, sister, sister, you said you were going to teach me some skills....I promise, if there's something wrong, I will immediately stop,okay?"

" ....."

Liu Yi continued to blink his eyes.

Li Biyue finally relented and said. "Fine, but if there is any danger, I want you to stop right away, you hear me?"

"Em!" Liu Yi quickly nodded, success!

Haha, I am going to learn this awesome Shadow Steps!

"Listen, I will teach you this skill but you need to seriously remember it."

Because there was no transferring skill method, Li Biyue had to teach him orally.

Liu Yi earnestly listened and used his breathing technique enhance his memory.

Li Biyue told him the method on how to circulate his power on his legs and feet.

If this was in the past, if he listened to this kind of thing, Liu Yi would

certainly be sleepy. But after having the breathing technique, as if he discovered a treasure, his learning became more relaxed.

Soon, all of Li Biyue's words were clearly printed in his mind.

The method to circulate the energy was not very complicated.

"Are you ready?" Looking at Liu Yi as if he was digesting something, Li Biyue asked.

"It should be." Liu Yi took two deep breaths. His immortal force flew out of his body and wrapped around his feet.

"Sister, how far is it from this spot to the wall?"

"It should be around 100 meters." Li Biyue gave her estimation.

This practice room was really big.

"Em....Then I will try to move that far...."

Liu Yi has a marvelous feeling, as if, at this moment, he can shuttle back and forth in the universe.

He used his breathing technique to adjust his mind and then launched the Shadow Steps. With a "pop" sound, he disappeared in front of Li Biyue.

At that moment, Liu Yi felt as if he was crossing the outer space!

So cool!

When he was excited, a "bang" sound was heard, he seemed to hit a truck. He felt severe pain all over his body and his bones felt loose. He directly appeared in that room again, lying face down on the floor.

The wooden man that was used for practice was directly hit by him, making it flew and crashed into the wall.

"Oh, sh\*t...."

Liu Yi felt dizzy and pain all over his body.

"Idiot brother, are you okay!?" With a "pop," Li Biyue instantly appeared on Liu Yi's side and held him up.

At the same time, a surge of cold energy poured into his body; This should be Li Biyue's spiritual force.

Unexpectedly, spiritual energy can also heal injuries.

“How could you move your first Shadow Steps that far! This Shadow Steps is not that easy, and it’s very difficult to control its direction! You should try a small movement first, one or two meter, and then you can increase little by little! But just now....How could you directly move fifty meters away! You’re lucky you only hit a wooden man, what if your body embedded into the wall....”

“I know that was wrong....” Liu Yi grimaced, “But....Shadow Steps is really good....”

“I did not think that Immortal Energy could actually support the Shadow Steps.” Li Biyue looked somewhat disappointed, “I thought this is uniquely possessed by our Hunters.”

“Don’t worry, sister, I wouldn’t tell this skill to other immortal cultivators.” Liu Yi winked his eyes at Li Biyue, “Say, I am also a Hunter, right?”

“Em, if you really think so, then that’s good. Otherwise, if all the immortal cultivators mastered our Hunter Organization’s skill....I am afraid our Hunter Organization would be directly dissolved.”

“No way....Sister, rest assured....What other skills can you teach me?” Liu Yi cannot help but ask.

Although this Shadow Steps made him eat a bitter pill, he also ate its sweetness.

“Since you can learn this Shadow Steps....Then you can try this one.” Li Biyue gave a thoughtful look, but also seemed hesitant.

“What’s the matter, sister?”

“This....Is our Hunter’s most unique ability....I don’t know if this would be a blessing or a curse for you....I am still hesitant....”

Li Biyue told him the truth.

“Sister! Let me try it!” Liu Yi quickly said, “I am also a Hunter, so I should learn Hunter’s ability!”

“Very well, if your immortal energy can also support this skill, then that is

truly against-the-heaven.”

Li Biyue stood up, reached out her hand horizontally to her side, and slowly said.

“This is our Hunter’s strongest and most unique skill.” When she spoke, a black energy wrapped her body, “This technique can summon our Natal Pet to battle for us.”

“Natal Pet?”

This was a new term for Liu Yi and Lin Tong so they both were curious.

“Actually, there is a beast hiding in every human’s heart.” There seemed to be a power within Li Biyue’s voice as she said word by word, “If this beast is released....It will become your strength....I am going to show you this skill. I will release the beast in my heart....”

With that, black crystal awns suddenly burst out of her eyes.

Then, traces of black light appeared on the ground and started to interweave together.

Like a spell, something seemed to slowly appear.

And within that spell array, something big slowly crawled out.

“Roar!”

That creature roared twice, making the whole practice room tremble.

This creature is around three to four meters tall. After it crawled out from the ground, Liu Yi can finally see what it looks like.

It looked like a Leopard, but not an ordinary Leopard. Because its body is wrapped in a thick black smoke, like a shadow.

“This is my Natal Pet, Shadow Leopard.”

The Shadow Leopard roared and then dutifully lied down on Li Biyue’s side.

Lying down, it’s height was as high as Li Biyue’s shoulder.

Seeing this imposing and majestic Shadow Leopard, Liu Yi can’t help but feel a pang of envy.

Natal Pet....Is really good....

I want one, I want one!

“Sister, this is good, teach me!”

“Em....Listen to my chant.”

# Mai Kitsune Waifu - Chapter 169

## Chapter 169 A Cute Pet

Li Biyue told Liu Yi the summoning chant of Natal Pet .

Liu Yi memorized it in his mind and then slowly digested it.

“First, return to your heart to look for your inner beast....” Li Biyue told Liu Yi to close his eyes and then gently said in his ear. “The Natal Pet in each person is different....For elder sister, it is Leopard. For Liu Yufan, it is a wild Boar. Sister is also curious with what would your Natal Pet look like....”

Oh my God....Liu Yufan’s pet is basically a pig!

F\*ck, will my pet be even more ugly....?

It must handsome, I am sure of it....

Liu Yi closed his eyes and sank his awareness deep down inside.

On a lake. Liu Yi’s innermost being was terrifyingly calm, the surface of the lake was dark, calm and full of mystery.

When Liu Yi’s consciousness arrived there, an image of a figure began to appear on the surface of the lake.

The surface of the lake continued to show different portraits.

Ma Yixuan....Murong Die....Ma Yuanyuan....

It was his past memories.

Even some of the memories that he had already forgotten were still clear in this place.

Looking at this lake of memory, Liu Yi felt somewhat strange.

Because he had heard that when people were dying they will recall their past events.

I definitely am not dying....

“Visualize!” Li Biyue’s voice penetrated into Liu Yi’s heart, “Find the hidden beast in your heart!”

Where am I going to find it here....

Liu Yi made a decision. He clenched his teeth and made himself sink into the lake water.

The lake remained dark, but in this darkness, from the corner of his eyes, a pair of eyes seemed to stare at him.

Liu Yi turned his head and immediately saw that pair of red eyes.

It’s too dark here....

Liu Yi cannot see the full form of that shadow and can only see its red eyes.

Those red eyes were extremely complex.

From that eye, Liu Yi can see the love, anger, fear, resentment....

Why would it have such a complex emotion....?

My inner beast....Should consist of all of my suppressed emotions....

It should be more partial to the other me.

That devil me....

Liu Yi reached out his hand, but that shadow suddenly disappeared.

“Do not be afraid, I am here for you.” Liu Yi quickly said, “I am going to get you out of here....”

Those red eyes appeared on Liu Yi’s side as if watching him.

“Come with me....I am not going to suppress you here....”

Liu Yi tried to calm his beast.

But at this time, those red eyes, being driven by the shadow, suddenly stormed into Liu Yi.

He felt his whole body shook and his mind went chaotic.

A lot of screams and roaring sounds echoed in his brain.

At the same time, various emotions also appeared in Liu Yi’s mind. At this moment, Liu Yi almost went crazy!

Holy sh\*t....Releasing inner beast is actually so difficult....

No! I, this father will certainly overcome this!

With this pet, in the future, my strength will go even further!

Liu Yi, you can do it!

Liu Yi controlled his trembling body and tried to calm his jumbled mind.

His mind was chaotic....

As if he cannot think anything....

Liu Yi suddenly felt tired....He wanted to sleep, wanted to rest....Wanted to give up all the thinking....

“Liu Yi, wake up!”

At this time, a woman’s voice vaguely came into Liu Yi’s ears.

Is this....

Fox sister....?

Oh, that’s right....

Liu Yi suddenly remembered, I cannot rest yet, and I cannot sleep either....

Because, how am I going to release Fox sister....?

Fox sister is still trapped in my hand....

Wang Yuzheng’s mom is still waiting for me to save her....

And my future girlfriend in the University is still waiting for me!

Liu Yi, wake up!

Liu Yi opened his eyes. At this moment, he had left the bottom of the lake and back at Li Biyue’s side.

Like a fish that was just pulled out of that lake water, his body was covered in cold sweats and out of breath.

“How’s it going?”

Li Biyue immediately asked with concern.

“Seems to be a success....” Liu Yi wiped the cold sweat from his forehead, “I



will try to summon it....”

At this time, Liu Yi was still very excited. Especially when he glanced at the huge black Shadow Leopard lying by his sister’s side; he became even more excited.

I will also have such an awesome pet....

Oh yeah!

But at this time, Li Biyue was somewhat worried instead.

What if my brother summon....A scorpion?

Wouldn’t he become closer to that man of legend?

I hope it’s not a scorpion....

Liu Yi reached out his hand, three strands of light simultaneously went out of his finger.

Black light, white light, and red light.

Looking at these three strands of light that wound around her brother, Li Biyue was shocked.

How come there are so many strange forces....?

“Come out....my beast....”

Liu Yi felt the strength in his body has reached the rising tide position, and it continued to well up.

Soon, it can no longer be suppressed....

“Whirr, whirr, whirr...”

On the ground, the three strands of light continued to interweave, forming a spell array.

From within that spell array, a black smoke suddenly billowed. Inside this black smoke, a form seemed to appear.

Liu Yi was excited.

My own Natal Pet!

It must be awesome!

Come out, come out!

Soon, the black smoke dissipated.

A skinny figure appeared in front of Liu Yi.

Liu Yi's jaw almost dropped.

Shoot!....This has gotta be a mistake, are you kidding me!

This is my Natal Pet?

The nearby Li Biyue was also stunned. From her look, she clearly wanted to laugh, but she did not dare to do it.

"Oh nooo....Why....why is this happening....My summoning posture is perfect....Nooo, I want to start over!" Liu Yi wailed.

"It is your Natal Pet....No matter how many times you redo your summon, and no matter what kind of posture you use....It is still going to be like this...." Li Biyue covered her mouth to hide her smile and said, "It's okay....I think it's quite cute...."

"What cute! Why is my Natal Pet a little Skeleton! I, this father, am not a (Taoist) priest!"

Looking at the 1.5 m tall black Skeleton in front of him, Liu Yi wanted to cry but has no tears.

His mother!....How could it be my beast!

Is this skinny little skeleton really my inner beast?

It looks like it lacked calcium during its growth!

"It is indeed cute...." Li Biyue looked at that little skeleton and smiled widely, "Maybe it's powerful. After all, it is my brother's pet!"

"I hope so...."

Liu Yi could not help but sigh.

He held out his hand to point at the distant wooden man and said. "Go, little black, get him!" This skeleton is black, so I am just going to call it black.

"Ji, ji, ji...."

The little skeleton strangely laughed twice and then ran toward that wooden man.

To Liu Yi's surprise, it reached out its right hand to rip off its left arm, held that left bone arm high, and started to hit the wooden man with it.

"Shoot! Sh\*t! F\*ck!"

Liu Yi was about to cry.

What in his mother is this!

I must be seeing it wrong!

Someone is playing with me!

"Hey, this kind of attack....Is quite cute." Li Biyue gave her fair evaluation.

No....I don't want it to be cute....

Liu Yi clutched his forehead.

What is the use of this pet....?

To act cute?

Can acting cute kill the enemy!?

Or is it to trick the enemy?

"Actually....Hunters do not always rely on their pets...." Li Biyue tried to comfort Liu Yi.

"Aaa! This is not fair!"

Glancing at the fierce Shadow Leopard by Li Biyue's side, he wanted to cry even more.

At this time, the practice room door was suddenly pushed open by Liu Yufan.

"Ten Steps To Milk A Man, there are some issues with your formalities...."

Before Liu Yufan finished his words, the skeleton next to the wooden man suddenly moved.

It attached its left bone arm back, and then grabbed a mass of red fireball with its right hand and threw it at Liu Yufan.

This red fireball was blazingly fast, it almost instantly arrived in front of Liu Yufan.

Liu Yufan was immediately surprised and launched his Shadow Steps to dodge to the side.

“Boom!”

That apple-size fireball instantly exploded. Its strong blast impacted the practice room door, blowing it up.[read this on subudai11 dot com](#) The force of the explosion was not inferior to a grenade.

And before Liu Yi and the other reacted, the little Skeleton continued to attack automatically.

Now, it threw an iceball with its left hand and fireball with its right hand.

“What the...What is this!”

Liu Yufan continued to use his Shadow Steps to dodge the small Skeleton’s attack.

Soon, the practice room was marked with various blast sites and ice spots.

“What is this sh\*t, let me kill you!”

Liu Yufan was anxious. He instantly appeared in front of that small Skeleton and viciously punched it with his golden fist.

“Stop!”

Li Biyue instantly moved.

A black blade appeared from the void and swung at Liu Yufan’s arm.

“Are you crazy!” Liu Yufan was surprised and immediately retracted his fist.

But the wind from that punch had fell upon the small Skeleton.

“Bam!”

The small Skeleton was directly blown into a pile of broken bones.

Watching this sudden scene, Liu Yi was stunned.

His small Skeleton who, just now, suddenly turned super for a few

seconds....In the blink of an eye, has become a pile of broken bones....

This change happened too fast....

“My....Natal Pet....”

Liu Yi’s heart began to ache.

Oh my god, my small Skeleton is very powerful!

Although it looks cute, its fire is very fierce!

“Oh, so it’s your Natal Pet.”

Liu Yufan was very pleased, he sneered, “But after eating the wind of my fist, it’s basically a scrap now. Gee, Li Biyue, I feel sorry for your brother. To compensate this, I will let his procedural problem pass.”

# Chapter 170 Are You Her Lover?

Liu Yufan initially wanted to embarrass Liu Yi because a lot of Liu Yi's information was not too clear.

Such a vague information was definitely not going to be accepted by the strict Hunter Organization's board.

Liu Yufan planned to use this to show his prestige.

But he was happier now because the Natal Pet of Li Biyue's younger brother was now dead!

With the death of his Natal Pet, his Hunter's career was basically over!

Why would they call themselves Hunters? Not only because they hunt demons, but also because they can summon Natal Pets!

What is a Hunter?

It's a profession where the Hunter brings his hounds to hunt the prey!

That is a Hunter!

Without their hounds, the Hunter would not be a Hunter!

Ten Steps To Milk A Man is already a waste.

Hahaha!

Even if I give him the Hunter identity, he wouldn't have much improvement.

"Come on, this is your paperwork, take it, bring this to Leng Mo to change it with your identity card." Liu Yufan handed Liu Yi the paperwork.

Liu Yi quickly took it from Liu Yufan's hand.

His mother! Exchanging this piece of paper with my Natal Pet is really not worth it!

When Liu Yi's heart still ached, the pile of broken bones on the floor suddenly shook.

As if these broken bones were a bunch of magnets.

These bone fragments began to gather and then started to assemble. Soon, it quickly converted into two-meter long giant dog skeleton.

“What is this?” Liu Yufan was silly.

What kind of bone is this....How could it able to self-assemble?

Is it Transformers?

“Au, au!”

That giant dog skeleton roared twice, its skull suddenly spewed a mouthful of red flame.

The flame soon spread all over its body, the whole bones were covered with red flame.

At this point, Liu Yi’s Natal Pet was angrily staring at Liu Yufan and its mouth constantly spewing flames.

“You destroyed my brother’s Natal Pet, now you’re dead.” Li Biyue touched her black blade.

Liu Yufan’s forehead was filled with cold sweat.

D\*mn....This evil dog is giving me a lot of pressure....

Behind me, Li Biyue is waiting for me, sh\*t, there’s wolf in the front and tiger in the back!

You have got to be kidding me! What’s with this Ten Step To Milk A Man’s Natal Pet!

Even after being destroyed, it actually can reassemble itself!

And after it reassembled, it becomes more vicious!

D\*mn it!

“Xiao Hei (little black), come here!”

Looking at his newly reassembled Natal Pet, the joy in Liu Yi’s heart was hard to describe.

Not only his Natal Pet got its life back, it also became more ferocious. Nothing was more fun that this!

“Auu!”

Xiao Hei howled twice and then leaped into Liu Yi's arms.

The red blood devil flame from little Black was originally his, so its flame cannot injure Liu Yi.

Holding his dog's skull, Liu Yi felt the two of them were like flesh and blood.

It is my Natal Pet indeed....

I really looked down on it just now.

You can't judge a book by its cover. Liu Yi once again understood the meaning of these words.

Little Black's form started to change again. It returned to its previous 1.5-meter skeleton form.

“Brother....Your pet is amazing....” Li Biyue was amazed, “I wonder what would its future development be like!

“Em, I will take a good care of it....But, can Natal Pet's strength be enhanced?” Liu Yi asked.

“Our Natal Pet will grow along with our strength.” Li Biyue said, “And that includes your Natal Pet.”

It can grow along with my strength?

Liu Yi wondered if it can be fed with his spiritual energy, just like the spiritual animal.

Liu Yi turned to Xiao Hei and started transferring his spiritual energy to it like when he gave his spiritual energy to Xiao Cai.

It really is!

Little Black let out a comfortable purr, showing him that it felt comfortable.

It behave similar to when I fed Xiao Cai, nice!

Liu Yi was excited.

“Since you have your own Natal Pet....Now you're a genuine Hunter.” Li



Biyue walked over, reached out her hand to touch Liu Yi's hair, and somewhat said with emotion.

After this, I don't know if this will turn into a blessing or a curse.

But no matter what....I will stand in front of my brother to protect him....

Li Biyue did not want to lose someone again....

"Em, I am now a Hunter! In the future, if I do a task, will I get additional reward?" Liu Yi smiled and then asked.

"Greedy ghost...." Li Biyue endearingly looked at Liu Yi, and then said with a smile, "When you become a Hunter, you will receive a fixed salary."

"Huh? Fixed salary?" Liu Yi's eyes suddenly emitted many small stars.

"Of course, the Hunter Organization is different that the Immortal Cultivation world. We did not focus solely in the mainland, we have many overseas branches. Our Organization is very large, one way to retain our internal staffs and experts is by giving us wages." Li Biyue explained, "Our Hunter Organization has many conglomerations, and are supported by many tycoons. So, you don't need to worry about the economic aspect."

"Then....How much is my monthly salary...."

Liu Yi was more concerned about his livelihood.

I am still a high school student! If I could start making money to support my family, that's wonderful!

Aren't all people like this!?

They study hard in school so they can finally go to work to earn money to support their families.

This continues throughout their lives.

Their mortal lives.

"Our wages is calculated yearly. Since you are a D-level Hunter, your annual salary is ten thousand. Although it's not much, you can continue to add your income by completing the mission."

"D-level Hunter annual salary is ten thousand....

There were stars in Liu Yi's eyes

This is great!

Although it's not a lot, better than nothing!

"Sister, what is your monthly salary?"

"It's the same like the mission reward, it increases ten times per level." Li Biyue gently said with a smile.

Holy sh\*t!

Then sister's annual salary is....Ten million!

That's too much....I am so envious!

"Us Hunters do not live by wages, remember this." Li Biyue opened her mouth to say, "There are not that many Hunters in the world, it's not like you imagine. Most are logistic personnel. Moreover, there are many low-level Hunters, they can only perform some low level task."

"Then....Sister, an A-level Hunter like you, how many of them in this world?"

"In China, there are only two people." Li Biyue proudly smiled, "The A-level Hunters in the world are also few and far between. The total number is probably around ten people."

A-level Hunter is actually so rare!

No wonder Wei Yi was not very optimistic about being a Hunter!

Their Earthly Realm experts are only about ten people....

I am afraid there are far more of them in the Immortal Cultivation world!

"Liu Yi, Hunter Organization is just a stepping stone for you." Lin Tong, who was lying on Liu Yi's shoulder all this time, reminded him, "Do not focus yourself in this place. Remember your words, you want to establish your foundation in the immortal cultivation world!"

"I remember, Fox sister....But I will learn a lot in this Hunter Organization."

Liu Yi sensed his pet skeleton Xiao Hei, that he has already put back inside his body, and his confidence surged up.

After I raise Xiao Hei with my spiritual energy, Xiao Hei will definitely grow more powerful!

Too bad my spiritual cultivation is low, so I can't practice the most powerful technique of the spiritual cultivation, possessed by the spirit beast.

Lin Tong once said to him, if he wanted to cast the possessed by the spirit beast technique, his spiritual cultivation must reach a certain minimum threshold.

But Liu Yi was not a spiritual cultivator, but body cultivator.

If he wanted to reach that minimum threshold, that was basically impossible.

Liu Yi somewhat regretted this.

If he can cast the possessed by the spirit beast, wouldn't that be awesome?

"Don't be greedy." Sensing his mind, Lin Tong hastened to remind him, "Immortal cultivation cannot be rushed, otherwise, you will turn into a devil!"

"I understand...."

Liu Yi obediently promised.

He knew Fox sister's words were definitely right.

Since my power progression is so fast, I begin to feel impatient.

"Very well, brother, how about I take you for a dinner?" Li Biyue was somewhat tired, and said, "After practicing so late, I should treat my brother with food and drink."

"Okay....Where are we going to eat?" Liu Yi also felt a bit hungry.

His body was still growing, and after entering the world of immortal cultivation, besides capturing the energy from the world around him, he still needed to eat food for nutritional intact.

This has been a busy night for him. After acquiring spider's essence, learning the Shadow Steps and summoning his Natal Pet, Liu Yi was hungry.

“Why of course we are going to sister’s home.”

Li Biyue played with her sleeves and said, “I haven’t cooked for a long time....Brother must taste elder sister’s craft.”

The nearby Liu Yufan’s eyes were red with jealousy, at the same time, his intestines turned green with regret.

D\*mn, why would I give him the paperwork after feeling happy just now!

His mother! Now it’s too late to regret!

Especially now since Li Biyue has invited him for a dinner in her house!

His mother, that is my greatest dream!

How could this brat easily get it!

This is unacceptable!

So unfair!

Liu Yufan really wanted to explode in anger!

D\*mn it!

This is not over yet, I must find a way to kill this smelly kid!

“Come on, let’s go get you the card and then go directly to my house.”

With that, Li Biyue turned around and walked out of the room.

“Hurry up....Or you won’t get dinner.”

“Yes, yes!” Liu Yi sheepishly rushed after her.

“F\*ck!”

Liu Yufan fiercely punched the ground.

The practice room floor suddenly cracked and started to spread out.

“Since you dare to grab my woman, I am going to kill you!”

At this time, Liu Yi did not realize that he has completely angered his immediate superior, he was now being questioned by a beauty.

“Who are you? Tell me your real name!”

He was at a loss in front of this little beauty who wore a black lace skirt.

Li Biyue told him to go here while she went to fetch something.

Thus, at this time, Liu Yi was being harassed by this liaison officer.

“If you don’t tell me your real name, I am not going to give you this ID card!”

Leng Mo crossed her legs, blinked her eyes and asked in a playful tone.

“Tell me, are you sister Li Biyue’s....Lover?”

# Chapter 171 A Woman's Jealousy

"What?" Liu Yi blinked his eyes and said, "What a joke! I am Li Biyue's brother!"

"Pei!"

Unexpectedly, this girl Leng Mo sternly said. "Everyone knows Li Biyue's brother has already died a long time ago, did you crawl up from the grave? Are you a zombie?"

With that, she reached out her hand to pinch Liu Yi's neck.

"Your body is obviously warm! Tell me, who are you!" Leng Mo said and pulled out a knife handle from her waist.

Liu Yi was surprised, What's with that handle? Does she want to hit my head with it?

"If you don't tell me the truth, I won't be polite anymore!" Leng Mo said while touching the knife handle.

That knife handle was actually exquisitely made, with blue color and rose carving at the top.

But now matter how good it was, a knife handle without a knife can give him no harm.

"It seems like you're not afraid!" Seeing that Liu Yi without a worried look, Leng Mo suddenly shook her knife handle and said with a smile, "If I don't give you a lesson, you would think this liaison officer is a pushover!"

With that, she flicked her wrist.

A white light sword suddenly stretched out from that handle.

What the f\*ck!

This woman actually has this ability!

The sword vaguely shaped like a katana but also similar to Tang Dynasty's blade.

This sword is definitely able to cut my body.

Liu Yi did not practice any hard qigong!

Thus, Liu Yi hastily took two steps back and, at the same time, said. “Hey, hey, beauty, don’t pull out your sword! Is this the Hunter Organization’s hospitality?”

“You’re a Hunter, not a guest!” Leng Mo showed his id card, “Your ID card is here, and you still want to quibble! A sly man! Sister Biyue must have been fooled by your honeyed words!”

What....

I have the most useless mouth!

Liu Yi wanted to argue, but it seemed like Leng Mo did not give him a chance.

“Since you won’t tell me the truth, then eat my sword!” Leng Mo said and held out her sword in front of her. The tip of the sword was pointed toward Liu Yi.

Without knowing why, Liu Yi subconsciously entered the Black and White world.

A white light came straight at his shoulder like an arrow.

Liu Yi immediately turned her shoulder and dodged that light arrow.

“Bam!”

The wall behind Liu Yi suddenly split open.

“Huh?” Leng Mo was very surprised, she looked at Liu Yi with a look of disbelief, “You actually dodged my light sword? Are you a monkey?”

“You’re the monkey, how could you attack me just like that!”

Having evaded that light sword, cold sweat appeared on Liu Yi’s forehead.

This Leng Mo did not seem weak....Her light sword was really fast.

If I didn’t instinctively enter the Black and White world to slow the time down, I would have been hurt.

“You deserve it!” Leng Mo rudely said, “If you don’t tell me the truth, I will

use my sword to stab your pig brain!" With that, Leng Mo aligned the tip of her light sword toward Liu Yi's head.

"Whoa, whoa, stop it, okay...We are all colleagues here...." Liu Yi immediately said, "You can't just shout beat and kill people like that!"

"Pei, who's your colleague here? Your origin is unknown!" Leng Mo then spoke with a lovestruck look, "Sister Biyue is so perfect, so elegant....How could I let a good person like her fall into your hand!"

As she spoke, the light sword in her hand became brighter.

F\*ck, Liu Yi felt the pressure.

"You're a lesbian!"

As soon as he said that, the eyes of the people around them changed.

All of them started to retreat. No one dared to utter a word. As if Liu Yi was a dead man already.

"You said I am a lesbian? Hehehe...." A black line suddenly appeared on Leng Mo's forehead.

She lowered her head while her mouth laughed a weird laugh.

Hearing this laugh, Liu Yi felt a chill, What's wrong with this girl?

"I am a normal girl who can't be a normal girl....I can't believe you actually said I am lesbian...."

"Em....This....This...."

Liu Yi felt numb on both of his legs.

Is this girl's level high? Why would I feel this much pressure?

"Ten Steps To Milk A Man....You must pay the price for your words...."

With that, a bunch of light swords suddenly appeared behind her back and started to revolve around her.

What the f\*ck, what does this girl want to do?

But no matter what, I can't be bullied by a woman like this! Liu Yi secretly said, Fine, you want to fight, then I'll give you a fight.



“Seeing that you’re a girl I was lenient toward you.” Immortal qi started to circulate in Liu Yi’s body, “But you went too far, I am not going to let you get away with it. If you want to fight then come on!”

“Hehe....You are the most annoying kind of man....Sister Biyue is mine....Get away from sister Biyue’s side!” With that, all of the light swords suddenly flew toward Liu Yi.

“Pop, pop, pop!”

Liu Yi suddenly wrapped his right hands with frost, like a frost armor.

At the same time, the world around him turned into black and white. The speeding light swords slowed down.

Liu Yi continued to use his right hand, which was wrapped in a frost armor, to hit the light swords to the side.

But the light swords were not weak either, each time he hit one of them to the side, it chipped away his frost armor.

“Not bad....No wonder you can fool sister Biyue....However, it ends here!”

Leng Mo, the girl who was infatuated with Li Biyue, held out her hand to the air and called her light swords back.

Then, these swords started to combine to form a giant sword. Five meters long and two meters wide. It then fell on Leng Mo’s hand.

Liu Yi was stunned.

F\*ck.....

It looks like a loli carrying a sword!

Liu Yi felt a sense of deja vu!

“Ten Steps To Milk A Man, I’ll ask you one more time, are you going to leave sister Biyue or not?”

That huge light sword was held out toward Liu Yi’s head.

But Leng Mo seemed to struggle in controlling that huge sword, fragrant sweat started to appear on her forehead.

“I hate someone who forces me, or threatens me to do something....”

Liu Yi tightly clenched his fists.

He was unhappy....

Extremely unhappy.

Since you have the strength, you can just force people to do whatever you want?

Liu Yi hated this type of person....Even if that person is a cute girl.

The immortal energy continued to circulate in Liu Yi's body, ready to counter the direct attack from that huge sword.

He was not a guy who like to take a beating!

The other people nervously stared at the two of them, for fear the two of them would go all out.

Hunter Organization....Actually forbid personal fight!

Especially fighting in the entrance of the Hunter Organization....This has gone a bit too far.

But Leng Mo seemed to have no intention of stopping. She raised her huge light sword and cried.

"In that case, eat my sword!"

Just as she finished her shout, a familiar voice came from a distant corner.

"What happens here....It seems very lively...."

Leng Mo was surprised and instantly put away her light sword.

Liu Yi was still condensing his immortal energy, waiting for Leng Mo's sword to fall.

"Sister Biyue!" In the blink of an eye, Leng Mo's turned into a whole new person. She bounced up, briskly ran to Li Biyue's side, grabbed her arm, and acted like a spoiled brat. "Sister Biyue....Your brother bullies me...."

"Poof...." Liu Yi almost sprayed out a mouthful of blood.

What the h\*ll....

Are you kidding me!

The evil people complained first!

Since he was a child, this was the first time Liu Yi saw such a black belly girl!

“Little Momo, you’re the one who bullies my brother.”

Unexpectedly, Li Biyue’s eyes can instantly see through Leng Mo, this little devil, “My brother is a good kid, how could he bully you, the Hunter Organization’s famous little witch?”

Liu Yi was moved to tears.

Sure enough, sister knows me so well....

“Huhuhuh....Sister Biyue, you’re being partial to him!”

Leng Mo immediately wiped her eyes, but Liu Yi can swear that he did not see any tears in them.

This girl’s acting is absolutely superb!

“Renjia is badly bullied....Your brother is actually very bad....”

“Little Momo, I don’t like other people say bad things about my brother.”

At this time, Li Biyue’s face suddenly turned cold, “I don’t want to hear such a thing ever again, you hear me....”

“O, okay....”

As if feeling the cold stare of Li Biyue, Leng Mo’s body trembled and uncontrollably took two steps back.

“Little Momo, where is my brother’s ID card?”

“It’s, it’s here....”

Liu Yi’s heart was touched.

Although they only knew each other for a short while, Li Biyue actually defended him from people who she knew much longer than she knew him.

Alas, even a biological sister would not necessarily treat me this kind.

In the future, I have to take a good care of Li Biyue....

Yes, I must treat her like my real elder sister!

“Let’s go.”

Li Biyue slowly went to Liu Yi’s side and gently took his arm.

Li Biyue’s palm was warm, which made Liu Yi’s heart warm.

But he felt chill behind his back. He subconsciously looked back and saw Leng Mo looking at him with a face filled with resentment. It was as if her eyes can eat people.

This girl has such a big resentment....

But Li Biyue is my sister, I am not going to let her go!

Under Leng Mo’s resentful eyes, Liu Yi and Li Biyue walked into the elevator and went back to the front office.

“Sister, where do you live?”

Liu Yi still did not know where Li Biyue would take him.

“Wait here for me, you will know it soon.”

Li Biyue touched Liu Yi’s hair and then disappeared into the darkness.

This girl can really come and go without a trace....

No wonder she is an A-level expert....

I wonder when would I have that kind of power?

At that time, I can go anywhere I please, I don’t need to sit in a car anymore!

While Liu Yi was still thinking about things, a red sports car roared and stopped in front of him.

Li Biyue sat in that convertible car. She waved her hand at Liu Yi and said.

“Get in the car!”

# Chapter 172 A Woman Who 'Drive' An Airplane

"Get in the car!"

Li Biyue beckoned Liu Yi.

Oh, wow....

I just said it's convenience to move around with powers, but never thought sister actually have a beautiful sports car!

She is simply Ms. Perfect!

Hey, but this Ms. Perfect is my sister! Ha, let other people be envious of me!

Liu Yi obediently jumped into the sports car.

"Sit tight."

Li Biyue took a glance at Liu Yi, "Fasten your seatbelt."

"Sister, you are looking down on me!"

Liu Yi shook his fist and said, "No matter what, I am also a cultivator, and now, I am also a Hunter! Even if sister drives a bit faster, I do not need to wear the seatbelt!"

"This....Very well."

Li Biyue seemed to be a bit worried, but when she saw how determined Liu Yi was, she has no way to persuade him and had to agree.

Sitting in the driver's seat, she started the car and stepped on the gas.

Liu Yi secretly thought, Sister still thinks of me as a child....Why don't she just drives....I....

Before he finished, the rest of his thoughts were cut off.

Because he felt a powerful force pressing him to the back from his front, making him unable to move.

A powerful wind hit him in the face, making his facial muscles began to

twitch.

He quickly circulated his Immortal Power to cover his face....Lest it distorted his face!

WTF....

Is Li Biyue driving a car?

It's like she is 'driving' an airplane!

What kind of driving is this, aaa!

On the highway at night, the car almost reached its maximum speed!

Mother....

It almost reaches 300 kph....

How is this possible....

When Liu Yi managed to open his teary eyes and looked at the dashboard, he really wanted to cry.

How could someone drive so terrifyingly fast in the city....

Driving over 60 kph is already considered fast.

On a highway, it can even reach 80 to 120 kph....

But Li Biyue's car actually reached 300 kph!

At this time, Liu Yi noticed the truck that about to turn sideway on the front corner. If this continued, the two vehicles were going to crash into each other.

But at this time, the whole car suddenly turned into a shadow and disappeared before the truck.

But not a moment later, the sports car reformed again and appeared on the other side of the truck.

Liu Yi was horrified and started to feel his body, but found that it was still intact.

No missing parts....

My god, I am still perfect....

This is a miracle....

No....That was sister's power at work. She made the two of us, along with the car, into a shadow and dodged the obstacle!

It's no different than a miracle....

A-level Hunter is really fierce....Not only they can turn into a shadow, they also can take people along with them....And his mother's big sports car!

This is simply amazing!

I wonder when would I have such a strength....

Liu Yi was envious.

"Hold on, we're almost there."

Li Biyue's 'plane' was very convenient. Along the way, although they encountered many obstacles, she used her shadow technique to avoid them all.

It is really a super convenient ability....

If only I can have such a power, that would be nice!

While he was thinking about this, Lin Tong immediately jumped over and bit his nose.

Uh....bad, I forgot to turn off the spiritual environment....

His previous thoughts must have been heard by Lin Tong through his spiritual environment....

"You! You obviously have three kinds of peerless cultivation methods, but you still envy of this little ability! You already have a golden mountain but still greedy for a silver ring!"

"Em...."

Liu Yi was embarrassed.

He did have three powerful cultivation methods....Each one of them is peerless in the cultivation world.

And even his natal pet Xiao Hei was one of a kind.

In the future, who knows what will Xiao Hei evolve to....So long as Liu Yi kept feeding him!

At that time, I and the matchless and domineering Xiao Hei will step on the flying cloud to roam the entire cultivation world and be worshiped by all of the cultivators....

Hehe, that's just beautiful!

"We're here!"

When Liu Yi was daydreaming about the future, Li Biyue suddenly opened her mouth to say some words.

Then Liu Yi felt the sports car suddenly stopped, his whole body uncontrollably left the seat and flew to the front to the car!

Fortunately, Liu Yi was not an ordinary people; in the air, he somersaulted a few times, launched his ice skates and firmly landed on the ground.

"What the hell...."

Cold sweat immediately started to pour out of him.

This braking mode is just too dangerous....

It threw me out of the car!

"That's way I told to fasten your seatbelt...."

Li Biyue rebuked and then lovingly looked at Liu Yi, "Are you hurt?"

"No....I am fine...."

Liu Yi patted his clothes.

This is just a small matter, a piece of cake.

I can even defeat a four star monster by my own two hands!

Under ten times gravity!

Next holiday, I must use this ten times gravity! This is my Super Saiyan training!

"This is my house, come in and sit down." support the translator, read this on [subudai11.com](http://subudai11.com)



After Li Biyue parked the car, she beckoned Liu Yi with her finger.

When Liu Yi turned around to look at Li Biyue's house, he immediately opened his mouth in surprise.

Shantytown!

Sister actually lives in Shantytown!

According to him, with Li Biyue's financial resources, she should have live in a villa, a condo, or something like that....

But he never expected her to live in this old Shantytown!

This Shantytown is one of the oldest building in Northern Dragon City.

This building was made with red bricks and it has an old style large corridor in it.

Although Liu Yi's family condition was ordinary, they lived in a much better place than this Shantytown.

"Sister ....Really lives here?"

Seeing Liu Yi's astonished eyes, Li Biyue could not help but rebuke.

"What? You look down on this place? Do you see people differently according to where they live?"

"Em, no, no....I just thought that with sister's money, you wouldn't live in such a place...."

"What kind of place should I live in?"

Li Biyue gently said, "Even if it's a big mansion, what's the use if I only live alone? It would be as quiet as a coffin."

"This...."

Liu Yi did not expect Li Biyue to say such words.

What is her true character ....?

Sometimes she's warm but sometimes she's cold....

But toward me, her younger brother, she always treats me warmly.

But to other people, she seemed cold.

"I am always all over the country to do missions so my living place is quite simple."

Li Biyue continued, "Although it looks shabby from the outside, the inside is good. Do you want to come?"

"Of course, of course, I want to come!"

Liu Yi hurriedly followed behind Li Biyue walking upstairs.

On the third floor, Li Biyue stood before a door and took out a key.

At this time, someone suddenly pushed the door next to them.

A quivering old lady holding a plate of steaming dumplings came out of that door.

Although the old lady's legs seemed to be not as good as before, her spirit was quite good.

"Ai....When I heard the footsteps, I knew Yueyue is back. Here, these are our family's stuffed dumplings for tonight, come take it, Yueyue certainly hasn't eaten yet. Taste grandma Wang's craft."

With that, she gave the dumplings to Li Biyue.

"Ai, grandma Wang....Your legs aren't good, yet you still want to send me these dumplings....You are too kind...."

"Ai, what's with this too kind, if not for you, we would have no place to live. Quickly take it, eat while they're still hot."

"Okay then, I accept it. Thank you, grandma Wang. It's windy out here, you better get inside quickly!"

"Eh, eh, girl, you are a caring person. I am going in, remember to eat while it's hot!"

"I know, grandma Wang. Please go back to the house!"

Seeing Li Biyue gently helped the old lady entering the house, Liu Yi did not know what to say.

Which one....Is the real Li Biyue....

"It seems like we have the main food already."

After sending back the old lady, Li Biyue came back with the stuffed dumplings and gave Liu Yi a playful smile.

“Grandma Wang’s craft is good, you are in for a treat today.”

“Are your relationship with your neighbors this good?”

Liu Yi felt strange.

Externally, Li Biyue was not a very cold person.

“This is a long story.”

Li Biyue said and reached out to open the door, “Let’s get inside first and then I’ll tell you.”

“Okay....”

This was the second time for Liu Yi to enter a girl’s room. The first time was when he went to Murong Die’s house.

It can be said that Liu Yi has seen all of the secrets in Murong Die’s room.

When he went inside Li Biyue’s room, he found out that the inside was a whole lot different than the building’s shabby outside appearance.

Although the room was small, with a bedroom, a kitchen, a narrow living room, plus a small toilet.

But the room’s arrangement was very beautiful. There were pink decorations throughout the room. The room appeared very warm and also very cute.

“Have a seat, I am going to prepare two dishes.”

The room was really small, he estimated that the area was around thirty square meters.

After Li Biyue put the dumplings away, she started to prepare the dinner for two people.

“When I first arrived, I was not very familiar with them....But, once when I came back from a mission, I was suddenly woken up from my sleep.”

Li Biyue reached out for a kitchen knife and began to cut the vegetables, “It seemed like a few gangsters want to demolish the building. They bullied a

lot of the residents. I did not like they woke me up from my sleep so I went out and taught them a lesson. Since then, the residents are very grateful to me....”

“Gangsters want to demolish the building?”

Liu Yi was somewhat confused.

“Don’t you know?”

Li Biyue smiled, “That’s right, my brother is still in school....There are things that you don’t understand.”

She said, picked up the carrots, and threw them into the air.

Then she waved her kitchen knife several times, cutting those carrots evenly into many pieces. They then fell into the plate.

“Some developers fancy this piece of land for a very long time but they want to buy cheap....The price that they offer is too low. Even if this is a Shantytown, it’s unacceptable.”

Liu Yi curiously asked, “How much per meter square is it?”

# Chapter 173 Hello Sister

“One thousand.”

Liu Yi was taken aback by this answer from Li Biyue.

Now the housing price has been on the rise in Northern Dragon City, which is the economic hub of North East Province. Although the wage level was still low, the housing price is already on the same level as a first tier City.

In Northern Dragon City, the price for a very basic house is about nine thousand or ten thousand per square meter.

Moreover, the real estate developers in Northern Dragon City were very dirty, the usable area for a 60 square meter house was often only 30 square meters!

If you ask Liu Yi, who is the most hated group of people in the Northern Dragon City compared to the underworld gang, the answer would be real estate developers!

Even if Liu Yi was just a high school student, regarding the housing price, he more or less understood.

After all, this is the biggest problem concerning the people's livelihood.

“One thousand yuan per square meter? Are you kidding me!”

For a regular room like Li Biyue's house, the total area is around 30 square meters, it means that a family who owned this type of house can only get....30 thousand yuan!

Where can they buy another house for 30 thousand yuan?

At most, they could only buy a bathroom!

This is so unfair!

“Yes, they will give one thousand, not more.”

Li Biyue continued to cut the vegetables and lit the stove, “The residents here were naturally reluctant to sell and the two sides were in a deadlock

for a while. Finally, the real estate developer hired a large number of underworld gang people to forcefully demolish the building.”

“That is too sinister!”

Liu Yi somewhat cannot imagine.

Violent relocation of people is always a hot topic, so a lot of companies usually employ a more subtle approach. They would not dare to directly expel people.

“The underworld gang is used as thugs to do the dirty work.”

Li Biyue told her brother, who she thought has never been in contact with underworld gang, “They are much more effective than the government or developers.”

“How could they do this!”

Liu Yi clenched his fist, “Is there no law in here!”

“I have taught them a lesson once.”

Li Biyue said, “I hope they won’t come for the second time.”

As she spoke, she scrambled to find ingredients, seasoning, or something. Stop talking about this, I will let you taste my craft....”

With that, a burst of fire suddenly appeared. Li Biyue exclaimed, quickly moved the pot away and put out the fire by spraying it with tap water.

The tap water finally extinguish the flame on the pot. But Liu Yi was stunned.

His beautiful and powerful sister ....Is seemingly unable to cook!

The kitchen was like a battlefield.

This was the words of someone’s wise ancestors!

At this time, before Liu Yi’s eyes, the kitchen was more terrible than the battlefield.

Soon, the house was filled with black smoke and wrapped Liu Yi.

Liu Yi felt as if he was in hell, beside the choking smell of smoke, he cannot

feel anything.

His mother....

So terrible....

Is this also sister's special ability?

Liu Yi seemed to hear footsteps within the smoke, followed by the sound of someone opening the window.

The cold wind and the influx of fresh air made Liu Yi feel reborn.

"The dish is ready...."

Li Biyue put a plate of dark unknown objects on the table.

Looking at this group of unknown black objects, Liu Yi felt his stomach began to twist.

What is this....Is it biological bomb....

"Try it....Sister rarely cook...."

Li Biyue said, "This is my first time cooking for someone else...."

"Sister, you don't usually cook your own food?"

"Cooking is a waste of time."

Li Biyue laughed, "I usually eat out. I have always been busy and rarely have the time to accompany brother...."

Li Biyue is a A-level Hunter, there are many missions that need to be completed by her everyday.

Especially the Great God Cult, which make Li Biyue unbearably busy.

Moreover, A-level Hunter of the Hunter Organization is under high degrees of attention; a few days ago Li Biyue even received a mission assignment by the Government.

Li Biyue was a bit bruised and battered in order to complete this task.

Today is her rest day, which she likes to spend by playing in the game center.

But then, she accidentally sensed the demonic qi outside. Li Biyue then

rushed over and saved Liu Yi's life from Jiang Qini's hands.

Therefore, Li Biyue believed that this was all invisibly arranged by fate.

This boy is destined to be his brother.

"Go on, eat. Sister's craft should be good."

Li Biyue was very confident of herself.

Liu Yi swallowed his saliva and solemnly said.

"Sister....Before eating, I decide to tell you my real name."

After this, I won't have another chance.....

"Em....When I think of it, I still don't know my brother's name."

Li Biyue remembered this important thing.

"My name is Liu Yi, the Yi in Boyi (game)!"

Liu Yi seriously introduced himself.

"Sister, that is my name....Be sure to remember...."

Especially when you burn the paper in my funeral, don't write the wrong name....

Liu Yi then looked at the group of unknown black objects, his stomach twisted even more.

Can this stuff....Be eaten?

"Oh, that's right! Brother, you can't eat this!"

Li Biyue suddenly remembered something, clapped her hands, and exclaimed.

Liu Yi finally sighed a long sigh of relief.

His mother....I am alive!

The heaven have eyes, they don't call me, Liu Yi in a hurry!

Later on I must burn some incense and pray!

"Sister forgot to add the salt, you can't eat this yet."

Liu Yi watched his sister with wide eyes as she went to the kitchen



counter, grabbed a handful of salt and poured all of it on that group of unknown black objects.

That group of unknown black objects turned shiny at the top....

Becoming salt-capped mountain!

Can this be called....Food? Read this on subudai11

Is this the legendary GRE test?

“Go on, this should be okay. I remember the chef that taught me how to cook once said that food without salt will not taste good.”

“Sister....Where did you learn how to cook?”

Liu Yi has the urge to choke that chef.

“The cooking program on the TV!”

“Whaaat....the...”

Liu Yi really wanted to cry.

Am I going to die by TV cooking instruction....?

Heavens....Please grant me the ten-thousand-poison-stomach....

Watching the eager look in Li Biyue’s eyes, Liu Yi did not have the heart to say he does not want to eat.

He picked up his chopsticks and carefully reached toward that salt-capped black unknown object.

“Sister....What is this?....It looks like an art....”

“It’s Disanxian (a dish consisting of stir-fried potato, eggplant, and green pepper)!”

Li Biyue said, “Maybe the fire was a bit bigger, so it’s somewhat burnt. If it is, tell sister about it, don’t force yourself to eat it.”

“No, no....”

Liu Yi’s heart was bleeding.

You think this is ‘a bit burnt’?

Who can eat this will directly become immortal, no need to pass through

any calamity!

Liu Yi's chopsticks reached the salt peak. He lightly mixed it to avoid taking too much salt.

Other people eat their food dipped in sesame oil and the like....

But mine dipped in salt....

Isn't this too much of a difference?

It seems like I am so 'one of a kind'....

Heaven bless me, don't let me die....

Under Li Biyue's full of expectant eyes, Liu Yi clamped....something that look like potatoes with his chopsticks and slowly put in his mouth.

The moment it entered his mouth, Liu Yi felt as if he fall into hell.

Vaguely, Liu Yi seemed to see his grandfather standing in front of him, stretching out his hands toward him.

Oh....Grandpa....You come to pick me....?

No, no....I don't want to die so early....

For the girls in college....I want to live!

Liu Yi silently circulated his immortal energy toward his stomach, curing it.

"Brother....What do you think? Is it delicious?"

Li Biyue's eyes were filled with expectation.

"Em...."

Liu Yi's spirit returned to his body and he said with tears.

"Really? Then, I want to try it...."

Li Biyue said, and reached out her chopsticks.

Liu Yi suddenly panicked, If I let sister eat....Her self-confidence would collapse!

He quickly grabbed the whole plate and started to gulp it down in his mouth.

Liu Yi completely shielded his breath and numbed his tongue.

Anyway, I still have strong demonic energy as a backup....I won't die eating this.

After he completely ate it, his stomach fiercely twitched!

He poured his demonic energy into his stomach, replacing the gastric fluid to quickly destroy the food into paste.

If I don't have the demonic force....I am afraid I am really going to see grandpa....

Sister's killing weapon is not only her shadow....But also her food....

"Ai....Why did you eat all of it?....Is it that delicious?"

Li Biyue's eyes glittered with small stars, My cooking is actually this good?

"It's delicious....Very delicious...."

Liu Yi was miserable beyond description.

He even ate some of his tears.

"Really! Then sister will cook more for you in the future!"

Liu Yi was about to collapse....

Sister wants to help cultivate my stomach....

Later on, my stomach will be exceptionally though!

"Sister....You haven't eaten yet....Why don't you eat the dumplings...."

Liu Yi was a bit hard to speak, his stomach was really sore.

"Em....Okay....Fortunately, you are here."

Li Biyue contentedly ate the dumplings.

Liu Yi wiped the cold sweat from his brows.

If there is no poison....That would be nice....

After his demonic force completely digested those poison, Liu Yi somewhat returned to normal.

And Li Biyue, after eating a few dumplings, was already full.

“Sister will take a shower. Tonight you will sleep with sister here.”

With that, Li Biyue stood up and took a big stretch.

Although her chest was not developed well, her waist is thin, her legs are long, and her buttocks very proportionally stuck out.

Seeing such an eye-catching stretch, Liu Yi wanted to drool.

Amitabha....Sin...Sin....

She is my sister!

Sister is so good to me...How could I see her like that?

“Sister....This is not good....”

Liu Yi managed to withdraw his eyes with great difficulties and then said, “The house is so small....And we are a man and a woman....”

“We are siblings, what are you afraid of?”

Without knowing why, Li Biyue is assured of Liu Yi, “Don’t worry. Besides, there are a lot of things that sister want to talk about with you....”

With that, without giving Liu Yi another chance to explain, Li Biyue went to the bathroom to take a shower.

# Chapter 174 Good Night

Liu Yi has never passed the night in a girl's home....

Even though Li Biyue is nominally his sister....

Liu Yi can't help but feel some heat in his heart.

In particular, seeing Li Biyue emerged from the bathroom wearing a loose pajama, his nose has the impulse to bleed.

Sister's legs....Are really lovely....

Although Murong Die's legs were already good....But sister's legs are on a whole different level!

Li Biyue's pair of slender legs were smooth and straight.

Her white nightdress rested slightly below her buttocks.

If Li Biyue slightly bends her waist, her curling upward buttocks will be wrapped in a rounded arc.

If she bends even more, Liu Yi can faintly see the little black piece of cloth underneath....

My God....

Forgive me....I really do not want to make a mistake....

But this trial that you give is too terrible....

Liu Yi secretly prayed in his heart to calm his blood.

"Ai....Men are all perverts after all...."

Seeing Liu Yi in such a miserable look, Lin Tong cannot help but feel sour as she sighed.

"Seeing a beauty, their bodies will change!"

"Fox sister....You may rest assured, I will be a good man...."

Liu Yi said to Lin Tong through his virtual environment, "I will not have any dirty ideas! I will keep my mental and moral straight!"

Just as he finished, Li Biyue happened to turn around and said, "What's this? The slipper's strap seems broken...."

With that, she bent down and reached down her hands to fix the slippers.

But Li Biyue forgot that Liu Yi was still behind her.

The problem was not because she bent down, but because her entire buttocks were out of the nightdress control range; her smooth and rounded bare buttocks, covered slightly by a piece of black lace g-string, appeared before Liu Yi.

Oh sh\*t....

Sister is wearing a thong....

Blood directly spewed out through his nose and sprayed on the table.

"D\*mn! Smelly rogue! I don't want to bother with you!"

Lin Tong turned around, drilled into Liu Yi's body and went silent.

Liu Yi scrambled to cover his nose and launched his demonic force to heal the broken blood vessels on his nose.

Oh....Sister wants to murder for money....

After fixing the slippers, Li Biyue got up and turned around.

At this time, Liu Yi has healed his nose and was ready to wipe the blood on the table.

"Ah!"

Seeing the bloodstain on the table, Li Biyue's beautiful face suddenly turned pale.

"Brother, are you hurt?"

She touched Liu Yi's forehead and worriedly asked.

"Is this the injury from the test room?"

"It, it seems like it...."

Liu Yi nodded, again and again, His mother!....I can't possibly say that I got a nosebleed after seeing sister's almost bare buttocks!

Sister would definitely think of me as a pervert....

That....Cannot do!

Liu Yi said in his heart. He began to love the joy of having a beautiful sister....

Apart from her cooking....Everything seemed perfect.

“Wait a minute.”

Li Biyue walked to the nearby clothes rack and pulled out a syringe with an unbroken seal.

There seemed to be an unknown liquid inside it.

“What is this?”

“A biological agent, very expensive.”

Li Biyue said, tore the syringe package, came close to Liu Yi, pulled out his right arm, looking for his wrist.

Unlike the nurses in the hospital, she did not use alcohol or any disinfectant....

“Sister ....What, what are you doing?”

Liu Yi unconsciously trembled a little.

He was afraid of injections....

Not because he was timid....But because his heart has a lingering sequela.

Liu Yi’s physique was relatively weak, every year he would go to the hospital to get a calcium injection.

But last year, he met his mother with a small group of trainee nurses.

Liu Yi’s blood vessels were relatively deep, not easy to find.

Usually, when his mother gave him the injection, it was alright.

But that time, it was a young trainee nurse. Although good looking, her hands trembled, seemingly unsure....

She failed to inject him three times in a row.

Liu Yi almost died in pain.

Finally, after those three failed injections, perhaps because of her distressed son, Liu Yi's mom got rid of the young nurse.

"Really unqualified!"

Liu Yi was glad that his mother would finally do the injection....

At that time, he never thought her mother could be so cute....

In this world only mom is good to me....Mom really loves me.

Liu Yi was touched. His mother beckoned the other trainee nurses.

"The rest of you, I will give each of you one chance to inject him, whoever succeed, I will add ten internship points to her."

Since then, being injected has become a nightmare for Liu Yi!

Now, watching her sister aiming the blood vessel in his arm with that scary needle, Liu Yi's legs subconsciously trembled a bit.

"This is a biological agent that can quickly stimulate the body's metabolism, to quickly heal the wounds. At the same time, it also has stimulant effect, which can make you temporarily forget the pain."

"Can I not use it...."

Liu Yi a bit apprehensively asked.

"Brother is afraid of needles?"

This kid did not even afraid to deal with a four star monster under ten times gravity!

But he's actually afraid of injections?

"Em....Sister....I think I am good...."

Liu Yi bitterly smiled.

"Hey? Sister, you're here, why are you naked!"

Li Biyue suddenly looked at the front door behind Liu Yi and exclaimed.

"Huh?"

Liu Yi quickly turned his head.

Could it be the girl next door?



Walking naked at home....Is she beautiful?

When Liu Yi looked back, he found the door was shut tight, Where is the beauty?

But at the same time, he felt something prick his arm.

“Done.”

Li Biyue pulled out the empty syringe from Liu Yi’s hands and then said with a smile, “It’s finished, do you feel a bit better now?”

A surge of warm feeling began to wash over him.

At the same time, Liu Yi felt that, at that moment, his mind is particularly clear. The whole world seemed warm.

“It feels extremely good....”

“Em, after all, this is an advanced biological agent.”

Li Biyue threw away the needle to the trash can, “And it also has stimulant effect, you will think that everything is wonderful....”

“Why it has to be added with stimulant....”

Isn’t this the same as taking drugs?

“In order to continue the fight.”

Li Biyue lightly said, “In a fight, this drug can save the user from a fatal injury. And the stimulant can make the user’s mood high, suppress all the pain, and continue to fight the enemy.”

“So that’s why....Sister, how much is it for a single shot of this drug?”

“Not expensive.”

“How much is not expensive....”

Liu Yi estimated that the value of the substances....Must be worth it.

“Just two millions.”

“Oh....Only two hundreds....Wait a minute, that’s not it....”

Liu Yi’s eyes almost pop out.

Two millions!

Holy sh\*t, a simple lie from me and sister readily wastes two millions!

Huhuhu....

Too f\*cking bad....

My demonic force already healed me!

If this drug is converted into cash, that would be nice....

“For me, your health is the most important, it is priceless.

Li Biyue thought that Liu Yi was moved to tears and could not help but touch his head and then said, “As long as you are healthy. That is sister’s greatest wealth.”

If possible....I want to protect you from harm....

Unfortunately, there are things that are not under my, Li Biyue’s control.

For example, the Great God Cult....

If I let them....They will certainly bring chaos and destruction to this world.

Something has to be done by myself.

If not, nobody else can.

“Okay, after this injection, you should be alright. Let’s go to sleep. You are still going to school tomorrow, right?”

“Em....”

Liu Yi hasn’t forgotten that he still has to go to school tomorrow, I am still a student after all.

I cannot always skip classes!

Recently, I have been skipping class too many times...

Perhaps teacher Li will think that I am a bad student.

When Liu Yi was wondering, Li Biyue has got up, laid the bed, patted the soft mattress, and then said to him.

“Come on, come here.”

“Huh?”

Liu Yi's whole body went silly.

What the....This is wrong isn't it....

Want me to sleep on the bed?

"Sister, where are you going to sleep?"

This room has no sofa or anything like that....

"With you, of course."

Li Biyue lightly said.

"With, with, with....With me?"

Liu Yi went silly....

I have never slept with a girl....

Aren't this going to make it easy for me to do evil things?

I heard that this will make a person easy to be seduced....

I must resist this temptation!

"What are you afraid of, we are brother and sister."

Seeing Liu Yi's shy appearance, Li Biyue burst out laughing, "Rest assured, brother. Sister is strong. I am not going to let myself be eaten easily by brother."

F\*ck!

This is what I am worried about!

Liu Yi wanted to cry but has no tears.

If I can't stand the temptation....Li Biyue will slice me into several pieces with her blade!

My God, what did I, Liu Yi, do wrong? Why do you want to punish me like this....

Perhaps If this is Chen Cai....Even if he would be sliced in two, he would still happily jump in bed....

"Come on, we are brother and sister, there is nothing wrong in this."

Li Biyue kept calling Liu Yi to bed.

The most happiest thing in this world is if you are being called into bed by a woman.

And the most unfortunate thing is....If they call you into bed only to sleep.

Liu Yi really wanted to cry.

But he cannot defy Li Biyue. Therefore, he has to obediently stood up, ready to go to bed.

“Wait!”

Li Biyue suddenly exclaimed loudly. Liu Yi’s body stopped as he was about to bend down.

“What, what’s wrong....?”

Liu Yi did not know what did Li Biyue want.

“Why are you wearing your clothes into bed, it’s dirty....Take your clothes off.”

“Oh....What?”

Liu Yi went silly again.

What am I supposed to wear?

“There is a pair of pajamas in the closet....Why don’t you try it.”

Li Biyue said.

Oh, so sister has prepared me a pair of pajamas?

Wait a second....There is no other man in this house....

That’s not going to be a pair woman’s pajamas, right?

# Chapter 175 That Is My Family Jewel

This chapter is sponsored by **Ryan of Australia** Liu was curious and he opened the closet.

There were few pieces of clothes hanging there, most of them were black trench coats.

Sister only has one style of dress....

Liu Yi looked around and saw a set of gray pajamas hanging there.

Liu Yi was surprised. It was not a woman's pajamas, but men.

And the size....Was almost similar to his.

Although it's a bit bigger than him, he can still comfortably wear it.

"Sister....How can you have a pair of men's pajamas in your house?"

"That's my brother's...."

Li Biyue's eyes slightly dimmed, "He is very tall....A few years ago, it's almost this tall....But don't worry, this pair of pajamas are new....He hasn't had the time to wear it...."

"Okay, I'll go change my clothes."

Afraid to bring back Li Biyue's painful memory, Liu Yi hastened to run to the bathroom obediently and put on the pajamas.

This is actually quite comfortable....

At home, Liu Yi usually slept naked, without wearing any clothes, or just a piece of underwear.

But this time, sleeping in a girl's house....He did not dare to do that....

That would be the same as declaring myself as a pervert....

Looking at the mirror, Liu Yi seemed to see someone else's image.

In Li Biyue's eyes, does she think of me as her brother's substitute?

But....If that makes her happy, I am fine with that....

Liu Yi did not want to see a girl sad.

Grandpa said that, men should make girls smile, not making them cry.

Men who make women cry are b\*stards.

Oh no....I seem to have made Murong Die cry once....

Does that make me a b\*stard?

“Liu Yi? What took you so long?”

Li Biyue’s voices floated from the outside.

Liu Yi started to think evil.

It seems like she’s calling me to bed (have s\*x, same words as go to bed)  
....Alas, unfortunately not!

Liu Yi put his clothes back to his spatial ring and then walked out in that set of gray pajamas.

When Liu Yi stood in front of Li Biyue, her eyes lit up a bit.

“Sister, am I really similar to him?”

Liu Yi could not help but ask.

“Not particularly similar....There is still a huge gap between the two of you.”

Li Biyue covered her mouth and suddenly laughed, “My brother is more handsome than you.”

“.....”

Liu Yi suddenly has an impulse to die.

“Okay, okay, I am just teasing you, come on, go to bed. I am tired, let sister hug you.”

Li Biyue kept on beckoning Liu Yi.

His sister....

This woman definitely has a brother complex!

But Liu Yi cannot say anything....In any case, being hugged to sleep by a girl seemed pretty good.

He obediently climbed into bed and crawled next to Li Biyue.

Li Biyue's body has a fragrant flavor, which Liu Yi found it odd.

Why a girl's body always smells fragrant?

Is it because they always take a bath?

Unlikely....

Chen Cai, that guy always take a bath daily, but never smells fragrant.

Liu Yi was curious so he sniffed twice. Looking at him sniffing from the side, Li Biyue could not help but strangely ask.

"What are you doing?"

"Sister....Why do you have a fragrant smell on your body?"

Liu Yi unconsciously asked.

He was really curious....

"Do I?"

Li Biyue blinked her eyes, stretched out her arm and sniffed it twice.

"I don't smell anything....Brother, are your nose fail to work because of the injection? You may have experienced a side effect of this shot since this is your first time."

"No! It really smells fragrant! Not only you, sister, other girls are also the same!"

Liu Yi remembered Ma Yuanyuan, Wang Lele, and Murong Die. All of them have fragrant smells.

But every girl's scent....Seems to be a bit different.

Ma Yuanyuan's fragrance is quite tender, it faintly feels like the smell of musk.

While Wang Lele's body....Seems to have a milk flavor in it....

Is it because of her huge chest?

And Murong Die's fragrance is relatively fresh. It makes people at ease.

Sister's Li Biyue's fragrance....Has a trace of temptation in it....

“Oh?”

Seeing Liu Yi's eyes, Li Biyue suddenly asked an ambiguous question.

“My baby brother....How many girls have you smelled?”

“Huh? No, no, that's not what I mean!”

Liu Yi felt that Li Biyue's thought has certainly gone astray. Therefore, he quickly said, “It's not like what sister think...”

“I did not say anything!”

Li Biyue covered her mouth to laugh, “Even if brother has girlfriends, that's fine....My brother is outstanding and very handsome....”

“Em....Sister is talking about me, right?”

Liu Yi did not know which brother Li Biyue refer to....

Alas, a living one loses to a dead one....

“Idiot, of course, it's you!”

Li Biyue could not help roll her eyes playfully at Liu Yi.

“Ahem...Sister has good eyes....”

Liu Yi suddenly laughed foolishly twice.

“Then why don't you tell sister....How many girls have you smell?”

But Liu Yi underestimated a woman's curiosity. He thought it was all right, but Li Biyue turned out to be more inquisitive.

“This....It seems....Probably....”

Liu Yi hesitated, did not know what to say.

“How many?”

Li Biyue tilted her head and looked at Liu Yi.

At this time, this beautiful woman actually looked cute.

“.....”

Liu Yi was about to say four, but at this time, he felt as if he was possessed, somehow it burst into his head.



His other personality affected him!

“Two!”

Liu Yi’s eyes became somewhat deep, and then he held up two fingers and said.

“Oh, really?”

Li Biyue slightly raised her eyebrows.

“Uh huh, two.”

Liu Yi pulled down one of his fingers.

“One is you, sister.”

“And the other one?”

“The other one is my mom.”

“Hehe....”

Li Biyue happily laughed, a super cute laugh, which made Liu Yi a bit sluggish.

“I know that my dear brother is the most honest....Come here, sister wants to hug you to sleep.”

With that, Li Biyue turned off the light.

The room suddenly plunged into darkness.

But Liu Yi’s eyes can see in the darkness. He can clearly see the beautiful face of Li Biyue.

Li Biyue casually laid down and then patted the pillow next to her.

“Go to sleep.”

“Em....”

As he laid down, Liu Yi secretly slightly relieved.

Sure enough....I still don’t understand a girl’s mind....

If just now, my other personality did not anxiously come out to affect me....

Letting me tell the truth....I’m afraid....The consequences would be very

serious....

Perhaps, sister will hate me for it.

At this time, Liu Yi subconsciously opened his eyes of favorable impression and took a glance at Li Biyue.

Li Biyue's favorable impression: 40

Em....

Sister's favorable impression of me....Is actually this high?

Is it because of the similarity between me and her brother?

It seems like....Li Biyue really loves her brother....

But how could her brother die....?

She is obviously very powerful....

Liu Yi could not help but somewhat curious.

But he knew enough not to directly ask this question. Therefore, he can only keep it in his heart.

But before long, Li Biyue suddenly leaned over to Liu Yi, stretched out her hand and hugged him like she was hugging a pillow.

Li Biyue's face was on Liu Yi's chest while her other arm was stretched under his armpit to the other side.

Meanwhile, she also stretched out her leg, pressing Liu Yi on the waist.

His mother....!

This temptation test....Is a bit too much!

Under this situation, Liu Yi did not even dare to breathe heavily....For fear that his breath would hit his sister's delicate cheek.

Goddess....Absolutely a goddess.

If sister....Is in my school, her popularity will definitely reach the goddess-level....

Em....It seems like I am ruining sister's reputation....

Liu Yi, Liu Yi....Sister is sister....She is sacred and inviolable....

But sister smells so good....

How could it be....?

All of these, plus Li Biyue's soft body, made Liu Yi, a normal boy....has a normal boy reaction....

Soon, little Liu Yi became valiant, spiritedly stood straight.

"Huh...."

Li Biyue's hug was quite tight so when little Liu Yi became hard, she immediately felt it.

Li Biyue reached out her hand, touched little Liu Yi a few times, and said.

"Why are you carrying this....Hard....Thing into sleep....Put it away...."

Liu Yi went silly....

How am I going to put this thing away?

Isn't this making things difficult for me....

"Sister....That....Is....My...."

Liu Yi did not know how to explain.

"Oh, right....I am pressing you....I'll take it away for you...."

Li Biyue said, her soft and warm jade-like hand immediately grabbed the sturdy little Liu Yi.

At that moment, Liu Yi nearly broke down....

Oh sh\*t....Sister....We cannot....

Liu Yi continuously shouted in his heart.

"Huh? Why is it so hard....?"

Li Biyue somewhat forcefully moved her hand up and down a few times.

Liu Yi's soul was about to fly away.

Sister....

You can't....

Don't....

Yamete....

“Strange...What is this thing....” Li Biyue said.

Her hand suddenly traced the elastic waistband in Liu Yi’s pants, seemingly wanting to reach inside.

“No!”

Liu Yi quickly held down Li Biyue’s hand.

“Sister ....No....You can’t reach inside to touch it....”

“Huh?”

Li Biyue was surprised by her her brother’s big reaction.

Li Biyue can also see in the dark, when she opened her eyes and saw Liu Yi’s somewhat flushed face, she suddenly understood.

“Ah!”

Her mouth suddenly uttered a cry. She suddenly felt as if she was holding something very hot.

She wanted to let go of her hand, but her hand has no strength....

My God....

At this time, Li Biyue really wanted to be helped.

On the other hand, Liu Yi did not know what to do, his lifeblood was in his sister’s hand.....

Help me....

On the bed, the two people were lying face to face, they can feel each other’s breaths.

At this moment, time seemed to stop.

Liu Yi faintly can hear their two heartbeats....

Its over....Things seemed to get a little weird....

—

Don’t forget to vote!

# Chapter 176 Nightmare

This chapter is sponsored by **Ryan of Australia**

---

Someone said that, if a man and a woman were to face each other, looking into each other's eyes for more than a minute, they will have a good impression on each other.

Liu Yi did not know if this was true or not, in any case, he and Li Biyue have looked into each other's eyes for quite a while.

He did not know about the good impression, but he felt his heart was beating faster and faster.

"Brother....You are very naughty...."

When he felt he was about to lose control, Li Biyue finally released little Liu Yi and said with a blushing face.

"This....Sister....I am not a child anymore...."

Liu Yi's face was also red; He did not know where to put his hands.

"Yes....Brother has grown up...."

Li Biyue suddenly thought of this problem.

I am a bit too excited and forgot the difference between a man and a woman.

However, seeing the shy look on Liu Yi's face, Li Biyue felt it was particularly interesting.

She just could not resist....Wanting to tease her brother.

"Brother....Have you turned into a real man?"

"Huh, what?"

Hearing this question from Li Biyue, Liu Yi suddenly went panic.

What, what real man....

I am still a thousand miles away from that....

When will I reach that threshold....

Being asked by the fragrant Li Biyue, Liu Yi could not help indulge himself in flights of fancy.

If I can get on top of sister, it would be so much better....

Em....No, this idea is too evil....

“Brother? You haven’t answered my question.”

Li Biyue’s gentle breath caressed his ear, making Liu Yi itched.

“I...I haven’t....”

Regarding this kind of thing, there’s nothing to hide from sister....

“Hehe....I knew it....”

Li Biyue seemed very happy. She suddenly blinked her eyes, looked at Liu Yi, and said.

“Do you want sister to help you become a real man?”

“What?”

Liu Yi was surprised, his tiger body shook and suddenly fell down from the bed, sitting on the floor with his butt.

“Hahaha.....”

Seeing Liu Yi’s embarrassed look, Li Biyue finally burst out laughing, a silvery bell’s laugh. Hearing this, Liu Yi’s face became redder.

“Brother, you look so funny....Okay, okay, I won’t tease you anymore.”

Li Biyue said, reached out her hands and pulled Liu Yi on the bed again.

“Sister, you know that I have grown up so we better sleep a bit far from each other.”

“Em....”

Liu Yi felt that girls were quite terrifying....

After climbing on the bed, he went slightly away from Li Biyue and then laid himself down.

Liu Yi did not dare to look at Li Biyue and had to look at the other side,

putting his back toward her.

“Brother is so cute....”

Li Biyue’s voice came from behind, but Liu Yi did not dare to turn his head.

If he turned his head to look....Perhaps he will make a mistake....

“Your back and his....Are really similar ....”

Li Biyue suddenly said.

Liu Yi’s heart became slightly uncomfortable.

He suddenly has a burst of possessiveness....

Sister is mine....I can’t let other people take her away!

Even if that person....Is already dead!

“Sister ....Can I ask you a question ....How did he die?”

Liu Yi felt that he need to ask this question....

Otherwise, he would be depressed....

If he did not ask....He would be annoyed forever.

“He....”

Liu Yi suddenly felt Li Biyue’s voice became uncomfortable.

But no matter what, he wanted to ask so that he can understand.

“He died in Great God Cult’s hands....”

Li Biyue’s voice became icy-cold.

“When I went out to do a mission....He was deceived by the people from the Great God Cult....When he died, I was really angry ....But also filled with remorse. I hate myself for not trying to destroy the Great God Cult earlier ....”

“Those Great God Cult people again?”

Liu Yi thought: This little cult has done many ‘good’ deeds!

They should have been exterminated a long time ago!

“Therefore....Liu Yi....Sister has one favor to ask you....”

Li Biyue faintly said.

“What favor? Sister, tell me. As long as it is within my power, I will do it!”

“Please....Don’t die....”

Li Biyue suddenly hugged him from behind and then said in a low voice, as if she was begging him.

“Sister....Only has you in this world....”

Liu Yi suddenly felt Li Biyue’s became somewhat panic-stricken.

Sister is so powerful....But she is actually afraid.

Liu Yi was very clear about why she is afraid.

“Sister, rest assured, I will not die.”

Liu Yi clenched his fists and said, “I will try my best to cultivate and deepen my skills so that later on I can protect sister.”

“Em....”

Li Biyue tightened her hug on Liu Yi.

Liu Yi this fool....

How could he know what I am worried about....

After I finally managed to recognize a brother....He turns out to be the man of the prophecy....

I hope he will be okay....

I really, really hope....

Holding Liu Yi like this, there was a sense of ‘losing what she has just obtained,’ but also a sense of satisfaction.

She soon fell into a deep sleep.

Liu Yi was also tired, the effect of the stimulant to his cultivated body is relatively short, his excitement has passed earlier.

The immortal force in his body needed to be replenished by sleeping.

Soon, feeling the fragrance of Li Biyue and the softness of her chest, Liu Yi slowly entered the dream world.

“Brother....Do you want to kill me....?”



Liu Yi's hand was holding a fox marked red long sword, standing in front of Li Biyue.

On Li Biyue's hands, there were two black short swords; her whole body was wrapped in a black trench coat.

Although she was holding weapons, her eyes were without any murderous intention.

Instead, they were filled with a pleading look.

"Are you going to kill me....?"

Why do I want to kill sister....?

Liu Yi was about to speak, but his mouth suddenly blurted out another sentence.

"Whoever stands before me....Will die....Even if it's you, sister....You will also die...."

With that, the red glow on his fox patterned sword became even more bright.

"Turn back....This is not the path that you should take!"

Li Biyue tried to persuade him.

"Sister, if you don't get out of my way, I won't be polite anymore."

Liu Yi raised his glowing fox patterned sword, aiming it at Li Biyue.

Want to fight with sister?

My God....Am I crazy?

Liu Yi secretly said, What the h\*ll am I doing!

Is my other-self controlling my body now?

No....I was just lying on the bed with sister....How could I resort to arms?

"I will not let you pass."

Li Biyue firmly said and held the two black swords horizontally in front of her body.

"If you want to go....You must step over sister's dead body!"

“Then don’t blame me....”

Liu Yi said, and suddenly launched his shadow steps.

His body instantly appeared in front of Li Biyue, at the same time, his fox patterned sword swung toward her neck.

“Black Line Storm!” While holding the two short swords, Li Biyue’s body began to rotate.

She suddenly turned into a black whirlwind; the sharp edge of the swords cut in all direction.

The ground beneath her feet began to crack, spreading everywhere.

Seeing this, Liu Yi’s heart began to fear.

This is a meat grinder....

If I went closer, will I die?

Will I turn into a minced meat?

His mother....Stop!

Liu Yi really wanted to control his body, telling it to stop.

But his body would not listen to him; His body rushed to her.

But just as his body was about to crash to her, a piece of black armor suddenly appeared and wrapped his body.

“Klank, klank, klank!”

The black swords continued to cut Liu Yi’s newly appeared black armor, creating many sparks of fire.

But the black armor seemed unable to block the sharp black swords. Soon, the swords have cut a large piece of his front armor.

However, Liu Yi did not stop. Instead, he opened his hands to hug that black whirlwind.

F\*ck...Am I crazy!

This is simply a suicide!

Can I not die in such a cruel way!

Just as Liu Yi was about to collapse, the black whirlwind suddenly stopped.

The two black swords stopped on both sides of Liu Yi's neck. They were really close, almost touching his skin.

Li Biyue blankly looked at Liu Yi, tears seemed to well up in her eyes.

"Sister....You're just too soft-hearted."

Liu Yi reached out his hand and touched Li Biyue's chest with his palm  
What is this?

Grabbing the breast?

Oh sh\*t....When did I become so bold?

But sister's chest is very small....

While Liu Yi was puzzled, a fierce black light suddenly appeared on Li Biyue's chest.

A unique mark was printed on Li Biyue's chest.

This mark seemed to have a unique power.

Soon, a knife-like black sword was slowly drawn out from Li Biyue's chest.

This black sword seemed to have a powerful sucking force.

There was a sense of mystery all around it.

Li Biyue seemed to have an absent-minded look.

"Sister....I am sorry...."

Liu Yi said, that black knife-like sword suddenly stabbed Li Biyue's heart.

Li Biyue instantly widened her eyes.

But there was no hatred nor pain in her eyes.

There was only 'reluctant to leave' look.

"Don't go...."

Li Biyue loosened her black swords, clung to his neck and softly said in his ear with her last bit of strength.

"Don't go....Don't....Ruin yourself...."

Blood gushed out of her mouth, but she kept hugging Liu Yi's neck, clinging to him as she said.

"I won't let you go....Sister will....Will always protect you...."

"Let go of me!"

Liu Yi's eyes began to turn red, the black swords in his hand constantly stabbed Li Biyue's stomach.

One stab, two stabs....

Stop....Stop it!

Liu Yi cried out, Why would I want to hurt sister....

"I won't let go...."

Li Biyue tightly held Liu Yi, "Will never....Let go...."

"Then die!"

Liu Yi then mercilessly thrust his black sword on Li Biyue's forehead.

# Chapter 177 Demolition Team

This chapter is sponsored by **Agnishwar of India, Parker of US and Ryan of Australia**

---

“No!”

Liu Yi suddenly opened his eyes. Seeing he was just lying on the bed, cold sweat suddenly poured out of his back.

*Fortunately....It's just a dream....*

Liu Yi wondered why would in his dream....He tried to kill his own sister.

But he could not figure it out....

*Sister is so good to me , why would I want to hurt her that bad....*

*Not only I stabbed her so many times in the stomach, I still wanted to pierce her head....*

*This is too outrageous , is that guy me?*

*A dream....This is just a nightmare!*

Liu Yi could not help but inwardly shiver.

He was unable to stop that feeling of fear.

It was already daybreak, but there was no familiar figure on his side.

*Sister has left?*

Liu Yi saw the sticky note on the bedside table, he quickly picked it up to take a look.

“Brother, sister has a task to do and has to leave first. The breakfast is on the table. Eat before you go to school. I have put brother's phone number on my phone and vice versa. Call if you need me.”

*Breakfast....*

Liu Yi was like being hit by a lightning.

*No wonder I had such a dream....*

*Sister really wants to take my life with her food!*

Liu Yi sighed, got up and took a shower in the bathroom, resolving his hygiene issue.

After taking the shower, Liu Yi looked at the kitchen table. Sure enough, there were two trays of black sticky objects on it.

There was also a note.

“Sister prepared your favorite food, you must eat all of them, okay!”

*If I eat this....*

*I won't be able to go to school!*

Looking at the two black objects, Liu Yi's stomach involuntarily twitched.

After thinking about it, his logic eventually prevailed over his sensibility.

Liu Yi picked up those two plates of jelly-like objects, walked into the bathroom, poured everything into the toilet and then pressed the flush button.

Watching the mass of black object flushed down the toilet, Liu Yi finally took a long sigh of relief, as if he has just fought a long battle.

“Sister ....Don't blame me, I have no other choice....”

Liu Yi subconsciously said. But then, he suddenly froze.

*Why did these words seem familiar to me....Hmm , it seems like I have said such f\*cked up words in that dream.*

Liu Yi suddenly felt silly.

*What is the meaning of that terrible dream....?*

Liu Yi somewhat cannot understand.

*No matter . Even if I don't know what it means , I am absolutely not going to harm sister.*

Liu Yi stood up and looked at the phone. It was almost the time to go to school.

Student life is hard....They all need to go to school early in the morning.

Even in the middle of the winter and the sun has yet to rise, they still need to go to school.

But the most terrible thing is....Liu Yi has yet to write his homework!

Perhaps he would be punished by his teacher....

He faintly sighed, *Who told me to choose this life!*

*Since I have already chosen it , I should not regret it.*

After changing his clothes, he folded the pair of pajamas and put it inside the closet. He then went out of Li Biyue's house.

Just as he walked out of the house, he saw a girl next door, dressed in a high school uniform, squatting down, tying her shoelaces.

This girl's body looked good. Squatting down, her buttocks looked beautiful.

She has a long hair tied in a ponytail, seemingly young and very beautiful.

*I never thought that there would be a beautiful girl in this shantytown....hehe.*

Liu Yi lamented and can't help but want to see the girl's face.

At this moment, the girl finished tying her shoelaces, stood up and turned around.

Liu Yi was curious to see whether she has a beautiful face or not. But then, their eyes met.

"Liu Yi!"

"Wang Yuzheng!"

"Why are you here!"

The two of them asked at the same time.

"Em...."

Wang Yuzheng's face was slightly flushed, "Em....Let me say it first, okay?"

"Okay, go ahead."

Liu Yi, knowing that Wang Yuzheng, this girl's character is somewhat shy, waved his hand to let her talk first.

"That....How come you're here....?"

In Wang Yuzheng's heart, her classmates shouldn't have known this shantytown.

And Liu Yi should not come to this place....Moreover, seeing that Liu Yi now knew that she lived here, an uncomfortable feeling welled up in Wang Yuzheng's heart.

If possible....

She wanted Liu Yi to see the good part of her life.

"My sister is here. Yesterday, I came to visit her."

Liu Yi pointed at Li Biyue's house and said.

"Li Biyue is your sister?"

Wang Yuzheng was surprised, apparently never thought of that possibility.

"How is it possible....She is always alone, how could she suddenly have a younger brother?"

"This....I just never had the chance to visit her, so you wouldn't know it."

Liu Yi did not want to say that they only knew each other yesterday.

*To sleep over sister's house after knowing her for only a day....If Wang Yuzheng misunderstands this, that would be bad.*

"So that's why....Then, will you come often in the future?"

Without knowing it, Wang Yuzheng suddenly asked this question.

As soon as she said that, it was already too late to take it back.

*Why did I ask that question....Really strange....*

"I will!"

Liu Yi secretly thought, *When sister returns to Northern Dragon City, she would certainly look for me.*



“Oh....That’s good....”

Wang Yuzheng said, and hastily explained with a flushed face, “What I mean is, with this, we can give each other extra lessons! You, you know that my English is not very good....Same as your Math, isn’t it?”

“Em, yes. Later on, you can help me with Math.”

“Good....That’s a deal....”

Wang Yuzheng nodded her head, “Em....Shall we go to school together?”

“Okay, let’s go then.”

Liu Yi said in his heart, *We will probably go to school by bus.*

*If alone , I can just run.*

*But to go to school with a girl in a bus is actually good....When the bus suddenly brakes or moves fast , perhaps she would hold on to me....*

*Mm....Liu Yi , you are really smart!*

The two started to walk downstairs. At this moment, several vans suddenly stopped in front of this shantytown.

Then, a guy with a ferocious face and dyed hair jumped out of the car.

“Ah!”

Seeing these people, Wang Yuzheng’s face suddenly turned pale.

“What’s wrong?”

Liu Yi quickly asked.

“They....They....”

Before Wang Yuzheng could answer, several people carrying a hammer, ax, or the likes, have jumped out of the car and went to the first floor of this shanty town.

“Gentlemen, today is the tenth day, don’t say we didn’t warn all of you.”

The leading man viciously said; He was carrying a hammer and wearing a sunglasses.

“Since you don’t move away, don’t blame us for being impolite!”

With that, he wielded his hammer and, with a loud thud, started to hit the wall on the first floor.

“Aah!”

A middle-aged couple suddenly run out. The woman trembled and the man began to beg for mercy.

“Brothers, please leave us alone....This is our only shelter.”

Hearing the commotion, the other residents of this shantytown began to come out.

But upon seeing these several ferocious looking men, their faces were immediately filled with fear.

“I beg you....Let us live!”

“Is there a law here? I am calling the police!”

A woman picked up her phone but was immediately slapped away by one of those sturdy men.

“You want to call the police? Don’t forget that this land is ours! Even if they come, the police will not help you!”

The man with a black sunglasses laughed and said.

“In short, our boss has given you a deadline. Since you don’t leave this place, today, you will sleep on bricks. Brothers, smash.”

With that, his sledge hammer carrying guy went to the building and began to pound the wall.

“Stop! You can’t do that!”

“I will fight you!”

These residents began to cry and, after having their courage, rushed over to that sturdy man. But they were suddenly blocked by the other sturdy men.

“Hey, looks like you want this the hard way.”

The sunglasses man sneered again and again, and then said, “Since you don’t want to leave, then don’t blame us for being ruthless.”

With that, he made a phone call.

Soon, a front loader came in.

“You asked for this!”

He then jumped into the front loader.

No one in this shantytown can resist this front loader!

“Stop!”

At this moment, grandma Wang who lived in the other side, tremblingly walked out with the help of a crutch.

“Grandma Wang!”

Wang Yuzheng quickly held the old woman.

“You guys are beasts! Aren’t you guys afraid of the wrath of God?”

The old woman angrily scolded.

“God’s wrath?”

The sunglasses man laughed and then said, “I, Zhao Long, in my 30 years of life, have never seen any wrath of God! If there is a God, then our boss is the God! Let me tell you, this dead old woman, in this world, money is the king! You poor ghosts have no money, you can’t afford to live here. So, get out!”

With that, the front loader slowly raised its loader and moved toward the red building.

“You guys, you guys aren’t afraid of Li Biyue?”

“Li Biyue?”

That sunglasses man’s face paled a bit, but soon smiled and calmly said.

“Hehe, don’t use Li Biyue’s name to scare us. Our boss has investigated that Li Biyue is not always here. You guys think you can use Li Biyue’s name to scare us, Black Dragon forever?”

*Black Dragon? This gang again?*

Liu Yi remembered that he has some relation with this gang, their former hall leader Ma Wei was killed by him.

“Brothers, get ready to demolish this shantytown! After this, boss will give ten thousand yuan to each of us!”

*F\*ck!*

Liu Yi unconsciously clenched his fists.

*This black-hearted businessman isn't willing to give money to these people who need it. Instead, he employs these thugs to do his evil deed!*

Liu Yi somewhat cannot tolerate this....

“Ready to demolish!”

The sunglasses man loudly shouted.

That big front loader, with its rumbling engine, began to move toward the corner of the red building.

Everyone was in despair.

Their houses....

Will be gone soon...

# Chapter 178 To Deal With The Black Dragon Gang

The giant loader was moving toward one of the corners of the red building. At this time, a figure suddenly stood in front of that loader.

The front loader quickly stopped, and the man controlling it pulled his head out and cursed.

“Motherf\*cker, are you trying to die!”

Zhou Haolong could not help but look up and saw a youth in a high school uniform standing beneath the loader with outstretched hands as if waiting for the front loader to crush him.

“Liu Yi!”

Wang Yuzheng was also surprised, thinking, *What’s wrong with Liu Yi?*

“Didn’t you guys just happily shout that you guys don’t put our lives in your eyes?”

Liu Yi lazily lifted his arms, stood there and said, “Then why don’t you let your front loader move over my body?”

“You....”

Hearing Liu Yi’s words, the man in sunglasses slightly wrinkled his brows, cold sweat poured out of the back of his head.

Although they did shout all of those things, to really kill someone, they were still afraid.

Currently, the demolition issue was a sensitive topic.

Their boss had told them not to kill anyone, no matter what the situation.

If someone got killed....That would be really bad.

If their boss come to check the situation, they would be in a big trouble.

Zhou Haolong never thought that he would run into this hard stubble.

*Where did kid this come from....?*

*I have never seen him in this shantytown.*

“Step aside for this father, don’t think that I won’t dare to kill you!”

Zhou Haolong intended to threaten Liu Yi, “This father is from Black Dragon, kid, have you ever heard of the Black Dragon Gang?”

“I have never heard of the Black Dragon gang, but I did hear the Black Insect Gang.

Liu Yi crossed his arms and lazily said.

“I know a Slug, a Maggot.....What kind of insect are you?”

A group of Black Dragon gang member’s noses crooked with anger.

The Black Dragon Gang was a big and famous gang in Northern Dragon City!

But now, this kid actually compared it with an insect!

Outrageous!

This is too looking down on others!

“Kid, I see that you are tired of living!”

Zhou Haolong shook the sledgehammer in his hands and viciously said to Liu Yi.

“I see that your eyes haven’t been opened yet so you dare to mess with us, people from the Black Dragon gang. Little three, you and some brothers, teach him a lesson. Let him know what is Black Dragon gang.”

“Understood, brother Long.”

A man with a nose ring licked his lips. He and two other men rushed toward Liu Yi.

“Liu Yi, run!”

Wang Yuzheng went pale with scare. *Liu Yi’s courage is too big , he actually dares to directly confront people from the Black Dragon gang!*

But then she remembered how the last time he, for her sake, went to the

warehouse alone....She knew that his courage is certainly not small!

*But even if Liu Yi is quite a 'bully' at school, he is unlikely to be a match for these people!*

"Kid, you asked for this."

The man called little three pulled out a butterfly knife from his pocket and played it a few times with his hand.

The two men behind him were carrying a sledgehammer and an ax. They menacingly came toward Liu Yi.

If an average student were to encounter such a scene, he would have been scared sh\*tless.

But Liu Yi was not an ordinary student. Watching these several men walking toward him with weapons, on his face, instead of fear, there was a faint smile.

"You guys are beasts! You guys actually want to move your hands against a student! Do you guys still have human hearts!"

Grandma Wang did not know how powerful Liu Yi is; thinking about how painful it must be to get beaten and injured, she cried out.

"Human hearts?"

That little three licked his butterfly knife, and said with a smile, "What is this 'human heart?' This father have long sold it to get some pocket money. You guys may have human hearts, but look at yourselves, in the end, you guys won't even have a place to live! I may not be a human, but I have money, a place to live, and you guys tremble before me. A human heart, what kind of thing is that? Hahaha!"

Little three guffawed.

Grandma Wang trembled with anger.

"Since you guys don't know what human heart is...."

Liu Yi, with arms crossed, looked at the several men walking toward him, and then slowly said, "Then I, on behalf of your parents, will teach you what it means."

“Relying on you? Even a stupid person won’t take a piss and look at his own image on it, how dare you resist us Black Dragon Gang?! Today if I don’t let you see blood, my years of being a gangster will be in vain!”

With that, he arrived in front of Liu Yi and swung his butterfly knife to stab Liu Yi’s abdomen.

These bunch of gangsters were ruthless, without any mercy.

Amid Wang Yuzheng and other people’s exclaimed sound, Liu Yi stretched out his right hand and pinched little three’s wrist.

This little three was about 1.8 meter in height, with a fierce looking face and a robust body.

But this 1.8 meter tall, fierce looking and sturdy man was caught on the wrist by a youth with a somewhat emaciated body.

Everyone was taken aback by this turn of event.

*How could this kid be so powerful?*

“Crack!”

Liu Yi slightly pinched his hand and suddenly they heard the clear and crisp voice of a fractured bone.

“Aaa! My hand!”

Little three, from an arrogant man just a moment ago, was now crying like a woman, kneeling on the ground with tears ran through his nostrils.

This made Zhao Haolong unbelievably amazed.

That little three is his subordinate, he knew how strong little three’s hand was. But now, it has been broken easily by a high school kid.

“Come and help, you f\*cker!”

Little three was crying in tears, he looked at the two men behind him and roared.

“Oh!”

The two men behind him finally reacted, the one carrying a sledgehammer swung it toward Liu Yi’s head.



The sledgehammer issued a whistling wind, which freaked Wang Yuzheng out.

*If this sledgehammer smashed Liu Yi's head, wouldn't his head be split open?*

What head can withstand a sledgehammer!

But Liu Yi did not try to dodge. He loosened his right hand and then lifted his foot, fiercely kicking little three at the chest.

“Bam!”

Like kicking a rubber ball, little three's body immediately flew away, hitting the man wielding the sledgehammer.

“Ouch!”

That man felt like he was punched in the gut, his chest was tightened, his hands lose the sledgehammer and he fell down to the ground along with little three, The sledgehammer in his hand flew out, grazed past Liu Yi's ear toward Wang Yuzheng on his back.

Wang Yuzheng was even more afraid.

At this time, without even looking back, Liu Yi suddenly stretched out his left hand and directly grabbed the wooden handle of that sledgehammer.

But the huge momentum of the sledgehammer made Liu Yi feel as if he was holding a moving Mercedes-Benz.

But he immediately launched his strength. His three forces continuously gushed out toward his left hand from all over his body..

“Woosh!”

His force burst out.

That flying sledgehammer was actually stopped in mid-air by Liu Yi.

This group of people's eyes almost popped out.

Zhou Haolong cannot even close his mouth.

*F\*ck me! This is a joke, right!*

*That kid is actually able to stop that flying sledge hammer with one hand!*

*His hand should have been broken, right?*

*Is he a human?*

“Liu Yi....Are, are you okay?”

Wang Yuzheng, who was very good on physics, knew how such a momentum from the sledgehammer....Could affect the human body.

“I am fine, don’t worry.”

Liu Yi said with a smile and wielded the sledgehammer with his left hand, which created a whistling wind.

“This sledgehammer is not bad, unfortunately, it was used by people like you.”

“Motherf\*cker! I will fight you!”

The last man shouted and swung his ax toward Liu Yi.

“Such a reckless move.”

Liu Yi shook his head, thinking, *This guy still want to cut me in this situation.*

*This guy doesn’t even have a head but still want to be a gangster.*

Liu Yi suddenly wielded the sledgehammer, hitting that big fellow’s hand with the head of the sledgehammer.

Suddenly, that big fellow’s hand fractured, which made him cry in pain and release the ax.

Liu Yi stretched out his hand and grabbed that falling ax.

The three people that Zhou Haolong sent to deal with Liu Yi has been all taken care of, and disarmed by Liu Yi.

Who was hitting whom here?

“Like I said, The Black Insect Gang is a Black Insect Gang, a bunch of useless thugs.”

Liu Yi played the ax with his hand, looked at Zhao Haolong downstairs and slowly said.

“The thing that I hate the most are insects. If you guys don’t want to leave, I don’t mind to kill all of you.”

Liu Yi has a deep aversion toward this Black Dragon Gang!

*This gang never did anything good . Not only they almost killed me , now they even want to demolish this shantytown , making these innocent people homeless!*

For such a group of people, Liu Yi did not think that they deserved to live!

He also wondered how could the police never deal with them!

“No wonder you dare to stand up, it turns out you know some Kung Fu.”

Zhou Haolong gloomily said.

“However, even if you know Kung Fu, provoking our Black Dragon Gang will only lead you to a dead end.”

“Looks like you guys are not going to leave today?”

Liu Yi narrowed his eyes.

“Today, this place is going to be demolished, kid, if you dare to stop, then I will let you die under this front loader!”

With that, Zhou Haolong waved his hand, telling the front loader to continue.

“Stupidly stubborn!”

Liu Yi was very angry.

Being threatened like this, Liu Yi has nothing to say anymore.

*Since that is the case , then don't blame me!*

That front loader made a turn, moving toward the other side of this red building.

“Stop!”

Liu Yi’s eyes were slightly red, he immediately threw the sledgehammer in his left hand.

“Whooz, whooz, whooz!”

The sledgehammer constantly spun as it moved through the air and went straight through the front loader's window, moving right next the head of the operator, grazing his ear.

The metal plate next to his head was directly slammed. The sledgehammer was stuck in there.

The operator was so scared, he almost wet his pants.

*His mother....If this huge sledgehammer fall on my head....Wouldn't my head burst like a watermelon?*

*This is too vicious....*

He has a feeling of walking in circle in front of the death gate.

He has lost all his will to operate the front loader.

"This kid....Where exactly did he come from!"

Zhao Haolong went a bit silly, completely unable to come up with any ideas on how to deal with Liu Yi.

# Chapter 179 A Reward

Zhou Haolong never thought that, besides Li Biyue, there is another tough guy.

Previously, he has helped demolish many shantytowns like this, but this particular shantytown was like an evil gate.

*Did I forget to read the almanac before I go out?*

*But today's manpower should be enough to deal with this kid!*

“Good kid, looks like you really want to confront us Black Dragon Gang, right?”

Zhou Haolong was in an awkward position, but he must finish the job here.

“That’s right, I do want to go against your Black Insects Gang, what about it? Why don’t you come at me?”

Liu Yi made a come at me gesture with the ax in his hand.

Zhou Haolong’s vein on his forehead was about to pop out.

*If I fight this kid....I will be dead!*

*Three people were easily dealt by him, much less me!*

“The blue mountain will not change, the green water is always running, today you can be proud of yourself, but let’s wait and see!”

Zhou Haolong angrily said, “Kid, if you have the ability, leave me your name. I want to see if you really have the guts to mess with us Black Dragon Gang!”

“What’s not to dare.”

Liu Yi chuckled, “Whether I travel or stay at home I do not change my name. My surname is Lin, and my name is Lin Huayang! I, your father is at the Second High School, Experimental Class. If you have something just come and look for me! I will beat you until your mom cannot recognize you anymore!”

The nearby Wang Yuzheng almost burst out laughing.

*This Liu Yi is too bad....*

*He actually used Lin Huayang, other people's name to beat them.*

*But this is actually good....Lest it will bring trouble to Liu Yi.*

*At the same time, Lin Huayang is not a good thing, humph humph....*

*If he is beaten because of this, he deserves it!*

Wang Yuzheng did not realize that she has changed. She never thought like this in the past.

“Good! Lin Huayang, I, your father will remember you! Black Dragon Gang will also remember you!”

Zhou Haolong extended his finger to point at Liu Yi and fiercely said, “You just wait!”

With that, he led the rest of his men to leave this place.

The few wounded men were towed by the others.

When these people walked past Liu Yi, they were very careful for fear that they would provoke Liu Yi.

But Liu Yi did not lay a finger on them again, he was, ehm, a man who hated violence.

When all the Black Dragon Gang people left, the resident of this shantytown went over to Liu Yi and gave their thanks.

“Liu Yi, thank you.....”

Wang Yuzheng thought that today, Liu Yi was much more pleasing to the eyes....

“Oh, don't mention it, it's just like lifting a finger.”

Liu Yi sheepishly waved his hand, “These people are too hateful. If they come again in the future, you just need to call me and I will help you take care of them.”

“Okay....”

Wang Yuzheng nodded her head, thinking, *Turns out this guy is quite reliable.*

“Little Lin, thank you....”

Grandma Wang came over with a face filled with gratitude, pulled Liu Yi’s hand and said, “Today if it wasn’t for you, everyone in this shantytown will be homeless.”

“Em....Grandma Wang, my surname is not Lin....”

Liu Yi became even more embarrassed.

“Oh?”

Grandma Wang was slightly stunned for a moment.

“Grandma....My surname is Liu, and my name is Liu Yi. I am Li Biyue’s younger brother.”

Liu Yi hastily introduced himself, “When my sister is away, I will protect this place on behalf of her.”

“Aiya, it turns out you are little Yue’s younger brother! No wonder you are so powerful!”

Grandma Wang was even happier. She pulled Liu Yi’s hand, “Come, come to Grandma’s house, Grandma will give you something to eat!”

“Come to my house, we have freshly made beef!”

“We have two bottles of treasured wine, come with me!”

“Screw you, other people is still in high school and you want him to drink?”

The other people warmly invited Liu Yi to their houses.

“Em....I am afraid I can’t.”

Liu Yi somewhat awkwardly blushed, “I have to go to school....It’s getting late now.”

After being delayed for half a day, he would arrive at school late.

“Oh, right, what am I thinking....”

Grandma Wang patted her head, “I must be muddled! Little Zheng and Liu

Yi have to go to school. Go on then, don't be late."

"Yes, Grandma Wang...."

Liu Yi wiped the cold sweat from his forehead, *Not just late....I even skipped classes many times.*

*Since I started to cultivate....I have done almost everything that every student should not do....*

*Even the principal is against me, likewise, I am against him too.*

*This is not a thing an ordinary student should do!*

Liu Yi thought that he should do a proper reassessment of himself.

*I must be a model student!*

"Liu Yi....What if they come again?"

When Wang Yuzheng pulled Liu Yi away to go to school, she secretly asked.

"You just need to look for me, I will kill them!"

Liu Yi mercilessly said.

Lin Tong, who has been lying on Liu Yi's shoulder and watching the fun, yawned and said.

"Cut, didn't you just say you want to be a model student? How come you suddenly become this vicious?"

Liu Yi forgot to cut the connection to his spiritual environment so that Lin Tong can overhear what he said in his mind a moment ago.

"This....Different people must be treated differently!"

Liu Yi smiled and said.

"My grandpa said, I must treat my friends warmly like the spring winds and enemies brutal like the cold winds!"

"Are these really your Grandfather's words?"

"Em....In any case, he told me the first part!"

Liu Yi hurriedly said.

Lately, he rarely thought of his grandfather's thing. The things that



preoccupied his mind are, Lin Tong....And his future girlfriend.

*Yes....I wonder how my future girlfriend will look like?*

Liu Yi unconsciously turned and glanced at Wang Yuzheng.

This girl has red lips, white teeth, mountain-like eyebrows, and eyes similar to autumn ripples, all of them are signs of a beautiful woman.

Her figure is also good. Although her chest is not particularly large, it is not small either.

Her waist is slender, although it was wrapped in her school uniform, the shape of the small undershirt underneath it can be clearly seen by Liu Yi.

It seemed like this girl rarely dresses up, she paid more attention to study.

*Ai, such a gentle and sensible girl, if she can be my girlfriend, that would be nice.*

Liu Yi can't help but begin to fantasize about this school flower.

"What are you thinking?"

Wang Yuzheng suddenly sensed Liu Yi's gaze and cannot help but ask.

"Em....It's nothing....Wang Yuzheng, can I ask you a question?"

Liu Yi subconsciously asked.

"What is it? Ask away."

"What kind of boyfriend do you want?"

"What?"

Hearing this question, Wang Yuzheng suddenly went a bit silly.

The girl's pretty face slightly blushed, and she then asked.

"Are you hitting on me?"

"No, that's not it!"

Hearing Wang Yuzheng's blunt words, Liu Yi went silly.

*F\*ck me....Can't you be a bit subtle!*

*How am I going to answer it directly!*

“I was just wondering....Since you like to learn so much and you refused many handsome guys who chased you, I am curious if you are interested in men or....”

“Nonsense, of course I am interested in men!”

Wang Yuzheng replied as expected.

“Oh?”

Liu Yi was suddenly curious.

“No....It’s not like what you think!”

Wang Yuzheng felt as if she let something slip so she hurriedly explained.

“What did I think?”

Liu Yi cannot help but say with a smile.

“You, you!”

Wang Yuzheng was at a loss for words. She then bitterly looked at Liu Yi.

“You bast\*rd....In any case, it’s not as evil as you thought!”

“What evil? Can you describe it for me? I don’t understand, I am very pure!”

Liu Yi looked at Wang Yuzheng with an innocent look.

“Hate! You’re a rogue, I don’t want to talk to you again!”

Wang Yuzheng suddenly turned her head, seemingly intent on not talking to Liu Yi anymore.

“The prettiest girl in the class, don’t be angry, I was just kidding.”

“.....”

“What if I invite you to take a bus, don’t be angry, okay?”

“.....”

“Ouch....My stomach hurts....I can’t walk, can you help me....”

“.....”

No matter what he said, Wang Yuzheng still looked to the side, ignoring

him.

“Pretty girl, how about I show you some magic!”

Liu Yi suddenly blinked his eyes and smilingly said.

“You can do magic?”

Liu Yi finally got Wang Yuzheng’s attention.

*Oh yeah, I’ve won half the battle!*

“Initially no, but in order to make our pretty girl happy, and then forgive me, I suddenly comprehend it!”

Liu Yi solemnly said.

“Pei! You’re talking nonsense again!”

“But I do know. If you don’t believe it, let me show it to you.”

Liu Yi said, held out his hands and waved it twice in front of Wang Yuzheng.

“You see, I’ve got nothing in my hands, right?”

“Uh huh.”

Wang Yuzheng nodded her head; She was actually somewhat curious.

“Look carefully.”

Liu Yi rubbed both of his hands together and then spread them out in front of Wang Yuzheng.

A beautiful butterfly with multicolored wings slowly flew up from Liu Yi’s hand and into the air.

“Aah....So pretty....”

Seeing this multicolored butterfly, Wang Yuzheng’s eyes were a bit blurred.

Liu Yi reached out his hand; That multicolored butterfly flew a few laps in the air and finally landed on his finger, its wings were slightly incited.

“So beautiful....”

Wang Yuzheng could not help but gingerly hold out her finger toward that

multicolored butterfly to touch it.

But before she could touch that multicolored butterfly, Liu Yi suddenly folded his hands; That multicolored butterfly suddenly disappeared.

“Hate, cheapskate!”

Wang Yuzheng suddenly pursed her mouth and gave Liu Yi a look.

“Hehe, if you promise not to get angry at me, I will show it to you.”

Liu Yi shamelessly smiled.

“Really?”

Wang Yuzheng really liked that multicolored butterfly, thinking that it was really beautiful.

“Of course it’s true, but you must not get angry at me even a little bit.”

Liu Yi said, “This magic is very energy-consuming, but, I also need our pretty girl to give me a reward!”

“Reward? What reward do you want?”

Wang Yuzheng somewhat shyly said, “You know....My family....Is very poor....”

“Ai, I am not asking material reward, do you think I, Liu Yi, am a materialistic person?”

“Very well...What reward do you want?”

“Well, it is actually very simple.”

Liu Yi smiled widely, “If you want me to let the butterfly out....You have to kiss me.”

“Liu Yi! You go to hell!”

# Chapter 180 Bus

After being mercilessly pinched by Wang Yuzheng several times, the two of them squeezed themselves into a crowded bus to school.

Northern Dragon City is a provincial capital where every day there were influx of huge number of population.

And people know how crowded the buses are in the morning when people go to work and students go to school.

Especially since the two people came in late; There were already many office workers crowding the bus.

Liu Yi and Wang Yuzheng, two people were almost being pushed stiffly in this crowded bus.

How many people can fit into a bus?

This problem was like a mathematical puzzle, Liu Yi could not find the answer.

According to the safety standard, their bus can only take 38 people max.

But now, the bus....Squeezed no less than 80 people!

It was choked full of people, Liu Yi felt as if he was a canned fish, letting him very uncomfortable.

But because there were so many people, Liu Yi and Wang Yuzheng were stuck together.

Wang Yuzheng's hands were holding the railing next to the window. Liu Yi was behind her, his hands were clutching the railing at the ceiling.

Because there were too many people, Wang Yuzheng was almost went inside Liu Yi's body.

In front of her there were people, on her left and right there were also people, which made Wang Yuzheng cannot help but slightly raise her buttocks.

But this made her buttocks posted right at the center of Liu Yi's hip. In this morning, Liu Yi felt this soft sensation.

Little Liu Yi instantly rose up, lifting his head; His long barrel cannot stay calm.

Wang Yuzheng's face flushed. In biology class, although her teacher did not say it, she has secretly looked at some of the content.

Therefore, for the different between s\*xes, she knew some of it....At the very least, she knew more than Li Biyue!

The thing that was poking her buttocks....Needless to say, she already knew what was going on.

However, even if she wanted to move away, she can't.

There were people all around here....Moreover, if she really moved away, chances are, she would be stuck with someone else's body.

*Rather than stick with other people....I might as well stick with Liu Yi....*

Wang Yuzheng was somewhat surprised, *How could I have such an idea?*  
*Really strange....*

*Wang Yuzheng, oh Wang Yuzhen, you have to remember, your most important task is to study!*

*You should not think other mess up stuff!*

"Em....Wang Yuzheng...."

Liu Yi also felt a bit embarrassed, so he began to change the topic.

"What, what is it...."

Wang Yuzheng's face was scarlet red, her whole body was hot, and she spoke a bit unnatural.

She lowered her head and her voice was as small as a mosquito.

Fortunately, Liu Yi has a very good hearing. Therefore, even if Wang Yuzheng's voice was small, he can clearly hear it.

"Em....You haven't told me about your ideal boyfriend criteria?"

Liu Yi remembered their previous topic of conversation.

“That....I, I haven’t thought about it too much....”

Wang Yuzheng’s voice was pitifully small.

“Tell me about it....I am very curious.”

Liu Yi felt Wang Yuzheng slightly twisting her waist as if she was embarrassed.

Slight twisting her waist was not important, but it made her buttocks rubbed the thing between his legs.

*Aaa!*

*This is crazy!*

*This girl....Is unintentionally torturing me!*

“My future boyfriend....He must be a dragon among men....”

Wang Yuzheng weakly said.

“Dragon among men? What do you mean?”

After hearing Wang Yuzheng’s words, Liu Yi became even more curious.

“At least....His academic record is better than me, and his athletic performance must be outstanding....The most important thing is, he must have a great achievement, em....”

*Oh my god....This girl’s requirements are too high!*

*To have an academic record that is better than her is already very difficult to achieve.*

*Even in the experimental class, not only she is the prettiest girl in the class, she is also among the best!*

*Not only she wants someone with excellent grades, she also wants someone with outstanding motoric nerves.*

*A master of pen and sword!*

*This girl’s selection criteria are really not low.*

While Liu Yi was thinking, the bus suddenly came to a screeching halt.

Suddenly, a lot of people could not stand still, their bodies swayed and almost fell.

Fortunately, Liu Yi is an immortal cultivator, he firmly held his ground with one hand holding the railing and the other arm around Wang Yuzheng's waist, pressing her body at him.

Liu Yi felt that Wang Yuzheng's body was very soft. Wang Yuzheng's blushed and her heart palpitated, almost fainted.

*Liu Yi actually hugs my waist....*

*But this is an unexpected situation so I shouldn't be mad at him....*

*But, I am a girl after all....When other people takes advantage of me, shouldn't I be angry?*

When Wang Yuzheng's thought was jumbled, she suddenly felt a hand slowly touching a part of her left buttock that was not pressed against Liu Yi.

"Liu Yi!"

*This is something that I must not tolerate!*

*Liu Yi actually takes the initiative to touch my \*ss!*

"What is it?"

Liu Yi turned his head in surprise. He didn't know why Wang Yuzheng would suddenly be mad at him. The girl actually turned her head and glared at him.

But Wang Yuzheng was even more surprised.

Because she saw that one of Liu Yi's hand was holding the railing and his other hand was obviously holding her waist.

*Then whose hand is touching my \*ss?*

She turned her head to the left and suddenly exclaimed.

Liu Yi knew that something was wrong and immediately turned his head to look.

They saw a bald guy taking the chance to extend his salty wet hand to take advantage of Wang Yuzheng.



Liu Yi immediately went furious.

*His mother!*

*Even I dare not to touch it!*

*But he does this in broad daylight, preposterous!*

Liu Yi suddenly stretched out his hand and swatted that baldy's hand away.

"Pat!"

Feeling hurt after his hand was swatted away, the baldy looked at Liu Yi with a grim look.

"Boy, mind your own business, do you have a death wish?"

The baldy's voice was fierce and his eyes emitted ominous lights.

Liu Yi took a closer look, *What the, I knew him!*

*Wasn't he the man who previously molested a vixen and wanted to harm me in the bus?*

"Boy, it's you!"

That baldy seemed to recognize him too, his look immediately became worse.

"I see that you, this boy, ate too f\*cking much salt, and has too much time so you like to butt in other people's business, right?"

The baldy pinched his fists, issuing a "klak, klak" sound. He then said, "Very good, this time I want to see where are you going to run."

Liu Yi did not say anything. The car has too many people, it was not a suitable place to teach this guy a lesson.

*Let's just wait until we get off the bus.*

*I am not the previous Liu Yi who ran away in panic.*

"Liu Yi, it's you!"

At this time, a somewhat cavalier voice came from the side with a bit of pleasant surprise.

Liu Yi and the others hastily turned their heads to look. They saw a tall fat youth squeezing through the nearby crowd.

This tall fat youth dressed up not like a student, his hair was dyed yellow and his left ear was pierced with two earrings.

A typical hoodlum appearance.

“Haoyuan?”

Seeing this punk kid, Liu Yi was also a bit surprised.

He is Liu Yi’s classmate in primary school, Sun Haoyuan.

The two of them has a very good relationship in the primary school. Sun Haoyuan was already very tall then.

But at that time, Liu Yi was very thin, and always being bullied at school.

At that time, Sun Haoyuan always came to help Liu Yi. He hit the other students until they begged for mercy.

Therefore, this Sun Haoyuan was nothing short of a guardian to Liu Yi. Fortunately, the primary school was compulsory so even if Sun Haoyuan was a troublemaker, the school cannot expel him.

Thus, Sun Haoyuan’s reputation as a bully spread out.

After graduating from the primary school, because Sun Haoyuan’s grade was very poor, he did not enter a good junior high school. Instead, he entered a very poor third-rate junior high school in Northern Dragon City.

Liu Yi heard that the school was very messy and this Sun Haoyuan stopped studying and started to drift along.

The two of them then stopped contacting each other. Liu Yi’s parents did not let him contact Sun Haoyuan.

Seeing his rascally appearance now ....Liu Yi knew that Sun Haoyuan has thoroughly walked the gangster path.

“F\*ck, I haven’t seen you for so long yet you’re still this unlucky!”

Sun Haoyuan enthusiastically squeezed through the nearby people, which followed by their cries of complaint.

However, upon seeing Sun Haoyuan's gangster look, nobody dared to say anything directly to him.

After squeezing through the crowd, Sun Haoyuan patted Liu Yi's back, "What's up, get in trouble again?"

"....."

Seeing Sun Haoyuan's tall and big figure, and his gangster appearance, the baldy suddenly dared not say anything anymore.

"What? Want to bully my brother?"

Sun Haoyuan's put his arm around Liu Yi's shoulder and looked at the baldy with curled lips, "When we get off, there will be no problem."

"....."

The baldy was afraid and did not know what to say.

He awkwardly hid his head and tried to push the crowd, wanting to leave.

"Stop."

But Liu Yi narrowed his eyes and, under Sun Haoyuan's surprised eyes, stretched out his hand and directly pinched that baldy's neck.

"Eh....You, what are you doing...."

Feeling difficult to breathe, the baldy looked at Liu Yi in fear.

"Apologize to my friend."

Liu Yi said in his heart, *After touching Wang Yuzheng, you want to leave like that?*

*There is no such a thing in this world!*

*I got a stream of abuse just by asking her to kiss me!*

*How can I let you take advantage of her!*

*A pervert on the bus is too wretched and too shameful.*

"The hell no, f\*ck you...."

Under the gaze of so many people, how could this baldy lower his head to apologize?

Although his neck was being pinched by Liu Yi, he still viciously cursed.

*In any case, there are so many people here, these two kids wouldn't dare to do anything to me.*

"I'll give you one last chance, do you or do you not want to apologize?"

Liu Yi's voice was icy cold.

Wang Yuzheng reluctantly turned around, tugged Liu Yi's arm and said.

"Liu Yi....forget it...."

"I say f\*ck you...."

That baldy continued to scold.

"Court death."

Liu Yi's eyes looked grim; He directly exerted his strength to his right hand that was holding that baldy's neck, lifted him high up and smashed his head directly against the bus ceiling.

"Bam!"

The bus ceiling was made of metal so when the baldy's head collide with it, he almost passed out.

Looking at this scene, the people around them screamed in fear again and again Sun Haoyuan was shocked, he never thought that Liu Yi, who previously was mushy and always being the target of bullying, has become so fierce!

"Apologize!"

Although his voice was icy cold, Liu Yi's tone was very flat.

Looking at those dumbstruck eyes of the baldy, he still said the same word.

"I....I am sorry...."

"Apologize to her!"

"Miss...."

"Who is your miss!"

"Young lady, I, I am sorry....I would never dare to do it again...."

# Chapter 181 Red Scarf Army

At the First High School bus stop, Liu Yi and Wang Yuzheng got out of the bus.

Without knowing whether he was serious or not, that Sun Haoyuan also got out of the car.

“Liu Yi! You, this kid; when did you become this fierce! Are you taking drugs?”

When Sun Haoyuan got off the car, he pulled Liu Yi aside and excitedly said.

“Huh? Am I?”

Liu Yi pretended to be stupid, “I am still me....Just now I got an adrenaline rush. I was just acting on impulse....”

Wang Yuzheng who stood on the side rolled her eyes.

*On impulse....*

*You act on impulse too many times!*

“Liu Yi, now you’re not bad, you have a beautiful girl by your side now.”

Looking at Wang Yuzheng who stood by Liu Yi’s side, Sun Haoyuan cannot help but say with envy.

Wang Yuzheng’s face instantly became red.

Liu Yi quickly explained.

“Ah, you misunderstood, we are not a couple. We are just classmates, classmates!”

“Okay, you, this kid.”

Sun Haoyuan cast an ambiguous glance at Liu Yi and teasingly said, “I am not your teacher nor will I tell your mom, why are you trying to hide it from me? Such a proper girl like this, you should take her out to show off, don’t just hide her by your side, it makes you look like a b\*tch.”

"I really am not...."

"Less nonsense, why are you acting like the old you, so chatty."

Sun Haoyuan cast Liu Yi a glance.

Liu Yi was tongue-tied. He was unable to explain, making him wish he could jump into the Yellow river.

"Liu Yi, you know me, I don't like to study, remember?"

Sun Haoyuan suddenly changed the topic.

"Em, yes, I know."

Seeing Sun Haoyuan's current outfit, Liu Yi was able to guess 70-80 percent.

"Em....You also know that my head is not made to study. So now I simply don't. Now, I wholeheartedly mix in the society (gang).

Sun Haoyuan said, "In recent years, it can be said that I do not mix in the society in vain, I have established a small gang."

"What?"

Liu Yi was shocked.

*Not only he is a gangster, he even set up a gang?*

"Hehe....It's actually just a small scale and the members all know each other."

Sun Haoyuan sheepishly touched the back of his head, and said, "But we are very ambitious. We want to develop our gang to be the biggest gang in Northern Dragon City! Liu Yi, do you know the Black Dragon Gang?"

Hearing these three words, the nearby Wang Yuzheng visibly trembled a bit.

Black Dragon Gang....How could they not know?

"I've heard a bit....What about this Black Dragon Gang?"

"Right now, Black Dragon Gang is the biggest gang in the Northern Dragon City. But we have the confidence to go beyond them! Sooner or later, this Black Dragon Gang will be stepped on by the soles of our feet!"

Sun Haoyuan confidently said.

“My God....Your ambition is so big.”

Liu Yi looked at Sun Haoyuan and curled his lips, “As the biggest gang in the Northern Dragon City, Black Dragon Gang can’t be easily got rid off by others. You said you want to trample them, how many men do you have then?”

“A lot!”

Sun Haoyuan patted his chest and raised up three fingers.

“300 people?”

Liu Yi was surprised by this number. Although they can’t be compared to the Black Dragon Gang, they still can make a name for themselves.

“Ah....How could I have that many people, I am still a high school student, you know.”

Sun Haoyuan shyly smiled.

“Oh, so it’s thirty people.”

Liu Yi nodded his head, *although 30 people is a bit less, it should be enough for a gang.*

*Slowly, they can form a small force.*

*And in time, they can be a force to be reckoned with in Northern Dragon City.*

“Em....It’s actually three....Three people.”

Sun Haoyuan said with an awkward smile.

“What the....Three people?....Have you gone mad!”

Liu Yi almost lifted his foot and kicked this guy out.

“Ai....We can just develop it can’t we?!”

Sun Haoyuan straightened his back and proudly said, “I gave our gang a very stunning, very imposing name!”

“What name?”

“White Tiger Gang!”

Sun Haoyuan said, "You see, this is just the opposite of the Black Dragon Gang. They are black, we are white. They are Dragons, we are Tigers! It is exactly the thing that can overcome them!"

"Overcome your sister! I see that you're the white tiger here! (White tiger : a slang for hairless female genitalia) Liu Yi viciously gave Sun Haoyuan a glance, "Do you have to call it like this? This name is unpleasant to hear."

"Then why don't you suggest me a good name."

Sun Haoyuan said with a meaningful smile.

Wang Yuzheng suddenly grabbed Liu Yi's hand. This young girl is very clever, after hearing this far, she already knew where this conversation was going to go.

Liu Yi was not stupid either. He waved his hand and said.

"I am not going to give any suggestion, I won't get involve with you. I want to be a model student. I have to go, I need to study for my midterm exams!"

With that, he and Wang Yuzheng began to walk toward their classroom.

"Come on, let us discuss this...."

Sun Haoyuan did not want to give up just yet, he shamelessly followed behind Liu Yi.

"I don't want to participate in that, I am a good student, okay?"

Liu Yi immediately made his position clear, "Don't look for me to participate in those fighting and killing things!"

Just as he said that, when several students passed by them, they respectfully said to Liu Yi.

"Brother Liu!"

"Morning, brother Liu!"

"Brother Liu, smoke!"

There was a boy actively handed out a cigarette to Liu Yi, which immediately made Liu Yi's face darken.

*His mother, this heartless stupid guy....*



*Really makes me lose my face!*

“Oh?”

Sun Haoyuan gave Liu Yi a teasing look, “Still saying you’re not one of ours? You already got these many people who call you brother Liu and one of them even offers you a cigarette....Even I, in my school, don’t have this kind of treatment!”

“It’s all an illusion....”

Liu Yi’s mouth twitched.

“Come on, let’s just talk about it.”

Sun Haoyuan seized this opportunity to embrace Liu Yi’s shoulders and shamelessly said.

“Liu Yi, did you forget how many times I help you when you were a kid? Once when a boy snatched away your stationary case, didn’t I split open that boy’s nose the next day? I suffered twenty lashes from my dad because of that!”

“That’s because you hid your candies in that stationary case....”

Liu Yi muttered some words, his memory was not bad.

“In short, I did help you, always!”

Having gone this far, Sun Haoyuan did not want to give up this opportunity. He always wanted to establish a big gang!

“Wang Yuzheng, why don’t you go to the class first, I’ll be there shortly.”

After he thought about it, Sun Haoyuan did treat him well in his childhood.

*If I brush him off just like that, wouldn’t that mean I am not loyal to a friend?*

*Grandpa said a real man must uphold the spirit of loyalty and self-sacrifice (In modern term: The bro code). If not, you might as well be a woman.*

“Liu Yi....”

Wang Yuzheng’s face went somewhat pale. She tightly tugged Liu Yi’s sleeve.

“Don’t worry, I just want to have a good talk with my friend.”

Liu Yi knew what Wang Yuzheng's fear was; He hurriedly comforted her, "I am not going to do something outrageous, I still want to surpass your test result!"

"Huh?"

Wang Yuzheng went a bit silly.

*What do these words mean....*

*Does....Does he want to be my boyfriend?*

Thinking about this possibility, Wang Yuzheng became somewhat flustered.

*If that is the case....Should I agree, or refuse?*

Wang Yuzheng was somewhat awkwardly shy, her thoughts were in a whirl.

"So, go back to the class first, I want to have a talk with Haoyuan."

"Okay then...."

Wang Yuzheng did not know what to say and had to step back three steps and then turn away.

"Hehe....You this kid is so competent now....You have such an upright girl!"

Sun Haoyuan admiringly said, "If I have such a girl, even if she wants me to reform my way, I am willing!"

"Just drop it!"

Liu Yi rolled his eyes at Sun Haoyuan, "Just with this virtue, you want to reform your way?"

"Hehe....Speaking of which, I do want to be the underworld emperor of the Northern Dragon City."

Sun Haoyuan's ambition was truly great.

"I can help you."

Liu Yi finally nodded his head.

"Really?"

Sun Haoyuan suddenly became excited again, "That's great, with your help, our White Tiger gang will definitely be able to finish the Black Dragon Gang!"

"Hold on. Before we continue, I have two conditions."

Liu Yi stretched out two of his fingers.

"What conditions?"

"One, I am not officially joining your gang, only as an outer member."

"Why are you playing with words here, outer, inner, what's the difference! No matter what, you are my, Sun Haoyuan's, brother!"

With that, he put his arm around Liu Yi's neck from the side.

"You, this guy....And then the second, we don't call our gang White Tiger Gang!"

"What do you want us to be called then? I think this name is very domineering!"

"Domineering your sister! Change it!"

Liu Yi curled his lips.

"Change to what?"

Sun Haoyuan rubbed the back of his head and confusedly said, "This 'giving name' thing gives me a headache, why don't you name it."

"Then I'll name it."

Liu Yi caught a glimpse of a few elementary students walking past them who wore red scarves, his eyes suddenly lit up.

"Just call it Red Scarf Army."

"Red Scarf Army?"

Sun Haoyuan blinked his eyes.

"It sounds okay....But what's the meaning of this name?"

"Later on, all of our members will wear red scarves as a marker."

Liu Yi explained a bit.

"If our gang develop well, perhaps, in the future, you'll see many people with red scarves walking on the street."

"That's good, then we'll call it Red Scarf Army!"

Sun Haoyuan kept on clapping.

"Okay, let's continue our talk later, I have to go to the class."

Liu Yi said and turned around.

"Wait a moment!"

Sun Haoyuan quickly informed him, "In the evening, come to the billiard hall across the 14. We, Red Scarf Army will hold a meeting tonight! I will introduce you to our great organization!"

"Pei! Since when a person can be calculated as a great organization!"

"It's four people, okay! Aren't you a human?"

"F\*ck....You're the one who's not a human! So be it, after school in the evening, I will be looking for you in your school."

Liu Yi secretly sighed, *I manage to give myself a work again.*

*But, this is actually not bad....I always think about how to get rid of the Black Dragon Gang.*

*If I support Sun Haoyuan to raise the banner of Red Scarf Army, I actually can remove Black Dragon Gang from controlling the underworld of the Northern Dragon City. This is also a good choice.*

*Perhaps later, I can have such power and prestige like Murong Hong, with a stamp, all the Northern Dragon City will tremble.*

*Humph, humph.....I must be a Dragon among men! The King of the Northern Dragon City!*

"Liu Yi, if you don't enter now, the school gate will close!"

The guard, who recognized Liu Yi, reminded him.

"Ah! I am coming!"

# Chapter 182 Not Good Enough

This chapter is **sponsored by Ryan of Australia, Ariel of Israel and Stephen of Canada**

---

14 High School was a quite chaotic high school in Northern Dragon City. As long as the students graduate from junior high school, 14 will send admission notice to each of them.

There was no serious student in this high school.

For instance, Sun Haoyuan who just drifted along there.

How many gangsters who were able to finish high school?

Therefore, this 14 High School became their paradise.

Liu Yi's parents forbade him to come near the 14, for fear that it will give bad influence on Liu Yi.

And Liu Yi himself was afraid to get into trouble so he never visited that high school.

After all, he heard that all of the students there were bullies. What if someone sees him and find that he is not pleasing to his eyes? That someone will sure come and hit him.

However, this time is different, Liu Yi came to find people. Moreover, he was looking for Sun Haoyuan, who was well-known in this 14 High School.

At this time, the students of 14 High School have gone home and the school entrance has been deserted.

Liu Yi knew that not many people actually came to this school. Most of them tend to skip classes and go out to play, only a few people who really attended the class.

However, this time, there were still three or two students standing at the front of the school gate, smoking. Occasionally, when a girl in an electric bike passed by, they would whistle at her.

No girl dared to walk past here, for fear of being molested.

When these several students saw Liu Yi, who was dressed in his high school uniform, came, they suddenly raised their eyebrows and walked toward him.

“Hey, isn’t this the student from the 1 High School!”

A boy with a bleached hair and smoking a cigarette swaggered along with his several friends.

“What does a student from the 1 High School do in our 14 High School? Want to show off?”

“I think he wants to spend his money to us, hehe....”

“Stop. We, brothers, do not have money to buy cigarettes so we want to borrow some money from you.”

“Several people began to extort Liu Yi.

“No money.”

Liu Yi, with a bag on his back and hands inside his pants pockets, mercilessly refused.

“F\*ck me, how dare you refuse to give us face!”

That boy with bleached hair suddenly raised his hand, wanting to slap Liu Yi in the face.

He usually liked to bully the students around his school. Those students were perfect to be bullied, even if he hit them, they would not even dare to say anything.

In his view, the thin student in front of him should be the same as them.

But before his hand could slap Liu Yi’s face, Liu Yi lifted his foot and kicked his lower abdomen.

“Ah!”

His pitiful yell rang in their ears. That bleached hair boy immediately bent down and fell to the ground. He clutched his stomach and suddenly threw up.

Liu Yi's kick was quite severe, it almost took half of that boy's life.

At this time, the bleached hair boy's stomach twitched, giving him the urge to die.

"Dajun, Dajun, what happened to you?"

"F\*ck, kid, how dare you to fight back!"

The other students were startled, they did not think that this kid would even dare to fight back!

"I just have one yuan."

Liu Yi took out a piece of crumpled money from his pocket.

"If you can beat me, I will give you this money."

"F\*ck, you think we're beggars!"

"One yuan?! Killing you is not even worth it!"

The noses of these several 14 High School students crooked in anger.

Wasn't this a grave insult to them?

These students surrounded Liu Yi, wanting to give him a lesson. But at this time, Liu Yi heard the billiard hall door behind him being pushed open.

The tall Sun Haoyuan, along with two figures, came out from the inside.

"What is this? What are you going to do to my brother?"

Sun Haoyuan walked eight steps forward.

"Sun, Sun Haoyuan...."

Seeing this guy, these several 14 High School students' legs immediately went soft.

"Sorry....Sorry, we got the wrong person!"

With that, these several students immediately carried the bleached hair boy away, without looking back.

"You see how powerful we are?"

Sun Haoyuan looked at the students who were fleeing in panic and smiled at Liu Yi.

Liu Yi looked at this tall guy, not sure of what to say.

*Scaring away some students....You call this powerful?*

*If you must know, that Yuan Shaojun was settled by me!*

“Chief Sun, is he the fierce guy that you said to us?”

At this time, a woman’s voice came from Sun Haoyuan’s side.

Liu Yi suddenly could not help but take a look, *Oh my, a beauty!*

This beauty wore the 14 High School uniform; with blue pants but the blouse was tied at her waist.

On her upper body, there was a black t-shirt printed with a skull. Coupled with her abundant chest, she looked very eye-catching.

At this time, both of her hands were on her hips and body slightly tilted to the right. Her willowy eyebrows were raised, somewhat contemptuously looking at Liu Yi.

“If that’s him, I, your old mother can beat three of him!”

“You can’t underestimate my brother!”

Sun Haoyuan immediately patted Liu Yi on the shoulder and said, “My brother is a bully in 1 High School!”

“Just him?”

That beauty obviously has a low opinion on Liu Yi.

“I believe in the chief’s judgment, he is certainly not bad.”

At this time, a very vulgar sounding voice came from the side.

Liu Yi turned and saw a somewhat sluggish fellow.

*Whoa, I’ve never seen such a wretched guy like him!*

The man in front of him seemed to be 1.6 m tall. He was squatting down with his hands inside his spacious school uniform sleeves that seemed to be deliberately loosened by him.

His posture made people think that he was a beggar.

“The chief’s vision is good, moreover, didn’t you see the bleached hair boy



that was just carried away?”

This wretched fellow’s observation was actually good....

“So....That bleached hair boy was beaten by you?”

The beauty pinched her waist and looked at Liu Yi, still somewhat doubting him.

“Little Chili, I told you, don’t underestimate my brother, he is fierce!”

Sun Haoyuan explained, “Although we both basically grew up together, even I was very surprised by his change.”

“Did he name our gang?”

Little Chili pouted and said, “Though I am not too proud of you, but I have to say that your proposed name is actually good, much better than the Chief’s proposed name. White Tiger, white tiger, that’s so unpleasant to hear!”

“Hehe....I think that’s a very good name....” (Remember, White Tiger is a slang for hairless female genital)

The nearby wretched fellow laughed twice.

“F\*ck, Rat, can you stop being wretched for a moment!”

Little Chili immediately lifted slender thigh and kicked the wretched fellow called Rat who was squatting down on the ground.

*A violent woman....A wretched man....*

*My God, what’s with the members of this gang!*

“Come, come, I introduce you. Later on, we are all brothers!”

Sun Haoyuan happily put his arm around Liu Yi’s shoulders and said, “This little fellow on the left is Hu Rui, nicknamed Rat. He is our gang’s military strategist.”

“Just call me a good for nothing strategist.”

Hu Rui wiped his mouth, “Just don’t call me a turtlehead strategist.”

“F\*ck! Can’t you be a bit serious!”

Little Chili lifted her leg and was about to kick Hu Rui again. The frightened Hu Rui quickly tumbled, dodging to the side.

“This beauty is Tang Guo, in our Red Scarf Army, she is responsible for the foreign affairs.”

“D\*mn it, you!”

Little Chili’s willowy eyebrows immediately rose in anger, “I, said, I am not serving in foreign affairs. I, this old mother, am responsible for the PR department! If you want, you, chief Sun, can do it yourself!”

“.....”

Sun Haoyuan helplessly touched the back of his head, “In short, this is our current configuration.”

“This configuration....Can’t even fill the Songhua River van (A car brand).”

Liu Yi could not help but sigh.

“Brat, you look down on this old mother, aren’t you?”

Little Chili, Tang Guo proudly straightened her back, “Kid, let me tell you, this old mother is in top ten!”

“Chest, she means her chest!”

The nearby Rat, Hu Rui gestured with his eyes and said.

This time, Liu Yi actually agreed with his assessment.

“Rat, I see that your skin is too tight recently.”

Tang Guo clenched her fists and smiled, “I think you need to be punched to loosen your skin.”

“Hehe....Today the weather is nice....The weather is nice....”

Hu Rui laughed a hollow laughed twice and moved a bit far away.

“Come, let’s talk inside.”

Sun Haoyuan said, “This billiard hall is owned by Rat’s uncle so we can say that this is our place.”

With that, he led Liu Yi and the others inside.

Inside, there were several green billiard tables and many 14 High School students who were smoking and playing billiard.

When a tattooed middle-aged man saw Sun Haoyuan and the rest, he smilingly nodded at them.

“You’re back.”

“Em, uncle, we want to discuss something.”

Hu Rui greeted his uncle.

“Go on then, it’s quieter on the inside.”

That tattooed uncle looked scary but he seemed to have a very good temper.

“Boss, I forgot to bring money, add it to my tab will you?”

At this time, a slovenly student came over and arrogantly said to that uncle.

That uncle laughed and, without saying any words, pulled a dagger from behind and then, with a bang, placed it on the nearby wooden table.

That student suddenly trembled with fear and obediently pulled out his money and paid.

Liu Yi was stunned.

*My God....A smiling tiger!*

*No wonder he can successfully open a billiard hall right across the chaotic 14 High School....*

“My uncle is so friendly.”

Hu Rui shook his head and pulled the side door, “Come on, let’s talk inside.”

*You call that friendly....*

Liu Yi curled his lips and walked inside.

The room that they entered seemed like an office room, the inside was very spacious. There was also a newly purchased table.

“This is my uncle’s office, but also our activity room.”

Hu Rui wretchedly smiled, “If you fancy one of the girls outside, you can bring her here and f\*ck her....”

At the main area outside, there were several girls playing billiard. But seeing their heavy makeup look, Liu Yi completely lost his interest.

“If you talk nonsense again, this old mother will beat you to death!”

Tang Guo took a cue stick from the nearby rack, gave Hu Rui a glance and then said to Liu Yi.

“Kid, aren’t you good? Let’s play with this old mother. See if your performance is good enough!”

Hearing Tang Guo’s provocative words, Sun Haoyuan and Hu Rui, the two people simultaneously looked at Liu Yi with ambiguous looks.

“Do you dare to accept this challenge?”

*F\*ck....I have never played Billiard in my life....*

Liu Yi hesitated.

# Chapter 183 Price Of Losing The Game

Liu Yi so far has been well behaved, how could he ever play pool or the likes? In Europe, this was an elegant gentleman's game.

But in China, a lot of people who played billiards were those skipping classes students and street rascals. Obviously, there were also normal people who played this, but they were not in the majority. The inside of this Billiard Hall was mostly a mess, filled with smoke and noise.

So this Billiard Hall was a restricted place for Liu Yi. Previously, he only dared to sneak into internet cafes, along with Chen Cai, to play CS, CF or something.

Therefore, Liu Yi knew nothing about billiard.

However, facing the provocation from a beauty, Liu Yi simply cannot turn a blind eye!

If he did that, the beauty will look down on him!

He could not let this happen!

"How about it, do you or do you not dare?"

Little Chili continued to hook her finger at Liu Yi and said, "If you do not dare, just tell this old mother, this old mother will then know that you are a wimp."

Tang Guo's words immediately angered Liu Yi.

What he hated the most is people looking down on him.

"Little Chili, don't go too far, my brother can't play billiard."

Afraid that the scene would turn awkward, from the side, Sun Haoyuan hastened to interject something nice words.

"No, I accept your challenge."

Liu Yi said and reached out for a cue stick from the nearby shelf. After he weighted it a bit with his hand, he said.

“Come on!”

“Liu Yi, don’t be stupid!”

Sun Haoyuan quickly reminded Liu Yi, “Little Chili is good at billiard....Me and Rat are not her opponent!”

“You never play billiard against her....You’re just going to lose face....”

“If I don’t accept her challenge, I will still lose face. If I lose then I lose, at least, it’s better than not trying.”

Liu Yi said while holding the cue stick.

Tang Guo’s eyes seemed to lit up.

“Come on then, I let you take the first move.”

Tang Guo confidently held the cue stick and stood on the side.

“Ladies first.”

Liu Yi thought that he should be a gentleman.

“Less nonsense, this old mother let you go first, it means you go first!”

Tang Guo actually did not appreciate his gesture, she stared at him and charmingly scold.

“Liu Yi, you go first. Little Chilli hates the discrimination between men and women....”

Sun Haoyuan wiped his cold sweat and said from the said.

Things seemed to get more and more weird.

“Very well, then I’ll go first.”

Liu Yi held the cue stick according to the billiard game that he saw on the television, imitating how the players hold it. And then he aligned it at the white ball in front of him, ready to start the game.

Liu Yi’s right hand slightly perspired, he was a bit unsure.

But now things have already beyond his control.

*No matter what, I’ll start it!*

Liu Yi tightened his right-hand grip on the cue stick and mercilessly thrust

it forward, hitting that white ball.

“Plak!”

As a result, because of the unsteadiness of him handling the cue stick, it went off its predetermined track and directly hit the lower part of the white ball.

The white ball instantly jumped off the table. Flying out, it nearly hit the nearby Hu Rui’s head.

“What the....Liu Yi, are you playing billiard or trying to kill me!”

Hu Rui held his head and fled like a scared cat to the side, but not before throwing some sarcasm at Liu Yi.

“My mistake....”

Liu Yi quickly admitted his fault. He never thought that the ball would actually fly!

“Hahaha! I knew it! Now it’s my turn!”

Seeing Liu Yi made an error on the first ball, she could not help charmingly burst out laughing.

She made Hu Rui picked up the white ball and then put it on the table.

“Let me show you how the real player play!”

With that, she flicked her curling upward buttocks, gently pushing Liu Yi to the side, and then leaned over the table, ready to hit the white ball.

He has to admit that....When Tang Guo played billiard, it was a beautiful scenery.

Her whole body seemed to float over the table. Her hips were slightly elevated, forming an attractive arc.

Her milky white bosom pressed on the table, which made Liu Yi worry that they could crush the table....

Moreover, the girl was wearing a low neckline t-shirt.

Therefore, when she bent over, the deep cleavage was suddenly squeezed out, pressing the two milky-white softness into slightly changing their

shapes.

Liu Yi unconsciously swallowed a mouthful of saliva.

*Sure enough....When a beauty plays billiard, it truly is wonderful....*

*Especially a beauty with a low neckline.*

The nearby Hu Rui and Sun Haoyuan were watching this scene with straight eyes.

Hu Rui was the wretched one, he directly watched her from the other side of the table, both of his eyes almost flew out.

Tang Guo slightly raised her eyelids, her eyes gave Hu Rui a sharp glance.

Then, she pulled the cue stick back and vigorously thrust it forward.

“Bam!”

The white ball hit the rest of the balls, dispersing all of them.

But one of the balls directly hit Hu Rui’s forehead.

“Ow!”

Hu Rui held his forehead that was in pain, his butt fell on the ground.

“Little Chili! You intentionally did this!”

“Humph, do you think you can see this old mother’s chest for free?”

Tang Guo curled her lips in disdain.

The number twelve ball entered the hole, the big numbers were Tang Guo’s. And it was still Tang Guo’s turn to hit the ball.

She was ready to hit the next number ten ball.

Liu Yi stared straight at Tang Guo, not just to admire her figure, but also to learn her technique and posture.

Liu Yi mobilized his breathing technique; At this moment, his concentration has reached its peak.

Tang Guo’s every gesture was clearly reflected into his eyes and then memorized by him.

“Bang!”



Tang Guo slightly missed the ball, the number ten ball hit the mouth of the hole, bounced twice and went away.

“Alas, a pity.”

Tang Guo finally straightened up, slightly leaned against the cue stick and said with regret.

“I can’t clear the table in one turn.”

*This girl is serious....*

Liu Yi took a deep breath.

*I can’t let the men lose face!*

*And for myself.*

*I cannot lose!*

Liu Yi held the cue stick with his right hand and pressed the table with his left hand. His left-hand thumb and index finger formed a 90-degree angle, using it to steady the cue stick.

Tang Guo’s previous playing posture continued to reverberate in Liu Yi’s mind.

*But this is just the posture....If only I can aim the ball better.*

Just as that idea appeared in Liu Yi’s mind, his eyes of favorable impression suddenly changed a bit.

A dim golden light appeared in front of that white ball.

This golden light formed a straight line from the white ball toward another ball that was waiting to be hit.

Liu Yi was amazed.

*The eyes of favorable impression can do this?*

*This is amazing....*

*It’s like having a cheat code in video games....*

Liu Yi became excited, *Could this help me aim the ball?*

That golden line continued to adjust its direction along with Liu Yi’s aim.

And, along with Liu Yi's adjustment, a silver light line appeared from behind the targeted ball and changed its direction.

Liu Yi's heart was moved.

*This should be the direction where that ball will move after the white ball hit it!*

*This truly goes against the heaven's will....*

*Eyes of favorable impression, I love you so much!*

Liu Yi adjusted his aim until the silver line fell into the middle of the nearby hole.

"Are you going to hit it or not? Do you want to wait there until supper?! So slow!"

Tang Guo could not help but complain.

Liu Yi did waste a lot of time.

"Here I come."

Liu Yi pulled the cue stick, gathering his strength.

"F\*ck, how evil."

Tang Guo curled her lips.

Liu Yi's hand immediately trembled, *F\*ck, the evil one here is you, girl!*

He quickly steadied his hand and then hit the cue ball.

"Bang! Pow!"

Two clear and crisp sounds were heard.

The white ball hit the number 2 ball, which then made the number 2 ball directly rush toward the nearby hole and enter it.

Tang Guo and the others were dumbfounded.

The previous Liu Yi cannot even hit straight, but now he can smoothly hit the ball into the hole?

That was highly unlikely....

This progress was too fast!

“A beginner’s luck.”

Tang Guo finally thought of this possibility and shot a glance at Liu Yi, “Come on, you have the table for yourself. However, I am afraid you cannot clear all the balls, you are still a noob after all. And once you miss once, I can take you.”

Tang Guo was a veteran in billiard. Since she started socializing with Hu Rui, she would come here everyday to play.

A lot of boys liked to play with Tang Guo. After all, Tang Guo is a beautiful girl and she would often wear low-cut clothing.

But to play with her, they need to bet with money, eight to ten yuan per game.

Basically, Tang Guo has sufficient spending money, which means that she often won those bets.

Liu Yi did not utter any words. His look was very earnest as he continued to play.

Using the same cheat method, he continued to put ball after ball into the hole.

When he was about to hit the last number eight black ball, Tang Guo finally could not sit still.

“F\*ck! You kid play the pig eating the tiger! This old mother was wrong!”

*This is clearly clearing the table in one turn!*

Tang Guo still has some balls left, but Liu Yi needed only to hit the number eight ball.

Not to mention he has never made an error!

“It’s just a fluke.”

Liu Yi said with a smile.

“Hate! But let see how you’re going to hit this last ball!”

Tang Guo noticed that, although Liu Yi has a near perfect accuracy, he always shot in a direct way.

But now, the white ball was completely blocked by several of Tang Guo's balls, which made it unable to hit the number eight ball directly.

Moreover, the only possible indirect hit through a corner was also blocked by one of her balls.

*Humph, humph, the heaven have eyes! Let see how is Liu Yi going to do!*

"All roads lead to Rome, there's always a way."

Liu Yi lightly smiled and then leaned over the table.

"Wait a minute, you cannot hit the white ball yet!"

The nearby Hu Rui suddenly raised his hand and shouted.

"Rat, what kind of crafty plot you're up to now?"

Tang Guo was definitely not a patient person, she gave Hu Rui a stern look and then ask.

"This....Let's at least have a bet with this!"

Hu Rui's eyes blinked twice and then said, "Otherwise, this game would be in vain, right? Little Chili, since when you play without a bet? You're not going to surrender just like this, right?"

"Bring it on, what is this old mother afraid of!"

Tang Guo believed that Liu Yi would surely screw this ball. As long as she got the chance, she can win the game, turning defeat into victory by clearing the rest of her balls in one turn.

"What about you, Liu Yi, do you have any advice?"

Hu Rui asked Liu Yi while secretly giving him a wink.

Liu Yi wondered what this secret wink from Hu Rui meant. However, he was also very confident with himself, having that cheat, how could he lose?

"So be it, I have nothing against this bet anyway."

"Good, then the loser will take off a piece of his or her clothes!"

# Chapter 184 Red Scarf Army

## Development Plan

“F\*ck!”

Tang Guo wanted to fiercely beat Hu Rui, that guy, with the cue stick.

*Is there something healthy in this guy's head?*

“Afraid to bet, little Chili?”

Hu Rui slyly smiled, looked at Tang Guo and said, “If you're afraid to lose then so be it.”

“Are you kidding me, since when did I, your old mother, afraid to bet!”

Tang Guo gripped the cue stick, “Bring it on!”

Liu Yi secretly thought, *Oh my....Isn't this too cheap for her....*

*What if I continue this cheat?*

*If I win, would she undress?*

*But this office seems really hot, if she keeps her clothes for too long, perhaps she would get a heatstroke.*

*Ai, Liu Yi, you are so kind, you like to think about other people.*

*Yes, this is for Tang Guo's health, that's it.*

Liu Yi leaned over the table, held the cue stick, and eyes on the ball.

The golden and silver lights reappeared. Indeed, just as Tang Guo expected, Liu Yi found that all the linear paths were blocked by Tang Guo's balls.

Liu Yi tried to aim for a long time, to no avail.

Cold sweat began to trickle down his forehead....

If he cannot put the number eight ball into the hole, it was highly likely that he would lose.

*If I lose, wouldn't Tang Guo suffer a heat stroke?*

*That would be a sin!*

"Idiot, if you can't shoot straight, can't you try shooting in an arc?"

At this time, Lin Tong's voice floated out of Liu Yi's spiritual environment.

Then, Lin Tong flew out from his body and jumped on the table, her small paw pointed at the white ball and said.

"Can you play billiard? Did you ever saw a curve ball?"

His cold sweat suddenly poured down.

*My fox sister....Is actually able to play billiard?*

"Can you play billiard....?"

"Nonsense, this big miss is certainly can! Previously, my clansmen are expert in this, okay! However, it looks like you are the one who is so abnormal, your eyes of favorable impression can also be used like this! It appears that when you break through the third star-jade, your eyes of favorable impression 'mutated.'"

Lin Tong sat cross-legged on the table, held her paws together and said while nodding her head.

"I don't know if this 'mutation' is good or bad, but for now, you have a lot of auxiliary technique."

Lin Tong guessed, "Later on, you can test this effect in the actual combat."

"Hey, hey, are you going to play or not? You're not painting a calligraphy, you know! In a minute, I, your old mother, am going to get pregnant!"

The nearby Tang Guo impatiently said.

Liu Yi wanted to vomit blood.

*This Tang Guo really has a big mouth.*

*But, this is her special characteristic.*

"Look at here!"

Lin Tong's tail suddenly stuck out and gently tapped somewhere on the

white ball.

Liu Yi suddenly aimed the cue stick there.

The two lights suddenly got distorted, especially the golden line, which directly drew an arc, bypassing the two colored balls in the front.

The silver line also got distorted, but the arc was much smaller.

Liu Yi glanced at it a few times, the golden line completely bypassed the two colored balls, and then the silver line fell into the hole.

“Come on!”

Tang Guo once again urged him.

Liu Yi pulled his right hand back, preparing to thrust the cue stick forward.

At this moment, Sun Haoyuan and Hu Rui were far more nervous than he was.

*You have to win....*

*For men's happiness, you have to win!*

*We all rely on you, Liu Yi!*

The two men's widened eyes were staring straight at Liu Yi's hand.

At this time, Liu Yi's hand finally began to move again.

Like a lightning, the cue stick struck that white ball.

In Tang Guo's astonished eyes, the white ball drew a beautiful arc and hit the eight ball, bypassing the two balls that were blocking it.

The eight ball immediately spun and with a crash sound, went inside the hole.

“This....Is impossible....”

Tang Guo went silly, unable to believe what she just saw.

“That's....a curveball, how could you possibly this good!”

Even in international matches, only a few of those real masters can hit a curveball!

Because it's just too hard! There are so many calculations and predictions!

And it's not just calculating how to make the ball draw a curve, sometimes they also need to consider the friction on the table, or whether or not there are some slight tilts.

But this skinny guy in front of her...Who looked like a teacher's pet, actually played a nifty curveball!

"Beautiful!"

Hu Rui's mouth spat out a speck of saliva.

He hit his chest like an excited male baboon, shouting in excitement.

"Take off the clothes! Take off the clothes! Take off the clothes!"

"Ahem....Accept your defeat."

Sun Haoyuan's eyes were a bit green, but he quietly gave Liu Yi a thumbs up.

*With hard work.*

*He fought for the men's reputation!*

*And he gives us a treat for the eyes....*

"F\*ck!"

Tang Guo was not going to shy away, "I, your old mother, am not afraid!"

With that, she reached out her hands and touched her clothes.

At this time, the three men's eyes were looking straight at her.

Tang Guo loosened her top clothes that was wrapped around her waist and then threw it to the nearby couch.

"Ok, I finish taking off my clothes!"

"F\*ck! Little Chili, you're cheating!"

Hu Rui was the first to denounce.

"When did I, your old mother, cheat!"

Tang Guo pinched her waist, her lips showed a teasing smile, "Wasn't that clothes mine?"

"You, you shameless!"



Hu Rui was pissed off; He has always been claiming to be smart, but he did not expect to fall into a woman's trap today.

"Cut, want to look what's under my clothes?"

Tang Guo pulled her collar, "Come and take it off yourself!"

"I, I...."

Hu Rui held back his desire to look and took two steps back.

Nothing good will happen if he took her offer, he would probably die instead.

"No matter what, our Liu Yi won the game."

Sun Haoyuan smoothed things over, "So then, little Chili, now you can view him as our own, right?"

"Humph, able to play billiard is nothing."

Tang Guo curled her lips, "Moreover, I hate this kind of playing-the-pig-to-eat-the-tiger thing, humph, if you have the skill you should say it from the beginning! You want to deceive this old mother to undress right!"

"I really don't...."

Liu Yi was aggrieved, *Obviously, it's you who wanted me to play billiard!*

*Moreover, this undress thing did not come from me, but from Hu Rui, okay!*

*Alas, it's hard to be a good person!*

"Humph, you this group of smelly men, are not a good thing!"

Tang Guo sat on the nearby couch, put her left leg on top of her right leg so as to avoid being looked at.

"Okay, okay, stop making trouble anymore, today we have Liu Yi. Besides announcing that our Red Scarf Army is officially established, there are many things that need to be discussed."

At this time Sun Haoyuan took up the big brother's mantle, "We gather here because we have a common goal, that is to expand our Red Scarf Army so that sooner or later, we can trample the Black Dragon Gang and then become the leader of the underground world in the Northern Dragon City,

right?”

“Bah, I am not interested.”

Tang Guo curled her lips, not giving Sun Haoyuan any faces, “You’re the one who shamelessly dragged me here, saying that I can fight.”

“Ahem....This, this can be discussed separately....”

“Little Chili has learned Tae Kwon Do, and her level is quite high....”

Hu Rui said in a hushed tone in near Liu Yi’s ear, “Do you want to try her?”

He gave Liu Yi an ambiguous look.

Liu Yi’s head immediately shook like a rattle-drum.

He has not lived long enough yet.

“Let me tell you....This woman is spicy, you have to try her....If you are interested, I can sacrifice my life to help you create an opportunity?”

Hu Rui asked, continuing to carry an unrelenting spirit.

“Let me off...okay.”

Liu Yi had to beg for mercy.

“Ai....Couldn’t little Chili meet with a sincere person?” Hu Rui put on a regretful look.

Liu Yi thought, *I never thought that this wretched guy would actually care about friends.*

“If she goes on like this, I might not live long....”

When he heard these tearful words, Liu Yi suddenly had an insight.

*So that is the reason....*

“Liu Yi, you see, now in addition to you, our Red Scarf Army only have four people.”

Sun Haoyuan finally recognized the fact, “Little Chili is our thug and Rat is our staff. Although the Red Scarf Army currently have only the four of us, there will be a large number of people in the future! The four of us will be the veterans of the Red Scarf Army, the senior cadres!”

His words actually sounded awe-inspiring, but Liu Yi still could not help but ask.

“Then how do you plan to develop?”

“Actually, I want to take this 14 High School as our domain first.”

Sun Haoyuan has his own plan, “I plan to make this billiard room as our headquarters, and then we’ll try to recruit our members from those 14 High School students.”

“I do not agree.”

Hu Rui put on his rarely shown serious look and said, “Those students are ultimately a student. Chief, can you count on them to help us fight the other underworld people? Without the real people from underworld, our strength is never going to be enough.”

“People, money, fists.”

Liu Yi raised his three fingers and said, “What we need now are these three.”

“When did your talk get this big? I won’t say anything, you guys decided yourself, I’m just responsible for beating other people.”

Tang Guo waved her hand from the side.

This development thing was too much, she was too lazy to think about it.

She just wanted to use her head to think on how to beat other people. Previously she got high test score and was eligible to enter a good high school, but she chose this 14 High School instead!

“We should look for a reliable site to settle.”

Hu Rui suggested, “If we can strengthen our power a bit, we can rein in some smaller gangs and occupy their sites. Then, we can slowly draw in the surrounding small gangs, continue to recruit and to expand our forces. Slowly we will develop.”

“That’s a good idea, but where can we find such small gangs?”

Sun Haoyuan and the others were bewildered.

“We should try the Eastern Xing district.”

Hu Rui said and pulled out a map of Northern Dragon City. He spread it out and put it on the billiard table.

His finger pointed to a relatively remote area. Seeing this, Liu Yi immediately drew a gasp.

The Eastern Xing district was the most chaotic place in Northern Dragon City.

However, heroes came out in troubled times; If that idea is true, then that place is actually one of the best environment.

“What do you think about this place?”

Hu Rui enthusiastically asked.

“I can only say that you are out of your mind.”

Sun Haoyuan swallowed his saliva.

# Chapter 185 Social Investigation

If you were a Northern Dragon City citizen and someone asked you to single out the most chaotic place in the City, you would mention this Eastern Xing district.

Eastern Xing was originally a suburb, located at an isle at the center of Northern Dragon City's river, which was also called Eastern Xing isle.

The previous Party Secretary of the Northern Dragon City was very optimistic that he can develop this Eastern Xing isle into a good zone. Thus, he planned for a ten years development plan, ready to develop the Eastern Xing Isle.

However, just shortly after he started building the Easter Xing Isle, there were changed in the leadership position and he was sent to be the Party Secretary at somewhere else.

Later, the newly appointed Party Secretary of the Northern Dragon City began the construction of the bridge across the river, abandoning the isle but vigorously developing the economic of the Northern area.

Thus, the development plan of this Eastern Xing district grounded to a halt.

Later on, the Eastern Xing district became a mix of urban and rural area, a very messy place.

The police did not care. Because it was too messy there, even the police were reluctant to go inside.

Originally, Eastern Xing district was popular with beggars and tramps.

But after some dark forces came here, the Eastern Xing district began to change.

Nightclub, KTV.....

Soon, the Eastern Xing district was filled with a variety entertainment, it even has its own red light district.

In the blink of an eye, the slum-like Northern Xing Isle has become the most developed entertainment zone in the Northern Dragon City.

This place was filled with erotic and violence. But this area also gave no small contribution to the Northern Dragon City economy each year. Plus, a lot of underground forces placed their headquarters there; Thus, this Eastern Xing district has become a limbo zone.

The Eastern Xing district was full with underground forces, large and small and innumerable.

One of the most powerful was naturally the Black Dragon Gang.

“How do we establish ourselves here?”

Sun Haoyuan looked at the small island on the map in surprise.

“As long as we have enough strength, we first eat the weakest gang there, and then slowly eat the rest one by one....”

Hu Rui began to fantasize.

“Don’t be ridiculous....We might as well talk about how to rein in the 14 High School first.”

Sun Haoyuan waved his hand.

“I think what Hu Rui said is somewhat feasible.”

Liu Yi’s heart was moved.

Although Hu Rui’s method was a bit risky, for those who wanted to build their own forces with minimum manpower....It’s one of the few best feasible ways.

“Huh?”

Several people rolled their eyes at Liu Yi, perhaps they thought that Liu Yi has gone crazy.

Hu Rui himself was just fantasizing about it; A few students like them....Who would really dare to go to the Eastern Xing Isle!

Those who were not a gang member would die!

“This....We don’t even know which gang is the weakest....Let’s think about

it first....”

Hu Rui was still the reasonable one.

“You’re the one who brought this idea, don’t you want to achieve it?”

Liu Yi asked a sentence.

Hu Rui was stunned.

Of course, he wanted to achieve it!

Since he has this idea, of course, he wanted to achieve it!

Everyone has a dream.

The chief’s dream was to make the Red Scarf Army the leader of the underworld in Northern Dragon City.

His dream was to give the Chief his counsel to lay the foundation.

As for little Chili’s dream, perhaps she wanted to be able to play billiard freely every day.

As for Liu Yi’s dream....

What was his dream again?

“If you want to achieve it, you have to be bold.”

Liu Yi said, and then slowly explained himself, “I can help you find out which is the weakest gang in the Eastern Xing district. Follow me if you want to plant the Red Scarf Army flag in the Eastern Xing district.”

With that, he pulled out a red scarf from his bosom and then tied it on his right arm.

The scarlet red scarf was flame-like, very eye-catching.

“Interesting, I, your mother, am with you.”

Violence was in Tang Guo’s blood, she looked around but found nothing red that she can use.

But when she turned around, she saw Hu Rui was about to wrap a red scarf around his neck; She suddenly reached out and snatch that scarf.

“Big sis....That’s my scarf!”

Hu Rui hurriedly exclaimed, "If you take it....What am I going to use?"

Sun Haoyuan rubbed the back of his head like he has a headache, "My underpants is red, I cannot take it!"

"A mere trifle. Leave it to me."

Tang Guo opened the nearby drawer and took out a pair of scissors. She then directly cut Hu Rui's long red scarf into three pieces.

Hu Rui's heart was hurt.

"That's my scarf...."

"It's ours now."

Tang Guo said, and gave the two short red scarves to the other two.

She picked the shortest for herself and used it to tie her long black hair into a ponytail.

And Hu Rui continued to tie his piece of red scarf around his neck.

Finding no special place to tie the red scarf, Sun Haoyuan simply covered his head with the red scarf and then tied it.

The other three people who watched him were dumbfounded.

*My God, this is like the Pirates of the Caribbean!*

*This Sun Haoyuan is too much!*

"What do you guys think, I am awesome, right?"

Sun Haoyuan proudly showed off.

"That's awesome!"

Tang Guo gave Sun Haoyuan a thumbs up.

"Haha, as I said, each of you is lame, I am the most handsome here!"

Sun Haoyaun said and touched the red scarf on his head, "This will be my Red Scarf Army costume!"

"Liu Yi, how do we find the weakest gang?"

Hu Rui enthusiastically asked.



“Wait here for me, I am going to inquire first.”

Liu Yi said, turned around and then went into the toilet to make a call.  
This phone call was to a beauty.

“Liu Yi? This is rare, you actually took the initiative to give me a call!”

The voice that came out of the phone was the voice of a female T-Rex.

Actually, from the milky-like sweet sounding voice of her, one cannot really understand that she was actually a violent queen.

“Em....Police officer Yuan....”

“F\*ck, I already got off work, don’t call me police officer; Call me sister.”

The opposite party was clearly dissatisfied.

*Why....Another one wants to be my elder sister.*

*Do girls like to be someone else’s sister?*

“Say what you want to say, quick! Otherwise, I am going to hang up!”

“That....Sister Yuan, I have something to ask....”

Liu Yi was helpless and had to make a compromise for his interest.

*Alas, this is the life of a younger brother!*

“Hihi, that’s good! Go on, tell me, what do you want to find sister for? Do you want to ask me out for a dinner? If so, you have to line up, there are many men who asked the same thing!”

*What the....*

*This girl is really narcissistic.*

“Em....If sister helps me, I will ask sister out for a dinner....”

“D\*mn, you kid, can’t you look for me for something good? Tell me, what do you want me to help you for?”

Yuan Zhenyue snappily asked.

“Em....Sister Yuan, can you check something for me....”

After much deliberation, in a limited time like this, only Yuan Zhenyue can

help him.

Yuan Zhenyue is a police officer, so toward those underworld things, she would certainly have some understanding.

“Speak! Don’t just wishy-washy like this!”

“Em....Do, do you know about Eastern Xing district?”

“Of course I know, why do you ask?”

At this time, Yuan Zhenyue was lying in her bathtub at home, one of her hand was playing with the bubbles on the water surface, another hand was holding the phone, talking to Liu Yi.

Yuan Zhenyue usually never picked up the phone while she was in a bath.

But when she saw the caller was actually Liu Yi, she unconsciously picked it up.

“I was wondering....Well, our school has assigned a social homework, telling us to do a social investigation.”

“Social investigation? Your school is really interesting.”

Yuan Zhenyue curled her lips and said, “Asking about what to do and where the mess is.”

“I am just curious.”

Liu Yi did not dare to directly say that he wanted to help establish a gang and had to come up with a bunch of lies.

“That place is so mess up, what do you want to ask?”

“What gang is the weakest gang?”

“I think it’s called....Sea Gang.”

Yuan Zhenyue thought for a moment and then said.

“Sea Gang? This name....Where are they?”

“At the most chaotic place, of course. There are a lot large and small forces there. For a small scale gang like this Sea Gang, to be able to occupy a corner there is already very good.”

Yuan Zhenyue slowly said, "I remember they have a small bar in the Eastern Xing district, that kind of business."

"What's it called?"

"Why do you ask so many details?"

"Social investigation....I just want to be thorough."

"Oh....Well, I can't remember such a detail, I will look it up for you and then call you back."

With that, Yuan Zhenyue immediately hung up the phone.

The girl did not suspect anything.....Liu Yi somewhat regretted lying to her.

*Perhaps I should not be looking for Yuan Zhenyue to ask this kind of thing, this girl is, after all, a police officer!*

But if he did not look for her....Liu Yi really did not know whom to look for.

*Should I look for Murong Hong?*

By virtue of this old man's strength, finding a small gang is certainly not going to be a problem.

Moreover, perhaps he can help and subsidize Liu Yi, making his gang develop rapidly.

If they can get the sponsorship from a large tycoon like Murong Family, wanting to become a large gang like the Black Dragon gang was not going to be difficult.

Moreover, Liu Yi thought that if he asks for Murong Hong's help this time, the old man would definitely want to help him!

Why, because this will make Liu Yi owe him a big favor.

The old man went crazy, he wanted Liu Yi to become his son-in-law....

Liu Yi himself was still uncertain whether or not Murong Hong's new attitude toward him was yet just another ruse or it really came from his heart?

*That old fox....I am such a pure person, how could I guess what's in his mind!*

While Liu Yi was still wondering, soon, Yuan Zhenyue really called him

back.

“Little brother Liu Yi, I really found it. The domain of the Sea Gang is at the southeastern corner of Eastern Xing district, at a bar called “Cape.” It looks like a really messy place. If you want to do a social investigation or something, just ask me about it, don’t go investigate on your own, you hear me?”

“I know. Rest assured sister Yuan, I will not do anything stupid.”

After this investigation, a smile appeared on the corner of Liu Yi’s mouth

*Cape isn’t it....*

*Very good, later on, this will be our turf.*

“Very well, but this is an important information, remember to ask me out for dinner!”

Yuan Zhenyue seemingly planning on stabbing Liu Yi with a knife.

“Huh? But I have no money. I am still a student.”

“No matter, just find a work or something, find out the solution yourself! I am going to hung up; I, your old mother, am taking a bath!”

*Taking a bath?*

Liu Yi could not help begin to fantasize.

# Chapter 186 Break Into The Gangster's Lair

Chen Dahai was filled with resentment recently.

In the past, relying on his all out effort and hot-bloodedness, he led several of his brothers to burst into this Eastern Xing district to take root on its southeastern corner and open this bar.

Eastern Xing Isle was indeed a messy place filled with various underworld forces. Toward an outsider like Chen Dahai, he was naturally rejected by those forces.

But Chen Dahai was a martial art practitioner since he was a child. Later on, he went on to become a soldier.

But after leaving the army, he discovered a serious problem. He did not have any connection, including his group of veterans. They also have no other skill to rely on getting a job. Thus, they have no ability to feed their family.

Finally, Chen Dahai gritted his teeth and led several of his veteran brothers to force their way to take root in this Eastern Xing district by relying on their fighting prowess.

But after they successfully taking their root there, he discovered that he was still unable to become a gangster!

Because his bar simply has no business!

Most of the popular businesses in the Eastern Xing district were already swept away by big powers.

The remaining businesses were divided among the smaller forces. What came into his mouth was basically just the leftover.

His Cape bar was in danger of being shut down.

Chen Dahai looked at the pile of accounts on the table and he could not

help but sigh.

“Squad leader, why don’t we just join the Black Dragon Gang.”

The nearby Zhou Jinle went forward and urged him.

“Our fund....Would only keep us afloat for a few days. If we go on like this, even if the other gangs do not rock our boat, our brothers would have starved to death first.”

The Sea Gang members plus the Cape bar staffs were more than twenty people.

Even if they were only paid 1000 yuan per person per month, they needed twenty thousand yuan just for the salary.

This did not include the bar’s daily consumption cost. If the operating expense of the bar was also counted into this, the figure would double.

But now they have no money in their accounts; Every day they were in a state of ‘just making ends meet.’

To open this bar, Chen Dahai and his brothers have spent their collective money. Would they need to sell this place and run away from this Eastern Xing district with tails tugged between their legs?

Chen Dahai would not accept this!

If those common gangsters can thrive here, why can’t these former soldiers do the same!

Could it be they, the veterans, were not as good as those gangsters!

Chen Dahai did not believe this!

However, their accounts were indeed rotten.

“Old Zhou, you’ve got to be kidding me!”

Hearing Zhou Jinle’s recommendation, Chen Dahai’s brows wrinkled up, “What do you think those Black Dragon are? If we join them, the Cape bar would turn into what kind of place? Selling drugs, prostitution....We absolutely cannot touch these things. Especially drugs, we absolutely cannot touch those, understand?”

“But, squad leader....”

Zhou Jinle seemed to be very embarrassed, “We have no money....If we go on like this, we can only quietly leave the Eastern Xing district.”

“D\*mn it!”

Chen Dahai clenched his fists.

He got up and walked to the bar counter and then directly picked up a bottle of red wine. With empty hand, he unscrewed the cork and started to drink shot after shot.

The bar was empty, there was no one else except several idle waitresses.

It was in this moment, the bar door suddenly being pushed out.

*A customer?*

Chen Dahai’s eyebrows suddenly jumped up and he excitedly turned around.

Four teenagers came in, one of them was a girl.

Each and everyone of them wore a red scarf. Although they were still young, they seemed to be candidates for future gangsters.

“Who is the boss here? Come out and let me see him!”

One of them came forward and shouted; He was a big fellow with head covered with red scarf.

“Who are you?”

Several Cape bar brothers suddenly got up and began to move toward them. Chen Dahai did not utter a word. Zhou Jinle walked over and looked at these people with a frown.

Seeing these fierce veterans, Sun Haoyuan shrunk back his neck.

“We are the Red Scarf Army. Starting today, this bar and all of you belong to us.”

A youth in a school uniform and a red scarf wrapped around his arm held out his hand to point at the bar and those brothers as he leisurely took the initiative to speak first.

“Hahaha!”

“F\*ck me, where did this idiot come from!”

“Kids, you guys watched the Young and Dangerous too much!”

Hearing Liu Yi’s words, the people in the room suddenly could not help but laugh.

But Liu Yi did not lose his heart. He still stood there with hands inside his pockets.

“Liu Yi, you fool. I, this old mother, lose my face following you.”

Tang Guo clutched her forehead, looking very painful.

She shouldn’t have followed him in her ‘hot blooded’ state only to immediately lose face.

The thugs in this bar, none of them looked dissolute.

Tang Guo can tell immediately that many of them were skilled in martial arts. Their sturdy bodies seemed different than those common thugs.

This seemed a bit tricky....They seemed to have chewed a bone.

Hu Rui also narrowed his eyes, sweeping left and right, seemingly trying to come up with something.

“Liu Yi....I have a way out of here....”

He whispered in Liu Yi’s ear.

“Red Scarf Army only move forward, never backward.”

Liu Yi directly refused Hu Rui’s proposal.

Since they were here already, he did not intend to go back empty-handed!

“This isn’t a place for students like you, kids.”

Chen Dahai clapped his hands, stood up and said, “What happen to students nowadays? How come you want to be a gangster rather than to study? Do you think it’s cool and awesome to be a gangster?”

He said. His face showed a warning look, “Tell you what, this world is very cruel and very bloody; It’s not a place you should put your feet into.”



“It seems like reasons are not going to work on you.”

Liu Yi started to ‘twist’ his neck, “Then I’ll use your way to deal with you.”

“Throw them out.”

Chen Dahai has been depressed enough already. But now, coming across a few very disruptive students, he became even more upset.

“Can we use the heavy handed method?”

Zhou Jinle licked his lips.

The other brothers have been keeping their resentment in their hearts. Finally, there were a few troublemakers who came to be their punching bags.

“Up to you.”

Since Chen Dahai entered the underworld, he has left his sympathy behind.

He waved his hand and said.

For those people who came to cause trouble, no need to be so polite.

“Hehe....Kid, blame your own bad luck!”

Several Sea Gang members immediately clenched their fists and came forward.

“Don’t look down on us!”

Sun Haoyuan has a large strength since he was still a kid. He grabbed a chair next to him and slammed it toward the guy at the front.

That big fellow was startled. He did not expect the other party would actually dare to hit them.

He involuntarily crossed his two arms in front of him, blocking the incoming chair.

“Bam!”

Fortunately, Cape Bar used wooden chairs, which directly broke upon contact.

That big fellow groaned, stepped back two steps and shook his arms.

“F\*ck me, is this real! He doesn’t seem hurt at all!”

Sun Haoyuan was greatly surprised.

Liu Yi’s eyes tightened and reminded them.

“Be careful, they are not ordinary gangsters....They maybe veterans who excelled in *qigong* !”

“Kid, you’ve got eyes. You’re actually able to see through us in this one move.”

Chen Dahai could not help but praise, “But, your eyesight cannot save you.”

“Get away from this old mother!”

A tall and lanky guy came near Tang Guo. But she was not a pushover. She twisted her hips and did a round kick, aiming for that lanky guy’s head.

Liu Yi had to praise Tang Guo’s long and beautiful leg. She was indeed a Taekwondo practitioner.

This round kick was very fierce, which went straight toward that tall man’s head.

“Pow!”

But the reaction from that lanky guy was not slow either. He put both of his hands across his head, pushing Tang Guo’s foot to the side.

“The girl has practiced some Taekwondo, but it’s all style without substance.”

The lanky man smiled and, together with the other guy who had to withstand the chair, came forward.

*I can no longer sit and watch.*

Liu Yi finally made his move. Like riding a horse, he struck his palm against the chest of the big fellow who came first.

This move from Liu Yi was extremely fast, that big fellow was unable to see it. He just felt a terrible pain in his chest. Like being hit by a car, he

immediately flew backward and fell on top of a nearby table, smashing it into pieces.

The tall and lanky man was, for a moment, stunned, but he soon reacted; He swung his leg, kicking Liu Yi at his crotch.

They were indeed gangsters, all of their moves were ruthless....

Liu Yi did not hesitate. He lifted his leg and met the kick head on.

“Crack!”

The crisp sound of broken bone was heard, followed by the painful scream from the lanky guy as he held his leg and fell to the ground.

He withdrew his right leg. However, he felt a slight ache from his lower leg.

The opponent's *qigong* was quite fierce....

The bone on his leg seemed to have cracked a little. But, it was soon healed by his Demonic force.

“Old Ba, Big Hu!”

Seeing the two men being directly taken down, Chen Dahai and Zhou Jinle were surprised.

Tang Guo and the others were also surprised. Particularly Tang Guo, who never thought Liu Yi could actually fight!

The man, who she was unable to beat, was actually taken down by him head on!

“Actually, I hate violence.”

Liu Yi put his hands back into his pockets, stood straight, and said.

“But if you continue to choose this way to communicate with me, I do not mind.”

For these gangsters, Liu Yi felt that he should put on a tough persona.

If he made himself looked weak, they would definitely bully him.

“Come on, beat them!”

Standing on Liu Yi's shoulder, Lin Tong kept urging him to continue, “Let

them know the power of cultivator!”

*Whoa, Fox sister is too excited, I cannot just bully them with my immortal technique....*

However, Liu Yi actually wouldn't mind if he has to put all of them down.

“Who exactly are you?”

Chen Dahai's frown deepened.

“The man who will unify the underworld gang in the Northern Dragon City.”

Liu Yi proudly said.

“Are you kidding me!”

“You want to unify the underworld gang in the Northern Dragon City? That's utterly crazy!”

The Sea Gang members looked at Liu Yi as if they were watching a fool.

But Chen Dahai's eyes seemed somewhat moved.

“You are Chen Dahai, right?”

Liu Yi remembered those details Yuan Zhenyue told him; His mind began to scheme.

“Looks like your gangster's life in this Eastern Xing district isn't too successful, am I right?”

“How much do you know about my things?”

“A little, for example, your bar will soon go bankrupt and the Black Dragon wants you to join them.”

“.....”

Chen Dahai's eyes tightened, revealing a meaningful look.

“Brothers, close the door.”

# Chapter 187 Join The Red Scarf Army

“Bang, bang, bang!”

All the Cape Bar’s doors and windows were closed and locked.

At the same time, with a hissing sound, the Sea Gang members also pulled down the iron curtains.

“Now this place is no different than an iron cage.”

Chen Dahai clenched his fists, issuing a “ka ka” sound, “We can talk about things.”

“Using this method to threaten me is useless.”

Liu Yi still without a care; He carelessly said with a smile, “If I want to leave, I can leave your so-called iron cage at any time.”

“I admit that you have some strength, but people cannot think too highly of themselves.”

Chen Dahai’s eyes were deep.

“The one who think too highly of himself should be Mr. Chen Dahai.”

Liu Yi said with a smile, “Mr. Chen Dahai who, in those days, broke into Eastern Xing district and established the Sea Gang, can only see two immediate outcomes. One, his Sea Gang being incorporated into the Black Dragon Gang, and the other, get out of the Eastern Xing district with tail tucked between his legs.”

Chen Dahai clenched his fists; The other Sea Gang members also stared at Liu Yi, gnashing their teeth.

“Liu Yi....It seems like you have angered them....”

Sun Haoyuan could not help apprehensively whisper in Liu Yi’s ear.

“They wouldn’t gang up on us would they....?”

“It doesn’t matter, just leave it to me.”

Liu Yi tried to comfort Sun Haoyuan, and then continued his talk.

“Each of these roads seems bad....Running away from Eastern Xing district; I am afraid this completely contradict your, Chen Dahai’s wish, am I right? Before achieving your goals, you would not want to flee without a fight.”

“You do not need to worry about this, we can also follow the Black Dragon Gang.”

The nearby Zhou Jinle interrupted.

“Hahaha, good, follow the Black Dragon Gang is it?”

Liu Yi could not help but laugh, “This guy’s idea is really good. That’s right, follow Black Dragon Gang. When you guys join the Black Dragon Gang, all of you here would become Black Dragon Gang’s dried shrimps. At that time, you will probably be the smallest of the little brothers there. Moreover, in order to prevent you from forming a group within a group, Black Dragon Gang will split all of you, sending you to their various Halls. At that time, perhaps you, Mr. Chen Dahai will end up only as a head bully. The Hall leader position would not necessarily be yours.”

Chen Dahai’s clenching fists emitted several “clacking” noise.

“What are you trying to say....”

“What I am trying to say is very simple. Rather than become a dog in Black Dragon Gang, why not become a man in my Red Scarf Army?”

Liu Yi said, “In my Red Scarf Army, no need to say about others first; You, Mr. Chen Dahai, at the very least, will become the Deputy Leader of the Gang. Later, my Red Scarf Army will cover the entire Eastern Xing district or even the entire Northern Dragon City; You, Chen Dahai will be its Deputy Gang Leader. All the Sea Gang members will become senior figures. Not only I will not break you apart, I will, instead, entrust you with heavy responsibility, because you all are the senior cadres of our Red Scarf Army.”

“What a joke!”

Zhou Jinle could not help but sneer again and again, “Dominating the Northern Dragon City with only four of you students?”

“Why not?”

Liu Yi asked back, "In those days, there was a famous Master in the Northeastern Area, called Master Si. His origin was nothing more than a train porter. I, Liu Yi, at least, am an intellectual."

*Em, a good and honest intellectual.*

*All gangsters basically rely on strength!*

Liu Yi thought that to clear the Northern Dragon City from the dark forces he needed to eliminate Black Dragon Gang and the others who behaved badly.

Since then, he will rule the underground world in the Northern Dragon City.

And thus, become the rule maker.

"It's easy to say it; You think you can occupy our Sea Gang just by virtue of your mouth? In your dream!"

Zhou Jinle firmly opposed.

"Sea Gang will absolutely not follow anybody."

Chen Dahai's eyes seemed a bit different, "Just leave."

"Do you want to watch your brothers starve together with you?"

Seeing Chen Dahai seemed to be struggling inwardly, Liu Yi became a bit desperate.

If the Sea Gang's condition was good, Chen Dahai would definitely not agree to join him.

But now....He has the opportunity!

"I, Chen Dahai, am not so easy to give in to other people."

Chen Dahai looked at Liu Yi and said.

"Good, let's follow the rules."

Liu Yi made a hooking gesture with his finger toward Chen Dahai, "We fight; If I lose, I will leave. But if you lose, you and your gang will join me."

Chen Dahai was moved.

Zhou Jinle shouted, "F\*ck, who do you think you are! Brothers, let's kill him!"

But the other Sea Gang members looked at him in a weird look.

Although now they were basically gangsters, they still have the moral characters of a soldier.

Other people has called for a one on one fight, but Zhou Jinle wanted to gang up on them?

Was that a moral integrity of a soldier?

Chen Dahai loudly snapped at Zhou Jinle.

"Old Zhou, what's going on with you? Go stay on the side!"

Zhou Jinle's mouth twitched, seemingly wanted to retort. However, he held it back and finally stood on the side.

"Little brother, aren't your scheme a bit too obvious?"

Chen Dahai turned to Liu Yi and said, "If you win, I will join you, but if you lose, you're just going to leave? Even if I, Chen Dahai, only has a few years of study, do you think I can't see this scheme?"

"Oh? Then what does boss Chen want?"

"If you lose, you will follow me as my subordinate."

Chen Dahai pointed at Liu Yi and then at himself.

"Liu Yi...."

Sun Haoyuan and the others seemed to be worried; Tang Guo even directly grabbed Liu Yi's sleeve.

"Rest assured, it's all right."

Liu Yi waved his hand to appease these few Red Scarf Army cadres.

"Fair enough, the winner will be the boss."

Liu Yi said and took a step forward, standing opposite of Chen Dahai.

"Boss Chen is not going to plot against me, right?"

"Only a vile person would do that."



Chen Dahai proudly said, "Come on, let me show you that we, The Sea Gang, are not pushovers!"

"Then let me see it."

Liu Yi said, and then moved two steps forward.

Chen Dahai waved his hand, telling his brothers to move to the side.

He then took off his coat, leaving him with a small white singlet. His body were all muscles, very conspicuous.

"Whoa, what a bod...."

Tang Guo's eyes lit up, but the nearby Sun Haoyuan immediately gave her a push.

"Sorry, you guys can continue."

Tang Guo knew what moves her; She did not think too much about a man's face but thought that men should have some muscles.

That's why when she first saw how 'emaciated' Liu Yi was, not only she did not take him to heart, she even has some contempt toward him.

"Not a bad strength."

Chen Dahai was very pleased with himself; He clenched his fist and flexed his biceps.

"Squad leader is now serious, that kid is dead for sure."

"Yes....When we were still on active duty, squad leader never lost on a fight!"

"A pity that squad leader has an ear problem....Otherwise, he could be a company commander and so on."

On the side, the Sea Gang members started talking to each other.

When Chen Dahai was still in the army, no one can rival him, which made him a bit arrogant and wanted to challenge the champion from the special forces, named Wang An.

Finally, he suffered Wang An's heavy-handed double strikes on his ears; His eardrums bleed.

Because of his slightly impaired hearing, Chen Dahai lost the opportunity for further promotion in the army.

The two of them suffered because of that fight. One has a problem with the eyesight, and the other has a problem in hearing. Both were unable to continue to serve.

Wang An has a pretty good arrangement when he retired. He first went to join the police and later became Murong Hong's bodyguard.

But Chen Dahai, being an ordinary soldier, can only come out to join the underworld.

But he was confident to defeat this student!

In the past, Wang An only narrowly won a move against him!

"Come on!"

Chen Dahai hooked his finger at Liu Yi; For such a student like Liu Yi, he disdained to make the first move.

"Boss Chen, you see, I am just a student."

But Liu Yi was not in a rush; Instead, he cheekily said.

"In fighting, no doubt you are an expert. But me, I just understand a little bit of Kung Fu, how about you let me make three moves first?"

People almost vomited blood.

They clearly saw Liu Yi easily took down two people just a moment ago, which mean his Kung Fu foundation was very deep!

But now he brazenly wanted people to let him made his first three moves.

Was there a person more shameless than him!

"Do you even want face!"

From the side, Zhou Jinle cursed.

"I am very weak...."

Liu Yi slightly blushed and said, "Do you have the heart to bully a defenseless student....?"

“F\*ck, too shameless!”

Even Tang Guo could not help but somewhat move away from Liu Yi.

“I’ll let you have one move!”

Chen Dahai confidently smiled and then made a horse stance; He held his hands in front of him.

He then launched his hard *qigong*.

Chen Dahai’s whole body was filled with energy; He can even withstand an iron rod or the likes.

“Very well....Even though the move is less than I thought, thinking about boss Chen’s face, I reluctantly accept it.”

Liu Yi said as he nodded his head.

The Sea Gang members almost vomited blood in depressed.

Obviously it was Liu Yi who has the big advantage here, but how could he say it as if he just suffered a big loss!

“Good kid....”

Ling Tong’s scalp became a bit numb, “How come your belly get increasingly black....”

“Huh? Really?”

Liu Yi blinked his eyes, “I think I am still honest and kind!”

Lin Tong was speechless and secretly thought.

*It seems like the two personalities begin to influence each other!*

*But, as long as he still has the awe-inspiring righteousness in his heart, his character should not go bad.*

*A little bit of black belly is good....Better than the ice-cold and the ruthlessness of the other personality!*

*Moreover, no one can bully him if his belly is a bit black, Lin Tong did not want Liu Yi to be bullied by outsiders.*

*Humph, humph, the one who can bully Liu Yi, is only me, Lin Tong!*

“Bring it!”

Chen Dahai pat his chest muscles, “If I blink, I, Chen Dahai, am your grandson!”

“How about we change the rules?”

Liu Yi immediately became interested, “How about we stare at each other for a few minutes?”

“Hurry up!”

Chen Dahai could not help but yell.

“Very well, since you’re in such a hurry....”

The crowd immediately saw an amazing scene.

Liu Yi, faster than the blink of an eye, suddenly appeared in front of Chen Dahai.

Just now, they were seven to eight meters away from each other, but how could he suddenly closed the distance just like that!

But before they even reacted to that, Liu Yi’s right-hand palm has arrived at Chen Dahai’s chest.

# Chapter 188 Can Be Hot

Liu Yi spent his day in school today, not to listen to lectures, but hiding in his spiritual environment, practicing those skills that were taught by Li Biyue.

Especially the Shadow Step!

Before in the training room, Liu Yi failed his first attempt. When he cast his Shadow Step, he crashed into that training puppet....

It was an unforgettable experience!

Therefore, during the school hours, Liu Yi gave all his effort to train his Shadow Step.

Although it can't be said that his Shadow Step level was superb, at least he achieved the level of "mastery through a comprehensive study."

At this time, Liu Yi suddenly appeared in front of Chen Dahai, startling him.

*When did he run?*

*Didn't he just stand seven or eight meters away from me?*

Before Chen Dahai reacted, Liu Yi's palm has struck Chen Dahai's right chest.

Liu Yi purposely avoided the heart position on the left, lest his palm caused Chen Dahai a problem.

Even if he avoided a critical spot, Chen Dahai was still unlucky.

"Bam!"

A surge of airwave burst out from behind Chen Dahai; At the same time, his body arched up like a shrimp and instantly flew back.

"Bang!"

Chen Dahai was pasted on the wall like a painting.

His internal organs were in a mess and his bones were badly hurt.

*This palm of Liu Yi....How could it be so fierce....*

*Could it be, he is the legendary master of internal martial art?*

Chen Dahai began to sweat.

*If he is an internal expert....Then I am absolutely not his opponent!*

In the army, they have several Kung Fu masters as army instructors, some of them looked like a wizened old man!

At the time, although Chen Dahai was quite proud of himself, he did not dare to look for trouble from those instructors.

One of them was a 1.6 m tall old man; He was as thin as a monkey. Previously, Chen Dahai was not convinced of his ability.

But when one day this old man lifted a 120 kg barbell with one hand, Chen Dahai was thoroughly convinced.

In daily practice, when he lifted that barbell a few times with both of his hands, he already felt tired like a dog.

When that wizened old man picked it up, he did not look tired, as if nothing has happened.

The student in front of him looked very thin and weak, but he was able to send him flying in a single palm strike.

If someone told him the student was not an internal expert, Chen Dahai would not believe it.

Seeing their boss flying backward because of a palm strike and then slowly slipped to the ground, the sea gang members looked silly.

*How...How is this possible!*

*Our squad leader is a fighting master....No matter how bad, he couldn't possibly be sent flying by a palm strike!*

But Chen Dahai thought in his heart, *I have run into an internal expert!*

But this actually made him excited, *If this person is willing to help me....Even if I have to be his subordinate, later on, in the list of famous gangsters, there must be my name, Chen Dahai, written in there!*

Chen Dahai like to follow the strong, but he must determine if the boy was tough enough!

Holding back the pain, he suddenly looked up and saw two Russian battle-axes hanging on the nearby wall.

Thus, Chen Dahai directly crawled up, reached out and took those two Russian battle-axes. Carrying them in his hands, he loudly roared and came at Liu Yi like a wild bear.

“F\*ck me, this is too far!”

Hu Rui shouted, “He actually uses weapons! Liu Yi, take this! Use my nail clippers!”

“F\*ck, shut up!”

Tang Guo directly kicked Hu Rui on the leg.

Rather than retreat, Liu Yi actually rushed forward toward the ax-wielding Chen Dahai.

“Liu Yi, be careful!”

Sun Haoyuan anxiously warned.

“Rest assured, it’s gonna be fine.”

Liu Yi rushed forward two steps and suddenly lowered his head.

“Swoosh, swoosh!”

Chen Dahai wielded his left ax, swishing over Liu Yi’s head.

Meanwhile, he swung the other ax toward Liu Yi, who was squatting down, aiming for his head.

The whistling of wind indicated that the force was not light.

But Liu Yi calmly put his hands on the ground and jumped up.

At the same time, his body did a backward rotation and, using the momentum, used his right foot to kick.

“Pow!”

Liu Yi’s foot hit that ax’s handle.

Chen Dahai suddenly felt a surge of vigorous force coming from the ax. The web between his thumb and forefinger tore and spilled out blood; He subconsciously loosened his grip.

“Bang!”

That ax spun in the air toward the ceiling. It pierced the ceiling, looking very frightening.

A long crack also appeared on the ceiling.

The people were stunned.

*How powerful that kick could be to be able to make that ax pierce the ceiling....*

“Still want to come?”

Liu Yi straightened up and recovered his right foot. Then he smiled and asked Chen Dahai.

“No, it’s over....”

Chen Dahai directly cupped his fists and, with a respectful manner, convincingly said.

“From today on, you are my boss.”

“Squad leader, you’re crazy!”

Zhou Jinle hurriedly exclaimed from the said, “They are nothing but a bunch of students, how can we submit to them?”

“They are stronger than me, so why not?”

Chen Dahai bluntly said, looking very imposing.

“The Black Dragon Gang is also stronger than us! Squad Leader! Why don’t we join the Black Dragon Gang?”

Zhou Jinle quickly said, “The few of them are just students! Even if they can fight, so what? Can they fight against the Black Dragon Gang?”

“Can I exclude this person from the senior cadres?”

Liu Yi asked Chen Dahai, “Because he has no ambition at all.”



“Old Zhou, what’s wrong with you?”

Chen Dahai also frowned and looked at Zhou Jinle, “Why are you so different today?”

“It’s nothing....I just don’t want to be a few students’ goon.”

Zhou Jinle looked a bit unnatural.

“Later on, this is our boss.”

Chen Dahai pointed at Liu Yi and solemnly said, “He is my boss, so naturally he is your boss, understand?”

“Yes, we understand!”

Except for Zhou Jinle, the other Sea Gang members replied in unison.

Their voices were loud and very imposing; After all, they were all former soldiers.

These people saw how Liu Yi defeated their squad leader in two moves, so they already felt a heartfelt admiration toward him.

They were all people who admired a strong person!

“Very good, later on, everyone will be brothers. Boss, I have to be honest with you. What you take now is in a terrible mess.”

Chen Dahai gloomily looked at Liu Yi and said, “As you can see, our bar has no guest at all. Now in our account, we have no more than 20 thousand yuan, it’s not enough to maintain the bar for the next month!”

“This....”

Sun Haoyuan had a headache, “Just as I fell excited for finally scoring the first turf....I never thought this place could be so miserable....”

“I, your old mother can sponsor....Two hundred yuan!”

Tang Guo did not seem to have a lot of money.

“I can sponsor 50 yuan!”

Hu Rui pulled out a crumpled bill from his pocket.

“F\*ck, I see you the two of you are stupid.”

Liu Yi can't help but give them a look, "How could this little money be enough? How much is the usual monthly expense for this bar?"

"More than 50 thousand....."

Chen Dahai sighed.

*This is the cheapest expense , he added in his heart.*

The normal monthly expense for a bar was definitely in the top five digit upward....That 50 thousand was just his lowest estimation.

He did not know how would they manage to survive.

"I....I can cover the rest."

Liu Yi thought for a moment and decided to use his account.

*Money in the bank is useless anyway.*

*I should let them circulate, and then "money begets money."*

"But even so, it can barely support the expense for a month...."

Chen Dahai's face was filled with sorrow, "Boss, you don't know this....But our bar really has no business. Sometimes I have my own doubts, maybe leading my brothers to break into the Eastern Xing district was a mistake....I heard that this place is a gold mine, but I came to know that it's actually hell."

"Even if it's hell, we can still make money."

Liu Yi frowned, "Haoyuan, Rat, little Chili, do you guys have any suggestion on how we can survive here?"

"How about we open a billiard hall?"

Little Chili's idea was quickly dismissed by Liu Yi.

*F\*ck....It's strange if opening a billiard hall could make money here!*

*And even if it can, it's just going to be fractions of small money.*

"I think....I don't have business acumen...."

Hu Rui also began to rack his brain.

However, Sun Haoyuan directly sat on a nearby seat, loudly munching the

french fries on the table.

*F\*ck....A freeloader!*

Liu Yi was helpless, *I have to think it myself.*

At this time, the little Fox, who was lying on Liu Yi's shoulder all this time, suddenly curled her lips and said.

"Fool, you can't even come up with an idea to save this place, yet you still want to be a gangster?"

"Fox sister, do you have a way?"

Liu Yi immediately looked for Lin Tong's help.

"Of course, who do you think this big miss is! I am talented little Fox, ok!"

Lin Tong wagged her tail and proudly said, "This is just a small matter, very easy to solve."

"Then please advise, Fox sister...."

Liu Yi rushed to ask for advice.

"It's very simple; What kind of business does this Eastern Xing district lack? Bars, KTVs, night clubs, casinos, red light district? There are many of those here....Therefore, if your Red Scarf Army continue to operate this bar, it will definitely run to the ground. Because the market is saturated, do you understand?"

*Whoa....*

*How could Fox sister understand all this 'market saturation' stuff?"*

"You don't believe me, don't you?....Before I met you, this big miss self-studied all kinds of economic and marketing courses in the University, okay?"

*Wow....Fox sister is really Fox sister....*

*She's like a goddess!*

"Then Fox sister, do you have any idea?"

"How can I just simply tell you about it? You need to properly ask this big miss."

Lin Tong smiled smugly, happy to hear Liu Yi beg for her!

“Fox sister....Please....”

Liu Yi has no other way and had to ask for Lin Tong’s help.

“Hihi, this big miss is actually too lazy to help you with this mundane human thing. But since you are so sincere in asking me, I will tell you.”

Lin Tong fully enjoyed the pleasant sensation of being asked by Liu Yi. She patted her small claw and said.

“Actually, this thing is simple; Although the market for bars and other things is already saturated, we can look for other businesses that are yet saturated. Can you think of a business that has the potential to be hot (popular)?”

“What else? Selling firearms, of course!”

# Chapter 189 Who Is The Boss

“What, are you crazy!”

Lin Tong rolled her eyes at Liu Yi, “Selling firearms, do you want to die!”

“Em....I just casually said that....”

“Humph, really a blockhead. You know, this place is full of blood and violence! This area is the center of all the dark forces, so we can open an underground arena, specifically to allow these people to do an underground fighting match!”

“Underground fight?”

Liu Yi’s eyes lit up.

*That’s right! Why didn’t I think of it!*

“Of course, it’s not just going to be a fight, whoever wins can have the prize. The source of this prize is very simple. You can charge a registration fee, you can also be the official bookie for people who want to bet. When there are many people, you may also collect the ticket money. In this way, this place will have a steady source of income.”

Liu Yi has to admit, Lin Tong’s idea has indeed put Liu Yi in the right direction.

To open an underground fighting arena....This was a crazy idea, but it was the most suitable method!

Liu Yi then told Sun Haoyuan, Chen Dahai and the other about Lin Tong’s idea.

“Ah!”

Chen Dahai immediately clapped his hands in excitement, “That’s a brilliant idea. Boss is indeed boss. Sure enough, I didn’t follow the wrong people!”

Liu Yi let out two awkward laughs, thinking, *This is not my idea, but Lin*

Tong.

“Chen Ye!”

“Squad leader, do you have any instruction?”

A tall skinny man walked over.

“Calculate how much it cost to run an underground fighting arena! Give me the lowest estimation!”

“Yes!”

That tall and thin Chen Ye immediately took out a small notebook and began to calculate on the table.

“When the fight is taking place, we can provide the snack and beverages.”

Sun Haoyuan shouted from the side even though his mouth was full of fries.

“If we can watch the match while drinking beer and eating fries, that would be really nice!”

*Did he think he's watching football match....*

*However, this is also a way to make money.*

*Basically, in this place, we have to monopolize all the service and consumption.*

“Squad leader....This is the lowest estimation on decoration and renovation cost.”

Chen Ye stretched out his ten fingers.

“Boss....You see....”

Chen Dahai cannot take the responsibility to make the decision, so he turned around to ask Liu Yi.

“All right....”

One hundred thousand yuan.....Liu Yi bit his teeth and agreed.

*My own account only has forty thousand and Chen Dahai has twenty thousand. Of which, fifty thousand have to be set aside for the monthly*

*expense.*

*Then I still have to prepare, at least, ninety thousand.*

*Even if I take D-level task....I still have to complete nine missions!*

*But how could I complete so many mission in such a short time!*

*The transformation of Cape bar is imminent, the sooner the better!*

“Really incompetent, this miss can lend you the money.”

At this time, Lin Tong spoke again from Liu Yi’s shoulder, “It’s just ninety thousand, I have enough in my account.”

Liu Yi never thought that his Fox sister was actually a little miss wealthy.

However, Liu Yi directly shook his head to reject.

“No need, I can get this money by myself.”

This was his own venture, Liu Yi did not want to rely on a woman to support him.

“Bah, machismo shortcomings strike again!”

Lin Tong curled her lips.

“Later, I’ll transfer you forty thousand yuan. Use it to renovate this place first.”

Liu Yi told Chen Dahai.”

“Yes, boss. I will definitely let my brothers do it first.”

“Good....”

Liu Yi secretly thought, *I finally realize what it means of money stump the hero.*

*I know many people who are rich, but I, myself, am poor!*

*How can I make the money the fastest way possible....?*

Liu Yi suddenly had a flash of idea....

*C-level mission!*

*One C-level mission bonus is one hundred thousand yuan....*

*Perhaps I can try it out....*

*When my strength is still weak, I can complete the task above my level.*

*This time I can also challenge myself!*

The list of missions on the website was not clear enough.

Liu Yi made up his mind to go to the Hunter Organization Building to look for Leng Mo and ask her if there was a better-suited C-level task for him.

*But, Leng Mo, that girl....Seems hard to deal with.*

*But for my enterprise, I have to give it a try!*

“Hopefully the renovation here will be completed by mid-October.”

Chen Ye calculated and then suggested, “We only have enough funds until that date!”

“Ok, I’ll do my best.”

Liu Yi nodded his head.

“Sooner or later, our Red Scarf Army name will resound all over the Eastern Xing district!

After deciding to follow Liu Yi, Chen Dahai was filled with confidence.

Because he felt that Liu Yi will be a Dragon amongst people!

To follow him, nothing will go wrong!

“Not just the Eastern Xing district, but the entire Northern Dragon City.”

Liu Yi smiled, “We will be the number one gang in the Northern Dragon City.”

“Yes, that’s right, we will trample the Black Dragon Gang!”

Sun Haoyuan laughed from the side.

“Go eat your fries!”

Little Chili gave him a look.

“Now let’s have a little meeting.”

Liu Yi sat at the nearby seat, looked around, and said, “Later on, we need to



put the red color as the main decoration style....This is the Red Scarf army color.”

“All right.”

Chen Ye, who seemed to be responsible for these things, nodded again and again.

“Then let’s discuss our senior cadres composition.”

A group of dragons must have a head, a good organization must have a good leadership team.

Chen Dahai and the others took their seat close to Liu Yi.

“This....The main leader is, of course, you, boss.”

Chen Dahai cupped his hand and placed it on his chest, “If it changes into other people, I will not accept it! Yes, if Liu Yi is not the boss, I, Chen Dahai, will be the first to refuse!”

“Yes, yes, Liu Yi, go ahead and be the boss.”

Sun Haoyuan nodded from the side, “Previously when I said to you I am the boss or something, that was just a joke. My ability is far worse than you!”

“Yes, I agree, Liu Yi, you should be the boss. I, Hu Rui, will use my brain to help you.”

Hu Rui said with a smile.

Liu Yi thought, *F\*ck, you’re just going to advise me with your wretched thoughts.*

“I have no opinion, in any case, us, females do not have the right to speak. You guys decide it yourselves.”

Tang Guo curled her lips from the side.

“How could it be....”

Liu Yi lowered his flushed face and said, “Actually, I am just an ordinary student....I am not mentally prepared...To be a boss or something....”

“F\*ck....”

One of the people around the table gave Liu Yi a middle finger.

“In any case, the Red Scarf Army boss is you!”

Chen Dahai thought no one else is as good as Liu Yi.

“Very well, later on, I will be your boss.”

Liu Yi did not refuse. Right now, the Red Scarf Army needed a boost of power, which can be provided by him. Other people can help, but it won't be enough.

“The deputy leader position should be held by our squad leader!”

The nearby Zhou Jinle, who was quiet all this time, finally opened his mouth.

“Old Zhou, it's not your turn to talk here!”

Chen Dahai gave Zhou Jinle a discontented glance.

“I actually agree with Mr. Zhou, brother Chen is naturally fit to be the deputy leader.”

Liu Yi did not refute Zhou Jinle, but said, “Brother Chen also know that I am indeed a high school student. I can't spend all my time to build the Red Scarf Army, I still have to go to school. Therefore, regarding the routine work, I have to depend on brother Chen to handle it.”

“No problem, I will definitely help you.”

Chen Dahai slapped his chest and said.

“You should be more careful.”

At this time, Lin Tong warned Liu Yi, “Many people are not necessarily trustworthy. You can't give this Chen Dahai too many rights. All right, this miss can teach you a spell that you can cast on people whose strength is weaker than you. This spell can plant demon seed inside someone else's body, if this person wants to betray you, you can detonate this demon seed....”

“No....Fox sister, I think I can trust Chen Dahai.”

Liu Yi shook his head and refused Lin Tong's proposal, “My grandpa said,

an employer does not need to suspect his employee.”

“Whatever! Too lazy to care for you!”

Lin Tong went quiet again, sitting with eyes closed.

“In addition, Chen Ye will be the head of logistic.”

Liu Yi saw the nearby Chen Ye who constantly typing something on his notebook. “I think that you’re good at this one.”

“Okay, boss, leave it to me.”

Chen Ye gave Liu Yi a reassuring look.

“Hu Rui will temporarily be our chief strategist. His nickname is Rat, who although wretched, his head can still be useful.”

Liu Yi recommended, “If I am not here, brother Chen can listen to his opinion.”

“Rest assured, boss. Since these are your words, I’ll be sure to respect the chief strategist.”

“How do I feel it sounds like we’re in the Romance of Three Kingdom....”

Tang Guo rubbed her temples.

“As for our beauty Tang Guo....”

“I said it first, I, your old mother, am not going to work as the PR!”

“How about, when the time comes, you’ll be the head of the waitresses here (It can also mean supervisor)?”

Liu Yi asked, “We have to use a pretty face after all!”

“F\*ck, do you think I look like the head of the waitresses?”

Tang Guo looked at Liu Yi with raised eyebrows.

Regarding little Chili’s position....For a while, Liu Yi cannot think of where to put her.

However, with her pretty face, if not used in the publicity, it would really be a waste.

“Either the head of the waitresses or the head of the dancer, your choice!”

Liu Yi said, biting the bullet, braving the danger.

“F\*ck, are you threatening this old mother!”

Tang Guo actually admitted defeat, “Fine! I’ll be the head of the waitresses!”

“What about me?”

Sun Haoyuan asked, pointing at himself.

“You will also be the deputy leader.”

Liu Yi thought that the Red Scarf Army can’t only have one deputy leader, he needed to put his own people as well.

“But your main job is to assist brother Chen, coordinate with him.”

“No problem!”

Sun Haoyuan nodded in satisfaction and stuffed a handful of fries into his mouth.

Liu Yi secretly thought, *F\*ck, this guy really wants to get fat.*

“All right, I think that’s about it for the leadership position.”

Chen Dahai was somewhat smug, “This is the high-level leadership team, later on, we must develop the Hall, and when the time comes, we will have lots of elites who will be the Hall leaders!”

“Hm....Yes....”

Everyone present was very excited and full of confidence.

The great future of the Red Scarf Army seemed to beckon at them.

“I am going to get the money. Haoyuan, Rat, Little Chili, do you guys want to stay here or go home?”

Liu Yi, who was anxious to go to the Hunter Organization center, got up and asked.

“We’ll stay and familiarize ourselves with this place.”

Sun Haoyuan and the other two said.

“Okay then, I am leaving now. Brother Chen, take a good care of them.”

# Chapter 190 Riyao Corporation

“What about the thing that I told you to do?”

In the toilet room of the Cape bar, a man's figure was hiding inside one of the stalls.

A man's suppressed voice slowly came through his phone.

“I, I failed....”

This man's voice faltered a few times, seemingly afraid of something.

“Useless! Why do I keep you if you're not useful for me?”

“Hall leader....This is not my fault!”

That man hurriedly explained, “Initially, everything went smoothly, Chen Dahai was about to break at any moment. However, the Red Scarf Army came to interfere. Their boss, a student, actually beat Chen Dahai easily! Now, this Sea gang has turned into Red Scarf Army....”

“Red Scarf Army? I never heard of this gang before.”

The voice on the phone pondered a bit.

“Since it's just a small gang, it doesn't matter. Under our Black Dragon Gang's pressure, soon, the Cape bar will be completely bankrupt! Zhou Jinle, within a month, I want the Cape bar to be incorporated into my Black Dragon gang. Don't say I never give you a chance!”

With that, the other side hung the phone.

Zhou Jinle feebly leaned on the stall door.

*I shouldn't have taken refuge in Black Dragon gang....Otherwise, things wouldn't be this mess up.*

*Chen Dahai is also a brain dead, why would he want to follow that Liu Yi, and not Black Dragon gang?*

*To follow Black Dragon gang, one will have wealth, status, and power.*

*Ai, I really can't figure it out.*

*Looks like I have to use some tricks to completely bring down the Red Scarf Army....*

Liu Yi did not know, someone was hatching a plan against the Red Scarf Army.

At this time, he was already at the underground base of the Hunter Organization with different clothing.

Like the last time, a group of people was busily doing their jobs at the hall.

Leng Mo sat on a chair, facing a lot of display screen.

Being a liaison officer, this girl was quite busy indeed.....

"How come it's you again?"

Seeing Liu Yi with his white mask, Leng Mo immediately went upset.

"What, want to toot your own horn in front of me?"

"Hey, what do I want to show off in front of you...."

Liu Yi thought that Leng Mo was really confused sometimes. He did not know what this girl was thinking about.

"To show off your relationship with Li Biyue!"

Leng Mo hung her headphone around her neck, curled her lips and said, "I am telling you, I will not eat vinegar because I don't consider you as an opponent at all! Humph! Sooner or later, sister Biyue will discover your true ugly face!"

*When did I have an ugly true face....*

Liu Yi secretly lamented.

"I am really not here to show off....I came here to ask for a mission...."

Money matters more, so Liu Yi did not want to quarrel with Leng Mo here.

"You want a mission?"

Leng Mo's eyes blinked twice, "Why don't you go to the online website, there's plenty of it there!"

“It’s like this, I want to take a C-level task. But my strength is still not up to par, so I came here to look if there’s a C-level mission that suits me....”

Liu Yi a bit awkwardly said.

*Alas, money stump the hero indeed.*

“Looking for a mission here?”

The corner of Leng Mo’s mouth suddenly rose.

Liu Yi suddenly had a bad premonition.

“You....Are not going to use public office to avenge private wrongs, right...?”

“Of course not. I am the Hunter Center’s liaison officer, my private matters must give way for work matters.”

Leng Mo proudly said, “Since you want a suitable task, no problem, I can help you find it.”

With that, she began to furiously type the keyboard on her lap.

This Leng Mo still wore the same outfit like the last time, a black lace skirt, a jacquet and a pair of black stockings, looking very sexy.

*Is she too busy to even change clothes?*

*But her clothes are very clean!*

“D-class hunter, Ten Steps To Milk A Man....Gee, a D-class hunter who insist on taking the C-level task....”

Liu Yi’s face was slightly feverish.

*This is for the money!*

*Poor people have to work hard, okay!*

“There’s nothing suitable for you at this moment....Wait a minute, there’s a new mission that was issued by the supervisor just now, and it’s exactly the C-level task!”

Leng Mo’s eyes suddenly lit up.

“Really? Where?”

Liu Yi quickly asked.

“It suits you. It’s in Northern Dragon City.”

Leng Mo typed a few more times and then said, “Do you know about the Riyao Corporation in Northern Dragon City?”

“Riyao Corporation?”

Liu Yi thought for a moment, “Isn’t that a very famous Japanese company?”

“That’s right.”

Leng Mo nodded her head, “This corporation seems like a pro-China joint venture....But actually, it is a multinational company backed by the right-winger. This task is issued by the government, they discovered that the underground level of this group’s headquarters seems to have an abnormal power leak....Because it is inconvenient for the government to investigate it directly, they entrust our Hunter Organization to do it.”

“The government will actually delegate a task for the Hunter Organization?”

Liu Yi was somewhat surprised.

“Of course, after all, there are things that the government cannot directly intervene.”

Leng Mo blinked her eyes, “Do you accept this task or not?”

“Of course I accept!”

*It seems like this is just an investigative task. Thankfully I came to the Hunter Organization center, otherwise, I couldn’t receive such a good task.”*

*Mm, this is the so-called the pavilion closest to the water enjoys moonlight first (to benefit from relationship with an influential person) !*

“Then I’ll read out the mission for you.”

Liu Yi did not notice the flash of smile on the corner of Leng Mo’s lips.

“This task is not that difficult, you just need to go to the Riyao Corporation to investigate the source of the power leak at their underground level. After you gather enough good information and give them back to us, your task is



completed.”

“I know.”

Liu Yi nodded his head and immediately walked out of the Hunter Organization building.

“Manager, he really accepts the task.”

After Liu Yi walked away, Leng Mo excitedly clenched her small fists, “This time, he will suffer for sure! Humph, who told him to vie for sister Biyue against this miss!”

“Little Leng, little Leng!”

At this time, old man Ma sheepishly ran over and asked Leng Mo in amazement.

“I heard that you gave that Li Biyue’s brother a C-level mission?”

“Yo, old man Ma, your news source is very quick!”

Leng Mo curled her lips.

“Leng girl, are you crazy!”

Old man Ma stood in front of Leng Mo with a bottle of local white wine. He worriedly asked, “If this kid is in danger....Wouldn’t Li Biyue find you responsible for it?”

“What does it have to do with me? He’s the one who wanted me to find him a C-level task!”

Leng Mo threw up her hands, “Moreover, even if sister wants to blame me, she can’t blame it on me, hehe....”

“Let me see the task!”

Old man Ma worriedly looked at the screen. Suddenly, cold sweat began to pour down from his head.

“This task....Are you sure this task was entrusted to us by the government?”

“Of course not, this is their own task.”

Leng Mo explained, “Moreover, in order to prevent others from

intervening, they deliberately explained to our manager to clear all of Hunter's related task in the vicinity, lest they inadvertently alert the enemy. Everything must give way for the government."

"Who publish this task?"

Old man Ma's eyes emitted a flash of light.

"Who else except our manager?"

Leng Mo shrugged, "That's why I said, even if sister Biyue wants to find who's to blame, she is not going to look for me!"

"Crazy....All of you are crazy...."

Old man Ma cannot help but shake his head, "He's only a three-star person....Yet, you let him fall into the hands of Dragon group?"

"Ai, in any case, he has Hunter's identity. Even if he falls into Dragon group's hands, he's just going to suffer hardship for two days at most."

Leng Mo indifferently said, "Who told him to snatch away my sister Biyue, he deserves to suffer! Humph!"

Old man Ma drank his liquor and secretly sneered.

*If this is just as simple as him suffering a hardship, would Liu Yufan go to a lot of trouble to issue this task?*

*That kid, Ten Steps To Milk A Man....May encounter some danger tonight.*

*Whether he can come back alive or not, that would depend on his good fortune.*

"Liu Yi, you really decided to do this task?"

When Liu Yi was rushing through the night toward the Riyao Corporation headquarters, Lin Tong's voice came into his ears.

"Of course, this is for the money!"

When he arrived, Liu Yi looked at this more than thirty-storey high building and suddenly felt quite small.

"This miss feels that something is not quite right."

Lin Tong had a bit of bad premonition, "Maybe, this could be a trap."

“My luck is always good, I certainly can turn bad luck into good luck.”

Liu Yi had made up his mind and would not easily be swayed.

“Come on, can you listen to an advice!”

Lin Tong was frustrated by his stubbornness, “I say this for you own good!”

“Fox sister, didn’t you say that I can only have meaningful progress through an actual combat?”

Liu Yi’s eyes evoked a flash of light, “Even if it’s a trap, I still want to give it a try. If now I retreat in the face of danger, I won’t have any great improvement in my life.”

“Ai....Why do I feel your words are getting more and more clear!”

“Because what I say is reasonable, reasonable in all over the world!”

“Pei, it’s obviously because you’re unreasonable!”

Lin Tong stomped her feet in anger.

“This building is already closed, how are we suppose to go in....?”

Liu Yi quickly changed the topic.

He jumped toward the nearby street light.

“Pa, pa, pa!”

His feet stepped on ice skates, sliding up to the top of the street light. He then crouched down, looking at the first and second floor of the building.

Liu Yi wanted to check if there’s an open window or something so that he can let himself in.

“Think about it yourself. This building is so high....”

Lin Tong looked up for a moment and could not help but sigh.

“Technology can sometimes amaze even the cultivators.”

“This is a Japanese-funded company, they have a lot of money.”

Liu Yi remembered that his distant cousin, after graduating from a prestigious University, seemed to work in this company.

Since then, this cousin became his nightmare.

From words of mouth, he heard that his cousin has a high salary, twenty or thirty something thousand yuan per month, the company also let him use the company's car!

Except for the excessive overtime, the other treatments were good.

Then, his relatives would always compare him to his cousin, telling him to learn hard like his cousin and to strive hard!

Liu Yi then would secretly swear, *D\*mn it, this is so annoying!*

# Chapter 191 Ninja

As students, most afraid of what?

Friends of the same age have good exam scores, diligent and the pride of their parents.

Then, a relative's child got a good grade, excellent University entrance exam result, and after graduation, found a good job.

Liu Yi has been living this nightmare since his cousin landed a job in a Japanese company.

'Look at your cousin, his study is good!'

'Look at your cousin, he has a promising future!'

Everyday, he would hear cousin this and cousin that....Liu Yi was about to collapse.

Fortunately, his parents were relatively busy, so Liu Yi rarely met with them.

But on holidays, when relatives got together at home, Liu Yi's nightmare would begin once again.

Liu Yi sighed with emotion. Fortunately, he never attended the gathering of relatives on his mother's side.

It seemed like his mother has no brother or sister, Liu Yi also never met his (maternal) grandparents.

Previously, when his (paternal) grandfather was still alive, every year their family would gather on (lunar) new year in his grandfather's house. But to this time, it was basically the time where his cousins would show off!

*Show off, show off your sister!*

Liu Yi looked at the Riyao corporation building with resentful eyes.

Suddenly his eyes swept up and saw an open window on the twelfth floor.

*I can go in!*

Liu Yi leaped up, stepped on the ice skates and went straight at that window on the twelfth floor of that building.

This Riyao group building was very pretty, the outer layer was full with glass windows.

At this time, Liu Yi was like a gecko, his hands condensed the air, which attached on the window surface.

At the same time, his feet stepped on the ice skates, which continued to slide upward toward that window.

It could be said that Liu Yi's movement completely defy Newton's law of motion.

But no matter, even Newton, the great scientist, started to believe in theology in his old age.

Some things cannot be explained by science!

Liu Yi stepped on ice skates faster and faster; His entire body crouched to reduce the air resistance.

Knife-like night air constantly blew on his face.

*It's true, making money is not easy....*

Leaving behind two ice marks on the window, Liu Yi quickly came to the open window on the twelfth floor and jumped in.

After jumping through the window, Liu Yi found himself in an Office.

No one was in the office, all the lights were off. But there were few indistinct glows from some computer screens.

*It's eleven o'clock at night, the office workers have probably got off work already.*

Liu Yi secretly glad that he tread lightly. He then quietly looked for the exit.

When he was about to go out of that room, Liu Yi heard the sound of someone talking outside.

"Ai! I still can't get off work, yet all the doors have been locked! This is so annoying!"

“Can’t do anything about it....overtime is the norm here....such a life in the company.”

“D\*mn....That \*sshole boss, when can we have a vacation!”

Hearing those complaints, Liu Yi thought.

*They are still doing overtime this late at night?*

*Japanese companies are terrifying....*

Liu Yi secretly went outside, trying to pick places where he can avoid the crowd.

Outside there was an office room that still has light in it, the office door was slightly open.

He vaguely heard two people arguing inside.

“B\*stard! Idiot! I told you to do things but you don’t understand!”

Hearing his stiff Mandarin, Liu Yi suddenly became interested.

*A Japanese?*

Liu Yi quietly went to the door, secretly listening.

“Boss....I really didn’t mean to....”

There seemed to be a staff pleading to his boss.

“Idiot! I told you to bribe the official for that piece of land in Xijiang street, but you, this blockhead, actually gave that money to his mistress!”

“I....I thought that official seems clean....”

“Baka! You idiot! How could a clean official has a mistress!”

The boss seemed furious, “In the end, his mistress took the money and ran away! That official is now angry at us! That piece of land in Xijiang street is basically not going to be ours! Do you know how important is that piece of land for us?”

“Boss....I, I am sorry....”

“Get out! You’re fired!”

“No, boss, my family at home is counting on me!”

“Get out! What does this have to do with me! Get out of here, now!”

“Boss, please....”

Liu Yi looked through the door and saw the man kneeling on the floor.

“Please give me another chance....”

“Leave!”

“Boss....You force me to do this...”

That man suddenly stood up and said with clenched teeth.

“What, are you threatening me?”

When he stood up, Liu Yi incidentally saw the Japanese boss.

In a glance, he thought he saw a child....This Japanese boss was only 1.6 meters tall, as tall as his Chinese employee’s shoulders.

“Humph....Buchuan Neiku, I have a lot of evidence on your illegal activities. If you fire me, you will receive the legal sanction!”

*Buchuan Neiku (Not wearing underwear).....*

*This Japanese middle-aged man’s name is too funny.*

“You really seem to be threatening me.”

That Japanese middle-aged man sneered twice, “I think you may not able to do that....”

His voice fell, from behind the Chinese employee, a black figure suddenly appeared.

That figure held a small silvery knife. With a quick and fluid motion, he used that knife to stab the Chinese employee on the back.

“Poof!”

Blood poured out from that Chinese employee’s chest.

The Chinese employee stared at his boss, seemingly unable to comprehend how could he die.

Liu Yi was also shocked, he simply has no time to come out and rescue him.

Everything happened so fast!



“That’s why I said, you can’t do that.”

Toward that dying Chinese employee, the Japanese boss insidiously smiled and said, “By the way, my name is not Buchuan Neiku, my name is Buchuan Neihu (Norikawa).”

With that, he wiped that employee’s blood that splashed on his face.

Because of his short figure, when the blood came out of that employee’s chest, some of it splashed on his face.

Liu Yi clenched his fist.

*D\*mn....They actually killed people in Chinese territory!*

“Kodou, it’s hard on you.”

That Japanese boss said to the black-clad masked man who suddenly appeared just now.

“#@ ! \*&@ ! # ! ”

That Kodou said a bunch of Japanese words that were unintelligible to Liu Yi.

The two people then began to converse in Japanese, which Liu Yi can’t understand.

“Japanese Ninja....”

Seeing this scene, Lin Tong frowned.

“I didn’t expect this Ninja actually dare to come to this country!”

“What....Do they have a relationship with the cultivation world?”

Liu Yi cannot help but ask.

“In the past, their founder came into our land and learned some cultivation method from a Taoist priest. He then secretly ran back to Japan. There, he passed this Taoist skill to his disciples. Thus, the Japanese had their Ninjutsu.”

“So, that’s the origin of Ninjutsu....”

Liu Yi gained a lot of knowledge of cultivation world from Lin Tong.

“In the past Sino-Japanese war, these Ninjas have massacred many of Chinese people! Now they dare to come and haunt our continent again, Liu Yi, go and kill him!”

“Ok....”

Toward this killing of his fellow compatriot, although that fellow was probably just as bad the Ninja, Liu Yi has no mercy.

He clenched his fist, circulated the forces inside his body, ready to spring into action.

But at this time, seemingly because he has been in China for a long time, the boss subconsciously spoke in Mandarin.

“What about the basement, is the power leak problem solved or not? I don’t want to attract the Chinese government people’s attention.”

“Hai!”

That Ninja issued a cry, then his body suddenly turned into a mirage, disappeared from the room.

*That’s right....I have to complete the mission.*

*I have to investigate what these people are doing in the basement.*

*After the investigation, it would not be too late for me to kill the man.*

After thinking about this, Liu Yi turned away from the door and silently walked toward the elevator.

But, before he walked in, Lin Tong flew in into the open elevator door and warned Liu Yi.

“The elevator seems to have a camera. Liu Yi, break it.”

“Where?”

“Upper left!”

Liu Yi put his hand in the elevator and threw an ice ball.

“Pa!”

The cold ice ball blasted on the camera, freezing it.

Liu Yi then strutted into the elevator and pressed the downward arrow.

The elevator looked very similar to an ordinary elevator, but after his Hunter Organization building experience, Liu Yi knew that this was certainly not that simple.

He pressed his palm on the control panel and slowly released his immortal energy.

Sure enough, there seemed to be something below this control panel.

Liu Yi reached out his hand and touched that spot. He then pressed it.

“Dīng!”

A clear sound rang inside the elevator, a secret keyboard then popped out.

Liu Yi took a glance and found the way to the underground level.

Moreover, it only has one level, it just that he did not know how deep this underground level really is.

Liu Yi entered the position and the elevator soon began to descend.

*I hope I can smoothly carry out this mission....*

“Liu Yi, if you bump into Ninjas, don’t hesitate to kill them!”

Lin Tong, who lied on Liu Yi’s shoulder, angrily said, “It makes my blood boil seeing them!”

“Em....Between me and them, who is stronger?” Liu Yi asked.

“Don’t worry, a common Ninja are simply not your opponent.”

Lin Tong rubbed her tail on Liu Yi’s neck and said, “But they have some very powerful Ninja, they can be considered as Japan’s true killing weapon....But, Riyao corporation shouldn’t have such a terrifying Ninja.”

“Then good, I am ready to kill them!”

Liu Yi said and clenched his fists.

The previous murder scene was still vivid in his mind.

*A n eye for an eye.*

*No wonder Leng Mo said that this is actually a right-winger’s industry.*

*They don't take Chinese people's life seriously.*

*B\*stard!*

At this time, the elevator suddenly stopped.

A conversation sound came in from the outside, but the language seemed to be Japanese.

Liu Yi was taken aback, *There are people outside!"*

*What should I do....*

*Do I rush out hard? But, that would immediately alert them!*

# Chapter 192 Underground Base

The elevator door opened slowly, two ninjas in black costume walked in.

The two whispered to each other words that only they could hear and understand.

At this time, Liu Yi who was hanging on the elevator ceiling suddenly jumped down and patted the two's shoulders from behind.

The two ninjas looked back. Seeing Liu Yu, they were suddenly taken aback and subconsciously grabbed their katanas.

But Liu Yi moved faster than them; Almost at the same time, he struck them on their chests.

“Vein Seal!”

The two ninjas' veins were instantly sealed. They were unable to move.

Meanwhile, Liu Yi pulled out the katana on the left ninja and pierced that ninja's heart.

Subsequently, Liu Yi withdrew his hand and wrung the neck of the right ninja.

“Krak!”

That ninja's neck abruptly twisted 180 degrees, his full of consternation eyes looked back as he quickly passed away.

This was not the first time for Liu Yi to kill people, especially since this time, the people he killed were the lackeys sent by the Japanese right winger, he did not hesitate at all.

“I am only returning you the favor.”

Liu Yi muttered, then carried the corpses of the two ninjas out of the elevator.

Outside the elevator, there was a long corridor. After a look, Liu Yi saw that there was a large waste disposal bin on the right side.

He dropped the two ninja's corpses inside the bin and simultaneously took the clothes of one of them to be processed by Lin Tong's spatial ring technique.

A black ring appeared on Liu Yi's right hand.

Liu Yi wanted to sneak into the underground base, so wearing his clothes was out of the question.

But the two ninjas were short, so he can't possibly wear their outfit.

Fortunately, the spatial ring technique was very magical, it can transform clothes.

After Lin Tong treated the costume, Liu Yi's outfit turned into layers of black clothes, covering his whole body.

Now he has the appropriate outfit.

In ninja's clothes, Liu Yi walked down the corridor toward its deepest part.

He slightly hunched his back, so as to avoid attracting unwanted attention from other ninjas toward his height.

*Alas, it's not easy to play a ninja.*

Liu Yi went all the way and soon came to a spacious underground laboratory.

There were a lot of people in white coats busily working here.

Liu Yi's eyes looked at the wide variety of instruments, which dazzled him.

*My God....*

*There's actually an advance Japanese science and technology lab in my country!*

*What exactly are they trying to do here?*

Fear suddenly rushed into his heart.

*No matter what, that is certainly not a good thing!*

*I need to find out what they are trying to do and then destroy this place....*

Liu Yi found out that there were a few doors at the end of the laboratory.

Each of the doors was engraved with a different number of stars.

One of them has five stars printed on it.

*Is this the most important part of the laboratory?*

Liu Yi can't help but walk over and stood in front of this five-star door.

But the door password combination perplexed Liu Yi.

*I am not a hacker....Black also can't open the door for me.*

"Idiot, use a direct hard damage!"

Lin Tong reminded him.

"Use your mysterious icy qi and destroy its interior."

"All right, I'll try...."

Liu Yi reached out his hand and touched the lock mechanism on that door.

His immortal energy surged up and gathered on Liu Yi's right hand.

Waves of icy-cold force constantly emerged, making Liu Yi's right hand slightly emitted a white light.

Mysterious icy qi rapidly entered the lock. The entire lock mechanism immediately damaged by the frost.

Soon, the lock combination lost its effect.

High tech stuff do not necessarily able to survive coldness.

The people around Liu Yi paid no attention to his action, perhaps none of them would believe that someone can empty-handedly open this 132-combination lock.

Liu Yi opened the five-star door unnoticed and went inside.

Inside, there was a deep corridor. In a glance, Liu Yi was unable to see its end.

"F\*ck me....They actually dug a long tunnel here!"

Liu Yi can't help but curse.

His feet stepped on ice skates, gliding through the corridor.

This long corridor seemed to have no end, but Liu Yi was quick; He soon stopped at a large metal gate.

“Looks to be some kind of a protective measure.”

Lin Tong looked at this large metal gate and said.

Liu Yi immediately thought something evil (He is thinking about a protective measure, as in condom).

“I am going to look inside first.”

Lin Tong said, turned into a red light and, in the blink of an eye, went through that metal gate.

*Having Fox sister is really convenient, she is a spirit, so she can't be hindered by walls.*

*Come to think of it, the flame beauty who gave me the Red Blood Code is also like this!*

*D\*mn, the other me seems to have a more useful ability!*

*This is unfair!*

*If only I can also use the Red Blood Code, that would be nice. A pity I have to ask the other me for his permission first before I can use it.*

“Do you want to use my spell?”

At this time, the other Liu Yi spoke in his mind.

“As long as you handle your affairs according to my desire, you can casually use my spell.”

This sound was trying to entice him.

“Not interested.”

Liu Yi did not hesitate to refuse.

“Idiot.”

The other Liu Yi went silent, seemingly too lazy to bother him.

“Liu Yi! There are six metal doors here!”

At this time Lin Tong spoke through Liu Yi's spiritual environment, “Each



door is at least twenty centimeters thick! Base on your current strength....It's impossible!"

"WTF! This protective measure is too much! Six layers of protection, a pity there is nothing pleasurable in this (Again, he is thinking about condom)!"

Liu Yi felt cheated.

"Let me try it."

He did not want to give up just yet. He approached that metal gate and put both of his hands on it.

"Mysterious Icy Qi!"

Blue-white frost instantly covered that metal gate.

But the gate was too thick. Liu Yi's strength was indeed not enough to destroy it yet.

"D\*mn...."

Liu Yi can't help but become frustrated, *Is there no other way?*

"If you use my power...."

At this time, the other Liu Yi spoke in Liu Yi's head again.

"My power....Can easily penetrate this gate...."

"Nonsense, your Red Blood Code is not a magma, how could you easily burn through this metal gate?"

"You don't understand the magic of the flame."

The voice in Liu Yi's head continued, "If you don't believe me, you can just give up....If you don't finish the task, you won't get the money. In any case, I can't spend the money for myself, hehe...."

*F\*ck!*

*The other me is openly mocking me!*

Liu Yi was depressed.

But, thinking about the task money, Liu Yi's heart cannot help but move.

*Oh, hell, don't tell me I am really a miser?*

*But, I need to get the Red Scarf Army's renovation fund as soon as possible!*

*That's right....*

Liu Yi clutched his head and suddenly remembered what his grandfather once said, "To accomplish important matters, no need to bother about mere trifles!"

*Right!*

*Even if I temporarily switch personality, it shouldn't cause too much of a problem....*

*This is also in order to eliminate the underworld gang in the Northern Dragon City!*

*Alas, I do have a thing for sacrificing myself!*

"Since you want to help, then come on!"

Liu Yi put down his hands, took a deep breath and stood in front of the gate, "If you let me down....You will not have a second chance...."

With that, his body suddenly emitted crimson flame, which wrapped around his body.

When the flame dispersed, Liu Yi's attire was replaced with a black coat.

The long silver-white hair replaced his short black hair and his red scarf floated on his chest.

"Gee....This kid's talk is getting stronger and more and more arrogant."

Liu Yi opened his eyes, revealing his golden eyes.

"But I like it."

With that, he suddenly turned into a red flame, similar to that flame beauty's spirit state.

"Whoosh!"

This flame spirit instantly went through these few heavy metal gates and, in the blink of an eye, arrived at the other side of the metal gates.

Then, the Red Blood Code power faded, a black-suited Liu Yi reappeared.

“Whoa, this power is so convenient.”

Liu Yi stood up and could not help but sigh.

But when he saw the scene before him, he was stunned.

“Holy sh\*t....What the....”

In front of Liu Yi, there were a number of nutritional cultivation tanks.

And inside each of these nutritional cultivation tanks, there seemed to be someone in a deep sleep state.

These people only have underwear to cover themselves and all were soaked in some kind of liquid, motionless.

“Strange....What are they trying to achieve here....”

Liu Yi walked over toward one of those tanks and took a glance.

Only to see the label that they put on that tank has a lizard picture on it.

*What is this sh\*t....*

Liu Yi was puzzled.

These nutritional tanks were placed on both sides of the room, while at the center of the room, there was a robot whose body connected to several wires.

“I have to admit....This one looks good....”

Liu Yi looked at the two-meter tall robot in front of him and expressed his admiration.

This robot was fully made of metal. His silver body has the air of advanced technology in it.

Liu Yi’s most wanted toy when he was a child was one of those Transformers!

Unfortunately, his family was poor, and Transformers belong to those high-end toys, so his family simply could not afford.

Now in front of this robot, Liu Yi’s childhood desire resurfaced again.

*If I can buy this thing as a toy, it must be awesome!*

Liu Yi can't help but reach out his hand, wanting to touch this "big toy."

When his hand traced the arm of this robot, its metallic surface felt cold to Liu Yi.

"Such a cool robot....I wonder how much does it cost...."

When Liu Yi was still sighing with emotion, that calmly-standing-there robot suddenly stirred.

Its head lifted up and its eyes emitted two bright red lights as if they were a warning signal.

"Intruder alert, activating defense mechanism."

The robot emitted computer-like sound, which sounded neither male nor female.

"Enemy analysis.....Combat analysis....Marked as a dangerous creature!"

At the same time, the robot's arm swung out and, in a flash, struck Liu Yi's chest.

"Bam!"

Liu Yi's body suddenly flew back and hit the metal gate behind him.

Liu Yi felt his internal organs tumbled....

And his bones fell apart.

*F\*ck me....This robot is so fierce!*

# Chapter 193 Artificial Intelligence

“Begin analysis.”

The wires on the robot began to detach and slowly fell within bursts of white mist.

“Liu Yi, get it, it’s just a scrap metal, what are you afraid of!”

Lin Tong returned to Liu Yi’s shoulder and urged.

“This thing’s strength is very big....”

Liu Yi took two deep breaths, using his breathing technique to suppress his pain.

“Enemy defense analysis....Defensive power E class....”

The robot’s red eyes rapidly flickered as they swept Liu Yi’s body, making him uncomfortable.

“D\*mn it, eat my palm!”

Liu Yi launched his Shadow Step and instantly arrived in front of that robot.

“Enemy speed analysis....Speed power A class!”

*Humph, Shadow Step is of course fast!*

Unleashing his powerful Desolate Flame, Liu Yi’s palm fiercely struck that robot’s right shoulder.

“Bam!”

The robot did not move, but Liu Yi flew backward and fell to the ground.

“F\*ck me....”

He rubbed his numb left arm, stunned.

“It’s too hard....It really has ‘copper skin, iron bones.’”

*My Desolate Flame seems useless against it!*

“Enemy strength analysis....Strength power C class.”

*Although Desolate Flame can multiply my strength three times, when it reach that robot's body, it actually counted as C class?*

Liu Yi looked at that “safe and sound” robot and his heart could not help but tingle with numbness.

*If Japan developed many such robots....Wouldn't this mainland be miserable?*

*Unfortunately, I am just a third-star cultivator, so I couldn't deal with such a robot!*

*How could ordinary soldier hope to deal with it?*

“Battle ready ....Requesting Artificial Intelligence activation....”

The robot said, walked to the nearby crystal column, held out its mechanical arm and grabbed the piece of floating silver-white wrist watch in it.

“Request denied, return to standby mode.”

That robot suddenly went silent, motionless.

*My God....That was thrilling.*

Liu Yi rubbed the cold sweat on his forehead.

If they really fight, Liu Yi actually has the confidence to defeat it.

But it would sure make a lot of noise!

*Looks like my strength is still weak....*

*I must practice in that Hunter Center's gravity room many times!*

However, just now, that robot tried to grab a piece of watch when it requested to activate the Artificial Intelligence. This actually attracted Liu Yi's attention.

*What is that thing?*

*To be able to appear in this five-star room, that thing is definitely high quality.*

Liu Yi was curious, he walked over, held out his right hand and grabbed

that wrist watch.

But the moment his fingers touched that wrist watch, he felt as if this silver-white watch is alive.

A bunch of fine silver threads went out of that watch and spread out.

Like a spider, the watch climbed over and pasted itself on Liu Yi's wrist. These bunch of fine silver threads then pricked Liu Yi's skin on the wrist.

Then, a sharp pain came from his wrist, which nearly made Liu Yi shout in pain.

He quickly reached out and grabbed that watch, trying to pull it out.

But it was as if the watch already became a part of Liu Yi. When he tried to pull it, Liu Yi felt as if he was tearing his own skin, it was really hurt!

"F\*ck me....What the hell is this!"

Liu Yi had a very bad feeling about this.

Lin Tong was also nervous, "Who told you to touch it! This miss has never seen something like this! What is this thing!"

"What should I do....Fox sister!"

Looking at Liu Yi's helpless look, Lin Tong was also distressed.

"Since it has come to this, there is only one way left!"

Ling Tong clenched her teeth and suddenly said.

"What is it?"

"Cut off your right hand!"

Lin Tong said, opened her mouth and spat out her Charming Spirit Scimitar.

The silver scimitar constantly spun in the air, scaring Liu Yi into sweating out cold sweat.

"What the....Fox sister, no....My right hand is very important...."

"Don't be afraid, even without the right hand, you still have me."

Lin Tong tried to comfort him, "Whatever you do with your right hand, I

can help you do it!”

Liu Yi immediately thought something dirty.

*No, this is not the time to think dirty!*

“No....Even if I die, I still want to keep my right hand....”

“Be a man and hold out your right hand!”

“I am now a woman!”

Liu Yi was adamant about not wanting to give up his right hand, he did not want to turn into the “Condor Hero!”

At this time, a mechanical-like sound suddenly sounded near Liu Yi’s ears.

“Artificial Intelligence activation countdown....10, 9, 8....”

*Artificial Intelligence? What Artificial Intelligence?*

While Liu Yi was feeling strange, a lot of digital-like things suddenly appeared in his eyes, constantly flowing up and down.

*My God....What’s wrong with me?*

Liu Yi did not know what went wrong with him.

But the countdown sound was near the end.

“3, 2, 1 ....Activate!”

As soon as the word activate came out, Liu Yi’s body shook.

His mind seemed to be flooded with many things, all kinds of data and information entered his mind.

“The first generation gene database intelligent computing system activate. Master, congratulation on using this system, please give this system a name.”

A mischievous girl’s voice sounded in Liu Yi’s ears.

*What is this....Where is this girl?*

“Master, please give this system a name....Em, *Renjia* wants to say in advance, *Renjia* wants a “kawaii” name.”

*What the....What is this “this system?”*



Liu Yi was still unable to grasp, yet he subconsciously thought of a name.

“Then how about I call you....Little Xuan (Jade)?”

“Recording the name....”

Without knowing the reason, Liu Yi subconsciously thought of this name....

*Could it be , I still can't get rid of her from my mind?* (Xuan here is the same as Xuan in Ma Yixuan)

“Name recording successful.”

Without waiting for Liu Yi to understand, that girl's voice sounded again.

“Oh, Master, how could you give me such a painful name! In any case, *Renjia* is a Japanese system, there are a lot of good names from there....Ah, forget it, there is a saying in China that says, “If you marry a chicken, follow the chicken, if you marry a dog, follow the dog,” who told me to have you as a Master....So be it, Little Xuan it is....”

Listening to this whining girl's voice, cold sweat poured out of Liu Yi's head.

“Who exactly are you?”

He asked.

“Master, I am the Artificial Intelligence that you get just a moment ago.”

Little Xuan said in Liu Yi's ears, “I am an Artificial Intelligence that was developed by a genius engineer from Japan. However, after that talented engineer developed me, he died because of a heart attack. Currently, nobody can crack his invention. So, I'm sort of future era product. Especially with my neural connection system, I can directly implant myself in the human body. This thing simply cannot be achieved with the current technology.”

“So, it's like this....”

Liu Yi did not expect to accidentally bump into such a thing....

“Then why the Japanese did not use you? Why they lock you in this place instead?”

“Because *Renjia* can be regarded as a semi-finished product....”

Little Xuan's voice seemed a bit shy, "Every time someone else used *Renjia*.... Um, because the brain cannot support the excessive data value....They died because of head burst...."

*What the...!*

Cold sweat appeared on Liu Yi's back.

*Are you kidding me!*

*This Artificial Intelligence is actually an unstable bomb!*

*The reason why I didn't die is probably because of the change in my body made by the Immortal force.*

*Otherwise, if I am still that previous student....I will definitely turn into a poor headless corpse!*

"How can they misplace such a dangerous thing!"

"Am I not in the middle of the most secure room!"

Little Xuan innocently said, "Moreover, isn't there a Japanese warning sign on the side that says "Danger, do not touch?""

"Hey....I don't know how to read Japanese!"

Liu Yi wanted to cry but has no tears.

*This is really a trap....*

*But, isn't this a blessing in disguise?*

"Oh, that's right, Master is Chinaman, so you don't understand Japanese."

"F\*ck, what Chinaman, I am a Chinese!"

Liu Yi suddenly raised his eyebrows and scolded.

"But....That's what it says in the database...."

Little Xuan somewhat felt wronged.

"That's the Japanese database, d\*mn it, update the new term!"

"I suppose you're right."

Little Xuan 'nodded,' "I will reproduce the language for Master first, and then connect to the satellite database to update my data."

With that, change suddenly happened before Liu Yi's eyes.

Then, the Japanese writing on the crystal column next to the electronic screen suddenly turned Chinese in his eyes.

*Whoa....*

*Such an amazing feature!*

*Did I just stumble on a treasure?*

While Liu Yi was sighing with emotion, the crystal column suddenly shone a bright red light.

Then, bouts of rapid alarm bell howled in his ears.

“Bad!”

Little Xuan's voice rang up, “Master, the automatic alarm system probably rings because I am not in the crystal column!”

“Then what should we do?”

“Run! In any case, this is the Chinese territory. As long as we are out of here, the Riyao group will not dare to do anything to Master!”

Little Xuan's analytical ability was pretty good, worthy of Artificial Intelligence.

“Master, I have calculated the best route to get out of here, Master can simply follow it!”

With that, a direction arrow suddenly appeared in Liu Yi's eyes.

*Whoa, so convenient!*

Just as Liu Yi was surprised with little Xuan's ability, the motionless robot started to stir once again.

“Activating defense mechanism, clear all intruders!”

The robot began to move. It lifted the right arm, which emitted a barrel, and aimed it at Liu Yi.

“Master, be careful! This is the Japanese third generation armed defense robot, their fighting ability is very strong!”

“I can see that!”

Liu Yi has tasted this powerful robot.

*But it seems like it is possible to take advantage of it....After all, it is just a robot!*

“Ra tatatata!”

At this time, the robot began to open fire, bullets rapidly flew toward Liu Yi.

Liu Yi immediately entered his black and white world and the speed of the bullets slowed down.

“Hey, Master’s ability is really strange!”

Little Xuan also took note of the change, “Master, as long as I am with you, I can use two hundred percent of my capacity!”

# Chapter 194 Integrating With The Artificial Intelligence

Those rapid bullets slowed down indefinitely in Liu Yi's eyes.

Liu Yi moved to the left and right, dodging those bullets.

"Bam, bam, bam!"

Those bullets hit the metal gate behind Liu Yi then ricocheted to the surrounding instruments.

"Klank!"

Several nutritional tanks directly broke apart, the inside solution poured down, spreading all over the floor.

The alarm roared louder and louder.

"Grr...."

A low dull roar came from the several men who slipped out of the nutritional tanks.

"Master, be careful."

While updating her database, Little Xuan cautioned, "These genetically modified species are being stimulated by external sources, they could regain consciousness."

"These creatures are so strange...."

Lying on Liu Yi's shoulders, Lin Tong shook her tail, "They don't have any demonic force....But, they are not like humans either."

"They are genetically modified species."

Liu Yi did not understand why Lin Tong could not hear little Xuan's voice.

Likewise, Lin Tong's voice cannot be heard by little Xuan either.

According to the data record that was transmitted by little Xuan, little Xuan used the nerve connection to communicate with Liu Yi.

This was something that has yet to be achieved by modern science because the neural connection technology has always been taboo in science and many countries placed restrictions on its development. Little Xuan's developer must have been secretly developed this artificial intelligence.

"Genetically modified species....What is that thing....But, Liu Yi, you have to be careful....Although I feel no demonic force in them, I can feel their terrifying pressure!"

"Em....I know."

Liu Yi did not intend to fight these genetically modified creatures and robot. He has completed his task, so he wanted to retreat and go back to report this matter.

These Japanese-produced monsters, he will let the Hunter Organization handle them.

He cannot possibly deal with them alone.

Although Liu Yi did not like to run away from problems, he would not go die foolishly.

"Kill the intruder."

The robot suddenly discharged two streams of jet from the two holes on its back, then, along with the whistling of hot air wave, flew forward.

"Bad!"

Liu Yi did not expect the robot to actually have good mobility. But fortunately, he has launched his black and white world.

In his eyes, the robot's action slowed down.

At the same time, Liu Yi bent over and lowered his head.

"Whoosh!"

The robot flew right above Liu Yi's head, brushing his hair. Then, its large metallic fist hit the metal gate.

"Boom!"

The metal gate violently shook. It created a depression in this 20 cm thick

metal gate.

“My God....”

Liu Yi wiped off his cold sweat, “This thing is too savage!”

“Such a huge destructive power!”

Lin Tong could not help widen her eyes.

“If master’s strength is evaluated as C-class, then the power of this robot’s arm should be assessed as B-class!”

*It actually has such power!*

Liu Yi was secretly surprised.

“Roar!”

While Liu Yi was still in shock, the man who has been lying in the puddle of green liquid and broken glass suddenly roared loudly.

Then, his whole body began to change.

His skin turned green and looked as solid as a shell.

And his height increased a lot; In the blink of an eye, he reached two meters tall.

A tail grew from behind him, turning into a dark green long tail.

Sharp claws stretched out from his stout limbs which replaced his hands and feet.

He seemed to have lost his mind. He laid there on all four, mouth dripping down with saliva.

Those salivas was really ugly, they dripped all over the floor.

“Roar....”

His reptilian green eyes fell on Liu Yi and his mouth began to groan.

“Good doggy....Don’t make trouble here....”

Liu Yi thought that he must find a bone to distract his attention.

*Um, but a lizard doesn’t seem to like bone, right?*

“Grr!”

The lizard man suddenly roared and came running at Liu Yi.

“What the hell, why are you chasing me!”

He immediately launched his shadow steps and instantly moved several meters away.

“Bang!”

That lizard man pounced on Liu Yi’s previous spot, the ground suddenly appeared eight long claw marks.

*F\*ck me, he can actually claw this reinforced floor! How powerful is he! And his claws are so sharp!*

Meanwhile, the other genetically modified creatures also began to slowly change.

“Go to your sister, why do you want this father’s life!”

That lizard man roared and dashed toward Liu Yi.

Liu Yi suddenly launched his shadow steps and appeared behind the robot.

“Warning, the enemy is in the back!”

The robot sounded with its computer-like sound.

Without waiting for it to react, that lizard man has arrived at its front.

“Bam!”

With its powerful limb, the lizard man waved its claw, striking the robot head on, which immediately flew backward.

“Defense system automatically turn on!”

The robot did not expect to be subjected to other attacks. After its body flew backward, in mid-air, it opened several vents, ejecting out several airwaves to stabilize its body.

After swiping away the robot, the lizard man swept his tail at Liu Yi.

“His mother, you really won’t give up, won’t you!”



Liu Yi's body sank, the immortal force in his body continued to rotate.

He stretched out his hand and caught that sweeping tail.

"Bam!"

A surge of huge pressure forced his body to sink.

Two pits directly appeared under Liu Yi's feet.

*His mother....*

*This guy is so strong!*

*But, I am not a weakling either!*

The immortal power frantically circulated in Liu Yi's body, his awe-inspiring righteousness continued to accumulate.

It seemed like there was a pressure pump inside his body, which constantly pumped, increasing his power.

A layer of frost armor slowly appeared on his body, but it was only vaguely visible.

"Get the hell away from me!"

Using his ever increasing power, Liu Yi directly lifted that nearly three-meter high giant lizard by his tail and threw him into the air.

"Boom!"

That lizard man crashed into the robot and fell together to the ground.

"Whether you're me or not, lend me your power first!"

Liu Yi looked at those various creatures who have now crawled up and roared.

"Red Blood Devil Flame!"

Liu Yi's outfit slightly changed.

The frost on his collar turned into a red flame, which continued to spread, raging all over his body.

"You actually forcefully use the other you's power...."

Lin Tong was amazed, "Wow....This awe-inspiring uprightness is too

fierce! Everything that is impossible is possible!”

More than ten flame beauties flew out and floated around Liu Yi, becoming his most loyal protectors.

These genetically modified creatures then stood up, each with different animal characteristic, one was a lion man, one a tiger man, a werewolf, and the likes, all were exceptionally fierce looking.

But those flame beauties flew out and threw themselves at those genetically modified creatures.

The damage from the flame was very high, feeling burned, they screamed and ran away to escape.

“Master, it’s time!”

Little Xuan reminded Liu Yi of the timing in battle, “We can take this opportunity to escape!”

“I’ll try!”

Liu Yi turned and rushed toward the metal gate.

“Destroy the intruder.”

The robot suddenly moved, a hole popped out of its back. Then, a missile flew out.

“You won’t stop until it’s over won’t you!”

Liu Yi stared at the incoming missile, whistling toward him.

“Determining missile tracker – Master, this is definitely a heat-seeking missile!”

Little Xuan reminded him.

“I know.”

Liu Yi nodded, but still stood his ground, not trying to move.

“Master, run! This small missile is very powerful, enough to explode master into pieces!”

Little Xuan continued to warn Liu Yi.

“Little Xuan, don’t look down on me!”

Liu Yi’s eyes flashed out a red glow.

He threw out a red chain, which wrapped the missile. He then pulled the missile, literally changing its course. Like throwing a sandbag, he threw it right at the center of the metal gate.

“Boom!”

The missile exploded, the resultant hot shockwave impacted Liu Yi’s body.

But under his Red Blood Code state, the fire impact was minimum.

This intense flame not only failed to harm Liu Yi, he even felt that it was as comfortable as a spring breeze.

But the explosion wrapped the entire laboratory room, those genetically modified creatures screamed in pain because their bodies were burned and the robot was pushed far away by the shockwave.

Four of the six metal gates, in the blink of an eye, destroyed by the explosion.

Only the remaining two stood between Liu Yi and his escape route.

“Good, two layers left!”

Liu Yi clenched his fists.

The ability of the flame state can only be used when his other self awakened, presently his comprehension of the Red Blood Code was not deep enough.

Likewise, his other self also can’t fully use his Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra.

“Come on, let’s see if I can use my different ability to destroy you!”

Liu Yi rushed toward the metal gate and made a horse stance. His right hand on his waist, burning with red light.

Red Blood Devil Flame flooded his right palm.

Desolate Flame began to mobilize.

Liu Yi felt that his right hand was hiding a dynamite and he had to detonate it quick.

“Master, this is impossible!”

Little Xuan said in Liu Yi’s ears, “This metal gate is 20 cm thick! Unless it’s that robot’s high explosive missile, a human palm cannot possibly destroy it!”

“Don’t underestimate your master.”

Liu Yi chuckled, the red glow in his eyes grew bright.

The crimson flame filled his inside; Liu Yi was like a high-pressure boiler, the energy finally converged to a tipping point.

“Desolate Flame!”

In horse stance, Liu Yi fiercely struck the metal gate with his right palm.

“Boom!”

The metal gate violently shook.

Then, a huge depression in a form of a palm appeared.

The entire metal gate issued a fierce groaning sound; Finally, red flame burst out of the palm and directly burst open that twenty-centimeter thick metal gate.

# Chapter 195 Dragon Group

Little Xuan felt like being DDoS-ed.

She did not expect her master to actually be able to penetrate this more than 20 cm thick metal gate.

*Does human have such powerful attack?*

*Looks like many of the information in the database....Need to be updated!*

While little Xuan has some doubt about her own computing system, Liu Yi heard a sudden “thud” sound coming from the other side of the last metal gate. Suddenly, that last gate broke into pieces.

Liu Yi widened his eyes as he looked at the several figures opposite of him.

“Liu Yi, be careful, I can feel their powerful force!”

Lin Tong warned Liu Yi.

“I know....”

He warily looked at the few people opposite of him.

Altogether, there were three of them. The one who broke the metal gate was two-meter tall bald giant.

Moreover, half of his body petrified like a stone statue.

But the other half of his body was still in human form, including his head.

He has huge giant-hammer-like stone arms, which looked very scary.

Beside him stood a man dressed in black, with arms crossed and cold face.

This man has an aura of a leader. Moreover, this man’s aura did not seem like it belongs to a mortal.

But this man was like a cyclops, his left eye was blind and covered with an eye patch.

Behind them stood a woman in a nurse outfit.

Liu Yi was stunned.

*How....Could there be a nurse!*

However, that nurse was actually pretty, and she has a pair of bright and intelligent eyes.

Her figure was also good. Her nurse skirt wrapped around her curling upward buttocks. Her waist was slim and her thighs were slender.

Especially since her two slender thighs also wore flesh-colored stockings, which looked extremely attractive.

“Who are you?”

That one-eyed man with strong aura looked at Liu Yi and coldly asked.

“Who are you?”

Hearing them speaking Chinese, Liu Yi felt that something was not quite right.

“Do you have any common sense?”

The beautiful nurse suddenly glared at him and shouted, “We asked you first, okay?”

“Em....I am Ten Steps To Milk A Man, a D level hunter from the Hunter Organization.”

Liu Yi took out his Hunter id card.

“A Hunter?”

The several people opposite of him looked at each other.

“Bos, didn’t we give the Hunter Center a call before we came?”

That half stone-man hurriedly asked.

“Impossible!”

The nurse interrupted, “Knife has called the Hunter Center first....”

“There is something wrong with this.”

The one-eyed man finally spoke again, “Our command doesn’t change, to destroy the underground base, snatch the Gene Modification blueprint and, while we’re at it, arrest this man.”

“Boss, the lab has turned into a sea of fire....”

The half-stone man blinked his eyes, “I am afraid the GM blueprint has long been destroyed....”

“Then arrest this man first.”

A light flashed through the one-eyed man’s eye, “Maybe the blueprint is in his hand.”

“F\*ck, what blueprint, I don’t know anything about that, okay!”

Hearing that they wanted to arrest him, Liu Yi was naturally unwilling, “Where did you come from, what right do you have to arrest me!”

“Bos, he asked where we come from!”

That half-stone man turned around and asked.

“Tell him.”

The one-eyed man waved his hand.

“Kid, you want to know where we from?”

The beautiful nurse suddenly pulled up her sleeve, revealing her coat of arms.

At the same time, that half-stone guy pointed at the symbol on his waistband.

Liu Yi blinked his eyes as he saw the bright golden dragon-shaped mark.

“What is that?”

“F\*ck!”

The beautiful nurse cursed, “Do you or do you not know about this!? How could a hunter not know about this mark!”

“He’s probably a fake hunter!”

The half-stone guy added, “Kid, let me tell you, it’s a bad luck for you to run into us! Remember, I, your grandpa, am a Dragon Group’s agent!”

*I’ll be damn!*

Liu Yi withdrew two steps back and took a deep breath.

*These people....Are from the legendary Dragon Group?*

Liu Yi always thought that the Dragon Group was just a myth.

According to legend, the Chinese government has a special organization, called the Dragon Group.

Each agent of the Dragon Group has a special ability. They were usually sent to do some special missions that were impossible to complete.

Liu Yi has previously heard about this legendary group from the story....Now, however, he actually saw them with his own eyes!

“You’re Ten Steps To Milk A Man, right? This name is weird....”

That half-stone guy wielded his giant arm and said, “If you know what’s good for you, you better surrender now, don’t force us to move our hands!”

“I am sorry....”

Liu Yi clenched his fists and changed his state.

The Red Blood Code force began to subsidize and the Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra force re-emerged.

Although the Red Blood Code was more powerful, Liu Yi was more adept at using his Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra.

Liu Yi felt that his chance of winning was greater when he used his Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra.

*In fighting, power cannot decide everything....*

*Of course, except for the absolute power.*

*For example, sister Li Biyue. As an A level Hunter, she can kill me in seconds!*

“I don’t have the word surrender in my dictionary.”

Liu Yi said, his feet began to spread his icy-cold force and a layer of frost started to spread on the ground.

The power of the Nine Mysterious Heart Sutra was applied to the extreme by Liu Yi.

In front of these few people, Liu Yi did not dare to be negligent.



“Get him!”

The one-eyed man said.

“Kid, you’re out of luck!”

The half-stone guy shouted and came at him like a tank.

“Boom, boom, boom!”

Each step that he took shook the ground.

“Eat my hammer!”

Soon, this half-stone guy arrived in front of Liu Yi, his gigantic right hand smashed down toward Liu Yi’s head like a hammer.

*F\*ck me....*

*That hand will turn me into a pulp!*

That was the hand that destroyed the 20 cm thick metal gate.

But Liu Yi immediately launched his Shadow Step and instantly moved several meters back.

The half stone guy’s right hand pounded the ground.

“Bam!”

A deep pit suddenly appeared on the ground. Seeing this, cold sweat appeared on Liu Yi’s head.

*My God, what a power!*

*That is so crazy!*

“Shadow Steps?”

The one-eyed man slightly squinted his one eye, “Is he really a Hunter?”

“Bos, what should I do?”

That half stone guy withdrew his arm, turned around and asked.

“Take him down first!”

The one-eyed man decisively ordered.

“Got it, boss!”

That half-stone guy suddenly bent over, partly crouched on the ground.

Liu Yi looked at him without knowing what the guy was trying to do.

“Kid, think you’re fast?”

The half stone guy grinned at Liu Yi.

Then, in a flash, that half stone guy’s foot stepped on the ground.

A pit immediately appeared on that spot.

And his body suddenly shot forward like an artillery shell and directly hit Liu Yi, who hasn’t had the time to react.

“Bam!”

He felt like he was being hit by a train.

The impact flew him backward and embedded him on the wall.

He felt a giant incomparable pain all over his body.

Every bone in his body ached.

*This stone guy....Actually has such an explosive force....*

“Liu Yi, be careful!”

Lin Tong frowned, “If you’re being negligent again, you may lose your life!”

“I know....Fox sister, I won’t be careless next time!”

After his many fighting victories, Liu Yi’s self-confidence grew increasingly larger.

But too much self-confidence is the other term for arrogance.

*I have to take this fight as a “lesson learned.”*

“Hahaha, now you know how powerful this uncle is!”

That half stone guy cannot help but laugh. He wielded his giant stone arm toward Liu Yi, who was still embedded on the wall.

“Armor!”

Liu Yi shouted.

A layer of thick frost armor appeared on his arms.

At the same time, he pulled his arms out of the wall and met that falling stone arm head on.

“Bam!”

Liu Yi’s arms sank into the wall, his body embedded deeper.

But he succeeded in parrying that giant stone arm, which came to a halt.

“Good kid, you got strength!”

That half stone guy was slightly surprised.

“Able to block his fist, sister admires you, kid!”

That beautiful nurse put one of her hand on her waist and said with a smile.

“F\*ck! You lustful little nurse!”

The half stone guy called out a sentence and lifted his arm, preparing to punch Liu Yi again and again.

“Let see how many times you can block my fist!”

“Ice bomb!”

But Liu Yi was not going to be passively beaten. He suddenly threw an ice bomb on that half stone guy.

“Krak, krak, krak!”

Frost suddenly appeared on that half stone guy, slightly freezing his body.

“Bam!”

But his body suddenly shook, waving his right arm, the layer of frost on his body broke.

“You want to freeze this grandpa with this? In your dream!”

But Liu Yi took this opportunity to break free from the wall and stepped on ice skates to move out of the way.

He kept sliding on the ice skates and moved randomly, not giving the half stone guy the chance to him.

“It’s like a rat who can jump!”

The half stone guy constantly swung his arms, but unable to land even a single hit on Liu Yi.

Liu Yi was calculating his chance of winning.

“Little Xuan, analyze the strength of this stone guy.”

“Report master, his power level is A....What kind of people are they, this is too abnormal....”

Even if she is an artificial intelligence, there were some things that she can't compute.

Although she has updated her database, some non-common-sense things were difficult to calculate.

“A-level....Then I can't meet him head on....”

Liu Yi thought for a moment, “Little Cai, I am counting on you.”

With that, he stretched out his hand. A beautiful multicolored butterfly flew out from his palm.

# Chapter 196 Will Never Go With You

“Butterfly?”

The one eyed man’s eyebrows slightly rose.

“Wow, what a beautiful butterfly....”

The nurse’s eyes were captivated by the butterfly.

“What the hell....Is that your pet? What a f\*cking pet!”

Seeing the slowly fluttering butterfly, the half stone guy could not help but loudly mutter.

“Don’t underestimate my little Cai.”

Liu Yi said with a smile.

With that, he made a seal with his fingers and said.

“Butterfly Illusion!”

Instantly, the fluttering butterfly multiplied into many butterflies, filling the entire corridor.

All these multicolored butterfly rushed toward that half-stone guy.

The half stone guy immediately waved his giant arms like he was dancing to fend off those butterflies.

“What is this....Why are there butterflies everywhere!”

“Where are the butterflies?”

The nearby beautiful nurse looked at the half stone guy in shocked, “What are you talking about?”

“Aren’t these butterflies? They’re everywhere!”

The half stone guy shouted as he continued to dance.

“He uses illusion technique.”

The one eyed man punctured the mystery, “Little Xi, get ready to break his

illusion.”

“Got it.”

The nurse nodded her head.

At this time, the half stone guy suddenly found that the butterflies in the room were gone, and then he saw Ten Steps To Milk A Man throwing a punch at his face.

“Brat, do you think you can touch this uncle’s face?”

With that, the half stone guy waved his arm toward Liu Yi.

“Boom!”

Liu Yi was hit, broken like a bubble.

At this time, the real Liu Yi appeared behind the half stone guy, fiercely sending his foot, kicking the half stone guy in the head.

“Bam!”

This kick directly hit its target and the half stone guy flew and hit the nearby wall.

“F\*ck me....This kid’s kick is really powerful!”

The half stone guy did not seem to hurt at all. He rubbed his head and stood up.

Liu Yi was stunned.

*What the....This guy’s body is really durable!*

*Even my kick on his head is nothing to him!*

*No wonder he’s a stone man!*

“Gangzi, come on, let me help you break the illusion!”

The nearby nurse put her fingers on her temple and said to that half stone guy.

“F\*ck me, why didn’t you help me earlier!”

The half stone guy immediately excited and rushed over toward Liu Yi again.

“Hey, let me see how are you going to counter me this time!”

Liu Yi used the multicolored butterfly illusion to try to confuse the half stone guy.

But this time, it did not work. The half stone guy kept rushing at him, his illusion has clearly failed!

*Looks like that nurse also has some unique abilities....*

*Are these people espers?*

*Is there no cultivator in the Dragon Group?*

“No cultivators would join such an organization like the Dragon Group.”

Lin Tong helped Liu Yi dispel his doubt, “Cultivators believe in the heavenly law, how could they work with the government!”

When Liu Yi thought about, that was actually reasonable....

But while Liu Yi was distracted, the half stone guy has arrived in front of Liu Yi. His huge stone arm came crushing at Liu Yi’s head.

“Little Cai!”

But Liu Yi waved his arms, throwing out the multicolored butterflies.

Suddenly, rows of crystal butterflies flew toward that half stone guy.

“Hahaha, you still want to use illusion to confuse me....”

While the half stone guy laughed, these ice crystal butterflies struck his body.

Suddenly, the half stone guy was pushed back again and again as his body began to freeze.

“F\*ck me, what the hell is this!”

“Idiot, that’s not illusion!”

The nurse was pissed off, “Are you stupid!”

“Sorry, it’s just a poor judgement....”

The half stone guy quickly apologized and then fiercely glared at Liu Yi.

“D\*mn you D-level hunter! You dare to play tricks on this uncle, you’re a

dead man!"

With that, he roared and came at Liu Yi.

Liu Yi stepped on the ice skates, flexibly dodging his attack.

After several attacks, the half stone guy was still unable to touch Liu Yi.

"Time is running out."

The one eyed man's ears suddenly pricked up, "The Riyao group's people are downstairs heading toward us, so you better finish this quick."

"Let me help you!"

The nurse's eyes suddenly fell on Liu Yi's body.

At that moment, Liu Yi suddenly can't move his body.

Not that his body literally cannot move....But his mind was unable to send the command to his body to move.

This made Liu Yi stood still, looking dumbly at the incoming half stone guy.

"Mind control!"

Lin Tong, sensing this power, exclaimed, "Liu Yi, use breathing technique, now!"

"I know!"

Liu Yi launched his breathing technique. One deep breath later, he regained control of his own mind.

He then launched his Shadow Step, instantly moved to a spot three meters away.

"Boom!"

The half stone guy crashed into the wall, creating a man-shaped pit.

"F\*ck me....Little Xi, you trick me!"

"Trick your sister! He actually broke free of my mind control!"

That nurse's eyes widened in surprised.

Liu Yi took a long sighed of relief.



*That was close....Almost turned into a meat patty!*

*That woman actually has the power of mind control!*

*Dragon Group's people really can't be underestimated!*

"When we're back, I want you two to write report to me."

The one eyed man seemed unsatisfied with the performance of his two team members, casting each of them a glance.

"Boss....No....."

The half stone guy loudly wailed.

"What? Write report?....D\*mn Gangzi, it's all because of you, you need to be more agile, I don't want to be punished together with you!"

The nurse stamped her feet in anger.

"F\*ck....It's all because of this kid, okay!"

The half stone guy pointed at Liu Yi.

"Hey! I am innocent!"

Liu Yi raised his hands and said, "Moreover, I don't have the time to play with you, I am leaving, bye!"

With that, he stepped on the ice skates, instantly accelerating toward the other side of the corridor.

He was extremely fast, in the blink of an eye, he swiftly passed through the side of these three people "F\*ck, he's going to escape!"

The half stone guy seemed anxious, but with his speed, he knew he can't catch up to Liu Yi.

"No one can escape from my, Long San (Dragon the third), hands."

With that, the one eyed man turned around and held out his hand in Liu Yi's direction.

While sliding with ice skates, Liu Yi suddenly felt as if he was grabbed by an invisible giant hand, lifting his body up in mid air, unable to break free.

"Hehe, silly kid!"

The half stone guy grinned, "You want to run away while our team leader is here? Are you dreaming?"

"Humph, you still have the nerve to speak!"

The nurse pinched her slender waist and gave the half stone guy her dirty look, "You can only depend on the team leader....Aren't you still going to write the report?"

"This...."

The half stone guy touched the back of his head and smiled sheepishly.

"D\*mn...."

Liu Yi desperately circulated his immortal force, wanting to break free from this invisible shackles, to no avail.

The power that shackled him was too strong....

"Stop struggling."

The one eyed Long San slowly said, "I am a B-level expert and you're just a D-class Hunter. You can't possibly break free from my telekinetic."

*D\*mn it....*

*This man has the power of telekinesis?*

"Oh my CPU....Who exactly are these people...."

Little Xuan groaned.

"Liu Yi....You can't let them catch you!"

Lin Tong said, laying on Liu Yi's shoulder looking back at those three Dragon Group people, who were slowly walking toward him.

The Charming Spirit Scimitar in her body trembled, ready to be released.

*If I let Liu Yi fall into their hands....He will be surrounded by troubles.*

*Moreover, if Liu Yi fall into their hands, they will find out that he has the demonic force in him!*

*At that time, the Hunter Center will certainly know about it....And that will be the end of Liu Yi!*

*I have to fight to the death....To protect Liu Yi!*

Lin Tong continued to circulated her demonic force.

“Be a darling and follow us back to the base....”

That nurse opened her mouth to say a sentence.

She was exercising her mind control on Liu Yi’s mind.

“No....”

Liu Yi said to himself, *If I get caught by this Dragon Group....By virtue of their power, perhaps they can find Fox sister in my body.*

*If they find Fox sister, that would be dangerous....*

*I have to protect Fox sister....*

“Just come with us.”

Long San took out a special pair of handcuffs and walked toward Liu Yi.

“No way!”

At this time, Liu Yi suddenly opened his eyes.

Red flame and blue-white frost began to rotate around his body.

His black coat fluttered.

Some of his short hair turned silver.

And the color of his pupils turned golden red, glowing out from behind the mask.

When the beautiful nurse saw his eyes, she was shocked and can’t help but blush.

*Why....Would I have this feeling....*

*Em, this is impossible....*

“Let me go!”

Liu Yi loudly shouted.

A pair of wings popped out from his back.

A flaming red wing protruded from the right side, shining brightly with the

raging flame.

Another blue-white ice wing popped out from the left, splashing ice on all around it.

“What....Is this....”

Seeing the sudden change in Liu Yi, the three Dragon Group’s agents were somewhat stunned.

“Master....Your strength suddenly increased a lot!”

Little Xuan analyzed Liu Yi’s power, “It multiplied many times....My God....My CPU....”

“Mountain Mist!”

Liu Yi unleashed his power, spreading out like a ripple of wave, shattering the power of Long San that bound him.

At the same time, he waved his palm at those Dragon Group agents.

A four to five meters giant flaming palm flew toward those Dragon Group agents.

“Watch out!”

Sensing the power of the palm, Long San warned his team mates.

“Leave it to me!”

The half stone guy rushed three steps forward in front of them and used his right arm to punch the ground.

His entire right arm suddenly began to change. In the blink of an eye, it turned into a three meters high huge stone pillar, blocking the path.

“Boom!”

The flaming hand suddenly exploded, the intense red heat wave suddenly engulfed the three Dragon Group agents.

# Chapter 197 Fantastic Pet

“Success!”

Liu Yi could not help but become excited.

At this time, a huge wind surged up.

The half stone guy wielded his giant stone pillar arm to create a strong wind that extinguished the flame.

“No....Are you kidding me....”

Liu Yi did not expect that his flaming Mountain Mist could not even hurt the three of them even a little bit.

The three Dragon group agents were still there unharmed.

“What a scary flame....”

The nurse said, patting her chest in fear.

“This kid is quite powerful!”

The half stone guy reached out to pat the residual flame off his arm and said in surprise.

“But it didn’t hurt....”

Liu Yi wrinkled his brows.

“Liu Yi, try your pet!”

Lin Tong reminded him.

*Oh, that’s right!*

It suddenly dawned on Liu Yi, *I still have my pet!*

*That’s Hunter’s unique skill!*

“Resistance is futile.”

Long San waved his arm and immediately extinguished the surrounding flame.

“You have been issued a warrant arrest by the Dragon Group, be obedient and come with us. I don’t like playing rough.”

“I don’t like it either....”

Liu Yi stood his ground. The power in his body surged up, “But I don’t want to go back with men! Come out! Xiao Hei!”

There was an array circle on the ground which spewed thick black smoke.

“Looks like it’s Hunter’s pet!”

The nurse was the first one to cried out.

“This is tricky!”

The half stone guy squinted his eyes, “I heard that Hunter’s pet is very powerful! Boss, what should we do?”

“Fight.”

Long San simply replied.

The black smoke soon fluttered to the ceiling, people began to see the dark figure within the smoke.

“Let me see what kind of monster your pet is!”

The half stone guy loudly called out.

Several people somewhat nervously stared at the figure.

When the smoke cleared up, a 1.5-meter little black skeleton stood there; It’s jaw moved twice, issuing a “ka ka” sound, which surprised everyone.

“F\*ck me....What the hell is this....”

The half stone guy cried out.

“So cute....”

Two small stars appeared on the pretty nurse’s eyes, “Come here, let sister hug you....”

She spread her arms wide and moved toward the black skeleton.

At this time, that little black skeleton suddenly threw an ice ball with its right hand, The ice ball exploded on that nurse body, which instantly froze

her.

“What the hell....Xiao Xi, are you okay!”

The half stone guy had a scare and quickly rushed forward to examine the pretty nurse condition.

But the little black skeleton did not give him a chance, its left hand threw out a little ball of fire, which hit his body.

“Boom!”

Like a grenade explosion, the laboratory corridor trembled.

The half stone guy’s body was blown backward a few steps.

“His mother....This little skeleton is too “against the heaven!””

Unexpectedly, this seemingly small skeleton has such a large power, the half stone guy was stunned.

At this time, the pretty nurse used her psychic power to break away from the ice. She folded her arms, shivering from the cold. She said with trembling voice.

“Hate, hateful....I’ve been cheated....I don’t like you anymore....”

Looking at his fantastic small skeleton, Liu Yi was pleased.

*No matter what, this is my pet, definitely reliable!*

At this time, Liu Yi felt a stream of message coming from that little skeleton.

*It told me to go ahead, it is going to guard my back?*

*Whoa....This little skeleton is quite heroic!*

*But how could I let it behind here alone!*

“Don’t worry, just go!”

Lin Tong patted her tail on Liu Yi’s cheek and said, “This pet is living in your body, as long as you give it a thought, you can call it back. It doesn’t matter if you go further away. So you better run. Now!”

“Oh, why don’t you tell me earlier!”

Feeling assured, Liu Yi stepped on ice skates.

He shouted at the other direction of the corridor, leaned forward, and ejected a continuous stream of flame from his hands and then began to accelerate.

Thanks to direction arrow from Little Xuan, Liu Yi was not worried about getting lost.

“D\*mn, he’s trying to escape!”

Seeing Liu Yi was about to escape, the half stone guy became anxious.

“Xiao Xi! Help me!”

The half stone guy loudly shouted as the little skeleton continued to bombard him.

“Roger that!”

The pretty nurse nodded her head and touched her temples with both of her hands.

Suddenly, the little skeleton’s body shivered and was unable to move.

“Let me smash you into a pile of broken bones!”

The half stone guy roared, he finally stopped being defensive.

He bolted forward and crushed the little skeleton with his giant arm.

“Humph, humph, a pile of broken bones dares to be so arrogant in front of me! Now you know how powerful this uncle is!”

The half stone guy smiled smugly and began to chase Liu Yi.

But at this time, that pile of broken bones suddenly began to move.

In the blink of an eye, these bones formed a two-meter tall vicious dog form.

The bones of this dog burned with flame, looking very scary.

“F\*ck me! What the hell just happens here!”

The half stone guy was surprised.

“Watch out!”



The nurse exclaimed, "I couldn't control it anymore...."

Her voice fell, that vicious dog suddenly barked and rushed at the half stone guy.

Its giant bones bit the neck of that half stone guy.

"D\*mn, get the hell away from me!"

The half stone guy swung his right arm and punched that evil dog away.

The evil dog turned around in mid-air and steadily landed on the ground.

It stopped in the middle of the corridor, blocking the three from chasing Liu Yi.

"Such a clingy fellow! I want you to break!"

The half stone guy was driven beyond his limit, he immediately swung his right arm and fiercely pounded the ground.

Suddenly a shock wave spread out along the ground.

The crack on the ground continued to move forward and, in the blink of an eye, arrived at the evil dog.

"Bam!"

The shockwave immediately shattered the evil dog's bones, which flew everywhere.

"This should take care of it!"

Just as the half stone guy want to relax, those bones began to automatically reorganized.

Soon, the bones of a nearly three-meter tall bear stood before them.

This skeleton bear was covered with ice, which strengthened its body.

It's huge pair of paws have sharp ice fingernails.

"What the f\*ck, what is this thing? A transformer!"

Watching the tall frost bear before them, the three Dragon Group agents were shocked.

*Can't this thing die?*

*Every time it breaks, it transforms into a more bad\*ss form!*

*This is so unfair!*

“Roar!”

It seemed like the frost bear did not want to give them the opportunity to think.

It rushed two stepped forward and viciously slapped that half stone guy.

“Bam!”

The paw fell on that half stone guy’s raised right arm.

That baldy’s feet sank several centimeters deep into the ground.

“Whoa....So powerful....”

The half stone guy cannot help but exclaim.

“Roar!”

Another big paw of that frost bear came at him.

“Bam!”

Only half of the half stone guy’s body that was petrified, but the frost bear has given him two slaps.

This time, the paw directly hit the half stone guy in the face, sending him to fly to the side.

“Bam!”

His whole body smashed into the side wall.

“Boom, boom, boom!”

The frost bear excitedly came rushing at the nurse, ice chips flew around everywhere on this corridor like snow.

“Boss....If you don’t make your move, it’s going to be too late.”

The nurse looked to the side with a piteous face, not knowing what this Long San was thinking about.

At this time, the frost bear loudly roared, continuing its rush toward the pretty nurse.

It swung its arm to slap that pretty nurse.

Long San finally made his move. He reached out his hand toward that frost bear and locked it with his power.

Suddenly, the frost bear was lifted off the ground, floating in the air kicking around with its legs.

“Interesting....Really interesting....’

Long San’s eyes flashed a trace of madness, “This man....Really surprised me....”

“Boss, do you fancy that kid?”

The nurse exclaimed, “Oh my God....It’s a gay love....”

“What nonsense is that! I want you to double your report!”

Long San suddenly gave that pretty nurse a glance, the nurse’s face immediately sank.

“That Ten Steps To Milk A Man....He is not an ordinary Hunter.”

Long San, still locking that frost bear with one hand, slowly said, “He is a cultivator....”

“What?”

The half stone guy who has just crawled out of the wall could not help but surprise.

“A cultivator? That’s impossible!”

People who willingly joined the Hunter Center were usually people with psychic power or espers.

Some of them came with incomplete cultivation method, but their growths were limited and cannot be called cultivators, they were the so-called loose cultivators.

“That’s right....He is a cultivator....”

Long San believed in his own judgement, “This Hunter Center is really interesting....They even have this kind of Hunter. Xiao Xi, when we get back, tell Xiao Dao to look for this so-called Ten Steps To Milk A Man’s

information.”

“Boss? Could it be....”

The nurse seemed to have guessed it.

“Correct, I want him to join our Dragon Group!”

Long San’s eyes flickered with lights, “Since ancient times, no cultivator ever join our Dragon Group, leaving our group in such a mediocre state! If we can rein in this kid....”

“Can we rein him in?”

“His pet is in our hands, if he wants to take his pet back, he has to come back to me!”

Just as soon as Long San said that, the frost bear who was being locked in mid-air suddenly opened its giant mouth.

A blue light ball condensated in its mouth and was instantly released.

“Boom!”

The blue light ball directly exploded in front of Long San, but was blocked by his telekinetic power.

As the blue light ball exploded, snow and ice slowly fell on a large area.

But that giant frost bear has disappeared.

“How could this be!”

Long San was shocked, *a Hunter’s pet cannot be called back just like that!*

*Is it destroyed?*

*That Hunter is willing to destroy his pet?*

*Wouldn’t that destroy his own future?*

*Things are getting interesting....*

“Boss, what now....?”

“Clean the battlefield and go back to the lab to take a look, see if there is no missing data and the like.”

“Yes....”

Long San did not know that the guy he was interested in was trapped in another trouble.

—

Support us through [Patreon](#) , thanks!

# Chapter 198 This Is China

Liu Yi finally managed to get into the elevator toward the first floor. But in the Hall, he was surrounded by a group of black-clad Ninjas.

Norikawa (Buchuan neihu), the stout, short person in a suit, was standing at the nearby staircase looking at him.

“¥@ ! \*#@ ! ”

He said something in Japanese, which Liu Yi cannot understand.

“Master, leave it to me!”

Little Xuan wanted to show off.

Without knowing how she did it, in Liu Yi's ears, that shorty's shout has been converted into Chinese!

*Whoa.... This AI is so amazing.*

“Shina pig, gives us back our AI! Otherwise, die die!”

*The translation isn't complete?*

“Master, switching language for the first time requires some modification in certain areas.”

Little Xuan explained, “But as the system slowly upgrade, it will be good!”

Even so, Liu Yi already can understand more than half of it.

“Can you change my speaking into Japanese?”

Liu Yi asked with great interest.

“Certainly!”

Little Xuan proudly said, “*Renjia* is a neural interface artificial intelligence! This is certainly within the scope of my ability!”

With that, Liu Yi saw on the upper left corner of his eyes, there was a small popped up box.

“Current language: Japanese.”

*Will this work? Let's try it.*

Liu Yi opened his mouth and said.

“Buchuan Neiku (Don't wear underwear), I date (curse) your eighteen generation ancestors, hold and scold your grandma (f\*ck your grandma's breast), you d\*mn b\*stard don't try to be c\*cky here, believe it or not, your father, I will slap you to death!”

“Master!”

Little Xuan cried out for mercy, “Don't use dialects, okay! I can't translate many of them!”

“Em, very well.”

*It seems like this AI is not that special after all.*

Liu Yi had to switch to the universal gesture by putting up his middle finger toward Buchuan Neiku who was standing at the stairs.

“Baka!”

Buchuan Neiku was enraged, “You d\*mn shina pig! If you don't hand over the AI chip, you will die!”

*Want me to hand over little Xuan?*

*In your dream!*

*This easy to use AI is a gift for me....*

*The genius Japanese engineer who worked so hard to develop this AI and came all the way to China, isn't it just so that I can benefit from it?*

Such a big favor like that, Liu Yi naturally would not reject.

“Thank you for the gift. To respond in kind, in return, I will kill all of you.”

Liu Yi said with a smile.

“D\*mn! Attack! Kill this shina pig!”

Buchuan Neiku immediately called out.

Suddenly, two ninjas came rushing toward Liu Yi.

“Swish, swish, swish!”

Before they arrived, they sent several shurikens toward Liu Yi.

He had to give them credit, these ninjas were indeed highly trained, at least their shuriken throw was very accurate.

Each of them went straight to his neck.

But Liu Yi was not even afraid of bullets, why would he fear these several shurikens.

He held out his hands and, using his black and white world, quickly caught them one by one.

Soon, these several shurikens were caught by his hands.

“I don’t like these sharp gifts, I’ll give them back to you!”

With that, Liu Yi waved his hands and was about to throw those shurikens.

Those ninjas immediately fled in fear.

“Bam, bam!”

These shurikens eventually nailed to the wall in this hall.

“Baka! Get him! Kill this shina pig!”

Seeing how Liu Yi acted so arrogantly in front of these many ninjas, Buchuan Neiku immediately roared.

The two ninjas that previously dodged the shurikens came to Liu Yi’s sides.

One of them threw the hook sickle in his hand toward Liu Yi’s neck from the back.

Another one lunged the knife in his hand toward Liu Yi’s chest.

“These low-level ninjas, but they’re somewhat more powerful than normal people.”

Standing on Liu Yi’s shoulder watching the attacks of those ninjas, Lin Tong yawned, “They don’t even know a hair of ninjutsu.”

As she spoke, Liu Yi already kicked away the ninja who wanted to stab his heart.



He then turned around and seized the wooden handle of the hook sickle and pulled it.

That ninja cannot hold back and was pulled forward.

“I’ll give this back to you, no need to thank me.”

Liu Yi smiled toward that ninja and flung the hook sickle in his hand.

“Pop!”

That hook sickle directly hacked the forehead of that ninja.

Without even uttering a word, this ninja’s head was cut in half and stumbled to the ground.

“Bakayaro! Useless, all of you are useless!”

That Buchuan Neiku jumped to the side and yelled, “Kill him, kill that shina pig!”

“Bam!”

That ninja’s corpse directly fell in front of Buchuan Neiku.

“The next time I hear the word ‘shina,’ you will end up like him.”

Liu Yi’s cold voice, through little Xuan’s translation, drilled into Buchuan Neiku’s ears.

Looking at Liu Yi who stood in front of a group of ninjas, Buchuan Neiku cannot help but feel cold.

*Why would I be afraid....*

*There are obviously so many ninjas to protect me....But why am I afraid?*

*What the hell!*

“Kill this shi....Kill him....”

After a long time clenching his jaws, Buchuan Neiku finally did not dare to say that word again.

These more than ten ninjas, along with their weapons, suddenly rushed forward toward Liu Yi.

These various weapons came at Liu Yi.

Shuriken, Kunai, Hook Sickle, Katana.

“Since you’re in such a hurry to go back to see your Amaterasu, then I’ll send you to your journey.”

Liu Yi laughed, stretched out his hand. A multicolored blade suddenly came out of his palm.

He wanted to throw this blade toward those incoming ninjas.

“Master, wait a second, you have some interesting abilities, let me help you. Watch this!”

When Liu Yi was about to throw this colorful blade, little Xuan’s voice suddenly rang.

Subsequently, a crosshair suddenly appeared in front of Liu Yi’s eyes.

“What the hell! Are you kidding me, you can even do this thing!”

Liu Yi exclaimed as he swept his gaze toward those ninjas.

“Hihi, of course, *Renjia* is the most advanced AI!”

Little Xuan smugly laughed, “But there’s more....Master can move the crosshair to lock on those ninjas!”

*I can do that?*

Liu Yi turned his head and aligned his sight on one of those incoming ninjas.

Suddenly, in Liu Yi’s eyes, a red skull mark appeared at the top of the head of that ninja.

*What the....I really can....*

*This AI....Is a little gem!*

Liu Yi took the opportunity to multi-lock a few more ninjas. After he locked all of the present ninjas, Liu Yi finally waved his arm.

“Go, my fantasy butterfly blade!”

Liu Yi named his weapon as such.

This fantasy butterfly blade, drawing a colorful rainbow light in the air,

directly cut the neck of a ninja.

As the blood splashed, the fantasy butterfly blade continued to fly to the next ninja.

The rest of the ninjas were scared and immediately fled.

But the fantasy butterfly blade was like the messenger of death, continued to pursue those ninjas.

Very quickly, those ninjas' head were cut off and fell to the ground.

"Nani...."

Seeing this scene, Buchuan Neiku had the urge to wet his pants.

*How come this shina guy is so powerful....More than ten ninjas are actually killed by him!*

*Are all of our Japanese ninjas' useless?*

*Impossible!*

*Definitely impossible!*

Looking at the corpse of a ninja, Buchuan Neiku's body trembled.

"All of your bodyguards are dead."

Liu Yi recovered his fantasy butterfly blade and, while playing it with his hand, slowly walked toward Buchuan Neiku.

"Now it's your turn."

"Don't come, you monster!"

That Buchuan Neiku stumbled and sat on the ground. He then shouted at Liu Yi with a pale face.

"Didn't you stop me from leaving? You see, now I am not leaving."

Liu Yi could not help but laugh, "You think you're an Emperor!"

"Don't come....I, I still have one powerful bodyguard...."

Buchuan Neiku wiped off his cold sweat and said, "If you hurt me, he will kill you!"

"It's not that I want to hurt you."

Liu Yi's voice turned icy cold, "But you've done too many wicked things in China. I don't even know how many people that were killed by you, so if I don't kill you, I'll be sorry to the blood that flows in my veins."

Liu Yi never considered that all Japanese were hateful, but he simply can't let those right wingers go.

This group of people did not know how to feel remorse, and they also constantly tried to provoke a war.

So, there was no other choice but to kill the one that he encountered.

"Kodou! Help!"

Just as Liu Yi was about to arrive in front of that Buchuan Neiku, that fatty suddenly shouted loudly.

In a flash, Liu Yi felt something cold coming from behind his neck.

Liu Yi unconsciously launched his shadow step and instantly left that spot.

"Whoosh!"

A black clad ninja suddenly appeared from behind Liu Yi.

The katana in his hand was swinging at the spot that Liu Yi's neck has just left.

If Liu Yi was still standing there, his head would have been separated from his body.

"He escape?"

His moved failed, that ninja named Kodou was clearly surprised.

He squinted his pair of small eyes as he looked around in all directions.

Liu Yi appeared later on the staircase of the second floor, looking at the suddenly appeared ninja from above.

"A Shinobu...."

Lin Tong recognize the opposite party's identity, "Although it's just a lower level shinobu, it's still quite fierce. Liu Yi, be careful."

"Em, I will."

Liu Yi nodded his head, he also felt alarmed.

He felt a strong murderous aura coming from that ninja.

This murderous aura was like a knife pressed against his neck, making his hair stood on end, very uncomfortable.

“You....”

That Shinobu extended his kunai and pointed at Liu Yi.

Then he made a ‘cutting a neck’ action with his other hand.

“You want to commit suicide?”

Liu Yi was suddenly enlightened, “Sure, go ahead, though you don’t need to report it me.”

“I’ll kill you!”

The murderous aura of that Shinobu called Kodou surged up, he was ready to go into action.

But Liu Yi, taking advantage of that talk, pulled a colorful chain from the floor and flung it toward that Shinobu.

